



Gc  
974.701  
K61h  
v.3  
1225171

M.L.

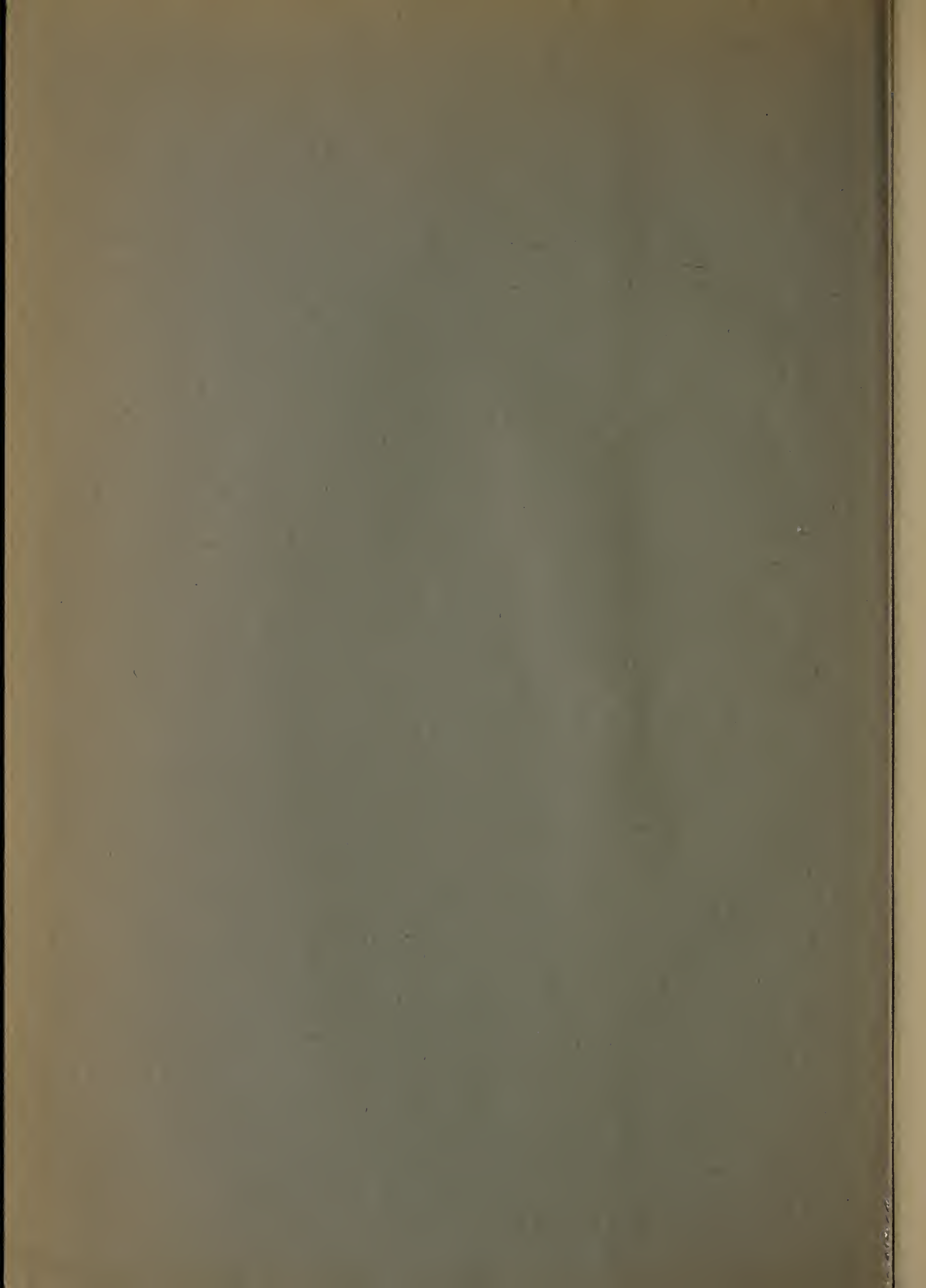
GENEALOGY COLLECTION



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01178 2940













*Sagamore Hill*  
*Home of President Theodore Roosevelt*  
*Oyster Bay L. I.*

The Boroughs of  
Brooklyn and Queens  
Counties of  
Nassau and Suffolk

LONG ISLAND, NEW YORK

1609 - 1924

By  
HENRY ISHAM HAZELTON



VOLUME III

LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY, Inc.  
NEW YORK — CHICAGO

1925

COPYRIGHT  
LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING CO., Inc.  
1925



## CHAPTER X

## FIRES AND FIRE-FIGHTERS

AS a village of frame houses, subject to foul chimneys, early Brooklyn suffered its full share of fire losses. In 1748 the people were waging a fierce legal fight against the ferry corporation over their rights, and partisan incendiaries burned the ferry-house built two years before. An era of fires near the ferry followed, and six firemen were chosen in 1772, pursuant to an act of the Legislature of 1768. They were: Joseph Sharpe, John Crawley, Matthew Gleaves, Joseph Pryor and William Boerum. Before that the inhabitants were called out by a bellringer who passed through the streets.

Washington Company No. 1 was commissioned for a year in 1785. A meeting was held in Widow Margaret Mosher's Inn near the ferry and a tax of 150 pounds voted to buy an engine. This was supplied by Jacob Roome, of New York, the first builder of fire engines in the United States. It consisted of a wooden box mounted on block wheels, into which water was poured by buckets. Pump handles were placed lengthwise worked by four men on a side. At the top of the condensing case a slanting gooseneck threw a stream sixty feet. The engine was drawn by a rope attached to a short tongue. The first members were J. Henry Stanton, captain; Abraham Soothoof, John Doughty, Jr., Thomas Havens, J. Van Cott and Martin Woodward. The company continued in existence under various changes till the volunteers were disbanded. The rules required inspection and practice play the first Saturday of each month. To belong to a company was an honor, which carried no privileges, no pay and no exemptions from the other duties of a citizen.

Under an act of the Legislature of March 15, 1788, a department was organized that year. The fire limits were described as "Within a line to begin at the East River, opposite to and to be drawn up the road that leads to the still house, late the property of Philip Livingston, deceased (Joralemon Street) and including said still house and other buildings on the south side of the same road, to and across the road leading from Bedford to the ferry (Fulton Street), south of the house of Matthew Gleaves, and from there northwesterly, including all the houses on the east side of the road last mentioned, and east of the powder magazine of Comfort and Joshua Sands, and from thence down the East River to the place of beginning." The area contained seventy-five buildings, all between Henry Street and the ferry, with fifty-five families, numbering two hundred and fifty persons and about one hundred slaves.

Eight able and sober men residing within the fire limits were to have the care of the fire engine and tools, and were to be designated as the "Firemen of Brooklyn." They were to be on call day or night. In return they were to be exempted from serving as overseers of highways, or as constables, from jury duty and inquests and from ordinary militia duty. These privileges added to the distinction of being a fireman. Under the act the firemen chosen on April 1, 1788, were: Stephen Baldwin, Benjamin Baldwin, Silas Betts, Thomas Havens, Joseph Stevens, Gilbert Van Mater, John Doughty, Jr., and John Van Cott. Foul chimneys were the most common cause of fires, and chimney inspectors were created in 1789. Fines were prescribed but they were never collected, so effective was the law in preventing the abuse. The firemen likewise were obliged to meet the first Monday of every month an

hour before sunrise. They had become remiss in attendance at the engine houses as a result of the infrequent fires. The new regulation brought them together and inaugurated that social intercourse which was a marked characteristic of the volunteer fire organizations of the nineteenth century. At the same time it developed a spirit of comradeship. The discipline, however, was not strict, for in 1791 the captain of the company was upheld in imposing a fine of two shillings for absence from duty in defiance of orders.

All good citizens assisted the firemen at a fire, forming a line from the little engine to the nearest well and passing water along in buckets. The town kept twenty-four buckets in the engine house which stood in a lane leading off from Front Street, near the Old Ferry road (Fulton Street). The fire limits were extended again and again until they included the present borough. Funds for a fire bell were voted in 1796. With the £49 4s raised the clerk was directed to buy as large a bell as he could. None of the Dutch inhabitants, however, wanted to have the bell rung near his pillow. Jacob Remsen broke the impasse by offering to hang it over his stone house in Front Street at Fulton, and to ring the alarm himself. He received in return all the privileges conferred on firemen. When Remsen's house was pulled down in 1816, the bell was re-hung at Middagh Street, near Henry. It was moved again in 1827 to a vacant lot where the Eastern Market was afterward erected. On the completion of the market it was hung in the cupola. The building was used for religious purposes in after years, but the bell remained till the town needed a bigger one. In 1846 an alarm bell was hung near the City Hall, which was building, until its completion. About 1797 another engine was added as Neptune No. 2. Franklin No. 3 was added in 1810. They were followed by an increase in the department's personnel.

When the village was incorporated in 1816 the trustees were empowered to appoint four fire wardens. They added two companies, each composed of thirty men, giving a total of ninety-five. John Doughty was the first chief engineer. A tax of \$300 was included in the budget to meet the expenses of the department, which hitherto had been paid out of fines assessed against foul chimneys and delinquent firemen. The \$300 was expended so judiciously as to leave a balance at the end of the year.

Furman in his manuscripts (1856) says: "About forty years ago Brooklyn was often visited by large fires, the buildings being, with very few exceptions, all frame. The village had but two small and inefficient fire engines, and relied mainly upon New York for relief; principally upon what was called the floating engine, a large, powerful engine fitted in a scow and propelled by oars, and which was worked by about fifty men, by means of large, long handles, turning cranks. The engine lay in the East River near Peck Slip, and when a fire occurred in Brooklyn the villagers were always anxious for its arrival."

The "Long Island Intelligencer," the only paper published on Long Island at the time, says the greatest fire up to 1806 occurred on November 16 of that year. Two boys of fifteen, William Cornwell and Martin Hill, used a candle to start a blaze near the Old Ferry. The candle went out three times before they succeeded in firing the large barn of Abiel Titus. Three horses, three stables, two barns, an outhouse and a ropewalk were burned. While the fire was active the boys robbed an adjoining store of money. Their act caused consternation in the village and much dissatisfaction with the fire department.

Chimneys had fallen among bystanders and walls had toppled over after



fires endangering life. A hook and ladder company was needed and the village trustees created it by resolution on October 17, 1817. Fifteen persons, including the captain, were appointed by the trustees. Two months passed before any apparatus was provided. When procured it consisted only of hooks and ladders without a carriage. One fireman ran with a ladder on his shoulder and another carried a hook. In December, 1817, the company was increased to twenty-five men, and on June 27, 1818, the trustees voted to spend \$125 for a carriage. The carriage needed a home and \$200 was voted to pay the rent of a lot and erect a temporary building. A second company, Clinton Hook and Ladder No. 2, was formed on January 30, 1840. It opened a house at 206 Pearl street and remained there till the volunteer department was disbanded.

The first loss of life by a fire in Brooklyn occurred on August 21, 1822. The cotton warehouse west of the steamboat ferry, owned by Henry Waring and leased to Captain Merry, caught fire just before eight o'clock at night. Wooden storehouses and sheds adjoining, filled with naval stores, were soon burning fiercely. A large stone warehouse owned by Mr. Waring checked the flames on the west. Firemen stopped them on the east after they had destroyed two or three large storehouses and sheds, a small and a large dwelling house, the latter occupied as a tavern by Thomas Armstrong—all the property of Mr. Waring; a storehouse and four sheds owned by the Robert Black estate, and their contents. Black's storehouse contained 1,400 bales of cotton and 12,000 bushels of naval stores, owned by merchants in New York and the South. The loss was \$85,000. Several vessels at wharves were towed to safety by the steam ferryboats. The fire afforded a sublime pyrotechnic display. Rarely is so large a quantity of tar, pitch and turpentine seen on fire at one time. The huge clouds of dense black smoke shot out tongues of flame even up to the elevation of two hundred feet. They continued to burn furiously for more than ten hours.

The chief ordered the hook and ladder company to tear down a small house to stay the progress of the flames. Walter McCoun, thirty-one years old, threw the hook into the building, but it slipped and struck him in the forehead. He died after twenty-six hours.

As Brooklyn grew and facilities for fighting fire were added, the old volunteer department gradually attained a high state of efficiency. The act of incorporation passed by the Legislature in 1816, reads:

"Whereas, the firemen of the Village of Brooklyn, in Kings County, have by their petition to the legislature prayed to be incorporated, the more effectually to enable them to provide adequate funds for the relief of indigent and distressed firemen, therefore:

"Be it enacted by the People of the State of New York represented in Senate and Assembly: That all such persons as now are, or hereafter may be, engineers of the fire department, or firemen belonging to any of the fire engines and hook and ladder companies of the Village of Brooklyn, shall be and are hereby constituted and declared to be a body politic, in fact and in name, by the name of the Fire Department of the Village of Brooklyn."

The Department was divided into Western and Eastern Branches. In the Western District the companies were assigned to wards as follows: First, none; Second, Engine No. 1; Third, Engine No. 14, Hook and Ladder No. 1, and Hose No. 4; Fourth, Engines Nos. 6 and 17, and Hook and Ladder Nos. 1 and 2; Fifth, Engine No. 7 and Hose Nos. 5 and 7; Sixth, Engine No. 2, and Hose No. 9; Seventh, Engines Nos. 10 and 12, and Hose No. 17; Eighth, Engine No. 21, Hook and Ladder No. 4, and Hose No. 14; Ninth, Engine No. 4, Hook and Ladder No. 3; Tenth, Engines Nos. 19 and 12, and Hose No. 3;

Eleventh, Engine No. 5, Hose Nos. 6 and 10; Twelfth, Engine No. 16; Twentieth, Engine No. 9.

Seventy-five men were allotted to a steam fire engine, sixty-five to a hand engine, forty to a hook and ladder company, and forty to a hose company.

Williamsburgh organized a fire department in 1837 and elected David Garrett chief. In 1834 two gooseneck engines had been purchased. One was named Washington No. 1, and the other Protection No. 2. A hook and ladder company was added. Andrew B. Hodges became chief afterwards. He was a man of note and served in the Assembly, and held many posts in the city government. William Guischard, his successor, improved the fire alarm system, built a tower and detailed lookouts. Andrew Marshall substituted engines for the bucket companies. Fights occurred between rival companies as in Brooklyn. Engines Nos. 7 and 12 crashed in responding to an alarm and No. 12 barely missed being overturned. The commissioners ordered No. 7 placed in the house, tongue in, and fined each member \$5. This was rescinded after the firemen had held an indignation meeting and declared the action a gross injustice. Engine No. 32 of New York, and No. 13 of the Eastern District, engaged in a fistic battle on April 13, 1858. The blame was placed on the New Yorkers who had applied exasperating epithets to the Williamsburgh boys. It was a common practice at the time for rival companies to invite gangs from New York to precipitate a fight. Mayor Powell vetoed a bill to form a paid department on May 10, 1858. The volunteer department of Williamsburg was consolidated with that of Brooklyn at the time a paid corps was formed.

The term "Forty Acres" was applied to the territory in the immediate neighborhood of the City Park and Fort Greene in the good old days of the volunteer firemen. It was also the most turbulent part of the city, not excepting Red Hook, Slab City, Darby's Patch, Smoky Hollow, Hell's Kitchen, Fenian Hill, Crow Hill, Jackson's Lots and Irishtown. All of these places were sore trials for the police. The title "Forty Acres" was borne by the brave fire laddies of Union Engine No. 5 (Forty Acre 5), but also by the southern part of the Fifth Ward and the northern part of the Eleventh Ward. Generally it included the men and women, the boys and girls.

When Polk and Dallas were the Democratic candidates for President and Vice-President in 1844 the largest political procession ever held in the United States was organized in New York. Every Democrat of note marched in it. The Brooklyn Democrats met in the Avenue cottage on the southwest corner of Myrtle and Hudson Avenues, a hotel run by Alec "Punch" Duflon, to organize a club and arrange to take part in the parade. When the question of a name for the club came up, John Hoffman suggested "Forty Acres," because, in those days, Fort Greene Park contained forty acres. The Forty Acres Democratic Club became a famous institution of the city and did much for the Democratic party during the many years of its existence. It was disbanded in the nineties.

Union 5 Engine was organized in 1840 by members of Bethany Church at Johnson and Jay Streets, southwest corner. The site had been an eel pond and the church was nicknamed the "eel pot."

**The Great Brooklyn Fire** broke out on Saturday, September 9, 1848, at 11:30 P. M., according to the Eagle:

"In the upholstery store of George Drew, at 122 Fulton Street bend, nearly opposite to Sands Street. This was a wooden building surrounded by a nest of other wooden build-



ings which extended through to Henry Street, and, indeed, covered the whole block. In consequence of the long drought, these buildings were all as dry as tinder, and the flame was beyond control before the alarm brought the firemen. The block was soon one vast sea of flame. The wind, from the northwest, drove the heat across Fulton Street. There William Bailey's drug store caught fire and was extinguished several times. Finally it crossed just above the building occupied by Mrs. Hall, leecher and cupper. It was driven rapidly south along Fulton Street by a fresh wind and east along Sands Street, near the Methodist Church.

"The flames now stretched towards the southeast from Henry almost to Washington Street. At four o'clock the fire had swept the greater portion of the area; the firemen were without water; the streets on the outer border of the fire were lumbered with goods, removed from the buildings; women and children were carrying furniture from place to place, and guarding their property; firemen were running from point to point; the flames unfettered by every effort threatened the whole city.

"On one side the fire had reached Henry and Orange Streets; on the other it had destroyed the Methodist Church in Sands Street, the Sunday School building and the parsonage, and extended through High and Nassau Streets, leveling the large Baptist Church and some of the most substantial buildings in the city. Carey's buildings and the Universalist Church in Fulton Street were ablaze, while the heat in Concord Street was terrific. It seemed as if nothing could stay the fire from crossing, in which case the large block in Tillary Street, and perhaps all that part of the city, must inevitably have been consumed.

"It was now that the plan of blowing up several buildings was suggested. Fortunately this proved successful. The fire was stopped at Concord Street though the buildings on the south side were often on fire. The church of Mr. Jacobus, which stands back from the street, assisted in staying its progress, and was preserved without damage. In Orange Street, its progress toward Henry Street was checked by the double wall made by Carey's buildings. On Washington Street the brick row between Concord and Nassau Streets was much burned. Another brick row beyond the Methodist Church on Sands Street also escaped.

"Residents of the neighborhood filled the Sands Street Methodist Church with furniture, thinking it a place of safety. The interior became a furnace when the flames reached it, and roared and snapped among the household furnishings piled high within.

"The great extent of the fire is to be attributed entirely to the want of water. Our firemen soon drained the cisterns, and had no further resources. They were aided in their labors by twenty or more engines from New York, and thousands of willing hands were rendered useless by the deficiency of water. The Baptist Church in Nassau Street was, we believe, insured in the Brooklyn offices for \$12,000, which will probably cover the loss, or nearly so. The Methodist Church in Sands Street, the parsonage and Sunday School building, fronting on High Street, were all insured.

"Mr. William H. Carey was by far the largest individual loser by this fire. Twenty-six houses belonging to him, including the beautiful range of unfinished stores and the Franklin building on the corner of Orange and Fulton Streets, were destroyed. Their total valuation was \$50,000, and they were insured for about half of their value. Ex-Mayor George Hall was a considerable loser by the fire.

"Three church edifices, the First Universalist, Baptist and the Sands Street Methodist Episcopal; two newspaper offices, the *Brooklyn Star* and the *Brooklyn Freeman*; and the Post Office building (a portion of the mails being saved), were also burned in this great conflagration which devastated a thickly settled part of the city, several acres in extent, and destroyed property worth \$1,500,000.

"Particular mention is made also in the newspapers of the day of Captain Joshua Sands of the United States Navy, who, with a body of marines from the flagship "North Carolina," rendered most efficient aid, especially in blowing up several buildings by which the course of the flames was finally checked. The City Guard, Union Blues and Columbian Rifles, voluntary military organizations of Brooklyn, performed police duty in guarding property, and in preserving order."

In 1855 the Volunteer Fire Department was incorporated with four commissioners at its head. They were Hugh McLaughlin, Fred. S. Massey, William A. Brower, and A. F. Campbell. There were thirty hand engines, seventeen hose carts and seven trucks with 2,700 men to man them. The introduction of Ridgewood water through the city mains occurred on December 4, 1858.

A board of appeals was created in 1862 to decide appeals from the decisions of the commissioners. The trustees had charge of the funds and could lend on bond and mortgage. A board of officers, composed of the foreman of each company nominated candidates for office, the most frequent being assistant engineer. The chief engineer had seven assistants with authority to exercise all his powers in his absence. They were elected annually while the

chief held office for two years. The president of the board of commissioners was the president of the department. A treasurer bonded in \$10,000 was elected by the trustees. The foremen were elected every year. Engineers were paid \$1,000 a year; bell ringers \$1,200, the clerk of the board of trustees \$300, and the secretary of the board of commissioners \$500.

In 1867 there were three bell towers, the central one in the City Hall, the property of the department, and three bell ringers. Two other towers one at the 44th precinct station in Myrtle Avenue and the other at the 42d precinct in York Street, belonging to the Police Department. The bell of the York Street tower was cracked on July 4, 1866, and never repaired.

It was a favorite sport of the firemen to run their engines down hill in the street car tracks, gaining a fearful burst of speed. They jumped aboard and enjoyed the thrill as boys do coasting on an icy slope. So many accidents resulted that speeding was forbidden. Those who disobeyed lost all right to relief benefits if they were injured, but that did not stop the practice.

The commissioners were suspicious and wanted to find out if the rules were observed. On March 28, 1867, they ordered the bells rung for the First and Fourth districts. The following companies were reported for speeding: Engines Nos. 1, 5, 6, 14, 17, 19 and 22; Hose Companies Nos. 1, 2, 5, 6, 7, and 8, and Hook and Ladder Companies Nos. 1 and 2. The chief ordered all of them locked up. When Chief Cunningham learned why the bells had been rung the next day, he was indignant, and swore out warrants for the arrest of the fire commissioners—Felix Campbell, Stryker, Barre and Thorne. Judge Buckley held them to await the action of the Grand Jury. The next evening the commissioners released the companies and the Grand Jury did not indict.

Lack of water was the great difficulty of the early fire fighters. In 1859 a row of small frame houses in Schenck Street near Willoughby was on fire and there was no public cistern in the neighborhood. Dave Rodgers, ex-foreman of Engine No. 10 unscrewed the cap of a hydrant and attached his hose. A deluge was produced. The pressure was too much for the hose, and it was turned partly off. The buildings were destroyed, but the firemen experimented with hydrant water and were able to throw a horizontal stream 125 feet with a nozzle one and a quarter inches in diameter. Bystanders cheered; the hydrants were ordered used at fires whenever available. Hose Company No. 2 was the first to adopt "bunkers"—firemen who could sleep near the apparatus. In 1859 the city built an additional story to the house and the company bought bedding.

The second great Brooklyn fire, also called the Furman Street fire, broke out at 3 A. M., on July 8, 1850. Dr. R. V. W. Thorne owned a large brick building under the Heights filled with sugar, molasses, saltpetre, salt, and hides. Saltpetre exploded and the warehouse burst into flame. Explosion followed explosion. Burning timbers were hurled on the roof of the frame sheds adjoining where W. & J. Tapscott kept turpentine and naval stores. The rectifying distillery of Bache & Sons and the First Ward Hotel were devoured as well. A brig alongside the pier caught fire, but was towed out in the stream and saved. Barrels of rum and camphene burst through the sides of another vessel and poured over the river until it was a sea of flame.

Fire Companies Nos. 17, 13, and 7 were on the waterfront, their escape cut off. Just after the great fire Brooklyn Engine Company No. 17 had been organized on September 28, 1848. It ran old Water Witch No. 8, a gooseneck



engine, while its new engine, a double-decker of the Philadelphia type, was being painted. One of the explosions of saltpetre blew the old Water Witch over the stringpiece of the wharf. She hung by a front wheel until she took fire. In order to save her the company threw her into the river and towed her around to the Fulton Ferry, where she was raised and run by the company until the double-decker came from the painters. Several members of No. 17 company were obliged to jump overboard to save their lives. The others and the members of Companies 13 and 7 dashed through the flames to safety.

Four thousand bags and two thousand casks of saltpetre were destroyed. The loss was \$902,509, of which \$800,000 was Thorne's. The bell ringer in the City Hall lookout was blamed for falling asleep on duty.

William S. Wright, the first foreman of Company No. 17, was serving a second term during the Know-Nothing Riots of 1854. None of the uptown companies would respond to alarms in the Second District, though they were numerous and required the help of all. No. 17 was asked to join the others in opposition, or else to wait at the City Hall till the other companies came up, when they would all go down together. Through Mr. Wright, No. 17 refused positively to do this and continued the practice of going where the bell directed. In 1861 No. 17 introduced the first steam fire engine used in Brooklyn—an Amoskeag. When the Duffield mansion, a one-story building at the northwest corner of Duffield and Fulton Streets, burned on April 14, 1857, a wall fell on Charles H. Rogers and Thomas P. Hopkins. Rogers lost a leg by amputation as a result and was retired.

Polley's distillery, located on North Fifth Street, Williamsburg, was wrecked by a boiler explosion on Thursday, February 2, 1856. Smoke, dust, brick, and fragments of wood and iron filled the air. When the shower of burning materials had settled it was seen that a boiler in the distillery had exploded. Thomas Shannon, a blacksmith, two hundred feet away, ran to the door of his shop only to be struck by a large piece of boiler and killed. George Bell, in an adjoining stable, was buried by falling walls and mortally injured. Both men left large families.

The remainder of the boiler, including the fire flue, was thrown fifty feet across the street. Inspection showed it was covered with patches and worn threadbare. Nothing was left of the brick boiler house, except the floor. Public feeling ran so high against Grahams Polley it was feared he would suffer bodily injury.

The Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum burned down early on Sunday morning, November 9, 1862. When the fire was discovered two hundred and forty-eight children were asleep within its walls. It was snowing and the little ones were turned out of doors in their night clothes. Three were forgotten and perished. The people of the neighborhood opened their doors to the others until the Brooklyn City Railroad Company sent cars to take them to the Female Asylum in Congress Street. Contributions and clothing poured in from all sides, and their wants were soon supplied.

Five firemen were killed and six injured in the fire which broke out in Thomas J. Chubb's blacklead factory at 95 Furman Street, on April 4, 1865. It was discovered at 1:10 A. M. and soon extended to the oil refinery of C. N. Flanders at 93 Furman Street. Both buildings, with their contents, were consumed. They were built against the hill, which made the rear as good as air tight. The roofs were even with the rear gardens of the fine homes along Columbia Heights. Nothing was more alluring than the opportunity they afforded to

extend the grounds in the form of hanging gardens reaching to the water's edge. Six feet of earth was placed on the roofs and planted with choice shrubbery, grass, and flowers. Beneath, this mass was supported by the iron girders and brick arches of the warehouses. The earth made the roofs as tight as the rear. The heat and flames could escape only by the front windows or the skylights, which furnished all the light.

Chief Cunningham ordered firemen to the roofs to play water on the flames through the skylights. The water met the burning oils and generated gas and steam, and the roofs were lifted out of place. Soon after they fell in. Fifteen firemen were carried down when No. 95 Furman Street collapsed. It was only a moment when No. 93 went down with a roar. Willing workers leaped into the chasm with shovels to rescue the dying or the dead buried with the earth. The heat made it necessary to play a hose on the living to enable them to work. The heat and water added to the sufferings of the victims.

The firemen killed were: Alexander S. Benson of Engine No. 17, twenty-five years old; Casper K. Cammeyer of Mechanics' Hose No. 2, twenty years old; Lewis Gardiner of Hose No. 5, twenty-four years old, a brother of ex-County Treasurer Thomas A. Gardiner; Joseph H. Brown of Engine Company No. 17, clerk in a bank; Eugene Baker of Hose Company No. 8. The injured were: James Gibson, Hose No. 2; Michael McGivney, Hose No. 5; Edward Bassett, Hose No. 8; William Williams, Engine No. 17; James H. Ruggles, Engine No. 17; William A. Lee, Engine No. 17.

At the coroner's inquest an effort was made to hold Cunningham responsible. Mrs. J. J. Merritt, wife of the owner of the burnt buildings, it was testified, had warned the firemen of their danger, through the bystanders, but the firemen denied this.

Charles "Buck" Farley, afterwards Sheriff, never had a narrower escape from death. As the roof of the burning building was about to collapse, he made a cat-like spring, caught the iron railing on the roof of the adjoining factory, and drew himself up to safety. The railing was hot and Farley's hands were badly scorched. He was once foreman of Frontier 5 and served in the Civil War with the Fighting 14th. The fire was remembered by old volunteer firemen for the reason that many of them had rejoined their companies after coming back from the front, and in the midst of rejoicing at the Union victory this sad calamity occurred, spreading gloom over the entire city. The firemen thanked Mrs. Henry Ward Beecher, Mrs. Merritt, Mrs. Beach, and Mrs. Starbuck for the coffee and refreshments furnished them during their ordeal. Drs. Cochran, Peck, and Johnson were likewise thanked and remembered. Dr. Cochrane ordered a Myrtle Avenue car run to the scene of the fire and fitted it up as a hospital.

Another fire which tested the mettle of the fighters was the Brooklyn Gas Light Company's works at the foot of Hudson Avenue. It occurred in bitter weather just before the end of the Civil War. The large amount of coal stored in the sheds kept it smouldering for a long time. It took fire the second time just as it was thought to be extinguished. Old Molly Sweeney, a landmark of Irishtown, and Mammy Walker gave the firemen coffee and sandwiches and a wee drop of firewater to keep the benumbed men from freezing. The works were the second erected by the company and replaced the first old plant with its one-lift tank in the forties.

Fire broke out in a stable in Gold Street, near Myrtle Avenue, on May 24, 1866. It was owned by P. Allsgood and occupied by a Mr. Hardy. A young



man from Albany, named Jones, staying with relatives in Brooklyn, was run over in Myrtle Avenue, near Pearl Street, by the tender of Engine 19 and killed instantly. On Tuesday, July 3, the same year, two stables owned by Thomas C. Jackson at Atlantic and Classon Avenues were totally destroyed. Many handsome light wagons and turnouts were lost with twenty-four blooded horses.

During the night following the Glorious Fourth, an unusual number of fires kept both brigades busy continuously till the men were at the point of exhaustion. This was the excuse for the unusual amount of drunkenness that followed. In the Eastern districts disgraceful fights took place, but Forty Acres kept themselves well together, though they had a hard name for fighting and did honor to the department.

Higgins' soap factory was the scene of another big fire of the sixties. It was situated at Park, Clinton, and Waverly Avenues. (At the time Waverly Avenue was Hamilton Street.) Farther down in the block was a safe, and a widely known burglar in blowing it open set fire to the building, which worked its way through the flimsy structures adjoining and ignited the soap factory. It was cold and the proprietor supplied coffee and sandwiches to the firemen, as was the custom in those days.

In 1856 Colonnade row on the Heights burned down. The fire, which took place at one o'clock on a raw winter's night, was a difficult one to grapple with. Union No. 5 and the other companies had to knock down fences to get into the yards of houses in the neighborhood and reach the cisterns.

In 1858 there was a contest of engines from all parts of the State at Albany. A prize of \$500 was offered to the engine that could throw the highest stream perpendicularly up a pole erected for the purpose. The engines were rated first and second class, according to their make and size of cylinder. Among those that won the first class prize was Franklin No. 3 of Brooklyn. Although Union No. 5 was entered in the second class she beat all the engines in the first class as well as the second. She threw a stream one hundred and fifty-five feet, nine inches—three feet better than Franklin No. 3. The Union's cylinder was nine inches, while Franklin's was ten.

While in Albany some of the "Acres" wanted to cut a shine, and bought themselves patent leather boots. The boots were satisfactory while the boys wore them, but the next morning their feet had swollen and they could not get into them. So they bought eggs and broke them in the boots to make their feet slip in easily. This scheme was a failure, and besides most of the boys were forced to buy new socks on account of the antiquity of the eggs. Jimmy Martin, foreman of Union No. 5, suffered most and was obliged to wear slippers.

The bully of Troy Engine No. 4 went to the hotel where the "Acres" stayed in Albany and boasted of his fighting powers. Jimmy Martin responded by hurling him through a hotel window to the street. All engines, trucks, and hose carriages had their champion or bully. He was a runner usually instead of a fireman. At almost every fire the bully was in the thick of the crowd, ready to lend a hand whenever an opportunity offered.

It is said the last fire the old volunteers attended was in H. B. Witty's livery and boarding stables on the west side of Nevins Street near Flatbush Avenue. This was in the early part of 1869. The paid fire department was organized on May 15 of that year and went into operation on September 15 following. The fire chiefs from 1816 to 1869 were: John Doughty, 1816-17; William Furman, 1817-21; John Doughty (second term), 1821-27; Jeremiah Wells, 1827-36;

J. F. L. Duflon, 1836-39; Burdett Stryker, 1839-49; Peter Anderson, 1849-53; Israel D. Velsor, 1953-61; William H. Furey, 1861-63; John Cunningham, 1863-69.

It was a sight to see the boys running with their apparatus to fires. The pretty girls on the sidewalks and in windows cheered them, and were often as fond of the engines as the men. Every engine, truck or hose carriage had a faction that ran with it. Some of the factions and the neighborhoods where they lived were about as follows: The Roosters in South Brooklyn ran with Neptune No. 2; the Pigeons up in the pigeon lots in the vicinity of Prospect Park, the Rocks in Jackson's Lots in the Seventh Ward, ran with Rock 10; the Bucks in Irishtown and the Second Ward ran with Washington 1, Constitution 7 and Frontier 5, while the Forty Acres, called the Acres for short, ran with Union Engine 15.

The territory where the Acres held full sway was bounded on the north by Nassau Street and Flushing Avenue, on the east by Cumberland Street, on the south by DeKalb Avenue and Fulton Street, and on the west by Bridge Street. Fulton Street was also given as the western boundary and Washington Avenue the eastern, while North Portland Avenue likewise has been considered the eastern line.

The old City Park was the regular battleground of the Acres and the Bucks. Fort Greene also saw hot skirmishes between the Acres and the Cat Killers, although the Cat Killers never were formidable rivals. It was the Bucks who fought the fiercest struggles with the Acres. The object was to win the mastery of City Park. The Acres usually managed to keep in the ascendancy, but there were hard knocks and the physicians of the neighborhood were kept busy mending broken skulls and reducing fractures. It went bad with a Buck caught in the bailiwick of the Acres and vice versa.

The mere suggestion of their inferiority by another faction would provoke the Acres to such an extent they would not hesitate to raid the stronghold of their enemy to show how ill-founded the assumption was. At times the Rocks from Jackson's Lots would aid the Bucks in their battles with the Acres, when coming home from fires. It was common enough to see a gallant laddie returning with a bleeding head and often divested of most of his clothes, though they might be in tatters.

A terrific fight occurred at the famous fire of September, 1848—the greatest that has been recorded among Brooklyn firemen. Water was drawn from the docks and conveyed as far as Sands Street. To do this three engines were placed in Fulton Street one above the other. Firemen took pride in the superior power of their engine and endeavored to pump water into the engine higher up faster than its own company could pump it out; thus it would overflow. This was called "washing" an engine. It happened that the most powerful engine was nearest the river and that both of the others were "washed." Hard words followed and a general fight took place, in which the crowd joined. Several persons were killed and a large number injured before troops restored order. While the fire was gaining, the firemen were fighting.

The system of runners was another trouble of the volunteers. The runners would hang around an engine house and fall in line with the regulars every time an opportunity offered to go to a fire. They helped pull the engine and started almost all the fights. As they took sides with one company or another, it followed that they brought on a fist fight almost as often as the two companies met. The runners were the first in and the first to quit. They added to the bad blood existing. Finally all outsiders were forbidden to run with a company



or to pull a rope. Moreover, it was no uncommon thing to see boys seven or eight years old following the engines for miles. Sometimes they would lose track of the engine they ran with and could not find their way home. Eventually they would fetch up in a stationhouse and be restored to their parents.

The Neptunes, Engine No. 2, were notorious for their fights. They made their first appearance on parade in 1826, when a banner was presented. A few years later the "Little Roosters" were attached to No. 2 and exciting times began. Four engines and two hose companies were stationed in the First Ward and ran to every fire. They became intense rivals. Sometimes the racing and the quarrels led to bloodshed and destruction of property. The firemen, especially those of No. 2, resented any interference with what they deemed their rights on the part of the police. And their rights were to put out fires.

Regarding their conduct in the engine house they would not even permit the Mayor to interfere. They held a special meeting in Firemen's Hall on April 1, 1845, "to take into consideration the outrage committed on the members of the company on the evening of March 20 by the Mayor." His Honor's conduct in ejecting several members from the engine house without just cause was pronounced "worthy of the time, the place, and the man." After more sarcastic strictures the Mayor was elected an honorary member, "so long as the engine house remain under padlock and key—and no longer."

A great "washing" match took place at Fulton Ferry between Engines Nos. 2 and 7. Investigation disclosed the valve of No. 2 had been "hung up," giving No. 7 the victory. This increased the enmity between the two companies. One engine or the other was almost sure to be prevented from throwing a stream when they arrived at a fire. Thus, on the night of June 20, 1852, a triangular fight occurred between Companies Nos. 2, 7, and 9. Stones, bricks, and other missiles were used in the argument. Other fights followed. As a result the Common Council ordered the chief engineer to lock up and take possession of Engine Companies Nos. 2 and 5 until the further direction of the Board.

John Cunningham, who became chief of the department, was injured gravely in a fight on April 4, 1853, between Engines Nos. 2 and 7. On the night of Monday, June 13, 1853, the members of No. 2 appeared at the Livingston House fire with their hats reversed as a sign that they would not help extinguish the blaze. Just before they started for the fire they sent the Common Council a notice: "Resolved, that we cease doing duty unless means are taken by the Common Council to find us decent quarters with ample accommodations." The Council responded by ordering the house locked up, and stating it was not convenient to find another. The members relented, and gave promise of good behavior. They kept their word for a time, but before long McQueen, a fireman, was knocked down and dragged to a police station by Patrolman Regan.

The new home of the Neptunes in Hicks Street was dedicated in 1854, and the old fighting spirit came back in all its vigor. The Common Council expelled all the members from the department in January, 1855, and declared the company disbanded. It was reorganized nine years later, and entered upon a different career, housed in luxury and noted for its excellent behavior.

After this company moved into a new brick house in Lawrence Street between Myrtle Avenue and Johnson Street June 28, 1849, it received the double-decked Philadelphia engine already mentioned. Outsiders dubbed it "The Haywagon" on account of its odd appearance. Thereupon the firemen were likened to grasshoppers as they leaped up to man the upper brakes. The sobriquet of "Hoppers" was given to them and it stuck.

With the advent of a paid department the different factions throughout the city died out, but scraps continued now and then for a short time thereafter, although they were spasmodic. Instead individuals met in the fistic arena. It was against the law, but the law was more easily evaded than it is today.

In June, 1858, a battle occurred on Fort Greene in the vicinity of Bill Gilman's slaughter house, on the Cumberland Street side of the hill, between Bob Taylor of Myrtle Avenue and Carl Street (now Fleet Place) and John Stewart, a baker of Myrtle Avenue, between Hudson Avenue and Navy Street. A gang of old timers hung out in the bakery, among the members being Obe Smith, James Burchell, known as Dickey Riker; Jim Irving, Jack Snedeker, Johnny Young, and others.

The fight began at two o'clock in the afternoon. Taylor was seconded by a noted prizefighter of the day, and Stewart was seconded by James Burchell. John Beecroft was referee and timekeeper. The conditions were that half a minute was to be allowed between rounds. A knockdown made a round. Stewart got the worst of the fight for the first fifteen or twenty rounds. At that juncture George Siminon and Bill Gilmore came on the scene. Stewart just had been knocked down by Taylor and Beecroft called time before the half minute had expired. Siminon, walking over to the referee, said: "You are calling time too quick; instead of half a minute allowance you didn't give Stewart twenty seconds."

Thereupon he caught the referee by the neck and, throwing him to one side, continued: "I will now time these men and give them a fair show."

Hearing this, the boys assembled for the fight gave three cheers for George Siminon three times over. The fight continued to the 105th round, when Siminon declared Stewart the winner. Both men were badly used up, as they fought with bare knuckles. The crowd was pleased with the result.

About fifty years ago a fight took place in the City Park between Gus Rooney and a bow-legged Spaniard named Manuel. Rooney won with flying colors in half an hour. A more serious battle occurred in the old park and the adjacent streets during the Know Nothing period. The feeling culminated in open violence in 1854. It was the practice of certain evangelists to hold open air meetings at street corners, in the squares, and parks. The Angel Gabriel was one of the foremost among them.

The Know Nothings would preach and parade under the protection of the flag. They wore high straw hats with deep black bands of ribbon. They fought a pitched battle with the Forty Acres in the City Park one day as severe as some of the battles of the Civil War. Missiles filled the air. Tommy Martin, a foreman of Union 5 Engine, at one time fought like a hero and so did every other "Acre." There was no list of killed, but the wounded were many and their injuries were severe enough to lay many of them up for weeks. Similar encounters continued throughout the city, until finally, around 1856, the un-American Know Nothing party died out.

Sham battles were quite a feature of life before the Civil War in the "Acres" territory. The boys chose sides and, armed with Roman candles, they would fight in City Park, little dreaming that they were fitting themselves for the momentous struggle that was to call for all their courage and skill.

**The Brooklyn Theatre**, built in 1871, burned down on the night of December 5, 1876. It stood in Washington Street at Johnson where the "Brooklyn Eagle" has its home. Scenery caught from the border-lights which were



screened by tin on the side toward the audience and covered with wire on the side toward the stage. At first it was supposed that only two or three persons had perished for the lower auditorium was deserted when the last man looked around and passed out. The newspapers did not suspect the terrible truth when they went to press. After the flames were under control the next morning the firemen exploring the ruins came upon a scene of horror that made them pale. In the extreme end of the upper gallery several hundred human beings had been suffocated by the smoke from the roof, cut off from escape, unable to make an outcry or call for help. The bodies were piled upon one another in an inextricable mass, contorted and without shape.

Kate Claxton was playing the "Two Orphans," and as *Louise* was lying on the straw pallet in the last act. H. S. Murdoch (*Pierre*) was delivering his speech, when they heard a whisper of "Fire!" and looked up to see flames issue from the flies. Murdoch stopped, but Miss Claxton whispered "Go on, they will put it out, there will be a panic—go on!" He resumed and the scene was played through. Mrs. Farren (*La Frochard*) entered and Miss Claxton delivered her speech to Jacques: "I forbid you to touch me." Applause greeted her, but the audience was alarmed. As Miss Claxton remarked: "I will beg no more," the actors began to dodge the burning wreckage that fell on the stage and the audience rose. Mrs. Farren and Murdoch stepped to the footlights and bade the people to sit down, while J. B. Studley shouted: "Ladies and gentlemen, there will be no more of the play, of course; you can all go out if you will only keep quiet." Miss Claxton at the other end of the stage begged the people to keep cool, saying: "We are between you and the flames."

In a moment she was obliged to flee for her life. The actors had only time to seek the doors. The panic had begun in the gallery and spread through the audience upstairs, but the ground floor was almost cleared. Burroughs was upstairs in his dressing room doomed to death. Murdoch was never seen again. Miss Claxton and Miss Harrison made for one exit, Miss Girard and the minor actors made for another. The four actors were praised highly for their presence of mind and courage which was credited with preventing a worse stampede. The Fire Marshal, however, expressed the opinion in his report that in all public places the curtain should be lowered and the audience dismissed on the slightest indication of fire. He found that the employes of the theater, instead of giving the alarm immediately to the police or fire department, undertook to put out the fire by knocking it down about the stage with a long pole. This set fire to the mimic house of canvas which covered the players. They made no use of water although there was an ample supply through a two and a half inch pipe.

As the burning fragments of scenery began to fall on the stage the audience appeared transfixed, but only for a moment. It rose again as by a single impulse and rushed for the exits in a struggle for life. Rochefert, the head usher, opened a small door at the end of the vestibule and increased the chances of escape. He entered the auditorium in an effort to allay the excitement but without avail.

A fire alarm from the First Precinct station house was followed by a general alarm and a call for the reserves. The fire was beyond control before the engines were in position. Two-thirds and perhaps a larger portion of the audience was still in the dress circle and the gallery. Five or six hundred persons were there—among them three hundred victims of the fire.

Charles Vine testified that the fire reached the gallery ceiling in four minutes after he saw it on the stage. He raised a window over Flood's Alley on

the east side of the building, but seeing no chance to escape in that direction, he leaped over the front of the gallery into the dress circle and was injured severely. He was the last one to get out alive. He did not think the stairs fell until burned down and was positive that many victims were overcome by heat in the gallery, and never reached the stairs at all.

A few lowered themselves to the orchestra by the railings and got out. A man descended from a small window over Flood's Alley to the roof of the station house. Another was overcome as he reached the window and sat motionless until he fell back into the flames.

Those who escaped unharmed gathered in the street. Among them were the victims more or less severely injured and in need of aid. The firemen were obliged to save the surrounding property and succeeded in this.

Mr. Rogers, business manager of the theater, told the Fire Marshal 405 persons or more sat in the gallery which filled it unusually well. As a rule the gallery holds the most restless and the most alert persons in an audience. They were the first of all to scent danger and were on their feet as soon as the first spark fell on the stage. Under the calm self-possession of Miss Claxton's assurance that there was no danger, they sat down again, but for a moment only. They were even more furious in their rush when they rose again. The only escape was a doorless shaft eight feet, six inches wide from the ground up. The partitions were abutted by the ends of the seats. Soon the flames overhead were close to the very brows of the people in the gallery. While the stairs were jammed by the mass eager to get out all at once, the younger persons leaped from the tops of the partitions on the heads and shoulders of those below and bore them down. Smoke rolled over them in dense volumes; the lights went out. It became impossible to move.

The next day a great heap which seemed to consist of wreckage proved to be a mass of human bodies. Something was lacking from every one, the head, an arm, a leg. The jewels shone brightly; the clothing of all was charred. The firemen worked all day and all the next night. The bodies were ranged on the floor of the Old Adams Street Market.

A public funeral of the unknown dead took place Saturday in the afternoon. It passed through Schermerhorn Street, and perfected its arrangement in Flatbush Avenue. The Twenty-third Regiment opened its hollow square and rested at "order arms," while the Forty-seventh took the right of line, headed by its band. The seventeen hearses and forty-five undertakers' wagons with from one to four coffins each, formed in double column. The Twenty-third was guard of honor. Carriages with relatives, with clergymen and officials followed. The Thirteenth Regiment and drum corps brought up the rear. The burial was on Battle Hill, the highest point in Greenwood Cemetery.

Two hundred and seventy were buried.

The funeral took place on a bleak and stormy winter's day. The gale drove the crowd to seek shelter in the Gothic gatehouse, and those who could not get inside huddled around the structure to escape the wind and driving snow. A circular trench had been dug, fourteen feet wide and eight feet deep. A cone of earth twenty feet in diameter was left in the center, for the base of a monument. The procession of 2,000 persons entered to the tolling bell at 2.45 o'clock and passed down Battle Avenue to the grave. The clergymen, the Rev. A. P. Putnam, the Rev. John Parker, and the Rev. Joseph Odell stood on the right. Sixty German singers from the Brooklyn Saengerbund, South Brooklyn Quartet Club, Schutzenlust and Maennerchor led by W. Groschel occupied the central plot. The coffins were placed in a double row, heads pointing toward the center.



The choir sang Abt's "On Every Height There Lies Repose." The Rev. Dr. Parker read the service and Mayor Schroeder threw earth on the coffins. The weather prevented Dr. Putnam from delivering a funeral address. Mr. Odell pronounced the benediction and the societies sang Kullak's "Abendlied," beginning "Under the Greenwood There Is Peace." The assemblage dispersed and at 3.40 o'clock forty-two grave diggers were filling the huge grave.

Claude De Blenau Burroughs and Henry S. Hitchcock, two of the actors, were buried from the "Little Church Around the Corner," in New York.

**Explosion Destroys Greenpoint Oil Works**—Lightning ignited three oil refineries which stood close together on Newtown Creek early on January 14, 1880. The Greenpoint Oil Works of Wilson & Anderson; the Locust Grove Works of James McDonald & Co., under Standard Oil control, less than a quarter of a mile north of the others, and Stone & Fleming's plant made up the group. The tank of the last concern contained 25,000 barrels. The McDonald plant was struck first, and soon after Stone & Fleming's. The roof was torn open. The firemen tried to save adjoining tanks and played water on them. Near the tank which was belching fire and smoke was another filled with gasoline. The liquid was drawn off the burning tank into lighters and canal boats. Water cooled the pipe connections and the day seemed saved.

Twenty-four men from Engine No. 1 and Hook & Ladder No. 4 were on duty, among them ten men assisting the firemen directed by John Cooper, superintendent of the plant. Charles Keegan, foreman of No. 4 stood near the gasoline tank talking to Assistant Chief Smith. Not far away were Rhodes, McKenna, McCarthy, O'Brien and Sloat of No. 6. A workman was near the burning tank and other firemen and workmen scattered in the neighborhood. The oil running into the lighters was getting warm and was cut off. Four feet of oil remained in the tank, about 4,000 barrels. Keegan and Smith had parted when Keegan saw a flash and darted for a hill. The tank had given way. Burning oil poured over the ground in torrents. Keegan was caught in its fiery embrace. Rhodes and O'Brien reached a tug pumping water on the fire. Cooper broke an arm in his flight and suffered severe burns. Captain Deary of the tugboat jumped overboard and stuck fast in the mud. Oil poured over the stringpiece and burned him to death instantly. The boats loaded with oil were devoured by flames. Others cut their cables in time to escape. The creek was ablaze with oil for fifteen minutes.

Thirty-three trolley cars were destroyed on April 30, 1901, when the car barns burned down. The building was a brick structure two stories high used as a storage house for cars which left the repairshop newly painted. It ran 300 feet along Flushing Avenue, between Nostrand and Marcy and extended through to Hopkins Street. Besides the cars it contained a large quantity of material used in repairing wires and cars. The heat was terrific and it was necessary to keep the firemen deluged with water. In spite of that, the faces and hands of quite a few were scorched.

The building was constructed originally as a shed for the horses and cars of the Flushing and Graham Avenue line. Before horses were discarded, there were twelve tracks on the ground while the upper floor was occupied by stalls. With the coming of electricity the ground floor was used for storing cars and the upper floor was stocked with wire. The emergency crew for repairing wires and tracks also had quarters there. It consisted of four men, with sleeping quarters on the Hopkins Street side. Thomas Matesson felt a gust of hot air on his

face at 10 o'clock that morning and aroused his companions. The four escaped but Matesson went back after a pocket book and was obliged to leap from a window the second time he tried to get out. His left leg was broken and he suffered internal injuries, although not of a fatal character.

While the fire was at its height the wind veered to the northwest and drove the flames in the opposite direction across Hopkins Street. The firemen on that side of the building had the same experience with the heat those on the Flushing Avenue side had had. The frame houses in Hopkins Street were barely saved. The police with drawn clubs forced the occupants to leave them. Andrew Wissel, a contractor, lived at 58 Hopkins Street. His daughter, Edna, suffering from pneumonia, was wrapped in blankets and carried out.

When the roof of the car barn collapsed huge embers were carried by the wind a block away. The front wall fell afterward. At noon among the ruins Fireman William Craven, 29 years old, of Truck No. 2, fell against a sharp piece of iron which pierced his side. He was injured seriously. The loss was \$100,000.

Fire broke out at 1 o'clock on Tuesday afternoon, June 18, 1901, in the furniture and furnishing warehouses of J. Kurtz & Son, 169 to 173 Smith Street. They occupied a frontage of 75 feet in the street and ran through Wyckoff Street on the south side about 175 feet. The loss was \$435,000.

St. Agnes' Church at Hoyt and Sackett Streets was struck by lightning on Tuesday afternoon, July 2, 1901, and burned out completely during a heavy wind and thunder storm. Monsignor James S. Duffy and Father Flynn, living in the parish house across the street were among the first to see that the church was burning. The two clergymen called upon the crowds that had gathered for volunteers and were joined by fifty to seventy-five men. Mgr. Duffy was too greatly overcome to be able to unlock the church door on Sackett Street. After Sexton Finn arrived there was another delay of five minutes before the doors were flung open. The fire was in the loft over the great organ and the volunteers had no means of reaching it. Almost half an hour passed after the discovery of the fire before Engine 104 reached the building. The volunteers had looked on helplessly while the flames broke through the roof. Ten minutes passed before they realized that the entire interior was doomed. The back draught carried the flames along the right wall and ignited the hard pine finish which burned like tinder. The volunteers made a rush for the doors, but not all escaped. Those who were penned in by the flames sprang into the windows and succeeded in opening some of them. At this juncture the firemen arrived. The force of water was so slight they were obliged to abandon all effort to save the interior. Ladders were thrown against the building to rescue the imprisoned volunteers. A frail fireman named Spellman brought down a carpenter named Dunn weighing 200 pounds. His ladder turned as he neared the bottom but Spellman was able to deposit the heavy carpenter on the ground safely. James Flannelly as assistant foreman was struck on the back by a falling stone 500 pounds in weight and badly injured. The loss was \$300,000.

Fire destroyed the plant of the National Enamelling and Stamping Company early on the afternoon of Thanksgiving Day in 1901. The plant occupied a series of structures one to three stories high fronting on Metropolitan Avenue, but covering the site of the old Forty-second Regiment Armory, torn down a few years before. It extended back almost to the dwelling houses in Driggs Avenue and in North First Street. The police attached to the Bedford Avenue station were the first to discover the flames. Their building and that of the



Firemen's Association, both at Bedford Avenue and North First Street, were saved only by the heroic work of the fire fighters. Both buildings began to smoke. The police were obliged to remove all their property and the relics of the firemen were also taken to a place of safety. Another force of firemen was obliged to work close to the brick wall in Driggs Avenue. Several of them were injured by bricks falling from the tottering structure. Other firemen were overcome by heat and smoke.

While the fire was raging the police tried to have the tenants vacate their dwelling houses which were threatened. This they refused to do until they were actually burning and the police were obliged to expel them by force. Although gallons of water were poured into the ruins they continued to belch flames like a furnace. This was due to the escape of hundreds of cubic feet of gas from the destroyed motors placed in the plant and also from the street mains. At times the flames rose fifty feet.

The body of George Koch, the aged, grey haired watchman was found in the wreckage of the company's office on the North Second Street side of the plant, charred beyond recognition. Near him was his lantern convincing proof that he was trying to escape after sending in an alarm of fire. The body of his faithful dog was also found at the same place. As the day was Thanksgiving the officials of the company insisted that no fire was in the plant and that everything had been looked after on the eve of a holiday. The solution of the mystery was lost with the watchman's life. About 800 persons were thrown out of work, most of them with large families or widowed mothers dependent on them. The loss was \$500,000.

One man was killed and several others were injured when three walls fell at a spectacular fire on Saturday night February 8, 1902. The factory of the Shadbolt Manufacturing Company was destroyed. It stood at Cumberland Street and Flushing Avenue and produced wagons and trucks. Some of the injured were spectators who did not remain outside the police lines. As the boiler exploded with a roar one wall tumbled down on Engine 110 and rendered it useless. The others fell simultaneously. They bore live trolley wires to the ground where they hissed and seethed until the current was shut off. Huge crowds witnessed the spectacle and five and ten rows of them crowded within sixty feet of the falling walls in spite of the police. Fully a third of the engines and hose carts and trucks of the department were called out.

The building was in the form of an L running from Flushing Avenue to Park along Cumberland Street and directly opposite the Navy Yard. One part of the building adjoined a new building just erected in the Navy Yard, and for a time this structure was in danger. The flames gained such headway that there was nothing for the firemen to do except to save the surrounding buildings. The neighborhood was dotted with frame houses with a few large tenement houses scattered here and there. All were of frame and highly combustible. Their roofs sizzled as soon as water was played on them, so hot had they become.

The flames shot up through the center of the building almost straight. The walls were soon undermined and the roof ready to fall. In less than three-quarters of an hour both fell, part within and part without the enclosure. The electric power was cut off and the Graham and Flushing Avenue cars were stalled all night.

Deputy Chief Sam Duff was badly hurt; Battalion Chief Patrick Nevins suffered a crushed head and died from his injury; Captain Oswald of Engine



22 likewise suffered a crushed head, and was mortally injured. He was driver for Chief Croker. Joseph Reilly of 354 North Elliott Place was injured similarly by having a crushed head and died subsequently. James Gilan a policeman was stunned by a falling electric wire and taken away unconscious. Father Remey of the Navy Yard administered the last rites of the Church to the injured in a saloon where they had been taken. The loss was \$300,000.

Three firemen were killed by a falling wall early on the morning of December 26, 1902, in John Arbuckle's cooperage, 214 Plymouth Street. Thomas S. Coppinger, 42 years old, a battalion chief, was killed with Lieutenant William F. Jeffrey, 54 years old, of the water tower and Michael J. O'Toole, 24 years old, of Hook and Ladder Truck, No. 56. Plymouth Street was about fifty feet wide between buildings, an alley with factory buildings on each side. They included such inflammable material as paint works, a cork factory, Bliss' machine shops, a brewery, and other establishments all included within the narrow block bounded by Plymouth, Water, Jay and Bridge Streets. The flames were in the five story brick building employed for the manufacture of barrels for the Arbuckle Sugar Refining Company. The walls were of the flimsy character permitted before there were stringent building laws. The hoops and staves stacked in huge piles on floors and beams soaked in oil made a lively bonfire. Soon the structure with its contents was ablaze. The cork factory of the Williamsburg and Armstrong Branch of the cork trust caught fire and was threatened with destruction. The water pressure did not seem enough to carry the streams beyond the second floors. Masury's paint works across the street were lapped by flame. Coppinger leaped on the water tower when it arrived and directed the work of the firemen. The walls had been exposed to the flames for half an hour and looked strong enough to stand indefinitely. Without warning the upper front of the Arbuckle building bulged and fell outward, wrecking the tower. Coppinger was taken out alive and died on the way to a hospital. The two others were killed instantly.

Without warning late on Saturday afternoon, September 26, 1903, flames shot up from the sub-cellar of the Southern Station Power House of the Brooklyn Heights Railroad at Fifty-second Street and First Avenue, to the roof. One hundred employees cleaning and oiling the twelve immense generators fifty feet above the main floor in the center of the building fled in panic and escaped. A cable tunnel ran parallel with Fifty-second Street from its beginning at a point half way between the harbor and First Avenue to Second Avenue, large enough to drive through with a horse and wagon. Somewhere in this tunnel the flames started and ate their way to the power plant.

When the power house gave vent to the fire there was a quick puff of flame and the generators were enveloped. The oil-soaked insulations spread the flames with incredible rapidity. In another instance, flames and sparks shot out in all directions as the switchboards were reached. They were on the second floor slightly above the generators. Scores of switches were destroyed. While they were smothered by the flames, the yellow pine roof of the big brick structure began to burn and was ablaze a moment later its entire length.

As soon as the engineer in charge realized the source of the fire he cut out all the feed wires leading from the tunnel to the poles in Second Avenue.

All this happened so quickly that the employes were dumbfounded. The fire had passed from sub-cellar to the roof before it was possible to call the fire department. Three alarms were sent in but before the third was rung the fire had done its work.

While the dynamos were not damaged seriously the feed wires supplying the elevated road and surface lines in all directions were burned out and the entire southern part of the city was crippled in regard to transit. After three hours' delay connections were made with other power houses. The Fifth Avenue, Third Avenue, Hamilton Avenue, Fifteenth Street, Bay Ridge Avenue, and both divisions of the Fifth Avenue elevated suffered most inconvenience.

Twenty thousand persons waited at the Gravesend race track for cars of any kind to take them home. When the cab drivers learned the situation they demanded \$5 a fare. Most of the race goers waited more than two hours for trains; and three hours passed before the railroad was able to handle the crowd. At the same time thousands of other persons were waiting at the Brooklyn Bridge to get home from business. The damage was estimated at \$170,000.

John Kearney, formerly a detective, kept a liquor store at High and Bridge Streets in 1903. On Saturday night, September 26, thirty customers rushed to the door when they heard the gong of a fire engine just outside. There had been a call from Gold and Marshall Streets and Engine 107 was hurrying to the scene. The driver was John Trihy, a careful man, and Captain Platt was in charge of the company. The horses galloped down Pearl Street and had turned into High, a narrow thoroughfare, crowded on Saturday nights. As Trihy approached Bridge Street, the grade descended more steeply and the horses gained speed. He hoped there would be no obstruction at the corner as he reached it and he tried to rein in his galloping team, but the momentum was too great.

Acting Battalion Chief Fitzgerald was working in place of Chief Matschke of the Twenty-first Battalion, and his light wagon driven by William Hamilton of 134 Clinton Street. He heard Trihy's engine bell and thought he could cross High Street before the heavier vehicle reached the crossing. But Trihy did not hear anything. He thought he had his horses under control at the crossing, when he suddenly saw the Battalion Chief. His pole missed the horse and struck the wagon. The acting Battalion Chief was hurled to the sidewalk with his driver. A crowd rushed to aid the injured men and Trihy feared he would run them down. He clenched his teeth and swung his horses into the open door of Kearney's saloon. The customers were just reaching the door when the foam-flecked horses were upon them. They jumped this way and that and escaped injury. Fitzgerald and Hamilton were badly lacerated and bruised but beyond that unharmed. The fire itself was trifling.

Fire destroyed the car barns of the Brooklyn City and Newtown Railroad (De Kalb Avenue Line) early on Friday, January 15, 1904. They were situated at DeKalb Avenue, Central Avenue and Stockbridge Street in the densely populated section called upper Dutchtown. The fire started in the three-story building which had been the car barn of the DeKalb Avenue Line before the introduction of electricity. It ran along DeKalb Avenue for 250 feet and extended back to Stockton Street. From Stockton Street it ran back to Central Avenue for 200 feet or more. The Central Avenue front of this triangular structure looked out on Myrtle Avenue likewise. At the apex of the building was a higher wall which threatened to topple over on the Myrtle Avenue elevated line to Ridgewood. Traffic was stopped as a result until the flames were under control.



Nobody knew how the fire started except that it was discovered on the third floor. The interior was a raging furnace within a few minutes, and twenty odd men in the building fled for their lives. James Callahan, nineteen years old, of 19 Oliver Street, was penned in the third floor. When he leapt from a window into a life net he fell out of the net and struck the ground suffering severe injuries.

Scores of families in the frame buildings adjoining were turned out of their homes. The walls of the doomed building kept falling in pieces till noon and kept the firemen dodging the falling bricks. The loss was \$140,000.

The two upper floors of E. W. Bliss & Co's factory at Adams and Plymouth Streets were burned out on Friday afternoon January 22, 1904. The factory occupied most of the block bounded by John, Pearl, Plymouth and Adams Streets and was six stories high. The fireboats on the river threw powerful streams from that side and drove back the flames at a time when it was thought the whole structure was doomed. Fully 1,500 employees got out in good order. The firemen saw that quick work was necessary to save the building as well as those adjoining, the Arbuckle building being most in danger. Four alarms were sent out, therefore, in quick succession. Deputy Chief Lally, just placed in command of Brooklyn's fire fighters arrived on the second alarm and worked with a will. Acting Chief Kruger arrived from Manhattan and took command.

It was still daylight when the thousands of spectators saw the death of Lieutenant George Gibson of Hook & Ladder Truck No. 68. The truck stationed at fire headquarters in Jay Street responded to the first alarm. A ladder had been set against the building on the Adams Street side and Gibson ran up to a point about sixty feet from the ground. There he lost his footing, probably overcome by the smoke. He dropped down the ladder and was impaled on a hook of the fire truck. He died instantly. Gibson was thirty-eight, a giant in stature and had been with the department for ten years. He left a wife and family. The fire burned for two hours. The loss was about \$125,000.

Twelve persons were cut off from the stairs when an explosion fired the Brooklyn Chair Company's factory on February 9, 1904. Five persons were dead and one missing when the toll was taken next day. Three bodies were found in the ruins—those of Christopher Cronin, 30 years old of 47 Sumner Avenue, a foreman; Lizzie Pfrunder, 19 years old, of 47 Sumner Avenue; and John Ruth of 328 Maujer Street; John Stembler, 25 years old, leaped from a third-story window 35 feet above the street and died in the Cumberland Street Hospital next day from a broken leg and internal injuries; Edward Bushnell, 56 years old of 92 Stockton Street, died in the Brooklyn Hospital. Stembler lived at Broadway and Jamaica Avenue.

The building was an easy mark for flames. It also held a quantity of turpentine and other inflammable material. It stood at 118 Waverley Avenue, between Myrtle and Park Avenues. The Rev. Dr. Fulton built it as a home for the Central Baptist Church, but the congregation was disbanded. It was of brick with a high peaked roof and for years was a landmark. The rose window near the peak bore the sign of the chair company which was the more striking on that account. It was owned by the estate of Mary E. Cowperthwaite and occupied by the factory of which James E. Conway was treasurer. It was valued at \$50,000. Legal measures were contemplated for violation of the building laws.



Flames shot skyward like a volcano when the paint work of the F. W. Devoe and C. T. Raynolds companies were burned out on February 20, 1904. The group of buildings fronted on Plymouth and John Streets and took in almost the entire block between Gold Street and Hudson Avenue. The neighborhood is densely populated. Chief Croker came over from Manhattan and took command. Fireboats on the river made up for the weak pressure from the hydrants and deluged the fire with salt water. The fire was out at midnight when the paint works had been destroyed. The adjoining property was saved and this was considered sufficient reason for congratulating the department. General Edward L. Molineux a member of the firm was on hand early and watched the progress of the flames. Frank Maher of Engine 105, slipped from a ladder and fell thirty feet to the ground. He suffered injuries to the back and internally. Chief Croker estimated the loss at \$500,000.

The Vegetable Seed Oil Company's plant, at 70 Irvine Street, South Brooklyn, was burned out Monday afternoon, April 4, 1904. Fifteen engines and the fireboats "New Yorker" and "David A. Boody" responded to the alarms. Battalion Chief John A. Dooley was thrown violently to the pavement when his horse, running through State Street, struck the horse of a baker's wagon driven by John Bannon. Evidently Bannon did not hear the gong sounded by Gasper Wiseman, Dooley's driver. Dooley's left leg was injured, but he was able to attend to his duties. The building was burned out completely, only the walls being left. Twenty-five men escaped with their lives, but made no attempt to fight the fire. The company had offices at 15 Whitehall Street, Manhattan. It was a part of the William B. Dunham Coconut Oil Company. The loss was \$50,000.

One man was killed and another badly burned by an explosion of a steam drying cylinder in the dye works of William Meister, 56 North First Street, Friday, April 15, 1904. Four young women also were burned and bruised, and other employees injured more or less severely. The dead man was Samuel Troller, 58 years old, of 409 West 47th Street, Manhattan. He had been employed to attend the cylinder for thirty years. The force of the explosion was so great the iron cylinder was torn apart, and the floor filled with steam. All those present were thrown down by the shock. Meister blamed Troller for negligence in not opening the exhaust pipe. He also said that until a short time before the explosion the dryer had been operated by hand. Steam was introduced and after that time Troller had complained of not having enough to do and had grown careless.

Three fire horses were killed and twenty others gravely injured on the night of January 31, 1904. It was pitch dark when fire was discovered in the American Manufacturing Company's plant in Greenpoint at the foot of Noble Street. The two-story structure was filled with jute, the article used by the concern. Its deadly smoke-fumes fell like a pall over Greenpoint and compelled the spectators in the streets to beat a quick retreat to find fresh air. After a display of unusual courage and almost superhuman effort, the firemen were able to get inside the building. Thirty of them were assigned to play the hose on the burning jute. Assisted by volumes of water from the engines and from the fireboat "Boody," they had the flames well in hand when what they most feared happened. After ten minutes of severe fighting a back draught swept the deadly gas in the faces of the men and enveloped them in smoke. Twelve fell at their posts immediately, but others contrived to grope their way out to get help. Two men, Dressel and Rink, were overcome

completely. At that juncture Captain Rickenberg of Engine Company No. 138, led his men into the dense smoke to rescue their comrades. A number of them became delirious. Chief William McCarthy who hastened also to the rescue, was overcome at the entrance to the building and sank unconscious while shouting for help.

The spectators broke through the fire lines to assist the firemen. As soon as Chief Lally arrived he ordered the men to devote all their energy to the task of extricating their comrades. They swarmed through the building, risking their lives recklessly, to find the victims of the deadly fumes. This could be done only by stumbling over them in the dark. When one was found a shout brought help and the senseless man was carried to the open air. Captain Rickenberg dragged Rink and Dressel by their coat collars to the door. There all three sank unconscious. By that time twenty firemen had been overcome. Some of them were delirious, and had to be restrained from rushing back. Battalion Chief Rogers emerged satisfied there were no others in the building. Suddenly he threw up his hands and dashed back. He was brought out with difficulty, when it was discovered he was out of his head. It required four men to restrain him. He was badly burned about the head.

Christopher Dressel was found to be in a dying condition. Father Thomas McGronen, the department chaplain, administered the last sacrament in the street as his comrades stood uncovered. He was twenty-four and left a wife and child. He had been in the department a little more than a year. Rink, his companion, never recovered consciousness. Peter Gaffney, also of Engine No. 138, died the next day in St. Catherine's Hospital.

A notable incident of the fire was the presence of four priests from St. Anthony's Church, headed by Monsignor O'Hare, who aided in reviving the injured firemen. Father McGronen, of St. Anne's Church, the chaplain of the department, aided nobly in the rescues. The priests stood in the full sweep of the smoke and could not be kept back. The fire was remarkable for the almost entire lack of a blaze. The entire building was in darkness, and this added to the difficulty. The building was damaged only slightly. The loss was about \$10,000.

The Academy of Music was destroyed by fire the morning of Monday, November 30, 1903. Flames were discovered just before nine o'clock. The early clerks in the offices on Montague Street were at their desks. The doors of the Academy were open. The scenery of a dramatic company which had been presenting "Way Down East" had been cleared from the stage and a score of decorators, caterers and assistants had entered to prepare the auditorium for the big dinner scheduled for the evening in honor of Senator Patrick H. McCarren.

John Walsh and an assistant, Walter Brooks, were at the arch of the stage. Above their heads was suspended a huge electrical sign which was to blaze out a fiery "Welcome" for the diners that night. It was being tested and was alight. Brooks was the first to discover the fire. At the time the continuous floor above the seats and on the stage was in place, and the canvas, which always was hung around the stage, inclosing it as a room for such occasions, was also in place. Brooks passed through a door in the canvas toward the Montague Street stage entrance. Between the stage canvas and the street entrance was a space of fifteen feet, piled full of scenery.



"The scenery is afire, turn out the gas," Brooks yelled, as he ran back through the door to the stage.

"There is no gas turned on," A. J. Stratton, electrician in charge, called back. At the moment Stratton and his brother were fixing the chandelier, always suspended in the center of the stage for such occasions.

Instantly there was commotion in the big room. The men all rushed to the spot where Brooks said he had seen the fire. Looking through the door they beheld behind the stage a blaze shooting fifteen feet or more above their heads. They unbent the hose kept at that point and turned on a stream which had the same effect as a bucket of water. Almost in an instant, they said, a great sheet of flame was sweeping around and above the stage. The Strattons had run across the stage and into a room used by the electrician for storage. He owned all the apparatus in the building, and rented it when it was used. A. J. Stratton wanted to save a new coat he had left hanging in this room.

When they turned to leave the room their escape across the stage had been cut off. It looked like desperation. Then they remembered they could reach the main entrance of the theater by passing under the floor among the seats. They started out this way, but in the center of the building the younger brother became exhausted in the darkness under the floor and fell. It took some effort to get him on his feet again. The two men reached the door not a moment too soon. All the others rushed from the place the moment the alarm was given. The fire started so high up that no adequate explanation of its cause was ever made. One of the workmen ran around to the Engine House, No. 105, in Pierrepont Street, and the firemen sounded the alarm.

Dr. C. B. Parker, a dentist at 167 Remsen Street, had a workroom in the rear, and his instrument table was not twenty feet from the southeast corner of the Academy. He was picking up a drill from the table to operate on a patient in the chair, when the sound of falling glass attracted his attention. Smoke was pouring from the cornice of the stage of the Academy. He sprang to a telephone and gave Fire Headquarters its first information that the historic building was hopelessly afire. He dismissed his patient and tried to save his home.

Another person in Remsen Street discovered the fire about as soon as anyone else. A young woman employed as clerk by the Title Guarantee and Trust Company, saw the flames burst from the chimney on the southeast corner of the Academy at 8:40 o'clock. A shower of bricks and mortar fell on the Title Guarantee and Trust Company's building. To be on the safe side the company removed many valuable documents to the office of the Long Island Trust Company in the Temple Bar Building.

The Fire Department officials ordered the building vacated. Clerks, bookkeepers and officers were driven out, and the salvage corps covered the desks and other property with their big fireproof blankets. The addition the company had been building was in the immediate rear of the Academy and suffered somewhat from the great heat, but little directly from the flames. Water poured into the building and the floors and walls were blackened by soot and smoke. At 11 o'clock, Frank Bailey, President of the Company, announced that the vaults were untouched, and the company would be open for business the next day. All titles to be closed the day of the fire would be closed at the same hour the following day.



The Manufacturers' Branch of the Title Guarantee & Trust Company had offices in the Manufacturers' Association Building toward Court Street. The Peoples Trust Company was in the Art Association Building at the Clinton Street end of the block. In the Manufacturers' Branch the vaults had been opened and the staff had assembled for business. William J. Coombs, chairman of the board of directors, ordered that all books and papers be returned to the vaults, and the desks swept clean. The vault was separate from the building, and the officers of the company were confident that it could withstand any fire.

George W. Chauncey, President of the Mechanics' Bank, offered the hospitality of its offices to Mr. Coombs, and the Manufacturers' Branch opened headquarters there soon after ten o'clock, occupying a corner, with Frank L. Spiffen, assistant manager, in charge.

The People's Trust Company did not move. Edward Jackson, like Mr. Coombs, had ordered everything returned to the vaults. The People's found it unnecessary to take advantage of an offer of the Franklin Trust Company to cash all checks, and its business suffered little interruption.

The Hamilton Trust Company in the Real Estate Exchange opposite the Academy in Montague Street, made preparations to move out, but did not go further. The Brooklyn Trust Company likewise prepared to move, but it was in little danger.

No fire had made such progress since the Brooklyn Theater burned down in 1876. The water supply was found to be wholly insufficient and streams could not be thrown where they were needed. As a result the flames spread to buildings in the rear occupied by the Title Guarantee & Trust Company and other financial institutions. The Phoenix Building, the Garfield Building, and a few of the dwelling houses in the block in Remsen Street behind the Academy soon caught. Dr. Parker was at No. 167; Dr. Wunderlich at 165, and Ex-Register Hugh McLaughlin at 163. Mrs. Morse rented 161; Mrs. Leich had a boarding house in 159. William C. De Witt occupied 157 and Mrs. Bussey lived in 155 and 153 at the corner.

Hugh McLaughlin was an old volunteer fireman and had been Democratic leader in Kings County for years. He just was passing from the stairs to the breakfast room in the rear of the first floor, when a quick ring at the doorbell brought an immediate response. John B. Byrne, Chief Clerk in the Appellate Division was there. "The Academy of Music is on fire," he told Mr. McLaughlin quietly, "and you must get your folks out as quickly as possible." The old leader was not disturbed. He saw the breeze was not strong enough nor in the right direction to imperil him or his neighbors. He informed Mrs. McLaughlin, who was in the parlor, and the other members of his family, to prepare for any emergency that might compel them to move elsewhere temporarily; but he made no move to leave the premises himself. While the neighbors were trying frantically to save their furniture, he stood calmly in his doorway unconcerned. Firemen ran a light hose through his hall, and he directed their work as actively as if he had belonged to the uniformed force.

There was good reason, nevertheless, for alarm. The neighbors were exposed not only to the fire; they were in equal danger of having their houses crushed by the forty-five-foot wall in the rear of the Academy. When it became apparent that the main damage would be confined to the old building

their fear that the wall would fall upon their homes grew stronger, and threw them into panic.

At this juncture Justice Almet F. Jenks of the Appellate Division arrived to tell McLaughlin the bad news. He was accompanied by James Shannon, a court officer. As they passed through Montague street from his home in Pierrepont Street, to reach the new court rooms in the Borough Hall, they heard a loud explosion in the Academy directly opposite the stage. Brick and mortar rattled, and the particles fell about their feet. Justice Jenks hastened to the McLaughlin home only to find the old volunteer directing the firemen in laying hose through his hallway. About the same time, William C. Courtney, an assistant district attorney, arrived with Peter Walsh, Michael Ryan, formerly assessor, and other friends. All tried to persuade McLaughlin to leave the house, but he refused. When they asked his permission to take Mrs. McLaughlin away, he replied dryly: "Go and ask her." Mrs. McLaughlin invariably replied that she would remain just as long as her husband did. She said Mr. McLaughlin knew what he was doing, and she would stand by him. At ten o'clock the opinion of the old fire-fighter was justified. The fire was under control but the big wall still bulged perilously, and the fire lines were extended to the little breakfast room in the rear of the McLaughlin home.

Flames broke from the windows of the Brooklyn Library, Montague Street Branch, directly opposite the Academy entrance, and the walls began to steam and sizzle, but a drenching stream was poured on them and the building suffered nothing more than broken windows. Dennett's eating house on the east side of Fulton Street was afire for a short time, but the damage outside of the Academy itself was negligible.

The first hose was turned on the fire at 9:06 o'clock, eighteen minutes after the first alarm had reached headquarters. But the firemen worked with skill as soon as they reached the fire. Twelve companies from the water front to Bedford Avenue and from all South Brooklyn responded. Almost half the borough sent engines, hose carts, hook and ladder companies and trucks. All were rushing to the scene of the fire, and in many streets traffic was stopped for several minutes to give a clear way to the drivers who were whipping their horses into a foam. The four-alarm was followed by several special alarms for engines and hose.

Ten or twelve engines arrived at the fire at almost the same moment—a few minutes after nine. They wheeled into place promptly, tapped hydrants and stretched their hose for many blocks around the Academy of Music. The water pressure was so weak, when first turned on, the streams did not carry ten feet, and the firemen were in consternation. Flames were shooting up from the roof of the Academy. The heat was intense and the firemen were powerless. But the streams of water gradually increased in size, and by 9:15 dozens of streams were playing on the flames.

They were as effective as so many buckets of water. Chief James Murray, of the Brooklyn Fire Department, saw at a glance that the flames were gaining on the firemen in spite of all they could do. He decided to bend all the efforts of the department to preventing the spread of the fire, and by 9:20 streams were playing on the walls of the Brooklyn Library, the Real Estate Exchange and People's Trust Company Building, and the other structures opposite the Academy in Montague Street. A hose was run through the Manufacturers' Association Building, and from the roof many streams were poured on the



adjoining buildings and on Groarty's saloon. On the other side of the Academy as many as eight streams were applied through the Art Association Building to the structures on the Remsen Street side.

Chief Purroy arrived from New York at 9:40 and took command. He approved the work of Murray and made few changes in his arrangements. At the time he arrived eighteen engines, four trucks and a water tower were engaged in fighting the fire. About that time the roof and walls fell with a loud report. Some one hundred and eighty firemen were playing thirty streams on the points of danger. When the fire was at its height there was a marked reduction in the water pressure. Water Department officials asked Chief Murray to lessen the amount of water used, as it appeared that the flames were under control.

"Don't shut off a drop," Murray shouted angrily. "I can't fight fire if you do not give me water. The supply has been poor ever since we started."

At that point the hose began to give out. Not fewer than ten breaks occurred at one time. Some of the firemen were left with an empty nozzle in their hands, while the smoke swept into their faces. Some of the hose was old and worn out; in other places it was broken by short kinks. The fire was conquered by ten o'clock and by 10:30 had consumed about all the inflammable material within the Academy walls.

The next day a body was found in the ruins of McGroarty's saloon. It was that of John Brown, who had been at work in the Academy. Reaching the street he went to the aid of McGroarty, and was helping other men remove valuable articles. He was seen to re-enter the Academy just as the stage wall fell, carrying down the roof of McGroarty's place. James Shield shouted a warning to him but it went for naught.

Miss M. S. Beardsley had the credit of saving the Garfield building. She was a stenographer doing work for the lawyers on the fifth floor, where Franklin Taylor had an office in the rear overlooking the Academy. He was in court, but Miss Taylor's curiosity led her into his sanctum. Taylor had left papers strewn about the top of a table when he went home on Saturday night. They included documents in estates, briefs and evidence in several important cases worked up with care, and worth thousands of dollars. Miss Beardsley found the temperature of the room unbearable. The binding of the law books was curling away from the cardboard covers, and the heavy manila envelopes on the table were turning brown. She carried out the papers and the books, the chairs and other inflammable material, to the limit of her strength. Just then Assemblyman McInerney, who occupied a part of the office, entered, and saw the danger. The wooden window frame of Mr. Taylor's office was burning on the outside, and the glass was broken by the heat, while the inside of the sash was blistered.

McInerney and Miss Beardsley decided to summon the aid of firemen, and soon after a stream was playing on the Garfield Building. A line of hose was carried to the sixth floor and a stream was poured upon McGroarty's flaming building below. The flames were thus diverted from the office building. While the firemen said it never was in any danger, Mr. Taylor expressed his conviction that it would have shared the fate of the Academy if it had not been for the thoughtfulness and courage of the young stenographer.

## CHAPTER XI

### RAMBLES IN OLD BROOKLYN

WALT WHITMAN contributed twenty-five historical and reminiscent articles in 1861-2 to the "Brooklyn Standard," a weekly newspaper. They appeared irregularly until he went to the front at Fredericksburgh where his brother, George, lay wounded after a battle. These articles were published in Whitman's "Uncollected Poetry and Prose," edited by Emory Holloway.\* Whitman writes:

One of the oldest and roomiest burial grounds in Brooklyn was that in Fulton Avenue, just above Smith Street. This was the depository of the dead belonging to the Old Dutch Church that stood at the commencement of the present century on a location upon the turnpike road, now Fulton Avenue, just above Duffield Street. (This is about as near as we can get at it. We have never seen the old meeting house, known in history as 'The Brooklyn Church,' but there are persons yet living in Brooklyn who have, and can point out the spot, as they have pointed it out accurately to us.) That was a real Old Dutch Church. It stood right in the middle of the highway, which passed up and down both sides of it. It was a round building or octagon, and had a high conical roof; we think we have been told it was thatched, but we are not certain. The church was dismantled and removed early in the present century—somewhere about the year 1803-08, or perhaps previously. In its stead, a massive, square, dark-gray, old-fashioned stone church was built, the location being changed to Joralemon Street. The site of this gray stone was the same one now occupied by the Dutch Reformed Church, in the rear of the City Hall. We have been in that gray-stone church often—went to Sunday School there. It was torn down and gave place to the present building some twenty-five years ago.

As to burial deposits contemporary with the historical Old Dutch Church first mentioned, the said burial deposits were often made, in aboriginal times, irrespective of any regular ground specifically belonging to any church. Families here, in those times, had their own burial places. On the farms around Brooklyn, and on the ground that is now in Brooklyn, far inside of its outer wards, it was not uncommon, half a generation ago, to frequently see these last resting spots of the passed-away in the original families of this and of the island. We have frequently seen them when a youngster when rambling about this part of Kings County. We recollect one small one, in particular, containing four or five graves, close along Fulton Avenue, nearly opposite the residence of Samuel Fleet, Esq. This, no doubt, used to appertain to the old round church, destroyed fifty years ago. The graves were surrounded with a fence of open wood work, and remained there down to the grading and paving of Fulton Avenue, a few years since.

A few families of distinction had vaults belonging to, or under the pavement of, the old historical Brooklyn church. Andrew Demarest, a very aged citizen, now living, was present at the demolition of this church, mentioned as early in the present century. We remember Mr. Demarest, in a talk we once had with him on the subject of the dismantling of this church, telling us of the following among the other incidents connected with it. In removing the traces of the church the workmen came upon a dead body buried there, dressed in the complete uniform of a British officer of rank. The body was in remarkable preservation, in the midst of its showy uniform, buttons, epaulettes, gold lace, cocked hat, sword by its side, etc. It was exhumed one pleasant morning soon after the men commenced working; and the event making a good deal of talk, before noon a large part of the inhabitants of Brooklyn had collected to take a look at the body before it was removed. Among the rest, it happened there came a lady who distinctly remembered the burial of the officer, many years before. She did not know the name as she was a little girl when it happened. It was of a British officer killed at the Battle of Brooklyn in 1776, and buried there a couple of days afterward when the royal troops took possession, after Washington retreated. We think Mr. Demarest told us the lady was one of the Duffield family. What a vivid picture the whole occurrence serves to bring before us!

The church we mention, Washington made his headquarters during the day and night of his famous retreat after the battle.

In the now obliterated burial place on Fulton Avenue, above Smith Street, were, but a few seasons since, to be found members of the old families of this end of the island—from the settlers that came hither from Holland—indeed, the suggestions of a complete history of our city, from the beginning down to the late date when burials within our limits were prohibited by law. What material for reflection in that old place of graves! From it

The questions and abstracts comprising the following four or five pages are taken from or based on Professor Holloway's book, through his courtesy and that of his publishers, Doubleday, Page and Company.



and also the graveyard in Fulton Street, opposite the Globe Hotel, might be made out from the solemn installments there, during times by-gone, nearly all that relates to the personal history of our city, and, by consequence, suggesting the whole of its material history and progress."

(Here Whitman lists the old families and continues:)

"We have alluded to the old graveyard in Fulton Street, opposite the Globe Hotel. The work of removing the remains deposited here has been steadily going on for some months behind that tall, placarded fence. In three months from now, a row of magnificent stores will uprise and be completed on this ground; and then but a few years more and the recollection of the former sacredness of the spot will have entirely passed away. Gorgeous with rich goods, seen through plate-glass windows, and splendid with glittering jets of gas at night, and resonant with the hum of the voices of crowds, is, or will be, the spot. A fit illustration of the rapid changes of this kaleidoscope of alteration and death we call life.

In the war of 1812, Whitman asserts, the section around Fort Greene Park was dotted with powder houses, placed there to be far away from the village. One of them stood near or on the site of the Portland Street arsenal of Whitman's day. The land round about was hilly and unfenced. The ground on which the arsenal was built and for some distance west of it (about two acres in the blocks between Myrtle and Park Avenues and partly intersected by Hampton Avenue) was Potter's Field. Many hundreds of persons were buried there, and workmen excavating cellars in the neighborhood continually came upon remains of the burials for years thereafter.

The trenches and embankments made in 1812 remained in pretty much the same condition down to the commencement of the improvement for Washington Park. Some of the high walls of the present park are literally the ground thrown up by the patriotic hands of the men and boy volunteers we have spoken of—those banks being very properly left as they were and included in the plan of the Park.

Where the City Park at the Wallabout now looks radiant in summer with grass and shade trees was a vast, low, miry, stagnant place, with a shallow depth of water covered in summer with a sickening yellow scum. Only one or two roads and a bridge made it passable. It was filled in partly by the city and partly by its owners. To show the advance the City had made at the time he wrote in 1861, Whitman gives the budget for 1831, thirty years before. It is the sum, estimated, raised and laid out to run the City of Brooklyn for the then current year:

#### BROOKLYN EXPENSES, 1831.

Police (of those days).....	\$3,000
Fire Department.....	1,400
Salaries of Officers.....	1,200
Interest on Brooklyn Debt.....	600
Water, Pumps, Cisterns, etc.....	1,200
Contingent Expenses.....	2,600

Grand Total .....\$10,000

Whitman, like Dr. Stiles, lent himself to rambles. In his youth Fulton Street below Henry was narrower. It presented the appearance of being a bustling country town, partially alive most of the time, with market and fish wagons, and their proprietors come in from miles up the island. At the upper corner on Fulton was a stately drug store, the principal one in the village. At Sands Street stood a wooden church, the predecessor of the brick church built at a later period. The Rev. John N. Maffit drew the largest congregations in Brooklyn. Revivals were in vogue. Whitman says:

A third of the young men of Brooklyn, particularly the mechanics and apprentices, and young women of the same class in life (and, oh, what pretty girls some of them were!)

"experienced religion," as it is still called. . . . On the turn of the west side of Fulton Street was the most frequented drug store, kept by Mr. Vanderhoef. Dr. Ball . . . and Dr. Wendell had offices there. . . . "Can any one who reads this," she asks, "call to mind of having a tooth drawn, or any surgical operation performed, in Vanderhoef's back room?" It makes the writer shudder, even now, to think of the array of cold steel that room presented."

Across the street was one of the few dry goods stores—kept by C. E. Bill. Terence Riley's grocery was on the lower corner of Cranberry and Fulton. Tradition said it was occupied by General Putnam before the Battle of Long Island. Samuel E. Clements made it the post office and published the "Patriot," Democratic organ, there. Old Mr. Hartshorne, the Revolutionary printer who taught Whitman the printer's art, had a case where he set types for the "Patriot" and a little stationery store on the second floor. On the upper corner of Orange and Fulton, Losee Van Nostrand lived in a comfortable but old-fashioned dwelling house. Opposite between Oakes and Parson's cabinet store was a large wooden building, erected for a Theatre and Circus. After a year it was altered into dwellings. From Van Nostrand's to the Presbyterian church where Clinton Street begins the grounds were open, shaded in front by magnificent elms. Conover & Barkaloo had a grocery store in an old building on the upper corner of Cranberry and Fulton. Hall's buildings stood there before the fire of 1848. Mrs. Hayes across the way kept a confectionery store, first at the second door below Nassau Street. The old Log Cabin of the forties was the fourth door above Orange Street, on the west side of Fulton. The population of Brooklyn was 18,000 or 20,000.

An old two story house, painted yellow in after years, stood on the west side of Fulton Street almost opposite the Central Bank of Whitman's day. It was noted as having been occupied by British troops as a hospital, and it was known to Whitman in his youth as the Hessian Hospital. The site was occupied by the handsome stores below the Mechanics' Bank. The original Military Garden was a small building replaced by a larger one in 1826-27. Colonel Greene, an eccentric officer of the Revolution was its first landlord. Many others followed him before Mr. Duflon, a Swiss, hired the premises for a public house. The upper part was used as a Masonic Hall, for political meetings, dances and public dinners.

Public gardens were conspicuous. There were four or five besides those mentioned, and they drew crowds from New York on Sundays as well as from Brooklyn. Brower's Garden was between Pierrepont and Montague Streets. It was a profusion of trees and shrubbery, but everything gave way to stores. Brooklyn was rural in character throughout, almost one huge farm and garden by contrast with what it is today.

The Pierrepont estate and the Remsen and Joralemon farms covered the Heights running down to the river from upper Fulton Street. Property was sold by the acre and goodly portions in the thirties were held at \$50 an acre.

A county poor house was established by the Board of Supervisors of Kings County, on February 25, 1829, to take care of the indigent insane. A tract of land was bought from the Martense estate in the town of Flatbush for \$3,000, and suitable buildings were begun. They were so far advanced on April 9, 1832, that all the poor were transferred from the Brooklyn Almshouse to the county institution. A separate building was provided for the insane, for it is recorded that on April 7, 1833, there were seven lunatics in the asylum. This was a small frame structure that stood back of the kitchen of the almshouse. It was torn down after serving its purpose until 1838. In 1837 a lunatic hospital was erected on the county farm and occupied in 1838. There were twenty unfortunates to occupy the building as soon as it was completed. It became the carpenter shop and store



room in 1845. In 1841 the number had increased alarmingly, and the legislature of 1844 passed a measure authorizing the erection of a new lunatic asylum for the County of Kings. Steps were taken to erect a building to shelter sixty patients and prepare for future needs. In 1901 Kings County had 2,700 resident patients, and cared for about 1,100 from Manhattan. The second building provided for the insane of the county stood in the rear of the brick Long Island State Hospital. It was a plain frame building, with a pent roof. The exterior was covered by large shingles warped by time and the elements for more than half a century. It was typical of the period in which it was built, the period of gloomy books and somber buildings that stood out from the novels of Dickens and the religious depression of the day.

In the fifties the Military Garden—a popular resort—occupied the place where the Court House now stands. The Kings County Trust Company has its offices at Fulton Street and Court Square where stood the Owen-Jones homestead, torn down in 1867, when it was supposed to be about 100 years old. At one time it was the parsonage of the First Reformed church, now at Seventh Avenue and Carroll Street. The Long Island Savings Bank bought the property. After it failed the corner was acquired by the Kings County Trust Company. A photograph of the old corner hangs in the office of Mr. Fairchild, its president.

Another beer garden where the Mechanics' Bank stands today did a thriving business. The square bounded by Fulton Street, Myrtle Avenue, Adams Street and Tillary Street contained a lot of frame buildings. When they burned down in the early fifties the vacant space was used for a circus ground. There were hay fields and cow pastures within a few blocks of the city hall. The only public eating house was in Fulton Street below the law building. In Fulton Street, about opposite the City Hall a man named Pearsall opened a dining room for the judges exclusively about 1854. Thomas Toynbee kept a saloon known as the Shakespeare at Montague and Court Streets on the site of the Continental Building. He fitted up a dining room upstairs for the judges.

Toynbee brought suit in 1856 to test the Main law, which authorized the seizure and condemnation of liquor held by a saloon keeper. It was passed by the legislature of 1854, but Governor Seymour vetoed it. The next year, however, Myron H. Clark, a Prohibition governor, was elected and signed the bill. Seizures followed. Judge St. Morris represented several of the defendants and recovered their goods by replevin. He contended from the first that the law was unconstitutional. Finally to bring the matter to a head a test case was brought by Toynbee through Morris and the law was overthrown. The Court of Appeals handed down a unanimous opinion sustaining Judge Morris' contention.

The Colonnade Garden, one of Brooklyn's old time amusement places stood on Columbia Street, opposite Middagh, in a most picturesque spot. The promenade and the lower front boxes commanded a superb view of New York City, while looking toward the bay and harbor, Governor's Island, Quarantine, Staten Island and the New Jersey hills and shores were seen. The admission was six pence. Family tickets cost \$5 and single tickets \$3, and they were good for the season. On entering the garden from Columbia Street, the stage with green baize curtains and a row of footlights stood in the southeast corner. The inclosure covered a green, grassy slope. It extended midway to Furman Street whence it was reached by a flight of stairs. From its opening on June 23, 1840, the garden became the scene of fireworks, and promenade concerts, tight rope exhibitions, concerts, cotillions and delineations. Its dramatic history began on August 6, 1840, when Mr. and Mrs. James S. Charles began a series of vaudeville entertainments. On the

occasion of the production of "Winning a Husband" and "Nature and Philosophy," a fine flag was presented to the Washington Greys, First Regiment, First Brigade by the Mayor.

No buildings on the Heights backed against the river at the time and a stately building rose at Columbia and Middagh Streets. It was known as the Colonnade Row. It consisted of eight four-story brick buildings having large wooden columns and balustrades along their fronts. To strangers it was one of the sights. It was conspicuous from the river and was much admired by strangers. The row was burned down on December 20, 1853. In 1923 William B. Davenport remembered the building, as did Theodore Smith of No. 73 Pierrepont Street, a son of the Mayor of 1850. Mr. Smith was eighty-eight.

The Abbey restaurant stood in Fulton Street near De Kalb Avenue. It recalled the cosy English homesteads of colonial days. It was part of the McComber estate which ran from Hudson to De Kalb Avenues and Fulton Street. The Abbey was the family mansion. Twenty-five years ago George Washington's commission to Ebenezer McComber was discovered in an old closet and was preserved carefully by the family representative and executor of the estate, George Powers. The Abbey retained its Italian marble chimney pieces until the last. The kitchen had its black marble mantel; the upper rooms all the evidences of wealth and taste. Huge brass fire dogs or andirons, inclosed an ample supply of blazing wood. On either side of the sculptured Parian marble pilasters were cannon, used perhaps on making a last stand against the oncoming British in the Battle of Long Island, or perchance left behind by the French fleet; perhaps by the Dutch. There were long rapiers on the walls, such as were carried by the cavaliers who fought the Ironsides of Cromwell and basket-hilted claymores. A telescope used by Paul Jones, four feet long, was presented to the owner, Mr. Sherlock by Commander Rich, U. S. N. A gun carried north by the ill-fated expedition of Sir John Franklin also found a resting place on the Abbey. There were boarding pikes without number, some of them from Rockaway Beach, used when sea fights were waged on every yard from the main to the top gallant royal. A warming pan was preserved because it was said it had warmed the bed of Washington. Sabers carried by the Brunswickers hung side by side with the clumsy weapons of the Continentals. Two of the George Rex tower muskets were discovered in a recess of the kind in old English houses. They were built usually in the thickness of the chimney wall to hold firearms safe from seizure and damp.

The famous Bank restaurant stood at Fulton Street and Hanover Place until it was torn down in 1901. The quaint building of the style familiar in the early days of Brooklyn was erected in the thirties. Its only sign was weather-beaten and inconspicuous, but the lovers of good food throughout Brooklyn knew where it was and what it offered. The foremost business and professional men gathered there every day. An unpretentious little bar stood opposite the entrance. But in the dining room beyond there was an amazing display of superb oils. Almost all of the world's living masters were represented, in the exhibit which was accounted one of the most valuable collections of art in town. Some of the pictures were worth a fortune in themselves. But the cuisine was even more attractive. No other restaurant extended the hospitality that characterized the Bank. There was about it what Shenstone meant when he wrote:

"Whoe'er has traveled life's dull round,  
Where'er his stages may have been;  
Must sigh to think he still has found—  
The warmest welcome at an inn."



The Bank Coffee House was opened first at 19 Fulton Street, May 19, 1824, with a dance. Its elegance was a matter of wonder. It was handsomely furnished and the walls were painted in landscape.

Before 1850 the Heights was sparsely settled. The streets only a few years before had been cut through the old farms and estates of Cary Ludlow, Hicks, Middagh Waring, Gideon Kimberley, Samuel Jackson, Robert and John Debevoise, Pierrepont and Remsen. On the beach at the foot of the Heights lay a rowboat, "The Pierrepont" used in going to New York. At what is now the corner of Cranberry and Willow Streets, George Gibbs grew in his garden the famous Isabella grape. His wife obtained cuttings from North Carolina and it was named for her. Its fame spread from cuttings given to neighbors. Home after home sprang up there. Finally in 1840 when half the Heights was yet fields, David Leavett, President of the American Exchange Bank of New York, built on the northwest corner of Willow and Clark Streets his famous mansion afterwards the Bowen house. By that time Clark Street had been straightened out. Where the Street had originally extended to the southwest of Willow Street, a triangle ran back 100 feet on Clark Street and 40 feet on Willow.

**Famous Old Rows**—Four three-story brick houses stood on the south side Joralemon Street, a short distance above Hicks, and extending to Garden Place. The row was built in 1846 by Albert Wells, a builder in Hicks Street. Among their occupants were Lathrop P. Safford, merchant, of New York; A. D. Wheelock, boots and shoes, New York; and member of the Board of Education; Edward H. Arnold, commission merchant, 34 Beaver Street, New York; Agnes McClune, Thomas Frere, merchant, New York; and Robert Ayres.

A similar row stood in the next block south side of Joralemon Street, a short distance above Henry. It was built by D. and M. Chauncey in 1842 when wooden buildings were being replaced by brick. Among their occupants were William J. Vanderhoef, watchmaker and jeweler, 114 Fulton Street; Daniel Chauncey, Oliver J. Noyes, H. F. Lombard, Charles Bridges, and Henry S. Hill, hosier, 202 Broadway, New York. The first brick house built in Brooklyn stood in this block.

Four two-story wooden houses with piazzas, separated by a summer house and gardens, stood in Joralemon Street, south side, one door above Henry. They were built in 1829 by a building company, and were first occupied by Captain John Rathbone, Captain James Renshaw, U. S. N., Philip Flager and Captain Robert Waterman. Captain Rathbone commanded the "Nashville" of the Red Ball Line and afterward the "Oxford" that was built for him. He later on commanded the "Columbia" of the Black Ball Line. With three mates he was washed overboard and drowned. Commodore Renshaw was afterward Commandant at the Navy Yard. Philip Flagler was a commission merchant at 62 South Street, New York. Captain Waterman commanded the "Natchez" and later the "Invincible." He became surveyor of vessels at San Francisco and afterward bought a ranch in California where he died.

Looking down Joralemon Street from the top of the hill, on the north side stood the Packer Row of brick houses with green blinds, erected in 1847. The corner house afterward made into a villa was occupied by Samuel McLean, dry goods merchant. W. Lord, whose son married a daughter of Lucretia Mott, lived in the row. John S. Hyde, a jeweler in Maiden Lane, lived next. Then there was Warren L. Russell, proprietor of the Pierrepont House, who also ran a restaurant at Hanover and Beaver Streets, New York; Moses P. Whitcomb of J. H. Prentice & Co., hat manufacturers; Samuel Sloan, presi-

dent of the Hudson River Railroad; John N. Pirnie of Schenck, Rutherford & Co., distillers at Furman Street; James H. Leggett, secretary of the Eagle Insurance Company in Wall Street; Walter Bicker, coal merchant; William F. Chichester, storage; William Hinned, proprietor of the flour mills at Broome and Lewis Streets, New York; J. L. Allien, importer; R. W. Adams, lumber merchant and also owner of the Lockett Street Railroad.

Three high stoop brick houses stood at the top of the hill and looked down on the other (south side). They were occupied by William P. Libbey of the Citizens' Gas Light Company; C. N. Bovee, a Wall Street lawyer and member of the Athenæum Club, New York; Howard C. Cady, a law partner of J. M. Van Cott; James Winter, a fancy goods merchant; and Theodore Ross, lumber merchant, foot of the street.

At the lower end were four low stoop brick houses at one time occupied by Nicholas T. Barlow, who kept a woodyard in Furman Street near State. Others were Francis Ripley, whose son, Rufus, was found dead in the Bank of New York Building in Wall Street; J. W. Weldmeyer, leather merchant, in New York; G. L. Thatford, the famous Broadway hair dresser, and Edward Greenlybach, a silver refiner at 114 Water Street. In his house a daughter was married to a sea captain, who sailed for the West Indies a few weeks later. The vessel was spoken at sea two days out but nothing ever was heard from her after that. The house on the lower corner was occupied by A. M. Earle whose two sons died the same week.

A long, low, double wooden yellow house with green shutters, stood at the foot of Joralemon, north side, the first house above Furman Street. It was the old Remsen farmhouse. Originally it occupied the top of the hill directly over its subsequent site. The grounds were entered through a wide gate in Hicks Street. It was built in the reign of King George and during the Revolution was used as a hospital for Hessian soldiers.

The Remsen farm lay between Montague and Joralemon Streets and extended from the East River to Fulton Street. When first divided into lots it contained a Moser Street, now closed, a Manhattan Street, now the lower part of Remsen, and a George Street, now included in Court Street. A portion was sold also to the city for City Hall Park. In 1824 all that remained unsold of the early farm lay between Court and Clinton Streets. Henry J. Remsen bequeathed this property to his two children, Edward and Matilda, who removed to New York. At that time the house was the home of Fanning C. Tucker of the famous ropewalk firm of Tucker, Carter & Co. In 1835 it was bought and occupied by Jonathan Trotter, just elected Mayor of Brooklyn. Mr. Trotter was a wealthy leather merchant. He was first president of the Atlantic Bank. While serving as Mayor he laid the cornerstone of the City Hall and opened Myrtle Avenue.

In 1842, Charles Dickens on his first tour of the United States was the guest of Mayor Trotter and a reception was tendered to him in this house, known long afterwards as the "Boy Reception." A large number of the residents of the village met to welcome the great English writer. When the Packer row was built the old house was moved to the foot of the hill.

**Blake's Folly**—In 1839, Anson Blake, a wealthy speculator, began a row of brick houses on the east side of Court Street between Butler and Baltic. Court Street ended at Atlantic Avenue, and a country road ran past the new block, known for many years as "Blake's Folly." Just beyond was Bergen Hill which Mr. Carmichael and J. S. T. Stranahan cut away, using the earth



to level up the section now included between Columbia and Hicks Streets and Hamilton Ferry. In those days all door and window sashes were made by hand, and it was a big contract to supply such a row of buildings. A Mr. Moorehouse with a shop in Baltic Street, had worked almost a year on the order and was about to deliver the sashes when he was burned out. The fire delayed Mr. Blake for two years and the handsome block was not opened until 1842. The Dutch Reformed Church recently had been erected in the neighborhood, and it might have been Mr. Blake's faith in the drawing power of the church which caused him to build. The houses were filled speedily with some of Brooklyn's best families. One of the tenants, a noted lawyer, whose family was prominent on the Heights for many years, introduced English cabs and liveried servants in the neighborhood. "Blake's Folly" had become a swell abode.

Guitone Merle, a wealthy silk merchant, purchased No. 225, and lived there for many years with his wife, son and three daughters. The parents died in the late 60's, leaving the house and all its belongings to a married daughter who preferred another part of Brooklyn. The old home was closed just as it stood and the old clock was left to tick until it ran down. In 1890 mischievous boys broke in and carried off the rare old time-piece. The old caretaker reported the mystery to the police, but it was not recovered. And still the daughter refused to permit anything in the house to be disturbed before her death.

Before the old jail was built in 1837 one of the creeks that ran through the swamp where the Navy Yard and City Park now are, extended as far inland as the jail site. It flowed where Raymond Street is. A shorter creek flowed where Navy Street now is. Navy Street was filled in three times before solid earth was created. About 1835 Myrtle Avenue was graded about to Bedford Avenue and paved. There was a cemetery on the property bounded by St. Edwards, Bolivar, Raymond and Willoughby Streets and another farther down St. Edwards Street. It was bounded also by Auburn Place, Park Avenue and by North Portland Avenue. It did not extend down to Park Avenue, however. The Marine Barracks filled a large intervening space. They were down in a hollow several feet below the sidewalk and were reached by steep wooden stairs.

The old burying ground was apportioned off to Catholics, Protestants, Quakers and negroes, equally sloped inward from the street to an elevation at the rear of ten to fifteen feet. When the site of the barracks was filled in to the street level, it was occupied by the church of which the famous pugilist preacher, the Rev. Fred Bell, was pastor.

There were slaughter houses at Hudson Avenue and Johnson Street, Gold and Tillary Streets, Duffield Street, between Concord and Tillary; between Tillary and Johnson, and in Tillary Street between Navy and Raymond, the latter run by Bill Burns. Mr. Manly had a distillery and cow stables in the rear of the distillery at Gold and Tillary Streets. Tucker Slavin, a noted character lived in a frame shanty with a peaked roof on the site of the slaughter house in Hudson Avenue in later years. Dave Neefus, a horse shoer, had a shop hard by.

Over on the other side of Hudson Avenue was a blacksmith shop kept by John Downey and his five sons, Mike, Pete, Dan, Dinnie and Jack.

**Tillary Street** was one of the most prominent thoroughfares in the Forty Acres neighborhood. Stores ran along both sides and it did almost as much

business as Myrtle Avenue. On Saturday nights it was thronged. It was lively as a fighting center as well as a social and business center. Tommy Ireland kept a hotel at Tillary and Hudson Avenues. John Cullen, once supervisor of the Fifth Ward, was his successor. It was the heart of the fighting district.

One fight included two roosters, two dogs and two men all at the same time, while two women got into a fight over the merits of the other fighters.

The Featherbed brothers loved to fight on Sunday mornings, as a rule the favorite time for fighting. There were others just as pugnacious, and when no stranger offered them an opportunity they fell to fighting among themselves.

Before the Navy Yard and City Park were filled in, an old wooden bridge built on piles driven in the mud of the swamp, began at what is now Bridge Street (called after old bridge), and continued in a southeasterly direction to a point near the intersection of Flushing Avenue and St. Edwards Street, where it met the old Wallabout Road. This road ran diagonally through the blocks now bounded by Flushing and Park Avenues to what was the Clinton Government dock, near Clinton and Park Avenues. There it turned northeasterly and continued to the Naval Hospital, where it connected with Dead Man's Lane, or the Williamsburgh Road.

A clay path was built around it and used as a speedway for trials of the fast horses of the town. It was considered a first class race course. Amateur fishermen were fond of casting for killies in the waters; in the winter they froze and afforded a skating rink for boys and girls. Its conversion into a park was authorized in 1841, and the work was completed in 1854. Part of Fort Greene was levelled with a steam shovel and the earth used for filling in the swamp. After that trees were set out and a railing placed around it. Pigs, goats, cows, horses, geese, chickens and tramps all became fond of its shade and verdant meadows and lived together in tranquillity. Fort Greene had been inclosed with a wooden picket fence, and was the only completed park the city had at the time. In 1863 the park commissioners recommended that the City Park be converted into a market place, but the Common Council did not favor this. Instead, in 1868 it voted a small appropriation for trees and improvements to change its character and convert it into a breathing spot.

**Otero Murdered**—Weeping willows were its tree. Their weird shadows of every imaginable character accentuated the horror of the Otero murder which occurred under the big central willow, late in November, 1867.

The night was cold and a drizzling rain fell as Gonzales, Pellisse, Vela and Otero left Felix Evans's liquor store on the southeast corner of Myrtle Avenue and St. Edwards Street, where they had their last drink before they walked over into the City Park. Otero had been in the country only a short time. He carried a few hundred dollars with him and this was known to the others. When they reached the big willow they fell upon him without warning. Otero fought desperately, but he was overpowered by the three who used their knives freely. In the struggle the fingers of one of Pellisse's gloved hands were cut badly. He threw the glove on the ground and this led to the capture of the murderers, and their conviction.

Detective Wanderleigh learned that Pellisse was going abroad and waited for him at the steamship. He hailed his man and asked him to remove his glove. As he refused the detective pulled it off forcibly and placed him under arrest. At the trial the glove was fitted to his hand and the cuts in the glove were found to correspond with those on his fingers. The three men were hanged



in the old Raymond Street jail. Huge crowds gathered at Fort Greene and in the adjoining streets hoping to see the hanging. Foreseeing this the authorities built a high board fence on top of the wall surrounding the jail yard and shut off the view. The old jail was built in 1827. The tree beneath which the murder took place was literally hacked to pieces by relic hunters and by persons who carved their initials in the bark. It was finally struck by lightning and destroyed.

Men were living in Brooklyn in 1888 who could remember when the block bounded by Court Street, Livingston, Sidney Place and Joralemon was an empty lot, and R. P. Buck kept his cow in a shed just opposite where St. Ann's church now stands. Sunday school children used to use the lot for a parade ground every spring just as they have come to use the streets for their May procession.

The boys were known as the Sidney Place crowd, and the lot afforded a place where they could work off their surplus energies without doing damage to the surroundings. They ran foot races to win; they played marbles to beat, and they fought to vanquish the enemy. Among them were Latham Fish, George and Dan Chauncey, John Scrymser, John B. Bach, Tom and Charley Morris, sons of the President of the Long Island Railroad, Henry Fairbanks, Joe Bostwick, Charles Ely, Charles Sproule, Tom, Sam and Will Cochrane and many others. Almost all of them became prominent in after life.

Their playground was the scene of one of the greatest games of marbles ever played in Brooklyn. More than 200 alleys and agates often were up in the huge ring, and every variety from the common glazed alley to the costly glass or pure agate, could be seen. There were skillful shots among the boys, too, and the games were played for keeps. George Chauncey lugged his 700 trophies about in a bag that made a pretty heavy back load. Latham Fish always declined to enter a game where the stakes were less than pure agates, of which he possessed generous stores.

A brick building belonging to the Prentice estate at Furman and Montague Streets was built in 1857. Receptions were given there by Mr. and Mrs. George W. Geran, who lived next door and also owned a fine country place at Jamaica. Mr. Geran kept a sail loft, with an office in South Street, New York. As steam replaced sails he retired from business. Many of the elite of Brooklyn attended the receptions in his sail loft. These receptions and the monthly hop on Governors Island formed the social events of the season. Just over the bridge is the spot where young Cooligan, son of S. B. Chittenden's coachman, was killed in 1856 while sledding. Beneath the hill where two laborers digging the excavation once found a package containing several thousand dollars is a row of arches at one time turned into stores. In 1854 a woman returning to New York was attacked by two garroters of her own sex in the tunnel and robbed of money. A wood yard on the corner took fire in 1858, and the boys of Engine No. 17, while running to the fire lost control of their machine which dashed down the hill and smashed through the ferry gates. At Montague Street the new ferryboat "Montague" was destroyed by fire after it had been in service one day.

When Henry Ward Beecher started on his second trip to Europe to face the English mobs, he embarked on a steamship at Montague Street accompanied by many friends. When he returned, landing at Boston, he said "the first whisper he heard assured him his services were accepted by his country."

At the top of the hill, chains were drawn once a year to remind the public that the property was private, a high brick wall stood in the rear of the house of S. B. Chittenden, Pierrepont Street, and covered the windows of the building next

door. It suggests that the house where a reception was given to General Grant should not be made the object of vulgar gaze.

Montague Street was first called Constable Street, the maiden name of Mrs. Pierrepont. Montague honors a daughter—Mary Montague.

Still standing opposite the Bossert Hotel is the Dickinson flat, built in 1854 and occupied as a drug store in 1924. Litchfield & Ketchum intended it for a grocery and the business was carried on by Barney & Mitchell, much after the manner of Park & Tilford today. They were ahead of the time and were sold out at auction. A school was conducted upstairs by Cummings & Taylor; but the upper floors became a bachelor's hall for four young men. The cellar was an oyster saloon, kept by Thomas Dilverd, a colored dwarf who had been a waiter in the Camp family on Columbia Heights. Afterwards he joined Christy's Minstrels and became known as Japanese Tommy, appearing as Jenny Lind. In Savannah he joined Bryant's troupe.

The Pierrepont House long occupied the site of the Bossert. Chase & Whitney were among its early proprietors, one having experience, the other money. After a time these positions were reversed; the man with experience had the money, and the man with money the experience. Burns who followed them opened a restaurant opposite the Academy of Music, patterned after Delmonico's and failed. He was burned out in the great Chicago fire, and died in a bath tub in Philadelphia. Grace Gilbert was the first child born in the Pierrepont House. The register in 1858 bore her name with a letter "B," signifying that she had arrived for breakfast. Her father, a silver merchant in New York, bought wine for all the guests in celebration of the event, and the young girl's initials were cut in a window pane with a diamond where they remained until the Hotel was torn down. George D. Kingsley was at the first meal and lived in the house for more than twenty-five years. Tom Thumb and Lavinia Warren stayed there. Lucille Western died there from pneumonia. The block contained the Beattys, the Bensons, the Moores, the Hutchinsons and the Booths, the Raynors and the Devlins. Two young women living in the block became countesses. Miss Kate Parks as Madame de Moussilye enjoyed a villa on the Seine and Miss Marianne Tardy made her home in Italy. It was once a florist's garden with a greenhouse. In the block above were the high walls enclosing gardens belonging to homes in Pierrepont Street. Many of the dwelling houses were remodelled for business uses years ago. Dr. S. Fleet Spier had a sanitarium in the block at 162 Montague Street, and Dr. Cullen lived on the corner. The home of Benjamin F. Tracy, Secretary of the Navy in the Harrison cabinet, at 148 Montague Street, was remodelled for a tailor in 1889. R. M. Hooley once lived in the house and the first night of his occupancy he was serenaded by a minstrel troupe at the close of their performance. On the next block the old Academy of Music stood on a spot where ponies and cows once grazed. The Brooklyn Library opposite occupies a site once used as the exercise ground for a stable in Pierrepont Street.

**Clinton Avenue** has a history of about seventy years. Almost since the earliest days, it has been a social factor with which to reckon. On it, the Hill centered, and all the highways thereabouts and side streets were subsidiary to it.

The Heights erected its homes in solid blocks, making but few mansions. The first magnates of Clinton Avenue raised comfortable dwelling houses of brick and stone, and their children and other Brooklynites have continued not only to preserve the character of the old street but in the last thirty years have put up beautiful piles of stone, veritable palaces.



It was almost a case of social "Follow your leader," and nearly all of the fashionable residences in 1905 and a few years before began to be built there, multi-millionaires choosing the comfortable old street as good enough for their lavish expenditures.

Each mansion to go up seemed to rival its predecessor in elegance. It was as if the owners were building for all time on the hill, and this has been one of the most interesting tendencies of life in the borough.

It was not, on the other hand, as if the brown stone and red brick of the Heights was built for permanence. Most of those who erected homes on the Heights seemed to realize that they must be given up as the city grew and, as is daily happening, that they must be torn down to make way for giant skyscrapers or towering apartment houses. But the Clinton Avenue wealthy felt that their street was beautiful enough and retired enough to defy the inroads of progress into the indefinite future, and proceeded, by their expenditures to make the property so valuable that no struggling shopkeepers or ambitious young real estate promoters could hope to see their way clear to buy it for quick gain.

Always a street of moneyed citizens, Clinton Avenue counts its fortunes by millions and tens of millions, instead of in hundreds of thousands and half millions. Some of the structures are, and have been, palaces in their magnificence and beauty of interior decoration, while the architecture of both the old and the new houses gives the famous street as pleasing a vista as any American city can claim.

The Pratt brothers—George D., Charles M. and Frederic B.—built side by side directly across the street from the capacious red brick dwelling house of their father, where they were reared. This group marked the transformation and renaissance of building in the neighborhood some years ago. The paternal red brick home was the last word in the elegance of its by-gone day. The F. B. Pratt house featured a loggia, a handsome library, and a reception hall to take up almost a third of the spacious floor. The George D. Pratt home, with a Heights girl as its presiding spirit—Mrs. Helen Deming Sherman Pratt, daughter of John T. Sherman, of Remsen Street, was a splendid example of a smart colonial town type, in brilliant red brick with white stone trimmings in handsome contrast, and with windows and doors all framed with stone.

Between Lafayette and Greene Avenues builders at the beginning of the 90's were William Creighton, Carson C. Peck and Daniel P. Morse. Lowell M. Palmer, with a home simple from the outside but superb within, had built on the block below the Pratts. Other prominent house-owners are, or have been, E. T. Bedford, Howard Maxwell, Edward E. Jackson, Jr., George Dupont Pratt, Frederick H. Bedford, William H. Burger, Charles E. Bedford, William H. Nichols, Jr., Dr. J. Bion Bogart, C. Walter Nichols and Harry L. Batterman.

Herbert L. Pratt built a home rivalling in beauty and elegance that of Clarence W. Seamans, who, on St. Marks Avenue, had built a house which has been called the handsomest in Brooklyn. Mr. Pratt selected a site fronting on Willoughby Avenue, allowing for an impressive façade, an ample carriageway, and a broad framing lawn effect where the drawing room windows opened upon the green. The lawn on Clinton Avenue was seventy feet long by forty-five feet wide, the interior decorative effect chosen being much like that employed in the William C. Whitney home on the upper East side of Manhattan,

facing Central Park. The entrance arranged led into a broad central hallway, offices and kitchens being shut off on either side.

Wide stairways climaxed into a fairyland of drawing rooms, halls, library and dining rooms, all with high ceilings.

Its site has been long famous in Brooklyn, for here stood the picturesque Convent of the Visitation, a borough landmark.

Notable entertaining in all these homes have made nights and afternoons festive, and many brilliant and famous persons have trodden their polished floors and been bidden to veritable banquets within their confines. They have been the center of much charitable work for the city, and projects that have benefitted its citizenship.

The F. H. and C. E. Bedford residences, high on terraces overlooking the street, have an architectural likeness to the home of the elder Bedford. Montrose Morris, the architect, who worked them out, constructed each along classic lines, precisely alike in exterior design, and semi-detached.

Indiana limestone was chosen for the E. T. Bedford house, worked out in Italian Renaissance style, with a drawing room 22 by 32 feet. Lowell M. Palmer, Jr., also selected Clinton Avenue as a site, though he had first chosen the Heights.

Old Clinton Avenue's chief effect long ago was that of a shaded highway bounded by roomy homes of no magnificence. They were more the type of dwelling houses on the outskirts of a big country town. The Clinton Avenue of the present is a roadway set between magnificent monuments of stone and marble.

The builders chose Myrtle Avenue over Greene, on Clinton Avenue's east or upper side, on which to group many of their massive homes. At Greene Avenue a striking row of white stone houses on a white stone terrace was built. Frederick and Clarence Bedford erected twin houses, and E. T. Bedford's big mansion has a gray white façade.

#### First Blue Book

Brooklyn had a Blue Book seventy-six years ago. That was in 1847, a year memorable because it marks the beginning of Henry Ward Beecher's pastorate in Plymouth Church. It marks the half-way station between the Colonial period and the present. This little paper-covered volume of fifty pages, only five by three inches, told all there was to tell about the wealth of the city, which had probably more than 60,000 inhabitants. It is found in Gordon Lester Ford's collection presented to the New York Public Library by his sons, Worthington Chauncey Ford and Paul Leicester Ford. It is also in the Montague Street Library. (Worthington C. Ford, the only survivor of the noted family, is to-day associated with the Boston Public Library.)

It is entitled "The Wealthy Men and Women of Brooklyn and Williamsburg, embracing a Complete List of all whose Estimated Possessions (in Real and Personal Property) amount to the Sum of Ten Thousand Dollars and Upwards, together with Brief Biographical Sketches of Many Meritorious and Eminent Persons. By John Lomas, and Alfred S. Peace, Brooklyn. Printed for the Proprietors by Alfred S. Peace, 1847."

The editors have news instinct and appear to realize the fact. Diffident, if not abashed, they are in an apologetic mood and essay to square themselves for the publication of so much private information by praising right and left, and saying nothing amiss about a single person. They explain in the preface:



Strange as it may appear, it is undoubtedly true that the great city of Brooklyn—its wealth, importance and extent—the opulence of its merchants and traders—and the exalted monetary standing of a large body of its inhabitants (of those who tenant its unpretending dwellings, as well as the occupants of its many palaces)—are scarcely known beyond its geographical limits. We hope to obtain for it, by the issue of this book, an acquisition of greater general importance than it has heretofore possessed, and show to adjacent as well as remote communities its right and title to be regarded in all that constitutes a city as the sixth in greatness in the United States.

The cover gives the number of inhabitants in Kings County furnished by the last Federal Census, that of 1840, as follows:

Brooklyn, 50,574; Williamsburgh, 11,338; Bushwick, 1,857; Flatbush, 2,225; Flatlands, 936; New Utrecht, 1,863; Gravesend, 898. Total, 79,691.

The assessed valuation of real and personal property in Brooklyn with the amount of taxes raised for the support of the common schools and the expenses of the city follow:

Ward	Real Estate	Personal	School Tax	General Tax
1.....	\$2,854,625	\$478,800	\$2,046	\$26,288
2.....	2,128,940	1,148,429	1,246	24,007
3.....	4,216,425	750,500	4,371	40,192
4.....	2,950,690	521,300	1,960	26,910
5.....	1,731,765	11,850	877	13,827
6.....	5,397,645	261,000	1,607	42,490
7.....	3,002,300	38,000	4,149	25,556
8.....	571,841	82,300	1,988	2,871
9.....	771,883	35,800	553	3,764
	<hr/> \$23,626,114	<hr/> \$3,327,979	<hr/> \$18,797	<hr/> \$205,905

John A. Lott heads the list of wealthy men with \$750,000. John Rankin and Peter Schermerhorn are rated worth \$600,000. There are six worth \$500,000—Samuel Bowne, Johnson Leake, David Leavitt, Leffert Lefferts, Abraham Schermerhorn estate, and Henry Young. Only two are in the \$350,000 class—Noel Becar and the estate of Hezekiah B. Pierrepont. With \$300,000 are G. B. Lamar, James McBride, William S. Packer, James D. Sparkman of Williamsburgh and John A. Willink. Valentine G. Hall has \$250,000 as have W. A. and A. M. White (jointly).

The next class with \$200,000 has thirteen. It includes James Bogert, Cornelius Heaney, Calvin F. How, Fisher How, George S. Howland, Richard Leaycraft, John Paine, George and Henry Patchen (jointly), Henry Sheldon, Samuel Smith, Amos P. Stanton, Isaac A. Storm, N. Waterbury.

One fortune of \$175,000 is assigned to J. Waterbury of Williamsburgh.

With \$150,000 are Daniel H. Arnold, Judith Bogart, Whitehead Cornell estate, Frederick Deming, Michael Emmanuel, Samuel Fleet, Augustus Graham, Evan M. Johnson, Remson Lefferts, Helen Martense, E. and H. Minturn, Williamsburgh (jointly), Ira Smith, George E. St. Felix, Samuel Thompson, A. Van Brunt, John Van Nostrand, Mrs. Adrian Van Sinderin and David W. Wetmore.

The Rev. Walter H. Bidwell is placed at \$140,000. A. Haxton has \$130,000. Richard Berry of Williamsburgh, and Samuel I. Garretson come next with \$120,000 each.

The list of \$100,000 fortunes contains fifty-three names: Edward Anthony, John Brownson, William H. Cary, Aaron Clark Chester estate, Peter C. Cornell, Simon Cornell estate, George N. Crawford, John F. Delaplaine, James W. Elwell,

Bernardus Evertson, David Felt, N. L. Griswold, Joseph W. Harper, George Hastings, William S. Herriman, A. B. Horton, E. D. Hurlbutt, George Ives, Henry S. Leavitt, Sarah Lefferts, Jeremiah Lott, Robert A. Lyon, Garritt Martense, Flatbush; Peter Morton estate, John Peck, Dennis Perkins, H. E. Pierrepont, Charles Porter, Mary L. Powers, H. Z. Pratt, John H. Prentice, John Reed, Jr., Daniel Richards, Austin S. Sands, Joseph Sands, John Schenck, James Sheldon, Caleb Smith, Mrs. Spader, Charles Squire, Gerritt Striker, Benjamin Tatham, Adam Treadwell, John Treadwell, E. G. Tryon, John Vanderbilt, Adrian Vanderveer, James Van Nostrand, Gerrett Van Wagenen, Hosea Webster, Edward Whitehouse, George Wood and Daniel Wright.

Among the prominent families with less than \$110,000 were:

Charles Hoyt estate, \$80,000; Moses Allen, Mrs. S. E. Austin, James Debevoise, Richard Duyckinck, R. B. Haviland, Jacob M. Hicks estate, John Jewett, John Laidlaw, Sheldon Leavitt, Sheldon C. Leavitt, Samuel Morgan, James Nesmith, Phœbe Raynor, George A. Talbot, John Allen Taylor, Elijah Whittlesy, Samuel S. Wood, Amasa Wright, Henry S. Wyckoff, \$75,000 each.

In the \$60,000 class are Aaron Claflin, Daniel Embury, Henry Marquand, Abraham Remson and Dr. A. Van Pelt.

Having a snug \$50,000 are sixty-six, as follows: Isaac H. Bassett, John Benson, Teunis G. Bergen, Sarah Cornell, Norman Dart, Margaret Duffield estate, F. Griffin, John Haslett, D. G. Haviland, W. H. Hazard, George Hicks, Robert T. Hicks, Edward Leavitt, Nicholas Luquier, Martha Middagh, Curtis Peck, Henry S. Raymond, Christian H. Sands, Capt. Joshua R. Sands, Oliver H. Sands, Maria Scoles, Thomas G. Talmage, Lewis Tappan, F. G. Thurston, A. Underhill, John S. Van Nostrand, Henry Van Nostrand, H. A. Weed, Phœbe R. Wells, Moses Whitcomb, W. E. Whiting, Sidney Wintringham, Albert Woodruff.

The general list follows: Abbott, Francis H., \$25,000; Ackeman, Catharine, \$10,000; Acosta, John, \$25,000; Adair, Henry, \$15,000; Adams, Benjamin, \$20,000; Agar, Edward, \$20,000.

Edward Agar, a native of New York. About twenty years since he obtained a situation in the Brooklyn Navy Yard as purser's clerk; which due to strict attention to the duties of his office and his gentlemanly deportment, he still retains, enjoying the respect of all who know him.

Ainslie, James, Williamsburgh, \$15,000; Allen, William J., \$20,000; Allen, Moses, \$75,000; Anderson, D., \$20,000; Anderson, P. B., \$10,000; Anthony, Edward, \$100,000; Appleton, William H., \$35,000; Archer, George B., \$15,000; Arnold, Daniel H., \$150,000; Atkins, Joshua, \$25,000; Atkinson, John A., \$30,000; Atwater, G. M., \$40,000; Augur, John B., \$25,000; Austin, Mrs. S. E., \$75,000; Aymar, Benjamin, \$15,000; Ayres, Daniel, \$35,000; Ayres, Ellis F., \$15,000; Babod, William, \$25,000; Bach, Robt., estate, \$70,000; Backhouse, Edward T., \$15,000; Bacon, Daniel P., \$15,000; Bailey, Elisha, \$30,000; Bailey, Robert, \$10,000; Baird, William, \$50,000.

William Baird, a native of Erin's Isle, commenced his career in Brooklyn as a humble laborer, and by economy, frugality, and untiring industry, amassed sufficient means to enable him to commence business as a contractor on public roads. He soon manifested an aptitude and ability for such undertakings as to place him in the first rank.

William Clem, proprietor of a large and flourishing hardware store in Fulton Street, who has by his politeness and superior business qualifications, obtained an enviable popularity throughout Long Island.



Cochrane, Charles P., \$50,000; Cochrane, John W., \$40,000; Coffin, Timothy, Williamsburgh, \$10,000; Coit, Gabriel, Williamsburgh, \$20,000; Coles, Cordelia, \$10,000; Coles, Lefferts, G., \$25,000; Coleman E. W., \$35,000; Colgan, Owen, \$25,000.

Owen Colgan came to this country from the north of Ireland about twenty years ago, and for a considerable time worked at his own business. After acquiring a small amount of money he opened a tavern in James Street, where he has met with very great success. In politics he is a Democrat, and in liberality to the poor, generous.

Collins, George, \$35,000; Collins, James, \$30,000.

James Collins is associated with and has obtained his wealth in a manner similar to Mr. Baird. He is an active politician, and to the poor, charitable.

Congdon, Samuel, \$35,000; Conklin, Henry N., \$40,000; Conover, Augusta, \$25,000; Conover, George, \$30,000; Cook, John, Williamsburgh, \$20,000; Cook, Moses, \$35,000; Cook, Purcell L., \$15,000; Cook, Thomas, \$35,000; Coope, David, \$45,000; Coope, Mrs., widow, \$20,000; Coope, Samuel, \$12,000; Cooper, Leonard, \$20,000; Cooper, William B., \$25,000; Copeland, Edward, \$25,000; Cornell, Ann, \$20,000; Cornell, Peter C., \$100,000; Cornell, Simon, estate of, \$100,000; Cornell, Sarah, \$50,000; Cornell, Whitehead J., estate, \$150,000; Corning, Edward, \$30,000.

Edward Corning is an alderman of this city; eloquent as a debater in the common council, and one of the many benevolent men Brooklyn can boast of.

Corning, Ephraim, \$30,000; Corning, Harrison K., \$20,000; Cortelyou, Adriance, \$20,000; Cortelyou, Ann, \$10,000; Cortelyou, Jacques, \$25,000; Cowenhoven, Tunis, \$20,000; Cox, John, \$25,000; Cox, Rev. S. H., \$20,000; Crawford, George N., \$100,000; Crook, Philip T., \$30,000; Cropsey, Andrew, \$15,000; Cross, John A., \$35,000.

John A. Cross—Now one of the aldermen of the seventh ward of Brooklyn, and one of the "shining lights" of the whig party. Possessed of brilliant talents and a superior address, he is deservedly popular in the district in which he lives, and wherever else he is known.

Crummey, Edward, \$30,000; Cullen, Dr. Henry J., \$30,000.

Dr. Cullen is one of the most successful and eminent physicians in Brooklyn. He has been established but a few years here, but in that time has, by his ability and kindheartedness, secured the suffrages of all classes and conditions of his fellow citizens. Having a large practice among the most wealthy, he is noted for having in many instances sought out and relieved the physical and pecuniary distresses of the poor. He was for many years engaged in the practice of his profession in Mexico, and has an intimate knowledge of the condition and political history of that country. It was through his influence and warm personal exertions during the Texan War that a large number of prisoners, mostly Americans, captured and condemned to death by the Mexican forces, were liberated. He not only contributed largely himself to the high ransom exacted by the Mexican authorities, but induced others to do the same. (His son, Edgar M. Cullen, was Chief Judge of the Court of Appeals.)

Cumming, Thomas W., \$25,000; Cumming, Abijah, Williamsburgh, \$35,000; Cunningham, George D., \$40,000; Curtis, Lewis, \$10,000; Daniels, Samuel R., \$15,000; Darlington, Thomas, Williamsburgh, \$10,000; Dart, Norman, \$50,000; Davenport, John A., \$30,000; Davis, Ann, \$50,000; Davis, Benjamin W., \$85,000; Day, Willard, \$10,000; Dean, Joseph, \$15,000; Debevoise, James, \$75,000.

Mr. Debevoise is one of the oldest residents of Brooklyn—a plain, unpre-

tending man—once the owner of the valuable property upon which Pierrepont and adjacent streets now stand, which he tilled as a farm, and subsequently sold for a considerable sum.

Decamp, Elihu H., \$20,000; Degen, Charles R., \$20,000; Degraw, A. J. S., \$30,000.

Mr. Degraw is a commission merchant doing business in New York, of which city he is a native. Mr. Degraw commenced his mercantile career with N. H. Jewett, Esq., of New York, then inspector of Pot and Pearl Ashes for that city. As a remuneration for his services he was allowed to speculate in what is known among the dealers in those articles as "scrappings," and soon became well known for his industry and the punctuality with which he met his engagements. His speculations proved eminently successful, enabling him in the short space of four years to commence what has since proved to be a highly prosperous business from his own resources. He is now but twenty-four years of age, and if the future should prove as brilliant as the past and present he will undoubtedly rank with the wealthiest of our city—having made the above sum by his own individual exertions in business.

Degraw, James A., \$30,000; Degraw, Walter N., \$15,000; Dekussy, Rene E., \$15,000; Delamater, B. W., \$25,000; Delaplaine, John F., \$100,000; Dellicker, L. M., \$50,000; Demarest, Andrew, \$15,000; Deming, Frederick, \$150,000; Denham, Francis, \$20,000; Denton, N., estate, \$70,000; Dikeman, John, \$25,000; Dimon, John, \$30,000; Dimon, Margaret, \$25,000; Dodge, Richard J., \$35,000; Doolittle, Warren, \$15,000; Doolittle, William H., \$15,000; Doughty, John S., \$20,000; Downing, Frederick, \$10,000; Downs, A., \$30,000; Doxey, Samuel, \$10,000; Dubois, Francis, \$20,000.

Francis Dubois, a manufacturer of watch cases, residing at Williamsburgh, and carrying on business in New York.

Duckwitz, George, F., \$40,000; Duffield, Margaret, estate, \$50,000; Duffy, Mary, \$10,000; Duncan, Fleming, Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Duncan, Thomas, \$20,000.

Thomas Duncan, a manufacturer of jewelry, residing at Williamsburgh, and one of the several speculators in Ferry stock who live in that town.

Duryea, Harmanus B., \$30,000.

General Duryea will, in all probability, ere many years elapse, be one of the richest men in Brooklyn, having married the only daughter of Samuel Bowne, Esq., who is almost a millionaire. He is eminently deserving of any good fortune he may attain, and possesses qualities both of head and heart which endear him to all who are acquainted with him, and render him exceedingly popular among all classes of the community.

Duryea, Mrs. \$10,000; Duyckinck, Richard, \$75,000; Eaton, James, \$10,000; W. Edwards, Alfred, \$25,000; Elkins, George B., \$20,000; Elwell, James W., \$100,000; Ellsworth, William, \$15,000.

William Ellsworth, president of the Brooklyn Insurance Company and a distinguished member of the Democratic party.

Elton, David, \$15,000; Embury, Abraham B., \$70,000; Embury, Daniel, \$60,000; Emmanuel, Ellen, \$20,000; Emmanuel, Michael, \$150,000; Engler, Charles, \$30,000; Engles, James, \$20,000; Everdell, W., \$25,000; Everitt, V., \$15,000; Evertson, Bernadus, \$100,000; Farley, Edward, Williamsburgh, \$20,000; Farmer, Thomas, \$15,000; Fay, David, \$10,000; Fay, Temple, \$25,000; Felt, \$35,000; Fisher, Abijah, \$25,000; Fisher, William, \$40,000; Fiske, George B.



David, \$100,000; Field, Richard, \$40,000; Filly, Edward, \$50,000; Fish, Edmond, \$45,000.

George B. Fiske, President of the L. I. R. R. Company. Through his instrumentality chiefly, the company has obtained its present flourishing position, and the stock obtained a value which renders an investment in it certain of profitable return.

Flanders, Benjamin, \$20,000; Fleet, Samuel, \$150,000.

Samuel Fleet—Descended from an old English family. The ancestor, Thomas Fleet, a captain in the British Navy, came to this country about the year 1650 and purchased a tract of land on the north side of Long Island, near Huntington; and transmitted it to his posterity, one of whom is now in possession. The subject of this article was brought up a farmer and made a snug property during the last war with England, when grain and produce were very high. He afterwards removed to Brooklyn, where he purchased two farms which have long been valuable as city lots.

Flindt, John M., \$15,000; Flindt, William, \$15,000; Forbes, James, \$45,000; Forbush, William, \$15,000; Fowler, John, \$10,000; Fountain, George W., \$10,000; Fox, Elizabeth, \$10,000; Frazier, Thomas, \$15,000; Frecker, Thomas, estate, \$25,000; Freeland, James, \$35,000; Frere, Thomas, \$50,000; Friel, James, \$25,000; Frost, Jacob, \$50,000; Frost, Samuel, \$20,000; Garretson, Samuel I., \$120,000; Garrison, John F., \$25,000; Garrison, Nelson A., \$20,000; Garrison, Thomas, \$20,000; Gascoigne, Thomas, \$35,000; Gault, George, \$10,000; Gerald, Thomas J., \$30,000.

Thomas J. Gerald—An enterprising and upright man of business; president of the Board of Aldermen of the city, and the acknowledged leader of the democratic party in the Common Council. He is an able debater and possesses a thorough knowledge of the affairs of the city. He was formerly a schoolmaster, and came to this section of the country some years since from his native state (Vermont) in quest of fortune, which, by industry and good management, he has obtained.

Gibbs, Thomas S., \$20,000; Gilbert, Joseph G., \$15,000; Gillmore, William, \$10,000; Glover, Frederick, \$10,000; Godfrey, George, \$50,000; Goodman, Myran S., \$50,000; Goodrich, S. F., \$20,000; Gordon, Oliver H., \$30,000; Gould, Edward, \$10,000; Gracie, Sarah, \$30,000; Graham, Augustus, \$150,000.

Augustus Graham—This gentleman and his brother, John B., are well known as enterprising merchants, and the liberality of their contributions for benevolent purposes. They were born in Scotland, and have risen, from comparatively humble stations to their present position.

Graham, J. B., \$75,000; Graves, Downing G., Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Greacen, John, \$40,000; Green, Joseph W., \$25,000; Greenwood, John, \$30,000; Griffin, F., \$50,000; Grimsted, Henry, \$15,000; Griswold N. L., \$100,000; Hadden, C., \$25,000; Hagar, William, \$30,000; Hale, Josiah L., \$40,000; Hale, Thomas, \$20,000; Hall, George, \$20,000; Hall, Valentine G., \$250,000; Hall, John, \$25,000; Hallock, Charles, \$15,000; Halsey, Abraham \$30,000; Halsey, Moses E., \$10,000; Halsey, William, \$25,000; Hamblin, Asher P., \$40,000; Hamilton, E. C., \$40,000; Hance, Revo C., \$30,000; Handlen, William, \$20,000; Hangrave, Clifton, \$40,000; Harper, Andrew M., \$25,000; Harper, Joseph W., \$100,000; Harris, Benjamin G., \$15,000; Harris, Captain Isaac, \$35,000; Harris, William M., \$35,000; Hart, Levi, \$20,000; Hartt, Samuel, \$25,000; Haslett, John, \$50,000; Hastings, George, \$100,000; Hatch, William T., \$40,000; Haviland, D. G., \$50,000; Haviland, R. B., \$75,000; Haviland, James C., \$20,000; Haxton, A.,

\$130,000; Haydock, Henry, \$30,000; Haines, David H., \$10,000; Haynes, Stephen, \$20,000; Hazard, W. H., \$50,000; Heaney, Cornelius, \$200,000.

Cornelius Heaney—A native of Ireland. Was connected with Mr. Astor (John Jacob) in the fur trade some years since, with whom he realized a large amount of money. His liberality to the poor knew no bounds. He was the greatest donor to the Catholic Orphan Asylum, in Court Street, and presented to the trustees of Freeman's Hall the ground upon which it stands.

Hebard, Frederick H., \$35,000; Heerdt, Clement, \$35,000; Hegeman, Adrian, \$15,000; Hegeman, John, \$10,000; Hendrickson, Stephen, \$30,000; Henshaw, Cornelia, \$30,000; Herriman, William S., \$100,000; Hickley, James, \$15,000; Hicks, Edgar, \$20,000; Hicks, Edwin, \$40,000; Hicks, George, \$50,000; Hicks, Jacob M., estate, \$75,000; Hicks, John M., \$10,000.

John M. Hicks—Was formerly very wealthy but lost a large fortune by reverses in business and fluctuations in the value of real estate. He now, however, thanks to the efforts of warm personal friends, (many of whom supported him without reference to political considerations) holds for a second term, the most valuable public office in the county.

Hicks, Maria, \$30,000; Hicks, Mary, \$20,000; Hicks, Robert T., \$50,000; Hilliard, James, \$15,000; Hinman, William J., \$40,000; Hitchcock, Cyrus, \$20,000; Hoag, John D., \$25,000; Hobby, Amos K., \$25,000; Holbrook, Lowell, \$35,000; Holmes, Samuel, \$10,000; Holt, Asa, \$25,000; Holt, Henry, \$25,000; Hopkins, Lucius, \$35,000; Horton, A. B., \$100,000; Horton, Osborne, \$10,000; Hoskins, Thomas, \$10,000; Hovey, Roswell, \$20,000; Howard, Edward S., \$30,000; Howard, Joseph, \$30,000; Howard, Samuel H., \$25,000; How, Benjamin W., \$20,000; How, Calvin F., \$200,000; How, Fisher, \$200,000; How, Henry A., \$20,000; How, James, \$30,000; Howell, Silas S., \$40,000; Howland, George S., \$200,000; Hoyt, Charles, estate, \$80,000; Hoyt, Gould, estate, \$20,000; Hoyt, Seymour, \$25,000; Hudson, Edward, \$20,000; Hudson, W. L., \$20,000; Husted, S. L., \$25,000.

S. L. Husted—A self made and self taught man. At his father's death he was thrown upon the world penniless, with a widowed mother and sister depending upon him for their support. By hard labor he acquired means to embark in business in the fur trade on his account, and is now the proprietor of a large and flourishing factory, in addition to which he is the proprietor of the splendid line of stages running to and from Fulton Ferry and East Brooklyn.

Hull, Edward, Jr., \$20,000; Hull, Oliver, \$25,000; Humphreys, James, \$30,000.

James Humphreys—A lawyer of distinguished ability and extensive practice. He represents the first ward of this city in the Common Council, and at the last state election was the whig nominee for senator, but declined being a candidate. His manners are very popular, and he is highly esteemed by all parties.

Hunt, Jonathan, \$10,000; Hunt, Seth B., \$15,000; Hunt, Thomas, \$20,000; Hunt, W. G., \$30,000; Hunter, William, Jr., \$40,000; Hurd, Frederick W., \$25,000; Hurd, Hannah, \$20,000; Hurlbutt, E. D., \$100,000; Hurlbut, George, \$50,000; Hurlbut, John D., \$55,000; Hurlbut, Samuel, \$30,000; Hurlbut, William W., \$35,000; Huttelson, Henry, \$35,000; Hyde, Isaac, \$25,000; Hyde, Lucius, \$30,000; Ibbotson, Robert, \$25,000; Ilius, Charles, \$75,000; Ingraham, John, \$20,000; Isnard, Augustus, \$35,000; Ives, George R., \$100,000; Ives, David W., \$40,000; Jackson, Cornelia A., \$20,000; Jackson, Job, \$30,000; Jackson, Maria, \$35,000; Jackson, Richard, \$35,000; Jacobus, M. W., \$25,000; Jaggar, John, \$30,000; James, Jeremiah, \$10,000; James, N. E., \$25,000; Jarvis, George A., \$20,000; Jarvis, Mary, \$10,000; Jenkins, Charles, \$10,000; Jewett, John, \$75,000; Johnson,



Anthony, \$10,000; Johnson, Barnett, \$10,000; Johnson, B. K., \$35,000; Johnson, David, \$100,000.

David Johnson—One of the directors of the L. I. bank; resides at Flatbush; made his money by the grocery business in New York, and is a most amiable and exemplary man.

Johnson, John, \$40,000; Johnson, Mary, \$25,000; Johnson, Oscar, \$50,000; Johnson, Parmenus, \$100,000; Johnson, Samuel E., \$100,000; Johnson, William L., \$100,000; Johnson, William, \$35,000; Johnson, Wyman, \$15,000; Jones, Benjamin, \$10,000; Jones, William, \$30,000; Judson, Isaac H., \$30,000; Kearney, Captain James, \$20,000; Kelly, David, \$15,000.

David Kelly—One of the Ferry Masters in the employ of the Union Ferry Company; who has occupied that position many years, and, by frugality and care, has amassed a snug property. He is much esteemed, as well for his fidelity to his employers, as for his urbanity and politeness to the public.

Kellogg, E., \$60,000; Kelsey, Charles, \$80,000; Kelsey, Charles and Walter, \$30,000.

Charles and Walter Kelsey—These young men commenced business a few years ago with very slender means, and are rapidly, by their industry and economy, acquiring a large fortune.

Kelsey, George H., \$15,000; Ketcham, Joseph, \$35,000; Kiersted, C. N., \$35,000; Kickhoefer, Adolph T., \$20,000; Kimberly, David, \$35,000; Kimberly, Henry A., \$30,000; King, Gamaliel, \$20,000; Kitching, John B., \$30,000; Knapp, Bradford, \$20,000; Knox, O. L., \$30,000; Kumbel, William, \$40,000; Laidlaw, John, \$75,000.

John Laidlaw—One of the rich proprietors of the great White Lead Works of this city.

Lamar, G. B., \$300,000.

G. B. Lamar—Brother of the Ex-President of Texas; of exalted attainments, unblemished reputation, and a heart ever "open to melting charity." One of nature's true noblemen.

Lapham, Anson, \$50,000; Lake, Richard, Williamsburgh, \$30,000; Lake, Thomas, Williamsburgh, \$30,000; Lake, William, Williamsburgh, \$40,000; Laytin, William, Williamsburgh, \$30,000; Leake, Johnson, \$25,000; Leavitt, David, \$500,000; Leavitt, Edward, \$50,000; Leavitt, Henry S., \$100,000; Leavitt, Sheldon, \$75,000; Leavitt, Sheldon C., \$75,000; Leaycraft, Richard, Williamsburgh, \$200,000; Leaycraft, Richard, Williamsburgh, \$10,000; Leach, George, \$25,000; \$35,000; Fisher, Abijah, \$25,000; Fisher, William, \$40,000; Fiske, George B., Lee, A. P., \$20,000; Lee Frederick A., \$30,000; Lee, Oliver H., \$50,000; Lee, William, \$15,000; Lefferts, Leffert, \$500,000; Lefferts, Remson, \$150,000; Lefferts, Sarah, \$100,000; Leggett, Abraham W., \$15,000; Leggett, John, \$40,000; Lester, David, \$30,000; Lewis Elijah, \$20,000; Lewis, Ezra, \$30,000; Lewis Zachariah, \$50,000; Lomer, Gerh, \$30,000; Lomas, Charles B., \$25,000; Lott, Jeremiah, \$100,000; Lott, John A., \$750,000; Low, Abbott A., \$30,000; Low, Josiah O., \$20,000; Low, Seth, \$40,000; Ludlam, Silas, \$20,000; Lupton, Julia, \$15,000; Luquier, Nicholas \$50,000; Lynch, Bernard, \$10,000; Lynch, Thomas, \$15,000; Lynde, C. W., \$50,000; Lyon, Robert A., \$100,000; Mack, Lewis F., \$30,000; Macomber, Edward, \$25,000; Madden, Amos, \$50,000; Mali, Hypolite, \$50,000; Manley, Robert F., \$35,000; Mann, Abijah, Jr., \$20,000.

Abijah Mann, Jr.—For many years a prominent politician, formerly a member of assembly, and leader of the Democrat party in the state Legislature; and

at present a member of the Board of Aldermen of this city. An eminent lawyer, excellent orator, and benevolent citizen.

Manning, R. H., \$25,000; March, Thomas, \$50,000; Marquand, Henry, \$60,000; Martense, Garritt, Flatbush, \$100,000; Martense, Helen, \$150,000; Marvin, A. B., \$35,000; Marvin, Charles R., \$25,000; Marvin, George, \$30,000; Mason, F., \$25,000; Mason, J. L., \$20,000; Mason, Samuel H., \$25,000; Maxwell, William, \$20,000; Maulsy, Robert F., \$60,000; Maujer, Daniel, Williamsburgh, \$15,000; Mead, J., \$15,000; Merlle, G., \$30,000; Merian, John James, \$25,000; Merrick, T. B., \$25,000; Merrill, Eli, \$25,000; Merritt, John I., \$30,000; Merritt, N. S., \$30,000; Meserole, David M., Williamsburgh, \$20,000; Messenger, Henry, \$30,000; Middagh, Martha, \$50,000; Middleton, J. B., \$30,000; Middleton, Thomas H., \$15,000; Miles, W. B., Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Millard, A. O., \$20,000; Miller, John, Williamsburgh, \$20,000; Miller, William J., \$20,000; Mills, David S., \$20,000; Minturn, E. & H., Williamsburgh, \$150,000; Moon, John, \$50,000; Moore, Chauncey W., \$25,000; Moore, Thomas C., Williamsburgh, \$15,000; Moran, Daniel, \$20,000; Morehead, John, \$10,000; Morehouse, Smith, \$10,000; Morgan, George, \$30,000; Morgan, John, \$15,000; Morgan, Samuel, \$75,000; Morrell, Thomas, Williamsburgh, \$10,000; Morrell, John, Williamsburgh, \$20,000; Morrell, Francis V., Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Morse, N. B., \$30,000.

N. B. Morse—For some years past, the prosecuting attorney of Kings County; an able lawyer; an accomplished scholar and a most worthy man.

Morton, Peter, estate, \$100,000; Moser, Isaac, \$15,000; Mount, Alfred K., \$25,000; Muloch, William, \$30,000; Mumby, Robert, \$20,000; Murphy, Henry C., \$35,000.

Henry C. Murphy laid the foundation of his fortune by holding the office of corporation attorney of Brooklyn when it was very lucrative—ininitely more so than at present (1847)—and has since held a very prominent position as a politician. Although yet a young man, he has been mayor of the city, and twice elected to congress. He possesses very superior abilities, untiring energy and industry, and from his many amiable and excellent qualities, is deservedly popular with the masses. He is a large stockholder in, and one of the principal directors of, the Atlantic Bank, and has honorably discharged himself on numerous occasions by his liberal contributions for charitable purposes.

Murphy, John G., \$30,000; McBair, John, Williamsburgh, \$15,000; McBride, James, \$30,000; McDonough, Margaret, \$30,000; McFarlan, James, \$15,000; McGlim, Thomas, \$10,000; McGregor, Daniel, \$15,000; McGuire, John, \$25,000; McIntosh, Robert, \$10,000; McLaughlin, John, \$10,000; McLean, Samuel, \$30,000; McMurray, Joseph, \$130,000.

The history of this gentleman (Joseph McMurray), furnishes a brilliant example to persons of humble means as to what may be accomplished by industry and integrity in business transactions. In 1824, he arrived in New York poor and friendless, but by the possession of superior abilities and diligence in the performance of the subordinate duties of a merchant's office in which he found employment, he obtained the confidence and respect of all who knew him. After laboring many years for others, and being thoroughly acquainted with mercantile operations, he embarked, with slender means, in the emigrant passenger business, and soon, by pursuing a course of fairness and liberality to his countrymen and others on their arrival here from their native land, acquired celebrity and wealth. Emigrants from Europe are subjected to many impositions and extortions from persons who charter vessels for their passage to this land of promise; but the subject of this sketch stands proudly aloof from the herd of "land pirates" who



victimize the poor emigrant. Mr. McMurray has one of the largest shipping establishments in New York, and is the principal agent in this country for the Provincial Bank of Ireland. He has two sons connected with him in business, who, with their father, stand preëminent in the commercial world as honorable men.

Napier, John, \$15,000; Napier, T. A., \$25,000; Naylor, John, \$30,000; Nelson, Thomas S., \$40,000; Nesmith, James, \$75,000; Nevins, Thomas, \$35,000; Newbold, John A., \$30,000; Nichols, H. G., \$20,000; Northrup, Harrison, \$30,000; Norris, Thomas H., \$10,000; Oakes, Ann, \$10,000.

This amiable and much esteemed widow of the late lamented coroner of this city; universally known for her charitable and humane disposition, and for the possession of virtues which adorn humanity, and give lustre to her sex.

Oakley, Alexander, \$25,000; Oakley, George, \$25,000; O'Brien, Francis, \$25,000.

Francis O'Brien—A gentleman of Herculean proportions, with a heart capacious as his body for the virtues and charities of life. Although for many years a resident of Brooklyn, his sphere of business operations and political movements has been in New York, where he is regarded as one of the most influential men in the Whig party. Few men are to be found who possess so many rare and good qualities as Mr. O'Brien.

Odell, Jonathan, Williamsburgh, \$25,000; O'Donnell, Jeremiah, \$35,000.

Like Messrs. Baird, Collins, and other fortunate Irishmen, Jeremiah O'Donnell has accumulated his wealth by successful operations as a contractor on public roads.

O'Hara, Peter, \$35,000; Olcott, C. M., \$20,000; Olney, James N., \$20,000; Orne, William, \$30,000; Osborne, Albert H., \$10,000; Osborne, John, \$15,000; Ostrander, Ezekiel, \$20,000; Ostrom, Anthony P., \$25,000; Otis, H., \$30,000; Owen, William, \$15,000; Packer, William S., \$300,000; Paine, John, \$200,000; Pares, Francis, \$40,000; Parmentier, Mrs. S., \$20,000; Partridge, A. & W., \$25,000; Patchen, George M. & Henry, \$200,000; Pease, John, \$10,000.

John Pease formerly carried on business as a carpenter but has realized his present competency by his connection with the Jersey pilots, of which useful association he is one of the most active members.

Peck, Curtis, \$50,000; Peck, Isaac, Jr., \$10,000; Peck, John, \$100,000; Peck, William N., \$40,000; Peckham, N. G., \$25,000; Peet, F. J., \$50,000; Pendergrast, J. J., \$10,000; Perkins, Dennis, \$100,000; Perry, Austin, \$20,000; Perry, Delia, \$20,000; Peters, William, \$30,000; Petit, Joseph, \$40,000; Pettitt, Foster, \$20,000; Phillip, George A., \$25,000; Philly, Edward, \$35,000; Pierrepont, H. B., estate, \$350,000; Pierrepont, H. E., \$100,000; Pike, Laura Ann, \$10,000; Pinckney, Thomas C., \$15,000; Pitcher, Benjamin L., \$40,000; Place, Edward B., \$20,000; Plummer, Roswell, H., \$15,000; Polhamus, Theodore, \$40,000; Polley, Grahams, Williamsburgh, \$40,000; Pomeroy, Daniel, \$25,000; Poole, Thomas, \$25,000; Porter, Charles, \$100,000; Porteus, Thomas, \$20,000; Post, Charles C., \$20,000; Potter, Elias S., \$20,000; Potter, O. R., \$30,000; Potts, William, \$25,000; Powell, Elizabeth S., \$15,000; Powell, Mary E., \$15,000; Powell, Tunis, \$15,000; Powers, Lawrence, \$10,000; Powers, Mary L., \$100,000; Pratt, H. Z., \$100,000; Prentice, John H., \$100,000; Priest, W. H., \$25,000; Prince, Amy, \$40,000; Prince Anna, estate, \$70,000; Prince, Christopher, \$35,000; Prince, G. W., \$10,000; Prince, John D., \$20,000.

This gentleman (John D. Prince) is said recently to have become heir to an estate in England, valued at nearly half a million of dollars.

Prince, Robert, \$30,000; Purser, Thomas, \$25,000; Putnam, Albert, \$10,000; Putnam, Nathaniel, \$35,000; Quevedo, Joseph, \$10,000.

Joseph Quevedo—A queer, original, but clever and good-hearted man; of kind and benevolent disposition, and always among the first to render assistance to the needy. Very popular with the military as an officer of high grade, although in early life connected, in a subordinate capacity with the navy.

Quick, John S., \$25,000; Quigley, James, \$15,000; Quitzow, W. H., \$10,000; Rankin, John, \$600,000; Rapelye, Isaac J., estate, \$20,000; Rapelye, Jacob, \$20,000; Ransom, Brazilla, \$40,000; Ransom, L. W., \$15,000; Rathbone, Captain John, \$40,000; Raymond, Miss E. W., \$15,000; Raymond, J. J., \$10,000; Raynor, Phoebe, Widow, \$75,000.

Mrs. Raynor belongs to that much honored class of citizens the "oldest inhabitant," having been born on Long Island and resided for the last forty years in Brooklyn; and is emphatically one of the "old school", holding the antiquated and almost obsolete doctrine, that honesty and sobriety should be a principle of the heart, and not an outward garment to put on and off at pleasure; and that female accomplishments should have a wider range than the saloon and drawing room afford; and should be made as familiar with kitchen utensils as with the piano forte, dancing and light reading, and other thousand blandishments esteemed in modern refinement indispensable. Her husband was for many years a merchant in New York and Brooklyn.

Redding, Thomas H., \$20,000; Reed, Jesse, \$20,000; Reed, John, Jr., \$100,000; Reeves, Hamilton, \$15,000; Regan, Joseph, \$15,000.

Joseph Regan—Although occupying but a subordinate situation in one of the large auction establishments in New York, he has, by his industry and economy, realized a snug fortune; and has two sons at college who give promise of great brilliancy and will in all probability, ere many years elapse, become distinguished in public life.

Remson, Abraham, \$60,000; Reynolds, J. G., Lieut. U. S. Marines, \$20,000; Reynolds, Morris, \$20,000; Rhodes, Foster, \$20,000; Ricard, George, Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Richards, Augustus C., \$30,000; Richards, Benjamin, \$40,000; Richards, Daniel, \$100,000; Richards, Sarah H., \$30,000; Richardson, Lemuel, Williamsburgh, \$20,000; Richardson, Marvin, \$10,000; Riker, Elizabeth, \$15,000; Rillet, John, \$50,000; Ripley, George C., \$35,000; Ripley, Noah, \$20,000; Robbins, Daniel A., \$25,000.

Daniel A. Robbins—A well known builder; an active politician of the democratic school; a gentleman of excellent social qualities; and one of the most exemplary of men.

Robbins, M. T., \$10,000; Roberts, C. L., \$25,000; Roberts, Joseph, \$10,000.

Joseph Roberts came to this country from England but a few years ago, and commenced business as a butcher with only a few dollars, from which, by his great industry, he has accumulated sufficient to erect three or four fine buildings, besides having formed a valuable business connection that must obtain an accession to his wealth.

Roberts, Samuel T., \$25,000.

Samuel T. Roberts is one of the representatives of the ninth ward in the common council; a staunch Democrat; honorable in all his transactions; and kind to the poor; in short, a clever, good, smart man. By industry and good fortune with his wife, he has obtained his property, the greater portion of which lies in New Jersey.

Robinson, Francis, \$40,000; Robinson, George C., \$20,000; Robinson, James,



\$10,000; Robinson, Jeremiah, \$30,000; Robinson, John, \$15,000; Rockwell, William, \$35,000.

William Rockwell was formerly district attorney of Brooklyn, and twice candidate for mayor of the city as nominee of the American party. As a lawyer he has few, if any superiors; and in private life is greatly beloved.

Rockwell, William, merchant, \$35,000; Rogers, John, \$25,000; Rogers, Jonathan, \$10,000.

Jonathan Rogers—One of the aldermen of the second ward; a politician of great influence; for many years holding a prominent station in the mechanical department of the navy yard; and a benevolent and good man.

Rogers, Joshua, \$10,000; Rosenbaum, H. W., \$20,000; Rosman, Robert, \$20,000; Rowan, James, \$20,000; Rowland, Charles, \$25,000; Rowland, Henry & James, \$35,000; Russell, William H., \$40,000; Ruthven, James, \$20,000; Ryder, C. W., \$10,000; Ryerson, Margaret, \$10,000; Ryerson, Martin, \$25,000; Sage, Mrs. Agnes Ann, \$30,000; Sale, William A., Sales, L., estate, \$50,000; Sampson, George L., \$50,000; Sanderson, Sydney, \$40,000; Sandford, J. L., \$20,000; Sands, Austin, S., \$100,000; Sands, Christian H., \$50,000; Sands, Captain Joshua R., \$50,000; Sands, Joseph, \$100,000; Sands, Oliver H., \$50,000; Sands, Wilson H., \$40,000; Sanger, C. P., \$30,000; Sanger, E., \$30,000; Sanger, Thomas F., \$25,000; Sargent, Thomas, Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Saunders, George, \$35,000.

George Saunders—The well-known razor strop manufacturer of New York, formerly a hair dresser of considerable celebrity, and a portrait painter and artist of no common ability. He is rapidly adding to his comfortable possessions by an immense business, and is well deserving of his good fortune.

Schenck, Abram, \$25,000.

Mr. Schenck, as the name indicates, is of German extraction; his ancestors were among the first families who emigrated to this country, and settled at Canarsie, Long Island, about seven miles from this city, where most of the family still reside.

Schenck, John, \$100,000; Schenck, Lafayette, \$20,000; Schermerhorn, Abraham, estate, \$50,000; Schermerhorn, Peter, \$500,000; Schneider, Henry, \$20,000; Schoonmaker, Margaret, \$20,000; Scoles, Maria, \$50,000.

Mrs. Scoles is the widow of James Scoles, an Englishman of very eccentric habits, but profuse liberality.

Seaman, John G., \$20,000; Selleck, A. De Forest, \$30,000; Selleck, William, \$50,000; Sergeant, Wilson H., \$40,000; Seymour, W. A., \$35,000; Sharp, H. D., \$20,000; Sharp, Alexander W., \$40,000; Shaw, George L., \$20,000.

George L. Shaw—Formerly an alderman of this city, and proprietor of a celebrated tavern near the navy yard. Realized the bulk of his property by speculating in Yankee clocks, and is now extensively engaged in that business.

Shay, J. B., \$10,000; Sheldon, James, \$100,000; Sheldon, Henry, \$200,000; Shepard, J. H., \$30,000; Sheridan, Bernard, \$20,000; Sherman, Eliza, \$15,000; Shipman, James A., \$20,000; Shotwell, Samuel, \$25,000.

Samuel Shotwell—One of the several persons residing in Brooklyn who have made money by dealing in vegetables and fruit in the New York markets.

Silliman, B. D., \$35,000; Simonson, Carman A., \$15,000; Simonson, Morris,

\$10,000; Simonson, Isaac, \$20,000; Simonson, J. R., \$10,000; Skillman, John, Williamsburgh, \$35,000; Skinner, Salmon, \$35,000; Slade, John Jr., \$20,000; Smart, Mary, Hannah and Elizabeth, \$45,000; Smith, Ann, \$30,000; Smith, Caleb, \$100,000; Smith, Charles, W., \$25,000; Smith Crawford, C., \$25,000; Smith, Cyrus, P., \$40,000.

Cyrus P. Smith—Formerly mayor of Brooklyn; a distinguished politician on the Whig side; a very prominent churchman; and very active in promoting the welfare of the common schools and the cause of education in this city.

Smith, D. W., merchant, \$50,000; Smith, Eliza, \$40,000; Smith, Gerritt, \$20,000; Smith, Gilbert A., \$20,000; Smith, Himan, \$10,000; Smith, Ira, \$150,000; Smith, Isaac, \$20,000; Smith, James W., \$20,000; Smith, Jesse C., \$25,000.

Jesse C. Smith—An alderman of the third ward; a lawyer of extensive practice; and one of the most highly esteemed citizens of Brooklyn. An influential man in the whig ranks.

Smith, John, \$25,000.

John Smith was formerly a cartman of this city, and long since retired to enjoy the *otium cum dignitate* which he earned by a long period of incessant toil, great frugality, and strictly honorable dealings.

Smith, John H., \$30,000; Smith, Mary S., \$10,000; Smith, Richard, \$10,000; Smith, Samuel, \$200,000; Smith, William, \$30,000; Smith, William C., \$40,000; Smith, William D., \$15,000; Snecker, William, \$30,000; Sparkman, James D., Williamsburgh, \$300,000; Spader, Mrs., \$100,000; Spear, Dr. H. S., \$25,000; Speir, Henry, \$75,000; Speir, Robert, \$35,000; Speir, Robert, Jr., \$25,000; Spencer, William, \$50,000; Spies, Francis, \$40,000; Sprague, Joseph, \$45,000; Spring, Marcus, \$35,000; Squire, Charles, \$100,000; Stacy, George, \$40,000; Standford, David, \$75,000; Stansbury, John, \$25,000.

John Stansbury—A member of the common council from the fifth ward; by birth an Englishman; and greatly beloved for his benevolent disposition and many acts of charity. He has acquired his abundant means as a dealer and truckman in the New York markets, which he still follows.

Stanton, Amos P., \$200,000; Stanton, Charles, \$35,000; Stanton, Bebee, \$20,000; Stanton E. C., \$30,000; Starr, Chandler, \$50,000.

Chandler Starr is a distinguished merchant and well known leading politician of the Whig school. His prominence as a party man is, however, better known in New York than in Brooklyn, not having as yet taken any conspicuous action in the public affairs of this city.

Stebbins, Asa, \$15,000.

Asa Stebbins is the associate of A. Mann, Jr., in the common council from the sixth ward. An architect of universally admitted skill, whose genius has done much in ornamenting the palace lined streets of the southern section of Brooklyn. A warm hearted, good man.

Stebbins, Maria, \$15,000; Steele, Joseph, \$35,000; Steele, Robert, \$20,000; Stephenson, Ebenezer, S., \$30,000; Stephenson, Henry, \$20,000; Sterling, Woolsey G., \$35,000; Stevens, W., \$15,000; Stevens, Henry, \$20,000; Stevens, James, \$30,000; St. Felix, John R., \$75,000; Stilwell, George, \$15,000.

George Stilwell is an alderman of the second ward; an enterprising mechanic,



and one of the largest manufacturers of iron railings, etc., in this vicinity. The Greenwood Cemetery contains many specimens of his superior workmanship. Plain and unassuming in manners, and generally esteemed for his social, convivial, and benevolent qualities.

Stilwell, Sylvanus B., \$20,000; Stinemets, W. H., \$20,000; Stoddard, Charles, \$40,000; Stone, Harriet, \$30,000; Storm, Isaac A., \$200,000; Story, Henry, estate, \$50,000; Stoughton, E. W., \$50,000; Striker, Gerrett, \$100,000; Stryker, Francis B., \$10,000.

Francis B. Stryker—We wish we could truly place the possessions of this much esteemed gentleman at twenty times \$10,000; for in his hands such wealth would be rendered a blessing to the poor of this community. No man is more generally beloved, or more deservedly popular; and his present exalted station is, we hope, but a prelude to higher and more lucrative distinctions yet to be conferred by the people of Kings County.

Strong, Charles A., \$30,000; Studwell, John J., \$35,000; Sullivan, Mary, \$35,000; Sukley, George, \$20,000; Sutton, Abraham, \$20,000; Sutton, Joshua, \$10,000; Sutton, Stephen, \$30,000; Suydam, Henry, Jr., \$30,000; Suydam, M., \$25,000; Suydam, Mrs. Mary, \$10,000; Swaney, Miles, \$25,000; Talbot, George A., \$75,000; Talmage, Thomas G., \$50,000; Talman, George C., \$10,000; Tappan, Arthur, \$40,000; Tappan, Lewis, \$50,000; Tatham, Benjamin, \$100,000.

Benjamin Tatham is one of the firm of Tatham Brothers, the largest importers of lead pipes in the United States.

Taylor, Charles T., \$50,000; Taylor, Rev., E. E. L., \$30,000; Taylor, Elisha, S., \$50,000; Taylor, Jeremiah, \$40,000; Taylor, John, \$15,000; Taylor, John Allen, \$75,000; Taylor, Peter G., \$35,000.

Peter G. Taylor is an alderman of the fourth ward; an upright merchant; an excellent and charitable man; and much esteemed by all who know him.

Ten Eyck, Richard, Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Thom, Christopher, J. B. W., \$15,000; Thomas, Luke W., \$35,000; Thompson, Gerinaie, \$30,000; Thompson, George C., \$50,000; Thompson, John, \$15,000; Thompson, William, \$15,000; Thorne, Richard, \$35,000; Thorne, Richard V. W., \$50,000.

Richard V. W. Thorne is a distinguished Democrat, and a general favorite with the people.

Thurston, F. G., \$50,000; Thursby, John, Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Thwing, J. C., \$75,000.

J. C. Thwing is a shrewd and successful Wall Street broker. For many years he ploughed the ocean as master and owner of several vessels. During his early life, he contracted an asthmatic disease which has been a great affliction to him, and has prevented his taking repose in a recumbent position.

Tienckin, Henry, \$35,000.

Henry Tienckin is a native of Holland, from which country he emigrated a few years ago with slender means, but an indomitable perseverance, and enterprising spirit. He has realized his present fortune by his success in business as a retail grocer.

Titus, Abial, \$25,000; Titus, Miss L. B., \$10,000; Tolford, Joshua, \$30,000; Tompkins, Ira, \$10,000; Townsend, George A., \$30,000; Trappal, Michael, \$75,000; Trask, Alanson, \$35,000; Treadwell, Adam, \$100,000; Treadwell, John,

\$100,000; Trembly, Daniel, \$10,000; Trowbridge, Edwin L., \$40,000; Tyron, E. G., \$100,000.

E. G. Tyron was formerly a merchant tailor in extensive business in New York, but realized the bulk of his present fortune by a successful "hit" in an entirely accidental lottery speculation.

Tucker, Jonathan, \$35,000; Tucker, Joseph S., \$25,000; Tucker, Thatcher, \$35,000; Tucker, Dr. Joseph, \$40,000; Ulfard, Levi W., Williamsburgh, \$40,000; Underhill, A., \$50,000.

A. Underhill is one of the wealthy owners of the large milk establishment at East Brooklyn.

Underhill, Aronijah, \$20,000; Underhill, Elias, \$30,000; Underhill, Samuel T., \$35,000; Underwood, J. A., \$35,000; Unkart, Edward, \$40,000; Upjohn, Richard, \$35,000; Utter, Samuel, \$20,000; Vail, Henry F., \$25,000; Vanderbilt, John, \$100,000.

John Vanderbilt is First Judge of the County of Kings; an accomplished scholar and able lawyer. Of remarkable suavity of manners and amiability of disposition, he is eminently popular with all who know him. His talents and his virtues will adorn any station to which he may be elevated by the people.

Vanderveer, Adrian, \$100,000; Vandervoort, Cornelia, \$10,000; Vandervoort, Francis, \$30,000; Varick, James L., \$30,000; Victor, Frederick, \$25,000; Victor, Theodore, \$35,000; Villade, C., \$25,000; Voorhis, John, \$35,000; Voorhis, William & Peter, \$40,000.

Peter & William Voorhis are manufacturers of and dealers in lime, by which business they have made their present capital, having commenced with comparatively nothing. They are yet young, and afford an example of what may be accomplished by untiring industry and bold enterprise.

Voris, James L., \$30,000; Vreeland, James, \$40,000; Van Beuren, E. K., \$40,000; Van Beuren, Moses, \$30,000; Van Beuren, Sarah Ann, \$30,000; Van Brunt, A., \$150,000; Van Brunt, A. N., \$30,000; Van Brunt, Nichols R., \$30,000; Van Cleef, Ann, \$20,000; Van Cleef, Cornelius, \$40,000; Van Cleef, Margaret, \$30,000; Van Doren, Rev. W. H., Williamsburgh, \$40,000; Van Kleeck, Charles A., \$35,000; Van Nostrand, Abraham, \$20,000; Van Nostrand, James, \$100,000; Van Nostrand, John, \$150,000; Van Nostrand, John S., \$50,000; Van Nostrand, Henry, \$50,000; Van Pelt, Dr. A., \$60,000; Van Sant, T. J., Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Van Wagenen, Gerrett, \$100,000; Van Wagner, David, \$15,000; Van Winckle, George W., \$40,000; Van Wyck, James A., \$25,000; Van Zandt, T. A., \$30,000; Van Zandt, Wm., Williamsburgh, \$20,000; Wall, William, Williamsburgh, \$25,000; Walsh, Richard, \$20,000; Walters, J. F., \$25,000; Wardwell, Ben, \$40,000; Waring, H. P., \$35,000; Warner, T., Williamsburgh, \$30,000; Warren, John D., \$40,000; Washburn, A. H., \$30,000; Waterbury, J., Williamsburgh, \$175,000; Waterbury, L., \$40,000; Waterbury, N., \$200,000.

N. Waterbury realized a great portion of his wealth as lessee of the Grand Street Ferry.

Waterman, William, \$30,000; Webster, Hosea, \$100,000; Weed, H. A., \$50,000.

H. A. Weed is a son of Nathaniel Weed, Esq., president of the North River Bank, N. Y. Mr. Weed is a young lawyer of great eminence; extensive and lucrative practice; and, in all the relations of life, a most worthy man.



Weed, Maltbie, \$40,000; Wells, Seth, \$25,000; Wells, Phoebe R., \$50,000; Wendell, John, \$50,000; Wesson, David, \$40,000; Wheeler, Allen, \$35,000; Wheelock, Clark, \$40,000; Whipple, Richard, \$25,000; Whitcomb, Moses, \$50,000; White, Chandler, \$50,000; White, George, \$50,000; White, John, \$20,000; White, W. A. & A. M., \$250,000.

W. A. & A. M. White are extensively engaged in the fur business in New York, and are greatly respected as honorable merchants and estimable citizens. They reside in a splendid mansion in Washington street.

Whitehouse, Edward, \$100,000; Whiting, R. M., \$25,000; Whiting, W. E., \$50,000; Whittlesy, Elijah, \$75,000; Wichelhausen, Jacob, \$30,000; Wickham, William, \$25,000; Wierdereolt, Jacob, \$30,000; Wickham, William, \$25,000; Wiley, George S., \$75,000; Willard, George L., \$40,000; Williams, F. & M., \$20,000; Williams, George, \$40,000; Williams, John, \$30,000.

John Williams made his money by the retail grocery business; and is rapidly adding to his well-earned gains.

Williams, Ransom G., \$30,000; Willink, John A., \$300,000; Wilson, Charles, \$40,000; Wilson, Henry, \$10,000; Wilson, Henry R., \$20,000.

Henry R. Wilson is a son of James G. Wilson, patentee of the celebrated steam planing machine, and owner of the large planing mills in Pearl Street.

Wintringham, Sidney, \$50,000; Withington, Elijah, Williamsburgh, \$30,000; Wood, George, \$100,000.

George Wood is an eminent counselor and distinguished jurist, formerly of New Jersey, but for a few years past a resident of a splendid mansion in the third ward.

Wood, R. E., \$30,000; Wood, Samuel S., \$75,000; Wood, Stephen, \$20,000; Woodruff, Albert, \$50,000; Woodward, Charles & Thomas, \$70,000; Worthington, Anthony, \$30,000; Wright, Amasa, \$75,000; Wright, Daniel, \$100,000; Wright, W. P., \$30,000; Wrigley, Joseph, \$40,000; Wyckoff, Henry S., \$75,000; Wyckoff, J. M., \$40,000; Wyckoff, Peter, \$25,000; Wyckoff, Richard L., \$40,000; Yates, James, \$25,000; Yelverton, John T., \$25,000; Young, Daniel T., \$40,000; Young, Henry, \$500,000; Young, Nathan, \$40,000; Zuill, John O., \$15,000; Zumstein, J. H., \$30,000.

## CHAPTER XII

### CITY OF CHURCHES

LONG ISLAND received its first clergyman in 1654. Domine Megapolensis and a committee of the Council were sent to Midwout to assist the people in organizing a church. The West India Company appropriated six hundred guilders for a salary. The Classis of Amsterdam was asked to select a preacher, but a call was given to Domine Johannes Theodorus Polhemus who accepted. He just had arrived from Brazil. The magistrates of Midwout and Amersfoort petitioned the Council for assistance. They were permitted accordingly to employ Domine Polhemus and to take up a general collection for his support. A church

in the form of a cross was built, sixty feet long and twenty-eight feet wide. Megapolensis was assigned to assist two village magistrates in promoting the undertaking. More than 3,000 guilders were contributed by the Dutch colonists of New Amsterdam, Long Island and Fort Orange. Stuyvesant added four hundred from the treasury. The West India directors approved of the arrangement, but refused to assist the people of Midwout in paying their preacher. Domine Polhemus preached in this, the first Reformed Dutch Church on Long Island on Sunday morning. In the afternoon he alternated between Breuckelen and Amersfoort. In 1660, Domine Henry Selyns arrived from Holland and became the pastor of the residents of Breuckelen. He found one elder, two deacons and twenty-four members. Thirty-one families in the village contained one hundred and thirty-four persons. While a church was being built the congregation worshipped in a barn. The charge ran from the Ferry to Gowanus and the Wallabout. They were not able to pay the clergyman in full and Stuyvesant added individually two hundred and fifty guilders if the domine would preach a Sunday afternoon sermon in the director's bouwerie, Manhattan. This was a resort and pleasure ground of the island. Selwyn agreed readily. Stuyvesant's household, many residents of the city and about forty negroes there received religious instruction. Stuyvesant appealed for more clergymen to supply New Utrecht, Gravesend and New Harlem, besides a village just begun on the North River which contained about one hundred and thirty families. With Selyns in Breuckelen, Polhemus restricted himself to Midwout and Amersfoort, and four hundred guilders was promised those churches from the public funds as soon as it could be spared.

Brooklyn, the "City of Churches," had five hundred and seventy-two churches in 1923. The number does not include numerous "Holiday Churches" in New York City, of which there is no official record. The total number of contributing members given by the Eagle Almanac was 663,561; the Sunday Schools enrolled 191,187 students; the total amount raised was \$5,270,169, and the value of the church property was \$59,130,171.

All this was distributed among twenty-eight important denominations, and twenty-one smaller groups described as miscellaneous, as follows:

Baptists, fifty-three, with 18,344 contributing members, and 14,991 Sunday School members. They raised \$742,763, and owned property valued at \$3,358,500.

Christian, two, with two hundred and five contributing members, and two hundred and five in the Sunday School. They raised \$6,500, and owned property valued at \$25,000.

Christian Science, five.

Congregational, twenty-nine, with 20,085 contributing members, and 12,001 Sunday School members. They raised \$528,621, and their property was worth \$3,182,475.

Disciples of Christ, four, with eight hundred and twenty-four contributing members, and nine hundred and fifteen in the Sunday schools. They raised \$28,700, and their property was worth \$200,000.

Evangelical Association, seven, with 1,100 members and 1,714 in the Sunday schools. It raised \$40,900, and the property was worth \$182,500.

Evangelical Synod of North America, one, with three hundred members,



and two hundred in the Sunday schools. It raised \$6,000, and owned property worth \$40,000.

Friends, two, with six hundred and thirty-five contributing members, and one hundred seventy-five in the Sunday schools. They raised \$7,500, and their property was valued at \$30,000.

Jewish, with 12,041 families, and 5,543 Sabbath School members. They raised \$742,823 in 1923, and their property was valued at \$4,066,500.

Lutheran, with 28,453 contributing members, and 18,599 in the Sunday schools. They contributed \$619,281 in 1923, and their property was worth \$4,354,309.

Methodist Episcopal, forty-five, with 20,819 contributing members, and 19,568 in the Sunday schools. They raised \$594,370, and owned property worth \$3,712,250.

M. E. African, three, with 1,550 contributing members, and 1,075 in the Sunday schools. They raised \$26,620, and owned property worth \$139,000.

M. E. African Zion, four, with 1,662 contributing members, and 1,552 in the Sunday schools. They raised \$38,783, and owned property worth \$153,000.

Methodist Episcopal Free, two, with one hundred and thirty contributing members, and two hundred and forty-eight in the Sunday School. They raised \$10,000, and owned property worth \$50,000.

Methodist Primitive, two, with one hundred and ninety-one contributing members and one hundred and eighty-eight in the Sunday schools. They raised \$6,180, and owned property worth \$52,500.

Methodist Protestant, two, with three hundred and fifty-six contributing members and three hundred and thirty in the Sunday schools. They raised \$7,500, and owned property worth \$35,000.

Church of the Nazarene, four, with four hundred and nine contributing members, and four hundred eighty-seven in the Sunday School. They raised \$8,620, and owned property worth \$44,000.

Presbyterian, thirty-six, with 22,659 contributing members, and 12,875 in the Sunday schools. They raised \$738,539, and owned property worth \$3,362,500.

United Presbyterian, four, with five hundred and eighty-nine contributing members, and nine hundred and fifteen in the Sunday schools. They raised \$7,915, and owned property worth \$110,000.

Protestant Episcopal, fifty-seven, with 24,705 contributing members, and 10,806 in the Sunday schools. They raised \$650,953, and owned property worth \$5,068,137.

Reformed Church in America, eighteen, with 8,395 contributing members, and 7,915 in the Sunday schools. They raised \$146,092, and owned property worth \$1,772,000.

Reformed Church in the United States, four, with seven hundred and sixty-four contributing members, and 748 in the Sunday schools. They raised \$22,604, and owned property worth \$98,000.

Reformed Episcopal, two, with two hundred and ninety contributing

members, and two hundred and twenty-five in the Sunday schools. They raised \$3,400, and owned property worth \$23,000.

Roman Catholic, one hundred and twenty-four, with 492,853 parishioners, and 76,105 in the Sunday schools. They owned church property worth \$26,429,500.

Seventh Day Adventists, five, with nine hundred and eighty contributing members, and eight hundred and seventy-three in the Sunday schools. They raised \$126,565, and owned property worth \$174,500.

Swedenborgian, two, with one hundred and seventy-five contributing members, and seventy-six in the Sunday schools. They raised \$6,000, and owned property worth \$230,000.

Unitarian, four, with 1,020 contributing members, and two hundred and seventy-one in the Sunday schools. They raised \$29,825, and owned property worth \$287,000.

Universalist, three, with seven hundred and thirty-three contributing members, and three hundred and forty-one in the Sunday schools. They raised \$25,500, and owned property worth \$275,000.

Miscellaneous, twenty-one, with 3,234 contributing members, and 2,120 in the Sunday schools. They raised \$88,562, and owned property worth \$586,500.

## CHAPTER XIII

### THE REFORMED PROTESTANT DUTCH CHURCH

THE Reformed Protestant Dutch Church on Long Island was the name by which the organized body of church members belonging to this denomination was originally known. What is now known as the First Reformed Church of Brooklyn was originally named the First Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Brooklyn, or "Breuckelen." The date of its organization has been fixed at 1660, but the records show that efforts were begun as early as 1654 by the people of Breuckelen to organize a church, and that a church society was actually in existence at that time.

Religious services were held by the Dutch in the settlement of New Netherlands as early as 1628, when the learned and zealous Jonas Michaelius came out from Amsterdam, under the auspices of the North Synod of Holland, and "first established the form of a church" at Manhattan. He was succeeded in 1633 by the Rev. Everardus Bogardus, and the congregation, who had hitherto worshipped in the upper loft of a horse-mill, erected a small, plain church, together with a stable and dwelling house for the Domine's use. This first church in Manhattan gave place in 1642 to a new stone edifice within the fort (now the Battery), and which was much better suited to the size and dignity of the colony than the "mean barn" in which they had hitherto worshipped.

Domine Bogardus was followed, in 1647, by the Rev. Johannes Megapolensis, a man eminent for his piety and talents, who served the church with fidelity, until his death in 1669.



For many years succeeding the first settlement of the country, the settlers on the western end of Long Island were dependent upon New Amsterdam for all their civil and religious privileges. This state of things, with all its inconveniences, lasted until 1654, when the first church on Long Island was established at Midwout, now Flatbush, and Governor Stuyvesant, Director-General of the province, designated Domine Megapolensis, of New Amsterdam, with John Snedikor and John Stryker, commissioners to superintend the erection of a church edifice. It was to be sixty or sixty-five feet long, twenty-eight feet wide, with ceiling twelve to fourteen feet high, to be built in the form of a cross, the rear part thereof to be used as a parsonage. There was a church society in existence at Brooklyn at this time, but the fact that Governor Stuyvesant owned a large tract of land in Flatbush, doubtless led to the erection of the first church edifice there.

Midwout was larger than Breuckelen and the surrounding villages, but its people were not able to carry forward the undertaking alone, and on February 9, 1655, they sent a petition to the Director-General, asking that the people of Breuckelen and Amersfoort (Flatlands) might be ordered to help them, and the order was at once given that these two villages assist those of Midwout in cutting and hauling timber for the church. The Breuckelen people, while willing to assist in building the church, protested against being called upon to aid in the erection of a parsonage, or the "minister's house," "as the Midwout people were able to do it themselves." The orders of the Director-General, however, were imperative and they were compelled to obey.

On August 5, 1655, by order of Director Stuyvesant, the people of Midwout, Amersfoort and Breuckelen were convened for the purpose of ascertaining whether they approved of Domine Polhemus as their minister, and the amount of salary they were willing to pay him. The sheriff reported to the Director, as the result of the meeting, that they approved of Domine Polhemus as their minister and were willing to pay him a salary of 1,040 guilders (\$416.66) a year. This was much larger in proportion to the ability of the church to pay than that of any Brooklyn minister at the present day.

Divine service was conducted regularly at Midwout from that time forward, and although the Breuckelen people contributed to the support of the church, and probably were regular attendants, they already had determined on an organization of their own, for when those of Midwout and Amersfoort on February 8, 1656, applied to the Director-General for an order permitting them to raise money in the three villages named, by tax or by voluntary subscription, the people of Breuckelen objected, unless "Domine Polhemus should be allowed to preach alternately in Breuckelen and Midwout." The people of Gravesend and Amersfoort objected to this, stating "inasmuch as Breuckelen is quite two hours walking from Amersfoort and Gravesend, whereas the village of Midwout is not half so far, and the road much better." It was decided by the Director-General and Council that the morning services be in Midwout and the other alternately at Amersfoort and Breuckelen.

Under this arrangement Domine Polhemus began preaching in Breuckelen on Sunday, April 6, 1656. This, therefore, is properly the date of the organization of the First Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Breuckelen. Preaching services were at first held in the open air, until Joris Dircksen offered the use of his house. When, in November following, it was proposed to raise the salary of Domine Polhemus, by *pro rata* assessment between the three villages; the Breuckelen congregation pleaded their inability to raise the sum (about \$128),

and protested moreover, that "we never gave a call to the aforesaid Polhemus and never accepted him as our minister, but he intruded himself upon us against our will, and voluntarily preached in the open streets, under the blue sky; when, to avoid offense, the house of Joris Dircksen was offered him temporarily here in Breuckelen."

"The protest" of the Breuckelen Church to the Director-General and Council contained a long list of grievances, ending:

"However, permit us to say in conclusion, and be it said in reverence, that as those of Midwout have engaged said Polhemus without our knowledge and without any previous consultation (with us) we have no objection whatever, nay we are rather satisfied that the people of Midwout shall enjoy exclusively, the whole services of the aforesaid Do. Polhemus. And in case the aforesaid Polhemus should again desire to say his prayers here, in lieu of giving a sermon, as he did before, although we are unwilling to put ourselves under any obligation, still we are disposed to make him from time to time, as opportunity shall offer, some allowance, as proof of our good will."

Their protest, however, did not avail, for Sheriff Tonneman was instructed "to remind those of Breuckelen once more, to fulfil their engagements and to execute their promises relative to the salary of Do. Polhemus."

On July 6, 1658, Director-General Stuyvesant summarily brought matters to a conclusion by issuing an order forbidding the inhabitants of Breuckelen to remove their crops from their fields till the tithes or tenths reserved to the Government in their patent for their lands was taken out or commuted for.

These summary measures of the government aroused the people of Breuckelen, and they determined to sever their connection with the other villages, and maintain a separate organization of their own; they therefore petitioned the Director-General and Council the following year—1659—for leave to call a minister, alleging as reasons therefor, the badness of the road to Midwout, the difficulty of attending divine service in New Amsterdam, and the age and inability of Domine Polhemus.

On February 16, 1660, Henricus Selyns having accepted the call made by the congregation of Breuckelen, through the Dutch West India Company, on the Classis of Amsterdam, was examined and licensed on his engaging to serve them for four years. The call was approved by the Dutch West India Company, March 27, 1660, and Domine Selyns on September 7, 1660, was installed as domine of the First Reformed Protestant Church of Breuckelen. The Governor deputed two of his principal officers to present the minister to the congregation—Necasius de Silte, a member of the Council, a man well versed in the law; and Martin Krigier, burgomaster of New Amsterdam. After the presentation Domine Selyns preached his inaugural sermon, and then read the call of the Classis, and their certificate of examination, with a testimonial from the ministers of Amsterdam.

The following extract from a letter of Domine Selyns, dated October 4, 1660, proves conclusively that the church had been in existence for some time before his arrival; and there is no doubt but what there was a legalized body of Christians known as the Breuckelen Church as early as 1654; furthermore, this body was officially recognized when the first preaching services were held on Sunday, April 10, 1656, in the village of Breuckelen. Says Domine Selyns: "I found in Breuckelen one elder, two deacons, twenty-four members, thirty-one householders, and one hundred and thirty-one persons."

On September 12, 1660, Elder Joris Dircksen reported to the Consistory of Brooklyn, having handed the letter of the Consistory to Domine Polhemus, with its thanks for his rendered services, and gave him the following list of members



belonging to the jurisdiction of Breuckelen: Joris Dircksen, Tryntie Hadders, Peter Monfort, Tryntie Simons, Jan Pietersen, Femmetie Jans, Johannis Marcus, Barber Lucas, Gertruy Barents, Altie Joresi, Altie Brackenee, Magdalena Jacobs, Jan Hibon (under censure), Susanna Dubbels, William Gerritse Van Cowenhoven, Sarah De Plauck, William Bredenbent, Grietie Jans, Adam Brower, Elsie Hendricks, Jan Janse, Albert Cornelissen, Jan Evertse, Teunis Nyssen (Denyse), Teunis Janse.

The condition of affairs at this time is shown in a letter of Domine Selyns to the Classis of Amsterdam, from which we extract the following:

Amsterdam On the Manhattans 4 Oct. 1660.

We do not preach in any church but in a barn, and shall, God willing, erect a church in the winter by the cooperation of the people. The congregation is passable. The attendance is augmented from Midwout, Amersfoort and frequently Gravesend, but most from the Manhattans.

Referring to the antecedents of Domine Selyns, it is stated that "his grandmother was a deaconess for several years in the Amsterdam Church." So far as church government was concerned, there was evidently, at that early period, a recognition of woman's rights. The practice, however, does not appear to have been followed in this country, as there are no deaconesses mentioned in the records of the Breuckelen Church.

The members of the church had agreed to pay Domine Selyns a salary of six hundred florins (guilders), and they soon found that they were unable to meet their obligations, consequently Joris Dircksen and Joris Rapalje, magistrates of Breuckelen, appeared before the Council on August 30, 1660, and represented that they, in conformity with the order of the Director-General, had convened all the inhabitants of the said village, and inquired how much they would be able to contribute to the salary of Domine Selyns, and they could only raise about three hundred guilders annually, payable in corn at the value of beavers, but that in addition they were willing to provide the Domine with a comfortable dwelling house.

Realizing their utter inability to meet their obligations, Director Stuyvesant agreed personally to contribute two hundred and fifty guilders annually, provided Domine Selyns would preach at his farm on Sunday afternoon. Stuyvesant owned a large farm at Flatlands. This arrangement was completed to the satisfaction of all.

A house for the new domine was probably completed by the early part of the winter as appears by the following:

Dec. 19, 1660. Upon the request of the Court of Breuckelen to advance it fifty guilders servant to pay the carpenters Aucke Jans and Franz Bloetgoet van der Gonde for the building of the parsonage, the deacons were empowered to advance the said amount of the poor's money upon condition of the usual rate of interest.

As far as known, the congregation continued to worship in a barn until Domine Selyns went back to Holland. In 1663, the first house of worship was erected. In accordance with the Dutch fashion of those days, it was placed in the middle of the highway (now Fulton Street), between Lawrence and Bridge Streets. It stood in the middle of the road, unprotected on either side, with the burial ground on the west, and remained without material change about one hundred years. Tradition says it was built on the foundation of an old stone fort constructed in the early days for protection against the savages. Six years previous to this the directors of the West India Company at Amsterdam wrote to Director Stuyvesant that they had sent a bell for the church at Breuckelen. The people had been summoned to church by the beating of a drum.

The domine in those days was expected to be "thoroughly furnished unto all good works," and act as pastor, chorister, and schoolmaster. Domine Selyns evidently possessed the requisite qualifications, but the acoustic properties of a barn were not equal to his limited lung power, and an assistant for this special service was provided.

"May 20, 1661. *Whereas.* It was very difficult and not well possible for Henricus Selyns to be both preacher and fore and after singer, which was very detrimental to him, partly on account of the barn, where the services are held, and where there is but little sound, and partly on account of the services he has to conduct on the farm of the Hon. Peter Stuyvesant Dir. Gen. of New Netherland.

*Therefore* it was proposed to look around for an able person to fill the office of precentor, chorister and schoolmaster and who might be appointed as Court Messenger by the Court, which proposition was unanimously adopted by the brethren with the request that the aforesaid Henricus Selyns would with respect to that write to Fort Orange and Esopus, which he has promised to do.

"July 6th, 1661. After many efforts to obtain a chorister and schoolmaster we heard about Mr. Carl De Bevoise of Amsterdam, New Netherlands, whom after inquiry into his abilities we have appointed with the approbation and subsidy of the Hon. Gen. and Council of New Netherlands."

The compensation agreed upon was :

"The compensation agreed upon was 25 guilders, servant and free house rent, and as court messenger he will receive a salary over and above the aforementioned subsidy of the Hon. Council.

"Duties.—His orders, instructions and regulations will be the following after the custom of the fatherland :

"1. The aforementioned precentor will take timely care to note down on the psalm board the psalm to be sung before the service.

"2. He shall begin to toll the first bell at the proper time, to be in church or place of worship at the second bell, to arrange the chairs and pews according to the rules laid down, or to be laid down by the Consistory, and to read a few chapters out of the Holy Writ, as also the Ten Commandments, and the Twelve Articles of the Christian Creed before every sermon.

"3. He shall chiefly read from the books of the New Testament and from the books of the old Testament, principally the Psalms and the Prophets, or at the time of the communion pay particular attention to

"The 22, 23, 31, 40, 42, 51, 69, 110, 111, 112 and 132 Psalm, the 53 Chap. of Isaiah, and the 6 chapter of St. John and from the 13th chapter to the end of St. John's Gospel; to the 26th and 27th of Matthew 1st 10th and 11th chap. of 1st Corinthians, 7th, 8th, 9th, and 10th chap., of the Epistle to the Hebrews, 1st, 2d and 3d chap. of Revelations.

"4. He shall immediately after the third bell begin to sing the designated psalm.

"5. In case of sickness or necessary absence the above precentor shall not allow any one to take his place unless being a person of good conduct and character and after due notification to the consistory.

"6. He shall be diligent and zealous in his school work especially to instil in his pupils hearts from their earliest youth, the fear of the Lord, give a good example, begin the lessons with prayer, close with the singing of a Psalm and at the same time teach the youth from the "Questions and Principles," by the Reverend Godly and very learned Father Do. Jannis Megapolensis, Minister of the Gospel at Amsterdam, New Netherlands."

On July 17, 1664, Domine Selyns having completed his stipulated four years service to the church at Breuckelen, asked permission to return to Holland, which was granted, and he was regularly dismissed from his church on July 23d.

For the purpose of keeping the congregation together till further orders, the Consistory arranged with Mr. De Bevoise, the chorister, to read on Sundays before the congregation a sermon from the Postel of Mr. Abraham Schultatas, "besides the prayers and petitions before and after the aforesaid sermon, whose salary therefore and also on (account of) the low price of servant has been raised by the Consistory to one hundred guilders."

The Breuckelen and other churches for some years depended on the aid furnished them by the West India Company. The surrender of New Netherlands to the English in 1664, put an end to this, and they were obliged to rely on their own efforts.



It was this condition of affairs that led the people of Breuckelen to extend a call to Domine Polhemus—then well advanced in years, who resigned his pastorate of Flatlands and Flatbush and began his labors in Breuckelen about 1670, continuing until his death in 1676.

A day of thanksgiving and prayer was observed by the Pilgrim Fathers in the autumn, after the first year's crops were gathered. The first observance of this day by the people of Breuckelen was in the spring of 1662, as appears by the church record, March 12, 1662.

By the death of Domine Polhemus, the churches in this locality were deprived of the regular preaching of the gospel, and the Breuckelen church invited the Rev. Mr. Nieuwenhausen, of New Amsterdam, to supply their pulpit, which he did until the year 1677.

The Rev. Casparus Van Zuren was sent to Long Island by the Classis of Amsterdam, in response to a call made immediately after the decease of Domine Polhemus, and was installed over all the churches in Kings County, September 6, 1677. He had been settled at Gourderac, Holland. He was an industrious and systematic man. When the pulpit of New York was vacant, he preached there every Wednesday by invitation.

The interference of the British authorities, who then held the Dutch colonies in subjection, produced much uneasiness and a considerable show of opposition among the inhabitants of the four towns. And in 1680 the Church Council, assembled in synod at Flatbush, formally resolved that the charge and management of church lands and property belonging to the Church Council, was secured to them by the Charter of Freedoms; and furthermore, that the English officials were, by their oaths of office, bound to protect and not to abridge the rights of the church. They also chose church-masters, to take charge of the church property.

At the time of the surrender of the country to the English, Domine Megapolensis was one of the commissioners to settle on the terms, perhaps so chosen that the interests of the Dutch Reformed Church might be guarded and protected. The only clause in the entire "article of capitulation" is the eighth, which reads: "The Dutch shall enjoy the Liberty of their Consciences in divine Worship and Church Discipline."

In 1685, Domine Van Zuren resigned the pastorate of the churches of Kings County and returned to Holland, and the Classis of Amsterdam sent out Domine Rudolphus Van Varick, who came the same year and remained until 1694. During the Leisler troubles in 1689, Mr. Varick, as well as other Dutch ministers, stood out against the authority of Leisler, and was dragged from his home, cast into jail, deposed from his ministerial functions, and fined heavily.

The Rev. Wilhemus Lupardus was next sent over by the Classis of Amsterdam, soon after the death of Mr. Varick, and remained until his death in 1702.

The people of the four towns, having the consent of Lord Cornbury, the Governor, called the Rev. Bernardus Freeman, pastor of the Reformed Dutch Church of Schenectady.

In compliance with Lord Cornbury's permit, Mr. Freeman was duly installed at New Utrecht, but his opponents, at the same time, made formal application to the Classis at Amsterdam for a minister. Freeman's adherents demanded that the church books, lands and stock should be delivered into their keeping, etc. Petitions and counter petitions were sent, and hearings given from time to time, and finally Governor Lovelace promulgated an order to the effect that having

considered the matters therein contained, he does direct, and does hereby order and direct that from this time forward

"Mr. Freeman and Mr. Antonides shall preach at all the churches in Kings County alternately, and divide the profits equally, share and share alike; and to avoid all further disputes between the ministers, Mr. Freeman shall preach next Sunday at Flatbush, and the Sunday following Mr. Antonides shall preach at Flatbush, and so on in the other churches, turn by turn; if either of them refuses to comply with this order, to be dismissed."

Domine Antonides refused to obey the order, and this controversy was kept up for over thirteen years and vexed the souls of four royal Governors and their councils. Near the close of 1714 a convention of delegates from the several congregations mutually agreed to lay aside their differences, and acknowledge Messrs. Freeman and Antonides as their ministers. Breuckelen, Bushwick, Flatbush, Flatlands, New Utrecht, and Jamaica, were all included within the charge, and both domines continued to reside in Flatbush in peace and harmony, and in the faithful discharge of their duties.

In 1735, Domine Freeman purchased seven acres of land in the town of Flatbush and built a house, where he died in 1741. His successor was Rev. Johannes Arondeus from Rotterdam, against whom grave charges were made soon after his settlement. He quarreled with his new colleague, Van Sinderen, very soon after the latter's arrival; and in May, 1747, he went off secretly, as was alleged, to the Raritan, where he was installed as minister; returning, however, July 31, 1748, to Kings County, where he resumed his functions, especially at Breuckelen and New Utrecht. His conduct was not in accordance with the Synod's ideas of propriety, and therefore the Synod cautioned the people against "one Johannes Arondeus, who claims to be a minister of the Church, but has no ecclesiastical attestation." His nominal connection with this church was from 1742 to 1754. The pastorate of Rev. Vincentius Antonides, a co-laborer with Rev. Mr. Freeman in this field, was from 1705 to 1754, while that of Mr. Freeman was from 1705 to 1741.

The year 1737 witnessed the first attempt ever made in this country to organize any ecclesiastical body in the church higher than a consistory. Under the old regime there was no power of ordination. Ministers could only be obtained from Holland, and candidates for the ministry here were obliged to go there for ordination. Thus much time was lost and expense incurred in the settlement of ministers, and congregations were often vacant for a long time. Discipline could not be promptly and thoroughly exercised, for a minister could be tried only by the Classis, and no case of a private member could be finally settled here, for all the Courts of Appeal were on the other side of the water. In 1737, however, a few ministers and elders devised a plan which resulted in the permanent organization of the Synod.

Upon the deposition of the Rev. Mr. Arondeus, his place was filled by the Rev. Antonius Courtenius, from Hackensack, N. J., where he had labored for twenty-five years. He was installed on May 2, 1755, as pastor over the Reformed Dutch Churches of Kings County as the colleague of the Rev. Ulpianus Van Sinderen. He died in October the following year.

His place was supplied by the Rev. Johannes Casparus Rubel, a native of Hesse Cassel, in Germany, who had been settled at Red Hook, Dutchess County, from 1755 to August 1757, when he was called to be colleague pastor with Domine Van Sinderen, over the churches of Kings County. Both of these gentlemen continued in the work of the ministry until after the close of the Revolutionary War. Mr. Van Sinderen's connection with the First Reformed Dutch Church continued from 1746 to 1784, and that of Mr. Rubel from 1759 to 1783.



In politics they differed. Mr. Van Sinderen being a firm Whig, while Mr. Rubel was a decided loyalist. During Mr. Van Sinderen's pastorate the second church edifice was erected in Breuckelen.

This building was a large, square edifice, with solid and very thick walls, plastered and whitewashed on every side up to the eaves; the roof, as usual, ascending to a peak in the center, capped with an open belfry, in which hung a small sharp-toned bell, that as late as 1840, was still in use in one of the Brooklyn schools. This bell was the one presented by the West India Company in 1661, at the request of Domine Selyns, which might also be used in time of danger, to call the country people thereabouts together. This bell was used by the first and second church edifice. In 1840, it was sold to the town of Brooklyn, and placed in the belfry of the district school house in Middagh Street, Third Ward of Brooklyn. The interior of the building was plain, dark and gloomy, so that, in summer, one could not see to read in it after four o'clock in the afternoon, by reason of its small windows. These were six or eight feet above the floor, and filled with stained glass lights, brought from Holland, representing vines loaded with flowers. This church, the second which had occupied the same site, was built in 1766, in the middle of the road leading from the ferry into the country, which road is now known as Fulton Street, and immediately opposite to a burying ground on the west side of Fulton Street, between Bridge and Lawrence Streets. It was unprotected by fence or enclosure. The road was spacious, and a carriage and wagon track passed around each end, forming an oblong circle, remitting at either end. There was a door at each end of the building. In those days the young men always rode to church on horseback. Two young men on a pleasant summer day made a bet that they would ride through the church during service. This was done, and the good old Domine Schoonmaker went on with his sermon, not the least disturbed by their intrusion.

Mr. Van Sinderen, at the request of the Consistory, resigned his pastoral charge in June, 1784, although he received a stated salary until his death at Flatlands, July 23, 1796.

Van Sinderen and Rubel were the last of the European Dutch ministers in Kings County.

During the pastorate of these two ministers, the seats in the churches were all numbered in the pews or ranges. Men and women sat separately, and it rarely happened that two persons of the same family sat together. In several churches, women sat in their own chairs, in the ranges of chairs. Every church had a free pew for justices and judges.

In 1785, the Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, who had for a number of years officiated at Harlem and Gravesend, accepted a call to take charge of the Collegiate Churches of Kings County, to which the church of Gravesend had been added, and on October 28, 1787, the Rev. Peter Lowe was ordained at New Utrecht, as his colleague.

Domine Schoonmaker resided at Flatbush as a matter of convenience. He preached but one sermon in English, and never again attempted it. Courteous and polite, he was a relic of the old school, and universally respected. He died May 20, 1824, at eighty-seven. With him ceased the regular public and official use of the Dutch language in all the pulpits of the Dutch Reformed Churches. In 1788, Domine Schoonmaker preached what is said to have been the only sermon ever preached in English up to that time.

The Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker was licensed to preach in 1763, and was called to the churches of Harlem and Gravesend. In 1781, he accepted a call

to the churches of Gravesend, Success and Wolver Hollow. During the Revolutionary War, he preached for the Collegiate Churches of Kings County part of the time. He was in the habit at this time of carrying letters from Harlem, where he lived, and where the American Army was encamped, to the families of the patriots on Long Island. He was suspected by the British of being a spy, and on a certain Sunday while holding preaching service at the church in Brooklyn, a squad of British cavalry was sent over to surround the church and capture the Domine. Word was brought to him in the midst of his sermon that the British were coming, and arrangements were at once made by the Consistory to provide for his escape. He closed the service, jumped into a gig, and was driven to Cripplebush, where he found a negro in waiting with a saddled horse. He rode to Gravesend Bay, where he found a boat in waiting to take him back to Harlem. The British fired several shots which went through the sails. After the capture of Harlem by the British, Domine Schoonmaker's house and all his effects were burned by the soldiers; he managed to escape, however, to Ulster County.

At the meeting of General Synod, May, 1787, Rev. Peter Lowe, student of sacred theology, was admitted to the preparatory examination, which he passed satisfactorily, and at a meeting of the Synod, October, 1787, he presented a call from the six churches of Kings County; the call was approved and he was installed as pastor, October 28, 1787.

In 1792, it was resolved that divine service, which had heretofore been maintained in the Dutch language, should be thereafter performed in English, in the afternoon, whenever Mr. Lowe should preach at Breuckelen, Flatbush and New Utrecht.

Mr. Lowe faithfully performed his duties as pastor for twenty-one years, until the collegiate connection between the six churches being dissolved, by mutual consent, for the sake of a more frequent supply of the word and ordinances, he accepted the call from Flatbush and Flatlands, where he continued to labor with increasing usefulness for more than nine years, until his death, June, 1818.

The Rev. John B. Johnson was called to the Reformed Church of Breuckelen, in 1802, and was installed October 4, of that year. At this time Domine Schoonmaker continued to preach in all the churches of Kings County, and when he preached in Breuckelen, Mr. Johnson preached in Bushwick, (now Brooklyn, E. D.).

At the death of General Washington, the Legislature of the State, then in session, requested of the Consistory the use of the church (the Albany Church), for the celebration of appropriate funeral services, and invited Mr. Johnson to deliver the eulogy on that occasion. The service was held February 22, 1800. The oration by Mr. Johnson was a masterly effort and produced a great sensation. It was published by vote of both houses; Hon. Stephen Van Rensselaer being then President of the Senate, and Hon. Dirck Ten Broeck, Speaker of the House.

Mr. Johnson died at the house of his brother-in-law, Peter Rosevelt, Esq., Newton, August 29, 1803.

The property on Joralemon Street was purchased June 28, 1805. On March 4, 1807, the Consistory determined on the erection of a new church edifice. The cornerstone was laid on May 15th of that year, and the services conducted by the Rev. Peter Lowe. It was dedicated on December 23, 1807. Rev. J. H. Livingston preached the sermon.

The cost of the building was \$13,745.53. It stood on the south side of



Joralemon Street, in the rear of the City Hall. It was a substantial building of blue stone, plastered and painted a dark color. It had a tower on the eastern front. The interior arrangements comprised two aisles, and a gallery on three sides; the accommodations were rather limited.\*

The congregation was made up of families residing at Bedford, Wallabout, Cripplebush, Gowanus, Red Hook, and Brooklyn, mostly of Dutch descent.

A chapel was erected on Middagh Street, in which the evening services were held. This building was sold some years after, and was occupied by Public School No. 6.

The Rev. Selah L. Woodhull began his pastorate in 1806, and continued for nineteen years until 1825.

In the year 1813 the Classis of Long Island was formed from the Classis of New York.

On December 18, 1814, the Church of Brooklyn was duly incorporated under the provisions of the laws of the State of New York, with the corporate title of "The Reformed Dutch Church in the Town of Brooklyn."

The Rev. Ebenezer Mason, who was called to the pastorate of the church in 1826, remained only two years, and his successor, the Rev. Peter P. Rouse, only four years, ending in 1832.

The Rev. Maurice W. Dwight, a native of Kempsville, Virginia, a grandson of President Edwards, of Northampton, Mass., accepted a call from this church as its pastor, in 1833, and was installed on May 26th, and entered upon his labors with bright prospects.

A building committee was appointed, consisting of Jeremiah Johnson, Leffert Lefferts, Samuel Smith, John S. Bergen, John Skillman, Garret Bergen, Theodorus Polhemus, and John Schenck. Plans were drawn by Lefevre & Gallagher, architects; the mason work was done by Tompkins & McFarlan, and the carpenter work by Young, Reeve & Dimon.

The cornerstone of the new edifice was laid May 22, 1834, by Abraham A. Remsen, the senior elder, and addresses were made by the Rev. Maurice W. Dwight, the pastor, and the Rev. Thomas De Witt, of New York. The elders were John Skillman, Adrian Hegeman, Cornelius Van Cleef, and Peter Wyckoff, who participated in the ceremonies.

The building was dedicated on May 7, 1835; all the members of the Long Island Classis being present. It stood on the site of the previous church; was an imposing structure and was considered at the time one of the finest church edifices on Long Island. The style of architecture was Grecian, and the projection in front was supported by eight Corinthian pillars; it was an exact copy of the Parthenon in Athens. This continued to be used for over half a century and occupied the most central position of any church in the city.

The Rev. Maurice W. Dwight continued as pastor for twenty-two years. He resigned May 1, 1855, but made this his home and supplied the pulpit whenever required, until his death in 1859.

The Rev. Acman P. Van Giesen was installed as pastor in June, 1855. He was well liked by the church and congregation, and was a successful preacher. Owing to failing health, he resigned in November, 1859, and was succeeded by the Rev. Alphonso A. Willets, installed in June, 1860. His style of preaching was suited to the times, which covered the entire period of the Civil War. He was loyal to the government and true to his convictions. He resigned June 1, 1865.

\* This church was built of stone, and when the building was taken down to give place to the fourth church edifice, the stone was used in the construction of St. Luke's Episcopal Church, on Clinton Avenue.

He was followed by Rev. Joseph Kimball, who was installed November 21, 1865. He was an earnest, faithful preacher, beloved by his people. He was taken with an attack of vertigo in May, 1874, while preaching the fortieth anniversary of the laying of the cornerstone of this church. He died December 6, 1874.

The Rev. Henry R. Dickson, his successor, was installed October 28, 1875; he died March 8, 1877.

The Rev. David N. Vanderveer was the last pastor of the old church. He was installed September 15, 1878.

#### Change of Name—Eliminating the Words "Dutch" and "Protestant"

Probably no event in the history of this church ever awakened more bitter feeling or led to such determined opposition as the effort to change the name of this ecclesiastical body by eliminating the words "Dutch Protestant." Brodhead, in his "History of the State of New York," volume II, page 661, says:

"It would seem from the printed minutes of the 'Acts and Proceedings of the General Synod of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church in North America,' for the years 1866-67, '68 and '69, that that venerable body deliberately perpetrated one of the grossest outrages on American History ever done in this country. The name was first officially chosen in the memorial which Domine Selwyns of New York, and his Consistory offered to Governor Donagan in 1688. It was confirmed by a charter which Governor Fletcher granted to the metropolitan congregation in 1696, under the title of 'The Ministers, Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church in New York.' This is the oldest religious congregation in our country. It still retains its honorable historical name. Yet under foolish guidance, its superior ecclesiastical authority in the full light of day, rejected the words 'Dutch' and 'Protestant' from the title of an act by which the Legislature of the State of New York, in 1819, authorized the 'General Synod of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church' in North America, to hold estate."

But as a preponderating majority of Dutch churchmen chose to follow their leaders who insisted on the change, controversy was abandoned, and the Legislature, in 1869, passed the desired law.

The Rev. David N. Vanderveer, who had served the church as its pastor since 1878, resigned, and the congregation became scattered. Some continued to worship at the Centennial chapel on Wyckoff Street, under the ministrations of the Rev. Charles B. Chapin. Others of the congregation met with the Reform Church on the Heights, and there appeared to be a great uncertainty as to the continuance of the old organization under its corporate name. It was finally determined to purchase a site on the Prospect Park slope, and which gave great promise for the future of this church. Accordingly, in 1887, the Consistory purchased a plot of land two hundred feet on Seventh Avenue, extending to President Street, north, a depth of one hundred and sixty-seven feet on Carroll Street. Work was soon after begun on the chapel which it was supposed at the time would be amply sufficient to meet the wants of the congregation for some years. The Memorial Presbyterian and the Grace Methodist Churches had erected large fine church edifices on Seventh Avenue, which were rapidly filling up.

While the chapel was in course of erection, Frederick B. Schenck, with a few of the teachers from the old school, opened a Sunday school in a private house at No. 84 Seventh Avenue; the first service was held January 1, 1888.

This movement centralized the interest in the neighborhood and formed a nucleus of what became one of the largest schools in Brooklyn. A prayer meeting was opened at the same place on March 2d, of that year.

The chapel was completed in the spring of 1889, and was immediately occupied by the Sunday school, and preaching services were held regularly every Sunday. The congregation was made up largely of members of other denomina-



tions who had taken up their residence in this locality, and there was little of the old Dutch element remaining. Two members of the Consistory, Frederick B. Schenck and James S. Suydam, visited Philadelphia in April, 1890, and heard the Rev. James M. Farrar preach in his own church. They were so well pleased that they at once invited him to visit Brooklyn, and on Sunday, May 5th, Dr. Farrar preached his first sermon in the chapel. The unanimous expression of the congregation was that a call be extended to Dr. Farrar. The formal call was made by the Consistory on May 6, 1890, and the acceptance was given.

Dr. Farrar had been for six years pastor of the Fourth United Presbyterian Church of Philadelphia, where he had done excellent work. Dr. Farrar preached his first sermon in the chapel on Sunday, June 8th, to a large and interested audience, and the following evening, Monday, he was tendered a reception by the congregation. He was installed as pastor on Thursday evening, September 25, 1890.

Before Dr. Farrar came, it was supposed that the chapel would accommodate the congregation for some years to come, but so great was the increase in members from week to week that the seating capacity was found to be entirely inadequate to accommodate the people, and the completion of the church building according to the original plan, was pushed forward as rapidly as circumstances would admit, and within a year after the installation of Dr. Farrar as pastor, the new edifice was ready for occupancy. It was dedicated on September 27, 1891.

The Rev. James M. Farrar, D.D., remained at the "Old First" Church as pastor until January, 1917, a period of twenty-six years, when he was made pastor *emeritus*, as failing eyesight made it impossible for him to continue his pastoral work. He continued as pastor *emeritus* until his death in 1921.

After an interval of about two years, the Rev. John W. Van Zanten was called to the pastorate of the church, beginning his ministry in the spring of 1919. During the period up to the present time, the activities of the church have increased greatly, the work developing more and more along the lines of a community church.

#### Architecture Modernized French

The new church edifice was designed by Mr. George L. Morse, a well-known Brooklyn architect, who also designed the Franklin Trust Company building, the Brooklyn Eagle building, and other public buildings in Brooklyn and elsewhere.

Exterior—In the selection of the style for the proposed building the committee expressed a preference for the Gothic, and so that was adopted instead of the prevailing and perhaps more popular Romanesque, but the architect designed his work in the free, modernized French rather than the more conventional English style.

In describing the exterior it is proper to first call attention to the stone tower and spire, two hundred and twelve feet high, at the street corner. At the other extremity of the Seventh Avenue front is a stone porch with open arches wide enough to admit carriages. Over its parapet wall are massive flying buttresses terminating against the main building. In the center of the Seventh Avenue front, under the lofty gable, is the main entrance, recessed eight feet by a succession of Gothic columns, having two wide double doorways, separated by a column, and crowned by a Gothic canopy, ending in a richly carved finial thirty-eight feet high. The space under the arches and over the doorways is pierced for stained glass windows and richly carved.

The chapel, which is at the rear, on Carroll Street, is not placed in the usual manner. Although it was built a year prior to the main building, it is not made a detached or semi-detached building, but is united with the main structure under a common roof, thus giving greater importance to the whole, and adding breadth, grandeur and dignity to the composition. The most striking characteristics of the external design are the bold treatment and breaking up of the masses and the absence of elaborate and expensive detail of finish.

In a church having the interior character of this the clerestory exterior treatment is always to be expected, but here the architect has aimed at bolder and more effective results by carrying up the side walls to a greater height, omitting the clerestory treatment and making the feature of the sides the commanding north and south transept gables, eighty feet in height, in which are great windows helpful to both the interior and exterior effect, and giving the added inclosed space to the former. It is commendable that the design of the exterior of this building is a complete index to the interior treatment.

The material is granite to the top of the first floor, including all the steps, and the entire superstructure to top of spire is of Salem, Ind., limestone. The entrances and exits are very ample, there being six wide double doorways, distributed on the front, rear and side.

In this church edifice the interior plan is suggestive of the true ecclesiastical form of nave, aisle and transept. The nave is spanned by a semi-circular vaulted ceiling, sixty feet in height and thirty-six feet span. The intersecting arch of the transept is of the same height and width. The triforium spaces are open to the auditorium by richly ornamental open arcades, the supporting columns being of variegated marble. While this interior church treatment is conceded to admit of grander effects than any other, the supporting columns so essential are always an objection. The attempt has been made here to secure all the advantages of this treatment and avoid to a great extent its disadvantages by a reduction of the columns to one-half the usual number. This has been accomplished without sacrifice of architectural propriety.

#### **Mission School Founded in 1848**

The first Mission School founded by this church was in 1848, and was located on Atlantic Street, later removed to Smith, corner of Butler Street, and in 1869 occupied Jones' building, opposite the Court House. George E. Brinkerhoff was superintendent, assisted by Adam R. Gray, Robert Yellowlee and others.

A plot of land was purchased by the church in 1871 on Wyckoff Street near Third Avenue, where a commodious chapel was built, which received the name of the Centennial Chapel. The school was removed to this building, where an efficient corps of teachers did excellent work for many years. Preaching services were held on Sabbath evenings by the Rev. J. G. Bass, the city missionary. These meetings were well attended, and the mission received the hearty support of the people residing in that locality. The pulpit was supplied later by Rev. A. N. Wyckoff, assisted by Mr. Brouwer as superintendent, and after that by Rev. J. H. Callen, D.D. Mr. C. C. Shelley, assisted by his daughter, Miss Mattie Shelley, conducted a successful Sunday school there for about fifteen years, which numbered at one time over five hundred scholars and teachers. Rev. A. P. Stockwell, an earnest and faithful preacher, also supplied the pulpit for some years, during Mr. Shelley's administration as superintendent. Both of these gentlemen resigned during the year 1893, and Mr. Gerrit Smith, a deacon in the First Reformed Church, conducted the school as assistant superintendent



until his removal to Nyack in 1893. The school was then in charge of Mr. Charles L. Rickerson, an elder in the First Reformed Church. Mr. Henry Whittemore, a member of this church, volunteered his assistance, and conducted the school for some months. In 1894 several teachers resigned, and, as the primary had largely outgrown the adult department, it became necessary to use the main body of the schoolroom for the smaller children. This department had been for some time under the charge of Miss Cliff, who continued under the new regime with the help of additional teachers. She resigned in 1895, and was succeeded by Mr. Cooper.

The credit of having established the first Sunday school in this country has many claimants. The first movements in this direction began about 1812-15, and soon spread throughout every part of the country. The matter received the attention of the people of Brooklyn as early as 1815, and in the spring following a public meeting was called for March 27, 1816, to be held in Mr. Evan Beynon's schoolroom, in which "Christians of every denomination in Brooklyn, all who are advocates for decency and order, and all who are friends to the promulgation of the fundamental truths of our common religion," are invited to attend. The Brooklyn Sunday School Union was organized April 8th, of that year. The Dutch were slow to adopt the new fangled ideas of progressive New England. They clung tenaciously to the good old customs of their ancestors, and it was not until thirteen years after the introduction of Sabbath schools in Brooklyn that the First Reformed Protestant Dutch Church decided to establish a "nursery" for the instruction of their children. The children were taught the creed and other lessons by the domine as soon as they were old enough to read. As early as 1819, Nehemiah Denton, a member of this church, opened a Sunday school for colored people in the kitchen of his dwelling. His school increased in numbers and outgrew its contracted quarters and was finally removed to a small schoolroom which stood in the corner of Gowanus Lane and the Post Road. The school was maintained successfully for seven years.

It was not until 1828 that steps were taken to organize a school in connection with this church. In June of that year a meeting was called to consider the expediency of establishing a Sunday school in the lecture room of the new building then in course of construction, located on the northwest corner of the church lot.

## CHAPTER XIV

### DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH

THE history of the Flatbush Dutch Reformed Church goes back to the seventeenth century. It was the first church established in Flatbush. The first settlers on the western end of Long Island were its parishioners. This was the only church they could attend, as they were a colony of Dutch settlers, who were all members of the same church in the old country. They were glad to get a chance to worship in a nearby church after the years spent without one, or traveling to far off places in New York.

The first pastors came from Europe, as there were no arrangements for educating pastors in this country and even after ministers could be obtained here, many of the parishioners thought those who came from the other side were better prepared. There was so much discussion on this point that at times minis-

ters from this country were refused admission to the church by the congregation, who insisted that they must have a minister from the headquarters of their faith. It seems that the English Governor took a hand in the quarrel and decided on the man he wanted.

An old account says:

The church was completed about 1702. The Rev. Lupardus dying about that time, the people of the four towns empowered the elders of the church to procure them another minister "either in or out of Holland." The elders determined upon Rev. Bernardus Freeman, of Schenectady, and applied to the Governor, Lord Cornwallis, for permission to call him. This gave rise to a great contention.

The people, who were always jealous of English power, in which they were unwilling subjects and particularly sensitive to any interference with their church affairs, were indignant because the elders had asked the Governor's permission to call Mr. Freeman. In Flatbush the people even went so far as to call a town meeting and elect new elders who were instructed forthwith to send for Mr. Freeman without asking any one's permission. One party thus favoring Rev. Mr. Freeman, the other side gave its adherence to Rev. Vincentius Antonides, who came over from Holland and was duly installed in Flatbush, so that the contest increased in bitterness and extent. At one time the Governor issued an order directing that the two ministers should preach alternately and divide the profits of the towns equally. If either refused to obey this order he was to be dismissed.

It was near to the close of the year 1714 that the long contest was happily terminated by a convention of delegates from the different congregations who mutually agreed to lay aside their differences and acknowledge Freeman and Antonides as their ministers. Breuckelen, Bushwick, Flatbush, Flatlands, New Utrecht and Jamaica were all to be included in the charge. It was arranged that one minister should preach one Sunday in Bushwick and the other in New Utrecht, and the next Sunday one in Breuckelen and the other in Flatlands, and the third Sunday one in Flatbush and the other in Jamaica. On communion Sundays the churches would be grouped. Both the domines resided in Flatbush.

Then it became necessary to have another parsonage. The congregations purchased Johannes Johnson a house on the main road, near the corner of Vernon Avenue, and known as the Hess House in Flatbush, and the building was used as a parsonate until 1809. In 1735 the Rev. Mr. Freeman purchased seven acres of land in Flatbush and built a house, where he died in 1741.

Rev. Johannes Arondus, who came from Holland to take his place, was not agreeable to the people and did not remain long. Rev. Mr. Antonides died in 1744 in Flatbush. He was man of extensive learning and was highly esteemed. He was succeeded by Rev. Ulpianus Van Sinderen, a native of Holland, who began to preach in Flatbush in 1747. Rev. Antonius Curenus was installed as his colleague in 1765, but died the following year. He was succeeded by the Rev. Johannes Casparus Rubel and Rev. Van Sinderen and he continued in the work of the ministry until after the close of the Revolutionary War. Rev. Van Sinderen died in 1796 and Rev. Rubel in 1797.

A new church was erected in Flatbush in 1898. The old church had become unsafe because of the peculiar construction of the roof. The new building, which still stands, was three years in construction and finished in 1796. All the stones of the old church were used in its construction. The stones for the walls were quarried at Hurlgate and brought to Gowanus by water, whence they were carried to Flatbush.

Of the more modern pastors, whose life and work are within the memory of present parishioners, we hear:

Rev. Dr. Wells was pastor until his death in 1904, and he was followed by Rev. Dr. John Elwy Lloyd. Dr. Wells was a very able man and was greatly beloved, not only by his parishioners, but by all the people of Flatbush. The Flatbush of today owes a great deal to the example of this Christian man.

Rev. John Elwy Lloyd, a native of North Wales, came to America in 1868. He was for twelve years pastor of the Twelfth Street Reformed Church of Brooklyn. He supplied the pulpit for five months after the death of Dr. Wells and was installed pastor of the Flatbush Church on March 6, 1901.

The interior of the present church has been remodeled three times since 1836. At that time the old straight-backed pews on the main floor were replaced by more modern ones. The high fronts of the side galleries were lowered and a gallery erected across the east end of the church. In 1852, the parsonage on the lot adjoining the academy was sold, and the old stone parsonage next the



church was torn down and a handsome double house was erected in its place. This has been used as a parsonage ever since and only recently it was moved to Kenmore Place in the rear of the church, which stands on Flatbush Avenue. A new clock was installed in 1862.

Through the influence of Dr. Strong and of Adrien Vanderveer, a Sabbath school was organized the year after Dr. Strong began his work. Dr. Vanderveer was the first superintendent and held the office for nearly thirty years. For several years the Sabbath school was held in the schoolroom of the academy. This lasted until 1830.

In 1830 a frame building, twenty-five by fifty feet, was erected near the church, with its gable end to the street. This served the Sunday school until 1871, when it had grown too large for the building, although this had been enlarged.

The other superintendents of the school have been Irwin Cortelyou and John D. Prince, and the assistant superintendents have been Mrs. Ellen C. Strong, Mrs. Susan Schoonmaker, Mrs. Maria L. Lefferts, Mrs. Elizabeth C. Strong, and Miss Mary Vanderveer. In 1871 the school had so increased that it was impossible to find accommodation in the old building although it had been enlarged. The Consistory resolved to erect a new one, and a building committee consisting of the Rev. C. L. Wells, A. J. Ditmas and John D. Prince, was appointed to take charge of the matter.

Lots at the corner of Union Place, which is now Snyder Avenue, were purchased, and the whole wheelwright and blacksmith shops and the old Antonides house were removed. In their place a Gothic brownstone building was erected at a cost of \$50,000 for the Sunday school and other parish purposes until 1923.

The church was again redecorated in 1907. The three vestibules were made to form one large foyer entrance. Various minor changes have also been made from time to time.

A few years ago the Rev. Mr. Lloyd, who had been with the church ten or twelve years, resigned his pastorate. His place was supplied by the Rev. J. Frederick Borg, of the Long Island Classis.

Built in the days when Peter Stuyvesant governed New York by a small band of faithful and ardent Christians, on February 9, 1654, the Flatlands Dutch Reformed Church at East Fortieth Street and Kowenhoven Place, is bound up in the tradition of Brooklyn. A roster of the original parishioners sounds like a street directory of the borough. Ditmas, Kowenhoven, Van Dyke, Remsen, DeBevoise, Van Siclen, and a host of other names appear in the church record. In 1924, descendants of these families hold the same pews in which their forefathers sat and heard the intonations of the twenty-two ministers who have succeeded each other in the life of the church.

Special prayer services by the congregation and church choir were held to celebrate the two hundred and seventieth anniversary of its founding, the Rev. Dr. Charles Roeder, its present pastor, also chaplain of the 13th Regiment, Coast Defense, in his sermon spoke in terms of reverence of the church fathers. He decried radical clergymen and urged his parishioners to hold to the faith that helped their ancestors to persevere despite the hardships of the time.

The little Dutch colony of Flatlands owed its existence to the intrepid spirit of Johannes Megapolensis, who left a warm hearth in New Amsterdam and blazed a path through the wilds of Brooklyn to Flatlands. Due to his integrity, a thriving colony was soon established. The first church was built in 1663, by the command





ST. JOHN'S M. E. CHURCH



ST. ANN'S CHURCH, BROOKLYN.





of Governor Peter Stuyvesant, who sent a special committee for this purpose. Octagonal in shape, unprepossessing in beauty, but presenting a monument to their undying loyalty and faith in God, this building stood until, in 1761, the front and rear of the church were torn down and extended. Then, in 1793, a second church was built. This was superseded shortly after the declaration of the Mexican War by the present structure.

In the two hundred and seventy years of its existence there has never been a penny of debt to hang over the church. Never was a plea made for outside assistance. Debts incurred by the church have always been paid instantly.

The usual serenity of the church was somewhat disturbed in 1923, when plans were prepared by the city for a wide parkway, which was to have been constructed, that had condemned the little three-acre graveyard of the Flatlands Dutch Reformed Church. The congregation rose up as one and fought hard and furious, and after much litigation won their battle. The parkway was not constructed and the cherished shrine still stands, a worthy memorial to the hardy Dutch settler.

## CHAPTER XV

### EPISCOPAL CHURCHES

#### St. Ann's Episcopal Church

ST. Ann's Church is the oldest Episcopal church in Brooklyn, being one hundred and thirty-seven years old. It was established in 1784. St. Ann's is—and practically always has been—part and parcel of Brooklyn's history. When it came into being, the town was a Dutch settlement of only a few hundred persons.

These days its position in the community is extremely prominent. It actually serves as a pro-cathedral, for practically all Diocesan organizations hold meetings of some character there during the year.

Occupying four churches during its long life, St. Ann's has given three bishops to the Episcopal church and one Bishop Coadjutor, the latter being consecrated October 24, 1922. The list includes the Rev. J. P. H. Henshaw, consecrated Bishop of Rhode Island in 1827; the Rev. H. O. Onderdonk, consecrated Bishop of Pennsylvania in 1827, and the Rev. Charles P. McIlvaine, consecrated Bishop of Ohio in 1833. Dr. G. Ashton Oldham, Coadjutor of Albany, is the church's latest contribution to the Episcopate.

The church has had seventeen rectors, among the most famous being the Rev. Benjamin C. Cutler, for long years identified with many phases of the city's religious life. The list, besides Dr. Cutler and the bishops named, includes the Revs. George Wright, who held the first Episcopal service in 1784; Elijah D. Rattoone, Ambrose Hall, Samuel Nesbitt, John Ireland, Henry J. Feltus, Hugh Smith, Lawrence H. Mills, Noah Hunt Schenck, Reese F. Alsop, and C. Campbell Walker.

St. Ann's has long been referred to familiarly as "The Mother Church of Brooklyn," and just as the early history of the Episcopal church in Kings County has been clustered about her, she is making history today.

She is one of the few churches in the organization to have all the pews entirely free and has swung into line with modern Sunday school methods,



her teachers being trained through special courses of ten weeks each year. They attend a normal school under the auspices of the Diocesan Board of Religious Education, of which there are three branches in Brooklyn. The main branch is at St. Ann's and the other two at Christ Church, Bay Ridge; and Grace Church, Jamaica.

These normal schools begin about Christmas. Student teachers receive certificates after the first and second years, and diplomas the third year. In addition, St. Ann's sends two scholarship teachers yearly to the Princeton Summer School of the Episcopal church. The result is a trained corps of Sunday school workers in place of the old fashioned style of instructors who ordinarily had more zeal than knowledge.

St. Ann's has also changed the name of "Sunday school" to "church school," and has a director of religious education—its first. She is Miss Eveleen Harrison—part of her service being to arrange the work of the Sunday school for a year ahead.

By the new methods, the pupils, in addition to religious instruction, are trained to service in five fields: the parish, the community, the diocese, the nation, and the world. A large chart in the form of a huge disk is labeled with each of these designations and placed in the church school rooms. When the children make donations or perform services for home or outside benefit, they set up small flags on their chart.

The "church school" in 1923 had thirty-eight officers and teachers, Lewis W. Francis being superintendent. Miss Mabel R. Mansfield was head of the junior department, and Miss Anna E. Hughes led the beginners' section. There were twenty-five Bible class students and one hundred and eighty-three pupils.

Membership of St. Ann's Church numbered eight hundred and fifty-eight communicants; one hundred and forty-seven communion services had been held, and one hundred and nineteen other services. There were thirty members in the choir; and numerous church organizations and affiliated bodies. Among them were: The Parish Guild, composed of practically all the women in the parish; the Missionary Society, with ninety members; the Men's Club, with twenty-eight members; the Brotherhood of St. Andrew, with sixteen members; the Men's Bible Class; the "Franklin Pettit Updike Post" of the American Legion, with forty-three members; the Altar Guild; a Girls' Friendly Society Chapter; the evening branch of the Women's Auxiliary; two Junior Auxiliaries and Little Helpers. Other functioning bodies for the church's advancement were the West Indian Bible Class and the West Indian chapter of the Missionary Society.

The estimated value of the church and parish house in 1923 was \$375,000, and the appraised value of land, exclusive of buildings, \$198,000. Church furniture, pipe organ, and chimes were rated at \$20,000; the cemetery property in Evergreen, where the parish poor and others may be buried, at \$2,201; the total of all items making \$595,201.

The church took another modern step in 1917 in establishing a social service branch, under the direction of Miss Mabel Mansfield, trained social worker.

The first St. Ann's antedated all its sister Episcopal churches in Brooklyn by forty years, and in the words of the Rev. Dr. Oldham, "she may be said, like her Master, to have been born in a stable." For although services first were held for a time in a private house at 40 Fulton Street—later 43 Fulton Street—the house was shortly pulled down and the congregation removed to the barn of John Middagh, in the rear of his house at Henry and Fulton Streets. The

Rev. George Wright had assembled the communicants, and was the first rector, although not the first Episcopal clergyman preaching in Brooklyn. That distinction, so far as records show, goes to the Rev. John Sayre; but it does not appear that he ever settled here. His brother, the Rev. James Sayre, preached at Brooklyn Ferry about the same time. Both were adherents to the British government, and were under the patronage and protection of the king's troops.

The barn was vacated for a small building which the British had put up for a barracks, but within a short time, the Episcopalians got possession of a real church building on Fulton Street, above Concord. This had been erected as a union church by several denominations which failed to agree. Falling into possession of some of Mr. Wright's members, the congregation moved in, and the house was consecrated in 1785 by Bishop Provoost.

Two years later, April 23, 1787, incorporation under the name of "The Episcopal Church of Brooklyn" was consummated and recorded on page 1, book 1, of New York State records at Albany. The trustees were Whitehead Cornell, Matthew Gleaves, Joshua Sands, Joseph Sealy, John Van Nostrand, Aquila Giles, and Henry Stanton.

Prominent in the affairs of the church was Mr. Sands, who for some years was senior warden of the parish. He gave property on which a second church edifice was erected, and, to compliment his wife, a generous benefactor, the name of the parish was changed, in 1795, to that of St. Ann.

The ground donated was on Sands Street, about at the Brooklyn Bridge entrance. The second structure was a stone church forty-six by sixty feet, which was consecrated May 30, 1805, by Bishop Moore, when there were seventy-seven communicants. Previous to the erection of this church, congregational reorganization had taken place and the first structure painted blue. The wardens appointed at the time were: John Van Nostrand and George Powers; the vestrymen, Joshua Sands, Paul Durell, Joseph Fox, William Carpenter, Aquila Giles, John Cornell, Gilbert Van Mater and Robt. Stoddard. Easter Monday was chosen as the time for holding elections.

The congregation's enjoyment of the new stone building was short lived, for in 1808, a powder mill blew up and damaged its walls so much that, even though repairs were made, for many years the church was considered unsafe.

In 1824, a new and larger building was erected on the same site. It was of brick, sixty-five feet wide by ninety-three feet deep. Bishop Croes, of New Jersey, consecrated it July 30, 1825. The church had seventy-eight communicants when it entered its new building. There were one hundred and fifty pews, and the first renting brought \$18,300, a large sum for those days, fifty-four being rented on the ground floor and three in the gallery. In later years more pews were added.

The Rev. Hugh Smith became pastor in 1817, his ministry being notable by the establishment of a Sunday school, which met in the public school building at Concord and Adams Streets. Afterwards it removed to Stewart's Alley, then to a room on Middagh Street. At the beginning it embraced two or three denominations, but they "had a few words and parted." Since the establishment of that first school of religious instruction for the young, St. Ann's has always been noted for great activity in Sunday school work, and as the years went on, it enlisted capable and outstandingly eminent men as superintendents, notable among them being Seth Low, president of Columbia University and Mayor of New York. Shortly after the year 1828, a Sunday school room was erected on Prospect Avenue and Washington Street at a cost of \$1,500. It was eighty feet



long by twenty-five feet wide, one story high and was first occupied January 11, 1829. In 1837, an additional story was added to care for the increased attendance, for the Sunday school had become one of the most flourishing in Brooklyn.

One year after the completion of the new church building, St. Ann's congregation helped to organize St. John's (q. v.), the second Episcopal church; and indirectly or directly, St. Ann's has been instrumental in founding many other Brooklyn parishes as the years have gone.

In 1826, a new parsonage was built on Fulton Street at Clark. This was sold in 1834 and removed.

During the incumbency of the Rev. Dr. Charles P. McIlvaine as rector, in 1832, he received universal commendation for courageous personal work during the cholera epidemic. The pestilence touched St. Ann's congregation lightly, only eleven dying, two of whom were communicants.

After Dr. McIlvaine was made Bishop, the congregation called Dr. Cutler, who was rector for thirty years, a longer term than any other minister had served in Brooklyn. Six months after becoming rector, he wrote in his diary: "The people are very hard to please because their last two pastors became bishops and were men of great talents, and they expect everything from me in and out of the pulpit."

Dr. Cutler need not have feared for himself, for he became more popular and more beloved than all his predecessors, and remained pastor of the church until he passed away February 10, 1863, in the new brick rectory which the congregation had built on Sands Street in 1840. He became much attached to the church, and under his guidance the Sunday school and mission schools flourished. In 1833, an orphan asylum was started and went forward prosperously. Several years previous to Dr. Cutler's death, and because of the condition of his health, an assistant pastor, the Rev. Charles Bancroft, was employed.

The progress of the city and changes in population necessitated a removal of the church, so the congregation maintained the old building as a mission, naming it the Cutler memorial, and erected the present church structure on Clinton Street, at Livingston. The cornerstone was laid June 5, 1867, and the church opened for services October 20, 1869.

The construction of the Brooklyn Bridge required the ground on which the ancient brick church stood, and it was swept away. The last services were held there April 15, 1880. The Rev. B. F. DeCosta, of New York, preached the last sermon, taking as his text, Ephesians ii; 21, contrasting the temporal building with the spiritual, and showing the eternal character of the latter and its superior importance. Before its destruction, the church had come under the care of Holy Trinity parish and was known as Trinity chapel. Later it was called the Church of the Mediator.

Its interior arrangement showed the old style of pulpit, and high pews from which the heads and shoulders of the congregation only could be seen. There were large stoves for heating. In the church were tablets in memory of Mr. and Mrs. Sands and the Rev. Dr. Cutler.

An interesting story concerns St. Ann's old graveyard, between Concord and Tillary Streets, on the ground where the first church was erected. It was pretty well filled with graves. A picket fence intervened between it and the street, and did not obstruct the cemetery view, which gave many strong men a shudder as they passed at night. It was a relief to business men and Fulton Street pedestrians when the bodies and tombstones were removed and stores

erected on the site in 1860-61. Shortly before this, a farce occurred in the graveyard, with the principal actor A. W. H. Gill, a resident of Washington Place. One moonlight night some passers on Fulton Street discerned a spectre-like figure among the gravestones. The story soon spread that a ghost had been seen, with the result that a large audience gathered the following evening for its reappearance. They saw a white object in the shape of a human being, which toddled here and there, now appearing and disappearing behind tombstones. But long arms soon "gobbled up the ghost," and two policemen took the wraith to the station house. When the sheet was pulled from its "ghostly" frame, it was found to be merely Mr. Gill, who said he was "out for a little fun." He was reprimanded and discharged, but for a long time was known as "Gill, the Ghost." Afterwards he attained a prominent position in the city government.

At the dedication of St. Ann's present buildings, in 1869, five bishops and one hundred and fifty clergymen were present. Dr. McIlvaine, Bishop of Ohio, preached the sermon of the morning, and in the evening Bishop Littlejohn of Long Island gave an historical discourse. The Rev. Dr. Noah Hunt Schenck was chiefly responsible for the erection and character of the new building. It carried a mortgage of \$140,000. Through the generosity of R. Fulton Cutting and others, this was paid off June 15, 1878, and it was in accordance with conditions of the gifts that the church was made a free-pew one in November of that year. The building was consecrated Ascension Day, May 7, 1880, by the Bishop of the Diocese. In 1922, it had been in use fifty years. Its predecessor was used for forty years, and the first two churches twenty years each.

Among the early members of the church, besides Mr. and Mrs. Sands, were Mrs. Jane Boerum, Mrs. Sarah Middagh, John Van Nostrand, Martha and Margaret Graves, Israel Horsfield, John Middagh, Dr. Shreaves, Abigail Patchen, Timothy Nostrand, Paul and Mary Dayrell, Mrs. Catherine Place, Mrs. Ludlam, John Van Pelt, William Cornell, Elizabeth Sackett, Jane Stringham.

The first marriage recorded June 24, 1790, is that of Cornelius A. Remsen to Margaret Pearson, both of the township of Brookland, with Dr. Rattoone officiating. The first baptism was August 20, 1783, the subject being John, son of John and Helena Van Nostrand. The Rev. James Sayre officiated. This was before the first St. Ann's was built.

The first burial record is June 16, 1794, the deceased being Antoine Louis Legar, aged sixty-seven, native of Perigord, France. He was interred in the Fulton Street burial ground.

In 1924, this was the vestry of St. Ann's Church: Colonel Edward Barr, warden; Lewis W. Francis, junior warden; Dr. Richard E. Shaw, William C. Redfield (formerly of President Wilson's cabinet), Rickard Jackson, Albert W. Meisel, Frank C. Osborn, Percy G. B. Gilkes, Charles F. Seaman, Robert S. Fraser, and Edmund S. Baker.

The seventeenth rector came to the church April 15, 1923. He is the Rev. Frank Whittington Creighton, formerly with St. Andrew's, Albany. He accepted the challenge that "there is no opportunity for a downtown church," and in his short incumbency of a year has increased the membership by almost one hundred, and added new subscribers by more than one hundred. He had confirmed a group of fifty-two persons by March 31, 1924; there was an increase of at least twenty-five per cent in envelope subscriptions, and attendance at church was much larger. This he achieved, despite the changing population of a downtown location, assisted by twenty-five organizations in the parish charged with the duty of getting in touch with new and lonely persons.



### St. John's Protestant Episcopal Church

Back in 1826 when John Quincy Adams was President of the United States, and the partisans of Andrew Jackson were clamoring for a redress of their grievances, Brooklyn was only a village. The old Dutch settlement starting near the ferry had spread out like a fan, and the corner of Washington and Johnson Streets, where the "Eagle" has its home today, was quite as suburban as Canarsie or Flatlands at the present period. It had been a mooted question whether Flatbush or Brooklyn was the city of the future, and just had been decided that Brooklyn had the brighter outlook. Rich farm lands spread over Prospect Heights and Bedford, tilled by the thrifty Brevoort, Rapelyea, Lefferts and Cortelyou families, to mention only a few of the early Dutch settlers. Brooklyn Ferry, always a Christian community, was outgrowing its church facilities, and it was decided to go far from the business center and build St. John's Episcopal Church. The edifice was primitive and unimposing, a building as simple as can be found at any cross-roads throughout the land. There was some slight pretense to Gothic ornamentation of the frame outlines, while a bell tower topped the entrance. The first service was conducted by the Rev. Evan M. Johnson, rector of St. John's parish. St. Ann's, under the rectorship of the Rev. Henry M. Onderdonk, was the only other Protestant Episcopal Church in Brooklyn at the time. St. John's was the offshoot of St. Ann's, and Dr. Onderdonk manifested interest in its welfare and aided in its development.

With the rapid growth of the community the church gained rapidly and soon was able to assume a relatively large usefulness. Many of the most widely known families of early Brooklyn worshipped there, and their descendants are proud of its achievements in the field of good endeavor.

Although the first building was opened for worship in 1826 it was not consecrated until the following year, when Bishop Hobart, of the Diocese of New York, officiated. In the years that followed, the building was enlarged several times, and once it was rebuilt. A new chapel was among the last improvements.

For twenty-one years, from 1826 until 1847, the Rev. Dr. Johnson was rector of St. John's. His ministry, according to the Rev. Thomas S. Pycott, rector and historian of the church, was successful and benignant. Dr. Pycott has declared that Mr. Johnson was in many ways the most remarkable man ever connected officially with the parish. Genial, earnest, honest, he never failed to make an impression wherever he went, and in whatever he did. He was, above all, a helper to the poor and lowly, ever seeking to aid those in want, to comfort the afflicted and to relieve the distressed. Rev. C. S. Henry, the first rector of St. John's, once his assistant, said: "He was a thoroughly good man, sincerely religious, upright, honest, honorable, benevolent and kind, a diligent and faithful pastor, serving without salary the flock he had gathered together, and the church was built at his own cost." In July, 1847, Mr. Johnson closed his long and faithful rectorship, and engaged in establishing a free mission church in another part of the city. He labored there until his death.

The Rev. Samuel Roosevelt Johnson succeeded him as rector of St. John's. He was a brother-in-law, a man of ability and character, a liberal benefactor of the church and an affectionate pastor. After three years he resigned on November 18, 1850, to accept a professorship in the General Theological

Seminary. He was followed as rector by the Rev. Dr. N. A. Okeson, who remained in charge less than two years. The Rev. Thomas T. Guyon, the next rector, accepted the post in 1853, and continued to serve the church until his death in 1862. His career was creditable to himself, helpful to his congregation, and of the highest value to all. He found the church in a dilapidated condition and the society heavily in debt. Although the salary of the rector was only \$1,000 a year the ability of the church to pay it was in doubt. In spite of all obstacles Dr. Guyon went to work faithfully. The debt was paid and the parish enabled to enter upon a new era of prosperity. The church was rebuilt, and the old, unsightly structure replaced by a handsome temple of worship.

A chapel was added also. Dr. Guyon survived the completion of the new church only by a few weeks, and was buried in Greenwood. The Rev. Henry A. Stafard and the Rev. George W. Nichols preached until 1863, when the Rev. Dr. George F. Seymour accepted a call to the rectorship. He resigned in January, 1867, to become Professor of Ecclesiastical History in the General Theological Seminary.

A time of change was approaching. Dr. Alexander Burgess took charge of the parish. The neighborhood of the church was being transformed by manufacturing and business and the population began to change its center from the downtown part of Brooklyn to the outlying sections. Congregations were depleted and the income of St. John's was materially reduced.

The congregation bought a new site at DeKalb Avenue and South Elliott Place. This was sold, however, and another site was purchased in St. John's Place near Seventh Avenue. A handsome edifice was erected on the new site, and was occupied in 1870, after which the old church was demolished and the Brooklyn Theater erected, where it had stood.

In 1924 the Rev. T. B. Holland was rector. There were 900 contributing members. The Sunday School had an attendance of 250, and the total annual contributions were \$12,500. The church property was valued at \$100,000.

### St. Mary's Protestant Episcopal Church

St. Mary's Protestant Episcopal Church was founded in 1835, in the early part of the most critical period in the history of modern theological thought. Auguste Comte at the time was thirty-seven years old, and had published the first volume of his "Positive Philosophy" five years before. Its marvelous scope and its boldness created a tremendous sensation. If true, it left no room for Christian faith.

In 1835, David Frederick Straus published his "Leben Jesu," considered fearfully radical, which created a mighty commotion among German theologians.

Ferdinand Christian Baur was forty-three, and had begun the foundation of the modern Tubingen School of Theology, and was claiming that the miraculous elements in Scripture would soon be explained away. Charles Darwin was twenty-six, and had seriously and reverently begun his biological studies four years before. Herbert Spencer and Joseph Ernest Renan were boys, fifteen and thirteen years old.

The reaction against the extreme claims of modern rationalism was well started in England. John Keble was forty-three, Edward Bouverie Pusey was thirty-five, and John Henry Newman thirty-four. The first notes already



had been sounded which afterwards swelled into the grand chorus of the Catholic revival in the Church of England.

The Rev. Daniel Van Mater Johnson was only twenty-three when he was sent by the Rev. Evan M. Johnson, of St. John's Church, to hold the first services in the house on Myrtle Avenue, which were the beginning of St. Mary's Parish. He left after six months to work in other fields, but twenty years later returned to become rector of St. Mary's when the Oxford Movement was deeply affecting the theological thought of this country. The reverent souls of Shackelford, and Johnson and Haskins (who were intimate friends), were among the first of the American clergy to welcome the essential truths upon which the Oxford Revival was founded. Dr. Johnson never became an extremist, but he was one of the first exponents in this country of sane Catholicity, and it is to his honor that he stamped this character indelibly upon St. Mary's Parish.

The great Victorian era in English history has begun and ended since 1835. William IV was King of England; Queen Victoria was crowned two years later. It was the sixtieth year of the independence of the United States. Andrew Jackson was President and William L. Marcy was the Democratic Governor of New York State; Lafayette had died only the year before.

Only three years before the first horse-car railroad had been started on Fourth Avenue, New York City. It was not until ten years later that regular telegraphic communication was established between New York and Philadelphia, and it was eleven years later when Trinity Church, New York City, was rebuilt as it now stands. The year before (1834) there were only two ferries from Brooklyn to New York, the Fulton Street and the Catharine Street, both of which stopped running at midnight, after that hour it was impossible to get to New York except by row boat.

St. Mary's Parish is one year younger than the City of Brooklyn, which was founded in 1834 with George Hall the first Mayor. He was a reformer in that he insisted on closing all unlicensed saloons, and on banishing hogs from the streets! The birth of the Parish occurred one year before the laying of the cornerstone of the Brooklyn City Hall. It is six years older than the "Brooklyn Daily Eagle," founded in 1841. In 1835 there were seventeen places of public worship; one Baptist, two Roman Catholic, two Dutch Reformed, nine Methodist and three Protestant Episcopal, St. Ann's, founded in 1784, St. John's in 1826, and Christ Church, Clinton Street, in 1834.

The parish life of St. Mary's falls naturally into four periods. The first, from 1835 to 1855, covering a space of twenty years of much hard work, of many uncertainties and discouragements, closing with the eventful rectorship of the Rev. Dr. Shackelford. The second from 1855 to 1890, covering the rectorship of the Rev. Dr. Daniel Van Mater Johnson, which lasted thirty-five years. The third from 1889 to 1899, overlapping by one year the preceding period. This part covers the rectorship of the Rev. W. W. Bellinger. The fourth, from 1899 to the present time, during which the present rector has been in office.

During the first period of twenty years, from 1835 to 1855, St. Mary's was under the charge of seven different clergymen, the Rev. Dr. Johnson for the first six months and then the following: the Rev. Thomas Messinger, the Rev. Joseph Hunter, the Rev. Jacob W. Diller, the Rev. Thomas T. Guion, the Rev. John Alden Spooner, and the Rev. John W. Shackelford.

During the last seventy years, from 1855 to 1925, it has had but three, Dr. Johnson, Dr. Bellinger, and the present rector.

The first services were held in the house of the Riker family in Myrtle Avenue; the organization of the parish under the name of St. Mary's, which at that time had a "High Church" significance; the securing of the use of the old District School House on Flushing Road near Bedford; the removal to old Public School House No. 4 on Classon Avenue below Myrtle.

When the Church was organized with eighty families, the first Wardens were Whitehead J. Cornell and Frederick W. Moores, and the Vestrymen were Richard S. Tucker, William B. Cooper, William Bath, William Forbush, Edward Ager, Samuel C. Barnes, James H. Clark, and Richard Stewart. They were among the first of a noble line of devoted laymen whose works abide in the fibre of the parish, which has been peculiarly blessed in the character, devotion and liberality of its lay members, men, women and children.

From the very first, St. Mary's has been a Free Church. The system sprang from conviction as to the principle involved, and never for a moment, even in the most trying times, did the brave founders swerve from the Gospel ideal that a church, built in the name of Christ, and for His cause, should be freely opened to all. It was a lay member of the parish who gave the first great impetus to the work by presenting the land for a Church building, on the east side of Classon Avenue, below Myrtle. This was in 1837, and the donor was a vestryman. Difficulties continued to arise, however, and in 1838 an appeal was made to all the Episcopal churches in New York City for help. A church was finally built in 1839, which was consecrated, free of debt, in 1840. This period closes with the seven-year rectorate of the Rev. Dr. John W. Shackelford. He was a fine organizer, a good preacher and a devoted priest. His loss was keenly felt, when, in 1855, he left here to become rector of the House of Prayer in Newark.

The second period opens with the return of Dr. Johnson in 1855. His genius for organization at once became apparent, as societies sprang into active life about him. Dr. Shackelford had done much to prepare the field, and his successor inherited the advantage of his unselfish work and carried the parish on to greater things.

At this time James Hoyt Smith was ordained Deacon, and he was connected more or less intimately with St. Mary's until his death. Several times he returned to act as assistant to the rector. The record books bear many pages of his clear and careful writing.

Dr. Johnson and his associates in the vestry were men of foresight, and promptly started a plan for securing a better and a larger site. In two years they managed to purchase the ground on which the present church stands. As speedily as possible the building was erected. When it was completed there was a mortgage of \$8,000 and a floating debt of almost \$6,000. Soon after this, St. Matthew's Church was started and helped generously by St. Mary's, even when her own burdens seemed heaviest. The women of the parish rallied splendidly around Dr. Johnson, and in twelve years, from 1856 to 1868, they raised the money for the purchase of the land on which the rectory now stands, and, with the help of a mortgage, they built the rectory.

It was in keeping with the Catholic character of the parish that St. Mary's was among the first to revive the ancient order of Deaconesses. On Quinquagesima Sunday, 1872, six women were admitted as Deaconesses before this altar, some of whom afterward entered the Sisterhood of St. John the



Divine. This Order has been a source of great strength to the Diocese of Long Island and has contributed more than any other single agency to the success of the Church Charity Foundation.

When the Diocese of Long Island was established in 1868, an assessment of \$2,000 was placed on St. Mary's Parish. Many handsome gifts and memorials were contributed to the Parish, and in 1878, the church grounds were beautified. A few years earlier, in 1871, a large and handsome pipe organ was given by a lady of the congregation in memory of her husband. This gave a great impetus to the music and has ever since been one of the most helpful adjuncts of the services. In 1880, the \$10,000 mortgage on the rectory was paid off by a member of the vestry, and at the same time another mortgage on the land was cancelled, leaving the corporation free from debt. About this time a legacy of \$7,800 was received from the estate of a deceased parishioner. Among the clergy associated with the work during this period, either as boys in the Sunday School, who were afterwards ordained, or as lay workers or as assistant ministers, were, besides the Rev. Canon Smith, already mentioned, the Rev. Mr. Saunders, the Rev. Henry B. Cornwell (afterwards for twenty-two years rector of the Church of the Good Shepherd, Brooklyn), the Rev. Irving McElroy, the Rev. Kenneth M. Dean, the Rev. Thomas Irving, the Rev. R. G. Quennell, the Rev. Henry Homer Washburn, the Rev. Alonzo Potter Diller, the Rev. Alfred Pool Grint, the Rev. J. O. Locke, the Rev. Henry Adams, the Rev. W. J. Clarke Agnew, the Rev. Jules M. Prevost (now a missionary in Alaska), the Rev. Wm. W. Blatchford, the Rev. Arthur Henry Wright, the Rev. Daniel D. Waugh, the Rev. Herbert Justison Glover. Some of these were not ordained until later years, but all had some connection with the church. This second period closes with the death of the Rev. Daniel Van Matter Johnson in 1890, of whom Bishop Littlejohn said in a private conversation: "He was one of the highest products of our American priesthood."

The Branch was a mission of St. Mary's on Park Avenue near Nostrand. It was sold in 1890, soon after Dr. Johnson's death, and the money was used to start a fund for building a parish house on the church grounds in memory of Dr. Johnson, called the Johnson Memorial.

The third period of ten years from 1889 to 1899, begins one year before Dr. Johnson's death.

The Rev. W. W. Bellinger was a very young man when he was called to be assistant to Dr. Johnson. The rector was an aged man whose physical powers were failing. The magnetism of the new assistant and his ability as a preacher at once made an impression. Immediately after Dr. Johnson's death Mr. Bellinger was called to be rector. It is not often that an assistant is so chosen, and probably there never was a case where so young an assistant was called to succeed so old and experienced a rector in a position of such prominence. It was the third Sunday in Advent, A.D. 1890, when Mr. Bellinger became rector. That day was the thirty-fifth anniversary of Dr. Johnson's rectorate. A new era at once began. The money that was still needed to erect the parish building was speedily raised, and in 1892 the cornerstone was laid. A generous gift of \$2,000 provided the necessary furnishings, and the building, completely equipped, was opened in 1893. In the years that followed the church and rectory were renovated and repaired; the membership increased; the Parish work continued to extend and the congregations steadily grew; the Sunday school sprang into a larger life, and the

normal income of the parish improved. This general condition of prosperity continued up to the time of Mr. Bellinger's resignation which took effect on October 15, 1899. The Rev. Charles Donohue, his devoted and successful assistant, resigned at the same time to take up work elsewhere.

One name should be mentioned as typical of the best lay life of the parish. Seymour L. Husted was as truly called of God to St. Mary's Church as any rector it has ever had. He stood with Dr. Johnson during the long years of earnest labor, giving abundantly of his love and work and money. He was a man of large faith, a man of prayer, a man of power, a man of wealth.

In those years of its existence 5,200 had been baptized; 2,462 had been confirmed; thousands had been received as communicants from other churches; over 1,650 couples had been married, and more than 3,500 bodies had been buried.

Some are memorialized in windows or furnishings, all are memorialized in the hearts of St. Mary's children here and throughout the world.

For more than half a century there was no break or jar in the steady ongoing of St. Mary's Church. For fifty-seven years there were but four rectors. The senior warden had been connected with the vestry for thirty-two years; the junior warden for seventeen years; one vestryman for sixteen years, another for fifteen, another for nine. The superintendent of the Sunday school, a layman, was just closing the twenty-seventh year of continuous service. The infant class teacher had been steadily in her place for over thirty-five years. Another Sunday school teacher had been on duty continuously for over thirty-three years, and two others for twenty-five years. A number of the Sunday school workers had grown up from the infant and other classes.

The Rev. J. Clarence Jones, Ph.D., was called from St. Thomas's Church, Brooklyn, to succeed the Rev. Dr. Bellinger, and he took charge on Sunday, October 15, 1899. Since that time there have been nine hundred and thirty-nine marriages, 1,137 confirmations, 1,597 burials and 1,664 baptisms. The money received and expended amounted to \$403,986.12. In 1924, St. Mary's had seven hundred and two communicants and 1,364 baptized persons, while at least 3,000 souls were under its influence and jurisdiction. The parish property was worth between \$200,000 and \$300,000, and the endowment fund was \$19,686. There was no debt. The Sunday School numbered two hundred and twenty-five and the church had sixteen parish organizations with a total membership of six hundred and fifty-four.

From time to time assistants were employed to aid the rector. They were: The Rev. Francis Coyle, now of Chattanooga; the Rev. Edmund A. Angell, since dead; the Rev. Frederick A. Wright, now rector of St. John's Church, Tuckahoe; the Rev. Henry E. Payne, now rector of the Church of the Epiphany, Brooklyn; the Rev. Samuel Borden-Smith, serving in La Trappe, Md.; the Rev. Maurice Pickard, now Professor of Philosophy in Wells College; the Rev. Israel Browne, now in Washington, Conn., and finally the Rev. Gerald Digby Viets, the present efficient co-worker.

The church furnished but one candidate for the ministry in those twenty-five years, the rector's son, Stratford Covert Jones, a student in the General Theological Seminary, New York City. The Rev. Thomas Bellringer was ordained to the priesthood by Bishop Doane of Albany in 1912, and the Rev. John Thomas was made a Deacon in the Diocese of New Jersey in 1923.



The parish always supported the best traditions of church music. During the last quarter century it had five organists and choir masters. The Rev. George Goldsmith Daland was a true musician and a man of genius; W. R. Clements remained one year; C. H. Rhodes gave of his best for a long period until his health failed; N. Lindsay Norden was with the church nine years; Prosser Symons is in Cincinnati, while E. Sheffield Marsh is the present incumbent.

Dr. Jones in preaching his twenty-fifth anniversary sermon as rector, said the nation-wide campaign had worked a revolution in the conception of the parish of its duty toward the general church. He said:

"There is no such thing as foreign missions. The field begins at our own door and reaches in every direction around the globe. The parish that is convinced of this will cease being anxious about itself. It will have larger concerns and interests to occupy it. In sending its love out to others it will become strong and healthy at its center.

"During the last two years 20 per cent of our giving has gone outside the parish, and the support of the parish itself has increased proportionately.

"During the World War lots of our men served in the Army and in the Navy. Seven were killed and 14 were wounded. We have placed an enduring bronze tablet on these sacred walls commemorating seven of our young men who gave their love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friend.' love hath no man that this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.'

"The tidal wave which followed in the wake of the World War has affected every member of this parish in his religious experience. I must deal with this phase of our subject today when we ought especially to realize the basic truths upon which our existence as a parish depends.

"I can remember the times of Darwin and Spencer and Huxley and Tyndal. Their influence was at its height in my college days. The mechanical view of the universe, including man, was dominant. To believe and act on anything you could not prove was regarded as a weakness.

"More and more modern thinkers are recognizing that the claim of the Hebrew Prophets to communion with the Divine mind is a reasonable claim. The fact that Jesus Christ based His teaching on them is more significant than ever before.

"The erroneous conceptions of materialistic philosophy have reacted on the life of the Church, and again negative forces have attempted to discourage individual faith in God, the Incarnation and the Church of Christ. On the whole our old parish has been little disturbed by these things. This is due mainly to the Catholic foundations on which the parish was originally built.

"Christianity is a religion of experience. Its revelations are offered as privileges, which through experience establish themselves as dogmas, and it is through dogma that the Church expresses its thought in doctrine and life. The Church, the Bible and the Creed are all dogmatic in spirit. Their purpose is to present an authoritative statement of revealed truth.

#### Church of the Holy Trinity\*

The Church of the Holy Trinity was first opened for services on the third Sunday after Easter, April 25, 1847. This most beautiful of Brooklyn churches, one of the finest monuments of the Gothic revival of the early half of the last century, owed its harmonious fabrication to the vision and co-operation of three men. The architectural genius of Minard Lafever and the pictorial talent of William Jay Bolton, manifesting itself in the revival of the old art of painted glass, were inspired and supported by the foresight, devotion and generosity of Edgar John Bartow. The result was a structure not only of rare charm, but of almost unexampled harmony and consistency of design.

It was one of the first churches built on Brooklyn Heights, and with the exception of the Church of the Pilgrims, St. Charles Borromeo, which was originally built for an Episcopal church, and Zion Evangelical Lutheran Church, originally the Second Reformed Church, in Henry Street, is the oldest church edifice in the section.

---

Reprinted from a sketch by Roscoe C. E. Brown, published in commemoration of the seventy-fifth anniversary of the church.



Not until the Revolution were church services regularly maintained in the little settlement that grew up about Brooklyn Ferry. From 1778 to the end of the war the Rev. James Sayer was stationed there. In 1785, an "Independent Meeting House" was established in Fulton Street under Congregational auspices. The organization soon broke up, owing to dissensions. Episcopalians purchased the building and it was consecrated by the Rt. Rev. Samuel Provost, the first Bishop of New York. The Rev. George Wright was the minister in charge.

In 1795, St. Ann's Church was organized and a new church building was erected at Sands and Washington Streets. It is the parent parish of old Brooklyn and holds a distinguished place in the history of the church. Among its early rectors were Henry U. Onderdonk, afterward Bishop of Pennsylvania; Charles P. McIlvaine, (who as Bishop of Ohio shared with Henry Ward Beecher and Archbishop Hughes the leadership of the Christian churches in the support of President Lincoln in the Civil War) and the Rev. Dr. Benjamin C. Cutler, minister for thirty years from 1833 to 1863. St. Ann's remained in Sands Street until its site was taken for the approach to the Brooklyn Bridge when, under the rectorship of the Rev. Dr. Noah H. Schenck, its present structure at Livingston and Clinton Streets was completed in 1868.

The first child of St. Ann's was St. John's, established at Washington and Johnson Streets in 1826 and removed in 1869 to Seventh Avenue. In 1833 a second offshoot organized as St. Paul's Free Church and the next year bought a church building already standing at Pearl and Concord Streets. Six years later this congregation was dissolved and the building sold to a new church called Calvary. In Calvary were the beginnings of Holy Trinity.

The spread of population along Fulton Street upward from the ferry led in 1835 to the foundation of Trinity Church in Clinton Avenue, which after six years dissolved and became the nucleus of the present St. Luke's. In the same year Christ Church in Harrison Street was established, and in 1841 its beautiful Gothic structure, designed by Richard Upjohn, was built. At this time the only Episcopal church on the Heights was Emmanuel, which occupied a building in Sidney Place. This was sold in 1851 to the Roman Catholic parish of St. Charles Borromeo, after Emmanuel had been reorganized as Grace Church, and Upjohn in 1848 had built the church still standing in Grace Court.

Meanwhile the Heights was beginning to fill up rapidly into what was evidently destined to be for many years the most desirable residential section of Brooklyn, and the opportunity for the church was clear. The first movement to seize it was the raising by popular subscription of \$25,000 to build a church at Henry and Montague Streets on lots offered by the Pierrepont family, who owned much of the vacant property between Court Street and the bluffs of Columbia Heights. Disagreement over plans, whether an inexpensive or ambitious building scheme should be undertaken, wrecked this project and forced the return of the subscriptions to the givers. Then came the opening for Bartow to carry out a dream that he had long cherished. He had been one of the participants in the abandoned movement and one of the advocates of building on a large scale commensurate with what his imagination pictured as the future of the city and worthily expressing the taste and devotion of a cultivated community. He determined himself with his own resources to carry out the plan for a great, beautiful and free church that had been back in his mind since 1840 when he had purchased the Pearl Street church for Calvary and largely supported it as a nucleus and prophecy of the church he hoped to see.

Edgar John Bartow was born at Fishkill, New York, on April 29, 1809,



a descendant of a Huguenot family of Brittany, there called Bertaut, which emigrated to England and afterward settled in Westchester County, New York, in the third quarter of the seventeenth century. He was baptized by the Rev. Dr. John Brown in Trinity Church, Fishkill, and confirmed there by Bishop Hobart in 1816. After the death of his father the family removed to New York City where they joined St. George's Church, in Beekman Street, where the Rev. Dr. James Milnor was just beginning his twenty-nine years' rectorship. Coming to Brooklyn in 1830, they were members of St. Ann's and there young Bartow took an active part in church work and became a teacher in the Sunday school. He was married on November 13, 1838, by Dr. Cutler to Harriet Constable, daughter of Hezekiah B. Pierrepont, who until her death in 1855 was a devoted co-worker in all his public and especially his church enterprises.

Bartow early engaged with his elder brothers in the manufacture of paper and by the time he was thirty years old had amassed what was considered a large fortune. He entered eagerly into projects of public improvement, especially the development of the Heights, in association with his wife's family, the Pierreponts, and co-operated in opening the Montague Street Ferry and building the inclined plane to the river and the archway with its terrace above, still one of the most attractive public places in Brooklyn. In 1846 he was asked by the Democrats, the dominant party, to be their candidate for mayor, but declined.

Soon after he had inspired the organization of Calvary to take over the work of old St. Paul's, and had, himself, purchased and enlarged the Pearl Street building, his mind turned to the idea of a larger work in the new section. Others were planning in the same direction though none with his largeness of view and opulence of imagination. He was in full sympathy with the new tendency to bring into the American churches those elements of harmony and beauty that made the creations of the mediaeval architects such an inspiration and appeal to the spirit of worship. The simple colonial meeting house and the later tradition of Wren had given place to the Neo-Classic taste and dotted our cities with Greek temples in the first quarter of the nineteenth century. The Gothic revival was just on its way. The Oxford movement had brought a new appreciation of the charm of mediaeval architecture, even when it had not, as it certainly had not with the founder and early teachers and people of Holy Trinity, carried acceptance of mediaeval theology and ecclesiasticism. In 1839, Upjohn began the new Trinity, New York, which was completed the year before the opening of Holy Trinity. The cornerstone of Grace Church, New York, designed by James Renwick, was laid in 1843, while Bartow was working over his plans with Lafever. St. George's in Stuyvesant Square, an adaptation of Romanesque and Byzantine motives, was begun the summer before Holy Trinity was finished. In Brooklyn, Upjohn was for the moment turning from his favorite Gothic to the austere impressiveness of the great Dutch churches as a fitting style for the spiritual descendants of the Leyden pilgrims, and in 1844 he began work on the Church of the Pilgrims, where the Rev. Dr. Richard S. Storrs was to minister for more than fifty years.

Minard Lafever, the architect of Holy Trinity, was on his father's side, like Bartow, a descendant of French Huguenots, and on his mother's, of Scotch ancestry. He was born in 1797 near Morristown, N. J., and passed his boyhood in Seneca County, N. Y., where his education was limited to that given by the pioneer district school. These unfavorable surroundings, while they retarded the cultivation of his inborn artistic impulses, probably also stimulated exertion and fixed the determination to satisfy them.

At nineteen he obtained his first treatise on architecture, by walking fifty miles to Geneva where he heard one was to be bought, and with untiring zeal he devoted his spare hours to study while supporting his family by work as a carpenter. His passion for beauty was balanced by a keen interest in and a knowledge of practical aspects of building. Seeing for the first time the great new wooden bridge over the Genesee River near the lower falls at Rochester, whose single arch of three hundred and fifty-two feet was an engineering wonder of the time, he confidently predicted a collapse, which came a few days after the bridge was just one year old. This was in 1820. He settled in Newark, N. J., in 1824, and five years later removed to New York, where he successfully practiced his profession and enjoyed a high reputation as an art teacher. In 1830, he published one of the first American manuals of architecture and later in life published several treatises and books of designs, chief among them a quarto volume, "An Architectural Instructor," containing drawings and a description of Holy Trinity, in 1854.

He built the terrace and archway in Montague Street and many public buildings in the classic style, including the old savings bank building still standing in lower Fulton Street, and the First Reformed Church that formerly stood in Joralemon Street opposite the Borough Hall, erected in 1839. But his great enthusiasm was for Gothic. Before designing Holy Trinity he had built the Baptist Church in Pierrepont Street, which was replaced in 1880 by a brick church structure, which in turn gave place to the present Brooklyn Savings Bank; and the beautiful little Unitarian Church of the Saviour. A little later he designed the Universalist, now the Swedenborgian Church, in Monroe Place, and the old main building of Packer Institute, where his spirit has been reverently regarded in subsequent additions. His last work, in severer style than his other Brooklyn churches, was the Strong Place Baptist Church, which next to the more ambitious and ornate Holy Trinity was his particular delight, but which unfortunately has been marred by inharmonious glass and interior refittings. This was not completed until 1856. Meanwhile Lafever had died at his home in Williamsburgh on September 26, 1854. His grave is in Cypress Hills Cemetery.

Lafever's ecclesiastical work may suffer somewhat in the eyes of the architectural purist from the fact that he was compelled in places to depend on the carpenter and the stucco molder instead of the mason and the stone carver. But Renwick, Upjohn, and his other contemporaries were under the same limitation. Neither the wealth nor the workmanship of the day invited construction in this country of the masonry vaultings and the stone traceries of the mediaeval cathedrals, and it is only in the last few years that an American—or for that matter European—architect could on any large scale consistently treat Gothic as a principle of structure rather than of form and decoration. And as a matter of fact even the mediaeval architects sometimes resorted to plaster vaults and not infrequently to wooden steeples. Working with the materials and building methods at his command, scholarly without being pedantic, freely adapting the Gothic idiom and motives to the practical needs of his time, all with a loyalty to the Gothic atmosphere and with an unfailing taste and sense of harmony, Lafever produced a group of almost forty churches with a wide range of variety and individuality, which give him a significant place in the history of American architecture.

His tentative plans for Holy Trinity called for a less elaborate structure than Bartow desired to build. After a study of some of the most famous churches



of France and England, he designed an edifice on a freely treated theme of Decorated English with flamboyant tracery. It called for a nave of eight bays carried up into a high vaulted clerestory above two aisles, each containing a gallery, a chancel of one bay, an engaged tower on the Clinton Street front, a transverse chapel back of the chancel, and adjoining this in Montague Street, a rectory. The design of both chapel and rectory, however, melted into that of the church. The whole exterior was of Haverstraw red sandstone. This design, as published in Lafever's book, was carried out, except that the street front on the chapel between the rectory and the church was raised to make in the second story a rector's study with a traceried window above that of the chapel, and the steeple was not built until some ten years later. Except for the widening of the choir gallery to engage the clerestory walls on either side, in order to accommodate more singers, and the erection of the stone reredos and the accompanying memorials in the chancel, the interior of the church is substantially as Lafever left it.

In the carrying out of his architectural plan Lafever found a remarkable collaborator in William Jay Bolton, who filled his flamboyant tracery with a series of pictures in painted glass, not only designed but executed by himself. These windows are the most interesting example in America of what the Council of Arras called "the Book of Laymen"—a complete and harmonious presentation in glass of the Bible story. Only a few of the great relics of the mediaeval glass workers, like Sainte Chapelle, Fairford near Oxford, Egmontiers, and Sainte Foy at Conches, thus still show as a unified and perfect whole "the best product of one period and style" that distinguishes them "as shrines of the glass lover." Holy Trinity's windows are no archaeological essay in the resuscitation of an old school of glazing, but are the vital expression of a genius, inspired by the old artistic and devotional spirit, yet boldly developing its own technique for the expression of its own powerful pictorial conceptions. The scheme of decoration brings all the windows of the church into one consistent series, from the musical symbols in the organ loft to the Christ in the center of the great chancel light. As individual windows they are commended by experts for their richness of color, and combination of free, spirited drawing with the naivete and atmosphere of the old glass. As a vast, unified composition of breadth and pictorial charm they rank high among American art treasures, and are catalogued by foreign critics among the monuments worth seeing by visitors to this country.

Otto Heinigke, one of the leading workers in stained glass of his time, thus characterized them in "The Architectural Review" of January, 1906:

Let me tell you that there is nothing being done today, the world over, that can compare with the vigor, the freedom and the fire of these remarkable windows. They make one who is accustomed to the difficulties of glass painting stand in awe at the technique. It may be going too far to compare them to Michaelangelo's work, for Bolton had not the latter's manual training, but the nature of this work's influence on the mind of a student must go far in the same direction as does the great master's work on the Sistine ceiling.

There is nothing in this wide country so worthy of our effort at preservation as this valuable work of one of our pioneers, based as it is on the best traditions of a most influential phase of the art, the Flemish style of glass painting. We find it throughout the European continent, but rarely in a series so complete in natural sequence—like forest monarchs, root, trunk and branching arms.

In closing let me express the hope that all my fellow-workers in the art of stained glass may resist any temptation to break into this series with new memorials, and also that the artist's name may not again be lost as the years go by; and let us pray for the quality of courage that this man displayed when he *dared* to do such work.

Happily only one product of the commercial church decorator has intruded into this company, and that many years ago. Fortunately this modern memorial

displaced only one of the vestibule windows and does not mar Bolton's great Biblical drama in the nave and clerestory. In the vestibule its contrast with the series must give a continuing emphasis to Heinigke's warning.

These windows are something entirely different from the jewelled mosaics of the present day and from the elaborately built up pictures of superimposed translucent and iridescent glass, so developed by American designers in recent years. They are more akin, as noted by Heinigke, to old Flemish painted glass, having the designs painted on and fired into ground and colored glasses, all of the strong, simple colors used by the great artificers of the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries. And Bolton cared no more than they did for realism or consistency in unessentials—witness the circular insert in the foreground of Samuel in the Temple in the south tower window and the double perspective in its columns, which would be inexplicable in a painting but fall naively into the pattern of colored light. The great side windows are divided by the galleries, but externally are brought into one frame by the tracery. Those under the gallery record the genealogy of Jesus with angels and the symbolized Tree of Jesse running with variations through them all. The windows above the gallery, overlooking the nave, picture scenes in the life of Jesus from the Birth to the Supper at Emmaus, while the clerestory windows tell stories of the Old Testament. The great chancel window has often been called the Ascension, but it more probably was intended to represent the glorified Christ seated with heaven and earth spread out before Him, thus unifying and bringing to a climax at the sanctuary the whole story of all the other windows.

Dr. Robert L. Dickinson, to whose loving study of Lafever and Bolton the church owes its complete series of photographs and drawings of these treasures, has thus commented on a few of the designs:

The Birth—really an Adoration of the best baby ever done in stained glass—shows an intentness in the attitude of the figures and an amount of expression on fine faces such as is rarely painted into these formal designs. Have you seen the life-size pencil sketch of the baby as it hangs in the vestry? And have you heard how, after disappearing for sixty years, it was found with the other designs, in England, in the garret of a house whose owner lives at the end of Endless Street; and how the discovery raised up that lady, though bedridden for many years so that she crossed the ocean to see this work of her father which he, in his modesty, and English reserve, had never mentioned to his daughters? \* \* \* The series of Angels and Ancients \* \* \* challenges all other glass for pure splendor and for decorative quality of scroll work and vine trunk: its patriarchs, characters so various and original as to command close study; its stately paired Seraphim, hung with velvet supremely rendered, never to be forgotten, once seen at dusk, flaming rank on rank between far columns. \* \* \*

The Marriage at Cana shows how a rich city can be suggested by the simple use of two buildings and a column in a corner of a background. This fragment is also a sample of the happy manner in which the leads that bind together the different pieces of colored glass emphasize and never interrupt perspective or action. It demonstrates how selection of any part for study helps appreciation. Otherwise we might not notice the clever portrayal of the bewilderment of the two men over the new wine. Finally, as an instance of singular simple means rendering poetry and mystery and the feeling of coming night and disaster, look at this one of the three Gethsemane panels from a distance—as it was intended to be seen. Behind the massive towers of the city on the hill rises the moon; out of the steep valley climb soldiers; on the grass the disciples sleep, exhausted yet restless. And above let us note one of those asides abounding in this glass, one of the half hidden confidences between the artist and appreciator, in the hint of the dove, the spirit of peace, dropping down out of the dark toward the lonely figure that kneels in the central panel.

William Jay Bolton was the grandson of an Englishman who settled in Georgia and prospered as a cotton planter. His father was a clergyman who lived some time in England, where William was born at Bath in 1816. As a youth he studied engineering. The family returned to America and at Pelham in Westchester County in 1843 they erected Bolton Priory. There, anticipating William Morris, they devoted themselves to art and handicrafts in the true amateur



spirit. William J. Bolton studied painting under Samuel F. B. Morse, the inventor of the telegraph, and then took up the study of stained glass. He executed some of the windows in Bolton Priory. These and the Holy Trinity windows are the chief, and perhaps only examples of his work in this country, for soon after they were finished he returned to England and established a glass studio at Cambridge. Writing to his brother in 1845 in a mood of depression over his progress with Holy Trinity he said: "I was wrecked once on the beautiful coast of color. Design is now all I sail for. And if I can only by the bribes of industry and perseverance induce some of the dignified figures who walk to and fro in my chambers of imagery to let me take their portraits I will astonish the natives." In England he was second in charge of the restoration of the windows of Kings College chapel, Cambridge. Then, determining to take Holy Orders, he was graduated from Cambridge in 1853, and held several curacies until in 1866 he became vicar of Stratford East, near London. He gave the rest of his life to the ministry with such devotion and modesty, that his daughters never even knew of his creations in stained glass until years after his death when Dr. Dickinson sought them out in England and gave the invalid daughter the tonic incentive to rise and cross the ocean to see his work. In 1881, he took the living of St. James' Church, Bath, and died there in 1884.

The foundations of the church were begun in August, 1844. The chapel was opened for public services on Trinity Sunday, June 7, 1846, and the church itself on the third Sunday after Easter, April 25, 1847, though the windows were not then all in place and the openings were boarded up.

When in 1840 Bartow purchased Calvary Church he invited the Rev. Dr. William H. Lewis to become rector of the parish, and on the opening of Holy Trinity he asked Dr. Lewis to take charge of the new work. Dr. Lewis did so and a majority of his old parishioners came with him, though Calvary's work went on successfully with liberal aid from its founder as long as he was able to give it, and was not discontinued until 1861, when the shift of population had made the neighboring churches adequate for the district.

Dr. Lewis was born at Litchfield, Conn., December 22, 1803. He was educated at Pittsfield, Mass., Academy, at Cheshire Academy, then known as the Episcopal College of Connecticut, and the General Theological Seminary in New York. Admitted to Holy Orders in 1827 by Bishop Brownell in Christ Church, Hartford, he served as an assistant in Bridgeport and Philadelphia. After a short service at Walden, N. Y., he became rector successively of St. Paul's, Huntington, Conn.; St. George's, Flushing; and St. Michael's, Marblehead, Mass., where he remained for seven years until called to Calvary. He ministered to Holy Trinity for nearly fourteen years, until, worn out by an arduous struggle against financial difficulties that had so nearly wrecked the project, he resigned on February 26, 1860, and became rector of Christ Church, Watertown, Conn. He died on October 11, 1874.

In the beginning Holy Trinity was the personal enterprise of its founder. Not until November 27, 1851, was it organized as a parish and its first vestry chosen. This consisted of Conklin Brush and Nathan B. Morse, wardens; and Edgar J. Bartow, George L. Willard, George B. Grinnell, James L. Adams, William R. Phelps, Moses Cook, Dan Marvin and Augustus D. Fenton, vestrymen. The parish was admitted into the Diocese of New York at the convention of September, 1852. The title to the building remained in the name of Bartow, and he clung to it with ardent hope of realizing his dream of giving it free from all encumbrance to the church through the financial difficulties that finally over-

whelmed him. His misfortune has sometimes been attributed to the diversion from his business of the \$150,000 or more that he tied up in the building. But he himself denied this and said that his failure was due to embarking on business enterprises outside of that to which he had been trained.

When he undertook to build Holy Trinity he had an income of \$40,000 above all his expenses, and he knew where every dollar for it was to come from. But his artistic taste led to a more elaborate structure than he had originally contemplated. In addition to the cost of the lots, \$150,000 was spent on the church, of which a little over \$100,000 was raised by a mortgage upon it. This mortgage he was unable to meet. Finally in the spring of 1856 he forced himself to acknowledge that hope of doing so was vain, and he reluctantly consented to relinquish his title to the vestry and let them try to save the property. They had only three weeks in which to avert the threatened foreclosure of one mortgage. They undertook the task almost without hope. The Roman Catholics, who were later to take over the old Grace Church from the Episcopalians, stood ready to purchase this most conspicuous building in Brooklyn and were so confident of doing so that they began measurement to adapt it to their ritual. Nevertheless, about \$30,000 was raised with which immediate claims were met and title to the property was secured on March 27, 1856.

On September 23d of that year the church was consecrated by Bishop Horatio Potter. Bishop Clark of Rhode Island preached the sermon and Bishops Whitehouse of Illinois and Scott of Oregon, together with several of the most prominent clergymen of the State, took part in the service.

Bartow continued to live in Brooklyn, though carrying on business as a manufacturer at Norwich, Conn. In 1860 he married Caroline, daughter of Colonel John M. Gamble, of the United States Marine Corps. He died at Morristown, N. J., September 6, 1864, and his grave is in the Pierrepont plot in Greenwood Cemetery.

If the founder had been able to carry out his plan to dedicate an unencumbered property to religious work, a free church might have been established. Robert B. Minturn, of New York, had advocated it as an experiment worth trying on so large a scale, and Lewis Tappan suggested that all pews be thrown open without distinction of color, a radical proposal at that time. But with a debt of over \$65,000, Holy Trinity could undertake no such experiment. Before the financial troubles came it had plunged vigorously into philanthropic work, mainly carried on through an incorporated body of men and women known as the Benevolent Association of the Church of the Holy Trinity. The church's mission work throughout the country was not yet centrally administered. Holy Trinity maintained its own missionaries. It supported St. Mark's, a free mission church in Fleet Street; sent out Miss Caroline P. Tenney, afterward the wife of the Rev. Cleveland Keith, as a missionary to China, and maintained her there. It also aided in establishing the Church of the Redeemer, Brooklyn, and Trinity Church, Aurora, Ill. To meet its obligations the church was compelled to resort to the selling of its pews.

Holy Trinity was surrounded by churches with eloquent preachers. There were Dr. Storrs and Dr. Vinton. Henry Ward Beecher in 1847 first occupied the pulpit of the just organized Plymouth Church. This congregation purchased a building on the present site, burned in 1849, which had been occupied by the First Presbyterian Church before it built, in 1846, its present Henry Street edifice, where the Rev. Dr. Samuel Hanson Cox,\* father of Bishop Arthur Cleveland Coxe, was pastor. Another famous preacher was the Rev. Dr. George W.

---

\*The Father's name was Cox; son spelled it Coxe.



Bethune, who, when the Reformed Church on the Heights was built in 1850 across the street from the Unitarian Church, placed upon it the inscription "To the Triune God," which recalls the acuteness of denominational controversy, now passed away. Dr. Lewis took no part in controversies, and made no claim to eloquence, but he was a forcible, practical preacher, and under him, despite its heavy burden, the church took a leading position in the community.

On his retirement the vestry called to the rectorship the Rev. Dr. Abram Newkirk Littlejohn (q. v.).

One of the conditions of Dr. Littlejohn's acceptance was that the church should immediately reduce its debt, which was still about \$65,000. At once \$10,000 was raised, and before February, 1863, \$20,000 more had been contributed. He also undertook to add the spire to the tower, which stopped with the belfry, and such was the appeal of the edifice to the taste and civic pride of the city, that persons of all denominations contributed to completing, what as early as 1847 had, in a book celebrating the city, been called "the Cathedral of Brooklyn." The working designs for the tower, which cost \$55,000, were made by Patrick C. Keely, but they closely followed Lafever's original plan, the only substantial difference being the omission of flying buttresses from the corner pinnacles of the belfry to the lower part of the spire shaft.

A celebration of the completion of this work was held on December 19, 1867. Bishop Clarkson of Nebraska presided, at the request of Bishop Potter, who was engaged in the consecration of St. George's, New York, just rebuilt after its fire, and the Rev. Dr. T. Stafford Drowne, rector of St. Paul's, Brooklyn, who had been assistant minister under Dr. Lewis, delivered an historical address. Four years later the church edifice had been entirely freed from debt, and on November 26, 1871, the parish marked the occasion by unveiling a memorial tablet in memory of Edgar John and Harriet Pierrepont Bartow, at a meeting that was addressed by Bishop Littlejohn and Dr. Drowne, and at which a letter of reminiscence from Dr. Lewis was read.

During the nine years of his rectorship Dr. Littlejohn raised over \$184,000, not including pew rents, for Holy Trinity and its mission work, and made it the most influential Episcopal church in the city. It contributed largely to the starting of St. Stephen's Church, Brooklyn; built the Church of the Holy Trinity, Bellevue, Neb.; established a chapel in Fulton Street, which in 1870 became the Church of the Good Shepherd, and maintained a classical and commercial school for boys. In the first twenty-four years of its history, the parish raised more than \$537,000.

Dr. Littlejohn was elected bishop and gave up the rectorship of Holy Trinity in March, 1869. The vestry chose for his successor the Rev. Dr. Charles Henry Hall, rector of the Church of the Epiphany, Washington, who came to the church on May 1, 1869. Dr. Hall was born on November 7, 1820, in Augusta, Ga., but his father was a recent settler from Boston, and his maternal grandfather came from Scotland. He prepared for college at Phillips Academy, Andover, and was graduated from Yale in 1842. His parents were Presbyterians and he had been brought up with the thought of being a minister of that church.

After a year of study divided between Andover and Hartford Theological Seminaries, he joined the middle class in the General Seminary and was made a deacon at Tivoli, N. Y., by Bishop B. T. Onderdonk, on August 25, 1844.

After a short service at St. Peter's, New York City, he asked for the smallest parish in the diocese and was sent to Huntington, L. I., where he remained two years. He always looked back with satisfaction to the opportunity for thought

and study afforded by this charge, which contributed largely to the ripeness of his mind and the depth of his character. He was raised to the priesthood by Bishop Brownell in 1845, and in 1847 took charge of Holy Innocents at Highland Falls, and had among his parishioners many of the officers of West Point. Returning to his native South, he became in November, 1848, rector of St. John's Church, St. John's Island, S. C. Many of his people were slaves, and it is not improbable that the fatherly sympathy and simplicity that so distinguished him owed much to his ministration among them. From South Carolina he went to Washington, where as a Southern man through the Civil War his position was difficult, but his loyalty disarmed suspicion and his character won admiration and love.

Coming into the new diocese, he was made a member of the standing committee and was the chief moving force in organizing its work and promoting the church's charities. He was a delegate to many successive general conventions and in them exercised an ever increasing influence; for men of all opinions recognized his learning and shrewd wisdom and had implicit faith in his disinterestedness and judicial character. He was one of the great liberal leaders of his time. He preached a gospel of love, and established in Holy Trinity a tradition that has not been departed from, but only adapted to new conditions—by Dr. McConnell in his intellectual interpretation of Christianity to a scientifically inquiring generation, and by Mr. Melish in his emphasis on the social aspect of religion.

Dr. Hall was a straightforward preacher who appealed powerfully to the heart and conscience, and his success came largely from that personal appeal. With his great vigor he vitalized spiritual things. He used none of the methods of the modern institutional church. He saw no need of them, and there was none at that time, because while his parish contained both rich and poor it was homogeneous and rooted, and he did not meet that great nomadic element, largely without religious habit or civic responsibility, that are at once the fascination and the despair of later teachers. He took his share in the life of the community, was long chaplain of the 23d Regiment, and at one time was a park commissioner and also one of the civil service commissioners of Brooklyn. His genuine humanity and humorous common sense endeared him to a wide circle. He did not "suffer fools gladly," but genuine men of all sorts and conditions interested him. He was devotedly attached to Thomas Elliott, for many years sexton of the church, and after his death Dr. Hall caused a window to be erected in his memory. Dr. Hall was an intimate friend of Henry Ward Beecher and one of the speakers at his funeral.

An old parishioner tells how he once saw Mr. Beecher sitting in a pew at a musical service in Holy Trinity, when Dr. Hall, noticing him, came down from the chancel and said: "This is no place for you," and took him up to the stalls. He had great musical taste and under him the church became famous for its music. The church's first organist was William S. Rogers. He was succeeded in 1860 by George W. Warren, who afterward went to St. Thomas', New York, and was followed by W. B. Whiteley, who had charge of the music from 1870 to 1877. The work was taken up by Dudley Buck, among the foremost American musicians and composers. He was organist for twenty-five years and retired because of ill health in 1902. A memorial tablet with his portrait in bas relief is on the wall of the vestibule. He was succeeded by Samuel A. Baldwin, since professor in the College of the City of New York. Mr. Baldwin was followed in 1907 by J. Trevor Garmey, who conducted the music until December, 1921,



when Walter Henry Hall, Professor of Music in Columbia University, came to the parish. He was succeeded in May 1923, by Louis Robert, formerly organist of Haarlem Cathedral, Holland.

On Easter Sunday, 1871, the large memorial silver communion service of the church was first used. This was made from silver and gold contributed by the members of the parish. The gifts were old pieces valued as heirlooms and not only represented nearly every family and its dead but nearly every individual adult and child in the church.

In the early days under Dr. Hall a Pastoral Aid Society was organized, which started a mission at Granada Hall in Myrtle Avenue. When old St. Ann's was abandoned by its congregation the mission occupied it until the building was torn down for the bridge. Then Holy Trinity bought for its use a chapel in Duffield Street. Toward the end of Dr. Hall's ministry the property was sold to the Colored Baptist Church and in part payment a church building in Canton Street was taken over. For about ten years this property was loaned by Holy Trinity for the use of St. Augustine's (colored) Church. Then George Foster Peabody purchased it and gave it to the diocese for that parish. The rest of the purchase price of the Duffield Street property was used in 1892 to buy a parish house at Clinton and Pacific Streets. It was chiefly acquired to furnish a house for the Women's Employment Society, but for several years most of the church's benevolent activities were centered there.

Dr. Hall, who had been in feeble health for two years, died on September 12, 1895, and his assistant, the Rev. James Townsend Russell, had charge of the parish, while the Rev. Dr. George T. Dowling occupied the pulpit until the Rev. Dr. Samuel D. McConnell became rector, on May 1, 1896.

Samuel David McConnell was born in Westmoreland County, Pennsylvania, on August 1, 1846. He was graduated in 1868 from Washington and Jefferson College. After engaging in newspaper work in Pittsburgh, he took deacon's orders in 1872 and served in St. John's Church, Erie, Pennsylvania. He was ordained priest the next year and ministered until 1876 at Watertown, Connecticut, and at Middletown, Connecticut, until 1882, when he became rector of St. Stephen's Church, Philadelphia, which he left to come to Brooklyn. Throughout his rectorate in Middletown he was archdeacon of Connecticut, and in 1898 became archdeacon of Brooklyn. In 1890, he published a "History of the American Episcopal Church." Several volumes of sermons followed, and in 1900 appeared one of his most stimulating books, "Essays, Practical and Speculative," and the next year "The Evolution of Immortality," a philosophical study of the idea expressed by Lowell:

"Perhaps the longing to be so  
"Helps make the soul immortal."

He received the degree of D.D. from the University of Pennsylvania in 1887, of D.C.L. from Hobart in 1897, and of LL.D. from Washington and Jefferson in 1902.

Dr. McConnell was essentially a preacher. Soon after coming to Brooklyn, he wrote of himself in the "The Parish News," which he established and which has been continued ever since: "He is one who believes in preaching. If preaching is not actually a sacrament it would probably come as near being within the definition as anything could well be. It is an institution established by Christ himself, and consists of an outward and visible form to which one may at least hope there is attached an inward and spiritual grace."

Nevertheless, he clearly understood the changes in the neighborhood that made institutional work necessary. First the boarding house and then the apartment began to displace the old one-family dwelling house, and a new community grew up about the church, largely of detached men and women needing social as well as religious ties. For work with them the house at Pacific Street was both inadequate and too far away, and a new parish house was determined upon.

In the spring of 1897 the vestry determined to mark the fiftieth anniversary of the parish by providing such a house as a memorial to Dr. Hall, on the site of the chapel on Montague Street at a cost of \$25,000. A new rectory was purchased at No. 126 Pierrepont Street, and in the new parish house were established The Trinity Club, the Girls' Friendly Society, the Employment Society and the various other organizations of the church.

At this period also many improvements were made in the church. In 1898, the building was lighted by electricity. The next year George Foster Peabody built the present organ. The Howard family gave the reredos in memory of Samuel E. Howard. The altar was given by William A. Read in memory of his father, George W. Read, and Mary, Countess Von Franken Sierstopoff, gave the pulpit as a memorial to her parents, Edwin F. Knowlton and Ella Carpenter Knowlton. The chancel rail was given in memory of Margaret Eleanor Connell by her husband and sons.

Bishop William A. Leonard of Ohio, once an assistant minister in the parish, and his sister, Mrs. John Van Nostrand, placed on the walls a tablet in memory of their father, William Boardman Leonard, and Mrs. Edwin Beers and others placed in the chancel the marble tablet with bronze bas relief of Dr. Charles Henry Hall.

In the fall of 1900, the parish raised a fund to establish a holiday house where working women and girls could be invited for short periods of rest during the summer vacation. The house at Brookhaven was purchased and has been maintained ever since.

An appreciation of the fact that no down-town church could carry on a large work solely through the resources of those to whom it ministered, and that Holy Trinity would inevitably face the conditions that made the anchoring of Trinity and Grace Churches, New York, in their strategic positions dependent on endowments, led George Foster Peabody at this time to make a beginning of an endowment fund, to which he has since added, and also to establish a fund to help maintain the music. In 1911, a gift of \$10,000, in memory of John Gibb, was made by Walter Gibb and his other children, and later Mrs. Sarah H. Gibb, in her will, gave \$1,000 to the John Gibb Memorial Fund. A fund of \$5,000 in memory of Edward Morse Shepard was established in 1912, and in the last year the endowment has been increased by bequests of \$1,000 each from Mrs. Alden S. Swan and Mrs. Cornelia E. Read. A fund of \$2,000 in memory of Mr. and Mrs. James S. Connell has been established by their sons for the work of the Employment Society of the church.

In the summer of 1902, Dr. McConnell was called to the rectorate of All Soul's, New York, to succeed the Rev. Dr. R. Heber Newton. The duty and the opportunity were particularly those of a preacher. His resignation from Holy Trinity took effect August 31, 1902. Pending the selection of a new rector, the Rev. Alexander W. Bostwick was in charge of the parish. In January, 1904, the vestry invited the Rev. John Howard Melish of Cincinnati to become rector.

John Howard Melish was born in Milford, Ohio, on October 12, 1874. After graduation from the University of Cincinnati in 1895, he entered the Episcopal



Theological School at Cambridge. Graduating in 1898, he was made a deacon by Bishop Boyd Vincent, and the next year was raised to the priesthood. Until 1900 he was a member of the Associate Mission of Cincinnati. From that time until his coming to Brooklyn, he was assistant at Christ Church, Cincinnati, and from 1899 to 1904 Biblical lecturer and chaplain of the University of Cincinnati. Mr. Melish's preaching and his effective work for civic reform in Cincinnati quickly attracted attention, and when the rectorship of Holy Trinity was first vacant in 1902, the Rev. Dr. Leighton Parks proposed him for it, notwithstanding his youth, and his growth in the next two years marked him as a man ready for the work of a large parish with a tradition of great preachers.

Mr. Melish preached his opening sermon in Holy Trinity on April 10, 1904. He came to the church with the promise of full opportunity to carry out his ideas of institutional work and especially to reach out to the working classes of the community, who, he felt, were developing a growing hostility to organized Christianity as the institution of a social class foreign to them. Such a cleavage, he considered not only menacing to religion but menacing to the state, and he hoped to make the church an instrument of class reconciliation.

For his wants the parish hoped to build an entirely new parish house, as the facilities of the Hall Memorial House were plainly inadequate for the large and varied work that the new rector was expected to undertake. But scarcely had Mr. Melish entered on his duties when the church was confronted by a building problem. Pieces of stone began to fall from the spire. Examination showed that the sandstone, especially where it had been laid perpendicularly to its original bed, was badly disintegrated. A scaffolding was built to the top of the spire and the work of renovation began, but further examination showed that it would be necessary to take down the whole spire above the belfry. It was also found that the buttress pinnacles and a great part of the other exterior carvings were crumbling away, and that the church would have either to take down most of these carvings and patch up the remains of the disintegrated stone work, leaving the church a mere skeleton and caricature of its original beauty, or else spend over \$100,000 on restoration, not counting the cost of rebuilding the spire. George Foster Peabody gave about \$60,000 for this purpose and the church brought this up to \$105,000. This went to the work of restoration, but the raising of it left the people utterly unable to carry out the promise of a new parish house, and the vestry did not feel justified in attempting to rebuild the spire till benevolent work of the church was provided for.

To meet in some degree the need of more room for parish work, George Foster Peabody in 1905 purchased and afterward gave to the church No. 122 Pierrepont Street, which has since been used as a Guild House, where the women's work of the parish has been concentrated. In 1912, Mr. Peabody purchased the equity in the house at No. 124 Pierrepont Street and gave it to the church. This for several years was used as a home for men giving part of their time to parish and other social work, and as a center of some of the men's activities. More recently this building has been used as a home for women, for which the neighborhood seemed to be in greater need. In 1920, the congregation pledged \$24,000 to be raised in three years to clear the mortgage on this house, with a view to a future improvement of the property that would give adequate parish structures with revenue producing buildings to support them. The mortgage has now been paid.

With such equipment as these circumstances permitted, Mr. Melish undertook to adapt the organization laid out by Dr. McConnell to changing conditions.

Believing that the difficulty experienced with Trinity Club had been chiefly due to lack of facilities for wholesome activities, he changed the assembly room into a gymnasium, put shower baths in the basement, and transformed the third floor of the Hall Memorial House into attractively furnished club rooms. A superintendent was put in charge to direct athletics, and for seventeen years this club has held the interest of succeeding groups of men and boys, now numbering several thousand, and proved the value of comfortable surroundings and skilled direction of latent energy.

The Girls' Friendly Society, organized by Dr. McConnell, was enlarged by making an appeal to all girls in the community, and its growth has only been limited by the size of the rooms available and the number of women associates obtainable to work with the girls. An "open forum" in the gymnasium after Sunday night service was organized for the discussion of community problems. There "the pew had a chance to answer back." Speakers were invited to present questions of religion and life, and the audience to discuss them.

The work in the parish houses changes from time to time. Activities are dropped when other agencies are found that meet the need of the neighborhood. The aim is to do whatever ought to be done not merely for the church but for the whole community, whether by maintaining a playground under Manhattan Bridge, or by cleaning up the tenements in the Navy Yard district. During the war the women of the parish maintained one of the most efficient Red Cross Chapters in the city, and the men, through the War Service Committee, helped and entertained a great number of soldiers and sailors. When peace came, this committee reorganized as the Holy Trinity Fellowship, and has supervised the parish's interest in playgrounds and boy scouts and co-ordinated other activities of the men of the congregation.

True to its traditions, Holy Trinity has maintained a liberal attitude toward practical church unity. When a few years ago the ministers of several denominations in Brooklyn sought to obtain a general observance of Lent by a series of noon-day community Lenten services, they asked the vestry of Holy Trinity to lend the use of the building for that purpose, representing that it was the place to which people of all churches naturally turned for the expression of a general religious emotion. To meet this aspiration the parish fixed its own Lenten services for another hour, and since then each Lent daily noon services, which are not "offices of the Church," but meetings under the auspices of a committee of ministers and laymen of many denominations, have drawn large congregations to enjoy the hospitality of Holy Trinity. Likewise the great common religious observance by Brooklyn of Armistice Day, coincident with the interment of the "Unknown Soldier" at Arlington, was in response to a general wish held in Holy Trinity.

The Assistant Ministers have been: T. Stafford Drowne, 1849-1858; Henry T. Gregory, 1851; Cornelius B. Smith, 1858-1859; W. W. Taylor, 1858; W. N. T. Root, 1860-1861; John C. Middleton, 1860-1863; John H. Rogers, 1863-1866; Charles H. Vandyne, 1866-1867; Thomas G. Valpy, 1869-1870; Reeve Hobby, 1870-1871; William V. Feltwell, 1871-1872; William A. Leonard, 1871-1872; William B. Hooper, 1872-1873; Benjamin P. Newton, 1872-1874; William Short, 1873-1874; George Stansberry, 1874-1875; William W. Ayres, 1875-1876; George H. Chadwick, 1877-1880; Joseph Reynolds, Jr., 1880-1883; H. O. Lacey, 1883-1886; William H. Morgan, 1884-1895; Edward M. McGuffey, 1886-1894; William V. Tunnell, 1887-1891; James Townsend Russell, 1894-1896; George T. Dowling,



(Preacher) 1895-1896; Alexander Vance, 1896-1898; Reginald Pearce, 1898-1899; David M. Steele, 1899-1901; William S. Packer, 1901-1902; Alexander W. Bostwick (Locum Tenens), 1902-1904.

Associates: Egisto F. Chauncey, 1904-1906; Clifton H. Brewer, 1906-1909; Waldo Adams Amos, 1909-1913; Frank Monroe Crouch, 1910-1912; Robert B. B. Foote, 1913-1921; Oscar Frederic Green, 1921.

### Christ Church, Bay Ridge

Christ Church, Bay Ridge, had its beginnings in 1850, when the Rev. Dr. John S. Stone of Christ Church in Clinton Street, bought a lot of about six acres, and began to build a house on the east shore of New York Bay, directly opposite Staten Island. In the winter of 1850-51, a neighboring lot of about eight acres was bought by Joseph A. Perry, junior warden of the church who built a house and moved into it forthwith. Already he had begun to circulate a paper to obtain subscriptions for a church. Liberal sums were promised by Theodore Sedgwick, William C. Langley, Daniel Richards, John B. Kitching, Charles Prince, Henry C. Murphy, and other residents; but the encouragement was not general, and Mr. Perry was obliged to postpone his efforts. In the spring of 1852, through the aid of Mr. Sedgwick, \$3,000 was raised and Mr. Perry began building.

In May, 1853, the chancel and nave were completed and furnished at a cost of about \$6,000. The first service was held on Trinity Sunday, May 22, 1853. The sermon was preached by Dr. Stone. Subscriptions had been made by men of many denominations with the stipulation that the church should belong to the Episcopalians if Dr. Stone would accept the rectorship. If he should refuse, the denomination should be determined by a vote of the subscribers. The vote made it an Episcopal Church, and the Rev. Henry Bartow was called as rector to organize the parish. The Rev. F. S. Wiley of Philadelphia conducted the services on Sunday, May 29, and gave notice to the congregation as required by statute of a meeting to be held on the eighth day following to elect wardens and vestrymen and incorporate as a Protestant Episcopal Church.

On Monday, June 13, 1853, J. B. Perry, J. B. Kitching, and others worshipping in the building, afterwards known as Christ Church in the Town of New Utrecht met to incorporate themselves into a religious society under an act of the Legislature of the State. Mr. Perry presided and Mr. Kitching acted as secretary. They were also chosen wardens. The vestrymen were William C. Langley, Theodore Sedgwick, David C. Winslow, B. C. Townsend, Joseph Dunderdale, Daniel Richards, James Weis and George Fletcher.

The parish grew under the guidance of a succession of noted rectors. They were: H. B. Bartow, 1853-54; Theodore Irving, 1855-57; John P. Hubbard, 1857-59; Uriah T. Tracy, 1860-64; John A. Aspinwall, 1864-85; J. H. Ranger, 1886-88; William Hamilton Morgan, 1888-90; Bishop Falkner, 1891-1911; Harold Arrows Smith, 1911-15; John Fitzgerald, 1915—.

John A. Aspinwall and Bishop Falkner each labored for twenty years, and the parish grew most rapidly during their ministries. The church was enlarged and the tower added under the guidance of Mr. Aspinwall. Two side aisles were built and the seating capacity of the church enlarged materially. This widening of the church and addition of the tower cost \$12,000, more than twice the cost of the original structure. The building of Mr. Aspinwall's day stands almost unchanged in the Lutheran Church at Fourth Avenue and 75th Street. It stood out in the fields at one time surrounded by trees and an open country.

When the elevated road built the incline at 68th Street almost alongside the church it became almost impossible to hold services there. The building was sold to the newly formed Lutheran congregation, and the people of Christ Church built a new structure.

Under Mr. Falkner's leadership the site was obtained on Ridge Boulevard. The cornerstone was laid on All Saints' Day in 1908; and the first service was held on the 16th Sunday after Trinity in 1909.

Mr. Falkner, rector emeritus for the last thirteen years was born in England, April 4, 1834. He passed his youth in America, and in 1862, he was graduated from the Union Theological Seminary. For fourteen years, 1865-1879, he was pastor of the Congregational Church and the Church of the Mediator on Buffalo Avenue. He entered the ministry of the Episcopal Church, and was ordained by Bishop Littlejohn in 1880. He was assistant rector at Christ Church, Clinton Avenue from 1879-1881; rector of the Church of the Intercession, New York, 1881-1883; and rector of St. Marks, Orange, N. J., for the next seven years. From there he went to Christ Church, Bay Ridge.

The Rev. John Henry Fitzgerald, rector since 1915, was the son of a clergyman, born in Connecticut. He received his preparatory education at Bacon Academy, Colchester, Conn. He was graduated from Yale in 1908, and from Berkeley Divinity School, Middletown, Conn., in 1911. He was curate of St. John's Church, Waterbury, Conn., before he came to Bay Ridge. Miss Anne A. Piper was sent by this church as a missionary to Shanghai, China.

## CHAPTER XVI

### METHODISM \*

THE Methodist Episcopal Church is among the strongest of the religious communions in Brooklyn and Queens County, and has done its part toward illustrating Brooklyn as "the City of Churches." Moreover, it was one of its earliest religious bodies. The denomination was founded by John Wesley, who was born in 1703 and died in 1791. The name was first applied to Wesley and his companions by their fellow students at Oxford University on account of their methodical habits in study and religious life, and thus has survived to designate the religious system which he inspired.

The Methodists in America celebrated in 1866 the completion of the first century of the church here. The first Methodists in America came to New York from Ireland. They were descendants of Protestant immigrants to Ireland from the Palatinate on the Rhine, whence they were driven by the Papal troops of Louis XIV. "On a June morning," says an Irish writer, "in the year 1760, a group of emigrants might have been seen at the custom house quay, Limerick, preparing to embark for America." And these brought this faith here. Late in 1765 they were joined by others from Ireland. But the records show that in their new environment they fell away from religious habit for a time. Mrs. Barbara Heck, who had lived in New York since 1760, visited them frequently. One of the later arrivals was Paul Ruckle, her eldest brother. Visiting them on one occasion she found them playing cards. Her religious spirit was aroused,

---

\* From the "Old Sands Street Church," by the Rev. Edwin Warriner, D.D.



and as she had enjoyed long acquaintance with them in Ireland, she seized the cards, threw them into the fire, and solemnly warned them of their danger and their duty. Leaving them, she went at once to the house of Philip Embury, her cousin, on Barracks Street, now Park Place, who had been a preacher, and demanded that he resume his function and preach the word in his own house. She collected four persons with whom she constituted the audience. Thus began weekly meetings. Soon his house could not accommodate his audience. He hired a larger room in the neighborhood, providing for the rent by gratuitous contributions, and preaching without compensation.

Early the next year this humble pastor and his congregation were surprised by the appearance among them of a British officer in his regimentals to share their worship. At the close of the service he introduced himself as "Captain Thomas Webb, but also a soldier of the cross and a spiritual son of John Wesley." At Louisburg the captain had lost an eye, and at Quebec he had been wounded in the arm. He had been present at Braddock's defeat; he had fought on the Plains of Abraham. Returning to England he had heard Wesley preach, had been converted and qualified as a local preacher. During the remainder of his life he was an active evangelist of Methodism abroad and later in England, until his death in 1796. He was a striking figure as a preacher. Of impressive port, he always exhorted in military dress, his sword lying on the table in front of him. A black bandage around his forehead kept a plaster of that color over the socket of his missing eye. In 1767 he joined Embury, and a rigging loft on William Street was rented to accommodate the crowds that listened to their preaching thrice a week.

Barbara Heck was the real founder of American Methodism. From the day she recalled Embury to his duty she had guarded the cause with the vigilance of a priestess. A chapel was her next suggestion. She even submitted a plan for the edifice, one which she believed was due to a divine inspiration. Webb was enthusiastic for it. A site in John Street, ever since sacred to the faith, was leased in 1768 and bought two years later. Subscriptions were solicited generally in the city and neighborhood. Embury had the honor of being the first preacher, first class-leader, first treasurer, and first trustee of the first society of Methodism in the Western hemisphere. The chapel was of stone, faced with blue plaster, sixty feet by forty-two. Embury was not only its chief architect, but labored with the humblest of the builders. On October 30, 1768, he ascended its pulpit, made with his own hands, and dedicated the building with a sermon on Hosea x, 12. The population of New York was 20,000.

Webb made frequent excursions as a preacher and became recognized as a founder of American Methodism. He spent some time preaching at Jamaica, L. I., where "at least twenty-four persons received justifying grace." And twenty-four persons at that time were a considerable section of a rural population.

Captain Webb was the pioneer Methodist preacher in Brooklyn. And the old Sands Street Methodist Church was the first temple of the faith in the city. Up to the time of the celebration of its centenary, eighty-nine pastors and presiding elders had filled its pulpit, and nineteen hundred members had been enrolled. This is the mother of Brooklyn churches. And Brooklyn was a quiet village when the church was built. Captain Webb preached in Brooklyn as early as 1768. It is incredible, but at that time Jamaica was more populous than Brooklyn. When Captain Webb preached in the sail loft in New York, many Brooklynites went over the river to hear him. It is likely—there is no actual record of it—that the Captain's first Brooklyn appearance was in the house of

some friend who had heard him in New York. There is no history or tradition of any other Methodist preacher in Brooklyn until after the Revolution. And it is recorded that the faith on Long Island had hardly survived the demoralizing effects of that great struggle. In 1784, only twenty-four known Methodists were reported on Long Island.

The Rev. Woodman Hickson, while stationed in New York, came over to Brooklyn and preached in the open air, standing upon a table, in New Street, afterward known as Sands Street. There is a quaint picture—a crude woodcut—of this event in Dr. Warriner's "Old Sands Street Church." In this one sees an inclosure, bounded by a rail fence. An old scow ferryboat lies alongside a crude ferry house, and New York, across the river, looks like a small settlement on the shore, with hills back of the houses of "low visibility."

Nevertheless, Woodman Hickson's eloquence on his first appearance in Brooklyn, thus depicted, was such that a friend named Peter Cannon proposed to open his cooper shop near the ferry to the next congregation. Thus Methodism formally began in Brooklyn. At this period the whole of Long Island was but one "circuit," and there was but one preacher serving it. Other towns—particularly Jamaica and Newtown—were even more important than Brooklyn. In 1786, preachers from New York occasionally visited the hamlets across the river, but a year later Methodism in Brooklyn took organic form, and three years later, in 1790, the village was taken into the Long Island circuit, supplied by David Kendall. He, however, became ill, and William Phoebus, although appointed to New Rochelle, came to this circuit, and Kendall was assisted by a young local preacher, Aaron Hunt, appointed to travel as a supply. The presiding elder was Jacob Brush. In the conference year 1790 Hunt wrote: "This circuit extended from Brooklyn, where we had a small class and preached in a private house, over every considerable part of the island."

In 1791, Benjamin Abbott joined William Phoebus on the circuit and began his year's work "in the little hamlet of Brooklyn." He wrote:

"I received my appointment to Long Island, and accordingly took my station. The next day I preached to a small congregation with life and power. The Lord attended the word with success. Some young ladies were cut to the heart, and one gentleman cried out for mercy, and before meeting ended he found peace and joined the society. Next day I went to Newtown."

Only two preachers supplied this Long Island circuit until 1794.

The old church was incorporated in 1794 as "First Methodist Episcopal Church in the town of Brooklyn, Kings County, Nassau Island." At the house of Peter Cannon on May 19, 1794, John Garrison, Thomas Van Pelt, Burdett Stryker, Stephen Hendrickson, Richard Everit, and Isaac Moser were elected the first board of trustees. They purchased from Joshua and Comfort Sands a lot fronting on New (afterward Sands) Street and commenced the erection of a house of worship. The cornerstone was laid by the Rev. William Phoebus, stationed in Brooklyn as a supernumerary, and a sermon was subsequently delivered on the foundation by the Rev. David Buck, a young man about entering upon his ministerial labors, from Isa. xxviii, 16. At the dedicatory service on Sunday, June 1, 1794, the Rev. Joseph Totten, of Long Island, preached from the text Exodus xx, 24. On a Sunday morning in the following October, Bishop Asbury preached, and again in 1796. He wrote:

"I went over to Brooklyn, where we have a small society; I had very few hearers, except those who came from the city [New York]. I administered the sacrament, and we had some life. We then returned to the city, where I preached to about sixteen hundred people, some of whom were wicked and wild enough. O, when will the Lord appear as in ancient times?"



The first pastors of the church were Ezekiel Cooper, Lawrence M'Combs, of "New York and Brooklyn" charge, with William Phoebus, Jacob Brush and David Kendall as supernumerary preachers. In 1795, George Roberts was presiding elder, and for the first time Brooklyn became a separate station, with Joseph Totten as pastor. He left thirty-nine members at the close of the year, having found thirty-five at the beginning. The close of the next year showed a gain of eleven members.

A picture of the "Old Sands Street Church," sketched by a French artist and reproduced by the crude wood-cut method of years ago, a view from the New York side of the East River, as of 1798, gives a graphic idea of the comparative insignificance of both "settlements" at that time. It appeared originally in "Stiles's History of Brooklyn," and it showed the territory four years after the first Methodist Church of Brooklyn was built opposite Navy Yard Point. In the distance are New York Bay and Bergen Point, with Governor's Island nearer, and its central perspective discloses the old Brooklyn ferryhouse. In the center of the picture, partly hidden by the sail of a sloop, is the Sands Street Church. The artist was on some barren height in New York overlooking the scene, and the only structure in the foreground is the roof of a building whose body is lost in the lower ground. The view of Brooklyn shows less than a score of small buildings on the waterfront with rising ground, wooded, back of them.

During 1797, the second year of William Phoebus' third term as pastor, Sylvester Hutchinson being presiding elder, the membership of the old church increased from fifty to eighty-one. The earliest known register of members was made at the close of the conference year, 1798 when Andrew Nichols was pastor. This record of membership showed twenty-six colored communicants. Some of the black people in those days had no surnames. Many of the "most respectable" people of Brooklyn at that time held slaves, and this practice continued until about 1825.

On a stone in the churchyard was inscribed the name of Hannah Stryker, who died in 1787. If tradition be true, she joined the original class of this church, and was the first of the Methodists to "gain a crown of immortality." Cyrus Stebbins and David Buck complete the list of pastors to the close of the eighteenth century. There had been a decrease in membership of the church for a year or two, and at the conference of 1800 the membership reported was only fifty-four. In three years thereafter, under the labors of David Buck, Peter Jayne and Ezekiel Canfield, the number reached the former maximum of seventy-three. During the second pastorate of Cyrus Stebbins, in 1804, the church building was enlarged. In December of that year Stebbins withdrew from the denomination, and Ezekiel Cooper, "the book agent," supplied the vacancy until conference. William Thacher was presiding elder. Samuel Merwin occupied the station until the conference in May, 1806.

These preachers boarded with James Harper, the grandfather of the celebrated Harper Brothers, the price of board being fixed by the trustees of the church at \$3.25, or twenty-six York shillings, a week. Samuel Thomas was associated with Cooper as preacher in 1806. The trustees agreed to pay his house rent, \$160 a year. At this time the trustees resolved: "That there shall be a new set of steps erected at the front door of the church, and seats in the altar all around from the altar door; also that of a dark night when there is a public meeting, the sexton shall light the lamp at the church door." This would signify that the lamp was otherwise ornamental. Joseph Moser was the sexton, at the yearly pay of seven pounds, and grave-digging perquisites. Previously the Methodists had



begun to use the churchyard as a burying ground. Now the trustees adopted a resolution "that none but regular attendants upon Divine service in this church should have the privilege of interment there, and furthermore, that no person guilty of suicide could be buried in this ground under any pretence or condition." Here were buried many of the early Brooklyn Methodists.

At the conference of 1807, Joseph Crawford was appointed to the New York district and Elijah Woolsey and John Wilson were stationed in Brooklyn. These pastors found two hundred and twenty-five members and left two hundred and fifty-three. This year the death of a pastor's wife, Mrs. Electa Woolsey, was mourned. And this curious record was entered in the old church book: "Jacob and Susan joined together in marriage October 12, 1807, by me, Elijah Woolsey. Consent of George Bennett, owner." Of course they were slaves, and they had no surnames.

The next pastor was Daniel Ostrander. In 1808 Joshua Sands, an Episcopalian, canceled a debt of \$100 due him for the land upon which the church was built. The next year he gave the society a lot for a parsonage, on High Street, adjoining the church. During the next conference year the pastor, the Rev. Reuben Hubbard, withdrew from the Methodists. This was found in the records:

"Cyrus Stebbins left the Methodist connection and joined the Church of England. He is stationed in Schenectady and was formerly stationed in Brooklyn. Little Reuben Hubbard left our connection and joined *the Church*. He was formerly a Methodist preacher stationed in Brooklyn. *Poor things!*"

Not a very violent phrase of dislike.

The length of the church edifice having been increased previously to 1810, it was now sixty feet long and thirty feet wide "with end gallery for the Africans." The congregation having increased now beyond the church capacity, it was determined on September 10, 1810, to build a new edifice. George Smith, one of the official members, bought the old structure and it was removed to the Jamaica Turnpike, now Fulton Street, opposite High Street, and devoted to various purposes, although church classes still met in it. In one part of it Judge Garrison held court. Some of the brethren were against a new structure, fearful of the expense, and suggested enlarging the old church. The pastor, William Thacher, challenged this idea. "Put me in command," he said, "and I will show you that it is easier to raise \$3,000 to build than \$1,400 for enlargement." The new house was built, seventy by forty-two feet, with galleries and furniture to seat 1,200 persons, at a cost of \$4,200. Subscriptions amounted to \$3,300, the old church brought \$260, and at the dedication \$220 was raised—in all \$3,700. This increased the church debt to \$420, but the congregation grew and prospered. It was remembered as the "Old White Church." It was a rectangular building with no spire, and had little of the character of church buildings of today. Bishop Asbury preached there May 17, 1812, and described it as an "elegant house." Asbury Park was named for this famous preacher.

At the expiration of the conference year 1811, Pastor Thacher said:

"Brethren: I now close my labors as your preacher. You have paid me all my claims, and that I may not be suspected of any sinister design, I tell you that I ask no favors for myself. But I speak in the interest of my successors. You are in the habit of paying \$350 for the support of a married preacher. New York pays \$500 for the same purpose. They know that the whole of this is needed to support a family, and let me tell you that no man has paid as much to support your preacher as William Thacher. I ask you to give more in the future to the support of your preachers. As for myself, I have no claims upon you."

The trustees forthwith voted \$400 for the next pastor, and surprised Thacher with a gift of sixty dollars, which, in those days, was considered quite



a sum. Other pastors during this decade were Lewis Pease, whose health failed; Thomas Drummond, Nathan Emery and Joseph Crawford.

### Sunday School

The distinction of forming the first class of children in the Sands Street Church for instruction in the catechism belongs to Thomas Drummond. This was the register of his class March 1, 1814, and no doubt many now living in Brooklyn may be able to point out names in the list as their own forebears—perhaps great grandfathers and great grandmothers, or at least to claim collateral descent: Thomas and Cornelia Garrison, George and Sarah Smith, Samuel Moser, Peimish and Fannie Durvea, Nancy Hoey, Mary Fowler, Amelia Jackson, Hiram Richardson, Henry Moore, Ann Tunstill, Eliza Ann and Maria DeGraw, Elizabeth Cann, Mary Ann Pray, Nancy Valentine, Eliza and Mary Herbert, Lucinda Vail, Hannah and Ebenezer Bennett, James Herbert, Benjamin Richardson, Hannah Snell, Eleanor Corine, Mary Thomas, Mary Ann Higbie, Lenah Ann Williams, and Deborah Smith Hastings. This was a pioneer work among the children, and was exactly two years in advance of the first Sunday school movement in Brooklyn, a city now celebrated the world over for such organizations, as it now shows in parade, annually, Sunday school children to the number of 100,000 or more.

More elaborate organizations came afterwards. On February 11, 1816, while Nathan Emery was pastor, Thomas Sands, a local preacher in this church—he subsequently became a large shipping merchant, and mayor of Liverpool, England—proposed establishing a Sunday school "in the village of Brooklyn." The conference offered aid. Children were brought together in Thomas Kirk's printing office, a long, narrow framed edifice on Adams Street, between Sands and High. They assembled in the regular school room of Daniel DeVinne. The building was still standing in 1885. The founders of the school were Robert Snow and Andrew Mercein, with Joseph Herbert, Daniel DeVinne, and of course, Thomas Sands. Their signatures, with those of John G. Murphy, and Joseph Harrison were appended to an address to the people in March, 1816, requesting parents and guardians to express their wishes as to what catechism they would prefer to have their children study, no attempt being made to confine the school to any particular denomination. The address promised that the children should be taken to such church services as their parents might choose, yet all the men associated with the movement were Methodists and members of the Sands Street Church. Ninety-seven names of children were read at the first meeting, although not more than half that number were present. The children were mostly of poor parents, and not more than one-half of them knew their letters. An aristocratic spirit prevailed, and this led the well-to-do to object to their children's association with those of the poor. The founders of this school stated its design thus: "To gather poor children from the most destructive of all places to the morals of youth—the street—on the Sabbath day," and to combine religious and moral instruction with "ordinary learning." The boys gathered in and about the rope walks of the village, "and the card playing, profanity, and other vices which they there indulged in" had become a problem to the better part of the community. This movement was followed by these zealous and benevolent men of the old church by a call in which they joined, on March 27, 1816, for a public meeting which "Christians of every denomination, all advocates of decency and order, and all friends of religion" were invited to attend, to organize a village Sunday



school union. The result was the formation of the Brooklyn Sunday School Union Society on April 8, 1816. The Sunday school in the Kirk building thus became a union school, and was removed to the school house of District No. 1, at Concord and Adams Streets. The movement so hopefully began suffered a temporary defeat. A lack of teachers and strenuous opposition by some of the members of the church who regarded teaching in the Sunday school as "a desecration of the Lord's day," resulted in a suspension of the work for about three years.

In the meantime the Episcopalians organized a Sunday school in Brooklyn, and certain members of the Baptist churches in New York proposed to come over and organize another. The original promoters of the idea in the Sands Street Church could not stand idly by and see people "from abroad" superseding them in this work, and in 1821 the union Sunday school was resumed by them in the district school building. This school so increased in numbers that as a result the first Sunday school building was erected in Prospect Street, near Adams. It was built by Robert Snow, James Engels, Joseph Moser, and Robert Nichols, "with beams and timbers from Mr. Snow's old potash store in New York," and it was large enough to accommodate all the Sunday school children in the village of Brooklyn. It was made a happy place on New Year by the distribution of cakes and apples and the dispensing of shoes, stockings, flannel garments and the like, solicited from the wealthier citizens. At that time Christmas was not, as it has become, pre-eminently the children's holiday. From the Sunday school, in accord with the liberality of the idea of its founders, the children were accustomed to repair to those places of worship attended by their parents, or to return to their homes.

Gradually other churches became sufficiently established to maintain their own Sunday schools, and the children of other denominations withdrew, leaving the Methodists to conduct the school on Prospect Street. One of the most devoted and useful laborers in this school was Abraham Vanderveer, who, though a member of the Dutch Reformed Church, was thoroughly identified with the Methodists in this work.

#### Church Activities

The colored members of the old Sands Street Church became so numerous that they desired a separate place to worship, and about 1817, assisted by white members of the church, erected a small meeting house on High Street, between Bridge and Pearl. They were, however, under the pastoral care of the preacher of the Sands Street Church. The church register of April 22, 1818, Joseph Crawford, pastor, contains a record of the "African Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church," with seventy-four members. In 1820, while Alexander McCaine was pastor, the colored members of the church seceded in a body, only six remaining in the old church. This was attributed to "a spirit of insubordination to the discipline," as there was no other definite reason known. The only record of official action concerning this secession was this: "October 15, 1819. Motion made and carried that the colored people of the Methodist Church in Brooklyn be requested to pay \$10 a quarter for services rendered by Brother McCaine in taking care of the aforesaid church." In a note, February 17, 1820, it was suggested that "from present appearances the colored people are about to separate from the charge." It was asked if it would not be advisable in such an event to set apart seats in the house "for the use of those who wish to remain among us," and this was decided in the affirmative. Alexander McCaine resigned his



charge soon after this secession, and Henry Chase was appointed a supply for the rest of the year. Several Methodist churches were afterwards organized in Brooklyn by the colored people of that faith.

In 1821, Lewis Pease was appointed a second time to the church, which was "visited with a revival." This began at a camp meeting at Musketo Cove, and another "refreshing" was enjoyed almost immediately after the camp meeting. Under Mr. Pease's ministry the membership increased from two hundred and sixteen to four hundred and one.

During the conference year 1822, a little Methodist society was organized at Yellow Hook. This afterward became the Bay Ridge Methodist Episcopal Church. The first members of this communion were Daniel Field, leader; Adrian and Phoebe Bogart, Getty Bogart, Ellen Gold, Henry Stilwell, Anna Stilwell, Polly Bailey, Peter Bogart, Peggy Springsteel, Anna Springsteel, Walter Van Pelt, Winan Bogart, John DeGraff, Maynart Vanier, Elizabeth Van Pelt, James Van Pelt, Edward Williams, Eliza Ferguson, and others.

William Ross was returned to the charge of the Sands Street Church at the close of Mr. Pease's successful pastorate. Soon after his arrival in 1823 a considerable number of the members colonized and formed the York Street Church, but this new society continued for twelve years under the same pastoral supervision as the mother church. In his youthful fire William Ross died—the first pastor to depart to his reward since Woolman Hickson's death. Nearly all the persons of the village followed his body, with other clergy, and a large choir, which sang as the procession moved "one of our solemn and appropriate hymns" to the tune of "China." Mitchell B. Bull filled the unexpired term as a supply. In the following year Mr. Summerfield, called "the seraphic" in the records, died, and in accord with his wish was buried by the side of his friend, William Ross, in the Sands Street churchyard, where the ashes of both reposed for years.

The conference of 1825 sent Thomas Burch to take charge of Brooklyn Methodism, and S. L. Stillman was appointed his colleague in 1826, in which year a class was formed in Red Hook Lane, and thus still another church established. In 1826, "the eloquent Bascom" preached in this church. During this decade, notwithstanding the secession of the colored members, the roll of the mother church increased from two hundred and seventy-one to four hundred and thirty-six.

During the following years Methodism increased steadily in Brooklyn. The Sunday school was prosperous. It was mentioned by Laban Clark in the New York "Advocate" in 1828 as the best conducted he had seen. Samuel Luckey followed Thomas Burch as preacher in charge. During his pastorate a Young Men's Missionary Society auxiliary to the parent Missionary Society was organized. A notable revival in the Sands Street Church followed a Hempstead Harbor camp meeting in 1829, the first year of the pastoral term of Noah Levings and James Covell, Jr. It began among the sailors of the United States navy stationed in Brooklyn. A band of Methodists, including several exhorters, held services on shipboard. Many sailors "joined class," and a goodly number gave in their names to the lieutenant to have their "grog stopped." Many were baptized from the ship. A change of pastors brought John C. Green and C. W. Carpenter to the charge in 1831, after the formation of a new Methodist colony from the mother church. The Washington Street Church and parsonage was erected in that year at a cost of about \$24,000. For about four years the Sands Street and Washington Street churches constituted one charge, being undivided

in their financial interests and under the same pastoral supervision. Thomas Burch was appointed a second time to this charge in 1833-1834, his colleagues on the circuit being John Kennedy, and John Luckey. There were now four churches under their care, including New Utrecht, and the membership was more than a thousand.

The New York Conference for the first time held its session in Sands Street Church in 1835. It was deemed expedient to make a division of the church property. Pastors were appointed to the three churches severally, separate boards of trustees were appointed, each church assumed a portion of the debt, and each obtained sole possession of the property which it occupied. The entire indebtedness after the Washington Street church was built was \$18,500. Sands Street became responsible for \$5,500, York Street for \$3,000, and Washington Street for \$10,000. Of the burial grounds on Concord Street and at Wallabout each church held an undivided third. For about three years, however, the several boards met in joint session. There was felt to be a need still for an additional church. A committee from the joint board sought suitable ground in the neighborhood of the residence of Christopher Hempstead and Mrs. Mary Powers, not far from Hanson Place. The committee accomplished nothing, but a plot of ground, with building stones and a part of the necessary fixtures for a house of worship were offered as a donation by James E. Underhill. This offer was declined by the board on account of the situation being "too far from the settled part of the city," and because Mr. Underhill required that "the church shall have a steeple!"

After the division of the church noted, Bartholomew Creagh was the first in pastoral charge at an "allowance" of \$600 a year. In 1837, W. H. Norris succeeded Mr. Creagh. During his two years term the membership of the old church increased from four hundred and two to six hundred and sixty-seven. Fitch Reed was his successor for one year. The annual conference of 1839 was held in the Sands Street Church. In 1840, Long Island was set off as a presiding elder's district, in charge of Stephen Martindale. P. C. Oakley was appointed pastor of the church, and under his administration in 1841 the first regular board of stewards was elected. In 1843, L. M. Vincent being pastor, the membership was largely increased by a revival. It was now decided to demolish the old building and erect a larger structure, the "Old White Church" being wholly inadequate to hold the congregations that attended Mr. Vincent's ministry. With intense emotion the older members of the church assembled for the last time in the doomed building and listened to "the tearing-down sermon." These older members regarded the old church with an almost superstitious veneration. It had stood almost forty years. From its high pulpit they had listened to sermons by Asbury, Dow, Summerfield, Bascom and many others hardly less eloquent or renowned, and at its altar they had worshipped with the Garrisons, the Harpers, the Kirks, the Mosers and others widely known. Tears and lamentations characterized their sorrow.

A new brick edifice was dedicated January 15, 1844, with preaching by Charles Pitman and Nathan Bangs. On the following Sunday Noah Levings and David M. Reese occupied the pulpit, and a subscription amounted to \$1,400. The new building was of Grecian architecture, eighty feet long and sixty in width. During its building the congregation worshipped in a hall at Fulton and Nassau Streets.

At the expiration of Mr. Vincent's first year, in May, 1843, a resolution was adopted at the quarterly conference by nine votes against eight, condemning the



practice of petitioning for particular preachers. In 1844 John J. Matthias was appointed to the district, and Hart F. Pease to the station. Nathan Bangs was stationed here in 1846 with John C. Tackaberry. A parsonage was built. The entire building outlay now amounted to \$18,000, of which the church owed \$10,000. In 1843, Moses F. Odell and Miss Esther Hollis (later the widow of the Rev. William McAllister) organized an "infant class" in the Sunday school with ten scholars, a new idea, at least in this denomination.

In 1847, John B. Merwin was pastor with Nathan Bangs. On a Saturday night, September 9, 1848, while William H. Norris was preacher in charge, the new church and parsonage were destroyed in the great fire. The insurance was \$1,200. The walls of the church were left safe for rebuilding, however, and the enterprising people, encouraged by a zealous pastor, proceeded to repair the loss. In the meantime they erected a building on the rear of the church property, on High Street, containing a Sunday school and lecture rooms, and connected with the main building by a department for class rooms eighteen by sixty feet and two stories in height. The building committee consisted of David Coope, Warren Richmond, Nathaniel Bonnell, Jacob Brown, and John J. Studwell. This church was dedicated March 25, 1849, a discourse being delivered by Dr. Stephen Olin. The Rev. T. W. Chadwick said that Dr. Olin's "glorious sermon" gave him a grand conception of the dignity of being a Christian.

The Sunday school continued its prosperous career. After the removal of its veteran founders, Robert Snow and Joseph Herbert, the leadership fell into the hands of men equally well qualified to conduct its affairs. At a teachers' meeting of the Sands Street Sunday school May 3, 1847, it was resolved that a Juvenile Missionary Society be formed of the scholars. Charles H. Fellows was elected president, Joshua I. Gascoigne, vice-president, Gilbert H. Read, secretary, and Egbert Acker, treasurer. Each teacher selected a member of his or her class to collect class funds. An Infant Class Missionary Society had been organized and a Young Men's Missionary Society had been in operation for twenty years, but this was the beginning of the only permanent organization connected with this church. More than \$50,000 was raised and paid into the general missionary treasury by this society during the succeeding years up to 1880, and it also appropriated large sums to local missionary work. A constitution was adopted July 19, 1847, and William Cartwright was made second vice-president. These constituted the first board of managers: Ira Peregro, Jr., James Cheetham, Horace N. Harrison, Benjamin Haff, James Bogart, William Marvin, Elizabeth E. Haff, Belinda Vanderveer, Josephine Curtis, Jane Vining, Mary Wadsworth, and Harriet Oakley.

The first Sunday school missionary festival was held December 25, 1849. Brothers Kirk, Murphy, North, and J. Wesley Harper addressed the meeting. This was a gala event for Mr. Harper, as he was born on Christmas Day. Novel features were introduced at the missionary celebration. The school was organized into fifty different societies, each having its own name and motto, and they together collected about \$680. The exercises consisted of singing and addresses, after which Superintendent Odell gave the classes baskets of good things. Ole Bull, the world's famous violinist of that period, highly regarded as a musician in Europe, was present and "dedicated" a new violin to the school, in return for which courtesy he was made a life member of the Juvenile Missionary Society. Some of the names of the classes were: "Old Sands Street, the Homestead," "Lenders to the Lord," "Father Snow Society," "Stockholders in the Never-failing Bank," "Mrs. Ann Wilkins Society," "Missionary Life and

Trust Company." In most cases the mottoes of the classes were beautiful and appropriate passages of scripture.

The published statistics of Methodism in Brooklyn previous to 1857 consisted solely of the names on the class books. More complete statistics of the Sands Street Church followed after that date. The number of deaths reported from 1857 to 1883 was one hundred and twenty-four; there were baptized during the period one hundred and nineteen adults and two hundred and forty-seven children. The old church contributed an average of \$2,500 annually to various related causes. The collection for church extension in 1882 was the largest for that cause ever made by the church. The pastor, J. S. Breckenridge, conducted service on Children's Day, 1882, and the amount then contributed for the cause of education surpassed all previous connections for that object. The pastors during 1857-1884 were: John Miley, John B. Hagany, B. H. Nadal, L. S. Weed, Charles Fletcher, E. G. Andrews, A. H. Wyatt, G. DeLaMater, G. F. Kettell, F. P. Tower, George Taylor, Lindsay Parker, J. S. Breckenridge, L. R. Streeter; and the presiding elders were Buel Goodsell, William H. Norris, John Kennaday, Daniel Curry, Benjamin Pillsbury, E. E. Griswold, T. G. Osborn, Charles Fletcher, A. S. Graves, G. F. Kettell, and I. Simmons.

No part of the history of the Sands Street Church—now known as the First Methodist Episcopal Church—is more remarkable than that of the last quarter of the last century. While some of the churches in "Old Brooklyn" struggled for existence, the old mother church maintained much of the vigor and the uniform prosperity of former days. From its beginning it had been like a prolific plant, whose shoots, cut from the parent stem and planted in other quarters of the city, themselves became vigorous and productive. Other churches naturally grew from it. From necessity or choice, from time to time, many of the Sands Street people transferred their membership to other churches, changes of residence location in the growing city having much to do with this, yet many resolved to stay and "hold the fort." Undismayed even by the prospect of an early removal of the church itself, owing to secular demands in its neighborhood, they improved opportunities and made the final days of Sands Street Methodism worthy of the past and prophetic of the future. The class workers and the Sunday school workers emulated the zeal of the church fathers. The anniversaries lost nothing of interest as they successively came. The Rev. Dr. Weed was present at the Christmas missionary festival of 1881. He wrote an interesting account of the event, and after describing the decorations and giving the names of notable laymen present said:

"For nearly thirty consecutive years the Rev. David Terry of the parent Missionary Society has been present at this Christmas festival and opened the exercises with prayer. \* \* \* The call of the classes was intensified in interest by the splendid chorus singing of the entire school of the verse motto of each class called. The motto of the young gents of the infant class is 'The Young Guard,' and that of the little misses 'Spring Flowers.' A little fellow of four or five years dressed in uniform represented the boys; and a little girl of about the same age was a symbol of spring flowers. They brought in from that class \$200. To pastors and superintendents generally it may, we think, be a matter of very serious thought whether this may not be the 'better way.' The whole effort and enthusiasm of the congregation, church and Sunday school are concentrated upon this one day of the year for collecting and reporting missionary money. All are interested, and all are represented by their gifts—parents, children, grandchildren all are there. Even little babies are brought up in their fathers' or mothers' arms with gifts in their little hands for the mission cause."

The work of the society attracted attention beyond the boundaries of Brooklyn.

The most memorable of the annual missionary festivals was held December 25, 1882. A large painting of "The Old White Church" had been made from



memory of a structure now gone, and was hung in the rear of the pulpit. A star of blazing gas jets was seen above the painting, and on either side were appropriate emblems. North Carolina hanging moss and floral baskets in profusion adorned the front of the galleries, and near the organ a cluster of Sunday school banners was displayed. Portraits of former pastors and other banners were among the decorations. On raised benches behind the pulpit reaching to the galleries the children of the infant class were seated, "a lovely sight to behold." The Sunday school occupied the front seats in the body of the church, which was crowded, for the general belief that this would be the last opportunity to attend such a meeting in the old Sunday school home had drawn a host of the former members and friends of the school. A. B. Thorn led the singing, in which all joined. Said one historian of the event: "Even David himself would have been satisfied with the number and variety of musical instruments, as they included organ, cornet, piano, piccolo and bells." Among the conspicuous visitors were Henry Ward Beecher and his assistant, Mr. Halliday, ex-Mayor Howell, ex-Mayor Booth, ex-Mayor Hunter, Edward Rowe, and ex-Alderman Whiting. Sam S. Utter presided. In place of the assistant secretary, David Terry, absent for the first time in thirty years, John Parker, a Brooklyn pastor, offered prayer. The missionary offerings were made, and there was a quaint diversion. Someone had brought the old fire bucket which had belonged to "Poppy" Snow and laid it on the platform. In this were the offerings of the infant class, \$250.

Mr. Beecher delivered an address characteristic of him in phrase and viewpoint. He said that as he remembered them, the New England Congregationalists used to be big bugs. The Methodists had a hard time to get a hold in New England. They were not grand. When he went to Indiana he found things were reversed. There the Methodists were on top and "we" were nowhere. The public sentiment of that state was in the hands of the Methodists. On the whole they were a nice sort of folks, and he came to have a warm heart for them. They had the good sense to go out among the common people; and they had a habit of exhibiting their feelings. He was a Presbyterian then, and he now thought very well of the Presbyterians.

"Their wells are deep, however," he continued, "and they never run over. The water is good, but we have to pump for it. The Methodists are like springs—they need no pumping. Their wells flow over. When I came to Brooklyn it was my good fortune to fall into the society of the members of this very church, among whom was Brother Odell, whose school at that time was considered the best in Brooklyn. I afterward gave some members to you, and that bound me to you; and some came to my prayer meetings from this church. Brother Loper, who thought a man couldn't go to heaven if he wore a mustache or goatee, used to come round. Therefore, it seems to me, for various reasons, you could have gone farther and fared worse than having me speak to you. The warm-heartedness and fiery spirit of this church were always noticeable, and I would like to see some of this spirit today. You are going to leave this place that is consecrated. It is your purpose, I believe, to join forces and erect a great memorial church on the Heights. I am sorry for it, and would recall to your mind in this connection the fable of the snail and the lobster shell. Beware of the devil of respectability and don't be afraid to be common! My fear is that you will attempt to make a big, magnificent, popular church. My prayer is that God may defeat you. When you go, if you have any spare members, send them over to me and I will take care of them."

At the close of this address one of the children presented Mr. Beecher with a beautiful candy basket. Then followed an interesting scene. A score or more of the very young of the visitors—some of them grandchildren and great-grandchildren of the early members of the church—came forward to "Grandpa" Utter with their offerings, \$441, to which \$250 was added in a few minutes, making the entire contribution \$2,000. Christmas gifts to the children closed the service.

J. S. Breckenridge, the pastor, in his farewell sermon in April, 1883, said:

"Since I have been pastor the church has contributed \$3,000 annually to missionary purposes. The church is vigorously alive and it has a great future before it. \* \* \* The Brooklyn Bridge is approaching completion and soon the church will be removed. If you remain this side of Fulton Street you will do well. If you go on the Heights you will do better. That part of the city needs a Methodist church. With no debt, a good leader, and \$150,000 in your treasury you can storm Brooklyn as General Wolfe did the Heights of Abraham at Quebec."

Sam S. Utter presided at the Christmas exercises in 1883. The decorations were noteworthy and the attendance large, many of the old-time Sands Street members rallying as usual, with the idea that the old church would but little longer be open to them. A great Christmas tree was laden with gifts for the children, and perched upon it were two white doves. Beneath was represented the manger where Christ was born, and to this was added a shepherd scene with the Star of the East overhead. Mr. Utter stated that some present in the church represented the sixth generation of worshippers in the old church.

It became evident as early as 1870 that the days of the old church were numbered. The great growth of Brooklyn, to which its churches had contributed, compelled removals to comparatively remote homes by many who thus were to affiliate with other churches of the denomination. The East River bridge, with its ever increasing tide of traffic, even at that time rendered this ancient stronghold of the Methodists undesirable for religious services. The bridge company offered \$125,000 for the property, but the trustees declined to sell at that price. The outlook was uncertain. In 1882, a proposal was made by leading ministers and laymen to unite the Sands Street and the Pacific Street Churches in a new organization on the Heights, but this did not commend itself to some of the influential members of the Sands Street Church. Attempts to consolidate other Methodist churches in "Old" Brooklyn—all children of the mother church—also met with defeat. Dr. Buckley wrote in the "Christian Advocate":

"All the efforts at consolidation in connection with the five churches—the York Street, the Sands Street, the Washington Street, the Johnson Street and the Pacific Street—have failed. Yet it is obvious to all that they do not comprise materials for more than two strong churches. Many Methodists have been discouraged by the state of things and have joined other congregations. It is certain that decay and death await some of these churches, and the valuable properties which they have in trust will be eaten up in a few years.

\* \* \* It now looks as though, through mismanagement or want of management, Methodism in those parts of Brooklyn will continue to diminish, and that much of the property will be consumed."

The old church finally gave way to secular progress, but began a new life as the First Methodist Episcopal Church designated as a "Sands Street Memorial," at Henry and Clark Streets. The simplicity and strength of Methodism were exemplified in its history. And this is especially true of its earlier years of struggle. "Without tower or bell, without pompous ritual or gorgeous architecture, without sensational devices of any description, this old church has kept time to the march of Methodism." There was no rebellion against appointed pastors, no disorganization of the class meetings, no departure from the old methods, no abandonment of the old principles. And the old church still lives in the widening results of her faithful service and the increasing usefulness of her descendants—the many prosperous Methodist churches of Brooklyn and vicinity.

There are now thirty-two Methodist Episcopal Churches in the borough of Brooklyn, and seventy-seven additional churches of the denomination on Long Island—an amazing growth from the early times already recorded, and an increase in line with the secular development of this great territory tributary to the world's metropolis.



## Personalities Among Methodists

There are strange and interesting matters relating to many of the older Methodists, and the individualities of the earlier preachers in Brooklyn and on Long Island, particularly those associated with the First or Sands Street Church, were striking. At the time of the establishment of Methodism in Brooklyn by Woodman Hickson, the Rev. Thomas Foster was presiding elder in charge of the district that included Brooklyn. He began his itinerant labors at the age of twenty-three, his earlier work being in the South. As one historian says:

"He was a plain Methodist preacher of the olden type. He boldly condemned the fashions. When some of the sisters bought shawls with fringes and wore them to church, he told them they must cut the fringes off, and the commands were complied with. The fringes were cut off and the shawls hemmed."

Foster died on his little farm in Dorchester, Md., near Washington Methodist Episcopal Church, known as "Foster's meeting house," November 10, 1816.

Woodman Hickson's colleague in New York and Brooklyn, the Rev. John Dickins, was born in London in 1746 and educated at Eton College. He was the first married preacher in John Street, New York, and while stationed in that city was the first Methodist preacher to receive Coke and approve his scheme for the organization of the denomination. Dickins is said to have been the author of the name "Methodist Episcopal Church." He was called "a Paul among the preachers," and died of yellow fever in Philadelphia, September 27, 1798, aged fifty-two.

Freeborn Garretson was another unique personality. He was an early preacher in Brooklyn associated with Dickins and Hickson, both of whom were in ill health when he came north from the Peninsula in 1787. He was born in Maryland August 15, 1752, and "born again" in 1775. He had been moved strangely by Methodist preaching he had sat under, and was greatly disturbed in mind for a period. He was converted on horseback while returning through a lonely wood from a Methodist meeting. "I threw the reins of my bridle on my horse's neck," he explained, "and putting my hands together I cried out: 'Lord, I submit!'" That very day he established a family altar, and soon after, while "standing in the midst of his slaves with a hymn book in his hand, beginning family worship, he pronounced all his servants free." He was once pastor and for twelve years presiding elder over the Sands Street Church. His trials in Maryland as preacher, before coming to this region, were remarkable. He preached sometimes as often as four times a day. Once he was nearly killed by a blow from a disagreeing adversary who assailed him, but continued preaching, "his face bruised, scarred and bedewed with tears"; and once a ruffian attempted to drown his voice by beating a drum. A great fire had been made in the fireplace of the room where he was preaching on a very warm day, and the author of the mischief stalked through the house ringing a bell. But the preacher persisted, and defeated all efforts to silence him as well as mob opposition. He married Miss Catharine Livingston, daughter of Robert R. Livingston, and sister of Chancellor Robert R. Livingston, the friend of Washington, a family noted for its great wealth, its seat being the Livingston Manor at Clermont. Garretson died in New York, September 26, 1827.

In 1924, the Rev. B. E. Kidder was pastor, and the church property was valued at \$100,000. There were two hundred and five communicants, and a Sunday school of two hundred and fifty. The amount raised the year preceding was \$7,641.

## Methodist Church Government

The definiteness of the "system" of Methodism no doubt explains its broad appeal. Its first form, that of the "United Society," was organic, but it matured into something more particular and detailed. It is composed of "members" and "probationers" who were tried for a period to determine their fitness for membership. These were divided into classes of twelve or more persons who met weekly under the care of a class-leader for religious counsel and the contribution of money for the support of the church according to the general rules. And these class leaders themselves were met at stated intervals by the preacher or pastor. The classes comprise the society; and the revival and propagation of spiritual religion was the aim, without reference to sectarian ecclesiasticalism or sectarian theology. Each society had its trustees, holding the church or chapel property; stewards, having charge of other finances; licensed exhorters and local preachers, men who pursued secular vocations, but labored as public teachers upon opportunity. The exhorters graduated to the dignity of local preachers, and thence to the ministry. This was the recruiting process of the General Conferences. Today Annual Conferences are held by sections geographically convenient. For instance, Brooklyn and Long Island belong to the New York East Conference, which is situated partly in the State of New York and partly in Connecticut. It embraces, as said, the whole of Long Island, that part of the City of New York, or the Borough of Manhattan, east of South Ferry, Whitehall Street, Broadway, Park Row, Chatham Square, the Bowery, and Third Avenue, and those appointments in the Bronx and in the State on the east of the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad. In Connecticut, it covers all that part of the State lying west of the Connecticut River, except a few churches located in the northwest corner of that State. This conference is divided into four districts, the Brooklyn North District, the Brooklyn South District, the New Haven District, and the New York District.

The denomination is "different" because of its liberality of individual effort. Each society has its "prayer meeting" in which its lay talents, without respect to sex, are brought into exercise and thus developed and made subservient to the common cause; its "watch nights," generally celebrated the last night of the year, to "watch the old year out and the new year in." A group of circuits form a district; and these districts are under District Superintendents, each of whom travels his territory, preaching and counseling the local preachers and exhorters, meeting the official members of the circuit societies and promoting the interests of the church. The District Superintendents hold Quarterly Conferences for their territories, and all are subject to the Annual Conference, and that to the General Conference. This, in brief, was the "economy" or practical system of Methodism as it developed in America, it being more elaborate than the Wesleyan original. At and after the Christmas General Conference in this country of 1874, the church here assumed an organic form with its series of synodal bodies and formulated elaborate General Rules.

These General Rules declare a line of conduct, among other things, which has in some respects been modified. Thus the general conference of 1924, recently held in New England, left to the consciences of Methodists certain things which formerly were regarded as sinful, like dancing, and attendance upon the theatre, and which were prohibited. A glance at the original law of conduct of members of the Methodist Episcopal Church will be interesting. Thus it was expected of all who were to continue in the esteem of the church that they should "continue to evidence their desire of salvation" by "doing no harm, by avoiding evil of



every kind, especially that which is most generally practiced, such as: The taking of the name of God in vain; the profaning the day of the Lord either by doing ordinary work therein or by buying or selling; drunkenness, buying or selling spiritous liquors or drinking them, unless in cases of extreme necessity; slaveholding, buying or selling slaves; fighting, quarreling, brawling, brother going to law with brother; returning evil for evil, or railing for railing; the using many words in buying or selling; the buying or selling goods that have not paid the duty; the giving or taking of things on usury, that is, unlawful interest; uncharitable and unprofitable conversation; particularly speaking evil of magistrates or ministers; doing to others as we would not they should do unto us; doing what we know is not for the glory of God, as the putting on of gold and costly apparel; the taking such diversions as cannot be used in the name of the Lord Jesus; the singing those songs or the reading those books which do not tend to the knowledge or love of God; softness and needless self-indulgence; laying up treasure on earth; borrowing without a probability of paying, or taking up goods without a probability of paying for them." And this was supplemented by exhortation to do good of every sort to all men, clothing the naked, helping them that are sick, by diligence and frugality, and by attending upon all the ordinances of God.

#### Methodist Conference, 1924

There was much of historical interest in the seventy-sixth session of the New York East Conference, which was held in the James Methodist Episcopal Church, Brooklyn, March 19-25, 1924, Bishop Luther B. Wilson, D.D., LL.D., presiding. W. L. Davison, superintendent of the Brooklyn North District, in his fourth annual report of that district, said that during four years more than \$1,000,000 had been expended in the district in the erection of churches, parish houses and parsonages. This included a fine new church edifice in Jamaica, costing \$300,000, and dedicated by Bishop Wilson on March 30, 1924. Mr. Davison reported that although there was a reaction from benevolent contributions two years ago, the district "came back" during the last year, and a large number of the churches had paid the centenary claim in full. Trinity Church, at Richmond Hill, borrowed money to pay its apportionment in full. And he predicted that at the end of 1924 the offerings would equal those formerly made. Fifty-seven churches in the district reported accessions totaling 1,932. Andrews reported a total of two hundred and twenty-five, and a membership that promised soon to reach one thousand. Bushwick Avenue reported two hundred and seven, and that the weekly prayer meeting averaged an attendance of two hundred and twenty-five. This great church has a membership of 2,700. As to ministerial support, fifteen churches reported an increase for 1924 totaling \$5,584, and the tendency was upward. "When a leading movie actor signs a contract involving three million dollars for his services," said Mr. Davison, "it seems a sad commentary on the equity of things in general that educated men who contribute invaluable moral and spiritual assets to the commonwealth of mankind should suffer for the ordinary creature comforts of life for themselves and their families." The Italian Methodist Church in Astoria was said to be a model church with a seven-day program, raising three hundred per cent more for all purposes than four years ago. Bayside had dedicated a new parish house this year costing \$18,000, and had a good year. Corner Stone Temple had come to the end of a successful twelve-year pastorate under the leadership of Dudley Osterheld, during which the membership had doubled. Centreport, Cold Spring Harbor, Corona, Commack, East Northport and other churches were prospering.

Coram has a new parish hall, Cutchogue is going forward steadily; Elmhurst is having the largest congregations in its history, with a greatly enlarged edifice, a new pipe organ, and every organization of the church working efficiently. Embury is prosperous; East Norwich has a new pipe organ and increased congregations. Flushing is prosperous. Floral Park and "that daughter of Zion," Jamaica Square, "continue to possess the land." Glen Cove had added eighty-five members and increased the preacher's salary \$500. Great Neck is finishing improvements to its property. Greenport, following the visitation evangelism plan, has increased membership. Farmingdale, Hollis, Hauppauge, Hicksville, Huntington have had a good year, the last named increasing the pastor's salary \$300. Hempstead is enjoying an increase of one hundred Sunday school memberships and has increased its pastor's salary \$500. The new Temple in Jamaica is one of the finest structures in the conference, and it has added more than one hundred to its membership. Jackson Heights has a great field and a great future. F. P. Corson has added to its membership during the year and expended \$63,000 in property interests. John Street—mother church—now has a seven-day program, and F. B. Upham is strengthening this historic shrine in its every-day ministry. Knickerbocker Avenue has had a great year under Otto Brand, one of his weekly meetings being called "Happy Fridays" for public school children, more than one hundred of whom are enrolled. Kings Park has made many improvements in church and parsonage, and Lake Grove is building a new parsonage. Maspeth, Oyster Bay, and Port Jefferson make good reports. Northport has new improvements, including a church heating plant costing \$6,000. Orient has made progress, and Ozone Park has new leadership, with a salaried boys' work director, girls' work director and a church secretary, some of the results being an increase in church attendance of seventy per cent, Sunday school and young people's work greatly advanced, and the church social room filled four nights a week with young people under trained leadership. The membership of the Port Washington Church has doubled in five years. Richmond Hill is prosperous. Riverhead is prosperous. Roslyn Heights has dedicated a new \$60,000 church. Sea Cliff enters the fifteenth year of L. K. Moore's pastorate. Setauket has made material improvements. Stony Brook and Saint James has expended over \$6,000 in improvements to church and parsonage—the seemingly impossible—and E. O. Pritchett, the pastor, is beloved. Smittown has made needed improvements; Saint John's, Seasingtown, South Third Street, Union, Van Alst Avenue, White-stone, Westbury, and Woodbury have been cared for faithfully by those in charge. Union Course, First Church, has added eighty to membership, and Simpson stands forth, leading the conference in benevolent gifts, with a total budget of over \$48,000, increased membership of seventy, and has added \$500 to its pastor's salary. The Ladies' Aid Societies of the district have raised a total of \$48,960 during the year, and sixteen young men of the district are in educational institutions studying for the ministry. Two ministers died during the year, John H. Hammond, a member of the Georgia Conference, serving as supply at Central Islip, December 11, 1923, and Frederick Gunton, a local preacher, pastor at Glendale Church for twenty-five years; and two leading laymen, William B. Codling of Northport, and George M. Vail of Riverhead, have passed away.

A. S. Kavanagh, superintendent of the South Brooklyn District, prefaced his report by an exhortation to more spiritual impulse and less materialism in the church—a return to the religious zeal of the earlier church. As to the practical work of the year, he said that Janes Church, which was entertaining the con-



ference, had spent \$8,000 in improvements and raised \$18,000 for benevolent purposes, the largest achievement of the kind in the history of the church. At West Hampton, beach improvements amounting to \$6,000 had been made. At East Quogue and Hampton Bays improvements have been made, and at Southampton a note for \$1,300 had been paid. The East Moriches Church had been made more attractive. At Babylon, a \$5,000 pipe organ had replaced a time-honored instrument. The old church at Lynbrook had been removed to the back of the lot to make a place for a new structure. At Lawrence, \$1,200 had been spent in repairs. At Seaforth, \$12,000 had been spent in making a new church of the old. Mrs. Elizabeth Barnier Shaw gave handsome pews and a new organ in memory of her husband, recently deceased. The church was dedicated by Bishop Wilson, assisted by Theodore Bennett, pastor; W. A. Layton, district superintendent, and visiting ministers. Woodmere was reported as mastering its debt. At Vanderve Park, \$25,000 had been pledged toward a new Sunday school room. Wesley, assisted by the Brooklyn and Long Island Church Society, had spent \$6,000. Fenimore Street had spent \$1,000 in improvements, much of the work having been done by volunteers. Sunset Park had erected a \$10,000 parsonage. Rockville Centre is reducing its debt. Bethel Ship made improvements costing \$6,000. Sheepshead Bay has improved its property. Valley Stream, Bellmore, First Church, Richmond Hill, and Freeport reports showed progress in various directions, the last named having spent \$15,000, and is enjoying a new membership of one hundred and fifty. One of the most important undertakings of the year was that of St. Mark's Church, which had planned to build a Community House and the old Flatlands property, where there had been for years a struggling society, was believed there was a great opportunity for such an enterprise.

"The unselfish spirit of St. Mark's," says Mr. Kavanagh, "is suggestive of similar devotion at many points on the District. At Warren Street on Tuesdays, a Happy Hour for children under eight years is held, and the Happy Hour means all the afternoon. Friday afternoon and evening Girl Scouts meet. Saturday afternoon Bible Craft for girls and boys over fourteen and the Home Department numbers 190. \* \* \* The good done by the various Home Departments of the Sunday Schools on the District is not easily measured. Thousands of women, largely deprived of church, Sunday School or social life, are visited regularly by the devoted women who conduct these Departments. More and more our Sunday Schools are developing this work. Some of our schools report large departments. Richmond Hill numbers 75 members; Baldwin, 125; Hanson Place, 125; Bethe Ship, 200; Rockville Centre, 225; Nostrand-DeKalb, 234, and Patchogue, 254. The total membership of the district is 2,229."

The Spanish Methodist Episcopal Church in Brooklyn reflects credit, first upon the Old First Church, and second, upon its pastor, W. M. Nesbit. Mr. Kavanagh reports, as it had a struggling beginning. Mr. Nesbit found a Spanish pastor, A. B. Baez. The church now has two hundred and fifty members and adherents, natives of various countries—one hundred and twenty full members and fifty probationers. They are doing much toward the support of the church, last year contributing \$1,500. At Sag Harbor, a musical union has been organized and frequently gives mid-week "sings"; East Moriches reports a church night with various classes, and boys' and girls' clubs; West Hampton Beach has a Monday night training class for young people led by the pastor; Bellport has a social evening weekly; Valley Stream has special educational classes and a community service; Wesley has a week-day Bible school; Fourth Avenue has a daily vacation Bible school; Hanson Place has a special program of work which tries to make a place for every one willing to work. Salaries of pastors have been increased in the district generally, these being reported: Fenimore Street, \$250; Fourth Avenue, \$500; Goodsell, \$500; Greenport, \$400; Sheepshead Bay, \$250; Wesley, \$200; First, Amityville, \$200; Babylon, \$250; Bayport,

\$600; Bellport, \$700; Brookhaven, \$400; Centre Moriches, a few years ago paying \$800, now pays \$1,800. East Hampton, East Quogue, Lawrence, Lynbrook and Patchogue also made increases, and New York Avenue makes an annual gift of \$500 to its pastor. The Old People's Home and the Deaconess Home, in this district, are prosperous, and a new maternity building at the hospital has been dedicated. The Deaconess Home has been renovated through the generosity of Charles L. Briggs. The pastor of Prospect Avenue, W. M. Hughes, has a striking habit as to records relating to his church during his pastorates. These are written in a book, and the history he presents to the official board of the church which he leaves for another.

#### Men of the Methodist Faith \*

The Rev. Henry Willis was presiding elder and pastor during 1778. He was one of the brilliant early Methodist preachers. Thomas Morrell was another interesting figure. He was a schoolmate and lifelong friend of Lindley Murray, the grammarian. Morrell formed a company of volunteers at the outbreak of the Revolution, and was severely wounded in the Battle of Long Island. He was converted at the age of thirty-eight, and abandoned a lucrative business to preach. Another old Sands Street preacher was Robert Cloud, also a Revolutionary soldier. He was converted in uniform, and was a powerful preacher.

The Rev. Dr. William Phoebus (Brooklyn, 1789) labored in Brooklyn and vicinity longer than most of the early itinerants. He maintained a successful practice in New York as a physician when not preaching. While supernumerary, in 1794, he laid the cornerstone of the original Sands Street Church.

Just before the Brooklyn society was annexed to the Long Island circuit, the Rev. Jacob Brush was employed as a preacher in New York and Brooklyn, and later he had supervision of the district, about 1793.

The Rev. Aaron Hunt, another early preacher, was a lad during the Revolution. He "was surrounded in youth by wicked associates," but was prominent as a preacher, after conversion, through a long ministry of sixty-eight years. He introduced the custom of inviting penitents to come forward and kneel at the altar.

Among "the most memorable men of early Methodism" was the Rev. Benjamin Abbott, whose parents died when he was quite young, and "he grew up in great wickedness, drinking, fighting, swearing and gambling." The record says: "In his thirty-second year he dreamed an awful dream about hell, and from that time till he was forty years of age he was troubled at intervals on account of his sins." "Soon after his conversion he began to preach at Hell Neck and other God-forsaken places, and gathered around him his astonished comrades who had been the witness of his bloody fights and foul profanity." He met with great opposition from enemies of the truth. At Trenton a false alarm of fire was given to draw the people away from his meeting. He was surrounded by mobs, but he awed them by his courage. He was "a flaming evangelist," and was on the Long Island circuit with William Phoebus in 1791.

Soon after the Revolutionary War, the Rev. John Ragan came from Ireland and joined the Methodist itinerant ministry. He was on the Long Island circuit in 1792.

The Rev. Joseph Totten was born in Hempstead, Queens County, February 4, 1759. In the same township within seven years were born Albert Van Nostrand,

---

\* By the Rev. Edwin Warriner.



Joseph Totten and probably Jacob Brush, all to become prominent among the pioneer Methodist preachers in their native island home.

"Brooklyn never rejoiced in a Methodist pastor of greater talent and popularity than the Rev. Ezekiel Cooper," says the "History of the Old Sands Street Church." As a boy he was deeply impressed by a sermon by Freeborn Garretson, and himself became a preacher before his majority. He was in Brooklyn in 1794. Associated with him that year was the Rev. Lawrence McCombs, who held a high place as an orator, and was prominent in church councils.

The Rev. George Roberts, M.D. (1795), in youth read by firelight, as his parents, small farmers in Easton, Pa., were too poor to afford candles. He first preached when about nineteen, his youth and unpretending appearance attracting attention. His dress was poor, and his old wool hat was patched with white thread. He married twice and had a large family that he found it difficult to support. During his labors in New England "he never received more than forty dollars per annum from any source," and never had but one suit of clothes at a time. He studied medicine at intervals and practiced it as he could. His second wife, Susannah Morrell LePage, born at Albany, N. Y., was an intimate friend of Bishop Asbury, whom she often entertained at her home, "and for whom she performed many kind offices. On one occasion, after she had washed his feet, the venerable bishop said: "Susan, many daughters have done virtuously, but thou excellest them all." George and Susannah Roberts were the parents of eleven children.

The Rev. Sylvester Hutchinson (1794-9), the third of four brothers, all of whom became Methodist preachers, was described as "a thundering preacher."

The Rev. Andrew Nichols was a Methodist pastor in Brooklyn in 1798.

The Rev. Cyrus Stebbins, D.D., was in Brooklyn in 1799 and again in 1805. He finally became an Episcopalian.

The Rev. David Buck preached a sermon in 1794 on the foundation of the original Sands Street Church before the building was completed. He afterwards spent two of the nine years of his itinerant ministry as pastor of this church. He was born in Freehold, N. J., September 12, 1771. "His father and mother were devoted Methodists, as well as ardent patriots in the Revolution. So decided were they in favor of American independence, and so confident of its final success, that they exchanged all the gold and silver money they had for continental money in bills, and buried it in jars in their cellar." David married and settled in Hempstead Harbor (later Roslyn), and in company with his father-in-law, William Ballantine, and his brother-in-law, bought the paper-mill property, including "the old mill," in which Bishop Asbury preached, and which served as a preaching place for many years. His house was the stopping place for all the Methodist preachers on the Jamaica circuit.

The Rev. Peter Jayne was appointed to Brooklyn as the successor of David Buck (1802). Although deaf, he made himself "eminently acceptable." The Rev. Ezekiel Canfield succeeded Peter Jayne in Brooklyn in 1803.

Sands Street Church numbered among her early pastors and presiding elders none more energetic and efficient than the Rev. William Thacher. The chief event of his ministry in Brooklyn was the erection of the "Old White Church." When he started out to preach (this before his Brooklyn pastorate) he paid \$30 for a horse and bought a second-hand saddle, bridle and portmanteau. He left home with less than a dollar in his pocket, and his wife was nearly destitute. She and their child boarded with her father at \$1 a week for both, and he was allowed but \$128 salary.



The Rev. Samuel Merwin succeeded Ezekiel Cooper in Brooklyn in 1805. "As a preacher he was energetic, impressive, a model of correctness, power and majesty, possessing a voice of great compass and uncommon melody." In 1807 he married the widow of his friend and colleague, Peter Jayne.

Under the labors of the Rev. Samuel Thomas with Ezekiel Cooper, the Sands Street Church was "blessed with a remarkable revival" in 1806.

The Rev. Oliver Sykes was pastor in 1806. "He is remembered by the older preachers as a confirmed old bachelor, a tall man, a great pedestrian, almost invariably seen with an umbrella, rarely taking notice of children, opposed to instrumental music, remarkably gifted in prayer, fond of discoursing on the resurrection, seldom looking his congregation in the face, and often stealing away after service without speaking to anyone."

The Rev. Joseph Crawford was presiding elder of the New York district and later was appointed pastor of the Sands Street Church (1816-17). His career was suddenly closed in 1820 by his exclusion from the ministry and the church, "on account of certain irregularities."

The Rev. Elijah Woolsey was pastor of Sands Street in 1807. He was a singer, and like many of the early preachers delighted in "China" and other old-fashioned minor tunes.

The Rev. John Wilson was in Brooklyn with Elijah Woolsey in 1807. In scholarship he ranked with the foremost of the preachers.

The Rev. Daniel Ostrander, "that shrewd and far-seeing Methodist statesman," was pastor in 1808. He is classed among the founders of Methodism in New England, and was described as "more aggressive than progressive—in fact, sternly conservative."

The Rev. Reuben Hubbard was pastor in 1809, but withdrew to enter the Episcopal Church.

The Rev. Thomas Drummond, pastor for part of 1813, and a pioneer in teaching the children, was expelled from the church. "The crime of adultery was the charge against him. On reliable authority it is stated that he ran away with the wife of a steward in his church, and did not return."

At the time when Sands Street Church comprised the whole of Brooklyn, it was for more than three years under the leadership of the Rev. Lewis Pease. The membership was nearly doubled under his administration, although he was in ill health. The Rev. Nathan Emery was pastor in 1815. He was described as "a loving companion, in labor, pious, laborious, a good preacher and a lover of Wesleyan Methodism."

The Rev. William Ross was pastor in 1818.

The Rev. Nathan Bangs, D.D., was pastor in 1846 and 1847. He was one of the distinguished figures of the sect, and received fifty consecutive annual appointments. Before his conversion

"he had prided himself on his fine personal appearance, and had dressed in the full fashion of the times, with ruffled shirt and long hair in a cue. He now ordered his laundress to take off his ruffles and his long hair shared the same fate, not, however, without the remonstrance of his pious sister, who deemed his rigor unnecessary, and admired his young but manly form with a sister's pride."

He had been a surveyor, but disposed of his instruments, bought a horse and saddle bags, and "rode forth to sound the alarm in the wilderness." He traveled long circuits, sleeping on the floors of log cabins or in the woods, fording streams, sometimes at the peril of his life, preaching almost daily, sometimes assailed by mobs of the ignorant, and suffering all the rigors of such a life. He seldom received fifty dollars a year during these extreme labors and sufferings. One



example of his zeal and endurance was furnished by his ride on horseback from New York to Detroit. He was the first clerical editor of "The Christian Advocate," and the first editor of the "Quarterly Review." He is styled "the founder of the American literature of Methodism."

The Rev. Alexander McCaine (1819-20), one of the foremost for lay representation in the church; the Rev. Peter P. Sandford, D.D., the Rev. Henry Chase, A.M., the Rev. Laban Clark, D.D., were successive figures in Brooklyn, and the Rev. Mitchell B. Bull is in the Sands Street record of 1824, 1854-55. The Rev. Thomas Burch (1825-26, 1833), had a remarkable career. He was one of the ninety chosen men of American Methodism who composed the first delegated general conference in 1812. The memory of the Rev. Samuel Luckey, D.D., is cherished in the history of the church. He was stationed in Brooklyn in 1827. In 1847 he was elected a regent of the State University, being the first clergyman to hold office in the State under the amended Constitution making them eligible to that honor. The Rev. Seymour Kandon (1851-54), was noted for his revivals; the Rev. Noah Levings, D.D., (1829-30) was noted for his great fluency and his success as a preacher; the Rev. James Covell, Jr., A.M., (1829-30) was a "clear, concise, strong and impressive though not a 'splendid' preacher"; the Rev. John Christian Green (1831), was charged before the conference in 1826 "with the intemperate use of ardent spirits, but on examination was acquitted," but was later suspended for permitting John Newland Maffit to preach in his pulpit, whose authority as a preacher was disputed, and Green later withdrew from the sect and became a "Congregational Methodist"; but he died soon afterward.

Nearly all the later clergymen of the Sands Street Church were exceptional men. The Rev. John Cranwill Tackerberry (1832) was called "a walking concordance," it being affirmed that he knew the New Testament by heart; the Rev. John Kennaday, D.D. (1833-34), "a model pastor," was stricken with apoplexy while preaching in the Washington Street Methodist Church, Brooklyn, and died soon afterward; the Rev. John Luckey (1833-34), brother to Samuel, organized the Flushing circuit in 1834, and was distinguished for his work among prisoners, being called to the chaplaincy of Sing Sing in 1855; the Rev. Bartholomew Creagh (1835-36), born to wealth and intended for the law, became a fervid and impassioned preacher; the Rev. William H. Norris (1839-41), was "a faithful servant of the church"; the Rev. Fitch Reed, D.D. (1839), abandoned study for the medical profession to enter the ministry, and was noted for his scholarly attainments and as an instructive and persuasive preacher; the Rev. Stephen Martindale (1840-43), was presiding elder of the district upon its separation from the New York district, and was noted as a revivalist; the Rev. Peter Cannon Oakley (1840-41), "traveled and preached fifty years without losing six months during the period"; the Rev. Leonard H. Vincent (1842-43), in 1844 brought the membership of the Sands Street Church up to six hundred and sixty-four, its largest up to that time; the Rev. John J. Matthias was presiding elder of the Long Island district (1844-47), and the record says he "was a high-minded, intelligent and honorable man of refined taste, delicate feeling and affable manners"; the Rev. John Bocking Merwin, D.D. (1847), was the only one among the Sands Street pastors whose father was pastor there before him; the Rev. John Wesley Bond Wood (1850-51), after years as a sailor, although he had started studies for the medical profession, became a powerful preacher and very effective with sailors and men in prison; the Rev. Henry J. Fox, D.D. (1851-53), was noted as a writer and lecturer as well as a preacher; the Rev. Levi S. Weed, D.D. (1854-55, 1861-63), was one of the chief speakers at the great centenary

celebration of the two New York Conferences in 1866, and was a famous preacher; the Rev. Buel Goodsell (1855-58), was a preacher of marked ability, and a successful revivalist; the Rev. John Miley, D.D., LL.D. (1856-57), was the author of "Class Meetings" and "The Atonement in Christ," and wrote extensively for periodicals; the Rev. Wilbur F. Watkins, D.S. (1858), before coming to the Sands Street Church, pursued his ministerial career as a junior supply in the mountains of Pennsylvania, riding horseback with saddle bags, after the fashion of the fathers, and was famous as a "boy preacher," but he finally became an Episcopalian; the Rev. John Bishop Hagany, D.D. (1858-59), was effective as a preacher and influential with the best in the church; the Rev. Bernard H. Nadal, D.D. (1860-61), when a youth, was apprenticed to a saddlemaker, and when he came to travel his first circuit he made his own saddle, and his personal friendship with President Lincoln distinguished him, as well as his position as a professor in Drew Theological Seminary; the Rev. Daniel Curry, D.D., LL.D., was presiding elder of the Long Island district in 1864, and was the author of many works of note, as well as editor of the "Methodist Review"; the Rev. Charles Fletcher was preacher in the Sands Street Church in 1864-66, and presiding elder of the Long Island district (South) in 1872-75, and a very noted Methodist.

Later pastors of the Sands Street Church and in Brooklyn were: Bishop Edward G. Andrews, D.D., LL.D., the Rev. E. E. Griswold, D.D., the Rev. and Hon. Gilbert De La Mater, D.D., the Rev. George Frederick Kettell, D.D., the Rev. F. P. Tower, M.A., the Rev. George Taylor, the Rev. John Storry Breckenridge, A.M., and others down the years to those of present memory and knowledge, the complete personal history of the pastors including many great men of Methodism.

The laity of the church was notable.

"The noble rank and achievements of Methodism in Brooklyn and the past and present prosperity of the city may be largely attributed to the agency of the early members of the old Sands Street Church. They were people of sterling character and unusually influential position, taking the lead in every important moral, social, educational and financial enterprise at its beginning and for many years thereafter."

The names of the Garrisons, the Mosers, the Van Pelts, the Strykers, the Kirks, the Harpers, the Merceins, the Snows, the Herberts, the Dikemans, the Odells, and others, bear out this declaration in the "History of the Old Sands Street Church."

St. John's Church was organized when Williamsburgh had these churches: South Second Street Methodist Church; South Third Street Methodist Church; St. Mark's Episcopal Church; North Fifth Street Methodist Church; South Third Street Presbyterian and Gothic Church.

The South Second Methodist Episcopal Church was its mother church. It had a wonderful history and from it was organized the church afterwards located on South Fifth Street between Fourth and Fifth Streets (Driggs Avenue).

The corporate name and title of the body worshipping in St. John's Church is "The Trustees of the Third Methodist Episcopal Church of Williamsburgh, Long Island." The society became legally incorporated May 29, 1849. The corporate name then given has never been changed. The name "St. John's Church" was given to the edifice on Bedford Avenue on November 16, 1866, during the course of construction.

In November, 1848, a meeting was held in the parsonage of the First Methodist Episcopal Church, on South Second Street, for the purpose of con-



sidering the necessity of procuring ground on the south side of the village for the erection of a new Methodist Episcopal Church. At this meeting Brothers Janes, Sparkman, Smith, Higgins, Briggs, Morgan, Cox, Potter, and Wade were present. The first three were appointed a committee to ascertain "where lots can be had and at what price."

On March 19, 1849, a meeting of members was held in the basement of the First Church, and it was resolved that the meeting deem it expedient to organize a society with a view of building a third Methodist Episcopal Church. The committee was requested to report their further proceedings to the new society when organized and also report their views of the kind of church, "whether it should be free or pewed." At a meeting held March 24th the committee was authorized to purchase the four lots of ground, corner of South Fifth and Fifth Streets (now Driggs Avenue) at a price not exceeding \$4,200. Between March 24th and 31st a contract for the purchase of the lots was made for \$4,300; \$1,300 in cash, the balance to remain on bond and mortgage. The action of the committee was ratified on March 31st. Then began a campaign to raise funds.

On May 6, 1849, a meeting was held, the minutes of which state that in consequence of the crowded condition of the First Methodist Episcopal Church and its incapacity to accommodate all who wished to attend Methodist preaching, the individuals whose names are annexed resolved to form a new church. A meeting was held in the lecture room of the Reformed Dutch Church for the purpose of organizing, which was addressed by the presiding elder, the Rev. Laban Clark. Thirty-nine persons attended, who voted in the affirmative "to be formed into a separate and distinct society." Thereupon they were pronounced a new organization and placed by the presiding elder under the pastoral charge of the Rev. E. L. Janes, pastor of the First Methodist Episcopal Church, until the next meeting of the Annual Conference. A further meeting was called for May 24, 1849, to elect trustees for the new church. On Thursday evening, May 24, 1849, nine trustees were elected for the "Third Methodist Episcopal Church," as follows: James D. Sparkman, Nathaniel Briggs, Sidney Wade, Thomas Lewis, William T. Hemmingway, Gilbert Potter, Jr., William Morgan, George W. Smith, and George D. Hubbard. This election took place at a meeting of the "male members" held in the stated place of worship, pursuant to a regular notice from the pulpit. The corporate name of the society was decided to be the Third Methodist Episcopal Church. On May 29, 1849, the board organized with J. D. Sparkman, President; Nathaniel Briggs, Treasurer; William Morgan, Secretary. At this meeting the inspectors of election, Bros. Disbrow and Elliott, reported having finished the business entrusted to their charge and of having left the papers at the County Clerk's office to be recorded according to law.

A certificate of incorporation was filed on May 29, 1849, (under the Act of the Legislature passed April 5, 1813), in the office of the County Clerk of Kings County, recorded in Liber 1 of Religious Incorporations at pages 102 and 103, in which it is stated "the said trustees and their successors shall be called by the name and title of 'The Trustees of the Third Methodist Episcopal Church of Williamsburgh, Long Island.'" The erection of the edifice began, but on October 7, 1849, a severe storm swept over the village and destroyed the walls. The edifice was finished, however, and dedicated on July 25, 1850, by Bishop Morris.

The following stewards were appointed by the Quarterly Conference held

August 31, 1849: Gilbert Potter, Sylvester Tuttle, Samuel W. Truslow, John J. Hebard and John H. Elliott.

The first report of the Treasurer, rendered December 19, 1850, show total receipts of \$26,940.60, and expenditures for land, building, furnishings, etc., \$26,479.37 with a balance on hand of \$461.25. The contract price for building the church was \$10,900.

At a meeting held June 6, 1865, a resolution was passed to the effect that it was expedient to sell the church property on South Fifth Street, with a view to purchasing a more eligible site, and erecting suitable buildings. Brothers Gillespie, Tuttle and Morgan were appointed a committee to carry the resolution into effect. On June 15, 1865, a committee was authorized to sell the church property on South Fifth Street for \$20,000, exclusive of the furniture.

On September 12, 1866, the building committee submitted an estimate of \$135,760, \$15,000 of which was the estimated cost of the land, for building the new church on Bedford Avenue and Wilson Street. Sylvester Tuttle offered a resolution which was unanimously adopted, authorizing the trustees to purchase the land, one hundred feet on Bedford Avenue and one hundred and seventy feet on Wilson Street. A building committee was appointed consisting of Samuel W. Truslow, Sylvester Tuttle, Tunis Q. Holcomb, Gilbert Potter and Joseph F. Knapp.

A committee also was appointed to obtain subscriptions to the fund for building the church and a depository designated where such funds should be kept. Several contracts for the work were approved on October 2, 1866. The architect employed was Rembrandt Lockwood. The land was purchased for \$14,007.44.

On Sunday evening, November 18, 1866, a special meeting of the board of trustees passed this resolution:

"Resolved, That the new edifice now in course of erection on Bedford Avenue by the Third M. E. Church, be designated as St. John's Methodist Episcopal Church." There was no change in the corporate name of the society.

The work of building the new edifice was pushed with vigor, and on November 22, 1866, the cornerstone was laid. Bishop Janes delivered the address. At its close he advanced, and in a few moments enjoyed the honor of having placed the cornerstone of St. John's Church.

On March 14, 1868, the board of trustees met for the first time in the Chapel of the new church on Bedford Avenue, at which a sale of the South Fifth Street property, including the parsonage, was authorized for \$22,000, to the Central Church.

#### St. John's Pastors

Rev. Edward G. Andrews, D.D.....	1868-1871
Rev. J. A. M. Chapman, D.D.....	1871-1874
Rev. Henry W. Warren, D.D.....	1874-1877
Rev. J. Oramel Peck, D.D.....	1877-1879
Rev. Henry W. Warren.....	1879-1881
Rev. William V. Kelley, D.D.....	1881-1884
Rev. Watson L. Phillips, D.D.....	1884-1887
Rev. William V. Kelley, D.D.....	1887-1892
Rev. John Wesley Johnston, D.D.....	1892-1897
Rev. David G. Downey, D.D.....	1897-1907



Rev. Claude H. Priddy.....	1907-1910
Rev. Robert M. Moore, D.D.....	1910-1916
Rev. Walter E. Thompson, D.D.....	1916

The pastor serving the church the greatest number of years was the Rev. Dr. David G. Downey, 1897 to 1907. He was subsequently elected Book Editor of the Methodist Book Concern. During his pastorate \$10,050 was subscribed for the purpose of redecorating the church and installing a system of electric lighting. Through appeals made by him a number of memorial windows were placed in the church, which added considerably to its beauty as a place of worship.

The Endowment Funds Are:

On bond and mortgage.....	\$5,000.00
In savings banks or Endowment Fund.....	2,384.00
For Sunday School Endowment Fund.....	2,842.00
Fresh Air Fund.....	4,000.00
Parish Relief .....	2,306.00

For the support of St. John's Church and for benevolence there have been received in fifty years the sum of \$1,022,049 (estimated).

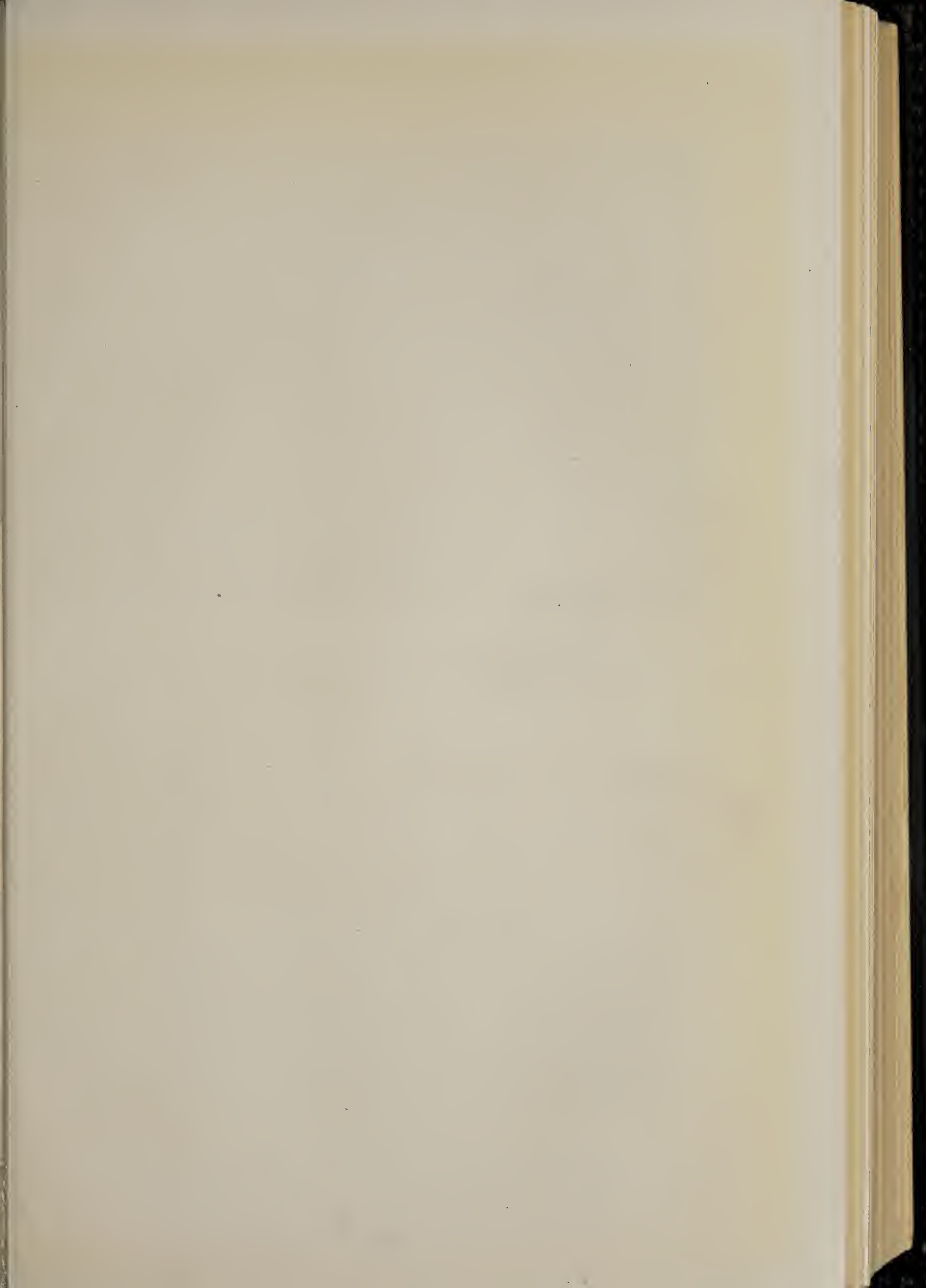
St. John's is designed in the richest style of decorated Gothic of the thirteenth century. The front is of Bellville brown freestone, built on a base of bluestone in a solid and enduring manner. On the front are two noble towers, one of them surmounted by a lofty spire reaching up one hundred and eighty feet. The main audience room contains one hundred and forty pews on the floor and fifty-two in the gallery, and seats 1,152 persons.

The Sabbath school room is reached by two flights of stairs. The room is forty-eight feet wide by ninety-six feet long, including the infant class room, which is twenty-three feet. The seating for the children is of the most approved plan.

On the first Sabbath after the dedication Dr. C. H. Payne preached in the morning and Dr. E. G. Andrews in the evening.

Responsible for the success of the church are: Dr. Charles H. Payne; Sylvester Tuttle, for securing a desirable location; Samuel W. Truslow and Joseph F. Knapp; Gilbert Potter, who for twenty years was President of the Board of Trustees; George W. Hubbard, who acted as trustee of the building fund, as well as of the church; the Ladies' Aid Society, for the hard work and wonderful ability displayed in raising \$10,000 for furnishing the church; Bishop E. G. Andrews, who constantly urged upon the people the importance of paying the floating debt of \$50,000, which was raised by subscription on June 30, 1869; Dr. W. L. Phillips, who raised by subscription \$10,000 to be applied on the bond, originally \$50,000, but had been reduced by the Ladies' Aid Society; Dr. William V. Kelley, assisted by Dr. C. H. Payne, who raised by subscription the balance necessary to pay the bonded debt.

Many men of prominence with their families have at one time or another made St. John's their church home, among them being Dr. W. L. Harris, Missionary Secretary, afterwards Bishop; Dr. E. O. Haven, afterwards elected Bishop; Dr. Wheedon, Editor of the Review, the Rev. G. G. Saxe, Dr. Elon Foster, Dr. J. A. Roche, Dr. De Puy, Associate Editor of the Christian Advocate; the Rev. Arthur B. Sanford, Assistant Editor of the Methodist Review for many years, and four agents of the Methodist Book Concern—Dr. E. S. Potter, Dr. Nelson, John M. Phillips and Dr. Sanford Hunt.







ST. PAUL'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH



TABERNACLE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH



The following facts will show that the sons have been walking in the footsteps of their fathers: The Rev. Bartholomew Creagh was one of the early members of the church. His son, Anthony H. Creagh, was secretary of the Board of Trustees, secretary and superintendent of the Sunday School. Thomas Truslow was for many years a trustee of the old Forsythe Street M. E. Church. His son, James L. Truslow, was a trustee of the church while located on South Fifth Street; another son, John Truslow, was superintendent of the Sunday School; David L. Youngs was a trustee of the old church, and another son was trustee of St. Johns. Sylvester Tuttle was appointed a steward at the Quarterly Conference of the old church and elected a trustee in 1862, and held office until his death in 1874. His son Ezra B. Tuttle was appointed steward at the close of the first pastoral term of St. John's, elected trustee in 1874, and served until his death, in 1914—a term of forty years. His son Winthrop M. Tuttle was appointed a steward and is now a trustee and assistant secretary in the Sunday School; another son, Frank Day Tuttle, was assistant librarian in the Sunday School for a number of years. George Mahon was superintendent of St. John's Sunday School and a trustee until his death in 1874; his son, George C. Mahon, was a trustee for a short time and resigned. George W. Swain was a steward and elected a trustee in 1877; his son, Henry Clay Swain, was elected to succeed his father and served until his removal elsewhere; another son, George W. Swain, Jr., was librarian of St. John's Sunday School. John M. Phillips was a trustee and treasurer of the board until his death in 1889; his son, John B. Phillips, has been treasurer since 1889. James P. Edwards was assistant superintendent from 1866 to 1869; his son, Harry M. Edwards, is now superintendent. David Harris Underhill was elected librarian in 1879, and still holds that office. His son, Stephen G. Underhill, has been his father's assistant for many years. William H. Newlan was appointed sexton in 1870, which position he held until his death in 1914. His son, T. A. Newlan, is now the sexton, having been appointed to succeed his father.

During the period from May 29, 1849, to May 1918, there have been seven presidents of the Board of Trustees, twelve secretaries, nine treasurers and sixty-two members. The present trustees are Francis W. Young, President Thomas W. McCormack, Secretary; John B. Phillips, Treasurer; Welding Ring, Frank L. Herrschaft, Winthrop M. Tuttle, Charles Foster, John M. Evans and George P. Foulk.

The stewards are Henry C. Ryon, President; George W. May, Harry M. Edwards, William G. Murphy, William C. Black, John M. Perrins, John Stumpf, Charles R. Conklin, Walter Douglas, John F. Meredith, Willard J. Gould, Harry Sniffen, C. B. Loe, Robert Ambler, George C. Henricks and Robert Knox. Benjamin F. Gerst, Local Preacher.

## CHAPTER XVII

### THE PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH IN BROOKLYN.\*

THE first church of the Presbyterian order to be founded in Brooklyn was organized March 10, 1822, by the Presbytery of New York, with ten charter members. It is today known as the First Presbyterian Church, having its sanctuary in Henry Street.

\* For earlier Presbyterian history see later pages.



In 1822 Brooklyn had 8,000 inhabitants and four churches. The Reformed Dutch Church in Joralemon Street, now the "Old First" in Seventh Avenue, was organized in 1660. St. Ann's Protestant Episcopal dated from 1784; the Old Sands Street Methodist Church was begun in 1794. The Catholics had bought land in Jay Street for their first church which was organized in 1822.

In the summer of 1821 the Brooklyn Sabbath Union had started, and it opened a Sunday school in the District schoolhouse on the southeast corner of Adams and Concord Streets. The First Presbyterian Church was an outgrowth of the school. Preaching began on November 18, 1821, and continued until the church was organized on March 10, 1822, by the Presbytery of New York, with ten members. The society was incorporated three days later. Ezra C. Woodhull, the leading spirit in the movement, bought a site in Cranberry Street, extending through to Orange Street, where Plymouth Church now stands. A brick edifice with a steeple one hundred and twenty feet high, was built, the basement divided into a lecture room and two Sunday school rooms—one for the boys and one for the girls. The tower was to contain a clock, which did not perform well, and the cost was to be \$12,000.

The building was dedicated on April 20, 1823, but two pastors declined the call. In October the Rev. Joseph Sanford was installed, a man of deep piety and frail physique. He was suffering already from a malady which carried him off at thirty-four. His wife died in the first year of his pastorate, and was buried in the vault beneath the church, where his own body was laid, but both were removed to the church lot in Greenwood in after years. When Mr. Sanford resigned in 1829 the church had three hundred and forty members.

The Rev. Daniel Lynn Carroll, of Litchfield, Conn., accepted a call and left the pulpit. Dr. Lyman Beecher had filled to come to Brooklyn. He was gifted as a musician, fond of art and things of beauty, and had social qualities of a high order. He resigned, owing to bad health, in 1835, after six years. But the church flourished steadily. In 1831 it voted to erect a Sunday school building at a cost of \$4,000.

It had become an important center of influence. When the Village Corporation appointed a day of humiliation and prayer because of the cholera plague raging in the neighborhood, it designated the First Church as the place of assembly. When the grant of the new city charter was celebrated in 1834, the First Church was the scene of the exercises. The first mayor elected by the people was Cyrus Porter Smith, a trustee of the First Church, the leader of its choir, and an active member.

Dr. Samuel Hanson Cox succeeded Dr. Carroll. He was professor of Sacred Rhetoric in Auburn Theological Seminary, a man of genius and one of the most interesting characters in the history of the American church. He dwelt in Hebrew, Greek and Latin as easily as in English. Erratic and polemic he was also learned and at times he could be most eloquent. Dr. Cox was an ecclesiastical leader and a protagonist of the New School. He came to Brooklyn in 1837, the year of the great schism which rent the Presbyterian Church. This was due in part to slavery, but also to differences over Liberty of Interpretation. Dr. Cox was mobbed by a pro-slavery crowd in New York. He fought the entire Old

School dogmatism which was trying to rule the Presbyterian Church. The feeling was bitter.

At the annual meeting of the Synod of New York held at Newburgh in October, 1838, Dr. Cox and an elder of his church were foremost in passing a resolution to separate the First Church from the Presbytery by constituting a new body to be called the Presbytery of Brooklyn. It was directed that this body should consist of the four Presbyterian churches in Brooklyn, the churches in Jamaica and Newtown and several ministers without charge. The Second Church in Brooklyn and the churches in Jamaica and Newtown refused to follow, but his own church voted to withdraw from the Presbytery of New York by a substantial majority. Some forty families refused to withdraw and the Presbytery of New York organized them into what is now the Spencer Memorial Church. In 1871, the old and the new branches were reunited.

Dr. Cox was a conspicuous figure in Brooklyn and the city authorities named Hanson Place after him, his middle name being Hanson. He had moved into the neighborhood and called it Rusurban, or as he explained, Rus in Urbe, the country in the city, for it was a rural region in those days.

During the pastorate of Dr. Cox the church grew rapidly until it had a membership of more than a thousand. A parsonage was built on Cranberry Street. In 1841, the trustees resolved to purchase one hundred lots in Greenwood Cemetery at \$40 each. Many of these were afterwards sold and the church retained only the present plot which has been used ever since and in which hundreds of bodies have been buried, among them Dr. and Mrs. Cox. In 1844, many of the members of this church withdrew to help in the organization of the Church of the Pilgrims. Later, others took letters to the new Plymouth Church. Finally, in 1846, the Cranberry Street property was sold to Mr. John Tasker Howard, who acted on behalf of the Plymouth Church enterprise. The sale price was \$20,000. Immediately thereafter the present site on Henry Street was bought for \$13,500, and the contract made for building the church. It will be of interest to note that for the mason work the price was \$9,295, for the carpentry work, \$7,050, for the heavy brown stone work, \$4,700; a total of \$21,045. The cornerstone was laid July 28, 1846, while Dr. Cox was in Europe. Directly below this cornerstone may be seen the cornerstone of the Cranberry Street Church bearing the date 1822. On June 6, 1847, this present edifice was dedicated—"a decent edifice," as Dr. Cox called it in his prayer at the time. A mortgage of \$20,000 was placed upon the property, but the debt was removed in 1849. The cost of the building and its equipment (organ, gas plant and furniture), was \$55,000. Dr. Cox's health gave out in 1854, and he resigned, going to live on a farm the congregation had given him near Owego, N. Y.

The Rev. William Hogarth became the pastor at \$3,000 salary, but the church membership fell off to seven hundred, and a debt of \$4,000 appeared. This was due no doubt in part to the great power of Mr. Beecher and the fact that Dr. Storrs in the Church of the Pilgrims was enjoying a large success. Dr. Hogarth went to the Jefferson Avenue Presbyterian Church in Detroit, where he was signally successful. Dr. Roswell D. Hitchcock, a noted professor in the Union Theological Seminary, supplied the pulpit for two years.

In 1860, the Rev. Charles S. Robinson of Troy became the pastor at a time when the membership had fallen to four hundred. But Dr. Robinson turned the tide in spite of feeble health. He was a noted compiler of hymn books and he persuaded the church to adopt two or three of them in rapid succession. After a trip to the Holy Land in 1864 he lectured on "The Land and the Book," to large



audiences. Owing to the severe climate he resigned in 1868 to become pastor of the American Chapel in Paris, where he remained through the Franco-Prussian War.

In 1861, Joseph Bishop became sexton of the church and continued in that post for more than half a century. He retired on a pension and died at ninety. In 1862, the Concord Street Chapel was adopted by the church and has flourished as the branch church. In 1867, the branch called its first pastor, the Rev. Dr. Charles Wood, who served until he retired in 1868.

The Rev. Dr. Norman Seaver of Rutland succeeded Dr. Robinson in 1868. He was the first pastor to occupy the manse, bought at the time for \$22,000. The reunion of the Old and New School churches occurred during his pastorate ending the great schism of 1837. Dr. Seaver was a man of artistic taste and scholarly habits, and while his sermons were fine he failed in the parish work. He practised the art of boxing as a form of exercise, and used to be found not infrequently in a near-by training school where one Saturday night he received a black eye and the next morning he went into the pulpit and preached from the text "I have fought a good fight."

At a time when the parish was not prosperous, Dr. Seaver proposed to amalgamate the church with what is now the Spencer Memorial at Remsen and Clinton Streets. A motion to adjourn was taken as soon as he finished, whereupon Dr. Seaver resigned and went to Syracuse.

Came the Rev. Charles Cuthbert Hall from Newburgh, a young man of twenty-six. His ministry began in 1877 and continued twenty years, the longest term in the pulpit up to that time. He found a membership of six hundred and thirty-six, which grew to one thousand four hundred before he resigned in 1897. A lover of music, Dr. Hall sought to enrich the praise service of the church. A new organ was installed and in 1888 the first of the art windows, the Gratitude window, at the right of the pulpit, was installed as the gift of two members to commemorate their silver wedding. The St. John window at the left of the pulpit was given in memory of Mr. and Mrs. Cyrus Porter Smith. Then came the Children's window, presented by Mr. and Mrs. Edwin Packard in loving remembrance of the children of the church. Opposite is the Sheldon Memorial window, given by Mr. and Mrs. Henry King Sheldon in memory of Mr. Sheldon's parents. The Hicks Memorial was the gift of Mrs. Albert Bierstadt. The jewelled glass window over the pulpit was given also by Mrs. Bierstadt.

In every department of activity Dr. Hall's fine touch was felt. The influence of the church was extended. The revenues increased to an unprecedented figure. In 1894, the Herriman Memorial Building, containing the upper and the lower conference rooms, were erected at a cost of \$6,500. In 1895, during the ministry of the Rev. Gaylord S. White at the branch, the present church edifice on Concord Street, was authorized, at an expense of about \$40,000. It was therefore with great sorrow to the congregation that Dr. Hall, in 1897, announced his decision to resign the pastorate and to assume the Presidency of Union Theological Seminary.

In the fall of 1897 the church extended a call to the Rev. L. Mason Clarke, pastor of the Park Central Presbyterian Church, Syracuse. He was installed December 8, 1897. Soon after, all indebtedness was removed from the church and ever since the church properties have been free and clear. In 1900, Mrs. Edward B. Hasbrouck was appointed parish assistant. The following year it was decided to start an endowment fund which now amounts to almost \$60,000. In addition to this, a special gift of \$100,000 was made to the church in 1911,

in memory of a former trustee, and is known as the W. V. R. Smith endowment. Four new windows were placed in the church. The first was the Barnes Memorial, given by General Alfred C. Barnes in memory of his wife. The next was the Taylor window, a memorial of friendship, contributed by a few friends of James R. Taylor, a trustee for forty-nine years. Then the Victory Window, in remembrance of Mr. and Mrs. Henry Ide, a gift of their children and grandchildren. The last window, erected in 1922, was in memory of Colonel and Mrs. Willis L. Ogden.

A new study building was given by Theodore E. Smith, in memory of his brother, Bryan H. Smith, a member of the church sixty-two years. In 1920, the carved teak doors and portal of the church were presented by Mr. and Mrs. Frank C. Munson, in memory of Henry R. Mallory. Also additions were made for the communion table, in memory of the first soldier who died in the World War, Holmes Mallory. The soldiers' tablet was placed in the vestibule.

The new lights were a gift in remembrance of Mr. and Mrs. Edwin Packard, presented by their children. The organ was strengthened and sweetened by additions made by the family of William Leslie Van Sinderen in his memory.

At the branch on Concord Street, the Sheldon Memorial organ was given in memory of Henry K. Sheldon. The mural painting at the back of the pulpit and the redecoration of the building were the gift of Frederick B. Pratt.

Dr. Clarke was born September 9, 1859, in Canandaigua, New York, where his father, Dr. Noah T. Clarke, was for many years principal of the well-known Canandaigua Academy. Receiving his early education at the academy, he entered Amherst College in 1877, and graduated there in 1880. After two years' teaching at the Canandaigua Academy, he entered Auburn Theological Seminary, and graduated therefrom in 1885. In the same year he was married to Miss Maude Fowler, of Grand Rapids, Michigan, thus beginning a new phase of his education, as he expressed it.

While in his senior year at Auburn, he accepted a call to the First Presbyterian Church of Wolcott, New York, and began his pastorate there, being ordained and installed June 2, 1885. Receiving a call from the Park Central Church of Syracuse, he resigned at Wolcott, and was installed by the Presbytery of Syracuse May 16, 1889.

In the city and community, his influence has extended in ever widening circles. He has served, for example, as president of the Council of Associate Members of the Brooklyn Institute, from 1904 to 1909; as a member of the New York Board of Home Missions, from 1900 to 1905; as director of the Long Island Historical Society; a trustee of Amherst College, of Union Theological Seminary, of the Packer Collegiate Institute.

In literary activity outside the pulpit, Dr. Clarke wrote forty or more publications. It was characteristic that these never were put on sale, but were liberally distributed on request as long as the editions lasted.

In his letter of December 30, 1917, Dr. Clarke expressed his great satisfaction in the fact that his pastorate had then in length of service surpassed that of any of his predecessors. At the Centenary of the church in 1922, it had gained almost 1,800 new members under his pastorate.

There was no other Presbyterian church in Brooklyn until 1837, when the Second Church, now the Spencer Memorial Presbyterian Church, at Clinton and Remsen Streets, was organized by the Presbytery of New York. It has had among its pastors such men as the Rev. Dr. Melancthon Jacobus, who left Brooklyn to become a professor in the Western Theological Seminary at



Allegheny, Pa.; the Rev. Dr. Henry J. van Dyke, father of the Rev. Dr. Henry van Dyke, author, and envoy to Holland in the war period; the Rev. Dr. John Fox, afterward secretary of the American Bible Society; the Rev. Dr. Alexander McGaffin, afterwards of Cleveland; the Rev. Louis Van Den Burg, who went to Paterson, N. J.; the Rev. W. H. Henderson who was killed by an automobile; and the Rev. Dr. J. O. Buswell, who died after a pastorate of three months.

**The Lafayette Avenue Church** grew from an organization effected in 1857, and known as the Park Presbyterian Church. The place of worship was then at Clermont and De Kalb Avenues. Among its early ministers was the Rev. Dr. Roswell Dwight Hitchcock, then professor in Union Theological Seminary. In 1860, the Rev. Dr. Theodore Ledyard Cuyler was called from the Market Street Reformed Dutch Church, Manhattan, and laid the foundation of the church that now is. The present edifice was dedicated March 16, 1862, the United States flag flying from its tower on the day of its dedication and thereafter until the close of the war. Many great patriotic and reform meetings were held in the church, notably in the interest of temperance, Dr. Cuyler being one of the three founders of the National Temperance Society in which the church has always taken helpful interest.

Dr. Cuyler's pastorate continued until 1890, when he resigned to give himself to the pastorate at large of the Christian Church throughout America. He was still in the vigor of life, and as pastor emeritus of the church, he lived in Brooklyn for more than ten years. The demand for his services from other churches increased and the call for his writings was intensified. His eightieth birthday was celebrated on January 10, 1902.

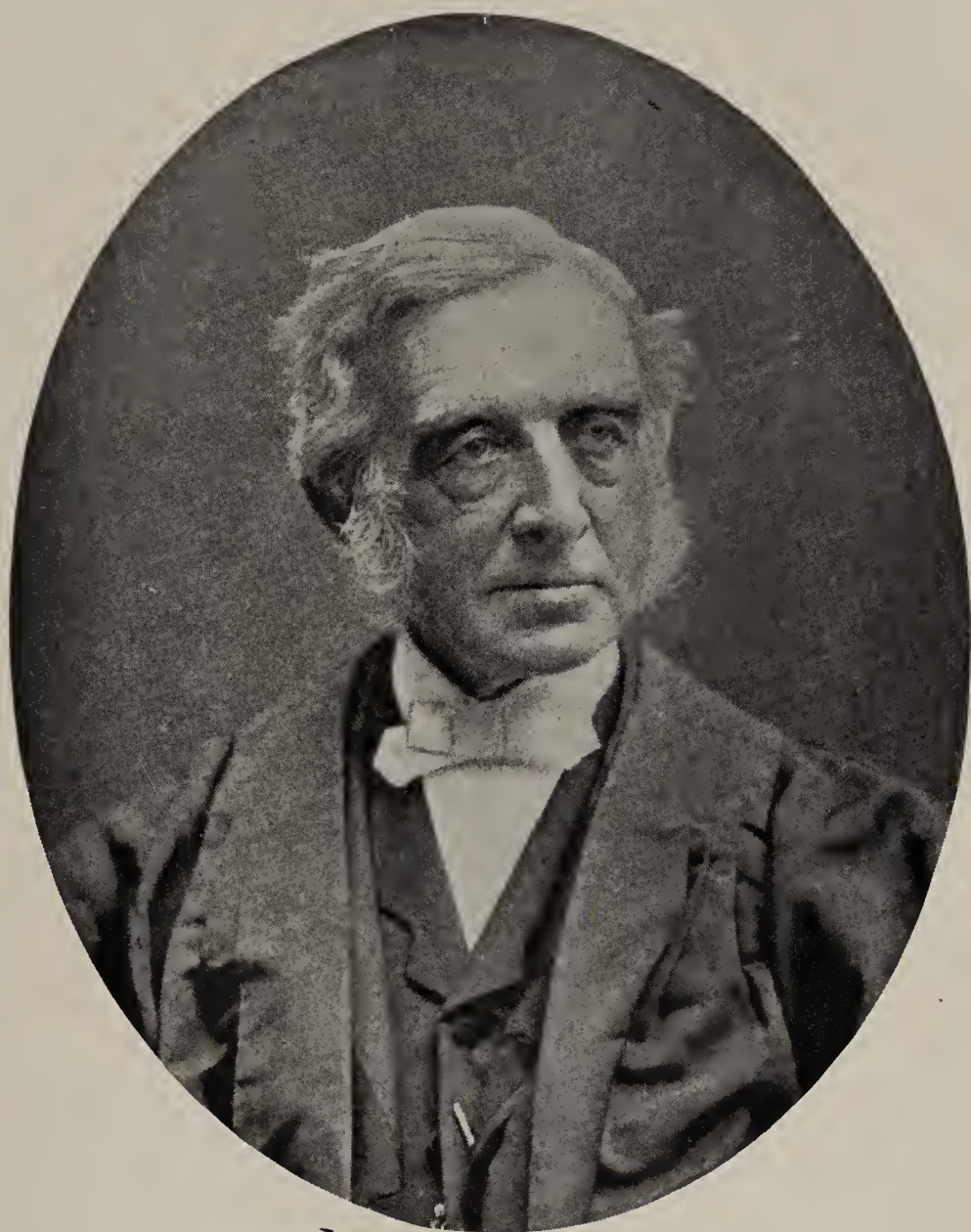
He was proud to say that he had not been incapacitated from preaching by physical illness for a single Sunday in fifty years. The result was that he came to be looked upon as the dean of the Protestant churches in the East and preached almost as often as when he was pastor of the Lafayette Avenue Church. As he advanced in years the greater importance and effect of written over spoken words impressed him more and more. He summed up the lessons of a life devoted to helping others in these words:

"A consecrated type is far more powerful than a consecrated tongue. Books of which I have more than twenty to my account, are a mere bagatelle. It is through the religious journals and daily press that my greatest work has been accomplished. During my life more than 200,000,000 copies of my sermons and addresses have been published. This I consider my greatest contribution to humanity."

He delivered to his own congregation almost 3,000 sermons and more than a thousand addresses.

Dr. Cuyler was of pronounced view on all questions and he never hesitated to express them, whether they related to municipal or national issues. A small plot of ground at the junction of Fulton Street and Greene Avenue was designated as Cuyler Park. Although he never had expressed a wish for such an honor the tribute pleased him greatly. He passed the small grass plot every time he walked between his home and church, and he took great pride in it.

Subsequently his friends started a movement to erect a monument in Cuyler Park in his honor. Before the subscription list was two days old it was apparent that the difficulty would be in selecting those most entitled to give. Park Commissioner Brower gave the permission necessary to erect the monument, saying the best loved man in Brooklyn deserved every honor and every tribute Brooklyn could pay. But Dr. Cuyler himself stood in the way. When the committee called on him to ask his consent he thanked his friends with tears in his eyes. He begged them to believe he would consider the wish as great an honor as



*Thos L. Leavelle*





the deed itself. "But I cannot consent," he said. "If my friends wish to show me their love and esteem let them, when I am gone, preserve the little park. Keep the grass green and the flowers fresh and tell the children that it is Cuyler Park. That is honor enough for me."

Dr. Cuyler was born in the village of Aurora, Cayuga County, New York, on January 10, 1822. He was a descendant of Hendrik Cuyler who settled in Albany in 1677. A Huguenot strain also appears in the family. His father and grandfather were both lawyers, prominent at the Cayuga County bar. His father, Benjamin Ledyard Cuyler, was a graduate of Hamilton College in the class with Gerrit Smith, the Abolitionist leader. He died at twenty-eight, when the son was four years old.

After attending school at Mendham, N. J., Theodore L. Cuyler entered Princeton at seventeen. He was graduated in the class of 1841. Traveling in Europe the following year, he met Charles Dickens, Thomas Carlyle and other famous authors and celebrities. He wrote a series of letters from Europe to American newspapers and laid the foundation for a work he continued through life. Although his father's preference was for the law, he followed his own bent and his mother's wishes on his return, and prepared for the ministry. He was graduated from Princeton Theological Seminary in 1846. He was ordained by the Presbytery and preached at Kingston, Pa., as a supply. His first regular charge was the Presbyterian Church at Burlington, N. J. In 1849, he was called to the Third Presbyterian Church of Trenton, just organized. After a successful pastorate of four years he accepted a call from the Market Street Reformed Dutch Church, New York City. He was thirty-two, in the full vigor of his powers. He rose at once to a high place among the preachers of the metropolis. In the great revival of 1858, he was one of the most conspicuous and effective workers.

In 1860, he severed his relations with the Market Street Church and made his permanent home in Brooklyn. A religious society had been organized in the city, originally known as the Park Church. It became the Lafayette Avenue Presbyterian Church. Dr. Cuyler accepted the call on condition that the congregation should purchase the plot of ground at the corner of Lafayette Avenue and South Oxford Street and erect thereon a church with a minimum seating capacity of 2,000. The conditions were accepted and he took charge forthwith. The ground was bought for \$12,000 and the church erected at a cost of \$42,000. It was completed and dedicated in March, 1862. The church rose rapidly to a foremost place among the Presbyterian churches of America, and still holds its pre-eminence. Three other Brooklyn churches owe their existence to the initiative of its congregation. In 1890, the membership was 2,400, while the Sunday school had 1,200 on its rolls, ranking third in the General Assembly.

In early life Dr. Cuyler accepted many lecture engagements, but later decided to devote all his eloquence and energy to the ministry. Yet he never failed to give his voice to the public advocacy of movements and causes that enlisted his sympathies. Thus he was an eloquent and forceful speaker on many occasions of great public demonstration and reform, or moral agitation.

He was one of the earliest temperance advocates and leaders. He became interested in the cause during the earliest days of the total abstinence agitation. While in Europe after his graduation he attended a meeting in Glasgow and heard Father Theobald Mathew, the Irish apostle of temperance. The devoted priest invited him to speak from the same platform, and warmly praised his effort. Ever after he advocated total abstinence for the individual and repressive



laws as a state policy. For eight years he was president of the National Temperance Society and Publication House, resigning in 1890, when he retired from his active pastoral duties in Brooklyn. His temperance tract, entitled "Somebody's Son," attained a circulation of more than half a million copies.

Dr. Cuyler was an earnest and zealous Republican from the organization of the party. He took a keen interest in political affairs and contributed not a little to the discussion. His independence of spirit was instanced in the campaign of 1900. He was decidedly opposed to the "imperialistic policy" of the McKinley administration, and agreed with many of the foremost national leaders of the Republican party, notably Senator George Frisbie Hoar, George F. Edmunds, Benjamin Harrison, Thomas B. Reed and Charles Francis Adams, in this stand. Decided as this feeling was, he felt that the exigencies of the situation required him to support McKinley rather than the Bryan Democracy, and he came out in favor of the President. But this was done with a clear avowal of non-acceptance of the imperialistic program. He strongly asserted the unalterable determination of Republicans with his own views to work within party lines for a reversal of the policy of acquiring overseas possessions by right of conquest.

Dr. Cuyler's published writings consist of more than 4,000 contributions to the press, seventy-five tracts and pamphlets and more than twenty books. His contributions to the religious press appeared mostly in the "Christian Intelligencer," the "Christian at Work," the "Evangelist," and the "Independent." Among his books are "Thought Hives," "Stray Arrows," "The Empty Crib," "The Cedar Christian," "Heart Life," "Pointed Papers," "From the Nile to Norway," "God's Light on Dark Clouds," "Wayside Springs," "Newly Enlisted," "How to be a Pastor," "Right to the Point," "The Young Preacher," "Stirring the Eagle's Nest," "Christianity in the Home," and "Beulah Land." Selections from his writings have been translated into many foreign languages and widely circulated. Dr. Cuyler died in 1909.

Dr. Cuyler was succeeded in the pulpit by the Rev. Dr. David Gregg, who came from the Park Street Congregational Church, Boston. He built a library in one of the towers reached by a spiral iron stairway. He loved books and wrote several. He continued in the pastorate until 1903, when he resigned to accept the presidency of the Western Theological Seminary at Allegheny, Penn. Dr. Gregg's notable pulpit power continued in the church its great traditions, and held it in its place of leadership. In the spring of 1904 the Rev. Dr. Cleland Boyd McAfee, whose father founded Park College, was called from the Forty-first Street Presbyterian Church, Chicago, and began his pastorate in the autumn.

In June, 1912, Dr. McAfee resigned to accept the chair of Didactic and Polemic Theology in the McCormick Theological Seminary. In December of that year Dr. Charles Carroll Albertson was called from the pastorate of the Central Presbyterian Church, Rochester, and on March 23, 1913, entered upon his term of service as pastor. He is the author of some volumes of sermons preached to college students, among whom he was counted as one of their best-liked preachers. All these pastors have been connected with one or another of the national boards of the Presbyterian Church.

The Rev. Dr. George R. Lunn, former Lieutenant-Governor, served as assistant minister under Dr. Gregg from 1900 to 1903. The Rev. Robert Anthony and the Rev. James G. Bailey served as assistants under Dr. McAfee, the former from 1900 to 1903, 1905 to 1908, the latter from 1909 to 1911. In May, 1913, the Rev. James Forsyth Griggs Riggs, Jr., a recent graduate from Princeton University and Theological Seminary became assistant minister.



LAFAYETTE AVENUE  
PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH



CENTRAL CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH





The church has been a factor in every new Presbyterian church enterprise in the city since its founding. After a great revival in 1866 in which more than three hundred were added to the church, a church was organized on the Park Slope and named, at the suggestion of Dr. Cuyler, the Memorial Presbyterian Church, in honor of that experience. In 1867, the first meeting was held in the study of the church which resulted in the forming of the Classon Avenue Church, to which it made helpful contributions of men and money. In 1861, a mission was started in Cumberland Street, near Myrtle Avenue, in which Dwight L. Moody conducted his first evangelistic services in the East, and introduced his famous Bible readings. The mission was organized into a church, but was unable to continue and came back into the mother church, being the Cumberland Street branch. In 1885, the Young People's Association established the Sunday school in Pacific Street near Bond Street, naming it for Dr. Cuyler. It so developed that a large measure of independence was attained, although it continues to receive generous financial support through the Association.

The Olivet Presbyterian Church, Bergen Street, near Sixth Avenue, was until 1900 a branch of the church, and still holds close relation with it. In 1903, the minister at Cumberland Street undertook an evangelistic and educational work in Buckhorn, Perry County, Kentucky, which was assumed as a southern branch of the church in 1905.

In Canton, China, is the Lafayette Compound, on which are located the Cuyler Church and the Gregg Hospital, beside other buildings, largely the gifts of this church.

Mr. Riggs served for six years. He was succeeded by Frank L. Gosnell, who served two years, having previously been a student assistant. The Rev. R. Paul Schearer, who served as student assistant for two years, served also as full assistant an additional two years. The Rev. Raymond Clee served as student assistant for two years and was succeeded by Philip Guiles. The Rev. Basil Douglas Hall was called as assistant from the Hunt's Point Presbyterian Church in the Bronx. Dr. Albertson celebrated the tenth anniversary of his pastorate in 1923.

At the annual meeting of the church on January 9, 1924, it was announced by I. E. Hasbrouck, the treasurer, that \$89,483.97 had been raised for benevolent purposes in the church during the year, of which \$28,669 was sent to the foreign missions; and the total membership of the church was 2,348, made up of 1,775 in the home church, three hundred and sixty-three in the Cumberland Street Mission on Cumberland Street near Fort Greene Park, and two hundred and ten in the Gregg Chapel, on Fourth Avenue near Degraw Street.

A gift of \$50,000 for mission work in memory of Dr. William Jarvie was announced as having been received in 1923.

It was reported 18,488 surgical dressings were made up by the women of the church in the past year and sent to the hospitals.

Ninety-eight members were added to the church, thirty-three died, seventy-one moved away and joined other churches, and eighty-one were suspended. Six men were unanimously elected by the congregation to serve as elders for the term of three years ending in January, 1927: John N. Beach, Harry P. Ball, George P. Conard, Charles C. Miller, James A. Smith, and Colonel Robert Mazet.

The number of the board of deacons was raised from fifteen to eighteen, and six men instead of five, as heretofore, were elected to serve for the three years ending January, 1927. These six were Frederick U. Conrad, Edwin S.



Green, Dr. Paul L. Parrish, Edgar M. Smith, John McDowell, and Ralph D. Sumner.

Henry Schenk was elected a deacon for one year and Henry Mackay, Jr., for two years.

The Classon Avenue Presbyterian Church was founded in 1867 by the co-operation of the First and Lafayette Avenue Churches. Its first pastor was the Rev. Dr. Joseph T. Duryea (1867-1879), one of the outstanding preachers of his day, who came from the Collegiate Reformed Church of New York. Dr. Duryea was a Princeton College and Seminary graduate and was chosen to deliver the oration at the fiftieth anniversary of the professorate of the Rev. Dr. Charles Hodge, Princeton's well-known theologian. Dr. Duryea was an accomplished organist and prepared the Hymnal of the Presbyterian Church. He was followed by the Rev. Dr. David R. Fraser, (1880-1883) later of the First Presbyterian Church of Newark, and he in turn by the Rev. Dr. Leander T. Chamberlain, (1883-1890) who was largely instrumental in founding of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences, and was President of the Evangelical Alliance. He was followed by the Rev. Dr. Joseph Dunn Burrell, (1892-1919) later Executive Secretary of the Church Extension Board of the Presbytery of Brooklyn-Nassau, and by the Rev. Dr. Raymond M. Huston, who came to this church from a highly successful pastorate in Detroit. In 1924 he was succeeded by the Rev. Peter A. Macdonald, who came from the State Street Presbyterian Church, of Schenectady. The Classon Avenue Church is noted for the beauty of its interior decorations in shades of gray picked out in gold. The color scheme is carried out with such completeness that the carpet was ordered to match and even the hymn books were specially bound in imported linen for this purpose. There are some splendid colored windows in the sanctuary in memory of the Rev. Dr. Joseph T. Duryea—a group of three. Miss Jane Gooden, who bequeathed \$25,000 to the church; Edward P. Loomis, an elder; Alfred J. Pouch, sometime President of the Board of Trustees; Orlando H. Jadim, of former trustee, and others. The marble baptismal font was given in memory of Mrs. A. J. Pouch by her children. The pulpit reading desk, made of deeply carved walnut from a convent in Italy, with the pulpit chairs, was a gift of Mrs. J. D. Burrell in memory of her mother. On the east wall is a white marble table, inlaid with colored mosaic, in memory of the Rev. Richard R. Williams, who was superintendent of the Sunday School for eighteen years. The Duryea Presbyterian Church and the Wyckoff Heights Presbyterian Church were started as chapels of the Classon Avenue Church.

The South Third Street Church in the Eastern District (Williamsburgh) was organized in 1844 and from 1850 to 1903 had the Rev. Dr. John D. Wells, for its pastor. For a long time he was President of the Board of Foreign Missions of the Presbyterian Church. He was succeeded by his son, the Rev. Dr. Newell Woolsey Wells, sometime editor of the "Homiletic Review." This church was the parent of four others; the Greenpoint, Ainslie Street, Ross Street and Throop Avenue Churches.

In 1896, to meet the need of church expansion in view of the rapidly increasing population of Brooklyn, a Presbyterian Union for Church Extension was founded, with the Rev. Dr. Charles Cuthbert Hall, pastor of the First Presbyterian Church, as President. The Rev. Dr. R. G. Hutchins and the Rev. Daniel H. Overton were respectively its Superintendents.

In 1911 the Union was reorganized under a Board of nine Directors with

Charles W. Hand, Vice President of the Underwood Typewriter Company, as its President.

In 1915 the Rev. Robert W. Anthony was appointed Executive Secretary of the Board, with a business office, and during his incumbency seven churches were established.

In 1922 the Rev. Dr. Joseph Dunn Burrell succeeded Mr. Anthony. Later the staff was enlarged by the appointment of the Rev. Robert H. Blackshear as Director of Religious Education, and the Rev. W. P. Moody as Field Director. In 1922 \$103,000 was administered by this Board.

In June, 1918, the adjacent Presbytery of Nassau was united to Brooklyn Presbytery by the Synod of New York, forming the Presbytery of Brooklyn-Nassau. In 1923 it reported eighty churches, 133 ministers, 30,890 communicants, 19,850 Sunday school members, with total contributions to all causes amounting to \$1,011,635. Other Presbyterian churches of Brooklyn, each having more than 500 members are: Arlington Avenue, The Rev. Dr. John H. Kerr; Bedford, the Rev. Dr. S. Edward Young; Bethany, the Rev. L. O. Rotenbach; Bushwick, the Rev. Charles Nietzer; Flatbush, the Rev. H. H. Field; Grace, the Rev. R. H. Carson; Prospect Heights, the Rev. Dr. E. D. Bailey; Siloam, the Rev. Dr. G. S. Stark; Throop Avenue, the Rev. Dr. William Carter, D. D.; Union, Bay Ridge, the Rev. H. H. Leavitt; Ridgewood, the Rev. A. B. Rhinow.

Other men distinguished in the ministry who have been Brooklyn pastors during the last twenty-five years, were the Rev. Dr. Lewis R. Foote, the Rev. Dr. Thomas A. Nelson, the Rev. Dr. William H. Hudnut, the Rev. Dr. Harlan G. Mendenhall, (long Moderator of the Presbytery of New York) the Rev. Gaylord S. White (later professor in Union Theological Seminary) the Rev. Dr. W. J. Hutchins (later professor in Oberlin and President of Berea College), the Rev. Dr. Allan Douglas Carlile, the Rev. Dr. John Erskine Adams, the Rev. Warren H. Wilson, Ph. D. (later of the Board of Home Missions and Columbia University), the Rev. Herman C. Weber (later Statistician of the General Council of the Presbyterian Church), the Rev. Ralph K. Hickok (later professor in Wells College), the Rev. John Barlow and the Rev. Tracy B. Griswold.

In 1923 the denominations in Brooklyn reported: contributing members, 22,659; Sunday school members, 12,875; total amount raised, \$738,539; value of church property, \$3,362,500.

**The Central Presbyterian Church**, John F. Carson, D.D., LL.D., pastor—Reaching back into the Reformed Presbyterian, or Covenanters Church, from which some of the strongest and noblest men have come, the Central Presbyterian Church may be said to be of ancient lineage. In the matter of its incorporation under the name of "Central" it is one of the newer churches of Brooklyn.

In 1892, the First Reformed Presbyterian Church, of Brooklyn, applied for admission to and was received by the Brooklyn Presbytery of the Presbyterian Church. This marked the beginning of the Central Presbyterian Church, with an enrolled membership of one hundred and forty-six.

The church was then located at Tompkins and Willoughby Avenues. Very soon this building became inadequate for the rapidly growing membership. A large committee of the Central Church, with Thomas F. Taylor as Chairman, was appointed to carry out the plans of the congregation. The Church Extension Committee of the Presbytery, of which the late Mr. Darwin R. James was Chairman, urged the Central Church to build at the corner of Jefferson and Marcy



Avenues. The Trinity Presbyterian Church was on this site. The suggestion was most agreeable to the Trinity Church. The officers and members of Trinity Church, under the leadership of Mr. Samuel H. Coombs, entered into the project with enthusiasm, as did the people of Central Church. Trinity Church was dissolved by the Presbytery and its seventy-six members entered into the membership of Central Church. The chapel in which Trinity Church had worshipped was torn down and the present large and imposing edifice was erected. Although the people were not wealthy, they gave generously, and in June, 1897, the church building was dedicated. There was a mortgage of \$60,000 on the new building. Two years after its dedication \$20,000 was paid on the mortgage and within a few years thereafter the balance of the mortgage was paid.

Starting in 1892 with one hundred and forty-six members, the growth of the church has been little less than phenomenal. In 1925, the Central Church had a membership of 3,391, making it the largest Presbyterian Church in the State of New York and the second largest Presbyterian Church in the United States, the largest being the First Presbyterian Church of Seattle, Washington, Dr. Mark A. Matthews, pastor.

Since its organization in 1892, with one hundred and forty-six members, the net increase in the membership of Central Church has been 3,245, a net annual gain of one hundred and one members for each of the thirty-two years of its life. During this period, from 1892 to 1925, the people of Central Church have given to benevolences \$756,108 and to church support and work \$901,477, a total of \$1,657,585.

The Central Church has given sympathy and support to the educational, charitable, missionary and religious movements of Brooklyn. It has ever maintained a broad, catholic spirit, fellowshiping in works of faith and labors of love with all believers of every name who put the crown upon the brow of Jesus.

The Central Church has faithfully supported the agencies of the Presbyterian Church in the United States and its lines of service have extended into foreign lands. In India its name is known; in Persia there are those who rise up and call it blessed; in Syria it is held in reverence; in China it is acclaimed; in Cuba and in South America it has a place in many hearts. For in these countries, from time to time during the years, it has supported missionaries.

The Irving Square Presbyterian Church, of Brooklyn, is a child of Central Church. For years Central Church maintained a work in the Bushwick District. When this work was organized into a church, Central Church dismissed one hundred and thirty of its members to help the new enterprise, purchased the ground and gave a substantial sum toward the erection of the church building.

For years the Central Church has maintained a work among the Italians, at Franklin and Myrtle Avenues, and on this work, known as the Franklin Avenue Branch, the Central Church expends about \$8,000 a year. The minister at the Franklin Avenue Church is the Rev. J. W. Vavalo.

Outstanding in the story of Central Church are the attitude and devotion of the people during the years of the World War. With absolute unanimity this church gave its loyal allegiance to the Government of the United States and its unfaltering support in the prosecution of the war for righteousness and freedom. The men of the church responded unreservedly to every call for service. The women gave without reservation their time and energy to such work as would aid the men in service. Many of the younger women surrendered their leisure or gave up their positions to enter into service at home and abroad.

Three hundred and forty-one of the young men of the church entered the army and navy. The officers released Dr. Carson from his pastoral duties that he might work in the camps, cantonments and naval stations.

## CHAPTER XVIII

### BAPTIST CHURCHES

WHEN the first Baptist Church of Brooklyn was organized in 1823 there was but one other Baptist Church on Long Island, and that at Oyster Bay. This was organized in 1724, and thus antedates the Methodists on the Island. There were then but six Baptist Churches in New York and its vicinity, and the first in Brooklyn was thus the seventh of the denomination in the district now metropolitan. In Brooklyn, whose early settlers were mainly Dutch, there were but four other white churches: the Dutch Reformed (1660), 163 years old; St. Ann's Episcopal (1784), 39 years old; the Sands Street Methodist, (1794), 29 years old; and a Presbyterian Church organized in 1822. There was also an African Methodist church. Services by these bodies had, however, been held for several years prior to their organization. The Baptists, Presbyterians and Catholics began work in Brooklyn almost simultaneously, in 1822. A Congregational Society, which built a meeting house in 1785, soon afterward became extinct through internal dissensions, and no other Congregational Society was organized until 1841. Churches then were antagonistic to one another, there being none of the fraternal feeling of to-day, and sharp controversies arose. Of all sects the Baptists were regarded by the others with special aversion.

A "notice" in The Long Island Star, the little weekly paper then published in Brooklyn appeared on January 12, 1820, to the effect that a Baptist meeting would be held the following Sunday "at a house opposite Mr. Hicks's" in Fulton Street. John Ellis, a Baptist minister, signed this announcement, and he subsequently became pastor of the Baptist Church in Stamford, Conn. No one knows how often the Baptists met at this house on Fulton Street, or how long. It was probably an experimental matter.

Eliakim Raymond, of the Oliver Street Baptist Church, New York, came to Brooklyn temporarily in the summer of 1821, hoping that the "country air" would prove beneficial to an invalid daughter, making his home with his brother Elnathan. The next summer, during a yellow-fever scourge in New York, he came to Brooklyn again with Elijah Lewis, of the Mulberry Street Church, New York, afterward the Tabernacle. Finding five other Baptists, they started a prayer meeting, and occasionally secured a preacher for a congregation of twenty or thirty persons. They returned to New York in the fall, but through the ensuing winter and spring they came over to Brooklyn with regularity, often crossing the East River in row boats, to encourage the little band of brethren here. The first formal step toward organizing a church was taken on July 23, 1823, at a meeting at which Eliakim Raymond, Elijah Lewis, William Winterton and others from New York were present. And it was now voted that the organization should be effected as soon as members could obtain their church letters.

The First Baptist Church of Brooklyn was organized in Nassau Street



on Tuesday evening, August 19, 1823, with eleven members—three men and eight women. At its recognition the following day there were present Rev. Alexander Maclay of the Mulberry Street Church, Rev. Spencer H. Cone of the Oliver Street Church, Rev. Charles G. Sommers of the Nassau Street Church, and Rev. Johnson Chase of the Delancy Street Church, all of New York City. It was apparently looked upon as an event in denominational circles, for besides these ministers there were present business men foremost in New York churches then and afterwards, among them being E. Lewis, W. Winterton, E. Raymond, William Colgate, J. Gilbert and Garrat N. Bleecker. On October 15, 1823, the church was incorporated.

Not knowing then they would be favored with a pastor, the little band agreed to maintain Sunday and Wednesday evening prayer and conference meetings and a monthly covenant meeting. They remained pastorless, with occasional preaching service, for six months. The first baptism was on September 28th, the minister being Rev. S. H. Cone of New York, who, after a sermon at the waterside baptized the convert, a woman, in the East River, at the foot of Pierrepont Street, where there was then a fine beach. The ordinance was subsequently administered at times in Wallabout Bay.

The progress of the church is traced from these humble beginnings to the present time. But for a generation the history of two churches must be interwoven; for out of the First Church, in 1840, sprang the Pierrepont Street Church, the churches being united in 1873 under the names of both, "The First Baptist Church in Pierrepont Street." "Its course," says the Rev. Henry L. Morehouse, D.D., "was like that of a river flowing onward for a time in two channels around an intervening island, then coming together again with greater volume and power." It is a fact of interest that the seventy-fifth anniversary of the First Church almost exactly coincides with the twenty-fifth anniversary of the United Church.

The first pastor, called to ordination by the church in February, 1824, was Rev. William C. Hawley. He first served them four years, during which period they increased to sixty-five members and erected their first house of worship. Then they were pastorless for two months, and followed a supply for three months. The second pastor, Rev. George Catt, served for one year and three months, and after his resignation the church was again pastorless for six months, followed by a stated supply, Rev. Joseph Denham, for six months. The church numbered 132 members at his retirement in 1831. Nine or ten months passed before the settlement of the third pastor, Rev. Jonathan E. Lazell, who remained but eight months. In the summer and fall of 1832 the church was almost broken up by the prevalence of cholera. "From these frequent changes, so detrimental to church growth," says the Rev. Henry L. Morehouse, "the church entered upon a period of greater permanency in its pastorates." Its fourth pastor, Rev. Leland Howard, remained four years from September, 1833, leaving a membership of nearly three hundred. His son, ex-Lieutenant Governor J. L. Howard, of Connecticut, was long one of the leading men in the denomination. During Rev. Mr. Howard's pastorate the church erected a new and commodious house of worship on Nassau street. Several months after his retirement, in 1837, the church called its fifth pastor, Rev. Silas Ilsley, who remained about four years until 1841. During this period the membership increased from 200 to 600. In 1838, it had 268 baptisms, the largest number for one year in its history. That year, however, was one of remarkable religious interest in many Baptist churches in New

York and vicinity, partly as the result of the labors of the Rev. Jacob Knapp, a famous revivalist then in the fulness of his power. Mr. Ilsley himself was a man of remarkable force as a preacher and of marked individuality. Just before the close of his services the Pierrepont Street Church was organized. Immediately after him, in 1841, came the sixth pastor, Rev. J. L. Hodge, who continued more than ten years until 1852, when he became pastor of the Washington Avenue Baptist Church. In 1842 the church reported 114 baptisms and 742 members. During Mr. Hodge's pastorate the church was destroyed in the great fire of 1848, and a larger and better one was erected on the same site. Mr. Hodge was a man of great natural ability, and excelled as an extemporaneous preacher. His congregations frequently numbered a thousand. His death occurred in Brooklyn in 1898. Soon after him came its seventh pastor, Rev. O. W. Briggs, of Virginia, who remained seven years, resigning in 1859. During his period the membership had been depleted by removals and dismissals of members to form other bodies, but the last year of his pastorate was marked by a great revival (1858), when there were 96 baptisms, the total membership being 499.

The eighth pastor was Rev. D. J. Yerkes, who continued four years, until the close of 1863. His pastorate was in the troubled and trying period of the Civil War, and especially in New York and vicinity the excitement between opposing political parties was intense, culminating in the New York riots, and at this time religious work was very difficult. Upon Mr. Yerkes's retirement the membership was 398. He was followed in 1864 by Rev. H. M. Gallaher, who remained eight years until his resignation in 1872 on account of ill health. His preaching attracted large congregations, necessitating an improvement and enlargement of the church about 1868, at heavy expense. There were 93 baptisms in 1866, and the church on his retirement had a membership of 802. He was the last pastor of the First Baptist Church before its union with the Pierrepont Street Church.

**The Pierrepont Street Church**, an offshoot from the First church, began in 1840 with forty-four members, when the city had a population of 40,000. It called as its pastor Rev. E. E. L. Taylor, a young man who had just been graduated from the Hamilton Theological Seminary. His culture, geniality, ability and devotion soon won for this church a place in the most refined community in the city. In 1849, the church reluctantly relinquished him to become the leader of the newly-organized Strong Place Church. During his ministry in 1844 a fine house of worship costing \$25,000 was erected, and within three years 157 were baptized. He left the church with a membership of 337, although before the withdrawal of members to form other bodies its enrollment was 372. Dr. Taylor in later life became prominent as one of the Secretaries of the American Baptist Home Mission Society, and as its Corresponding Secretary died in 1874. He was succeeded at Pierrepont Street by one of the most noted preachers in the denomination, Rev. Bartholmew T. Welch, D.D., in 1849. This preacher attracted large congregations, but the church became distracted and depressed by necessary and expensive repairs of the house of worship, and although his labors were highly appreciated they were not so fruitful of spiritual results as hoped for. At the conclusion of his pastorate of four years, when the church had 351 members, he was presented with a purse of \$3,500.

In 1854 Rev. J. Stanford Holme became its third pastor, serving for about nine years, when 407 members were reported. In the revival year of 1858



seventy-three were baptized. The last two years of Mr. Holme's labors were the first two years of the Civil War, and witnessed a serious decline in religious feeling. On his retirement as pastor he was presented with \$1,000 as an expression of esteem. The same year that Mr. Gallaher came to the First Church (1864), the fourth pastor of the Pierrepont Street Church, Rev. Jesse B. Thomas, made his advent. He remained until January, 1868, nearly four years. He brought a new era of prosperity to the church, for he had a marked personality and was a powerful preacher. Yet this success engendered a difference of opinion concerning the erection of a new house of worship and aggressive mission work. Unwilling to labor under unfavorable conditions, Mr. Thomas tendered his resignation and accepted a call from San Francisco, whither he went in 1868. The church then numbered 473 persons.

Rev. W. W. Hammond, just graduated from Newton Theological Institution, was soon afterwards called, and after a pastorate of not quite two years, during which financial embarrassments gave the church much concern, he resigned, leaving a membership of 440. He was the last pastor of the Pierrepont Street Church as a separate body. Although supplied by some of the best talent in the denomination, the church was now for nearly three years without a pastor. Upon the union of the churches in 1873 a call was extended to Rev. J. B. Thomas, who, beginning his ministry in 1874, continued until 1888, a period of fourteen years. "His was the delicate task of welding into warm Christian fellowship members of two churches with quite different characteristics, after a generation of separate existence. Although the formal terms of the union were equitable, and honorably observed by both parties, there were undercurrents at times that required a watchful and skillful pilot of the ship. Coming in the fullness of his powers, both in intellectual equipment and pulpit ability, he at once took rank with the foremost preachers of our own and other denominations and became prominent in denominational affairs. Under his instructive and edifying ministry the church took on new life, additions were numerous, and within six years a large, modern church edifice was completed at a cost of \$64,000." The united church began with about 900 members, and after excisions and removals the first two years maintained an average of about 760 until Dr. Thomas's resignation in 1888, when 746 were reported. Dr. Thomas spent six months in Europe, for recuperation, and Dr. Halsey W. Knapp generously supplied his pulpit. Dr. Thomas's pastorate was the longest in the history of these churches up to that time.

Rev. Willard H. Robinson, the second pastor of the united church, coming to the field in 1889, when the tide of population was running the other way, earnestly applied himself to the task of reviving waning interest. During his pastorate of about three years the church sold its property for \$200,000, and pending a decision of the question of future location he resigned in 1892, the church having a membership of 605.

The property sold, the church held meetings in the Polytechnic Institute on Livingston street. After the lapse of about fifteen months Rev. Cortland Myers was called and began his labors in September, 1893. Having no home, and in a state of uncertainty regarding its future, the church had made little progress, and congregations were small. Upon the suggestion of the new pastor, the Academy of Music was secured for Sunday services. Under his inspiring leadership, and the force and popularity of his preaching, large congregations gathered. The evangelistic spirit of the services resulted in the quickening of the members and in numerous conversions. In the fall of 1895

the church entered its new house of worship, which was often inadequate for the accommodation of the evening congregations, although it seated 2,000. In the five years of his pastorate Mr. Myers baptized 600, and its enrollment grew to 1,213, the largest in the history of the church. In 1863, Rev. John Toomath, a pious and devoted blind man, was appointed by the Pierrepont Street Church as pastor's assistant and superintendent of its mission work, in which capacity he continued until his death in 1876. For years this church employed a Sunday school woman missionary and general church worker. In 1894 Rev. W. I. Southerton, who had been associated with Mr. Myers in Syracuse, was chosen assistant pastor and became superintendent of the Sunday school in 1895.

Thus in fifty years the First Baptist Church had nine pastors; the Pierrepont Street Church in thirty-three years six pastors; and the First Baptist Church in Pierrepont Street in twenty-five years three pastors, making eighteen in all. The foregoing facts are taken from the "Souvenir of the Seventy-fifth Anniversary of the Baptist Church in Pierrepont Street," and deal with matters up to 1898. The Rev. Cortland Myers continued his pastorate until 1910, and was succeeded by Rev. W. B. Wallace, who was pastor until 1914; Rev. George Caleb Moor was pastor from 1914 to 1919, Rev. J. C. Massee succeeded him and remained until 1922, and Rev. E. Leroy Dakin was his successor and is still in service in the Baptist Temple, a great religious institution which is the outgrowth of the early church.

The development of the church, as houses of worship are concerned, is interesting. After the first meetings in "a house opposite Mr. Hicks' on Fulton Street" they were held in a house on Cranberry Street nearly opposite the present lecture room of Plymouth Church. There are records of occasional Sunday services in a schoolhouse in 1823. In 1824, the schoolhouse at the corner of Adams and Concord Streets was secured for stated services on Sunday, prayer meetings being held in the homes of the members. "Deprived of this by men hostile to evangelical truth," says the old record, "they next obtained the public schoolhouse in Middagh Street till the summer of 1826," when their first house of worship on Pearl Street, between Concord and Nassau Streets, was completed. Lots for this were purchased in 1824 for \$600, the building itself, a neat frame structure, without galleries, costing about \$1,200. It was occupied in October, 1826. This property was sold in 1834 to the Free Calvary Episcopal Church for \$5,000, and on lots seventy-five by one hundred feet, costing \$6,500, at the corner of Nassau and Liberty Streets, the second house, of brick was erected at an expense of about \$16,000, with a debt of \$12,000. It was dedicated on May 3, 1835, though not opened for regular services until November of that year. It had an attractive interior, spacious galleries, a lecture-room, and Sunday school rooms in the rear, was carpeted and had cushioned seats, was lighted by gas, and accommodated about 1,000. At that time the location was central. Where the municipal buildings stood later there was a military pleasure garden, people rarely going out so far except for amusement. This house was burned in the great fire of 1848. The church then worshipped for a time in the Pierrepont Street house, in the lecture-room of Plymouth Church, and for some months in 1849 in the Brooklyn Female Academy, later Packer Institute. The third house of brick, on the same site, was completed in November, 1849, and followed the burned church in construction, with a like seating capacity, and cost \$20,000. It was twice enlarged and improved, the last time in 1868. It was partially destroyed by fire in December, 1873, was restored



by the insurance companies, was occupied by the united churches from 1874 until 1878, and in 1880 was sold for \$15,000, netting about \$5,000 above a mortgage for the new church on Pierrepont Street.

The Sunday school out of which the Pierrepont Street Church may be said to have sprung met in 1839 in the basement of the small building of the extinct Second Baptist Church, at the corner of Lawrence and Tillary Streets, and from the fall of 1840, under its first name as "The East Baptist Church," worshipped in Classical Hall on Washington Street. In 1843, when its name was changed, the church bought lots at the corner of Pierrepont Street and Clinton, for \$5,000, and erected thereon a fine Gothic Church of stone costing about \$25,000, with a seating capacity of 600. This was dedicated March, 1844, some four years after the church's organization. The structure was pronounced unsafe in 1851, was repaired at a cost of \$5,000, and in 1864 was again repaired at an expense of \$2,500. After the union of the churches was effected, in 1873, services were held in the Pierrepont house for several months in 1874, until completion of repairs on the First Baptist Church in Nassau Street, where the church met during the demolition of the old house and the erection of the new one in Pierrepont Street. Having bought additional land in 1873 for \$14,000, on an ample site, the church in 1877 began the erection of a house, the basement of which was occupied in the fall of 1879, dedication services occurring in 1880. It was unique in design, with an oval amphitheatrical audience room, surrounded by galleries sloping down to the pulpit platform, and seating about 1,100 people. The ceiling was unsupported from below, thus giving an unobstructed view from every part of the house. A fine organ was located back of the pulpit. The basement, almost wholly above ground, contained large and attractive lecture and Sunday school rooms. The house cost \$58,000 and the organ \$6,000. After twelve years, on March 21, 1892, farewell exercises were held in this house, the property having been sold to the Brooklyn Savings Bank for \$200,000. For about a year and a half thereafter the church met in the Polytechnic Institute on Livingston Street; and for two years from the fall of 1893 in the Academy of Music. In 1894 a site 100 x 130 feet was bought at the corner of Schermerhorn Street and Third Avenue, costing \$75,000, on which a commodious brick structure was erected, the dedication occurring in November, 1895. This house, known as "The Baptist Temple," had sittings for 2,000 people, while the lower temple, with its audience rooms, accommodated 1,200. In March, 1917, the building was partially destroyed by fire. The congregation entered the rebuilt Temple in February, 1918.

Music in the early history of the church in Brooklyn was very simple and followed ancient standards. The hymn books in common use were Watts' and Rippons' collection and Watts' Psalms and Hymns, with others selected by the pastors. Music today in the local Baptist churches has a joyousness and a prominence the older churches never knew. In 1857 the Pierrepont Street Baptist Church secured from the publishers of the "Plymouth Collection of Hymns and Tunes" music "adapted to the use of Baptist churches." The Rev. John Stanford Holme, pastor of the church prepared the new edition, with additions, for publication. This book was extensively used, and this was the beginning of better things in church music. In 1835, soon after the First Church had entered its second building, aspirations for better instrumental music were shown by more progressive members of the church, and for two years there was quite a commotion over a proposed substitution of a

pipe organ for the endeared bass viol. The organ won the day. The volunteer choir was at the end of the church, opposite the pastor, the congregation commonly facing about when they arose to sing. In 1841 the church voted to request the congregation to rise during the singing of the hymn before and after the sermon, and to face the pulpit. Then came larger organs, more noted organists, superior choirs, and soloists.

**Sunday Schools**—The Sunday School has been and is a cherished institution with the Baptists. The school associated with the First Church was organized in 1824, its first superintendent being Eliakim Raymond, who resigned in 1826, and was succeeded by Elijah Lewis, who had been associated with him in the establishment of the church itself. The schools prospered as the years passed. The united schools began in December, 1873, with an attendance of 616. A missionary spirit has always actuated the Sunday schools of this denomination. During the early years of the church in Brooklyn the hours for assembling were 9 o'clock in the morning and 2 o'clock in the afternoon. The custom of holding two sessions a day was continued as late as 1860, when the morning session was abandoned. The children were also accustomed to attend the church services, and it was one of the duties of the superintendent at the morning session to announce a committee of teachers to sit in the galleries with the children and maintain order. The noted lack of children attending the regular services in more recent years may possibly be a reaction from the early rigors of the schools in this matter. In recent years much attention has been given to the musical exercises, the leading feature in the Temple being a fine orchestra made up of young people, "thus fulfilling the psalmist's injunction to praise the Lord with the sound of the cornet, with the psaltery and harp, with stringed instruments and organs."

The First Church has been the mother of half a dozen churches in Brooklyn, and its influence has gone abroad throughout Long Island, which has scores of churches of this faith that meet the demands of their various neighborhoods. The Long Island Baptist Association had its inception in the home of the pastor of the Pierrepont Street Church, and was organized in its house of worship in June, 1867. The Young People's Baptist Union of Brooklyn also originated in the brain of a member of that church and was organized in the First Baptist Church of Pierrepont Street October 4, 1877.

From the humble beginning of one church with eleven members seventy-five years ago, as was stated on the seventy-fifth anniversary of the church celebrated in 1898, the Baptists, of what was then called "the enlarged Brooklyn" had grown to 38 churches with 16,942 members, and church property valued at \$1,958,368.70 then had an indebtedness of \$300,000. When the centenary of the church was celebrated in 1923, there were no reliable data as to the growth of the denomination during the last quarter of a century, but that it has kept pace with the others seems certain. In 1898 the denomination ranked third among the evangelical bodies in number of churches, of members, and in valuation of church property, the Episcopalians leading, the Methodists being second and only by a little outranking the Baptists. In Brooklyn at that time had arisen three German and one Scandinavian Baptist Churches, among whom at the beginning of the church's history in Brooklyn Baptists were unknown.

How Henry Ward Beecher came to have a baptistry in Plymouth Church is an interesting incident, disclosing a baptismal link between that Church and



the Pierrepont Street Baptist Church, through descendants of Eliakim Raymond, many of whom became members of Plymouth Church. A grandson having become converted at college, and wishing to join the Congregationalists, found the Congregationalist pastor there unwilling to immerse him and reported the fact to his father, who was a member of Plymouth Church. Mr. Beecher being consulted on the subject, sent word to the young man not to violate his conscience at the very beginning of his Christian life, and advised him to wait until his return to Brooklyn during the holidays, when he himself would immerse him. This Mr. Beecher did in the winter of 1857-8 in the baptistry of the Pierrepont Street Baptist Church, where other members of the same family were baptized by Mr. Beecher in the great revival of 1858. After this the great preacher determined to have his own baptistry in Plymouth Church.

The celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of the First Baptist Church—now known as The Baptist Temple of Brooklyn—in 1923 was an event for the denomination. There is no doubt that, to the many Baptist churches in Brooklyn and throughout Long Island, The Baptist Temple stands as to their pride and their reverent emotion as their cathedrals stand to members of denominations more formal and ceremonious. And no doubt also this great Baptist organization is a source of pride to persons of the same faith the country over. The Temple has an organization adequate to all the purposes of such a religious institution. E. LeRoy Dakin, its "pastor and minister of the Word," occupies a proud place in Baptist affection. His assistants are Vera M. Rice, associate in education; J. Wesley Gould, minister of stewardship; Myra C. Carter, assistant and secretary; and Cornelius Van Rees, "minister of music." The officers of the church were Frederick Einfeldt, clerk; G. Howard Estey, treasurer; N. B. Killmer, church chairman; W. B. Dorman, chairman of committee of nine; Geo. U. Tompers, chairman social committee; George W. Hart, head usher; H. O. Heimbach, chairman baptismal committee; Wm. H. Reid, chairman music committee; Wm. L. Armbruster, chief collector. The committee to arrange the great anniversary was composed of the pastor and members of his staff; John W. Allis, Geo. U. Tompers, Jos. I. Kilbourn, John W. Cherrie, E. Reed Burns, Geo. W. Van Vleck, Louis S. Odell, N. B. Killmer, G. Howard Estey, W. R. Dorman, Mrs. Geo. U. Tompers, Mrs. J. I. Kilbourn, Mrs. G. Howard Estey, Mrs. Samuel Smythe, Mrs. W. L. Prouty, Mrs. R. T. Cady, Mrs. Maurice Upright, Miss Jessie Thomas Dorman, Miss Catherine Cochrane, Miss Mary E. Chapman, and F. H. Divine. The board of deacons is composed of Wm. B. Thompson, deacon emeritus: J. Wesley Gould, president; E. Reed Burns, Jas. C. Hetfield, Louis S. Odell, Geo. A. Wakeman, Geo. McDowell, Nelson B. Killmer, Russell T. Cady, C. A. Kloeppel, H. W. Tweedy, Geo. M. Falion, Robt. N. Hallock, Robt. M. Low, Geo. W. Van Vleck, H. O. Heimbach. The Temple has many organizations for the younger of its congregation. Its adult organizations and activities include Bible School Classes, King's Daughters, Dorcas Circle, the Temple Choir, Young Fellows, Women's Missionary Society, Temple Square Club, Centenary Club.

The "Golden Century Anniversary" began on Sunday, October 28, 1923, with elaborate religious and musical services and a memorial service. The usual Sunday activities were observed with emphasis inspired by the event. Special music, special hymns and addresses fitted to the occasion marked the event. Several days were given to the celebration, and it closed with a historical and prophetic pageant, entitled "The Road to a Better Tomorrow," prepared by pastor Dakin and directed by Professor Smith, the setting representing "A family in utter darkness, repre-

senting human need." The sermon by the pastor was on the subject: "The Story of a Hundred Years." The history of the church was reviewed, and its achievements set forth. The dominant feature of the Temple life has been its evangelistic spirit. A tablet bearing the names of all its ministers was unveiled during the celebration. A promise of the future of the Temple is found in its various institutions that are of interest to the young, who are growing up with the church and insure its growth.

To this potential timber of the church of tomorrow the best of the time, prayer, and labor of the church heads is given, and the source of future strength carefully conserved.

### Strong Place Baptist Church

The early history of the Strong Place Baptist Church is interesting. On October 17, 1847, a Sunday school was organized in South Brooklyn. Its first session was held in a house on the south side of Degraw Street, eighteen children and seven teachers being present. At this time there were but two churches in the district lying south of Atlantic Avenue, and west of Court Street, the South Presbyterian and Christ's Episcopal. But few of the streets were graded, and many unopened. The South Brooklyn of that day was largely farm land. Mrs. Truman Richards and Miss Myanda Downer were the pioneers of this Sunday school. Together they visited every house in that part of the city lying south of Warren Street and secured promises that forty children would attend the first session of the school. These pioneers were soon joined by Albert B. Capwell, a young lawyer, then a member of Oliver Street Baptist Church, New York, and Miss Pulchera Downer. They were in time joined by others as enthusiastic, and occasional preaching followed the pioneer work for the Sunday school, the first services being recorded as in 1847. The Sunday School was to be the mother of the Strong Place Baptist Church, and thus it happened. Rev. Sewell S. Cutting became identified with the movement, and was one of the first to preach in a hall on Columbia Street. The Rev. Elisha E. L. Taylor, the young and gifted pastor of the Pierrepont Street Baptist Church, became interested, and became the leader of the new movement. On Saturday evening, January 6, 1849, the lower room of a new and partly finished chapel was opened, and the following Sunday the Sunday school, now numbering about one hundred, was transferred to its new home. On January 31st, 1849, the church organization was formally completed. The "Declaration of Faith" and "Church Covenant" was signed by sixty-four persons, fifty-six of whom were from the mother church on Pierrepont Street, which had encouraged the work from its inception, and had given a dearly-beloved pastor also to form the new church. Among those who had signed as members were three from Amity Street, two from South, two from Oliver Street, all New York churches, one from the Second Church of Rochester, N. Y., one from Pepper Street Church, New Bassford, and one from Park Street Church, Nottingham, England. The new church was a Gothic building, 34 by 70 feet, finished in black walnut, and cost, including the real estate, a little over \$15,000, at a time when land was cheap and building costs low. The rapid growth of South Brooklyn soon required larger accommodations, and on June 19, 1851, the cornerstone of a new church edifice was laid, the new building being dedicated on September 19, 1852. It was a new departure in church building in the Baptist denomination.

The church was a masterpiece of Minard La Fever, a master architect, an



architect who became not alone nationally known but of world-fame as a church architect. It is said that he considered the interior of the Strong Place auditorium as the finest work he ever executed. The church is solidly of Gothic architecture, done in white stone; all the woodwork, the organ, the choir-loft, the gallery walls and seats, the pews and the chancel and its furniture is in solid black walnut, exquisitely carved, and all Gothic in effect. The chancel, said to be without its peer in beauty throughout America, is a work of art. It is said that in his declining years the architect was oftentimes found seated of a week day in the pews of the auditorium with eyes half closed; when approached and asked why, he always responded that it was his masterpiece and he loved to sit and watch it, meditate upon it and absorb its beauty into his soul and drink in the sermons its beauty preached to his being.

Of this structure the Rev. S. S. Cutting, D.D., on the thirty-third anniversary of Strong Place Church said:

"The structure speaks for itself. As it came from the hands of the architect there was not a thing about it, in wall, buttress, tower or finial, in form or decoration, in windows, in columns, arches, spandrels, in tracery, in the elaborate and tasteful carving, which was not pure Gothic, at a time when pure Gothic was rarely seen in American churches—a thing of beauty and a joy forever. So beautiful was it that it might stand for centuries and never grow old, never be wearisome to the eye, never offensive to the taste, as immortal as the sense of beauty in the human mind. It is not too much to say, when this structure was reared there was no house of worship on the continent comparable to it for architectural beauty and completeness."

During Passion week, 1924, the church celebrated its seventy-fifth anniversary. The exercises were combined with the public recognition of and reception for the new pastor, the Rev. Harry J. Vander Linden, and his wife.

The anniversary program started on Good Friday night with a series of historical sketches by prominent members of the church.

Dr. Taylor continued as pastor until 1865, old age making it necessary for him to relinquish his duties. He retained membership, however, until his death, August 18, 1874. During his pastorate of sixteen years, 1,078 members joined the church, five hundred and twenty-six by profession of faith or baptism.

The next pastor was Dr. Wayland Hoyt, who for forty years had been known on two continents for his eloquence and wonderful personality. He was pastor from 1867 to 1873. During these years two missions were started and grew later into flourishing churches, Greenwood Avenue Baptist Church (Dr. Francis W. O'Brien now pastor), and the Tabernacle Baptist Church (Rev. Hollsworth now pastor).

The sketch covering these pastorates was read at the memorial service by George L. Allin, grandson of two of the constituent members of the church.

The next paper was read by Mrs. Fred B. Dobbin and covered the period from 1874 to 1899. This included the pastorate of Dr. Galusha Anderson, 1873-1876; the second pastorate of Dr. Wayland Hoyt, 1876-1882; the pastorate of Dr. Frank H. Kerfoot, 1883-1886; Dr. Nathan E. Wood, 1886-1892; the Rev. Frank P. Stoddard, 1894-1900.

While for the first forty years the neighborhood has steadily grown and was almost entirely English-speaking, the population during the last years of Dr. Nathan E. Wood's pastorate began to be steadily changed by the rapid influx of immigrants. The church began to plan its work to meet the changed conditions.

The third paper was read by Deacon William Mayglothing and covered the period from 1899 to the present date. During this time the church as led by Dr. Alfred H. C. Morse, now living in Colorado; the Rev. Charles Lincoln Jackson, who stayed until called to minister among the soldiers in war camps

during the recent war; he was followed by the Rev. Floyd H. Adams, who resigned in October, 1923, to accept the pastorate in Worcester, Mass.

During this period the shifting and changing population, which confronts practically every church in Brooklyn and New York City, necessitated a changed plan of work. Today no section of Greater New York is without its influx of foreign-born or foreign extraction. Strong Place Church caught the vision of its obligation to these needy people before most of the metropolitan churches.

Today the church not alone employs a pastor, but has purchased a property on Degraw and Henry Streets, immediately adjoining the church building; between the Strong Place House and the church proper is a modern playground used by many hundreds of Italian, Swedish, Norwegian and American children and adults every day of the week. The church turned the deed to the property over to the Baptist City Extension Society, Dr. Charles Hatch Sears, executive secretary. Combined, that society and the church are putting across a modern and effective program to build up strong, useful christian citizens from the raw material of the little street urchins whose only playground in this section was the open street until Strong Place Church caught the vision of its responsibility to them.

Strong Place House has the missionaries, Miss Mixer, Miss Odell, and one boys' worker, Mr. Fleckles.

A strong program is carried on by the church in both its own building and the community house.

The church has insured the permanency of the work by securing an endowment fund of more than \$45,000. During all the years there has never been a mortgage on the property.

The Rev. Harry J. Vander Linden assumed his duties as pastor of this historic church on April 1, 1924. He was born and educated in Wisconsin. His early life habits of semi-professional athletic activities are standing him in good stead in all his work. In his school life he played baseball, basketball, ran on track teams and has several distance records out West. In later years he has been assistant pastor in Buffalo; pastor in Oakfield, N. Y., and in Earlville, N. Y., from which town he came to Brooklyn.

In Earlville his work with boys and girls and young people attracted state-wide attention, the State convention of the denomination using his church as a demonstration church for rural and boys' and girls' work. He is a young man of thirty-two years, with a knowledge of boys and girls and young people's work gained from actual and intensive experience, with a keen vision of the necessity of that work, and withal a passion for young people. He uses as his own personal motto, "His Hobby is Boys and Girls," and it appears on all the church stationery and advertising with another, "Our Boys and Girls—Our Biggest Asset."

To this end the church released its pastor for two weeks in July to conduct a summer camp for sixty boys and girls under sixteen at the Sunshine Acres fresh air camp at Commack, Long Island.

**Emmanuel Baptist Church**—The church was constituted with one hundred and ninety-four members, April 29, 1881. October 6 of the same year, it was publicly recognized by a Council of the Long Island Baptist Association, into which body it was received on October 19. Its first services were held in the Chapel of the Adelphi Academy, where it continued to worship until its own chapel on the Lafayette Avenue site, was dedicated, Septem-



ber 6, 1883. Meantime the Rev. John Humpstone was called from Albany, N. Y., to be its pastor; the pulpit having been filled in the interval by such notable ministers of the denomination as Dr. J. Wheaton Smith, Dr. John A. Broadus, and Dr. Henry G. Weston. This first pastorate, begun in December, 1882, continued for thirty-five fruitful years, and was terminated by resignation of the office for reasons of health, May 31, 1912.

Dr. Humpstone's ministry was one of the most distinguished in Brooklyn's religious life, and in the history of the Baptist denomination. His preaching did not appeal to the crowd craving popular oratory, but his sermons were of great finish and refinement, composed in rich English. His thought was profound, and yet his presentation was as simple and clear as it was forceful and impressive. He was much beloved as pastor, and in his retirement the affection of his former people does not diminish.

The main edifice, containing one of the finest auditoriums in the Greater New York, was dedicated April 17 and 18, 1887, with sermons by Dr. J. A. Elder, Dr. H. G. Weston and Dr. John A. Broadus. By 1891 the entire property was freed from all indebtedness. In February, 1914, the Rev. Dr. Avery A. Shaw was called from Cleveland, Ohio, to succeed Dr. Humpstone as pastor. He has just celebrated his tenth anniversary. At the fortieth anniversary of the church, April 29, 1921, it was published that 2,042 persons had been in its fellowship during the period. Thirty-five of the constituent members were still with the church, which enrolled nine hundred and forty-four persons in its active membership. Through all the years the church has prospered in a steadily, even annual ratio of increase and usefulness. Five of its young men have entered the Christian ministry. Since its organization the church has raised well over \$2,000,000, approximately \$1,000,000 of which has been given to causes outside its own life. It now has an invested endowment fund of \$160,000. The years have been years of harmonious co-operation, unbroken by strife of any kind, men, women and children, both rich and poor, devoting their best of self and substance to the church's interest. The church has ever been a true democracy as to its methods and spirit. Notable always was the generosity of Charles Pratt, founder of Pratt Institute, and of his family. Two of his sons are still members of the church, one of them a trustee. Other prominent members and officers were Hiram H. Lamport, President of the Continental Insurance Company; also its Secretary, Charles H. Dutcher; Alfred Bedford, father of A. C. Bedford, Chairman of the Board of the Standard Oil Company of New Jersey, the latter still a member of the church; William H. Perry, Robert J. Kimball and William H. Burger, members of the New York Stock Exchange; John Ashton Greene, senior deacon, who died in 1923 at the ripe age of ninety-five years; George H. Roberts, once postmaster; James C. Foley, a lawyer of distinction at the New York bar; Dr. John E. Richardson and Dr. Frank M. Sharpe. Many teachers in the schools of the borough have given distinction to the life of the church.

The Emmanuel House, on Steuben Street, near Myrtle Avenue, has, since 1888, been a witness to the interest of the church in the physical, social and spiritual welfare of its own outlying community. This House is still in operation as a Community Center, the Church co-operating in its maintenance with the Brooklyn and Queens Baptist Church Extension Society, which was organized in the Chapel of Emmanuel Church in 1886, Dr. Humpstone being its first president. The church, under Dr. Shaw's energetic leadership,

still goes on its prosperous way. A feature of recent years has been a large men's Bible Class, led by Frank Harvey Field. Perhaps the most significant fact of its present history is that while many of its largest givers and earliest laborers have passed on, others have come in to take their places, so that, until now, the church has neither lacked for support, nor has it seriously curtailed its beneficences. It was the largest giver of any Baptist Church of the borough to the funds of the recent new World Movement for Missions and Education.

During the World War one hundred and fifty-nine members of the church and congregation were active in war work, either at home or abroad; thirteen of them made the supreme sacrifice, in honor of whom a handsome bronze tablet has been placed in the vestibule of the main edifice, inscribed with their names. Here also is a beautiful memorial to Charles Pratt, by Herbert Adams, the noted sculptor. It is considered one of the finest conceptions of the angel figure in art. To its pastors the church has even been generous and considerate. On Dr. Humpstone's retirement, a fund of \$30,000 was raised, the interest to provide an annuity for him during his lifetime, the principal, at his death to revert to the endowment fund of the church. Dr. Shaw's decennial anniversary in 1924 was celebrated by a five months' holiday abroad, and the gift of a handsome sum of money to defray expenses. The church provides a parsonage for its minister, the house being the gift of Mabel H. Hastings, daughter of Deacon William M. Hastings.

#### Marcy Avenue Baptist Church

The Washington Avenue Baptist Church in June, 1872, took over a mission work that had been started at Marcy Avenue and Monroe Street, and organized a Sunday school which held its first session July 7, 1872, with ten officers and teachers and fifty-five scholars present. The work prospered so well that something more than a year later, November 10, 1873, the Marcy Avenue Baptist Church was organized with forty-five constituent members.

The first pastor was the Rev. Dr. Reuben Jeffery, a man of faith and courage, already holding a high place among the leaders of his day. He came to the church in December, 1873, and the first baptisms took place in January, the beginning of seven years of phenomenal growth, for during Dr. Jeffery's ministry four hundred and seventy-two were baptized, and four hundred and twenty-eight added by letter and experience, while the building had been frequently enlarged to meet the growing needs. Very evidently the blessing of God was on the work.

Dr. Jeffery was a broad-minded man, whose work was educational and evangelistic. The bronze tablet in the church erected to his memory bears this sentence as interpreting his ministry,—“He opened unto us the Scriptures.” His zeal and power in preaching attracted strong men and women, forming a very efficient organization. He believed in freedom, and his leadership tended to give the church the broad, generous, tolerant spirit which it has always manifested.

Dr. Jeffery was followed in the pastorate by Rev. Hugh O. Pentecost, who remained but a brief time. In December, 1885, the church installed as pastor a man who had preached at a single service in the mission before the church was organized, and who had never been forgotten, Rev. W. C. P. Rhoades, D.D., who led Marcy Avenue for more than three decades in the great creative period of its history. Within a few months after he came a new building was imperative, a “Building Fund” was started, the present site purchased, and plans for a new church prepared, with such a forward vision that the building is still scarcely in-



ferior to the most modern church buildings in its adaptability to modern needs. The cornerstone was laid October 1, 1887, and the church was dedicated the following September. On the occasion of Dr. Rhoades' fifteenth anniversary, the mortgage was paid off.

Dr. Rhoades was a wise builder in spiritual as well as material things. Evangelism of the better sort continued to be the policy of the church and during the thirty-one years of his ministry, Dr. Rhoades had the joy of welcoming 3,249 persons into its membership. A marvelous record! He was a wise administrator, a studious, thoughtful preacher and teacher, a loving pastor and shepherd of his flock. The church accepted reluctantly his resignation offered in 1916, and made him pastor emeritus. A bronze tablet was erected in his honor during his lifetime, bearing these two inscriptions, "He made full proof of his ministry," and "This building is his monument."

The Sunday school, as it was the beginning of the work on this field, has always been one of its strong points, and during Dr. Rhoades' pastorate, when the Bedford Section was being rapidly built up, the School was both very efficient and very large, the average attendance for December, 1891, being 1,388. In 1888 there were 134 baptisms from the School alone. It was a pioneer in departmental organization, and is still one of the best organized schools. The strong laymen and faithful women who have always been found in the church have done a great work through its Sunday school.

The present pastor, the Rev. John M. Moore, D.D., began his ministry in April, 1917, and has continued the broad liberal policy of the church. It is still attracting thoughtful men and women to its worship and its work, and is leading young people and boys and girls to accept the Saviour and enter His service. The changing character of the community has brought about new conditions and new demands upon the church, and it is entering upon the new lines of co-operation and community work which are now needed, with earnestness and zeal. As its memorial to its men and women who were in the service during the World War, the church has fitted up a room for social work, called "The Hut," which has been widely used not only by the young people but by the church as a whole, and has been a great addition to the equipment. Dr. Moore is chairman of the Administrative Committee of the Federal Council of the Churches of Christ in America, and through this and other contacts has a wide knowledge of conditions and needs throughout our own country and the world at large, and the church is feeling more and more that Christianity has to do with the whole of life,—personal, social, community, national and international, and that "the world is its parish."

Marcy Avenue celebrated its Golden Anniversary November 4-11, 1923, and had a delightful week, in which many memories were brought up and many old friends recalled who were among the faithful workers in the days gone by. Two of the constituent members are still connected with the church, Mrs. William B. Fox and Mrs. Emma P. Elliott. Mrs. Fox was honorary chairman of the Anniversary Committee, and was present at the meetings but Mrs. Elliott was kept away by ill health. Loving mention was made of Theodore Banta, the first superintendent of the Sunday school; of William B. Fox, the first deacon elected by the church, and a member of the Board till his home-going in 1922, having been for many years its president, and who was associated with Mr. Banta from the first in the Sunday school, succeeding him as its superintendent; of Henry E. Parsons, for many years president of the Board of Trustees, genial and beloved; of George Corwin

Stout, who for twenty-eight years led the church in the ministry of its music as organist and choir master; and of a host of others who by their courage and their faith and their labors helped to make of Marcy Avenue Baptist Church a church approved of God.

### The Greene Avenue Baptist Church

The Greene Avenue Baptist Church, between Lewis and Stuyvesant Avenues, also has an interesting history. It was incorporated on June 13, 1854, as the First Baptist Society of Bushwick. The name was changed March 21, 1866, to the Gethsemane Baptist Church of Brooklyn, and it was again renamed as the Willoughby Avenue Baptist Church January 6, 1879. Its first place of worship was an Episcopal Church at Bushwick Avenue and Jefferson Street that had no baptistry. The ordinance of baptism by immersion was conducted by the pastor, the Rev. Silas Illsly, it is recorded, in a pond at Sumner Avenue and Stockton Street. The church bought five lots in Willoughby Avenue about 1866, sold the old church, worshipped temporarily at Whittlesey's Omnibus House, built a new church and dedicated it January 20, 1868, its membership, at first very small, having grown to five hundred and twenty-five. Among its early pastors was the Rev. A. Stewart Walsh, who took up his work in 1872, remaining until 1877. He was instrumental in formulating the covenant and articles of practice which the church uses to this day. In 1874, a controversy arose in the church between the adherents of "open" and "close" communion, and a number of the latter faction withdrew from the church and formed the Trinity Baptist Church. The Greene Avenue Church outgrew its quarters under the pastorate of Rev. Robert B. Montgomery, who came to it in 1881, and a new church was built on Greene Avenue, between Lewis and Stuyvesant Avenues, costing \$60,000. This was opened April 13, 1892, when the Ladies' Aid Society presented the church with an organ costing \$3,000. Pastor Montgomery died December 4, 1893, and was succeeded by Rev. Cornelius Woelfkin, now pastor of the Park Avenue Baptist Church, Manhattan, in May, 1894. Dr. Woelfkin became one of Brooklyn's noted preachers, and was very successful; but in the late nineties the character of the neighborhood so changed that the church was faced by the difficulty of replacing members who sought other locations. Greene Avenue celebrated its golden jubilee in June, 1904, the high spot of the event being the burning of a mortgage for \$25,000 which had been met by voluntary contributions. Dr. Woelfkin resigned in 1905 and was succeeded by Rev. Donald MacLaurin, who served until 1907. In 1908 Dr. Curtis Lee Laws began his pastorate, and became a popular leader, the church membership rising to 1,100 in October, 1910. In June, 1911, Rev. George McKiernan became assistant pastor, serving until 1914, when he became pastor of the Wyckoff Baptist Church, Brooklyn. In November, 1912, Dr. Laws resigned to become editor of "The Examiner," now "The Watchman Examiner," but continued to preach until his successor was found in April, 1914, in the person of Rev. Maurice Ambrose Levy, who was the church's "war pastor," seventy-eight of the church members going to the war. The venerable Rev. Webster A. Maul acted as honorary assistant pastor until his death in 1918. In 1919 the church sold lots in the rear of the building for \$12,000. In February, 1919, Mr. Levy resigned to take up work as pastor of the First Baptist Church of Pittsfield, Mass., and Greene Avenue was without a pastor for almost a year, although served by notable preachers. On January 2, 1920, Rev. Charles Francis McKoy, D.D., became pastor, and remains, a very successful preacher. Through his efforts an organ costing \$30,000 was installed in August, 1921, one of the finest in the country. There have been



recitals on this instrument by the organist, Mr. Preston, as well as by eminent visiting artists, both American and from abroad. In 1923 Greene Avenue had 948 members, its property was valued at \$126,612, and the amount of money raised for all purposes for the year was \$30,635.

#### The Long Island Baptist Association

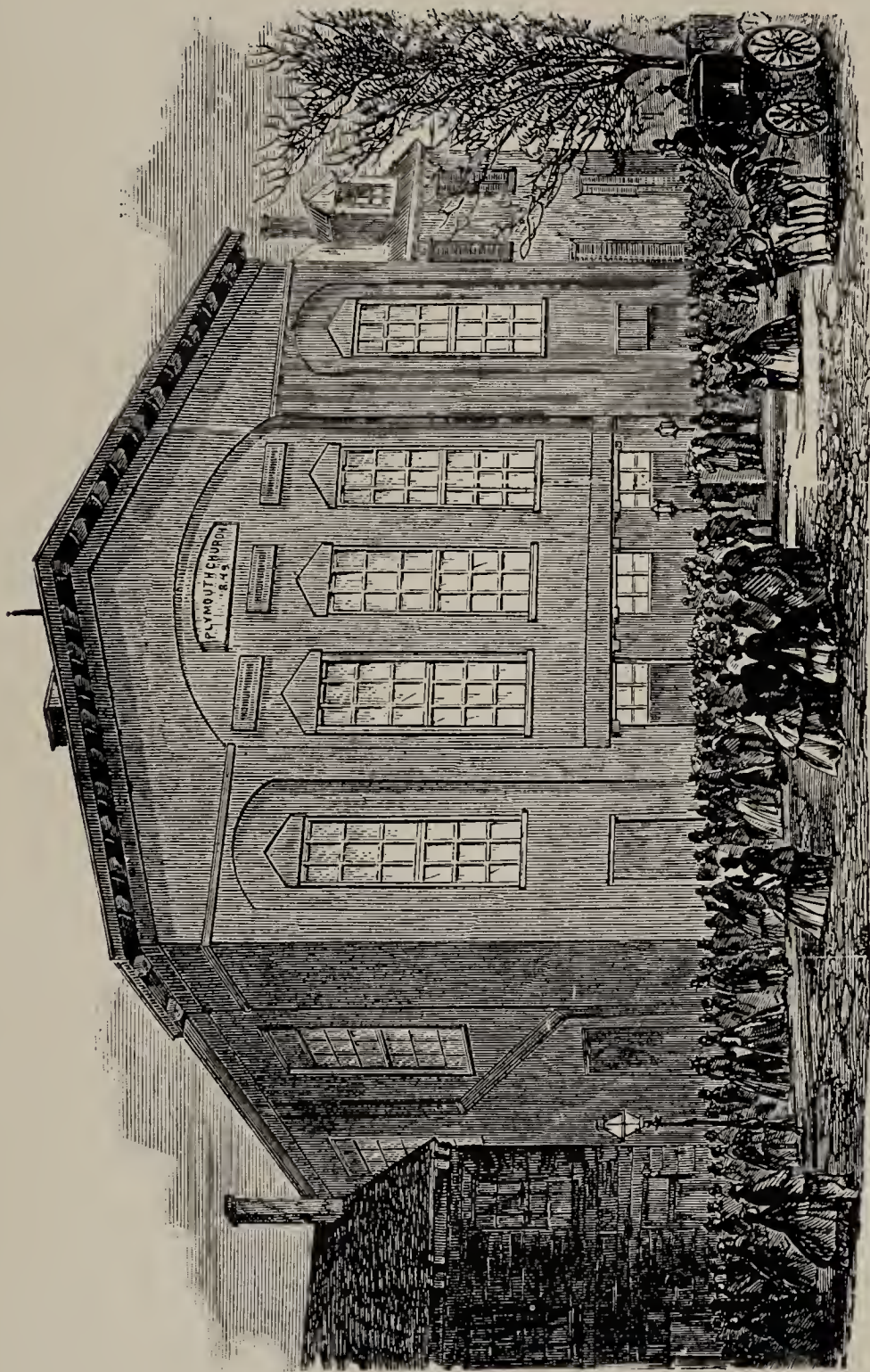
The Long Island Baptist Association was incorporated by the State in 1875, with Albert B. Capwell, J. E. Ludden, Edgar A. Hutchins, Warren Beebe, Thomas W. Valentine and William Richardson as the incorporators, "and their visiting artists both American and from abroad. In 1923 Greene Avenue had 948 associates." Its objects were to "cultivate fraternal sympathy and union among the members of the associate churches, the erection of houses of worship, the efficient prosecution of missionary, benevolent and Sunday School work, and the establishment and strengthening of Baptist Churches throughout Long Island." Added to the incorporators were A. G. Lawson, James Boughton, John Westervelt, George Allin, David Moore, Lucius E. Baldwin, Jesse B. Thomas, Justin D. Fulton, H. S. Anable, Joseph N. Folwell, J. C. Grimmell, George E. Perrine, George B. Forrester, Christopher Rhodes, Henry B. Warring and J. S. Ladd as trustees. Operations were to be carried on in the counties of Kings, Queens and Suffolk, and the principal office was in Brooklyn. At the twenty-second anniversary of this society held in Greenwood Church on October 16, 1888, N. E. Wood, of the Committee on Education, presented a report to the effect that a larger number of young men than usual were looking toward the ministry, yet the number was small compared with the membership of Long Island churches. "Less than one-third of a college-bred man for each church," said the report, "need not foster an overweening pride in our attentions to intellectual requirements." Pastors and churches were urged to encourage higher education; and the insular position of the association was put forth as one cause of the poor showing made. A closer relation with the brethren of the State and the State Convention of Baptists was urged. Another cause of the unwillingness of young men to enter upon full education for the ministry was given as their haste to go into trade. "They have no time to give to intellectual training. The materialism of business seizes them, and they pass on and away from the schools." The Committee on the State of Religion in the Churches for that year reported that there were one hundred and six less baptisms than the year previously, and there were fifty-five churches with more than forty pastors on Long Island. Among the reports to the Association at that session was one of the Baptist Home in Brooklyn, stating that the capacity of the building had reached its maximum, and suggesting enlargement of the building, at a cost of \$60,000. In following years the Home was enlarged, and its great beneficence was noted.

## CHAPTER XIX

### CONGREGATIONAL—PLYMOUTH CHURCH

WHO is the greatest man you ever met? Nobody probably encounters a wider variety of noted men than a reporter for a metropolitan newspaper. As a young reporter meeting many of the older set who had known Henry Ward Beecher in his prime, the writer often heard the question asked and the reply ever was without a moment's pause: "Henry Ward Beecher."





PLYMOUTH CHURCH, 1867





One of the most picturesque and commanding figures in this country, and one of the most powerful in influence for more than a generation during the Civil War period and afterwards, was Henry Ward Beecher. As pastor of Plymouth Church during that long period his fame, quickly manifest and constantly growing, did more, perhaps, to give Brooklyn itself wide note than any other single human agency in its history. He stood at the head of American preachers, and as a publicist and patriot seemed supreme. He did much for Brooklyn, and as much for humanity.

In Beecher's day the magic means of communication of today were unknown; but such was his vogue that the press everywhere gave currency to his sermons and addresses, and in remote places newspapers that carried his thought were cherished and read and read again. During the war period he was the idol of the young "Badger" Abolitionist, the Kansas Free Soiler, the Union soldier, and the politician. One soldier of the army of the Southwest said: "We soldiers looked upon Beecher at home as Beecher in the field. He sharpened the swords, ran the bullets, forged the cannon. His speeches read by the soldier made Spartans of the most timid. He enthused, encouraged and electrified as no one else could." There was no momentous question of the time that he did not touch to illumination.

For temporary use to accommodate his congregation a building of rough boards was put up and placed on wooden pins in Pierrepont Street, near Clinton. This was used for almost two years, and Mr. Beecher's twin sons, Alfred and Arthur, were baptized there. The structure was so rude in construction that during a severe rain the pelting drops made so much noise Mr. Beecher scarcely could make himself heard.

Beecher's first note as a preacher was won in Indianapolis, where he held a pastorate of eight years. He accepted a call from Plymouth Church because his physician had prescribed a change of climate for his wife, who was an invalid. He came to Brooklyn on October 10, 1847, with his wife and three children, at the age of thirty-four years.

His dress, his boots, his general appearance were typical of the West, then a rough country. His free, brusque address and direct approach were in strong contrast with the manners of other and more polished clergymen. Thus everything he said and did was made the subject of remark. His unconventionality, of course, brought him into greater attention than would have been paid to him had he been more like others. But his wonderful gifts made that attention legitimate. Few men ever lived more directly under the public gaze than Mr. Beecher did for forty years in Brooklyn.

In 1847, when he began his pastorate in Plymouth Church, the Church was the center of fashion, of the finest clothes, and the display of wealth. Theaters were few and not in high favor. Clubs were not what they are today. The religion of New England had spread to the populous Middle West and firmly established itself. Church floors were thickly and richly carpeted, cushions for the feet and knees were as soft as they could be made. The organs were concealed and discoursed the finest music. The lights were dimmed. The churches were open to wealth and poverty alike, but they repelled the poor. Those who could not keep pace with the outlay necessary to support the church stayed away.

Those who could not don black broadcloth or adorn themselves in black silk, black lace and velvet did not go to show off their lack of these evidences of wealth. The congregation was scattered in the pews, giving the appearance of being much larger than it really was. The preachers were judged by the success



they had in raising money as well as in saving souls. The member gaining in affluence and desiring greater social position might go up by transferring to a wealthier church. Expensive singers were engaged, costing only a fraction less than operatic voices. They gave the prelude to the sermon, but the audiences were small nevertheless.

Henry Ward Beecher brought a living thing to Brooklyn. Life entered his church with him. The service was adapted ever to the needs and tastes of those attending. Nobody felt ill at ease. The congregation laughed and cried by turns. Joyousness, candor, simplicity reigned supreme.

Sunday mornings the ferry boats were crowded with persons from New York crossing to Brooklyn to hear Beecher. They were eager, earnest people in business suits, travelers from the West. In Brooklyn, street cars and carriages of all kinds carried a throng toward Plymouth Church.

The simple, unassuming man shocked and jolted conventionality in the church and out. Long before churches went into neighborhood work, Harriet Beecher Stowe, Mr. Beecher's sister, advocated billiard rooms, bowling alleys and gymnastic apparatus for the development of Christian muscle in connection with Plymouth Church.

Social gatherings were made a feature of its life early in the Beecher pastorate. The pastor frequented them and was accessible for advice or sympathy to all.

Mr. Beecher was not graceful in manner, nor imposing in person. His strong trait was sincerity and freedom from affectation. His language was refined; his manner of the utmost decorum. His command of himself and his powers, his voice and gestures, was complete and masterful. After the opening of the service the great preacher cast aside all convention in his sermon.

Like Franklin, his was a sound mind in a sound body. His eloquence, like all true eloquence, was embodied in action. He expressed physical health and vigor. His intuition was great. He understood quickly, anticipated accurately, and could transfer his conclusions and opinions to the minds and spirits of his fellow-men. Thus he drew them onward and upward and wielded his great power over them in the cause of humanity. Never did he appeal to their sense of fear. He was dramatic, not theatrical.

Few men have been more magnetic. Whenever he appeared, no matter where, faces brightened and souls quivered with anticipation. He never lost his self-possession, his ready wit or his good humor. Mr. Beecher loved music and loved art. He was fond of gardening, and his enthusiasm is given as the cause of the tasteful appearance of Indianapolis, where he preached. His love of music often played upon his emotions and brought tears.

He was a moral force. Beecher preached the Spirit and the Power of Christian life. He let orthodoxy slide. He taught that illness was a sin as a general thing and always a shame. He considered life as of great length and of infinite possibilities for happiness properly improved.

He talked Love and preached Love. Love toward men was the fulfilment of the law of God; Love toward God was the essence of Christianity. He regarded the doctrine of hell as "barbaric, heinous, hideous." He attacked the civil and political abuses he saw about him—slavery, intemperance, immorality. He favored woman suffrage, free trade and individual liberty. He was dauntless in taking a stand.

His physical strength and commanding voice enabled him to dominate and rule the tempest, and he rejoiced in the battle. He was indiscreet in speech, often impulsive and tactless, but never afraid to burn the bridges behind him,



come what may. His stand against slavery was of Lincoln's type. He did not advocate its abolition but rather its restriction until it could be wiped out by public sentiment. Yet he was attacked savagely as an Abolitionist. He rose to the height of the dramatic when he sold a slave girl at auction on the pulpit steps of Plymouth Church. It aroused the people to a realization of slavery in its true meaning as nothing else could have done. It stirred the North to frenzy. This climax has been immortalized in bronze in the Beecher statue in front of Brooklyn's Borough Hall. It was the supreme moment of Beecher's life.

In 1884 Mr. Beecher came out for Grover Cleveland as he had done for Horace Greeley in 1872. His letters repudiated many orthodox doctrines and beliefs. To many of them he never had adhered in his sermons. Long before, he had expressed his disbelief in hell and eternal punishment.

Sometimes on Communion Sundays he would invite any one present who felt in the spirit of the occasion and worthy to sit at the Table of the Lord whether the person had professed faith in Christ or had not. "There may be some of you fitter than those who have," he would say; "I shall not pretend to judge the heart; I leave that to yourself."

Mr. Beecher won where others failed because he knew men. Sitting in an office he was attracted by a sea captain who came in roystering, swearing and open hearted. He was subject to seasickness, although he had followed the sea for years. That was Mr. Beecher's malady as well. After he had listened to the captain's tale of sufferings, he remarked: "Captain, if I were a preacher to sailors like you, I should represent hell as an eternal voyage, with every man on board in the agonies of seasickness, the crisis always imminent but never coming."

Although he came to Brooklyn with the stamp of the sturdy West upon him, he was a New Englander. He was born in the parsonage at Litchfield, Conn., June 24, 1813, the son of Lyman Beecher, also famous as a preacher; and there he lived until twelve years old. His childhood tasted the hardships common with country clergymen and their families of that time. In his personal reminiscences he spoke of the labors that fell to him as a boy, for clergymen in such circumstances were in the posture of small farmers, and the sweat of their brows as well as the exercise of their brains was necessary for existence. Beecher remembered when he and his sister danced and cried with the cold of a winter morning while the father, none too warmly clad, had to dig his way out in the snow and again dig his way to wood to be cut for a fire. His mother (Roxana Foote) died when he was three years old. His infant memories of her were like his memories of flowers and birds, something to cherish. A year later his father married Harriet Porter, a woman of Puritanic impulse, but that she was a good stepmother something of his boyhood recollections testifies, as witness this:

"Going to meeting! There was the new Sunday hat, round, stiff, hard and respectable. Although this hat was disagreeable to our head, yet we had a wonderful reverence for it, and spent no inconsiderable portion of time in church in getting it dirty and then brushing it clean. Our jacket, too, was new. Only a handkerchief was then in the pocket—no knife, no marbles, no strings, no stones, no fishhooks, no dried angle-worms. No. A boy's Sunday pocket of the olden time was purged of all temptations. As soon as we were dressed and mustered in the sitting room an inspection was held. The collar was pulled up a little, the hair had a fresh lick from the brush, the mouth must be wiped with a wet towel, the shoe-string tied, and after being turned round and round we were started off. 'Now, Henry, be a good boy.' 'Yes, ma'am.' 'You must not laugh or tease Harriet.' 'No, ma'am.' 'Don't stop on the road—go right in when you get to church.' 'Yes, ma'am.' Every word was sincerely promised and efficaciously broken in ten minutes! Oh, how high the trees seemed! Oh, how bright the heavens were!"



A real boy, he was, as he was afterward a real man. And he remembered among the things he learned to do as a lad, with "chores," the hemming of towels and the knitting of mittens and suspenders. Thus a good stepmother's discipline. And he lived in an atmosphere of Calvinism, but that rigid, narrow faith did not abide. He was an adorer of Nature, and his religion was based on the influence of God through Nature. His summer home in Peekskill was to him an earthly paradise. In his daily diary kept there he chronicled the songs and the business of birds, the aspects of flowers, and all the infinite beauties of growth and season. Powerful as were the impressions he enforced in public, his domestic life was said to be gentle to sweetness.

His influence was more potent than that of any other American of his time. Most great men have a public manner and a private manner. Mr. Beecher was always the same. Some of his critics called him a great actor. As to this one of his admirers said: "Beecher is no dissembler. The actor must be one. Beecher could not express with force any feeling or emotion which did not come from within and dominate him." The Rev. Dr. Lyman Abbott said of him:

"He was a great preacher because he was a great and good man. He was pure as a pure woman, simple as a child, frank to a fault. His most intimate friends never heard from his lips a suggestion of a salacious jest. I never knew a man bold enough to venture one in his presence. He was incapable of deceit or artifice. He could conceal when concealment was necessary only by maintaining an absolutely impenetrable silence. The charges of duplicity and falsehood which a foul conspiracy brought against him were to all who knew him as intellectually absurd as they were morally monstrous."

Mr. Beecher's character was so original that the testimony of those who knew him is seriously interesting. Dr. W. S. Searle, a famous physician, in the "North American Review," declared: "History records no man who outranked his fellows in more directions and to a greater extent, and who fell below the average in fewer elements and developments of mind and soul."

The power and fame of national heroes in politics, government and other fields in which they directly represent the public through suffrage, are in a sense the power and influence of the nation itself. Mr. Beecher's fame and influence grew out of his own individuality and his own circumstances. His great church, his effect upon the religious thought and teaching of his time, his wide journalistic influence, his popularity as a lecturer, his general acceptance as the one man to voice public feeling on all sorts of occasions, his political influence at home, his triumphant changing of the attitude and course of England during the Civil War, all this grew out of the great power of the man himself. He held no office, he bore no political label, no party collar, no professional badge, yet above all rank and beyond all titles stands his simple name.

Mr. Beecher's mission to England in 1863 has been declared to have been the most remarkable achievement since Benjamin Franklin's pleas for the young Republic at the Court of Versailles. The British government was favoring the South in the Civil War. On his advent the London "Times"—"The Thunderer," a newspaper powerful for ages—attacked him, and "Punch" caricatured him. As Oliver Wendell Holmes wrote in "The Atlantic Monthly," "he made a single speech in that country." But it was delivered piecemeal in various places. Its exordium, on October 9, was at Manchester, and the peroration was pronounced on the 20th of that month in Exeter Hall, London. Beecher kissed no royal hand, talked with no courtly diplomat, was the guest of no titled legislator, and had no official existence whatever. But through the hearts of the people he reached the nobility and the throne itself. He changed the attitude of the ruling classes of England.

Another achievement but little less notable as an example of his power,

although its benefit was more personal than general, was his winning of the South from hatred of himself and even of his name, for his sister, Harriet Beecher Stowe, the Harriet of the boyhood reminiscence, author of "Uncle Tom's Cabin," was also detested below Mason and Dixon's line. Mr. Beecher was one of the most potent of the foes of slavery and of the South's insistence upon that "institution," and naturally he was anathema. He had lectured for years under the Redpath auspices, being perhaps the most distinguished lecturer in America. and afterwards under Major Pond's management. But he had avoided the South. After a bitter experience in Richmond, through which he came with flying colors, sentiment changed as though a magician had touched the people's hearts. No lecture rooms were large enough to hold those who wished to hear him. In Memphis he appeared in Agricultural Hall, which had 4,000 seats. In Nashville he had great honors. But anterior to these experiences came his test.

Major Pond had arranged for a lecture in the Richmond Theater to open the tour of the South, for which Beecher was to receive \$400, a large honorarium in those days. As they went aboard the sleeper at Baltimore, Pond was handed a dispatch from W. T. Powell, manager of the theater, saying: "No use coming. Beecher will not be allowed to speak in Richmond. No tickets sold." This dispatch was not communicated to Mr. Beecher, and Pond replied: "Have started. Mr. Beecher will be on hand to keep his contract." Powell boarded the train before it reached Richmond and told Pond that the feeling against Mr. Beecher was so bitter in that city that it would not do for him to attempt to speak; that not a ticket had been sold, and he had not dared to advertise the event. He showed newspapers containing abusive articles and a printed circular that had been distributed of the most scurrilous malignity. The vindictive screed also included Harriet Beecher Stowe.

Pond would not permit Powell to see Mr. Beecher. Arriving at Richmond, they went to a hotel and registered. They were sneered at even by the hotel proprietor, while his underlings were almost abusive. At breakfast even the colored waiters—of the race that Beecher had been instrumental in freeing—were disgustingly uncivil. In the lobby, after breakfast, Mr. Beecher, fond of children, at once won the good graces of a golden haired young girl, but her mother, coming up suddenly, snatched her from Beecher's presence as though rescuing her from a beast of prey.

Pond released the manager of the theater from his contract and hired the theater for the night, had bills printed and distributed, and went ahead with his plans. The Virginia Legislature was in session. It passed an informal vote declaring that no member of it should go near the theater that night. The Tobacco Board, also in session, took the same course. In the evening Pond could get no one to attend the door and himself took that station. An extra force of a dozen policemen furnished on request of the theater manager were useless, as they also were antagonistic. The principal Presbyterian minister of the city, also head of a local college, wrote the chief of police disclaiming sympathy with Mr. Beecher, but asking the chief to prevent the carrying out of a threat to "egg" the distinguished visitor.

The theater filled with men, even the legislators, perhaps each one thinking no other member of that body would come, were there in force, as were also the tobacco men. No woman was present, and the men wore their hats and conducted themselves derisively. Mr. Beecher realizing at last all that had been kept from him came to his post on the stage, fearless, and won that antagonistic audience, and not an egg was thrown. His peroration was a tribute to Virginia as "the mother of Presidents." And he had the courage to say "Virginia pros-



pers when she sets her mark high and breeds her sons for presidents and for position, but how changed when she came to breed them for the market!"

Pond and Beecher hurried to the hotel after the lecture. They were followed by the audience, besieging their door, and mistaken for a mob. In the company was the lieutenant governor, who introduced other officials, all of whom had heard the lecture. They besought Mr. Beecher to remain and give another lecture that their wives might have the pleasure of hearing him, offering him \$500. But he was engaged elsewhere.

What was the secret of Mr. Beecher's great charm? From analysis of his method as an orator it would seem that he combined the gifts of many who with far less have become celebrated. His public utterances had a racy humor and a philosophic elevation; common-sense in an unusual degree; originality in structure and idea, enforced by remarkable felicity of phrase; fervor in delivery, dramatic force, at times a fresh and breezy manner, light and shade; with him high reasoning suddenly passed into playful satire, and impassioned declamation was softened to soothing pathos; and logical analysis culminated in poetic imagery of exquisite beauty. And above all was the human element. Therefore his marvelous power.

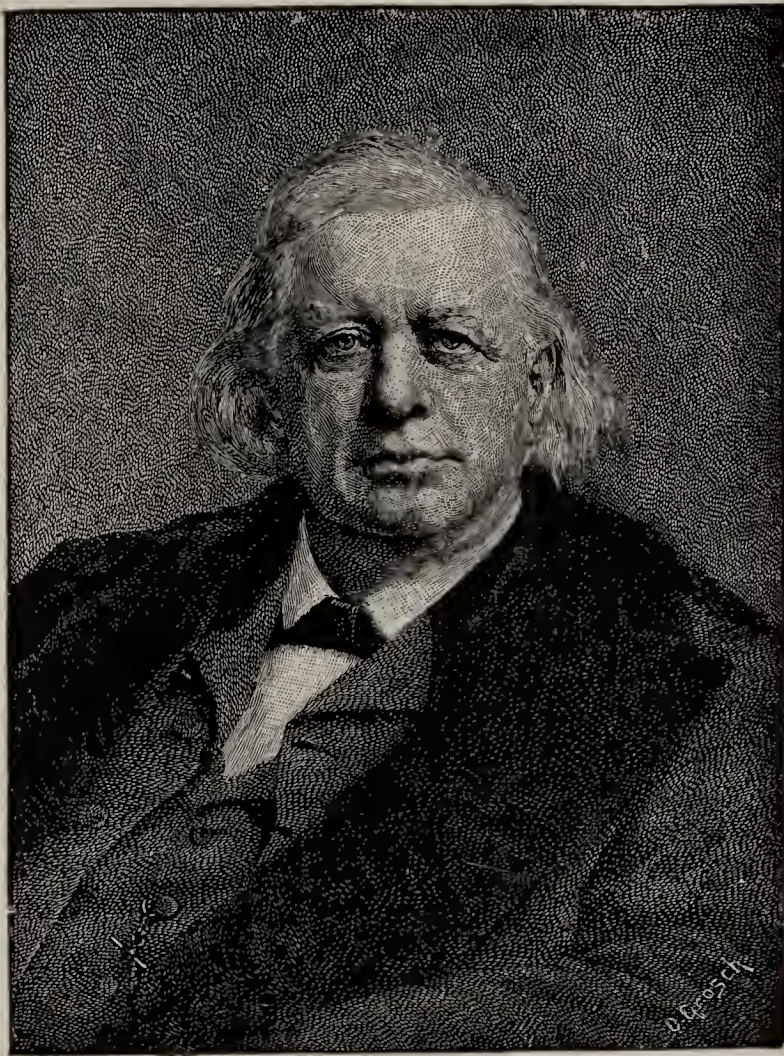
Suddenly, however, this commanding figure—this proud reputation—was clouded by a great domestic scandal. Brooklyn was for the moment shocked to a point not to be described, the whole metropolitan district was agog with it, and even the country at large halted in sad amazement, for Beecher was beloved everywhere, and everywhere was esteemed as a prophet. The sensation was as profound as would have followed an unannounced eclipse of the sun.

It was the public projection of the scandal that caused the sensation. It had traversed private channels and been voiced only in whispers for a time. The climax, however, was the sudden bringing of a suit against Henry Ward Beecher by Theodore Tilton, who alleged that the great preacher had seduced his wife, and that she had confessed to him. Tilton was a litterateur and journalistically prominent as the editor of "The Independent." Mr. Beecher was the editor of "The Christian Union." These were competing, if not rival religious newspapers; and there were many who declared that the suit was the outgrowth of professional jealousy on the part of Tilton, although the Tiltons—the plaintiff and his wife—and the Beechers—the defendant and his wife—were socially friendly if not intimate.

There never, perhaps, was a lawsuit more confusing in its details. There were charges and counter-charges; assertions and denials; and it is no wonder that the jury, after sitting under a mass of testimony never before equaled, possibly, for six months, enduring the examination and cross-examination of a cloud of witnesses by no less than eleven lawyers, all of them distinguished at the time, should have failed to agree after deliberating for eight days by themselves. These jurymen were Chester Carpenter, foreman; Henry Thyer, George Hull, Christopher Fitter, Samuel Flate, A. R. Case, Edward Wheelan, William H. Davis, John F. Taylor, William T. Jeffrey, Griffin B. Halstead, and John McMurn. Samuel D. Morris and Thomas E. Pearsall were the plaintiff's attorneys, and Roger A. Pryor, William Fullerton, and William A. Neach of his counsel. Thomas G. Shearman and John W. Sterling were the attorneys for the defendant, while John L. Hill, John K. Porter, Benjamin F. Tracy, and William M. Evarts were of his counsel.

Day by day, weeks running into months, the metropolitan newspapers carried page after page of testimony. Sensation followed sensation. No case in the courts before nor since ever could approach this for voluminous publicity.





HENRY WARD BEECHER





Libel suits against newspapers were brought by persons who assumed they had been libeled by publications in connection with the case. And the newspapers, each day, after devoting pages to the event, seemed never to have enough of it. One of them, after giving pages, would assemble at the end of its account daily a column or more in fine type of gossip, rumors, personal references, and the like, under the caption "Scandal Salad." Every community that knew Beecher had partisan divisions for and against. But there was no authoritative decision anywhere. A great church council of Plymouth adherents met day after day to discuss the case in all its bearings, like a religious convention, and the mass seemed to be loyal to the great pastor, as thousands of the best minds outside were loyal to him.

A prominent figure in the matter was Francis D. Moulton, a mutual friend of both families, as it appeared, as his wife was also a friend of both, and a comforter of Mrs. Tilton. On December 30, 1876, Beecher, at Moulton's house, and at his request, met Tilton, who there preferred certain charges against Beecher, reading in support of them from a manuscript in his hand a statement implicating Beecher. Tilton destroyed the manuscript as he read it, and subsequently destroyed the original document of which it purported to be a copy. What that document contained, whether a charge of adultery or of improper solicitation, was one of the fundamental questions of the trial. This charge was secured, as the testimony showed, from Mrs. Tilton by her husband when she was confined to her bed and greatly weakened by a dangerous illness. The evening of the day of this interview at Moulton's between the principals—and this was long before the bringing of the suit—Beecher went to Tilton's house with Tilton's approbation and had an interview with Mrs. Tilton and by her was exonerated of the charge. And within a few weeks the former friendly relations of the families were resumed. In fact, for three years afterward Beecher, Tilton and Moulton were friendly to all appearances, and Mrs. Moulton was on friendly terms with Mr. Beecher and continued a solicitous friend of Mrs. Tilton. The testimony showed that from 1871 to 1874 Tilton quietly aired among his personal friends his grievance against Beecher, but not until July, 1874, after Beecher had defied Tilton and called for a committee of investigation by his church did Tilton make any public charge of adultery.

In the fall of 1870 Mrs. Tilton left Tilton on the advice of Mr. and Mrs. Beecher, with whom she had consulted as to his treatment of her, but she returned to him on account of her child. In December, 1870, in conference with H. C. Bowen, the owner of "The Independent," of which Tilton was editor, Tilton prepared a letter which Bowen delivered, demanding that Beecher leave his pulpit, Tilton's avowed purpose being "To strike Mr. Beecher to the heart." Beecher did not deign a reply. Later Bowen refused to support Tilton's position and threatened him with dismissal if he made public the interview between them. Later also Tilton was discharged from "The Independent," and Moulton came into the case as his friend. As such, Moulton tried first to have Tilton reinstated but failed. Subsequently, as the testimony showed, importuned on behalf of Tilton, Mr. Beecher gave him several thousand dollars, of which \$5,000 went to "The Golden Age," a new literary paper which Tilton started. The rest of the money, it appeared, going to defray school bills of Miss Bessie Turner, a protegee of Tilton's. In "The Golden Age" appeared a romance by Tilton, entitled "Tempest Tossed," the prominent woman character of which was said to have been his idea of his wife.

That Henry Ward Beecher was reëstablished in the affections of his public



was apparent. After the trial he resumed lecturing under the management of Major Pond, delivering no less than 1,261 lectures, in all parts of the country, to appreciation as pronounced as that formerly enjoyed. In Topeka, Kansas, he encountered a negro, said to be at the time the richest colored man in the neighborhood, who came to the hotel to see him with his wife. He had been a servitor in the Beecher family in Litchfield, in Henry Ward Beecher's boyhood. When in the Beecher family, this man, Smith by name, used to sleep in the same room with the boy, Henry, who told that the negro would pray, read his Bible, talk to God, comment upon all things with a wonderful familiarity and a concentrated active wit that altogether moved the boy to the very depths of his soul. And this negro, no doubt, influenced both the future preacher in his antagonism to slavery, and his sister, Harriet, to the writing of "Uncle Tom's Cabin," which perhaps has had a greater circulation the world over than any secular story ever printed.

In January, 1878, Mr. Beecher accepted the chaplaincy of the famous 13th Regiment, National Guard, of Brooklyn. Some of his flock in Plymouth Church questioned this, urging that it was beneath his dignity. But he convinced them that it was a duty, inasmuch as a military organization, having no women in association, in its clubs and its subordinate activities might be tempted to things which the presence of a chaplain would discourage. At the dedication of the Martyr's Tomb, Fort Greene, Brooklyn, Chaplain Beecher was invited to appear in the procession with officers of the regiment on a horse. He appeared before the parade on a mettlesome Kentucky steed, and the Colonel was afraid for the Chaplain's safety, for when the band began to play the horse started to cavort in a way that made spectators nervous. "I can stand any demonstration," said Mr. Beecher, "as long as the horse enjoys himself." And he explained the fine horsemanship he displayed on this occasion as a natural sequel to his duties as an Indianapolis pastor, during which he had to ride the country on pastoral visits.

On June 19, 1886, Mr. Beecher sailed on the "Etruria" for a second visit to England. The vessel started at six o'clock in the morning. More than 1,000 Plymouth Church people had risen before sunrise in order to pay him a farewell tribute. They went down the bay on the steamer "Grand Republic." The voyager's stateroom was filled with flowers and other tokens of the love of his admirers and friends. One gift, or tribute, was a flock of carrier pigeons, the individual birds of which could be used by Mr. and Mrs. Beecher on the voyage to send messages to their friends. These pigeons were dispatched from the ship at various intervals in practice of this idea.

There were memories in England of the great service Beecher had rendered in 1863 in turning that nation to the support of the North during the Civil War. He was everywhere greeted with enthusiasm and appreciation. During his sojourn he preached in various pulpits that had held famous clergymen, and in London also he delivered a notable sermon in the City Temple, and thousands that could not gain admission were turned away. On July 9 he was tendered a banquet by the American Exchange at the Hotel Metropole, London. Eighty distinguished Englishmen and Americans sat at table, the President of the Exchange, Henry Gillig, being on Beecher's right, and E. J. Phelps, American Minister, on his left.

Mr. Beecher's return to Brooklyn was greeted with remarkable tokens of affection by a throng. He was not in good health. He finally took to his bed, and died of apoplexy at his home in Brooklyn on March 8, 1887, at 9.40 p. m. The Rev. Charles H. Hall, of the Church of the Holy Trinity, officiated at his funeral in Plymouth Church, the city paying sad tribute. The great preacher was buried in Greenwood Cemetery, where his grave is impressively monumented.

Beecher's friends often questioned his invariable kindness to persons who were not kind to him. His attitude during the great trial, and particularly before it was instituted, toward those antagonistic to him was characteristic of his reply to those who thought him too charitable toward others. "Can we go further," he asked "than to bless those who curse us and pray for those who despitefully use us?" And in life, with this doctrine, he was joyous and radiantly happy.

If all of Henry Ward Beecher's valuable utterances had been embalmed in print, the volumes would fill a library. Among his published works are: "The Star Papers," "Familiar Talks on Christian Experience," "Freedom and War Discourses," "Life Thoughts," "Life of Jesus the Christ," "Norwood" (a novel), "Life in New England," "The Overture of Angels," "Plymouth Pulpit Sermons," "Prayers from Plymouth Pulpit," "Speeches," and "Lectures on Preaching."

In the early years of Mr. Beecher's pastorate, Mrs. Beecher was an active woman, and went out driving daily in a rockaway drawn by a steady black horse. The little children were tucked safely in the back seat, and her illustrious husband was often by her side. She was a fair haired young woman who was often out of doors with a white corded sun bonnet, and a deep cape which protected her from the sun.

Five years after Mr. Beecher's death, Mrs. Beecher remarked to an interviewer:

"We passed a great deal of our time together. I had a desk near his, and always received his mail and callers. I opened his letters, answering all questions upon ordinary matters and passed the more important ones to him; sometimes they were one hundred a day. After reading them Mr. Beecher would write 'Yes' or 'No' on them or a date and return them to me. He had a busy life and I aided him as much as possible. No one ever entered his study but myself, as he did not like to be disturbed. The glory of Mr. Beecher was in his home life. It was there his amiability was most strongly marked. He was always kind, always pleasant, and he was especially generous to the poor. I remember one Sunday morning as we were leaving the house to go to church, a poor woman on the steps asked for alms and said she was cold. Mr. Beecher took the shawl from my shoulders and put it around her, and I had to go inside and get something else to wear."

Speaking of the statues of her husband, Mrs. Beecher said:

"The one by Rogers is much more natural in position and dress. I like the location of the one in City Hall Park; but the statue is not pleasant for me to look on, as Mr. Beecher seldom wore that heavy storm coat, and it is not intimately identified with him. One side of the face is faulty, and I do not like to see him with his back to the people. I wish it faced around. Mr. Ward was not an intimate friend of ours, as has been stated. I do not see why the sun should affect this statue if it faced the other way any more than others which are more fully exposed in our parks."

Mr. Beecher's death occurred in the house at 124 Hicks Street, corner of Clark. It was a three-story brick building of the type common in Brooklyn in the seventies. Its owner, Rear Admiral Silas H. Stringham, one of Brooklyn's greatest naval officers, lived in it up to the time of his death. From the front steps he addressed his fellow citizens on his return from the battle in the Civil War, in which he had taken a heroic part. The streets were thronged for blocks around with patriotic residents eager to get a glimpse of the gallant officer.

When Beecher passed away, the church was confronted with a very real and disturbing problem. Where could it find a man to take up the work of Plymouth church and carry it ahead aggressively and successfully?

The congregations which assembled from far and near must be gripped and held. They must be offered spiritual food of the kind that, in the absence of that served so long by their matchless leader, would be satisfying and inspirational.

The choice of Mr. Beecher was the Rev. Charles F. Berry, of Wolverhampton, England, but illness prevented his acceptance of the Plymouth pulpit.



The congregation called Dr. Lyman Abbott—and that abounding power was his, was manifested in the great fame he also attained and in the love and influence he wielded at home and afar.

No two men are alike. Dr. Abbott's style and manner of address were different from Mr. Beecher's, but even Mr. Beecher's simplicity and courage were no more marked than were the same traits in Dr. Abbott. Physically Dr. Abbott was a slender reed, but giants of beauty and sincerity occupied his mind. He thought clearly, spoke wisely and, in the words of Dr. Ira W. Henderson, assistant pastor of Plymouth church, "Dr. Abbott proved that it is perfectly possible for God to fill totally different vessels of clay named men with this divine content of persuasive thought, and in the same field, grant them large rewards."

Not merely did his individuality and thought impress themselves upon Plymouth and Greater New York. Dr. Abbott spoke to the world in written language, and it is as a thinker, writer and a literary man that his greatest fame exists. No man ever wrote more fearlessly than he. He sought the profound depths of truth; was never satisfied with surface values, and wrote energetically.

In gentleness of soul, he reminded one of Dr. Cutler, and his audience always felt when he spoke of God, as if he had just come from walking with the Master in a luminous and delightful land. He led his converts gently to the Father as one might lead a child into a sacred shrine. What happened was felt, not seen. But the presence of God "seemed to compass the spot round about."

It was Dr. Abbott's habit to converse with the leaders of the church, and retire alone to thresh out or make plans by which they might act, and in the execution of which they should find spiritual and moral strengthening.

Dr. Henderson continues:

Like pillars of cloud and fire before the wandering multitudes, Dr. Abbott pioneered the path for a great company of men and women. His soul was that which hears afar the tramp of coming multitudes, which catches the faint rustlings of God's presence among the soft greenery of the mulberries. Never did he have to catch up with the outriders. Had he been with Moses, he would have come back with a description of the innermost glories of the Land of Promise. He would have had a chart by which Solomon might later have plotted the lines for the excavations for the Temple.

"Had he been there, this man would have been with Gideon's men as they rushed into the vale in the darkness of the night; Savonarola would have had him as companion in the task of stemming the tide of popular and aristocratic opposition to God's will, and in the constructive effort to open the eyes of the blinded multitudes to the glories of God's kingdom. Always holding an advanced position, Dr. Abbott entrenched only that he should be ready to forge on. Truth to him was progressive, and man's chiefest joy to know the divine truth."

The object of Dr. Abbott's preaching always was to inspire directly the conscience, reverence, faith and love of his hearers. His motto never was "peace at any price." He never asked "Is it safe?" always "Is it true?" His Puritan ancestry made him deal with questions without equivocation. In this attitude he was like Lincoln.

He believed ambition was a virtue if properly utilized, and hard work to him was a tonic and a delight. It cannot be denied that he was intimately associated and identified with the development of the finer things of American life and history.

Lawyer, editor and minister, his power is recognized wherever the English language is spoken. Masterful were the thoughts he broadcast through "The Christian Union" and "The Outlook."

A glimpse into the character of Dr. Abbott and the force and strength of his soul is revealed in these remarks he made on a Sunday morning after he had been

called to question by some sections of the press concerning the wisdom of retaining on the books of Plymouth church the name of a repentant convict:

If you violate the law of God and you violate the law of man, come to Plymouth Church's pastor. I will not extenuate nor palliate your sin. If it is drunkenness, I will not call it jollity or freshness or wild oats or any such thing. I will call it drunkenness. If it is taking out of any man's pocket his property by any scheme or device whatsoever, I will not cover it up with phrases, but I will call it what it is—stealing. If you want someone to falsify and flatter and excuse, do not come to me or to Plymouth Church. But if, having in life's battle fallen wounded; if, in that struggle between good and evil which goes on in every soul, evil has become victorious over you; if there is a great remorse in your heart and a great shame for the irreparable past; if you look out on society and society seems to point to the disgrace of your life; if you say there is no life, no hope, come to me, come to Plymouth Church. And as God has helped me and given me His grace so, God helping me, I will give you my hand of fellowship and my heart of forgiveness and my prayers. And Plymouth Church will do the same.

In his delightful "Reminiscences," Dr. Abbott wrote, drawing near the end of his life: "I look forward to the great adventure with awe, but not with apprehension. When the time comes for my embarkation and the ropes are cast off and I put out to sea, I think I shall be standing in the bow and still looking with eager curiosity and glad hopefulness to the new world to which the unknown voyage will bring me."

Dr. Lyman Abbott died October 22, 1922, at his home 1184 Lexington Avenue, New York City. He was born in Roxbury, Mass., December 18, 1835.

When he was a freshman at the New York University in 1849, T. DeWitt Talmage was in his class.

The Rev. Dr. Newell Dwight Hillis came to Plymouth from Chicago, an aggressive young man of less than forty and found a church property greatly in need of development, although Dr. Abbott had left a strong church organization. When he left its pulpit, though still to continue his work for the institute as pastor emeritus, he could look back with pardonable pride on a church property and equipment valued at \$1,000,000, which arose as a result of his initiative and the gifts of John Arbuckle and his heirs.

Reviewing the history of those twenty-five years, Dr. Hillis's flock list among his principal achievements and contributions made to the church and the community:

The founding of the institute, a civic center, which is second to none in Brooklyn.

The installation of the beautiful memorial windows in the church, recording the religious and spiritual development of Europe and America under Protestantism in the last three hundred years.

The leading part he took in the movement for a "Brooklyn Beautiful," an almost forgotten plan of great scope, which enlisted the efforts of the most prominent men in the borough and brought here the world's leading architect in city building, Daniel H. Burnham, creator of the "white city" of Chicago World's Fair fame, president of the Fine Arts Commission of the United States, to act in an advisory capacity to the Citizens Committee.

The plan had its inception very largely in the brain of Dr. Hillis, who dreamed of a steel and concrete viaduct extending over Furman Street; of a municipal center at Flatbush Avenue and Fulton Street, with wide parkways radiating from this hub; of a majestic approach to the Brooklyn Bridge to replace the present jumble of ugly structures, an offense to the eye; of an art center patterned after the Paris Salon, of a community of beautiful homes. Dr. Hillis advocated for years the creation of a better Brooklyn, laid out on noble architectural lines.



His work, carried on in behalf of the Government during the war, when, with voice and pen, he raised millions, including his labors for the Liberty Loan campaigns, during which he spoke in nearly two hundred cities and delivered more than four hundred addresses.

His nationwide activities against Bolshevism.

The series of addresses he delivered on the general subject of German atrocities and the Kaiser's responsibility for bringing on the war, to get a background for which he went to France and journeyed over the desolated territory the German armies had vacated.

His educational lectures and writings in the post-war period.

Dr. Hillis was the selection for Chaplain of the Roosevelt division which, it was the dearest wish of the Colonel, might get to France. It was denied the privilege of going across.

Plymouth Institute was established in 1914, through the generosity of John Arbuckle and his heirs, Mrs. Catherine A. Jamison, Miss Christiana Arbuckle, William A. Jamison and Charles A. Jamison. It is intended to help worthy young men and women increase their personal and economic value to society.

In its handsome building various social activities are carried on and it provides an educational program of day and evening classes. It has a completely equipped gymnasium, a school of commerce, accounts and finance, a department of modern languages, one of fine arts, one of home economics and a department of physical education and social dancing.

To the accomplishment of this project Dr. Hillis devoted himself with untiring zeal.

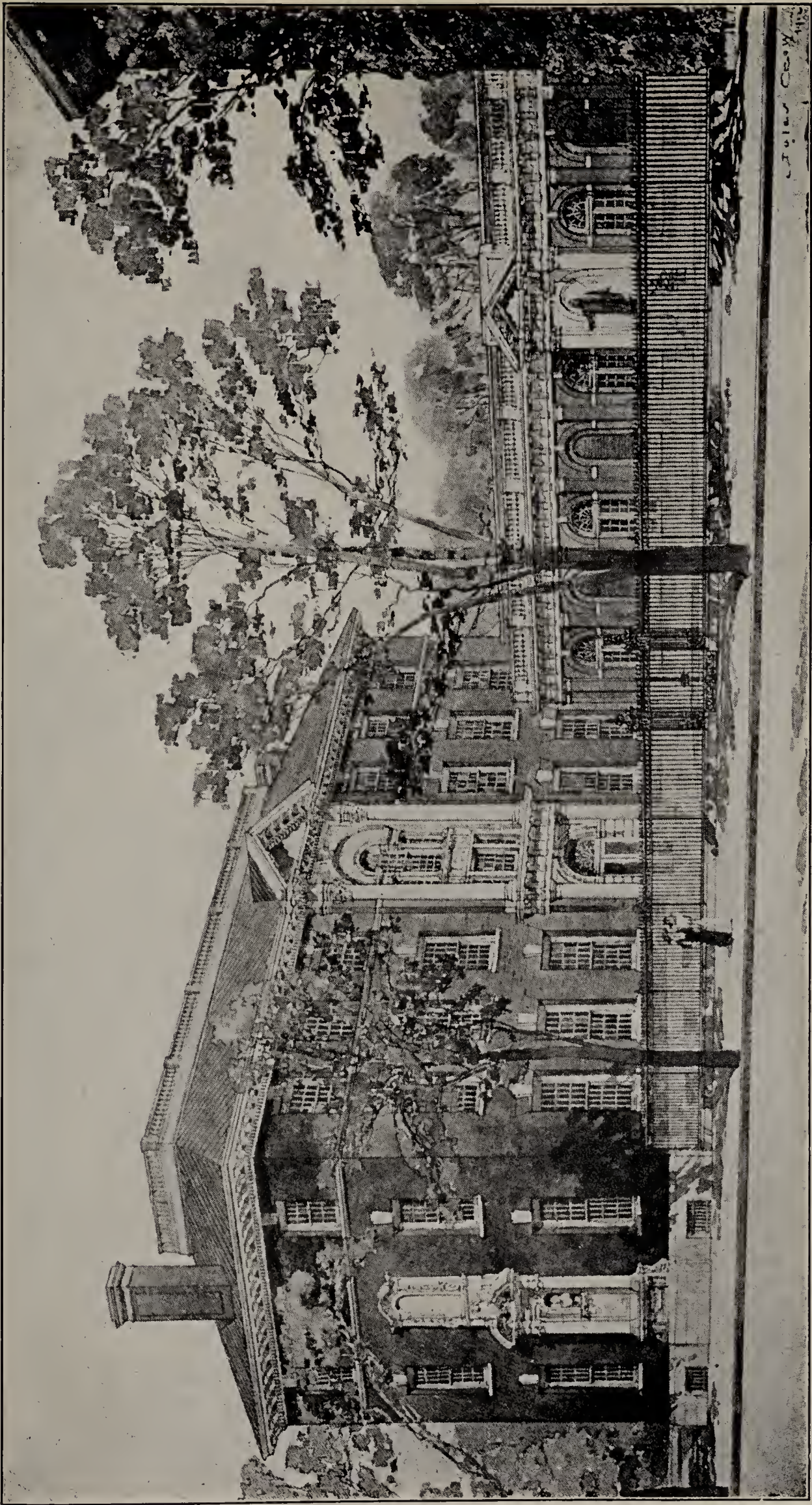
Joined with the institute is the Beecher arcade and historic room containing mementoes of the great preacher, whose eloquence was heard round the world, a park and a bronze statue of Beecher, the work of Gutzon Borglum, which occupies a central and commanding position.

As leader in the "Brooklyn Beautiful" movement, Dr. Hillis invited Mr. Burnham here and strove to arouse the civic conscience of Brooklyn with his slogan, "All sections for each section, each section for all sections and all of the citizens for Brooklyn," a dream which many have had but which has never been realized.

Brooklyn, he said, was the doorway to the republic, Long Island the portico to the national house and it was fitting that this doorway and this portico should be a noble one. Many meetings were held and there was much discussion, but the plan never developed beyond the discussion stage. Mr. Burnham was tendered a luncheon at the Hamilton Club and explained what Chicago and other cities had done and what Brooklyn might do, taking a leaf from them, and Dr. Hillis delivered an address of welcome to the distinguished guest.

Aside from the achievements already mentioned, Dr. Hillis was an advocate of church unity and of a better America. He has upheld the highest traditions of Plymouth Church as an American church and has been a great power in the community and the nation. If Beecher was its most eloquent voice Newell Dwight Hillis has been its dynamic force and now that he has stepped out of its pulpit the congregation of historic old Plymouth, which has had three brilliant and outstanding preachers in three-quarters of a century—Beecher for 40 years, Abbott for 11 and Hillis for 25 years—will find it a difficult task to discover an appropriate successor, a preacher of power and magnetism, a builder and a planner on a great and comprehensive scale.





ARBuckle INSTITUTE OF PLYMOUTH CHURCH

W. J. L. O. 1850





Twenty-five years, years of building, of progress, during which Plymouth Institute, which now has a thousand members, and the Beecher Arcade and Statue were erected, constitute the enduring legacy bequeathed to Plymouth Church by the Rev. Dr. Newell Dwight Hillis, who in 1924 resigned his pastorate because of illness.

**Newell Dwight Hillis**—Theodore Roosevelt knew Dr. Hillis long and well. His opportunities for judging the values of men to their generation were unparalleled in American history, and Mr. Roosevelt considered the pastor of Plymouth Church "the greatest forensic orator in America." Little wonder then that our modern Great-Heart dictated these words:

METROPOLITAN

432 Fourth Avenue

New York

Office of Theodore Roosevelt

June 29, 1918.

My Dear Dr. Hillis:

Will you permit me as an American citizen to thank you with all my heart for all you have done? There is not a man in this country who has accomplished during the last few months more along the line of patriotic achievement than you have. What you have done on behalf of the Liberty Loan, what you have done on behalf of enlistments and on behalf of the Red Cross, and, above all, what you have done for the soul of the American people—all this makes every one of us your debtor.

With heartiest good wishes,

Faithfully yours,

THEODORE ROOSEVELT.

Rev. Newell Dwight Hillis,  
Plymouth Church,  
Brooklyn, N. York.

The first impression one gets of Dr. Hillis is not that he is tall and well set up and thatched with thick gray hair, not even that a rare soul looks out of brown eyes that are framed in a richly-tinted face. The first impression is of tremendous magnetism reaching toward men as the charged steel toward scattered needles. It is not strange that one of his friends has said, "He is the most irresistible creature that ever lived."

Dr. Hillis is first a gentleman and after that a genius. Carlyle was a genius, but he was irascible. Dr. Hillis is a genius, but with the graciousness of a Sidney. Generous beyond the knowledge of many of his dearest friends, this kind-hearted man moves among the pilgrim hosts as a sympathetic leader. He is as devoid of egotism as a little child.

The erudition of Dr. Hillis is unusual. But his ready command of his knowledge is unique. What other speaker in America is so completely the master of his materials? His facility of utterance is as remarkable as his fecundity of thought. He has not only assimilated his studies, but also marshalled them for instant and ordered use. And his facts march at his command as readily during the stress of extemporaneous addresses as during the quiet hours of unhurried writing. He is at home when lending humor to the gaiety of an evening's festivity and equally at ease whether speaking of the virtues of a friend or dominating a cosmopolitan assemblage.

The prophets ever have been guides to men in darkened days. Isaiah gave counsel to the Hebrews not more resultfully than this modern prophet gave inspiration to America. Tender and sincere, Dr. Hillis has the intrepidity of a crusader. No more kindly spirit, withal none more fearless, ever warned our country-



men. No Micaiah was ever more conscious of the price the prophets pay for their devotion to the public good than is he.

From the days when Dr. Hillis wrote "Right Living as a Fine Art," until these times in which the British Government gave official sanction to five million copies of his expose of German villainies, his creative genius has been constantly employed. His books are a library. His publication of a weekly sermon for world-wide distribution during twenty-six consecutive years is unsurpassed in the history of preaching.

Dr. Hillis is of Ruskin's school as a lover of the beautiful. Raphael never wrought more charmingly with his brushes than has Hillis with his pen. His "David" fitly companions Michael Angelo's, albeit one is done in marble and the other in movable types. If London may advise the admirer of Sir Christopher Wren to consider St. Paul's Cathedral, so may we ask those who seek monuments to Dr. Hillis to study his effect upon the preaching of the young men of his day, whose minds he has furnished with inspiring thoughts and whose tongues he has taught the art of masterful expression. His books are as true to ideals and principles as the uplifted dome of Santa Sophia. His sentences now reflect the delicate and lofty lines of some Gothic tower, the traceries of some chiseled arch, the splendors of mediaeval windows and again the loveliness of an oriental shrine.

Born of the stock which supplied leaders to the Pilgrim company, Dr. Hillis is American from core to cuticle. And, like the Pilgrim band, he has kept faith with his ideals, his country and his generation. Reading, inquiring, pondering; linking the lessons of the past with the day's experiences that to-morrow's steps may be wisely taken; weaving afresh the threads which unify history; searching the principles which underlie all thoughts and deeds; studying men in the light of their prototypes, and events in their historical perspectives, this riddler of false philosophies fear neither friends nor enemies, trusts God and the truth, and keeps a high heart.

Only those who have heard him in the pulpit of Plymouth Church understand Dr. Hillis's richest self-revelations. Where Beecher moved the multitudes for nearly half a century, and Lyman Abbott tended the altar fires, the quality of his mind and heart blaze forth. Thoroughly modern and devout, glowing with zeal and emotion, evoking tears, laughter, rapture and amazement as he wills, Newell Dwight Hillis is supreme as he lures the hearts of men into the arms of God.

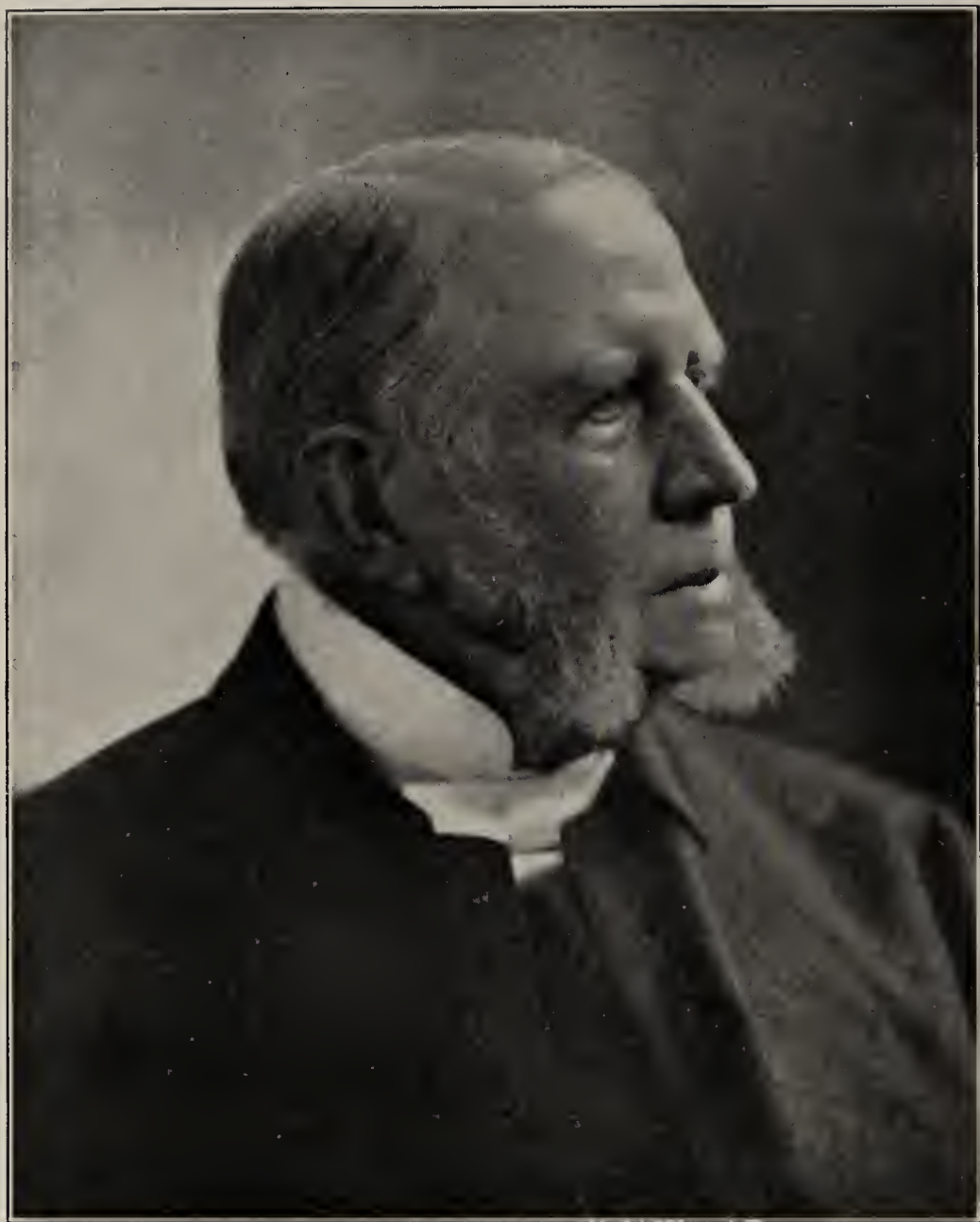
Devoted to his ministry and to his country, Dr. Hillis loves America as Franklin loved the Colonies. His voice vibrates in her interest, his mind reveals in the story of her glories, his heart is heavy when dangers, like prowling leopards, threaten her security, and her citizens, careless of their perils, doze at ease. Demosthenes never inveighed against Philip with more energy than Dr. Hillis against the foes of his native land. Catiline was never surer of the enmity of Cicero than the enemies of the Republic of the onslaughts of this knight who always battles for his countrymen.

What Beecher was to the North in the sixties, that if no more than that, Hillis, has been to the nation in this generation. When others were cautious he cried aloud; when others kept silence lest popularity should suffer, he told the truth and took the consequences. Others consulted self-interest. He studied only the public weal. And, when long years have passed, his name will shine in America's history among the bravest of his day.

IRA W. HENDERSON.







*Richard L. Morris*

## CHAPTER XX

### CHURCH OF THE PILGRIMS

**T**HE REV. RICHARD SALTER STORRS, pastor for fifty-two years of the Church of the Pilgrims in Brooklyn, was internationally known as a pulpit orator, and for his contributions to literature. The latter fill several volumes.

Joseph Choate once said of him, at an Amherst College commencement dinner, that both Roswell D. Hitchcock and Henry Ward Beecher could be lost to the public in one year, and yet, in Dr. Storrs, have "the greatest orator in America."

Dr. Storrs was a power in the Congregational church at large; and one of the shining lights in the American Lyceum during that period before and after the Civil War when the masses looked to it for their information and education on the great issues of the day. This was the time of its greatest power and popularity. Such men as Beecher, Wendell Phillips, George William Curtis, Ralph Waldo Emerson, E. H. Chapin, Bayard Taylor and contemporaries were familiar figures upon the stage with him.

Dr. Storrs was not only the pastor of a great church, which built a massive and impressive structure under his jurisdiction, but took part in almost every movement for national and public advance for fifty years. All of this time he resided in Brooklyn.

For Brooklyn, he gave indefatigable service as a citizen. His life was an inseparable part of its early history. There was scarcely any affair of moment in which he did not take a prominent part, from the laying of cornerstones, dedications of structures, the launching of community movements, to the conducting of a funeral like that of "Brooklyn's most prominent citizen," J. S. T. Stranahan.

He was sought not only to grace public occasions with his culture and depth of thought, but to burn midnight oil with those early Brooklyn builders in planning and counseling with them for the young city's progress. New York proper also levied greatly on Dr. Storrs' ability.

He delivered addresses at the DeLesseps banquet March 2, 1876; at the 109th anniversary of the New York Chamber of Commerce at Delmonico's May 15, 1877, and at the meeting to raise funds for the pedestal of the Statue of Liberty at the Academy of Music in New York November 19, 1882. He was orator at the opening of Brooklyn Bridge May 24, 1883; at the laying of the cornerstone of the Kings County courthouse in 1862; at the unveiling of the Lincoln statue in New York; and at New York's centennial celebration July 4, 1876.

These are only a few of his contributions to programs on momentous occasions. His orations on Abraham Lincoln shortly after the President was martyred are considered among the masterpieces of American literature. His lecture on "The Attractions of Romanism for Educated Protestants" evoked warm acknowledgment from Cardinal Newman. He delivered the Graham lectures before the Brooklyn Institute in 1855, "On the Wisdom and Goodness of God," and in 1879, the L. P. Stone lectures at Princeton Theological Seminary. He also gave addresses on "Preaching Without Notes" at New York's Union Theological Seminary in 1875, and those on the "Divine Origin of Christianity" in 1881 at the same institution, which were repeated before the Lowell Institute in Boston.

Dr. Storrs was born at Braintree, Mass., August 21, 1821, his father before him having his same name, as well as his grandfather. He was therefore the third to bear the name and the third to follow the call of the Church. His father,



Rev. Richard Salter Storrs, was for sixty-two years settled as pastor of the First Congregational Church at Braintree; while his grandfather, the first Richard Salter, was associated with a Congregational church at Long Meadow, Mass., for thirty-three years. The bulk of their life service, therefore, was mainly given to a single church, as was the Brooklyn minister's. Dr. Storrs' great grandfather was John Storrs, also a minister, so it can be said that the Storrs represented, in the aggregate, 300 years of personal service to the Church. The Pilgrim's pastor spoke often of how his father had delivered his last sermon when he was eighty-five years old. He himself ran him a close second, being active into his seventy-ninth year.

Dr. Storrs was graduated at Amherst College in 1839, the youngest of a class of fifty-seven, which included Frederic Dan Huntington, who became Protestant Episcopal Bishop of Central New York; Rev. Augustine Hewitt, subsequently Superior of the Paulist Fathers, and Edward B. Gillett, afterward Congressman from Massachusetts.

After teaching in Monson Academy and Williston Seminary, Dr. Storrs took up law under the direction of Rufus Choate, whose nephew, Joseph H. Choate, became Ambassador to England. The latter was a principal speaker at Dr. Storrs' golden jubilee in November, 1896.

Law lost its appeal for the Brooklyn divine in the stronger urge toward the ministry, and Dr. Storrs entered Andover Theological Seminary, from which he was graduated in 1845. He was ordained in Brookline, Mass., October 22 of that year, where he was pastor of the Harvard Congregational Church. His father preached his ordination sermon, following a family precedent, even as Dr. Storrs' grandfather, of Long Meadow, Mass., had preached the ordination sermon for the Braintree pastor, and the ancient John Storrs had delivered the ordination sermon for his son at Long Meadow.

The newly organized Church of the Pilgrims called Dr. Storrs to be its pastor June, 1846. His installation took place November 19 of that year, when his father was again present to deliver the installing prayer. His allusions to his son and the hope he expressed that the latter might be "a plain, faithful preacher of Christ, relying only on Christ" mightily moved the audience.

Dr. Storrs was then only twenty-five years old.

The new minister preached his first sermon November 22, 1846, from the text, "Except the Lord build the house, they labor in vain who build it." He was congratulated for its power and eloquence, for, even so early in his life, his discourse showed extensive reading and studious application.

The church, at the corner of Henry and Remsen Streets, had cost \$53,000 and was new, having been dedicated May 12, 1846. Under his ministering, membership grew apace. Within two years after dedication, extensive changes and improvements in the building were necessary, as were others in 1854. Still larger additions were made in 1868 and 1869 when seating capacity increased to 1,300, and lecture and committee rooms added. The work of the latter years cost \$135,000, including additional land.

During the time improvements were going on, Dr. Storrs led his flock in services held in other Brooklyn churches, in the Athenæum and in the Academy of Music. Regular programs were resumed in the Church of the Pilgrims June 12, 1870.

By 1893, Dr. Storrs' congregation had 1,052 members and the Sunday School 1,306 attendants.

The pastor had been in Brooklyn twenty-three years when, in 1869, he

received an urgent call from the Central Congregational Church of Boston. While the divine had declined many pressing offers during his career to go to other influential churches, the Boston call seemed likely to take him away from Brooklyn. This aroused the people, who realized that should he go the city would not only lose one of its most godly and brilliant men, but one of its most public spirited citizens. A remonstrance was put up, which finally became a most vigorous protest.

A letter, signed by one hundred and twenty of the leading citizens of Brooklyn was privately printed and sent to Dr. Storrs requesting him, if he could, in accordance with his duties as a Christian minister, not to leave Brooklyn. Among the signers were Henry E. Pierrepont, J. S. T. Stranahan, A. A. Low, Thomas Messenger, Cyrus P. Smith, William W. Hurlbut and many others.

To them Dr. Storrs replied that while considerations of duty on such questions must always be paramount, such an expression of the desires of his friends and neighbors for many years—all of widely divergent religious faiths and political sentiment—would have weight with him in deciding the question, at any time, of his remaining in Brooklyn or removing from it. He declared that the fact that they were from different congregations and professions gave him “a fresh sense of the strength and sweetness of that sympathy which has prevailed here to an unusual degree among those who, while entertaining their distinctive views, have been harmoniously associated for common religious, philanthropic or civic objects.”

The city was endeared to him, he said, a thousand times over, “by private and public ties, by an experience as a clergyman and citizen that has hardly been shadowed by a cloud; by past successes in the enterprises for which we have wrought together and by propitious openings for future work; by the love of the living, and by the quick and precious memories of the dead.”

Personally, he said, he could ask no higher privilege than to be permitted to spend the rest of his life in Brooklyn where so much of it had been passed.

The citizens' letter to Dr. Storrs was followed by another signed by thirty-five of the most prominent clergymen of Brooklyn, couched in the warmest terms and begging him to remain in “The City of Churches.” The letter was signed by Samuel T. Spear, Joseph Kimball, Theodore L. Cuyler, Henry Ward Beecher, N. H. Schenck and others.

His answer, addressing them as “Reverend and beloved,” told his ministerial associates that he was deeply sensible to the honor they had done him by their request, and he added:

“I wonder if there is another city in the land in which so many distinguished ministers, of almost all the names in Protestant Christendom, could be found to unite in urging one of a different ecclesiastical faith from most of them, to continue to fulfill the duties of his high office among them. It seems to me that the growth of the city to which you refer, in population, wealth and power since I first came to it, is not to be compared to that growth in kindly and cordial regard among the students and the teachers of the Christian faith, of which your letter is an expression.”

He said he was not able to tell what the Lord would have him do, but if he decided to remain in Brooklyn, he should feel more than ever how many valued friends he had in the ministry, and if he went, one of the sorest trials would be in parting from them.

He closed with the prayer that God would make their souls and the Brooklyn churches to which they ministered “like watered gardens, and like springs of water whose waters fail not.”



A third letter urging Dr. Storrs to remain was by C. C. Mudge and seven other missionaries of the City Mission and Tract Society.

Dr. Storrs finally decided, after long and careful deliberation, not to leave Brooklyn. The announcement created the greatest joy, not only in religious but civic circles. The decision was made the occasion of prayers of gratitude and other manifestations.

During the time Dr. Storrs held his church services in the Academy of Music, he discarded manuscript and preached without notes for the first time. This practice he ever afterward followed. His language was rich and beautifully chosen, his scholarly resources so vast and his memory so adequate, even to the retention of formidable arrays of figures and statistical data, it was described as little short of marvelous. He frequently had to deliver addresses of more than an hour, or two hours' duration, in which complicated data and numbers were presented. But he never resorted to notes.

His health, beginning to fail between 1871 and 1872, his congregation, fearing he might break down, granted a leave of absence. This he spent abroad with his family.

Upon his return, and the occasion of his first sermon to his congregation, an audience had assembled from all parts of Greater New York. The interior of the church was bedecked with masses of flowers, and greenery was suspended from the galleries and woven about the pedestals. As a labor of love, and as a testimonial to their pastor, the congregation had raised \$130,000 while he was away. This freed the church from all debts.

Dr. Storrs was a noted figure at the silver wedding of Plymouth Church and Henry Ward Beecher, its pastor. It was a four-day affair, beginning Monday, October 7, 1872, the great evening being that of Thursday, on "historical day." Delivering addresses were Henry Ward Beecher, Dr. Storrs and Dr. William Ives Budington. In closing his eloquent address Dr. Storrs said: "So we have stood side by side—blessed be God—in no spirit but of fraternal love, for that long space of twenty-five years, which began with the right hand of fellowship and closes before you here tonight."

In conclusion, he extended the right hand of congratulation to Beecher on his twenty-fifth year as pastor of Plymouth Church. Beecher, deeply affected arose, with tears in his eyes, and placing his hand on Dr. Storrs' shoulder, kissed him on the cheek. For an instant, the audience sat spellbound; then there arose such a storm of applause as Plymouth had never before heard except when members of the congregation had given their jewelry for the redemption of some slave girl, or their souls had been stirred to profound depths.

When Dr. Storrs completed his thirty-fifth year as pastor of the Church of the Pilgrims, members raised \$35,000 which was presented to him at a social meeting Saturday evening, November 19, 1881, at the home of John S. Ward, 65 Pierrepont Street. S. B. Chittenden made the presentation speech. Special services were also held on his fortieth anniversary when Dr. Storrs received a handsome bronze figure of "Labor," donated by the Sunday School. An extract from his talk to the children will reveal the man:

"It is always a delight to me when a child comes to me on the street and says, 'How do you do, Dr. Storrs?' putting out his or her hand to take mine. Sometimes I may not instantly remember who thus comes to me, for children in this day have a singular trick of growing older pretty fast. Between four and nine years, or between seven and twelve years, they change so rapidly one can hardly keep their appearance in mind. I wish some kind of arrangement were possible by which each child should carry a ticket saying 'This is So and So,' for then I should always know you. You, however, always know me, because I have got through with all this business of growing larger. And so, whenever you see me in the



CHURCH OF THE PILGRIMS





street, if you will just come and put your hand into mine and say, 'Good morning, Dr. Storrs,' you will give me cheer for the day. I have always felt that such a greeting added beauty and enjoyment to the hours which followed. In London the fashion is, and here, to some extent, but here not so generally, for every gentleman as he goes down town in the morning, to wear a flower in his buttonhole. Your greetings have been to me as the flower in the buttonhole, the perfume of which I have been delightfully inhaling all the day when you have come to me, on your way to school, perhaps, and have said: 'How do you do?'"

In 1896 Dr. Storrs' golden jubilee was the most notable church event of the year in Brooklyn. It lasted ten days, beginning November 15 and eminent people, both laymen and clergy, attended. A loving cup, a purse of \$5,000 and a dinner to Dr. Storrs at the Hamilton Club were three of its many features. The celebration closed with a citizens' meeting at the Academy of Music, General Stewart L. Woodford, president of the New England Society, presiding. Addresses were delivered by President Seth Low, of Columbia University, and Joseph H. Choate. When Dr. Storrs came on the platform, the entire audience arose. He was presented with a commemorative gold medal in behalf of the citizens of Brooklyn.

Dr. Storrs held many eminent positions outside of his church work. He was one of the editors of the "New York Independent" for thirteen years—from 1848 to 1861—a momentous time in that influential periodical's history.

He was one of the organizers of Brooklyn's Sanitary Fair, and throughout its continuance lent his presence and efforts to its success. He also edited the fair's little newspaper called "The Drum Beat."

While a member of the Park Commission under John B. Woodward in 1889, Dr. Storrs was instrumental in causing the park land bounded by the Eastern Parkway on the north, Washington Avenue on the east, the city line on the south and Flatbush on the west to be reserved forever as park space and as a site for a museum, botanical garden and arboretum. It was an area of forty-five acres.

He was one of the foremost advocates of the Packer Institute, and one of the founders of the Long Island Historical Society, succeeding to its leadership when its first president, J. Carson Brevoort, died. He was a member of its directing board for thirty-seven years and president of the board for twenty-five years, until his death. The Society is really one of Brooklyn's monuments to him, for he guided it "in its infancy, watched over its youth and counseled it in its maturity."

Dr. Storrs was a member of the board of trustees of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences and a member from its reincorporation in 1890. He was its first vice-president for ten years. He made the address at the breaking of ground for the first section of the museum building in 1895, and at the laying of the cornerstone December 14 of the same year.

He was president of the American Board of Foreign Missions, being elected in 1887, and brought about harmony therein at a time when dissensions were rife and so serious they not only bade fair to restrict the operation of the board but to bring on unhappy culminations.

Out of Dr. Storrs' church grew, directly or indirectly, more than twenty churches in the city and surrounding villages. He helped to organize in 1876 the Pilgrims Chapel, at Henry and DeGraw Streets. At his decease the value of the property was \$40,000, and nine hundred persons could be seated in its auditorium.

He was a trustee of Amherst College for many years.

The degree of D.D. was conferred on Dr. Storrs by Union College in 1853 and by Harvard University in 1859; that of L.L.D. by Princeton in 1874 and that of L.H.D. by Columbia in 1887.



A notable ovation received in his later years was when he went to Boston to deliver the address at the International Congregational Council. The vast body rose when he entered; and rose again when he came forward to speak, accompanying their action with a double round of applause.

Dr. Storrs married Miss Mary Jenks, daughter of the Rev. Francis and Sarah Phillips Jenks, of Andover, Mass., and niece of Wendell Phillips, October 1, 1845. Mrs. Storrs was the sister of Granville T. Jenks, father of Supreme Court Justice Almet F. Jenks who was one of the most distinguished members of the Brooklyn bar. Dr. and Mrs. Storrs had a country seat at Sunset Ridge, Shelter Island, their home being at 80 Pierrepont Street. He resigned his pastorate of the Church of the Pilgrims November 19, 1899, and died June 5, 1900. By request, in a letter which he left, the services were without pomp or circumstance. They were attended by hundreds of the most prominent parsons of the city and state.

Among the many published works of Dr. Storrs are: "The Constitution of the Human Soul" (1856); "Conditions of Success in Preaching Without Notes" (1875); "Early American Spirit and the Genesis of It" (1875); "Declaration of Independence and the Effects of It" (1876); "John Wycliffe and the First English Bible" (1880); "Recognition of the Supernatural in Letters and in Life" (1881); "Manliness in the Scholar" (1883); "The Divine Origin of Christianity indicated by its Historical Effects" (1884); "The Prospective Advance of Christian Missions" (1885); "Forty Years of Pastoral Life" (Brooklyn, 1886); and "The Broader Range and Outlook of the Modern College Training" (1887).

An interesting volume concerning the fiftieth anniversary of Dr. Storrs' installation was published in 1897 by the trustees of the Church of the Pilgrims.

**Central Congregational Church**—Seven men met at the house of R. L. Crook on January 26, 1854, and resolved to form a Congregational Society and to hire the Brick Church, Jefferson Avenue and Ormond Place.

The building was rented on February 2 for two years from May 1, 1854, at a rental of \$1,000 for the first year and \$1,200 for the second, with the privilege of purchasing at cost. On the second Sunday of April, 1854, the church was dedicated to the worship of Almighty God, the sermon being preached by the Rev. Dr. Richard Salter Storrs, pastor of the Church of the Pilgrims. The Rev. Henry W. Parker was engaged to supply the pulpit. During the summer of 1854 it was resolved to organize an ecclesiastical society to be called "The Central Congregational Church of Brooklyn," a title which at that time seemed a misnomer.

On November 27, 1854, a council of pastors and delegates from the neighboring Congregational churches was convened at the church. The council resolved that "Those persons who had been received by letter should be organized as a church," which was accordingly done at once, the thirty persons so received constituting the church.

At the expiration of the time of rental the Society was compelled, for financial reasons, to vacate the building, and became located temporarily in a mission schoolhouse on Clifton Place. But the Society, by the liberal aid of Plymouth Church and the Church of the Pilgrims, effected the purchase of the property on Ormond Place for \$15,000, and on Sunday, November 16, 1856, the church was reopened for public worship. The Rev. J. Clement French accepted the unanimous call of the church and Society to succeed the Rev. H. W. Parker, and was ordained and installed on March 5, 1857.

The report of the Prudential Committee in December, 1856, shows a membership of sixty-seven, of whom seventeen had been added during the current

year. Thus there was probably a membership of forty in March, 1857, when Mr. French assumed pastoral duty. Under his fostering care the growth of the church was healthy, steady and rapid, so that in 1863 the structure was extensively renovated, and in 1865 the house and lot adjoining on Ormond Place were purchased for a parsonage.

During 1866 the membership increased from one hundred and ninety-eight to three hundred and twenty-seven, the majority having joined on confession of faith. In 1867 the six hundred sittings of the edifice were so crowded with worshippers that in May further improvements were made both in the seating capacity and the quality of the building.

Central Church now began its career as the mother of other churches. The first of these, upon which she has an indirect claim, is now the Marcy Avenue Baptist Church. This organization began as a Mission Bible School at Marcy Avenue and Monroe Street, continuing for a period of about five years, until the mission building was sold to the Washington Avenue Baptist Church. Thus originated the Marcy Avenue Baptist Church.

Mr. French's health failing in 1870, he was granted four months' absence, which was again extended to five months, in the hope of a speedy recovery. But to the sorrow of his people he was compelled to tender his resignation, which was reluctantly accepted December 8, 1870.

During Mr. French's pastorate of nearly fourteen years the membership increased from forty to three hundred and sixty-eight. It was a period of unity and concord under the leadership of a cultured and spiritual man whose name is one of the chief treasures of Central Church.

His successor, the Rev. Dr. Henry Martyn Scudder, began his labors on the First Lord's Day of April, 1871. In three months the building was crowded until many were unable to gain admittance, and the Board of Trustees was requested by the Society in July of that year to take immediate measures for the purchase of a suitable plot in the neighborhood for the erection of a church edifice capable of seating about 2,000 persons.

The trustees thereupon purchased the site of the present church, with a frontage of two hundred and nineteen feet by one hundred feet in depth, and a lot on Jefferson Avenue twenty-one feet by one hundred feet, which was afterward sold and repurchased with additional space on either side.

When the cornerstone of the new structure was laid, January 11, 1872, Dr. Scudder and Dr. French participated in the ceremonies. On September 8, 1872, the new church was dedicated, the sermon being preached by the Rev. Dr. William M. Taylor, pastor of Broadway Tabernacle, New York City. The building is one hundred and fifty feet wide by ninety-six feet deep, providing seats for 2,000 persons, and, under pressure, containing 2,500. The total cost of the land, building, organ and furniture of the church was approximately \$116,149.

In March, 1873, the Society sold the Ormond Place building, reserving for two years the right to use the lecture room for prayer meetings and the Bible School.

Meanwhile, the Bible School growing rapidly, the Ormond Place lecture room was found to be entirely inadequate for its accommodation. The lecture room of Central Church, now about to be entirely rebuilt after fifty years of service, was erected upon the ground adjoining the auditorium of the church in 1873 and 1874, and was dedicated in the latter year. It has a frontage of sixty feet by nine-eight feet depth, the lecture room seating about 1,200 persons, its entire cost being \$41,129.



In 1878, the indebtedness of the Society being about \$67,500, it was decided to remove this encumbrance. Accordingly, on January 21, \$64,500 was subscribed, which, with the equity of the property on Ormond Place—which had reverted to the trustees of Central Church in 1875—was sufficient to pay off the entire debt. The Society sold the Ormond Place property in 1875. From that year it has prospered financially, the policy of the trustees having been always characterized by business sagacity and promptness in the discharge of all liabilities.

Too much can hardly be said in commendation of the eleven and one-half years of Dr. Scudder's pastorate, which was apostolic in zeal and in wisdom for the Kingdom of God at home and abroad. At the end of this period, feeling himself spent and hoping to gain some respite by a change of pastorate, he accepted a call from the Plymouth Congregational Church of Chicago. His pastoral labors terminated here in November, 1882. Under his ministry the church membership had increased from three hundred and sixty-eight to 1,342. Dr. Scudder found the church a local institution, he left it a nationally known organization.

In their selection of a new pastor, Dr. Scudder cheered and assisted the church members, and upon his suggestion the Rev. Dr. A. J. F. Behrends, of Providence, was called in December, 1882. Dr. Behrends continued his labors for seventeen years—an era of loyalty and distinguished service by an able, scholarly and eloquent minister.

His ministry, which drew increasing numbers to the mother church, was characterized by intellectual grasp, moral eminence and spiritual ardor. In the midst of his labors he was suddenly translated, at the zenith of his powers, ceasing at once to labor and to live on May 22, 1900, aged sixty-one years. The Rev. Willard P. Harmon, the assistant pastor, had pastoral oversight of the church during the interregnum between Dr. Behrend's death and the coming of his successor. Mr. Harmon faithfully discharged the duties of his position.

On December 18, 1900, a unanimous call was extended to Rev. Dr. S. Parkes Cadman, pastor of the Metropolitan Temple, Manhattan, to become the pastor of Central Church. Dr. Cadman accepted the call, preaching his first sermon on Lord's Day, March 3, 1901. He was installed by a council convened for that purpose on May 13, 1901. During his pastorate, which has at this time covered twenty-four years, the membership has increased to almost 3,000. The church has correspondingly increased in an influence which is recognized all over our own land and throughout the world. On the fiftieth anniversary of the founding of the church, a memorial sermon was preached by the Rev. Harry P. Dewey, the successor of Dr. Storrs at the Church of the Pilgrims, and a thank offering of \$50,000 was raised with which the trustees purchased lots at New York Avenue and Sterling Place and erected thereon St. Paul's chapel. The next improvement was the Parish House at 64 Jefferson Avenue, a beautiful and useful building, admirably adapted to the administrative work of the Parish. Additional space was provided for a larger choir. The organ was entirely rebuilt and placed on either side of the chancel. The handsome chancel window was given by Mrs. Frank S. Jones, in memory of her parents. The main auditorium was completely redecorated, the lecture hall renovated and provided with fire escapes, and the whole building rededicated on Lord's Day, November 12, 1911, the Pastor preaching the sermon. During 1914 the union of the United Congregational Church and Central Church was successfully consummated. It would be impossible to mention all the members who have contributed to the prosperity of Central Church during its history. Many have been the changes by death and removal; few, if any, by de-

fection or dissatisfaction—for this church has a unique history of harmony and brotherly love. The board of trustees has so wisely cared for the temporalities that there is no debt resting upon the property. The benevolences have been maintained and increased. Large contributions have been made to the Bedford Young Men's Christian Association, the Congregational Home for the Aged, and to other worthy institutions and charities which have appealed to the membership.

The board of deacons has been enlarged to thirty members and the Bible School placed under their supervision. These brethren have worthily conducted the labors of this exalted office.

The utmost cordiality has always existed between the various branches of the officary membership of the church; men and women of many and varied minds working together in Christian unity.

It will be seen that in the seventy years between January, 1854, and January, 1924, there have been three periods in the development of Central Church. The first was the period of small beginnings and brave efforts, which we recall with devout thanksgiving. The second was the period of rapid growth in numbers and the fellowship of the spirit. This period commenced under Dr. French and culminated under Dr. Scudder. The third period—in continuance—has been one of widening power and deserved reputation under Dr. Behrends and the present pastor, Dr. Cadman, whose voice is not only heard each week by his own congregation, but also by vast assemblies, in conferences, on public occasions and over the radio by unknown millions.

Central Church has been the mother of two congregational Churches. St. Mark's was organized October 22, 1897, as the Bethesda Congregational Church. It began as a mission Bible School and during its early career Central Church aided it financially and in other ways.

St. Paul's Church also grew out of a Bible School, which met at 300 Albany Avenue in a storeroom. The work grew so rapidly that on October 24, 1903, Dr. Cadman called a conference of the officials of the church to consider what steps should be taken to celebrate its fiftieth anniversary. At a later meeting, held January 29, 1904, it was resolved to celebrate the anniversary by raising \$50,000, being \$1,000 for each year of the Church's history as an organization, and this sum to be expended for the furtherance of the work of the church in the community. According to the records: "The Albany Avenue branch has already been commenced as a memorial of our jubilee year, but it lacks a site and a building for its worship." The necessary committees were appointed, the money was promptly subscribed and paid, every dollar promised being actually collected, and on Lord's Day, April 10, 1904, the fiftieth anniversary sermon was preached by the Rev. Harry P. Dewey, Pastor of the Church of the Pilgrims. During the services Mr. John F. Anderson, Jr., Chairman of the Board of Trustees, announced to the congregation that the commemoration fund was completed.

Both these children of Central Congregational Church are now on their own foundation, and the mother church rejoices in their prosperity.

The harmony of the church is as complete as when the membership was numbered by scores instead of hundreds. Yet it is not the harmony of identical belief. Diversity of opinion upon minor matters of faith, much independent thought and liberty of expression, have been and are marked characteristics of the church and of the society.

The blessing of God as manifested in the great prosperity of the church is an evidence of the wisdom and proof of the abiding and ever-strengthening conviction that the purest and most effective church life is that which leaves individual



belief the fullest and most practical freedom, and regards the results which divine love effects in human hearts and actions, rather than any professed adherence to formulated doctrines.

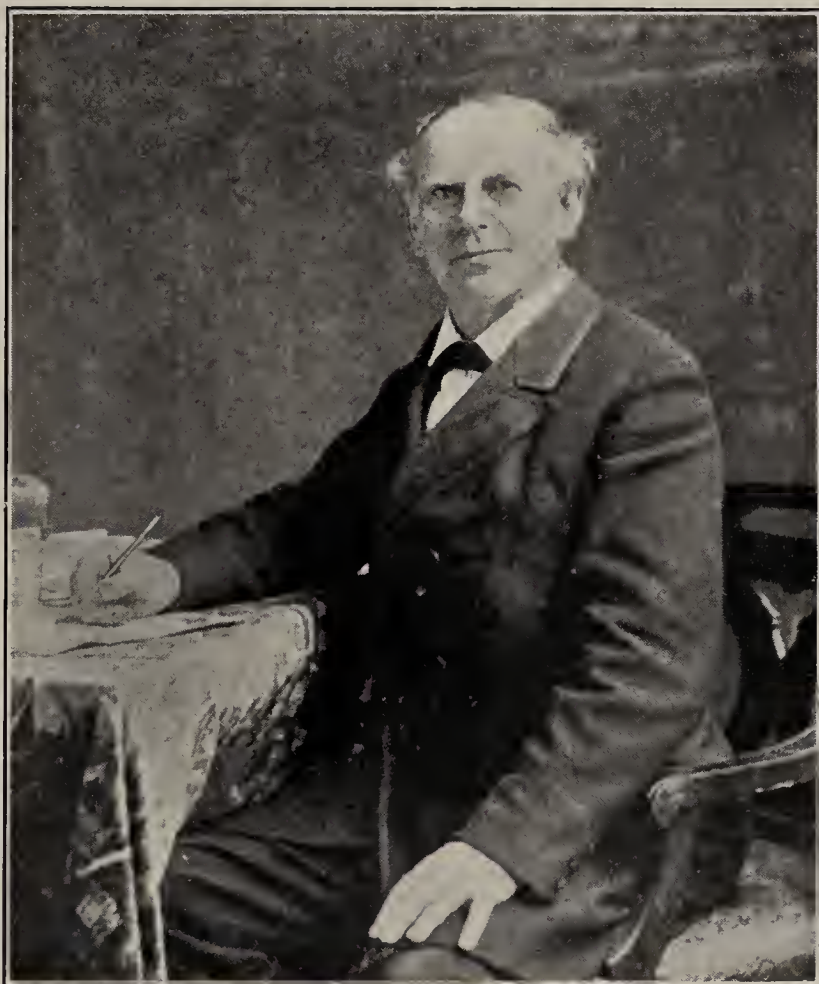
Dr. Cadman is now at the beginning of his twenty-fifth year of pastoral service in Central Church. Before the year is completed a newly built Bible School adjunct to the main auditorium will be dedicated, a commemoration of a quarter of a century of successful ministry in the midst of an ever changing population.

The numbers of faithful men and women, living and dead, who have rendered conspicuous service to Central Congregational Church, preclude the possibility of naming them in this sketch of its history. They are held in grateful memory, whether still in the church militant or translated to the church triumphant.

**The Rev. T. De Witt Talmage** must ever be included in any group of Brooklyn's foremost preachers. He was born in Bound Brook, Somerset County, N. J., on January 7, 1832. Eleven children were older than he, in a family of five girls and seven boys. His parents were noted for their sterling qualities and depth of piety. David T. Talmage, his father, who lived to be eighty-three, possessed great judgment and firmness. His natural gifts made him the counselor and leader of the people among whom he lived both in religious and secular matters. Catherine Talmage, his mother, was noted for strength of character and peculiar sweetness and charm. Young Talmage having prepared for college chose as his *Alma Mater* the University of New York. A professor of *belles lettres* said afterward that he never had an equal among the graduates of the institution. On graduation day when he delivered his speech in Niblo's Garden, the effect is said to have been electric and overwhelming, the larger part of the audience rising to their feet under the spell of his brilliant, original, mirthful and patriotic eloquence. He might have excelled as journalist, poet, pleader, actor, politician or reformer, such were his gifts and versatility. He was persuaded to become a preacher by the prayers of his parents, and the belief that in the ministry his gifts would attain their highest usefulness and strength. He became a Christian at eighteen.

Mr. Talmage preached for three years at Belleville, N. J., three at Syracuse, N. Y., and seven in Philadelphia. While preaching in the Quaker City three calls were the cause of much perplexity. Chicago, San Francisco and Brooklyn alike wanted him. At the same time a congenial congregation and a beautiful city held him as with hooks of steel and ties of love. Everything tended to hold him there. Chicago and San Francisco bid for him by mail, by telegraph, by delegation. Brooklyn pleaded with a stricken rather than a beaming countenance, and set forth what he could do for her rather than what she could do for him. Her promise was couched in the single sentence: "She would do what she could."

The Central Presbyterian Church was between total dissolution and gradual disintegration but it wanted to face about and grow. One thing Dr. Talmage could not obtain in Philadelphia. He wanted his church to be as free as the salvation he preached. Neither did Chicago or San Francisco promise anything different. In Brooklyn there were no obstacles to a free church, assuming that he could persuade the congregation to try the experiment. This consideration weighed more than anything else in deciding him to accept the call. It was unanimous but the voting force of the church consisted of nineteen persons only. In signatures as large as those of John Hancock they signed this resolution against stagnation. For fifteen months Dr. Talmage filled the church to the doors and in mild weather packed the streets outside as well. The pew holders swelled to huge proportions and the demand was beyond any power to supply them.



T. DEWITT TALMAGE





In a single meeting Dr. Talmage persuaded the congregation to build a free Tabernacle holding a large congregation. He resigned his salary of \$7,000 a year in formal writing, and told the congregation they need not pay him anything at all unless the free scheme permitted it. He would trust to God for his livelihood. This faith in his course carried the congregation with him. A single sermon fused all the people into a unity on the subject. Ground was purchased adjoining the old church. The leaders sought out architects, but none of them grasped the idea. If they did they were afraid of it.

I want a building to hold 4,000 persons on one floor. The pews must command an equally clear view of platform: pulpit I want none. They must all form semi-circles converging from that platform and must gradually rise so as to give those far off as good a chance to see and hear as those nearby. Amphitheatrical must be the form. An immense family gathering around the fireplace must be the ideal. Make it that way. Make it as little like a church as possible, so the people not used to sacred edifices will feel welcome and you will help make your fortune.

That is what Dr. Talmage said to the architects. Their failure to assimilate the idea was only equal to their tenacity in adhering to it. At last a young architect asked the pastor to sketch out his idea. He did this on a scrap of paper. The architect amplified it on an envelope on his knee. He was given till night to amplify the drawing into plans. Thus the pastor's image graphically portrayed by the architect was adopted on sight. In four months the result was seen. It was the first Tabernacle in Schermerhorn Street. Its ground plan modified by churches in many American cities became the American idea of church architecture at the close of the nineteenth century for all denominations which do not cling to Gothic ecclesiasticism.

Imagine a horseshoe inclosing half an acre of ground. Its surface is inclined four to six feet as it slopes backward from the two heels. Draw lines within curving like the curve of the shoe. Bridge the heels with a platform. Let the pews be packed with people; put a man on the platform, a consummate actor with a powerful resonant voice, and place a large resonant organ behind him and you have an idea of the first Tabernacle, and of its successor. The Third in Clinton Avenue followed the same ground plan, but was increased in height to admit two galleries rising on the horseshoe away from the platform.

The ground for the first Tabernacle at Schermerhorn Street and Third Avenue was broken in June, 1870, a year and a half after Dr. Talmage came to Brooklyn. The building was dedicated September 25, 1870. It was of brick covered with corrugated iron. Although called an iron building officially, it was popularly called the "Tin Tabernacle." It cost \$45,000, and would seat 1,500 persons and was thought to be ample in size. In less than a year, however, it had to be extended. A second dedicatory service was held in 1871, in which the Rev. Dr. Stephen H. Tyng of New York took part. The Tabernacle was burned down on Sunday morning, December 22, 1872. The fire started from a defective furnace flue just before the hour of morning service. While it was raging, the trustees with Dr. Talmage met in the house of Major B. R. Corwin in State Street and decided to hire the Academy of Music for future services. During the meeting invitations came from some ten pastors offering the use of their churches for the Tabernacle congregation. Mr. Beecher's was the first to arrive, and that evening the Tabernacle congregation met in Plymouth church. Mr. Beecher's hospitality invited his own congregation to stay at home and he assisted Dr. Talmage in the services. The fire destroyed the organ originally built for the Boston Coliseum which the Tabernacle had purchased. Work was begun immediately to build a new Tabernacle on the old site, larger, more beautiful and more stable. This



building was 157 feet 6 inches by 115 feet and could seat 4,000 persons, with standing room for half as many more. It was of brick and stone and cost \$123,000. It was dedicated on Sunday, February 22, 1874, the Rev. Dr. Byron Sunderland of Washington preaching and Mr. Beecher taking part in the services. The occasion drew the biggest crowd ever seen in a Brooklyn church. It was estimated at 6,000 and it required police supervision as much as a jam on the bridge.

In this Tabernacle, Dr. Talmage's reputation grew. His sermons were published in book and newspaper form until he was the most widely known and best paid clergyman of the day and perhaps of any other.

During the occupancy of this building the two plans in which Dr. Talmage was deeply interested failed. One was the free pew system, of which he was a pioneer, but it succeeded no better in the Tabernacle than it did in many another church. The Tabernacle was supported by the envelope system until the returns proved unsatisfactory and the church was obliged to resort to pew auctions. Another institution was the Lay College for the training of lay workers. The College was established in the old building of the Central Presbyterian Church and was continued till it died for lack of support.

The second Tabernacle was burned down on Sunday, October 27, 1899. The fire started about 3 o'clock in the morning and was supposed to have been caused by lightning. Dr. Talmage was ready to start on a trip through the Holy Land preparatory to writing a Life of Christ. He delayed his going several weeks until he saw his congregation housed in the Academy of Music, and had set on foot a scheme to raise funds for a new tabernacle. First of all an appeal was issued while the embers were still hot asking all readers of Dr. Talmage's sermons to contribute toward the fund. This brought in \$4,000. Subscriptions were collected also through a religious journal Dr. Talmage edited. The site was purchased at Clinton and Greene Avenues, one of the most fashionable sections of the city. A trying period for Dr. Talmage followed. The new Tabernacle was of brick and brown stone, massive and expensive. Russell Sage loaned a large part of the money for its completion. In addition to the mortgages he was said to have been secured by large insurance policies on Dr. Talmage's life. These funds were not enough, however, and the progress of the builders was interrupted by the filing of a builder's lien, suits and unpleasant and annoying complications. The cornerstone was laid on February 10, 1890, a week after Dr. Talmage's return from the Holy Land. While construction was in progress the courts authorized a mortgage of \$22,500 to be placed upon the building. Russell Sage took half of the bonds. The building was dedicated on April 26, 1891, and the day's contributions were \$22,000. The building and lot cost about \$300,000. It was of far greater beauty than its predecessor. It was also higher, having two galleries and a seating capacity of 4,000. A tablet set in the wall at the right of the platform contained four stones Dr. Talmage had brought from the Holy Land. Two were from Mount Sinai representing the two tables of the Mosaic Law and one each from Mars Hill and Calvary. In 1892 the Tabernacle reported more than 7,000 members with an increase of 3,000 in a year. This was the largest congregation in the city by far.

Another fire pursued Dr. Talmage, however. After the morning service on May 13, 1894, before Dr. Talmage had left the building, and while the great congregation lingered in the neighborhood, fire started near the organ. The fire department fought the flames all day, but in vain. When the sun went down the third Tabernacle and the last was in ruin. The Regent Hotel adjoining and private property besides was involved in the destruction. The loss was well over \$1,000,000. The spirit of the congregation was crushed by this third catastrophe,

and nothing was done toward retrieving the loss. It led Dr. Talmage to leave Brooklyn. His wife was overcome by the shock and never recovered from it. While she regained her health and strength sufficiently to go abroad she eventually sought treatment in a sanitarium at Dansville, N. Y., where she died on August 5, 1895. She was Dr. Talmage's second wife, and was about fifty years old at the time of her death. They were married in 1864, and she played no small part in carrying out his ideals of philanthropic work and making his home what it was.

Dr. Talmage in October, 1895, accepted a call to the First Presbyterian Church of Washington where he divided the pastoral labors with the venerable Dr. Byron Sunderland. He preached his farewell sermon in Brooklyn in the Lafayette Avenue Presbyterian Church on October 6, 1895. He was installed in his new church in Washington on October 22, 1895. On March 14, 1897, he was proposed for chaplain of the United States Senate. On July 4 of that year there were rumors of trouble between Dr. Talmage and his flock. On July 22 he denied any intention of leaving Washington, and the next day he denounced those who had started the report. On January 24, 1898, Dr. Sunderland, his associate resigned. On March 9, 1899, Dr. Talmage resigned the pastorate to do literary work, saying: "I made up my mind to resign because I find that I am unable to give to the place the attention it deserves."

Despite the large crowds he always drew, the church was in a bad way financially, and the last report of his pastorate showed a deficit of \$750. As Dr. Talmage was to receive what remained after all expenses of the church and the salary of Dr. Sunderland the pastor emeritus had been paid, he received nothing during his last year in charge.

While in Brooklyn, Dr. Talmage was tried and acquitted by the Presbytery on charges of lying and deceit. The charges grew out of his conduct in resigning the editorship of the "Christian at Work" to become editor of the "Advance." The change was made in a twinkling and it attracted wide-spread attention when it occurred in 1879. An appeal was taken to the synod after his acquittal but nothing more was done.

Dr. Talmage walked the platform during his sermons and never held one position for more than an instant. He traveled extensively and lectured. He toured England under Major J. B. Pond and was enthusiastically received. In 1892 he sailed in the ship "Leo" laden with provisions for famine-stricken Russia. He was received by the royal family and honored especially by the Czar himself. On January 6, 1895, he began a series of sermons at the Academy of Music in New York, but they were discontinued after a few weeks.

He died in his Washington home April 12, 1902. At his bedside were his wife, the Rev. Frank De Witt Talmage of Chicago, a son; Mrs. Warren G. Smith of Brooklyn; Mrs. Daniel Mangam, Brooklyn; Mrs. Allan E. Donnau, Richmond; Mrs. Clark Wyckoff and Miss Talmage.

His body was buried in Greenwood Cemetery.

Dr. Talmage left an estate of \$300,000, of which about \$250,000 was personal property. The real estate was worth \$50,000 and comprised a house at 1400 Massachusetts Avenue, Washington, property in Southampton and the old home in Brooklyn. The will gave "the widow's third" to Mrs. Talmage and divided the remainder share and share alike among his children and their lineal descendants. The heirs-at-law were Mrs. Talmage, Mrs. Jessie T. Smith, and Mrs. May Mangam, both of Brooklyn; Mrs. Edith T. Donnau of Richmond, Va.; Frank De Witt Talmage of Chicago; Miss Jennie G. Talmage of Washington and Mrs. Maude T. Wyckoff of Cape Vincent, N. Y.



**Paola S. Abbate**, a noted sculptor, was ordained to the Congregational ministry in the Italian Church of the Redeemer, Clinton and Carroll Streets, the night of Tuesday, January 29, 1924. Mr. Abbate had studied, taught and lectured extensively in this country on varied subjects and had been a strong spiritual force among the Italian people in the United States.

The newly ordained minister has a large collection of noted pieces of art in marble and bronze to his credit. A few of his works include the first Dante monument in America at Newburgh, a Dante monument at Providence; a portrait bust (marble) of Louis Bourgeois, the architect and sculptor for the Bahai Temple, Chicago; Prof. L. Carnovale, philosopher humanist (marble); *Fiat Voluntas Tua*, for the Ruvolo's Memorial, Torrington, Conn.; the Lost Empire, *Virtutes Civicae*, Towards the Infinite, Thou, Police Commissioner R. E. Enright, in bronze; *La Victoire*, David, Jeanne d'Arc, and the Joyce Kilmer monument to be placed in France, not yet finished.

Mr. Abbate intended to continue his work in the world of art and have charge of the work at the Italian Church of the Redeemer as well, where it was expected that he would be able to build up a large Italian Congregational church and community center. Much of his sculptural work reveals his spiritual tendencies.

He was born in 1884 and is an American citizen. He speaks English fluently. His thick, black wavy hair is brushed straight back from his forehead and he wears a mustache and full Van Dyke beard.

At the close of the service he baptized two infants, Joseph Raicaldo and Maria Arancini, and pronounced the benediction.

During the afternoon the Ordaining Council of the Congregational Church examined the candidate for the ministry and passed upon him for ordination.

Dr. Henderson opened the evening services with prayer. The Rev. Dr. Charles W. Shelton read the Bible and the Rev. Chev. Giuseppe Buggelli of Bloomfield Theological Seminary addressed the congregation in Italian.

The Rev. Dr. J. Percival Huget, pastor of Tompkins Avenue Congregational Church, preached the ordination sermon, in which he called attention to five points which the Church desires to say through its ministry.

---

### THE SWEDISH LUTHERAN BETHLEHEM CHURCH

After preliminary church work by the Revs. J. G. Princell and P. J. Swärd among the Swedish population of Brooklyn in 1873, and by the latter in the early part of 1874, the Swedish Lutheran Bethlehem Church was organized April 15, 1874. The meeting place for the organization was in the German Lutheran Church on Schermerhorn Street. At the annual meeting of the Augustana Synod, held at Vasa, Minn., in 1875, the Bethlehem Church was admitted as member of the Synod.

The first pastor of the Bethlehem Church was Rev. Swärd. He resigned from his charge September 21, 1876, but stayed until March of the following year, when he moved from Brooklyn. After having in vain called the Rev. A. Hult, the congregation extended, on March 15, 1877, a call to Mr. E. A. Fogelström, student at the Augustana Theological Seminary, to become their pastor after his ordination at Synodical meeting the same year. He accepted the call and took up his duties as pastor in July, 1877.

As early as August, 1874, the congregation had appointed a committee to raise funds for building a church. This committee was dissolved at the annual meeting 1878. The amount gathered up to that was \$757.72, and was turned over to the congregation.

Mr. Fogelström resigned in June, 1879, and moved in the following month to Omaha, Neb. Calls were extended to L. G. Abrahamson, student of theology, and to the Revs. C. G. Widen and J. Seleen, but all of them declined the call. In the summer of 1879 M. J. Englund, student of theology, filled the pulpit. On October 30, 1879, the Rev. A. Rodell, of Kansas City, Mo., was called as pastor. He delivered his first sermon to the congregation which was still meeting in the German Lutheran Church on Schermerhorn Street.

Mr. Rodell at once began the work of organizing a Sunday school and succeeded well. He also took up the question of providing a church for the congregation. A subscription was started, and a lot on Bergen Street, between 3rd and 4th Avenues, was bought for the purpose. But in the meanwhile the congregation was offered a good opportunity of buying a church on Pacific Street, between Smith and Hoyt Streets, and in January, 1882, this church was bought for \$7,000. After being renovated, the church was dedicated December 10, 1882, by the Rev. C. E. Lindberg, of the Gustavus Adolphus Church of New York, then president of the New York Conference. A few years later the basement was properly fixed up for the use of meetings. The lot on Bergen Street was sold. During the ministry of Mr. Rodell three societies in the congregation were organized.

Owing to severe illness, contracted during his manifold work, Mr. Rodell tendered his resignation in the fall of 1892. On the 15th of September, a meeting was held for electing his successor, and at this meeting the present pastor, Dr. F. Jacobson, residing then at New Haven, Conn., was called. He accepted and delivered his first sermon in the congregation October 23, 1892.

During the time of Mr. Rodell the need of a larger church was felt. One of the first duties of the new pastor was to see to it that this want should be supplied. A committee was appointed for the purpose, and on December 12, 1892, the corner lot of Pacific Street and Third Avenue was bought for \$18,500. On June 10, 1894, the ground was broken for the new church building, and on October 28 of the same year the cornerstone was laid. On September 15 of 1895, the congregation moved into the basement of its new church, and December 15, 1895, the new building was solemnly dedicated.

Several organizations, most of which are still existing, such as the Sewing Societies, the Sick and Burial Aid Society, the Alumni Committee, the Loyal Sons, the Aid Society, etc., have in the course of time been organized and contributed much to the progress of the congregation.

In the year 1906 a Home was opened in 202 Dean Street, to give shelter and rest to young women while on vacation from their work, or while changing positions as servants in families. The building is now sold and the work has been discontinued.

The Bethlehem Church is also the mother church of some of the other Swedish Lutheran congregations in Brooklyn, she having at first opened up the field in various parts of this borough.



## CHAPTER XXI

### UNITARIANISM

IT WAS on June 9, 1833, that in the house of Josiah Dow, at 106 Nassau Street. Unitarianism came into organized existence in Brooklyn through a gathering in which New England and Old England were united. Of the ten men who met at that time to found the society, the names of Low, Cary and Woodward are still well represented in the congregation of today. Six weeks later eighteen men, mostly heads of families, pledged themselves to form a Unitarian Society and engaged Classical Hall, on the east side of Washington Street near Concord, as a place of worship. On September 17, 1834, the Rev. David Hatch Barlow was installed as pastor of the new society.

In 1835 the society was incorporated as "The First Unitarian Church in Brooklyn" and the congregation purchased Gothic Hall in Adams Street as a permanent place of worship. The financial crash of 1837 brought embarrassment to the infant church, and the ill-health of its minister resulted in his resignation after almost four years of satisfactory service. In January, 1838, the women of the church organized the Samaritan Sewing Society, now the Samaritan Alliance. Mr. Barlow's successor, the Rev. Frederick West Holland, was installed on April 11, 1838, and remained until 1842. Mr. Holland was a devoted pastor but not a great preacher, and during his pastorate the congregation divided, an important minority forming the Second Unitarian Church of Brooklyn and calling as pastor the Rev. Dr. Frederick A. Farley, who began his ministry in Brooklyn in August, 1841.

In the following January a movement to reunite the two societies under Dr. Farley was initiated, with the best of good feeling on both sides, and on April 19, 1842, fifty-nine members of both branches of the church joined in signing the list of those who thus formed this society under its present name, "The First Unitarian Congregational Society of Brooklyn." These fifty-nine names may still be read on the original agreement, which is framed and hung in the rear room of the chapel.

Meantime the committee had engaged the new Brooklyn Lyceum for its services of Sunday worship; this building was on the west side of Washington Street almost directly opposite the smaller Classical Hall in which the congregation had been meeting. The Lyceum with its fine front of granite had been completed in 1833 and remained until taken down to permit the extension of the Brooklyn Bridge facilities. The largest contributor to its erection was Mr. Dow, in whose house the Unitarian movement originated, and the Chairman of its Executive Committee was Seth Low, one of the foremost among the friends of the church. It is interesting to note that when the Lyceum ran into debt and was sold, it was bought by Augustus Graham, a liberal benefactor of this Church and of the American Unitarian Association, as well as of many of Brooklyn's local charities, and was given by him to the Apprentices' Library, which later became the Brooklyn Institute.

The first communion service was held in the Lyceum on Sunday, January 2, 1842. On February 1, 1842, it was unanimously voted that the interests, present and prospective, of Unitarian Christianity required that a new place of worship should be erected. In the month of October of the same year a Building Committee was authorized to purchase a suitable spot for a church and to enter into contracts for its erection. On October 28 the land on which the Church now stands was conveyed to the society, and the plans of Minard Lafever for its con-

struction were approved. While the church was being erected it was determined to add the side galleries.

On Wednesday, April 24, 1844, the completed church was filled with an audience for its consecration. These services were immediately succeeded by the services of installation. It appears, therefore, that Dr. Farley was installed three times: first as minister of the earlier Second Unitarian Society, next as minister of the reunited society and finally on the day of the dedication of the church. Inevitably the erection and consecration of such a church added to its influence in Brooklyn. The population of the city was now increased to 55,000, but the residential district had not yet crossed Henry Street. The land on which the church was built cost a little less than \$6,000 and the entire cost of land, church, furniture, and fences was just under \$35,000. The sum realized from the sale of pews paid for the entire cost excepting about \$9,000, which was left on mortgage.

In June of the same year the Sunday school, which had organized in 1842 with Isaac H. Frothingham as superintendent, celebrated its first rural festival at Judd's Grove, Jamaica. In the same year the lot on Vista Hill was purchased. In 1850 the Second Unitarian Church was initiated, largely by members of this society. In 1859 Dr. Farley delivered in this church on Sunday evenings a remarkable course of doctrinal lectures which were published in a volume at the time and later republished by the American Unitarian Association. In 1862 Dr. Farley secured the consent of the parish to a change in the form of evening worship, making it to include responsive readings and an increased number of musical selections. These Vesper Services were so well attended that usually every seat in the galleries as well as in the body of the church was occupied.

In 1863 Dr. Farley resigned his pastorate, but until his death in 1892 he remained a member of the congregation. Dr. Farley had been educated first as a lawyer and afterwards as a minister. His early training no doubt contributed to form the logical cast of his mind and the calmness of his judgment. Dr. Farley preached his farewell sermon in November, 1863, and the Rev. Dr. Alfred Porter Putnam was called from Roxbury, Mass., to the pastorate, May 2, 1864, and was installed on September 28.

During 1866, largely through the efforts of Mr. E. H. R. Lyman, the Sunday School Chapel was erected at an expense of about \$20,000 and \$6,000 more was expended for repairs on the church. The Sunday School Chapel was dedicated on Christmas Day, 1866. Dr. Putnam generously encouraged the movement for the formation of Unity Church, although it took from his own congregation a body of useful and devoted members.

In November, 1865, Dr. Putnam called a meeting of the teachers in the Church Sunday School, to consult as to the possibility of establishing a Mission School. The room in the Wall Street ferry house was secured, and on December 17, 1865, the first session of the Mission School was held.

April 9, 1868, the first joint Easter Service of the two Sunday schools was held in the church. The festival has been celebrated in the same way every year since, with one exception. In 1869 the church celebrated the twenty-fifth anniversary of the dedication of the church edifice, and Dr. Putnam preached a discourse on Unitarianism in Brooklyn.

The Mission Chapel Building Fund was started in 1867; the first money devoted to it was the contribution of the scholars of the Mission School, November 17, 1867, amounting to 18 cents. Dramatic entertainments by teachers and friends, accruing interest and small contributions increased it in successive years,



until in October, 1875, \$3,855.74 was turned over to the treasurer of the Building Fund. Contributions from members of the church aggregated \$18,805, besides Mr. Bierwith's bequest of \$1,000 and the Teachers' and Scholars' Fund, a total of \$23,690.74, with which the lots on Willow Place were bought and the Chapel erected.

The Willow Place Chapel was dedicated on Easter Sunday, April 16, 1876, when the name of Mission School was dropped.

In 1880 the pastor and the trustees started the movement in Brooklyn for the celebration of the centenary of the birth of William Ellery Channing. On the evening of April 6 the opening services were held in the Church of the Saviour, and the next morning, Wednesday, April 7, at another meeting in the Church, Baptist, Methodist, Episcopal ministers and Jewish rabbi joined with Unitarians in their tributes to Channing. On the same evening a great meeting was held in the Academy of Music. Addresses were made by the Rev. Rufus Ellis, of Boston; the Rev. Robert Collyer, of New York; the Rev. J. M. Pullman (Universalist), of New York; George William Curtis, the Rev. Dr. Sims (Methodist), and the Rev. Henry Ward Beecher.

In 1886 Dr. Putnam resigned his pastorate. He was an eager student and compiled the volume of "Songs and Singers of the Liberal Faith," which still holds its place as the best collection of its kind.

Many years later, on the occasion of the installation of another pastor in this church, but while Mr. Holland, Dr. Farley and Dr. Putnam were all still in active life, Dr. Storrs remarked that, while he knew nothing of the chances for Unitarian ministers in the next world, they certainly seemed to have eternal life in this.

ALFRED T. WHITE.

Names of the fifty-nine members of the original First and Second Church who met April 19, 1842, to unite into the First Unitarian Congregational Society:

George B. Grannis, Henry Russell, E. F. Brigham, John Greenwood, William R. Sheldon, Edward I. Sheldon, Willard M. Newell, Edwin Atkins, Joshua Atkins, Jr., Chas. B. Tatham, R. F. Blydenburg, Joseph L. Lord, William K. Tucker, Luke W. Thomas, Timothy Clough, David Felt, James Wilcomb, F. B. Putnam, A. M. Wilder, William Lombard, Abram R. Frothingham, George Collins, George E. Cook, Randall H. Greene, Benjamin Blossom, Charles Stoddard, Charles M. Olcott, Thomas A. Morrison, James F. Bailey, Fred R. Bunker, Henry Taylor, Benjamin Flanders, James Walters, Philip I. Arcularius, Francis C. Treadwell, Freeman Hunt, Henry Hawley, Stanton Bebee, George B. Archer, James W. Low, Daniel L. Holden, Thomas P. Bucklin, Isaac H. Frothingham, William Sayer, George S. Cary, Joshua Atkins, Joseph Knowles, Charles Woodward, William B. Bliss, Peter G. Taylor, Thomas Woodward, Josiah O. Low, Seth H. Low, William Bailey, Benjamin P. Jones, William Bucklin, Seth Low, William H. Cary, A. A. Low.

#### LATER CHRONOLOGY

- 1886, Apr. 5—Resignation of the Rev. A. P. Putnam.
- 1887, Oct. 5—Installation of the Rev. A. E. Goodnough. Died Feb. 8, 1888.
- 1888, Oct. 31—Installation of the Rev. H. Price Collier.
- 1890, Mar. 12—Parsonage purchased at 98 Pierrepont St.
- 1892, Mar. 24—Death of Dr. Farley.
- 1892, Oct. 1—Termination of Mr. Collier's ministry.
- 1893, May 18—Installation of the Rev. Samuel A. Eliot.
- 1894, Apr. 24—50th Anniversary of Dedication of Church.
- 1894, Apr. 24—Dedication of first memorial window to Dr. Farley.
- 1897, Dec. 1—Reorganization of Samaritan Society as Samaritan-Alliance.
- 1897, Dec. 6—Resignation of the Rev. S. A. Eliot.
- 1898, Oct. 6—Installation of the Rev. John P. Forbes.
- 1905 —Erection of Willow Place Chapel House.
- 1910, Apr. 16—Death of the Rev. J. P. Forbes.
- 1911, Mar. 16—Installation of the Rev. John Howland Lathrop.
- 1913, Dec. 7—Dedication of the Forbes Memorial Window.
- 1914, Apr. 24—70th Anniversary of Consecration of Church.

1914, Apr. 24—Dedication of Rose Window "to all those whose lives and labors have contributed to build and maintain this Society."  
 1914, July, Aug.—Union Services with Plymouth Church.

### MINISTERS OF THE CHURCH

#### FIRST UNITARIAN CHURCH

Samuel Hatch Barlow.....Sept. 17, 1834—July, 1837  
 Frederick West Holland.....April 11, 1838—April, 1842

#### FIRST UNITARIAN CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH

Frederick Augustus Farley.....May, 1842—Nov., 1863  
 Alfred Porter Putnam.....Sept., 1864—April, 1886  
 Alfred Everett Goodnough.....Oct., 1887—Feb. 8, 1888  
 Hiram Price Collier.....Oct., 1888—Oct. 1, 1892  
 Samuel Atkins Eliot.....May, 1893—Feb. 1, 1898  
 John Perkins Forbes.....Oct., 1898—April 16, 1910  
 John Howland Lathrop.....March, 1911—

On January 31, 1838, the women of the First Unitarian Church organized under the following pledge:

"We, whose names are undersigned, agree to form ourselves into a society for the relief of the sick and suffering poor, and by the annual payment of the sum of fifty cents or one dollar, to form a fund for the purposes of Charity, in the earnest hope of not only developing our own benevolent sympathies, but adding our mite to the assistance of our distressed fellow beings."

Among the names "undersigned" we find Mrs. Holland's, the minister's wife, heading the list; also the names Archer, Blunt, Blackburne, Blossom, Cary, Cutler, Hicks, Low, Taylor, Russell and Woodward, devoted women, all of them, whose descendants in this Church may well rise up and call them blessed.

The new organization took the name of the Female Samaritan Society, and the officers elected for 1838 were: President, Mrs. William H. Cary; Vice-President, Mrs. Peter G. Taylor; Secretary and Treasurer, Miss R. A. Cutler.

The "Tea Party," given at the Brooklyn Institute, on Washington Street near Concord, on October 4, 1843, was the first thing of the kind in Brooklyn, and it made a great sensation and was considered "very elegant." A large number of gentlemen served as "marshals," ladies brought their own silver for the tables, supper was served and fancy articles were for sale.

As a result of this "Tea Party" \$1,265 was given to the Building Committee. The money was used to furnish the pulpit, for the screen, upholstery, lamps and communion table. A resolution of thanks, offered by Seth Low and unanimously adopted at a church meeting, was sent to the ladies.

Under the presidency of Mrs. Farley, the Samaritan Society did much good work, helping the charitable organizations which were forming in the rapidly growing city. The "Home for Aged and Indigent Females," now "The Graham Home for Old Ladies," was the first to ask a Unitarian to be a member of the Board of Managers. Mrs. Alexander M. White became the first Unitarian manager, and her good work was carried on by her daughter.

Mrs. Edward Anthony was another enthusiastic and resourceful leader, who worked for the society till failing health obliged her to resign. In 1875 when an effort was being made to build the Willow Place Chapel, the Samaritan Society contributed \$187.20.

In 1890 Unitarian women organized the National Alliance of Unitarian and Other Liberal Christian Women, and branches were formed in the Churches. The branch in this Church worked for several years side by side with the Samaritan Society, but finally all realized that the aims and interests of the two societies were identical, and on December 1, 1897, the newly formed Alliance Branch dis-



banded, in order that the older organization might become a branch of the National Alliance without a break in its records. The first meeting of the Samaritan Alliance was held on December 15, 1897.

Besides the pioneers mentioned in Dr. Putnam's pastorate, were Miss Russell, Mrs. Edward A. Low, Mrs. Lennox, Mrs. Monroe, Mrs. Towne, Mrs. Nicolovius, Mrs. Chapman, Miss Tatham, Miss Sheldon, Mrs. Bierwirth, Miss Helen Harrington, and many other faithful workers. MISS EMMA C. LOW.

### Second Unitarian Church

The Second Unitarian Congregational Society was organized November 5, 1850, to provide a religious home for Brooklynites of the Liberal faith who had forsaken the Heights for South Brooklyn as a place of residence. Among the leaders of the new Society were Charles M. Olcott, E. S. Mills, E. D. Plimpton, B. F. Seaver, John C. Beale and Philander Shaw. A distinguishing characteristic, which this church has retained throughout its history, was the broad, non-creedal Bond of Union, which expressly disavowed any theological bias and stressed "character, as distinguished from belief. . . . The sole qualification for membership shall be a deliberate purpose to enter into a fellowship of Love, Service and Right Endeavor, with those in the Society."

The first minister of the Society was the Rev. Samuel Longfellow, installed in 1853, a graduate of Harvard and brother of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow. The Rev. Samuel Longfellow was himself gifted with rare literary powers, and had the reputation of being a radical in his views, since he was an outspoken opponent of slavery and, in philosophy, held with Emerson, just becoming famous, and Theodore Parker, of Boston. Until the completion of its Chapel, at the corner of Clinton and Congress Streets in 1858, the Society met in the old Brooklyn Institute on Washington Street and the Athenæum, still standing and in use, at Atlantic Avenue and Clinton Street. The "New Chapel," as it was commonly called, was in marked contrast to the prevailing fashions in architecture, being of the Romanesque style, with apse and campanile, after designs brought from Northern Italy by Mr. Longfellow. In keeping with the unsectarian and progressive spirit of the Society, the text "The Truth shall make you free" was inscribed above the Chapel entrance. A further innovation by Mr. Longfellow was the introduction of Vesper services at the hour of sunset, said to be the first of their kind ever held in an American Protestant church. For them he wrote several beautiful evening hymns, two of which are now widely used in churches of all denominations: "Now on land and sea descending," and "Now as evening shadow falls." For various other occasions, hymns were composed whose popularity extends far beyond the Unitarian denomination. Among them are: "One holy Church of God appears," and "Light of Ages and of Nations."

Rev. Nahor A. Staples succeeded Mr. Longfellow in 1861, coming with over-taxed health from the chaplaincy of a Northern regiment. Two years were given him to preach with earnest vehemence the cause of Union and Emancipation before he died of tuberculosis contracted in camp. The Society again looked to the Harvard Divinity School for a pastor and, after an interval, called Rev. John White Chadwick, in December, 1864. Mr. Chadwick, a memoir of whom appears elsewhere in this history, remained as pastor of the church for forty years and during that time won for himself and the Society a high reputation in Brooklyn, where the latter became noted, in a period of stormy philosophical and theological controversies, for its maintenance of a free and progressive

pulpit, as well as for its humanitarian activities in connection with many of the leading charitable institutions of the city, notably the Maxwell House (now the Neighborhood Guild), the Union for Christian Work (now the Brooklyn Bureau of Charities), the Flower Mission, Female Employment Society and Free Kindergartens. The pulpit was frequently occupied by leading advocates of Woman Suffrage and Civil Service Reform, while the principles of Evolution, then being disseminated in this country, were advanced and championed not only by Mr. Chadwick, but by John Fiske, Dr. Lewis G. Janes (whose Brooklyn Ethical Association held its lectures in the church) and other radical writers and speakers. Mr. Chadwick's literary reputation brought many visitors to the "Little Church on the Corner," who had read his books, heard his lectures or sang his hymns, notable among which were: "Eternal Ruler of all the Ceaseless Round," "Spirit of God in thunder speak," "O Love Divine of all that is, the sweetest still and best."

Mr. Chadwick died in 1904, eleven days before his fortieth anniversary as pastor. In 1907, the Rev. Caleb S. S. Dutton, a native of England, succeeded Mr. Chadwick and preached with great acceptability until 1913, when he was called to the pastorate of the First Unitarian Church of San Francisco. The Rev. Charles H. Lyttle followed him in 1914, as Minister of the Society, which continues to worship in the "New Chapel," that long since has become one of the quaint landmarks of old South Brooklyn. Among the presidents of the Society have been: George H. Ellery, John W. Frothingham, Volney Green, C. P. Gerish, Henry L. Faris, Henry W. Maxwell, Sylvester Swain, Andrew Jacobs, George William Smith, Henry T. Wing, Hersey Brown, Edmund F. Driggs, Edwin M. Wheeler, John B. Brickelmaier. The present officers are: President John F. Thompson; Secretary, Henry A. Farnell; Treasurer, Benjamin F. Seaver.

Among the preachers and pastors of Brooklyn who, in the last half of the nineteenth century, gave this community a unique fame for the intellectual culture, literary fertility and progressive thought of its pulpits, John White Chadwick, for forty years minister of the Second Unitarian Church, which occupied then as now the quaint Romanesque chapel at Clinton and Congress Streets in South Brooklyn, was among the most prominent. The increasing love and affection in which his congregation held him during his exceptionally long pastorate (the first and only charge he ever had), as well as his position of acknowledged esteem in this city, were due not only to his marked and varied literary powers, but to the unaffected simplicity and heartiness of his nature, and to his alertness to champion and set forth the latest and best thought of his day in philosophy, letters and science. To every theme on which he wrote, Mr. Chadwick brought a gentle human sympathy enriched by wide study and observation, an impetuous indignation against every form of tyranny, whether of mind or body, a critical acumen that would have sown ill-will had not tolerance and humor taken the sting from its shafts; and to express all these qualities, the grace and delicacy of a true poet.

Marblehead, Mass., his seacoast birthplace, with its whaling ships and fishermen, and the paternity of a sturdy, respected sea captain of that town were responsible, no doubt, for some of this moral and intellectual endowment with which the young lad (born Oct. 19, 1840) adventured so successfully the Bridgewater Normal School, Exeter Academy, Harvard Divinity School, and, in 1864, the pastorate of the Brooklyn church. He was ordained and installed Dec. 20, 1864. He was married the following June, to Annie Hathaway, of Marblehead, who, with their children, Mrs. Henry R. Ham, Stanley H. Chadwick and



Ernest M. Chadwick, survived him at his death on Dec. 11, 1904. Mr. Chadwick was buried in the Waterside cemetery at Marblehead.

The source of Mr. Chadwick's lasting reputation lay in the versatility and fertility of his literary powers. He ranged far and wide through all the fields of knowledge, avid for the highest and freshest thought, and embodied the spoils of this reading and the ethical and spiritual import of his reflection in written sermons, which he brought on Sunday mornings to his pulpit. They were unfailingly of high literary merit and strong, fearless thought. Preceded by extempore prayers of almost poetic ardor and tenderness and accompanied by readings taken not only from the Bible, but from all the great religious and ethical Scriptures of the world, poetry as well as prose, assured him a congregation of high intellectual calibre. So insistent, indeed, were his auditors upon the privilege of a second opportunity to consider his message that Mr. Chadwick's sermons were for two decades regularly to be found in the Monday columns of the "Brooklyn Daily Eagle." They were collected, also, in thirteen volumes, the best-known and liked of which bear the following titles: "The Faith of Reason" (1879); "Origin and Destiny" (1883); "A Daring Faith" (1885); "Faith on the Earth," containing the famous eulogy of Henry Ward Beecher (1887); "The Poem of an Endless Life" (1891); "Seeing and Believing" (1893); "Old and New Unitarian Belief" (1894); "The Great Refusal" (1895); "The Choir Invisible" (1899); "Character Making" (1903).

In addition to his sermons, it was Mr. Chadwick's custom, on the first Sunday evening of each winter month, to deliver a lecture treating of some theme secular or sacred affording moral inspiration. People of every religious persuasion attended these lectures, certain of which were published in the Monday newspapers, or in monthly periodicals, others in book form, as for example those on "The Bible of Today" (1878) and "The Man Jesus" (1881). In particular, the lectures on "The Ethics of Shakespeare" and on the distinguishing tenets of certain Protestant denominations, were largely attended and discussed. In addition to these productions, Mr. Chadwick wrote a life of his predecessor, Rev. N. A. Staples, under the title "The Way, the Truth and the Life;" a sketch of his father "Cap'n Chadwick"; a narrative of Sallie Holly, a negro heroine of the anti-Slavery days; and two of the best ecclesiastical biographies in American literature, "Theodore Parker, Preacher and Reformer" (1901), and "William Ellery Channing, Minister of Religion" (1903). Nor does this résumé cover his entire literary work; for not less probably than 4,000 book reviews and notes came from his pen in the 40 years of his productivity, without counting numerous biographical articles for newspapers and magazines. Since Mr. Chadwick was well acquainted not only with the great books of the day, but with their authors, as well, it was natural and fitting that he should have been called upon by the citizens of Brooklyn for tributes in prose or verse, at the public meetings in memory of Emerson, Lowell and George William Curtis.

By his poems, however, quite as much as by his prose writings, Mr. Chadwick won the ear and approbation of the public of the entire English-speaking world. (Certain of this theological works were translated into German.) Three volumes, "A Book of Poems" (1876); "In Nazareth Town" (1883); "Later Poems" (1905), contain many verses of deserved popularity. It is significant that Mr. Chadwick was one of the first to put into poetry the heroism and vision of human destiny implicit in the theory of Evolution. Several of his hymns are widely known and used, not only by Unitarians, but by more conservative bodies. Among them may be mentioned: "Eternal Ruler of the Cease-

less Round"; "What has drawn us thus apart?"; "O Thou whose perfect goodness crowns"; "O Love Divine of all that is, the Sweetest still and Best"; "It singeth low in every heart," the last of which has become one of the classic funeral hymns of our literature.

Mr. Chadwick was made an honorary member of the Harvard Chapter of Phi Beta Kappa. Harvard also conferred the degree of M.A. upon him in 1888, and a tablet to his memory was erected in the chapel of the Theological School in Cambridge in 1912.

## CHAPTER XXII

### QUAKERS IN BROOKLYN

**I**N THE days of the Civil War Brooklyn was very definitely a Quaker town. Quakerdom and New England Congregationalism came close to having the whip hand.

"Thee" and "thou" in addressing one another was a usual thing in those days, as was the sight of the quaint neck-cloths, queer coats and hats of the men, and strange fangled bonnets and gowns of the Quaker misses and matrons.

But the old time Quaker is a familiar figure in Brooklyn no longer, and as years have passed, the Quaker maidens who once looked wistfully at their Parisian gowned acquaintances, have put aside the somber gray and plain bonnets, long a mark of their faith, and taken on the style of the world. Charming toilets and pretty furbelows they no longer frown upon, nor do they hesitate at the brightest and most attractive colors.

But the faith continues strong none the less, and the sect holds its own firmly amidst the storm and stress of other religions, old and new.

The two old strongholds of Quakerdom which, through the years, have moulded thousands of lives in religious training, have been the Schermerhorn Street "meeting house," and the Friends Church on Lafayette Avenue.

No other denomination was ever so uniquely constituted. There are Quakers and Quakers, and a line sharply splits the sect in two, leaving distinct bodies. At the opposite poles of doctrine, yet they are both Quakers. On the one hand are the famous seceders, led by Elias Hicks, of Westbury, Long Island, in 1827, the "Hicksites," so far as creed goes, being Unitarians. On the other side are the orthodox followers of the faith as originally founded.

The "Hicksites" called their place of worship a "meeting house," while the orthodox followers used "church" and "meeting house" interchangeably.

For generations the Schermerhorn Street Hicksite Friends sought each Sunday their commodious auditorium, the society dating back to 1834. Outside of the very old Dutch churches of Brooklyn, very few congregations antedated it.

The orthodox church, established in the center of the old hill, at Washington and Lafayette Avenues, was erected in 1867. In 1905, the value of its property was \$30,000 and it had two hundred and sixty-two members, while in 1924, because of many removals of the Friends, it numbered two hundred and fifty souls, increased value of the property reaching \$50,000.

The Schermerhorn Street congregation, on the other hand, estimates its holdings at almost double that figure, its membership numbering between four hundred and five hundred persons. This congregation was the one to see the last old



orthodox Quaker costume, worn by an ancient grandmother. This was twenty years ago. With her death, the last of the "old Quakers" of Brooklyn who throughout their lives clung to the somber gray, was gone.

The Hicksite "meeting"—which means organization—occupied first in Brooklyn a frame wooden building at Clark and Henry Streets, painted white and the oldest members living in 1924 could remember only that they attended this church as little children holding to the big fingers of their mothers, fathers or grandparents. The building was abandoned for the brick structure the congregation built at 110 Schermerhorn Street. This meeting house stood back on a lawn surrounded by willow trees which have all died within the last few years. On the site, two other brick additions have been erected to the meeting house to give room for a thriving Friends school attended by 356 pupils from kindergarten to high school age, the institution having gained the highest reputation. It admitted all sects, its forerunner having been only a primary school in the old days held in the basement of the meeting house. The high school with a preparatory course was made possible when a Mr. Thorne, a New York Friend, gave the money to build the second brick addition in memory of his sister, Phoebe Anna Thorne, of New York. It introduced open air classrooms and other modern features. The principal was Mr. Guy Chipman and the associate Miss E. Frances Woodward.

Services are still held here each Sunday, preceded by Sunday school with the old style benches at the front of the building—where other churches have a chancel or pulpit. Here the "sages" or leaders of the meeting sit. They speak, if the spirit moves, or if not they sit in silence. No pastor is employed, and these "elders" bring the meeting to an end by the two foremost shaking hands. William Walter Jackson, 84 Remsen Street, has been the Sunday school superintendent twelve years.

While many marriages in which the couples pledge their allegiance to each other in the presence of God but without a minister, have taken place in the Schermerhorn and Lafayette churches, the growing tendency has been to have these marriage in the homes, and it has become rare indeed that the pretty old ceremony is carried out under the meeting house roof. None had been witnessed in the Schermerhorn meeting house in April, 1924, for two or three years. Many of the Quakers were being married, also, in the orthodox church, by ministers lately adopted.

Both branches of the church were showing tendencies toward modern religious methods and the spirit to combine into one organization. Meetings were being arranged in both Hicksite and orthodox churches looking toward consolidation, both branches admitting that the quarrel which split the church originally should never have happened. It was much after the manner of the fight now going on between the Fundamentalists and Modernists.

In modern things, the orthodox church has made the greater strides, for its system of having "pastors" has been inaugurated within the last forty years. The Brooklyn church bears the distinction of being the only one either in Brooklyn or New York to have a pastor—Mr. Elden H. Mills, who resides with his wife and three children at 227-A Monroe Street. He is a young man of great force of character and the tendencies of a student, being engaged in taking his doctor's degree at Union Theological Seminary. He writes well, his order of service at the Lafayette church mingling the old style with the new. For he does not abandon the power of silence in his meetings, giving a half-hour to this and to devotion preceding his sermon, which occupies another half-hour at the Sunday morning services. The Thursday evening gatherings, which take the place of the

ordinary church prayer meetings are marked by more of such silence, and are more nearly the old style Quaker meetings. The Lafayette church has also departed from the no-music program, and has a reed organ even in these days when the smallest city churches are equipped with giant pipe organs. It has no choir, the singing being congregational.

The old sect founders based their lack of ministers on the idea that every church member had spiritual responsibility equal to every other member, so that no one could be designated as pastor or minister. They felt it took responsibility from the shoulders of the "meeting" as a whole. For, assembling, the Friends sat quietly to receive, by "practical mysticism," those messages inspired by quiet communication with the Holy Spirit. For they felt, as they still do, that God impresses his children what to say in meeting. And even as late as 1924, Mr. Mills was recorded only as having "a special gift of ministry," as are all the present day orthodox Quaker pastors, and while in a sense he always takes the active lead of the congregation, nevertheless the sect holds it in no wise incumbent upon him to speak a word should the Spirit dictate otherwise on a Sunday morning. He is a trained expert, though, and expected to carry on the service in default of volunteers.

It is also very much the fashion still that should any member wish to speak at any time during the service, he is welcome to do so, and if his impression is to supersede even the pastor's sermon, he is invited into the pulpit, the minister taking his seat. Mills has declared that present day examples are innumerable where one person, rising after Quaker communion with the silence, has voiced the thoughts of the entire gathering; and at modern consolidation meetings of all branches of Quakers when dissensions and antagonisms have bidden fair to split the conclaves, agreements have always been reached unanimously after the body has been bidden into utter and deep silence with the Almighty. Voting has never been a Quaker fashion, and, as yet, figures very little in the whole Quaker organization, numbering 120,000 in America.

The first Quaker "pastor" to enter a theological seminary was Charles N. Woodman. He enrolled at Hartford Seminary in 1904 since which time twenty to twenty-five per cent of the students there have been Quakers.

A modern twist in the Hicksite Brooklyn church is an official "field secretary," who, in a way, corresponds to a minister as head of the church. The present incumbent is Miss Ruth Conrow, who gives two days a week to Brooklyn meeting house affairs, and the remainder of her time to New York Quaker activities.

Among the founders of the Brooklyn Hicksite "meeting" was Richard Field, father of Nathaniel Merritt, who, with his wife, Mary K., afterwards was wont to sit in the gallery of the Schermerhorn brick church. Others prominent for many years in this same gallery were Richard Field's wife, Deborah, and James and Henry Haviland. Other old Brooklyn Hicksite friends who left their Christian impress on the life of the community were Caroline K. Jenkins and Sarah J. Titus, mother and daughter, and both widows when they came to Brooklyn from the New York Quaker church at Hester and Elizabeth Streets. Their husbands, Thomas W. Jenkins and Samuel P. Titus, were pillars in this Old Seventh Ward church, from which numerous Brooklyn members came. Mr. Jenkins and Mr. Titus were the grandfather and father respectively, of one of the most active present-day members of the Schermerhorn church, Miss Caroline J. Titus, of 56 Fort Greene Place, who distinctly remembers the first days in the brick church as a child. She has also attended with her little brother, the orthodox services in the Packer Institute, where the Lafayette congregation met before it built its church.



"Miss Caroline" is a notable character in the Hicksite organization, being now gray in its service, although she does not wear the Quaker garb. Another of her grandfathers was an old "Seventh warder," Peter Titus, while her great grandmother, of which she treasures a handsome painting in Quaker costume, was Sarah Waterman of Nantucket, who married Jonathan Jenkins, a Presbyterian. Her husband later embraced the Friends faith.

"Miss Caroline" related that the first Hicksite wooden building, after being abandoned for the present location, remained without occupancy for several years. It was torn down, and on the site was erected a livery stable, those being the days when the young folks and the population drove out in buggies instead of automobiles. After this, the St. George hotel company bought the property, the Clark street subway station of the Interborough, under the hotel, just about marking the old meeting house site.

Other prominent members of the present congregation are Mrs. Noah H. Chapman, president of the Woman's Suffrage Society of Brooklyn, a fine woman and an active worker, and Mr. and Mrs. A. S. Valentine, who reside on Eighth Avenue. The latter recall when the Friends school was only an academic affair, and many of the old-time Brooklyn folk wore the quaint costume. The activity in which both the Brooklyn Quaker churches are greatly interested at present is the work of the American Friends Service Committee, which has been given the responsibility of expending the money for supplies and foodstuffs for the children and war sufferers abroad. Always pacifists and conscientious objectors to war, the government enlisted the Quakers during the war largely in non-combatant services, although, according to their own spirit promptings, no young man of the Quaker religion was criticized by the church if he wished to take up arms, since each Quaker must answer God for himself and live a right life according to his own spirit promptings.

During the conflict, the Friends Reconstruction Unit did splendid service in France, and after the war Herbert Hoover asked it to take charge of the child feeding in Germany. Such duties were enlarged until the Friends have supplied enormous quantities of clothing and food to Austria and Poland, as well, and in Russia and Czecho-Slovakia. They are now taking care of the work being done under General Allen's American committee, the huge sums of money being given into their care and for their expenditure along the humanitarian channels.

In addition, both Brooklyn congregations have donated and made quantities of clothing on their own responsibility, and during the war, it was a familiar sight to see groups of Quaker ladies gathered in the quaint old Schermerhorn meeting house knitting khaki sweaters, and fashioning children's garments made largely of cotton goods or flannelette.

Such working together toward a common relief of suffering has helped all branches of Quakers closer into sympathy, it is declared.

The Ladies League, of the orthodox Lafayette Avenue church—a comparatively modern organization, as well—has done also much sewing, and the making of bedding for the foreign countries, most of their donations having been sent to Russia for the past three or four years. In this church, William C. Taber is chairman of the finance committee, which makes him head of the meeting.

This church, as well, has gone actively into work for Brooklyn Chinese, the meeting for 25 years having maintained a Chinese school, of which Mrs. Lucy Beck has been the head since its beginning. This school is held in the Sunday school rooms of the church each Sunday, the main object being the conversion of the Chinese. The text-book used is the Bible, and the church ministers to from 15 to 60 students yearly. There were 65 Chinese on the rolls in 1923. English

is also taught and the members of the school themselves have reached out and established a mission in China. Lin Yen, a Chinaman, is the local interpreter, he and his wife being members of the church, while their baby is classed as an "associate member." They are unique figures in the church, and Lin Yen, who owns a restaurant on Broadway, is most active in rounding up his countrymen to the school. As head of the mission in China, some member of the Brooklyn school ordinarily is sent, and Lin Yen himself thus served for a while. This mission and the Chinese work has become very famous in all church channels, and many ministers and those interested in religious affairs, have come to watch such labors. The Chinese baby a few years ago—as all Quaker babies—would have been classed as a "birthright baby," thus when born being counted as a member of the church. Of late years, however, the orthodox church has abandoned this practice, permitting a child to embrace the faith by his own volition and conscious act, if it is his desire, when he reaches an age of reason.

Mr. Mills made a remarkable statement concerning divorce. So far as could be ascertained, but one divorce has been obtained by Quakers in history, who were married by the Friends ceremony. None has been sought in England, and the only one the minister ever heard of was a case on Long Island. The reason given for such permanence of matrimony is that when people choose each other of their own volition, and actually come to state the case in the very presence of God and to a congregation, they are serious minded concerning the matter. It thus becomes tremendously sacred, binding the couple forever, since they feel they have been led to each other through the spirit. Thus Mr. Mills thought Quakerism the final solution of divorce, rather than the prohibition of divorce by law.

The metamorphosis and modernization of Quakerism has come out of the west to the orthodox church. Among Lafayette's interesting pastors of 20 years ago was the Rev. Amos Saunders, tall in the extreme, loose jointed and gray-bearded—very much in contrast to the handsome, boyish pastor of 1924.

## CHAPTER XXIII

### BROOKLYN CITY MISSION

THE Brooklyn City Mission and Tract Society, 85 Oxford Street, in 95 years of service, has had a thrilling career as one of the most important and far-reaching channels for the spread of Christian truth and the personal benefit of the masses in America. The society is non-sectarian and non-denominational.

It has established many missions from which more than a score of churches have emanated; among these are four Protestant Episcopal, four Presbyterian, five Congregational, two Baptist, one Dutch Reformed and one German Evangelical. They are, in order: Christ Chapel, Church of Our Saviour, Church of the Good Shepherd, Grace Reformed Episcopal; Dean Street, Russell Place and Embury, Methodist; Prospect Heights, Bethany, Greene Avenue and Glenmore Avenue, Presbyterian; Brownsville, Pilgrim, Mayflower, Emmanuel, and Italian Pilgrim Chapel, Congregational; Calvary and Italian Union Chapel, Baptist; the Dutch Reformed Centennial and the German Evangelical Zion.



The society was particularly famed a few years ago for its Floating Bethel, a gospel ship, which, guided by mission chaplains, accomplished great ends. As many as 15,000 to 20,000 sailors a year shared its benefits, half that many meals were served, lodging for hundreds furnished, myriads of letters written home by sailors, and around 900 vessels visited. The library contained 4,692 books.

The society was started when Brooklyn possessed only seven Protestant churches and 15,000 inhabitants. It began as a volunteer movement July 17, 1829, when eleven men met in the house of Zachariah Lewis on Brooklyn Heights. Their discussion considered the advisability of a local society, auxiliary to the American Tract Society for assisting the Brooklyn churches by systematic visitation and tract distribution.

These first organizers were: the Rev. C. P. McIlvaine, rector of St. Ann's Church; the Rev. Peter P. Rouse, pastor of the First Dutch Church; the Rev. D. L. Carroll, pastor of the First Presbyterian Church, and Messrs. Adrian Hegeman, Frederick T. Peet, Nathaniel W. Sanford, Elijah Sprague, Roswell Keeler, and Richard M. White.

A public meeting followed, July 22, in the Apprentices' Library, Henry and Cranberry Streets, where the society was formed and a constitution adopted. The Rev. McIlvaine, afterwards bishop, was elected president. Twenty-five directors were named, consisting of the most prominent citizens of the town. The first anniversary was celebrated in St. Ann's Church, Washington Street; and in 1835, a salaried agent was necessary at \$500 yearly. The churches failed to support the work generously and an appeal had to be made.

This produced desired results, and by 1850 the income had reached \$3,001.48. Four missionaries were employed, assisted by four hundred and seven volunteers. In 1861, the first woman missionary—Miss M. Robinson—was appointed. By 1865, fourteen missionaries were employed and six hundred volunteers were working. The society, incorporated in February, was enabled to hold real estate and receive legacies, which proved very beneficial. Incorporators were: Richard S. Storrs, Jr.; Henry Rowland, Alfred Smithers, William W. Wickes, Samuel A. Sawyer, Alanson Trask, Thomas Vernon, John D. McKenzie, Nathan Lane, Lewis Morris, John Sutffen, Jr., Coe Adams, Samuel L. Parsons, Horatio G. K. Calef, Azel D. Matthews, Charles S. Robinson, Dwight Johnson, James P. Wallace, Richard J. Dodge, James W. Downing, Joseph Bryan, Allan L. Bassett, William W. Hurlburt, Henry Sheldon, Theodore Hinsdale, Cornelius D. Wood, Rufus R. Graves, Samuel T. Freeman, Sumner R. Stone, John A. Nexsen, and DeWitt C. Enos.

The first missionary chaplain to penal institutions was appointed—the Rev. Job C. Bass, his work being marvelously successful.

From one little mission hall at 1982 Fulton Street where he started his first mission sixty years ago, these six churches owe their origin: Embury Methodist Episcopal; Emmanuel Congregational; Church of the Good Shepherd, Episcopal; Calvary Baptist; Russell Place Methodist Episcopal, and Grace Reformed Episcopal. In 1881, eight new missionaries were added and the directors began work at the Kings County almshouse and hospital. The Helping Hand Mission and Home for Girls near the Bridge was opened in 1890, and a lodging house and restaurant for men at 266 Jay Street in 1891.

In 1892, the industrial work, indispensable financial support to the missionary work, was started, and up to 1904 in its different branches, the society provided about 800,000 meals and lodgings and furnished employment to about

20,000 destitute men. This accomplished the double purpose of bringing money into the treasury and men into the mission service. Missions to the Jews and Italians were started the same year.

In 1893, Faith Mission, the Tillary Street lodging house for men, and the Floating Bethel were opened. In 1894, employment bureaus, the Gospel wagon, the noonday prayer meeting and aid to discharged prisoners were inaugurated. In 1897, the Greenpoint branch, which grew into a settlement for industrial work with accommodations for one hundred and fifty men was established. Tent services were instituted in 1900, the number of conversions reaching five hundred and sixty in 1902-3, and open air services at Coney Island four years later, with theatre services in Dreamland Park. Sunday afternoon services were held in Many Brooklyn theatres as well.

In 1886, the woman's branch of the society was organized by Mrs. Lucy S. Bainbridge, directly aiding women and children. Among other things founded were a home for destitute women, the King's Daughters' house for working girls, and two fresh air homes, one at "Braehead" in Delaware County, N. Y., and the other at Gillette, N. J. Hebrew missions were started in Williamsburgh and Brownsville, Cuban work, labor among truants, and work among colored people.

A woman missionary assisted with jail and penitentiary endeavors. The system was thoroughly organized, special committees handling each branch of service while practically every church had a woman's society co-operating with the mission leaders. Great praise is befitting these bands of women who as missionaries and volunteers not only then, but even today, do this important work for the women and children of the borough. Among the former presidents was Mrs. William P. Eddy. An honorary president was Mrs. Darwin R. James.

The society's work was four-fold in 1924. The missions were to spread the gospel and give temporal aid; the industrial work provided homes and work for needy persons. Education and Americanization was stressed.

Among the men who put in years of Herculean work were the Rev. C. B. Cutler, pastor of St. Ann's in the fifties, who injected new life into the organization when its fortunes were very low; and the Rev. Dr. R. S. Storrs, under whose administration the society's income was tripled in five years; Alfred Haynes Porter, A. S. Barnes and William Wickes. Dr. Cutler was president for twenty-four years.

Many persons were rescued from a life of crime through the efforts of the Rev. Job Bass, and those of the Italian mission when Mr. Testa was in charge. The latter received a threatening letter from the "Black Hand Society," with a demand for \$1,000. In default his home was to be blown up and himself murdered. Mr. Testa deposited a purse containing only a copy of St. Luke's gospel and a bundle of tracts, which he said were worth \$2,000, at the designated place. The effective work done at the mission resulted in the establishment of three or more churches.

The mission's Tillary Street lodging house afforded accommodation for thousands of men.

The Coney Island services in 1904 were the most remarkable of the kind ever held in this or probably any other state. From an old remnant of a derrick, used as a pulpit, 84,000 persons one summer listened to the gospel, while 4,600 Bibles and 71,000 tracts were distributed, printed in eight languages, by the Brooklyn Bible Society.

At headquarters, chair caning and the manufacture of brooms were carried on.



Two missionaries and one president died in service: Missionary Sheridan slipped from an ice coated ship's ladder and was killed; Missionary Franks died while preaching in the Tillary Street mission, and President Porter in the midst of transacting mission business.

Among the executives of the society in 1904 were John J. Turner, president; John B. Summerfield, Clinton L. Rossiter, and G. Le Lacheur, vice-presidents; the Rev. Donald Fraser, assistant secretary, and H. E. Nitchie, treasurer.

When the Brooklyn City Mission and Tract Society celebrated its seventy-fifth anniversary in 1905 it made an appeal for \$75,000: to provide a new city mission building with executive offices and industrial department, \$30,000; to purchase a new home for working girls instead of the home in Joralemon Street, \$15,000; to remove the mortgage from the Home for Destitute Women, 76 State Street, a self-supporting institution, \$5,000; to extend industrial work and for lodging houses, \$10,000, and for extension of missionary work, \$15,000. The Brooklyn newspapers received subscriptions.

Shortly before the anniversary, a large number of the Brooklyn clergy met, with Bishop Andrews presiding. The Rev. Dr. S. P. Cadman said that no single denomination could evangelize Brooklyn but that, with all the churches co-operating, it could be done. The ministers passed motions that they should express their appreciation of the mission's work, congratulate it on its seventy-fifth anniversary, and observe the third Sunday of February, 1905, as Brooklyn City Mission Sunday in all churches throughout the borough, where, if possible, a collection would be taken for the extension of the society's labors. Other public meetings were held.

In 1922, the mission spent \$49,463.82; was reaching a million aliens and working among Italians, Poles, Lithuanians, West Indians, Norwegians, Scandinavians, Hungarians, native white children, American negroes, and accomplishing much Americanization work. It was operating the Atlantic Avenue chapel, with sewing classes, Sunday school and social service work; the Goodwill Home for men in destitute circumstances; the Cumberland Street mission; the Bethany Chapel, located in a colony of 15,000 West Indians; the New York Center at York and Gold Streets, which works among the Italians, Poles and Lithuanians, \$125,000 having been spent in recent years in the latter endeavor to help foreigners to a knowledge of American ideals and institutions; the Scandinavian Mission and Seaman's Home, at 92 Hamilton Avenue; the King's Daughters' House at 18 Sidney Place, which was self supporting, and work among fallen girls.

The organization's president in 1924 was the Rev. T. W. Davidson, D.D., the treasurer, Frank H. Parsons, and the superintendent, the Rev. Ulysses Grant Warren, D.D., with the following directors: The Rev. Emile S. Harper, Hon. C. H. Fuller, Frank H. Parsons, James H. Post, Alvah Miller, Hon. Wm. C. Redfield, William E. Truesdell, the Rev. T. W. Davidson, the Rev. Robert Carson, Thomas Christie, Geo. H. Johnson, Sc.D., H. O. Lente, W. W. Kouwenhoven, the Rev. C. W. Roeder, the Rev. Allison Ray Heaps, the Rev. Frank M. Townley, Charles A. Ditmas, the Rev. Dr. U. G. Warren, the Rev. F. M. Gordon, Ph. D., A. L. Brenner, Hon. Wm. T. Simpson, and Mrs. L. S. Bachmann.

Among former presidents of the organization, besides the Rev. Dr. McIlvaine, Drs. Cutler and Storrs, were the Rev. I. S. Spencer, D.D., Jasper Corning, William Wickes, Alfred S. Barnes, Alfred H. Porter and John J. Tower.







CHAPEL IN GREENWOOD CEMETERY

## CHAPTER XXIV

### GREENWOOD CEMETERY

**H**EZEKIAH B. PIERREPONT was the prime and moving spirit, when Brooklyn was a village, for the laying out of parks and driveways. In 1826, as is so often the fact when public improvements are suggested, they met with opposition and the idea was dropped. Shortly after 1834, when Brooklyn had become a city, the question of parks was again brought up and discussed publicly. In April, 1835, three commissioners were appointed "to lay out streets, avenues and squares." This commission laid the foundation for the parks and also Greenwood Cemetery. On the map of the commissioners they designated the plot which has since grown to the proud proportions the cemetery now commands. Although the sentiment usually experienced in a cemetery is of sorrow, yet to many these burial places fulfill the places of parks, and are sought for quiet and interesting strolls. Besides this fact, the cemeteries become classed with parks as beauty spots, and, although most of them are beyond the city limits, it is a peculiar coincidence that in Brooklyn the idea of parks and cemeteries were contemporary.

Mr. Henry E. Pierrepont, shortly after the map was approved, visited Cambridge, Mass., with an idea of studying the new cemetery of Mount Auburn. From this visit Mr. Pierrepont first harbored the idea that on the wooded heights of Gowanus, there could be planned a Necropolis as beautiful as that which lay upon the maple crowned slopes and summits overlooking the Charles. The plan was not destined to speedy realization. In 1838, Mr. Pierrepont, in whose mind the project had been maturing, took the first practical steps towards its execution, and in conjunction with Major David B. Douglass, an ex-officer of the army famous for his engineering skill, the preliminary surveys were made.

The Heights of Gowanus was historic ground; Martense's Lane on the southern boundary was the path by which the English General Grant advanced with a portion of his command before daybreak on the morning of that memorable August day whose sun set upon the first disastrous reverse sustained in open field by the American army; and it was near the present avenue to the cemetery, along the line of the "old Gowanus Road," that Stirling with his two regiments of Southerners met and engaged the British. The worst chapters in the story of that unequal conflict were written in crimson letters within sight of the hills now covered by the mounds of the dead; and marble shaft and mausoleum flash among the trees where more than a century ago were concealed the sharpshooters who picked off the red coats on the fields below.

Mr. Pierrepont, together with Samuel Ward, John P. Stagg, Charles King, David B. Douglass, Russell Stebbins, Joseph A. Perry and Pliny Freeman, obtained a charter from the Legislature, in 1838, under the name of "The Greenwood Cemetery," a joint stock corporation, with a capital of \$300,000. Portions of the Bennett, Bergen and Wyckoff farms were acquired, the promoters having selected what was most suitable for their purpose, buying one hundred and seventy-eight acres for \$134,675.50.

The early history of this undertaking was not one of unbroken prosperity, and it was only by having men of energy at the helm that they were able eventually to overcome the many difficulties they had to contend with. Major Douglass was president and Mr. Pierrepont secretary. Gradually the property was fenced in, paths laid out, and driveways and lakes created. On September 5, 1840, the first grave was opened to receive the body of John Hanna. In 1841, the corporation



was under the presidency of Zebedee Cook, and the trustees seriously considered allowing the corporation to lapse. It was only after the exercise of most stringent economy and by the unselfish conduct of some of those who had their hearts in the work and were vitally interested in the success of the project, that Greenwood was saved from oblivion. After this crisis had been tided over, the hardest struggles of the corporation ended and from thence on prosperity increased with every year.

One of the most active contributors to this result was Joseph A. Perry (q. v.), who for more than forty years, from the time of its incorporation until his death, filled in regard to the corporation the various posts of director, comptroller and secretary. The tide of success never ebbed afterwards. Churches, societies, and private parties made purchases of plots from one to as many as one hundred, according to their own requirements. Important improvements were effected and the natural beauties with which it was endowed were heightened by the care and attention of those to whose control the affairs had been submitted. Entrances of imposing architecture were constructed and a system of waterworks completed. The main entrance which stands back some two feet east from Fifth Avenue is of imposing gothic effect, built of brown stone, with a central tower rising one hundred and six feet. The holdings of the corporation now exceed five hundred acres of land. Every space, hill and dale, is beautifully laid out and kept exquisitely clean and horticulturally perfect, and nearly every species known to the forests of the North, shade the gravelled paths and sway their branches above the quiet lakes, and all combine to form a picture whose only shadow is that of memory.

Here, erected upon the summit of a commanding eminence, rest the bones of Morse, who bound the nations of the world together by the girdle of the telegraphic wire; here rises the bronze statue which commemorates the virtues and enterprises of De Witt Clinton, who gave to his native state the Erie Canal; here lies the dust of Beecher, of Horace Greeley and of James Gordon Bennett, Peter Cooper and Henry George. Cooper requested that no stone mark his grave. Of soldiers, one hill is crowned by the monument the State of New York erected in honor of her sons who on sea and land gave their lives in defense of national unity. Then there is General Henry W. Slocum, Francis B. Spinola, Halleck and George W. Cullum; and of those who were pioneers or founders of great enterprises there are Elias Howe of sewing machine fame, John Roach the ship-builder, William Steinway the piano maker, Theodore A. Havemeyer the sugar king, John Anderson of tobacco fame, and Hoe the great printing press manufacturer.

William J. Florence and many other famous actors sleep in Greenwood. A huge granite monument surmounted by a cross, makes the tomb noticeable even in the silent city where there are hundreds of splendid and noticeable monuments. Only a short distance away is the last resting place of the great impersonator of "Toodles," William E. Burton. Many a time while his audiences were roaring with laughter, poor "Billy Burton" was suffering excruciating pains. He was English by birth, American by adoption, and did much to elevate the stage. He had Burton's Theatre on Chambers Street, near Broadway, then removed to Bond Street and Broadway, the Winter Garden, where Edwin Booth achieved his first great triumphs. At stone's throw away is the monument of Frederick B. Conway and wife, who owned the theatre on Court Street opposite the Borough Hall of Brooklyn, later known as Colonel Sinn's. Over on the other side of the cemetery, on Battle Hill, from which the New York Bay and city can be seen,

sleeps Barney Williams, the great Irish comedian. His monument is a rich and costly one of Gothic order. It is adorned with a marble bust. On the base is Bernard Flaherty, his real name. Other actors of high order who rest in Greenwood are Harry Placide, William Rufus Blake and John Brougham. Close by, not a hundred feet away, rests Charles M. Olcott, the Bob Acres of his time. The grave of Harry Montague is close by Henry Ward Beecher's. It is in the Wallack burying plot, and his body rests alongside that of Lester Wallack and his famous actor father, James William Wallack. Montague is under an imposing white marble sarcophagus bearing on the front the single word Montague. Laura Keane, beautiful and gifted, who was on the stage at Ford's Theatre, Washington, in "Our American Cousin," the night Lincoln was murdered, is another tenant of Greenwood. Lola Montez, beautiful and wayward, rests in a plot under the name of Mrs. Eliza Gilbert. The list of Greenwood's author dead is also a long one. There are the graves of George Arnold and Fitz James O'Brien, of the sisters Alice and Phoebe Cary, who lie side by side; and of McDonald Clarke, the hapless hero of Halleck's "Discarded" and himself the author of much graceful and tender verse. Clarke first appeared in New York when a youth of twenty-one and he remained until his death a melancholy and unmistakable figure in the life of the town, made so by his poetic genius, his sharp wit, and the vagaries of an unbalanced mind. Broadway was his chosen haunt, and for a score of years his tall form and blue coat and cloth cap were one of the familiar objects of that thoroughfare. Nothing was known of his antecedents or his means of support. On a stormy night in March, 1842, a policeman came upon him wandering about the streets destitute and demented. The following morning he was found dead, having killed himself in his cell. He sleeps now in the poets' mound on the margin of Sylvan Lake. Although on an eminence overlooking the entire cemetery, the place where reposes all that remains of James K. Paulding is almost inaccessible and can hardly be found unless especially directed. It is one of the underground vaults now in disuse, dismal, damp and cold. There is no indication of the author's burial save the name Paulding cut in small letters on a granite gate post. He was one of Washington Irving's most valued friends, and a writer of many entertaining books.

As one enters the driveway of Greenwood Cemetery at the Fifth Avenue entrance, lying on the right hand is a very commanding, large mound, in which, so far, no interments have been made. It is understood the administration has reserved this for some fitting setting or memorial. Some years ago, a few years prior to his death, the "Merchant Prince," as he was called, A. T. Stewart, offered a goodly sum for this site, but it was not accepted. He decided upon the property at Garden City, where it is claimed his remains now rest.

Before the Civil War the monument of Charlotte Canda attracted most attention. She was seventeen years old and lived in the Canda School at 17 Lafayette Place, with her parents, who ran a high class academy for girls. On her birthday she went out driving; the horses ran away and threw her out mortally injured. She died soon after being carried into her home. The stricken parents, who were French, expended almost all their fortune, some \$50,000, for a monument in Greenwood. It consists of a marble shrine with the young girl's image, while angels on either hand stand on pilasters with heads bowed in grief.

John W. Mackay's imposing monument near the eastern bounds cost something like \$250,000. Near it an exquisite marble temple built in 1924 bears the name of Imre Kiralfy.



Everywhere Greenwood throbs with memories and life. Its tenants seem to be ever present; seem to live.

## CHAPTER XXV

### EDUCATIONAL

**ERASMUS HALL ACADEMY\***—now Erasmus Hall High School—has exerted powerful moral and educational influence not only throughout Brooklyn, New York and the State, but on the lives and purposes of hundreds of students from all parts of the world which have been moulded within its classrooms.

Originally it was a boy's academy; afterwards a co-educational school and center of cultural activity for early Brooklyn. In 1896, it entered the public school system, and it is attended by more than 8,000 students yearly.

Some famous former students of the old Academy were: William A. Duer, president of Columbia University; John Berrian, attorney general of the United States; George M. Troup, for several years Governor of Georgia; John Duer, who assisted in revising the statutes of New York State; John Hunter, state senator; John Vanderbilt, Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and state senator; John A. Lott, Judge of the Court of Appeals.

The school stands near the corner of Flatbush and Church Avenues, and had its beginning in 1786 when the Rev. Dr. John H. Livingston came to Flatbush to spend the summer. He was a learned man, minister in the Reformed Dutch Church, and fully alive to the needs of the times educationally, and eager for the advancement of his church.

He interested Senator John Vanderbilt in educational possibilities for Flatbush, and together the two conceived the idea of establishing an institution for higher learning. Dr. Livingston hoped that his church later would place its theological seminary therein.

Flatbush being the county seat of Kings, it was the home of many prominent families. A number encouraged and backed the project with money, contributions of timber and personal services of day's labor, and before the close of 1787, had erected a building one hundred by thirty-six feet, containing four large halls and twelve smaller rooms. There was a basement, two stories and a high attic. It was the most imposing college building in the country and was named in honor of Desiderius Erasmus, the Dutch scholar and distinguished patron of literature who brought the new learning to England in the time of Henry VIII.

The building cost \$6,250, and was located opposite the court house on Main Road (Flatbush Avenue) on three acres virtually donated by the church and which it obtained from Jacob Lefferts by giving him two other tracts of land—one facing on Church Lane and directly west of the graveyard and the other on East Broadway, near the corner of Nostrand Avenue where the "Lloyd Mill" was erected. It gave a deed in perpetuity to the academy site for which the trustees paid \$187.50, December 29, 1797.

The founders contributed from £10 to £100, and made up a fund of £915, a pound then being \$2.50. Aaron Burr and Alexander Hamilton each gave £10, Senator Vanderbilt gave £100, and among the other notables who contributed

\* Mostly from Erasmus Hall High School Chronicles.



ERASMUS HALL





were: Richard Varick, Brockholst Livingston, D. C. Verplanck, Walter Rutherford, William Duer, Peter Cornell, John Jay and George Clinton. Comfort Sands gave £20.

Building the academy was a great undertaking, for the Revolutionary War being over only three and a half years, the country was impoverished and the people were poor.

The academy was advertised as "superior to a common school" no one being admitted to it who had not "begun to write." Even as its sturdy beams and shingles were hand-hewn, a sturdy and strong teaching corps was installed. It was incorporated by the Regents of the University of New York, November 20, 1787, and a strong board of trustees was formed. Those creating the academy were pioneers in American academic instruction, for they had no model and no precedents. The Board of Regents met the situation and mastered it.

Dr. Livingston, who served without pay, being pastor of a New York church, was elected the first principal. He was richly qualified, as he was a graduate and postgraduate of Yale, and had been made a Doctor of Divinity after a four-year course at the University of Utrecht, Holland.

The money subscribed was not enough to lift the debt from the academy. A tract of land bought by inhabitants of Flatbush was held by them in common. Founders and benefactors who had rights in the common directed it sold and applied their shares to the academy debt. The land brought \$16 an acre, and the school realized \$1,500. The trustees in 1789 reduced the debt to \$1,064.95, but not till 1825 was the total debt lifted. By 1791, the enemies of the school had been so far won to its cause, they had contributed over £100 to its debt.

The incorporators of the Academy, November 20, 1787, included: John Vanderbilt, Walter Minto, Peter Lefferts, William B. Gifford, Hendrick Suydam, John J. Vanderbilt, the Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, Philip Nagle, Peter Cornell, Dr. Livingston, James Wilson, Samuel Provost, John Mason and Comfort Sands. The first officers of the board of trustees were: President, Senator Vanderbilt; Aquila Giles, secretary; and Peter Lefferts, treasurer.

Non-resident students were given board in the Academy, but their numbers greatly increasing, many found homes with the farmers who furnished bed, board and washing for £20 yearly. The school's early popularity is shown by the fact that students not only came from neighboring villages, cities and states, but were registered from the West Indies, France, Portugal, the Islands of Jamaica, St. Thomas, Granada and Tortolo, as well as from New Orleans, South Carolina and Maryland.

Dr. Livingston, real strength of the educational movement, saw his dream of a theological seminary for Flatbush flourish and fade. The reformed Dutch Church Synod in 1794 ordered the school located there, appointing him its president. But, a few years afterward, strong pressure being exerted from New Brunswick, the theological school went to Rutgers College. After holding the principalship of Erasmus Hall for five years, Dr. Livingston resigned and went to Rutgers as Professor of Theology, later to become President of the college.

James Todd, distinguished as a teacher of Latin and Greek, was brought to Erasmus. Edward Shepherd, appointed just two years after the school was founded, was paid a salary equivalent to \$1,500 at the present day. Albert O'Henis, a graduate of Queens (Rutgers) College, was appointed first teacher in 1791, at a salary of ninety pounds, and in 1792, a French teacher was employed. But their master stroke of wisdom was in appointing Dr. Peter Wilson as



chief teacher and principal when Dr. Livingston resigned. He received £400 yearly, an extremely large salary for those days. Dr. Wilson was professor of languages in Columbia, and a great friend of Dr. Livingston. He was a man of note in political and educational circles and had thrown himself with ardor into the movements preceding the Revolution. In 1783, he served in the New Jersey Legislature. By appointment he revised and codified the laws of the state. When he gave up his work as teacher at Erasmus Hall, he was recalled to Columbia as Professor of Greek and Latin; and when Dr. Johnson resigned as Columbia's president in 1800, Dr. Wilson, with another professor, filled the office.

His influence added to the standing of the academy, but as an organizer and administrator he had not the power and ability of his predecessor. From abroad, the school was attracting greater attention.

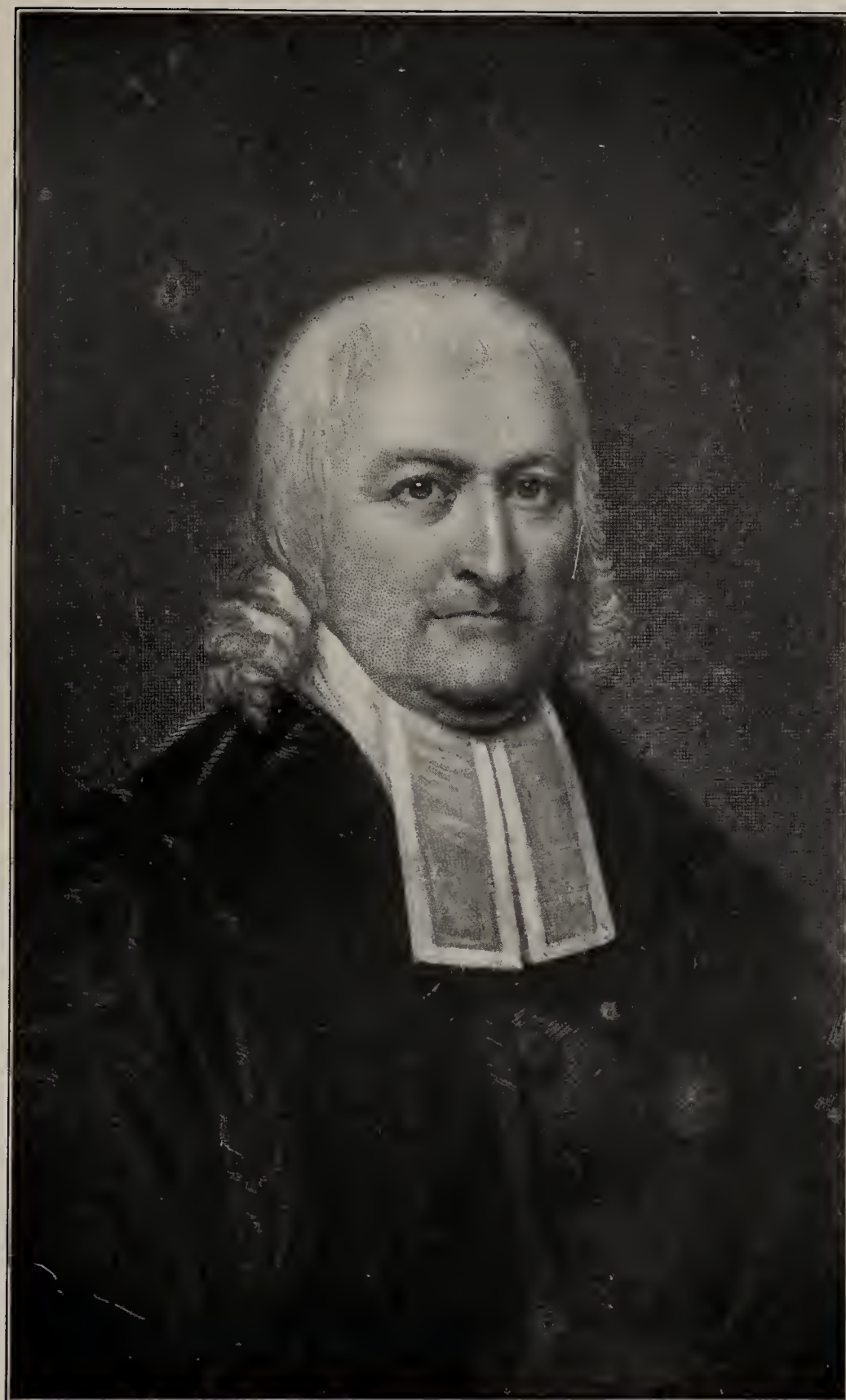
Henry Wansey in his book recording an "Excursion" to North America in 1794, chronicles:

"We got to Flatbush, where I observed a college or academy; thither I directed my steps. I was civilly received and shown to the library, where I saw a very good pair of globes of Adams', a reflecting telescope of Dolland's, and an electrical apparatus. Seeing few Greek or Latin books, I asked the reason. The master informed me that though they had near a hundred pupils from different states of the Union and some as far off as Georgia, that few of them learned the classics; which (from the idea that it employed too much of a boy's time) was getting very much out of fashion. There were, he said, now such good translations into English of almost all the fine classic authors that the knowledge of them could be obtained very completely without a young man's hammering so long at *hic, haec, hoc, tupho, tupso, tetupha*. I smiled at his observation, which encouraged him to say that the habits and manners of Americans were so different from those of Europe that they did not want to breed up men of deep speculation and abstract knowledge; for a man amongst them was no more valuable than as he was useful in improving the state of the country. I thought there was good sense in his observations. The endowment, he said, allowed only six pounds for each boy, but it generally made an expense of thirty pounds a head; the rest was defrayed by their parents. It is kept very clean and healthy, and everything in neat order."

The trustees for numerous years bore a heavy financial burden and in 1801; instead of being a boys' school, its doors were thrown open to girls. In 1803, the school had so won the people of Flatbush that they made it their public school also, this occupying one room in the Academy. Then the institution received a little money annually from the state. In 1823, the board created a "Female department," with Miss Maria Jones, first woman teacher in the Academy, presiding.

The Academy was the scene of marriages, deaths and births. Joseph Hege-man, son of a teacher, was born there. When Joseph was nine years old the famous Lafayette held him in his arms after the child had been an orator at the laying of the cornerstone of the Apprentices' Library at which Lafayette had officiated. Lieutenant Hiram Paulding, afterward Admiral, came to the academy to visit his sister, who was a student, and, meeting one of the principal's daughters, wooed and married her, the ceremony taking place in the principal's office. In order to be near her, he had previously taken up the study of mathematics. As an aftermath, in 1902, their three daughters called at the old Hall to view the scenes of their mother's youth. They were Mrs. Rebecca Paulding Meade, widow of Rear-Admiral Richmond W. Meade, U. S. N.; Mrs. Meade, wife of the Commandant of the Marine Barracks at the Navy Yard; and Miss Emma Paulding, of Huntington, L. I. They viewed the room where their mother had reigned at "social gatherings," and sat by the fireplace where the lovers had planned their future together.

In 1825, the trustees started an endowment fund, which in after years came to amount to \$7,500.



PRESIDENT LIVINGSTON, FIRST HEADMASTER OF ERASMUS HALL





The old Academy was ever ready to take the lead when state or country called, notably in the instances of pushing the idea of free education for every child; when libraries were suggested as necessary adjuncts of complete school equipment, when the state was struggling toward better training for teachers and toward the grading system for schools. In a patriotic way, its students served as officers and privates. It ever set the pace of progress, followed the principles of morality and religion. It is interesting that it had never called on the town for tax money, which fact was mentioned by Dr. St. Clair McKelway when the institution celebrated its centennial in 1887.

Of the early principals, Jonathan Kellogg made many innovations in the methods of teaching, added a veranda on the east and a wing on the north. He planted many trees and improved the grounds. The Rev. Dr. Joseph Penney was a president of Hamilton College. The Rev. Dr. William Henry Campbell became principal of the Albany Academy and President of Rutgers College. He lived to attend the hundredth anniversary celebration of Erasmus Hall and to tell of its early years. The Rev. Dr. Van Kleek put new life in the school and incidentally baptized an infant, known to the world in after life as T. De Witt Talmage. The Rev. Eli T. Mack served eleven years. Jared Hasbrouck introduced examinations for Regents' certificates in February, 1875. Thirteen pupils took part, and three qualified in all the subjects. The Rev. Dr. Robert Grier Strong separated the boarding department from the scholastic. He presided at the centennial celebration in 1887. Miss Mary Wheeler Hawley was the first woman principal, serving from March, 1893, to July, 1896.

Joab Cooper, author of "Cooper's Virgil," was a teacher in 1806.

Mark Hopkins Beecher, afterwards connected with the Washington Naval Observatory and Professor of Mathematics at Annapolis was one of the famous assistant teachers. He was young, unmarried, a "dandy," and lived in the Academy. It was the fashion to use the rattan in those years preceding 1840, and if the boys played truant or exhibited laziness, he was noted for taking them to his room while he dressed to go upon the street, where he made them sing their geography. He used to put incorrigibles in the "dark hole" and leave them there several hours for punishment. Many respected citizens of Flatbush used to narrate their juvenile experiences in this place of confinement—which was a closet on the second floor of the old building. Until the professor formed the habit of putting the key in his pocket, friends of the incarcerated would frequently take it from the nail on which it hung outside the door, and release them. The offender would return to be locked in again at the end of the day, and when the master arrived, would seem to have undergone his punishment.

The instructor once forgot a pupil and left him till dark, when the frightened parents arrived to call Beecher from his promenade and recover their offspring.

In 1849, Erasmus Hall was selected by the Regents as one of the institutions at which meteorological observations were to be taken.

Great and strong men among the trustees were Dr. John B. Zabriskie, who served twelve years as secretary of the board; Jeremiah Lott, who was president of the board for thirty-two years, and Dr. Thomas M. Strong, a pastor of the Flatbush Reformed Dutch Church. Although this church had no control over the Academy's affairs, a close relationship always existed between the two.

As the years passed on, the Academy met reverses as newer schools nearer the lines of transportation sprang up, until, by the time Flatbush became a part of Brooklyn, it had become little more than a boarding house and a kindergarten.

The trustees thereupon offered it to the Board of Education of Brooklyn,



July 10, 1895, with the proviso that the board erect and maintain upon the land a high school building. The board accepted, receiving the property, valued at \$150,000, a library of 2,000 volumes, and \$4,634.12 in cash, the reserve fund of the old Academy. The institution was one hundred and ten years old, and was turned over to the city July 28, 1896, formal transfer being made at a public meeting in the Dutch Reformed Church, October 14, 1896.

Dr. Walter Balfour Gunnison was made the first principal. A New Englander by birth, he had held the professorship of Latin at St. Lawrence University, which had called him to be its president. This he declined, and also gave up the office of Assistant Superintendent in the New York School Board in order to direct the new fortunes of Erasmus.

It was not without great effort that the school was practically made over for its high school opening in September, 1896. A faculty had to be selected, and Dr. Gunnison had objections to fight in that, from certain quarters, co-education was opposed. But Dr. Gunnison was the winner, and following his aggressive policy, the high school has now grown into one of the most imposing educational institutions of Brooklyn or the East, in which magnificent offerings of art have been placed. It is also a community center for the progress of art, literature, music and social life.

Dr. Gunnison stood for "sound scholarship, general culture and refinement" for the new school, and for the building of "self-reliant and manly character."

The growth of the institution went from less than two hundred pupils to 1,800 in three or four years, and new buildings were required. The sum of \$350,000 was appropriated to build an auditorium and start a new structure, additions to which now have given the school the appearance of a great castle the value of which reaches millions of dollars. The cornerstone was laid January, 1905. The second unit was begun in the fall of 1908. Societies, clubs and athletics flourish, but secret societies were abolished, November 26, 1914.

An especially notable event each season is the faculty dinner.

Following Dr. Gunnison's death, called the "greatest blow Erasmus ever suffered," and which was December 19, 1916, Miss Kate E. Turner, assistant principal, conducted the school until Dr. J. Herbert Low was elected principal, April 30, 1917. Miss Turner thereupon became principal of Bay Ridge High School.

In the fall of 1898, a school paper, "The Erasmian," which celebrated its 25th anniversary in 1923, was started under the editorship of Willis Earle. The first official staff was: Charles F. Kerrigan, chief; David W. Harrison, business manager; Arthur M. Quinn, advertising manager; J. Morris Lloyd, Louis H. Pink, Clarence R. Skinner, Mabel M. Welch, Theodora Bates, Lauretta H. Burns, Agnes M. Dougherty, and Emma L. Seaver. There were forty-two faculty members at the time.

In May, 1906, "Chronicles of Erasmus Hall" was started, an absorbing book. It was written by Dr. Willis Boughton and Dr. Eugene W. Harter.

The World War record of the school shows \$341,200 subscribed to the Second Liberty Loan by Erasmians, while the students obtained outside subscriptions amounting to \$120,750. It also gave over \$1,300 for two rooms in Base Hospital No. 37. These were called "Erasmus Hall Operating Rooms." The flags of the Allies were dedicated with solemn ceremony in the chapel March 18, 1918. To the Third Liberty Loan the school subscribed over \$700,000. By fall of 1918, there were five hundred and thirty-five stars in the service flag, and five of them were gold. After this, Erasmus rose in might and received credit for \$1,078,750



when the Fourth Liberty Loan went on. The record was the largest in Brooklyn, and beat the whole city, except in the case of De Witt Clinton High School.

After the Armistice the school was responsible for raising \$1,030,450 for the Victory Loan, and by then there were six hundred and sixty stars on the service flag, and twenty-five were gold. To its service men, Erasmians erected a tablet February 10, 1922.

A memorial window in the library was dedicated May 2, 1919, to Dr. Gunnison, fulfilling a cherished hope of the school.

An athletic field—a plot of ground at Avenue L and Gravesend Avenue—has been bought by the students who have given various entertainments to raise the funds.

In 1898, thirty-one pupils were graduated from the school; while in 1923, five hundred and sixty received diplomas. The first twenty-five years of the high school's life over 7,000 pupils were graduated, and there had been nearly three hundred teachers. "The Erasmian" thus tells of many modern notables who have attended the school; some of whom have attained international fame:

"The stage, the magic word, has given us Jane Cowl, the immortal Juliet. Her triumphs and successes began with "Within the Law" and have steadily increased until she is now acknowledged to be one of the greatest actresses on the American stage. She had much to do with the original text of many of her successful plays and was joint author of 'Lilac Time.'

"Then there is Helen Zagat, who has danced in all the capitals of Europe, and Irene Kelly, who became popular in London in 'Daddy Long Legs.' Newcomers to the profession include several Ziegfeld Follies girls, Mary Milburn, the winsome Molly of 'Molly Darling,' and Lillian MacKenzie.

"The cinema has claimed the Talmadge sisters, Norma and Constance, whose fame and popularity have spread to all corners of the earth, also Anita Stewart, perhaps not so famous, but nevertheless a stellar light.

"In the music world there is Lois Ewell, singer of rare attainments, who made her greatest triumph in 'The Merry Widow.' Margery McClintock is a celebrated harpist.

"Just by mentioning the names of the fellows who have made the big league teams in baseball, Waite Hoyt, Eddie Goebel, Watty McPhee and Clinton Blume, we see how well the big gray school is represented in the line of athletics. We can also add to these, Ethelda Bleibtrey, one of the world's greatest swimmers, and Alice Lord, who represented the United States at the last Olympic games. Erasmus also has Jimmie Meissner, who was ranked next to Eddie Rickenbacker, the greatest American ace.

"Politics has its share of Erasmians. Charles Kerrigan, newspaper correspondent, who served on several important state and city commissions, became secretary to Comptroller Craig. Mable McCormick was the first woman in this city to be appointed Assistant District Attorney. Thomas Cuff became an Assistant Attorney General.

"In art, David Doggett, considered the foremost interior decorator in the United States. Donald Teague draws for the Saturday Evening Post and St. Nicholas magazines.

"Another of our boys, Harland Bartholomew, has distinguished himself as City Manager of St. Louis and a well known city planning man throughout the West.

"George Seltzer is the only Erasmian in the American consular service, having been a vice-consul in Paraguay. He is now American Consul at Salina Cruz, Mexico.

"We have numerous writers, among whom magazine and newspaper writers are the most prominent. Helena Marsh is well known through the Saturday Evening Post and Marjorie Dorman is one of the best newspaper writers in the city. She has been on the Eagle staff several years and has always been active in movements connected with suffrage. Richard Strout, one time connected with the 'Manchester Guardian' in England, is now an editorial writer for the 'Christian Science Monitor' in Boston. Willis Boughton, Jr., assistant director of the Chemical Laboratory at Harvard University, is assistant editor of a chemical magazine in Boston, and Adelaide Nichols is another of the Erasmus girls who has distinguished herself in this great field. She has written a series of articles in the 'Times Review' on China, where she has been for six months. James P. Heaton, formerly assistant secretary of the Boston Chamber of Commerce, is the manager of both the editorial and business departments of 'Current Affairs,' a weekly magazine issued by the Chamber. He has written many articles on the development of the various cities of Massachusetts and is considered an authority on this subject. William Carlisle recently was made general advertising manager of the 'American Magazine' in New York City. For several years he was manager of the Western branch in Chicago.

"Elmer Keith is the winner of a Rhodes Scholarship and a four years' course at



Oxford. Samuel L. Ross is the director of programs for WEA, radio broadcasting station of the American Telegraph and Telephone Company, New York City.

"A host supports the profession of teaching. Thomas Monroe, Ph.D., is an assistant professor at Columbia University. Ed and Frank Meleney, sons of Superintendent Meleney, are professors in the Rockefeller Research Hospital in China.

"Clarence Russel Skinner is an Erasmian who, not satisfied with honors in one line of work, has gained fame in other lines. For a time he was successful as a minister, but since 1914 he has been a professor of applied chemistry in Tufts College. He is a lecturer of note on social, economic, international and patriotic topics, and widely known in progressive movements in New England. He has written several books and is one of the Erasmians to win a place in 'Who's Who in America.'

"Then there is Lawrence Sperry, who together with his father made the gyroscope compass and stabilizer a practical thing today. It is in use on ocean liners and in aeroplanes. They received a special award of \$10,000 from the French Government in recognition of their work along these lines. Preston Bassett, with a co-worker, recently succeeded in breaking up a molecule of carbon. This achievement was a notable scientific discovery.

"One of the Erasmian's former editors, Edwin G. Brown, is sporting editor of the 'New York World.'

"Contributors to the arts among the faculty were listed as follows: Miss Mastin, of the English department, author of 'Green Leaves,' a book of poetry; Dr. Boughton, who besides the Erasmus Hall Chronicles, is author of 'History of Civilization,' 'Mythology in Art' and other volumes; Mr. Stebbins, who has written a half dozen grammars and rhetorics, and published 'The Crystal Palace,' short stories for children; 'Christmas Eve' and 'Painters of Madonnas,' books of verse. Miss Grace MacColl, of the history department, writes 'Current International Events' pamphlets read in many high schools and published yearly. In a text-book way Mr. Harley is co-author with Dr. Gunnison of the widely known series, 'Latin for the First Year,' 'Cicero's Orations' and 'Cæsar's Gallic Wars.'

"Mr. Bryant is joint editor of the first physiography text-book ever published in this country and of the 'Teachers' Guide to Laboratory Experiments,' which supplements the text-book. Both books are used throughout the United States. Mr. Hancock has written 'Elementary Principles of Chemistry,' 'Chemistry of Common Things' and laboratory manuals accompanying both text-books.

"Willis A. Boughton, Erasmus, '04; Harvard, '07, and director of the Harvard Chemical Laboratory, has written poems, stories and plays. Marion Harvey, '13, recently published 'The Mystery of the Hidden Room.' Mary Lyons has written a prize winning essay on 'Margaret Fuller' and at present holds an extremely important position on the staff of 'Vogue.'

"Valuable contributions to music have been made. Mr. Schmidt, first assistant of our music department, has written a novel, 'Nocturno,' in the school library. Mr. Harter, head of the classical department, has done some really worth while compositions, his best known being his music and lyrics for 'Galatea,' a musical phantasy founded on Gilbert's play, 'Pygmalion and Galatea'; his school song 'Erasmus Hall' and our 'Field Song' ('Every Dog').

"In pure art Mr. Doggett stands pre-eminent. His work in oils and water colors has long been notable for delicate shading and true nature studies. His one-man exhibitions at the Municipal Art Gallery, at Pratt and at other times and places have been great successes; while his individual masterpieces, the 'Sand Dune Sketches' at Rockaway, and his 'Spring' are known by art connoisseurs. Miss Beebe, another member of our art department, has been elected to membership in the New York Water Color Club, National Arts Club and the National Association of Women Painters and Sculptors. Last fall she had an exhibition at the Ainslee Galleries of over sixty of her paintings done in Switzerland, Holland and America. Miss Katherine Lovell has exhibited landscapes with the Brooklyn Society of Artists, the Independent Artists and the salons of America."

### Pratt Institute

What W. W. Corcoran was to Washington, George Peabody to Boston, William E. Dodge and Peter Cooper were to New York, Charles Pratt was to Brooklyn, and everyone realized that Brooklyn had met with an irreparable loss when, on the morning of May 5, 1891, the newspapers announced his death the night before. He was born in Watertown, Mass., October 2, 1830, and when only fourteen years of age began work on a farm, obtaining such schooling as he could during the winter. He kept this up for about three years, when he learned the trade of machinist at Newton. When eighteen years old he entered Wilbraham Academy, where he stayed only one year. He then obtained work with a Boston paint store at the same time devoting a great deal of his time to study and re-

search at the Mercantile Library, and to this association and also later with the New York Mercantile Library is attributable the inception of the ideas which in later years expanded in the broadest fields of practical philanthropy. In 1851, he came to New York City and secured employment with Schenck and Downing, a paint and oil house. Three years later he became associated with C. T. Raynolds and F. W. Devoe and later became a member of the house of Raynolds, Devoe and Pratt. In 1864, Mr. Devoe withdrew from the firm and the new name became Raynolds, Pratt and Co., when in 1867, Mr. Pratt took over the oil business, Mr. Raynolds keeping the paint and general business department. Under the name Charles Pratt & Co. he established large oil works in Williamsburg at the foot of Tenth Street, and Pratt's Astral oil became famous. All these works were finally absorbed by the Standard Oil Company, Mr. Pratt then joining with John D. Rockefeller and Henry M. Flagler in the official management of the Standard Oil.

Mr. Pratt was actively interested during the last twenty-five years of his life in very nearly all educational and charitable projects undertaken in Brooklyn. At this time he was president of the board of trustees of Adelphi Academy, and when the Academy desired to enlarge its plant he very generously erected its new building at a cost of \$160,000.

He had long cherished the idea to create a school devoted to mechanical and technical training, and this idea he brought to a realization when in 1886 he started what is now known as the Pratt Institute, located on Ryerson Street. This magnificent school was incorporated in 1887 and in many ways has been a model for other cities and a source of great pride to Brooklyn. Mr. Pratt was very much interested in his church and contributed \$100,000 toward the erection of the Emmanuel Baptist Church, situated at the corner of St. James Place and Lafayette Avenue, one of the finest church edifices in Brooklyn. He always gave liberally to all charities. Just before his death he donated an athletic field to Amherst College, the *alma mater* of several of his sons. In fact the last act of his life fittingly terminates a career of unostentatious benevolence. A friend of his called upon him on the afternoon of May 4th, at his office in the Standard Oil Building, and requested a contribution in aid of the Brooklyn Bureau of Charities. Mr. Pratt willingly gave him a check for \$5,000, and remarked he was only too glad to assist such a worthy institution. Half an hour later he complained that he was not feeling well. He grew worse and died in his private office, surrounded by his business associates and members of his family who had been hurriedly summoned. Expressions of regret were universal among every class and creed; and pulpit and press vied with each other in paying tribute to the dead.

The designs and plans that Mr. Pratt had formed for his philanthropic work in Brooklyn and which his death had prevented him from completing, have been brought to a successful issue by his sons, who have executed to the letter their father's openly expressed ideas. The buildings of the Institute are all substantial and the aim has been to obtain convenience and adaptability. The fundamental purpose of the work is to afford such instruction as shall enable men and women to support themselves by applied knowledge and skilled handicraft in various industries. It is to help those who are willing to help themselves, and rich and poor are alike welcome. In addition to the purely practical work, the importance of the moral element in education has not been overlooked, and throughout all its branches of instruction, the institute inculcates self-reliance, self-denial, honesty and thrift, as essential increments of success.



Mr. Pratt dealt with this offspring of his philanthropy in a spirit of royal liberality. Apart from its buildings, their equipment and those adjuncts which yield a part of its revenue, he endowed it with two million dollars.

The Institute is now organized into four separate schools:

The School of Fine and Applied Arts offers instruction in drawing, design, painting, modeling, illustration, crafts, architectural design and architectural construction, and jewelry; and also conducts teacher training courses in art and manual training.

The School of Household Science and Arts includes courses in dressmaking, millinery, costume design; in institutional management, and for the training of dietitians; and in homemaking, cookery, serving and laundry.

The School of Science and Technology meets the needs of men desiring training in industrial, mechanical, electrical, and chemical engineering, and in machine shop practice, carpentry, and industrial mathematics.

In all of these three schools courses are offered in the evening as well as during the day.

Mr. Pratt also organized as a part of the Institute the Pratt Institute Free Library, a large reference library in the arts and sciences for the use of the students, and a library of general literature for the use of the public. A children's library is especially set apart in the Library Building for the younger readers. The School of Library Science, for the training of librarians, is a part of the library activities.

The enrollment in the four schools during the last few years has averaged about four thousand.

Club houses for the men and the women students, a gymnasium with athletic field, and a rest house—or students' infirmary—are included among the thirteen buildings now occupied by the Institute.

As a means of teaching people thrift and habits of saving, Mr. Pratt established The Thrift, since incorporated, which offers methods of saving quite unique in a banking organization. While The Thrift has no official connection with Pratt Institute, it is a part of the larger educational vision of the founder.

Mr. Pratt died in 1891 at the age of sixty. After his death the responsibility for the conduct of the Institute rested with a board of trustees of which the members were his sons. The board now numbers nine and consists of five sons and four grandsons of Charles Pratt. They have tried to carry on the spirit and ideals of the founder both by personal representation in the executive management and by generous gifts to the endowment.

While Mr. Pratt died only four years after establishing the Institute, he had lived long enough to see his idea accepted as a part of the newer and larger meaning of education.

Because Mr. Charles Pratt had very limited opportunities for education in his early life and had to work hard and long for what he did acquire, he always felt an especial interest in the subject. His family of eight children also presented the problem of education and it was natural that he should early associate himself with Lockwood's Academy, which later became a part of the Adelphi Academy. All his children received their college preparatory education at the latter school, which was private and co-educational. For many years he served as president of its board of trustees, and during his incumbency built, equipped, and gave to the Academy the wing which the Adelphi College is now using. The Adelphi College, however, came into existence after Mr. Pratt's death, and was not a part of the original plan or scope of Adelphi Academy.



JOHN LOCKWOOD  
Founder of Adelphi Academy



CHARLES PRATT  
Founder of Pratt Institute





Mr. Pratt's own larger interest, next to the education of his own children, was in industrial education. Realizing that the Adelphi Academy would not reach the type of student nor do the kind of work required in industrial education, Mr. Pratt in 1886 incorporated Pratt Institute for the promotion of education in the practical arts as applied to industry and the home.

**Adelphi College** was incorporated by the Regents of the University of the State of New York in June, 1896. From that time until its charter was amended in November, 1913, its degrees were given by the University upon the recommendation of the College authorities; since 1913 degrees have been given in its own name. Adelphi College was an outgrowth of Adelphi Academy and in the earlier years of its existence the two were administered by the same officers and the College, like the Academy, was a co-educational institution. In 1912 the two were separated in management and only women were admitted as students in the College, although as late as 1917 a few men were matriculated in its Extension Courses.

In its earlier years the College had under its management an Art Department and a Normal School for Kindergartners—schools which while doing useful work were non-degree granting. These were discontinued and since 1918 Adelphi has existed as a College of Liberal Arts for women. Two Baccalaureate degrees are conferred, the degree of Bachelor of Arts and the degree of Bachelor of Science in Education.

The growth of the College has been constant. Starting with fifty-seven students in 1896 it has steadily increased its enrollment until it shows a registration of four hundred and eight in the year 1923-24. These numbers do not include the enrollment in the Extension Courses and the Summer Session both of which are well attended. The number of the faculty too has steadily increased. The quality of its work has given Adelphi an enviable place among the colleges of the country. It has always been the policy of the College to secure a faculty chosen because of ability to teach rather than because of renown gained through research work. That the two-fold ability may exist in a given individual has been frequently demonstrated in this group. Among those who have combined fame both as teachers and as scholars of far more than local reputation might be mentioned William Clark Peckham, and Emory Holloway. To an age extending ten years beyond the allotted three score and ten Professor Peckham was the efficient head of the Physics Department. His fine influence as a teacher helped to mould the characters of many students and his writings were widely published by scientific magazines. He was known nationally by the veterans of the Civil War. He passed away in 1922 but his life has done much to influence the college of which he was so long a part. Professor Holloway, an inspiring teacher and still a young man, is known among scholars throughout the world as an authority on Walt Whitman. His two volume edition entitled "The Uncollected Poetry and Prose of Walt Whitman" is unsurpassed in accuracy and completeness.

Mention might well be made of the admirable text books in Civics written by Professor Adelbert Grant Fradenburg, of the texts in Education written by Professor Ernest Norton Henderson, of mathematical works by Professor Joseph Bowden and of various classical works of importance by Professor William West Mooney.

The College has been fortunate too in its deans. Dean Alice Blythe Tucker was Adelphi's first dean. Miss Tucker began her work in 1902 and resigned in 1907. Dean Margaret Sweeney who succeeded her was called from Adelphi in



1912 to a similar position in the University of Minnesota. She did much to inspire her students with ideals of scholarship. Dean Anna E. Harvey, who succeeded her and who is the present dean, has been and is a wonderful influence for good both among the undergraduates and alumnae. Her sympathetic understanding, her fairness and her fine ideals find their way into the lives of all the students.

Adelphi has had three Presidents. Dr. Charles Herbert Levermore was the first President of the College. Prior to the founding of the College in 1896 he had been for three years the principal of Adelphi Academy. It was largely due to his vision and understanding of future conditions that the College was founded. After his resignation in 1912 he interested himself in various organizations to promote World Peace and very fittingly was the successful competitor to receive the Bok Peace Prize in 1924.

From 1912 to 1915 the College had no regularly appointed President. Dr. S. Parkes Cadman, a member of its Board of Trustees and of world-wide fame as a pulpit orator and lecturer, served as Acting President. Dr. Cadman contributed very largely to bringing the College more prominently before the public in a favorable light.

In 1915 Dr. Frank Dickinson Blodgett accepted the Presidency of Adelphi and is still its head. The steady growth that has always marked the institution has continued in even more marked degree since his coming into office. From 1915 to 1924 the registration has increased from 228 to 408 students exclusive of extension and summer courses. Various obstacles that made progress difficult have been quietly removed, the faculty has been materially strengthened and the general standing of the College improved. The financial campaign to secure funds to increase the endowment and to build on the splendid new site purchased near the Botanic Garden has advanced a long way toward a successful completion.

Adelphi is proud of the record of its daughters in the World War. During 1917-1918 Liberty Bonds totalling \$94,650 were bought by faculty students. In addition to this the College sold \$112,000 worth of Liberty Bonds. It established eight Thrift Stamp agencies. Students purchased \$3,507 worth of Thrift Stamps. In the three-day drive for the Y. M. C. A. \$3,100 was raised. In the three-day campaign for United War Work \$4,766 was raised. Students spent \$437 for material for Red Cross work. In the book drive 1,560 volumes were collected. Classes invested \$250 in Liberty Bonds. Seventy-five dollars was raised for a kindergarten unit abroad. A concert netted \$75 for the College Service War Fund. Fifty students gave service as farmerettes. Students served as ushers at Red Cross benefits and gave a series of one-act plays at a War Garden benefit. The alumnae followed the colors at home and abroad. One graduate was manager of the New York office of the Intelligent Department of the United States Army. Two were members of units of the American Relief Commission—one at Turana, Albania; and one in Trebizond, Turkey. Six gave full time as canteen workers—four in the United States and two in France. Ten alumnae served as yeomen. Two were translators for the War Department. Four were clerks in the Quartermaster Corps of the Army. One was a manager in American Red Cross Work. One worked in the Food Administration. One supervised recreation work for the Ordinance Department. Five were with the Y. M. C. A. in France. Two were with the American Red Cross in France. Ten worked with the National League for Women's Service. One was assistant director of Civilian Relief in the Atlantic Division of the American Red Cross. One was a clerk in the Army Transport Service. One was a supervisor of kindergartens for French





ADELPHI COLLEGE  
St. James and Clifton Places





children in the devastated regions. One was a field examiner for the Bureau of War Risk Insurance. One was a worker in the Gas Defense Division of the Army.

Strong chapters of seven national fraternities exist at Adelphi, the following fraternities being represented: Kappa Kappa Gamma, Kappa Alpha Theta, Delta Gamma, Delta Delta Delta, Phi Mu, Delta Zeta and Sigma Kappa.

Adelphi has Student Self-Government and the Honor System which has been used for many years has been very gratifying in its results.

Though only a little more than a quarter of a century old many of the twelve hundred alumnae occupy important positions in the city. More than five hundred are in the teaching profession, many holding responsible executive positions in the city system and a goodly number are engaged in college work. Over a third of the number are married and for the most part live in or near the greater city. The remainder are engaged in a variety of useful tasks, doctors, lawyers, secretaries, librarians, social workers being included in the number.

Although handicapped by limited space and by lack of funds Adelphi College has made an excellent record for itself. It has passed beyond the experimental stage and has taken its place among established educational institutions. There can be little doubt that in the near future means will be provided to furnish it such facilities that many more of the young women of Brooklyn and near by towns may share in its advantages. It seems evident, too, that with suitable dormitory equipment the number of non-resident students will constantly increase. The plans for development which the Trustees have in mind when carried out will not only add substantially to the material equipment of Brooklyn but to its cultural development as well.

As a final testimony to the educational standards of Adelphi College may be cited the offer of the General Educational Board to give the College \$300,000 provided it is able to raise \$700,000 more to further develop its usefulness.

At present the membership of the Board of Trustees of the College is as follows: James H. Post, President; Frederick E. Crane, Vice-President; Clinton L. Rossiter, Treasurer; Herbert K. Twitchell, Secretary; S. Parkes Cadman, Herman A. Metz, Frederick J. H. Kracke, Edward T. Horwill, Gilbert C. Halsted, Thomas L. Leeming, John V. Jewell, Frederick D. MacKay, William McCarroll, Frank D. Blodgett, Frank H. Parsons, William F. Atkinson, Charles J. McDermott, Robert C. Gillies and Frederick W. Rowe.

The following is a list of the faculty: Frank D. Blodgett, Anna E. Harvey, Joseph Bowden, Adelbert G. Fradenburgh, Ernest N. Henderson, Edgar A. Hall, William W. Mooney, Nellie L. Roethgen, Reuben H. H. Aungst, William C. Colwell, James W. Park, Catherine L. Haymaker, Meta E. Schutz, Emory Holloway, John A. David, Helen LeGate, Edna Mosher, Donna F. Thompson, Charles H. Gray, Ruth Mohl, William A. Thayer, Natalina G. Balzarini, Georgette F. Sebrée, Margarethe H. Lewinsohn, Margaret E. Ogden, Anna K. Callaghan, Mabel S. Webb, Bertha S. Jones, Susan D. Hay, Mabel Farr, Ida R. East and Anna M. Harrison.

**Adelphi Academy** is Brooklyn's greatest private coeducational institution. With its fifteen hundred graduates and many thousand pupils it has won for itself a prominent place in the educational history of the borough.

The original source of Adelphi may be traced to the foundation of a school for boys by John Lockwood, in September, 1863, in a house at what is now 336 Adelphi Street. The school became at once the representative institution of the region known as the Hill and it grew rapidly in numbers and influence. It soon



filled two houses, and in 1867, when it was under the management of Mr. Lockwood and Mr. Truman J. Ellinwood, plans were formed to move the school to the present site at 282 Lafayette Avenue.

There were no high schools in Brooklyn at the time and the Academy quickly proved a success. One of its early innovations, calisthenics, though viewed with fear and trembling by many parents, proved, after a brief trial, to be of great value for the students and so was installed as a permanent feature of the Academy. So quickly grew Adelphi's reputation for up-to-date curriculum and thorough instruction that a group of leading citizens agreed to finance Mr. Lockwood and his colleague, Mr. Ellinwood, in the erection of a new building.

Among the men most prominent in the enterprise were the Rev. Dr. William Ives Budington, who became the first President of the Board of Trustees, William S. Woodward, who gave the land on which the buildings stand, and A. S. Barnes, William H. Wallace, H. W. Slocum, S. M. Mills and Thomas Vernon. Two of Adelphi's strong supporters in those early days were Horace Greeley and Henry Ward Beecher. In regretting his inability to be present at one of the early meetings, Horace Greeley wrote:

"I am a member-elect of the Constitutional Convention and must not neglect the duties devolved upon me. I do, however, most heartily approve and wish success to Adelphi Academy."

When Henry Ward Beecher delivered the address at the laying of the cornerstone on July 23, 1867, he predicted the future growth of Adelphi, saying: "This work is to go on and every part of our fair city is to feel its influence."

The prediction soon became true. Mr. Lockwood opened school in 1863 with one pupil, at the end of the year he had eleven. In 1868 the number had increased to 482 and in 1891 there were 1126 students enrolled. The Academy's first charter was granted by the Board of Regents in December, 1869.

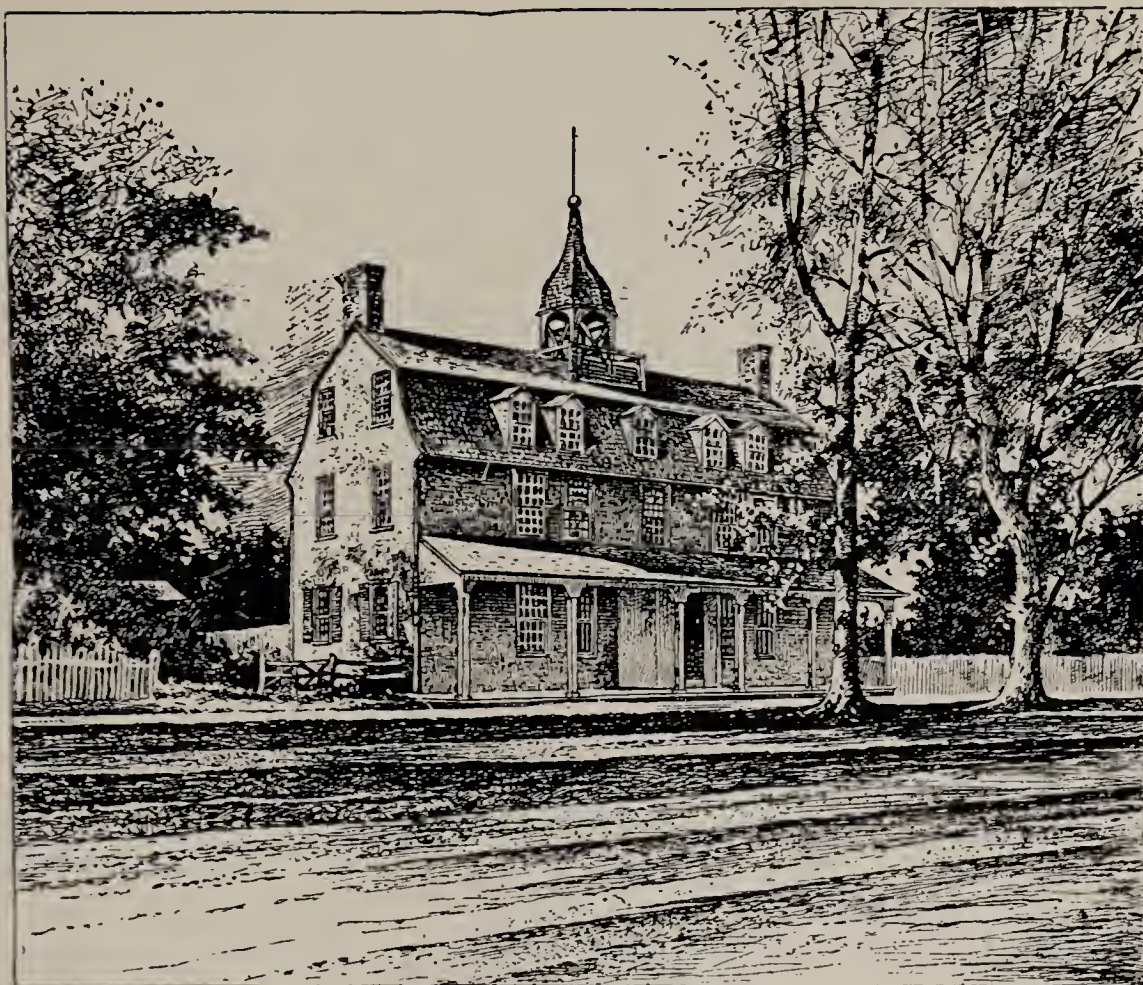
During the administration of Col. Homer B. Sprague, the second principal of Adelphi, in 1873 a western wing was added to the Academy Building, which extended the structure up to St. James Place, and seven years later, under the administration of Dr. Stephen G. Taylor, an eastern wing, completing that edifice as it now stands, was constructed by the generosity of two members of the Board of Trustees, Charles Pratt and Hayden W. Wheeler.

In 1886 Charles Pratt, then President of the Board of Trustees, added to his many other gifts that of the building fronting on Clifton Place, which was finished and opened with appropriate ceremonies February 18, 1889. Dr. Albert G. Perkins was principal at the time.

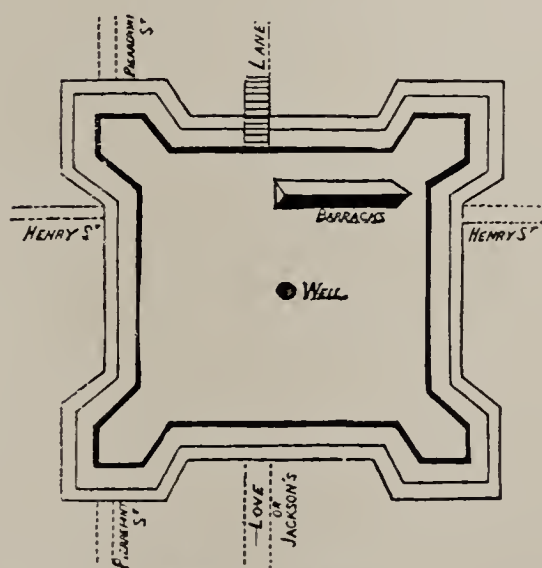
On December 18th of that same year the old building caught fire. The chapel was wholly destroyed and the interior of the structure almost ruined. Through the exhaustless energy of Hayden W. Wheeler, Chairman of the Building Committee, and the hearty support of the other members of the Board, the building was reopened the following November.

Dr. John S. Crombie, the fifth principal of Adelphi, died after a service of only a few months. Then followed sixteen years under the skillful guidance of Dr. Charles H. Levermore. During his administration a Normal Course for Kindergartners, now part of Adelphi College, came into existence. The Biological Department was organized. Half yearly promotions were adopted. Manual Training, Sewing and Cooking were introduced. A suitable athletic field was secured. The bus system for Primary School students began its useful service and in 1896 the Adelphi College was incorporated. Dr. Levermore, who had been for three years at the head of the Academy, was made the first President of the





CLINTON ACADEMY.



BROOKLYN FORT.





College and for thirteen years the duties of the principal were merged in those of the presidency assisted by superintendents for the several departments.

In 1909 the principalship of the Academy was again established as a separate office and the present incumbent, Eugene Charles Alder, entered upon his duties in September of that year. His success as an administrator has been marked. He has the strong support of a loyal alumni and the confidence of the community. Adelphi Academy is steadily growing in efficiency, as well as in the number of its students. It continues to stand for the highest ideals in the field of secondary education.

**The Polytechnic Preparatory Country Day School** is the continuation of Polytechnic Preparatory School, a department of the Polytechnic Institute founded in 1854, and is the result of a strong desire on the part of trustees and alumni to make the preparatory school an all day school where body and character as well as mind may be trained, where a boy may spend his entire day away from city distractions in a healthful environment in close association with broad-minded masters and other congenial boys, learning to play as well as to study, and returning each evening for the associations of home which are a boy's right and need.

The school is at Seventh Avenue and Ninety-second Street looking out over New York Bay, and with its playing fields, tennis courts, open-air gymnasium and recitation buildings covers twenty-five acres between Fort Hamilton and the Dyker Meadow golf links.

The building surrounds an open court, insuring excellent light and air in every room. It is of brick, following the early colonial design; is two stories high with a clock tower which may be seen far in all directions. Here four hundred and twenty-five boys can be accommodated comfortably, and the enrollment is limited to this number.

The alumni are actively engaged in raising a fund for a memorial chapel in memory of the twenty-two boys who gave their lives in the late war and of the over five hundred who were in the service, and it is hoped that another year will see that chapel an important part of our equipment.

Outside are ball fields, a quarter-mile track, two ponds for skating and hockey, and hills for coasting and skiing. The park and the open country nearby afford opportunity for many other afternoon diversions such as nature study, skiing and cross-country runs.

The institute always has been a college preparatory school but since it has become a country day school it is almost exclusively college preparatory, so that almost all the boys go directly to college. Today it is well represented in twenty different institutions, from Bowdoin to the University of Michigan. These boys show the effects of good teaching and the intellectual inspiration of the school by taking high standings in the various colleges, where it is known rather for its intellectual work than for athletic prowess. The school, however, with its all day plan, gives much time to the physical side of a boy's development. Every boy has some time out of doors each day and the teams that represent the school have won more than their share of victories over the schools of their own size and over the city high schools which out-number it ten to one but lack the opportunities for physical training the country day school gives.

The new school was erected at a cost of over \$500,000, is clear of encumbrance, but without endowment. There is a staff of thirty-two teachers, most of them men from the Eastern colleges, men who are enthusiastic not simply



for their subjects but for the great cause of helping boys to prepare themselves for the fullest and worthiest lives.

The school has now one scholarship, known as the Simmons Scholarship, given in memory of William Ginnel Simmons by his mother, Mrs. F. R. Simmons. The holder of this scholarship is appointed each year by members of the Simmons family in conference with the headmaster. The school also maintains a full scholarship for a boy scout recommended by the Brooklyn Council and approved by the headmaster.

The Corporation consists of Alexander M. White, president; Thornton Gerish, secretary; Frank Bailey, treasurer; Walter Hammitt, Edward P. Maynard, Julius Liebman, James H. Post, Josiah O. Low, and Thornton C. Thayer.

Dr. Joseph Dana Allen is headmaster of the school.

### **Packer Collegiate Institute**

Under the old fashioned name of the Brooklyn Female Academy, the Packer Collegiate Institute was opened in 1846. In its early days it was the highest institution in the State for the advanced education of girls and young women. The outstanding fact in its history was the fire on the last day of 1852 and its consequences. Mrs. Harriet S. Packer, the widow of Mr. William S. Packer, a Brooklyn merchant, when she learned of the fire, gave the sum of \$65,000, an amount unprecedentedly large, as a gift in the cause of education, for the rebuilding of the school. A charter was granted by the Legislature of the State on March 19, 1853, and under its present name the Packer Collegiate Institute was opened in November, 1854.

Since then its development has been progressive. In the seventy-eight years that have been elapsed since the establishment of a school upon the site of the present building, there have been but four principals, Dr. Alonzo Crittenden, Dr. Truman J. Backus, Dr. Edward J. Goodwin, and the present principal, Dr. John H. Denbigh. Included in its organization are an elementary school, a four year secondary school and a two year course of collegiate grade, so that The Packer is in effect a junior college. The school has kept pace with the times in the evolution of the art, science, language, literature, history, music, physical training and other departments of a well organized educational institution. It maintains a faculty of over seventy members and has an annual registration in its three departments of more than eight hundred students.

The building is conveniently situated in the Brooklyn Heights district, fronting on Joralemon Street and extending backward with its charming garden to Livingston Street, and is accessible by many lines of transportation from the various parts of Brooklyn and the other metropolitan and suburban regions.

### **Brooklyn Law School**

There are five law schools in the City of New York. In the order of their establishment they are the Law School of Columbia University, New York University Law School, New York Law School, Brooklyn Law School of St. Lawrence University, Fordham University Law School.

The Brooklyn Law School of St. Lawrence University had its inception in the mind of Norman P. Heffley, whose name, as the proprietor of the educational institution known as the Heffley School, was and is of standing in Brooklyn. The school was established in the late nineties as a department of the Heffley School

and Dean Richardson, at that time Principal of the Business Department of the School was selected by Mr. Heffley as its head. A catalogue of the Heffley School for 1902 carries an announcement of the Law School with Mr. Heffley as president and William P. Richardson as Dean.

During the first year the office and study rooms of the Heffley School were the office and lecture rooms of the law school. Evening sessions only were held. The law course covered two years. This first year closed with seven students in the first year class and four in the second year class. The second year class was organized to accommodate four students who had received first year instruction in another law school.

Requirements of the University of the State of New York, however, made it necessary for the school to seek the protection of an institution of college grade, recognized as such by the Regents. It so happened that St. Lawrence University by its charter could maintain a Law School, and had, indeed, in 1869, for a period of two or three years, maintained in Canton a Law School. Members of the Board of Regents made this clear to Mr. Heffley and Dean Richardson and the matter was brought to the attention of the Trustees of St. Lawrence University. Almon Gunnison, President of the University, Foster L. Backus and Walter B. Gunnison, all members of the University Board of Trustees, advocated the taking over of the school, and the University catalogue for 1903-04 included for the first time the Brooklyn Law School.

The faculty list of the year contains, besides Dean Richardson's, three names, Henry Escher, Henry Murray Dater and Daniel Burke. Special instructors were Francis Xavier Carmody and Albert Robert Moore. The four special lecturers, were Justice Cullen, Justice Gaynor, Justice John Woodward and County Judge William B. Hurd. The student roll was 158.

An innovation in legal instruction, and as an aid to the academic instruction in practice and procedure, there has been established a "Brooklyn Practice Court," which is designed to supplement the regular courses in Pleading and Practice, and Evidence. With the object of reproducing, as closely as possible, the workings of an actual court of justice the senior students fill the positions of counsel, plaintiff, prosecutor, defendant, prisoner, witness, etc., as the case may be, and scrupulously follow all legal procedure and detail, just as in an actual court proceeding. Underclassmen usually fill the position of jurymen.

Two trial courts, function every Saturday afternoon during the Spring semester, under the guidance of the professor of practice and other members of the faculty. Various judges, sitting in New York City, are invited and usually preside over the proceedings. The work of the court is divided into three parts—trial, special, and appellate terms, and the procedure from beginning to final judgment and involving the service of all papers, as summons, complaint, answer, notice of motion, arguing of motion, are all formally required and observed.

The Brooklyn Law School is today one of the foremost law schools of the United States. Its success is due to long and sustained effort. Dean William Payson Richardson for years has steadily pursued the arduous task and has largely contributed to the reputation the school sustains today because of his marked ability to impart knowledge to the student mind.

Brooklyn with its population of more than two million is nevertheless subservient to Manhattan Borough. The old City of New York has always overshadowed Brooklyn as it has every other city in the nation. In spite of this the Brooklyn Law School has grown with rapid strides and has outstripped some of



its Manhattan rivals. This has been the result of the management of the school by Dean Richardson.

There is an aristocratic element in education and a distinct effort has been made to humiliate those law schools which conduct evening courses to which men who are self supporting may go, and has refused to put them in Class A. The Brooklyn Law School of St. Lawrence University already complies with all its standards except that requiring at least two years study in a college as a condition of admission, and when its new requirements go into full effect in September, 1927, should be ranked in Class A, unless the fact that a large number of its students earn their living while students is a bar to such rank.

It was the belief of the officers of the Brooklyn Law School that there should be no distinction between students devoting "substantially all of their working time to their studies" and students who are unable so to do, provided that the latter class fulfill the requirements of the course of study and tests prescribed for the former. In their opinion it would be invidious, unjust and impracticable to prescribe a longer period for students who have to earn their living while attending the law school. If such students are unable to fulfill the requirements and tests prescribed for the others, they are obliged, as a matter of course, to take a longer time for their studies before they are qualified to receive the degree of Bachelor of Laws. Experience has demonstrated that the larger number of students earning their own living are able to keep up with their classes and graduate with their associates. In other words, the officers of the Brooklyn Law School think there is no just ground for a distinction between day classes and evening classes. Equally good work is done in both.

Standing as the main support of Dr. Richardson, Professor Easterday has been the mainstay of the faculty for the last twenty years. The Dean has always maintained that a school can be successful only if it has a fine teaching force and it is not an easy matter to fill the faculty. Professor John Henry Schmid, who teaches Testamentary Law and Surrogate's Practice, has been for years secretary to the surrogates of Kings County and no man is more expert in Surrogate's Practice. Leon Grant Godley, who teaches equity, has had a vast experience in public life. He was a deputy police commissioner of the City of New York and a city magistrate.

Charles W. Gerstenberg, Professor of Constitutional Law, teaches not only in the Brooklyn Law School, but also in New York University. He is a thorough scholar and a born teacher.

Two of the oldest professors, George Ingalls Woolley and Edwin Welling Cady, are experienced teachers and lend great strength to the faculty. There are a number of Rhodes Scholars on the teaching force. The high standard maintained by the law school has appealed strongly to the judiciary of Brooklyn. Among the school's ardent supporters were the Chief Judge of the Court of Appeals, Edgar M. Cullen, and Judge Frederick E. Crane, of the Court of Appeals.

The law school has sent out into the municipal life of New York City many men and women who have been honored. Prominent among them are William B. Carswell who was an assistant corporation counsel in New York City and now Justice of the Supreme Court in the Second Department.

Among the woman graduates who have been signally honored are Mæ Patterson, assistant district attorney of Kings County, and Helen P. McCormick, a graduate of the college department, and also of the Law School who was under a former administration an assistant district attorney of Kings County.

There are about 1,800 alumni of the school at the present time. There were graduated in June, 1924, two hundred and fifty men.

The 1924 Year-Book of the University shows the total attendance at the Law School as of November 15, 1923, as 1,753, divided as follows: First Year Class, 896; Second Year Class, 447; Third Year Class, 367; Post-Graduate Students, thirty-five; Special Students, eight.

The faculty of the school is as follows: The Faculty, Richard Eddy Sykes, D.D., President; William Payson Richardson, LL.D., Dean and Professor of Contracts and Evidence; John Howard Easterday, LL.B., Vice-Dean and Professor of Real Property, Domestic Relations and Torts; George Ingalls Woolley, Ph.B., LL.B., Professor of Trusts; Edward Welling Cady, A.M., LL.B., Professor of Insurance, Evidence and Corporations; John Henry Schmid, LL.B., Professor of Testamentary Law and Surrogates Practice; Henry Everitt Matteson, M.A., LL.B., Professor of Admiralty; Leon Grant Godley, LL.B., Professor of Equity; Thomas Pollock Peters, A.B., J.D., Professor of Criminal Law and Procedure; William Valentine Hagendorn, LL.B., Professor of Partnership, Sales and Suretyship; George Wilson Matheson, A.B., LL.B., Professor of Agency and Damages; Charles William Gerstenberg, Ph.B., J.D., Professor of Constitutional Law; David Stewart Edgar, LL.B., Professor of Bailments, Bills and Notes and Torts; Franklin Ferriss Russell, A.B., B.C.L., J.D., Professor of Roman Law and Jurisprudence; Clarence Grover Bachrach, A.B., LL.B., Professor of Equity; Henry Wilbur Humble, A.M., J.D., Professor of Contracts, Conflict of Laws and Bills and Notes; Bartholomew Bernard Coyne, A.B., LL.B., Professor of Federal Practice; Valentine Britton Havens, A.B., B.A. in Jurisprudence, Professor of Legal History and Taxation; Thomas Alfred Hill, LL.B., Professor of Patent Law; Roy Fielding Wrigley, A.B., LL.B., Professor of Contracts and Real Property; Jay Leo Rothschild, A.M., LL.B., Professor of Pleading and Practice; Allen Brown Flouton, A.M., LL.B., Professor of Corporations, Sales and Pleading and Practice; Harold Remington, A.B., LL.B., Professor of Bankruptcy; Frederick Ralph Crane, Litt.B., LL.B., Associate Professor of Evidence; Charles Vincent Halley, Jr., LL.B., Associate Professor of Administrative Law; Roy Munday Davidson Richardson, A.B., M.A. in Jurisprudence, Associate Professor of International Law; Hon. Edwin Louis Garvin, A.B., LL.D., Lecturer in Legal Ethics; Philip Augustus Brennan, M.D., Lecturer in Medical Jurisprudence; Harry Clinton France, A.B., Lecturer in Public Speaking.

Mrs. Claire Hopfen, to whose artistic skill the Law School owes the bust of Dean Richardson, was born in Russia twenty-two years ago, of a prominent family. She is a woman of highest culture and character and has travelled widely. She entered the Brooklyn Law School and at the same time was a student in sculpture at Cooper Union. Because of her remarkable progress at Cooper Union she will not graduate from the Law School, but will continue her art studies. In June, 1923, she was the recipient of two prizes offered by Cooper Union, one for figure work from life and the other for a limited time sketch. She feels, however, that her year's work in the Law School was of help to her, even though she follows what appears to be her natural talent, sculpture.

Mrs. Hopfen and her husband were present at the unveiling of the bust, and to Mrs. Hopfen was accorded the privilege of removing the covering at the appointed time.

Mrs. Theresa A. Young, secretary of the school, has been associated with it for twenty-two years. She came to it when it was in Montague Street, and has been one of the forces responsible for its great and steady growth. For many



years she was both secretary and registrar. This officer is now Miss Grace Alvina Lindborg, who has been with the school for six years. Miss Lindborg is assisted by Miss Leavy, who is assistant registrar, in charge of the evening school.

The school itself is situated in the Eagle Building and occupies the second, third, and fourth floors thereof and part of the adjoining building.

The Students' Council of the Law School is the representative medium of the student body for the control of fraternal, social, and athletic activities, and for the regulation of student conduct about the building and recreation quarters.

In addition to the various school, class, and club organizations, there are established at the school, eight local, national, and international fraternities, four sororities, and two womens' law student associations.

### **Cathedral College of the Immaculate Conception**

When, almost sixty years ago, Father John Stephen Reffeiner built the church of "St. Francis-in-the-Fields," the first German Catholic church in the city of Brooklyn, he also founded a school for aspirants to the priesthood. This was the seed of the preparatory seminary of the Roman Catholic diocese. There in that small school Father Reffeiner gathered about him those young men who cherished the ideal of the priesthood and prepared them for entrance into the major seminary. The school was conducted for only a short time, however, but the church continued to be used until the opening of Saint Benedict's Church on Fulton Street supplied the needs of the Catholics of that section.

Though this pioneer movement of Father Reffeiner did not live long, the memory of the first attempt has always lived in the minds of those who have given serious thought to the development of vocations. It was the fond wish and cherished desire of Bishop McDonnell to establish a preparatory seminary which would follow out the wishes of the Council of Trent and would embody in its courses the best ecclesiastical traditions. He entrusted the execution of his plans to his Auxiliary, who has been elevated recently to the dignity of a Cardinal, His Eminence George W. Mundelein, with whom he had often discussed them and whom he had filled with his own enthusiasm for the project.

Bishop McDonnell had long wished for a preparatory seminary and indeed the condition of the diocese required one. The Catholic population was increasing and the priesthood was not keeping pace. Catholic Colleges were doing excellent work, but the majority of their graduates were entering professional life and few were entering the seminary. Moreover, its scope was not exclusively the training of young men for the priesthood and it was felt that Brooklyn needed a college devoted particularly to the training and fostering of vocations, which would throw safeguards around young lives and give a broad, thorough, Catholic training in the academic subjects necessary for the American priest.

In 1914, plans for the college rapidly matured. Monsignor John G. Fitzgerald, who has always had the interest of the Cathedral College at heart, brought this work to the attention of his friend, George Duval, who, by a donation of \$50,000, gave the new institution a substantial start. Property was purchased from the S. A. R. Moses Estate on the northeastern corner of Washington and Atlantic Avenues, and on this plot, one hundred and ninety-one feet on Atlantic Avenue by one hundred and thirty-one feet on Washington Avenue, the College now stands. It is readily accessible from almost all parts of the city and has the added advantage of being near the Long Island Railroad Station on Atlantic Avenue, which makes it convenient for students from Long Island towns.

The first class of Cathedral College was held in the old St. John's Chapel

building, with the following as the faculty: Bishop Mundelein, Rector; the Rev. Dr. Anthony J. Reichert; the Rev. Francis J. Woods, S. T. L., and the Rev. Francis Healy, A. B. The Rev. Dr. Thomas E. Molloy, now Bishop of Brooklyn, was the Spiritual Director. On the Feast of the Immaculate Conception of the same year, ground was broken for the new building and in less than a year the beautiful Gothic building which now houses the College was ready for occupancy. It was blessed by Bishop McDonnell on September 8, 1915, in the presence of several hundred clergy of the Diocese. Bishop Mundelein did not remain long Rector, for in November of the same year he was appointed to the Archbishopric of Chicago.

Bishop McDonnell felt the need of a capable priest who could fully cope with the many perplexing difficulties that beset the young institution, and appointed the Rev. Dr. James J. Higgins to the rectorship in March, 1916. His administration was noteworthy for its progressiveness and, despite the war, the College grew rapidly. Father Finn, of the faculty, volunteered when the Bishop called for chaplains and was with the Sixtieth Regiment in France; Father Healy was appointed chaplain to the Army Post at Plumb Island. Of the students who joined the colors, two made the supreme sacrifice on the field of battle—John Fisher and Herbert Hill.

Cathedral College was making great headway under Dr. Higgins, but on October 1, 1918, while on his way to address the Quarterly Conference of priests of the Diocese on the affairs of the College, his automobile struck another, and he died two hours later in the Brooklyn Hospital. Bishop Molloy directed Dr. Reichert to assume charge of the College, with the title of "Pro-Rector."

During Dr. Reichert's administration, the ground was broken for the left wing of the College, providing a convent and auditorium so equipped that it can be converted into a gymnasium, chemistry and physical laboratories and additional classrooms. At St. James Place and Atlantic Avenue, adjoining the college property, two four-story houses were purchased and extensive alterations were made to make them suitable as a Faculty House.

On September 28, 1922, it became known at the College that Bishop Molloy had promoted Dr. Reichert to the pastorship of an important city parish, and that the Rev. John R. McCoy had been appointed Rector. During his long stay at the College, Dr. Reichert had endeared himself to everyone. In Father McCoy the College received an excellent priest, one that has a deep interest and concern for the activities of each student and one who has accomplished much since his appointment.

From a student body of ninety-seven, Cathedral College had increased to almost four hundred by 1924. In the beginning, the Faculty consisted of five professors, residing in different parishes of the city, but in 1924 the number was eighteen. Every year after February, 1919, a class was graduated and the graduates have been sent to different seminaries. There were Cathedral College men at St. John's Seminary, Brooklyn; at the North American College, Rome, Italy; at the University at Innsbruck; at St. Vincent's Archabbey, Beatty, Penn.; and also at St. Mary's Seminary, Baltimore.

At Christmas, 1923, the first fruits of the College were realized when six young men were ordained priests who had begun their studies in Cathedral College. All the endeavors of Cathedral College have been to safeguard those entrusted to her keeping, and to lay deep the solid foundations of learned, pious, priestly lives in the souls of her students.



## CHAPTER XXVI

### LITERARY BROOKLYN

WALT WHITMAN\* never lost interest in Brooklyn, the home of his early days. While he never boasted of the English stock on his father's side, he wrote often and feelingly of the sound physical health, the cleanliness, the intelligence and the thrifty habits of the Dutch colonists of New Amsterdam. He inherited their best traits, their patience and deliberation in movement and thought. He had besides the tenacious purpose and mystical idealisms of the New Englanders. In him the two strains mingled and fought for mastery. Sometimes he was under the influence of the one; sometimes of the other. The Whitmans were identified with Long Island in 1662. They lived near Huntington and were good farmers.

Major Cornelius Van Velsor, Walt's maternal grandfather, was a farmer at Huntington in prosperous circumstances. Whitman, in his "Complete Prose," says he was "jovial, red, stout, with a sonorous voice and characteristic physiognomy," while his wife was "of sweet, sensible character, housewifely proclivities, and deeply intuitive and spiritual." He writes of them:

When my mother was a girl, the house where her parents and family lived was in a gloomy wood, out of the way from any village or thick settlement (near Cold Spring). One August morning my grandfather had some business a number of miles from home, and he put a saddle on the back of his favorite horse, Dandy (a creature he loved next to his wife and children), and rode away to attend to it. When nightfall came and my grandfather did not return, my grandmother began to feel a little uneasy. As the night advanced, she and her daughter sitting up impatient for the return of the absent husband and father, a terrible storm came, in the middle of which their ears joyed to hear the well known clatter of Dandy's hoofs. My grandmother sprang to the door, but upon opening it she almost fainted into my mother's arms, for there stood Dandy, bridled and saddled, but no signs of my grandfather. My mother stepped out and found that the bridle was broken, and the saddle soaked with rain and covered with mud. They returned sick at heart into the house. . . . It was just after midnight and the storm was passing off, when in the dreary stillness of their sleepless watch, they heard something in the room adjoining (the 'spare room'), which redoubled their terror. They heard the slow, heavy footfalls of a man walking. Tramp! Tramp! Tramp! it went—three steps solemnly and deliberately, and then all was hushed again. By any who in the middle of the night have had the chill of a vague unknown horror creep into their very souls, it can well be imagined how they passed the time now. My mother sprang to the door, turned the key, and spoke what words of cheer she could force through her lips, to the ears of her terrified parent. The dark hours crept slowly on, and at last a little tinge of daylight was seen through the eastern windows. Almost simultaneously with it, a bluff voice was heard some distance off, and the quick dull beat of a horse's gallop along a soft wet road. That bluff merry halloo came to the pallid and exhausted females like a cheer from a passing ship to starving mariners on a wreck at sea. My grandmother opened the door this time to behold the red laughing face of her husband, and to hear him tell how, when, after the storm was over and he went to look for Dandy whom he had fastened under a shed, he discovered that the skittish creature had broken his fastening and run away home—and how he could not get another horse for love or money at that hour—and how he was fain forced to stop until, nearly daylight. . . .

Then told my grandmother her story—how she had heard heavy footfalls in the parlor—whereat my grandfather laughed, and walked to the door between the rooms, and unlocked it, and saw nothing but darkness; for the shutters were closed, and it was yet quite a while to sunrise. My mother and grandmother followed timidly, though they now began to feel a little ashamed. My grandfather threw open the shutters of one window, and his wife those of the other. Then with one sweep of their eyes round the room, they paused a moment—after which such a guffaw of laughter came from the husband's capacious mouth, that Dandy, away up in the barnyard sent back an answering neigh in recognition!

Three or four days previously my grandmother had broken off from a peach tree

---

\* From the *Uncollected Poetry and Prose of Walt Whitman*, edited by Emory Holloway. Reprinted by special permission of the editor and the publishers, Doubleday, Page and Company. From this source much of the material on Whitman has been adapted.





WALT WHITMAN



GENERAL JEREMIAH JOHNSON, THIRD MAYOR





in the garden a branch uncommonly full of fruit of a remarkable beauty and ripeness. She brought it in, and stuck it amid the flowers and other simple ornaments on the high shelf over the parlor fire-place. The night before, while mother and daughter were watching, three of the peaches over full in their ripeness, had dropped, one after the other, on the floor, and my mother's and grandmother's terrified imaginations had converted the harmless fruit into cowhide heels! Here was the mystery—and there lay the beautiful peaches, which my grandfather laughed at so convulsively that my provoked grandmother, after laughing a while, too, picked them up, and half-jokingly and half seriously thrust them so far into the open jaws of her husband that he was nigh to have been choked indeed.

Major Van Velsor and the elder Walter Whitman were friends of Elias Hicks, the Quaker leader who lived at Jericho near Cold Spring. Walt was himself a Quaker in his aversion to the doctrinal quarrels of religious sects. He was influenced by the "inner light" of their mystic theology. He believed in the simple reverence for and direct communion with the Creator. Religion was a mode of living. The Bible and Shakespeare were the sources of his inspiration among books, but above all was Nature. He was a profound Christian, a lover of men, rather than a churchman.

About 1823, in May, if his memory serves, the family moved to Brooklyn, and Walt passed his boyhood in the small village which still clustered about the heights and Ferry. He was soon familiar with its geography and its quaint inhabitants were vivid pictures on his mind.

John Burroughs wrote an introduction to Whitman's vivid description of Lafayette's visit to Brooklyn. Burroughs says:

I have often heard Whitman speak of the incident of his childhood narrated in the following pages, and always with a feeling of pride and pleasure. It probably occurred in the fall of 1824, as Lafayette landed in this country in August of that year. He came in response to an invitation from Congress made through President Monroe, and remained with us over a year, visiting all the principal cities and each of the twenty-four states.

At this time the Whitman family had recently moved to Brooklyn from the country, and I fancy that Walt was a typical country boy of about five years, not at all 'bright and smart' as city boys so often are, but ruddy, normal, healthy—a bit of sound rural humanity, yet very impressionable, as his vivid recollection of the Lafayette incident, even to the color of the horses and of the barouche in which he came clearly shows. In that casual incident of a moment, the French democracy of the eighteenth century, as exemplified by the life and character of one of its most noted representatives, embraced and caressed the heir of the new democracy of the nineteenth century—its future poet and most complete and composite embodiment. There is something very significant, almost fateful in the incident. In all that crowd of children, Lafayette could have touched none other who was destined so to glorify and embody in imaginative words the spirit of the country to whose services he had, in his young manhood, so freely offered his life.

How much this memory of Lafayette influenced Whitman's liking for the French people, it would be impossible to determine. Certain it is that he always had a peculiarly warm feeling for that nation, more so I think than for any other European country. There was something in that audacious Revolutionary spirit of the French that moved him—that struggle for liberty—

"Alone among the sisters, thou, Giantess, did'st rend the ones that shamed thee."

He wrote two poems to France, the first on the French Revolution, published in 1860, in which he says—

"Pale, silent, stern, what could I say to  
That long,—accrued retribution?  
Could I wish humanity different?  
Could I wish the people made of wood and stone?  
Or that there be no justice in destiny or time?"

The last poem in 1870 was suggested by the defeat of France by the Germans. During this war, I remembered that Whitman's sympathies were as pronounced in favor of the French, as are our sympathies today in favor of Japan against Russia. The poem is entitled 'O Star of France.'

"Dim, smitten star  
Orb not of France alone, pale symbol  
Of my soul, its dearest hopes,  
The struggle and the daring, rage divine for liberty,



Of aspirations toward the far ideal—  
Enthusiast's dream of brotherhood,  
Of terror to the tyrant and the priest."

Truly there was something prophetic in the caress of the child Whitman by Lafayette.

Whitman told the story of Lafayette's visit to Brooklyn often, always with slight variations of detail. In his "Brooklyniana," he gives more particulars than he does in the version prepared for Burroughs and the following is a composite of both:

The Apprentices' Library Building was for years the Municipal Hall of Brooklyn. It was here the City Fathers met and transacted the business of the public. Here, too, was the post office of Brooklyn. The County Clerk's apartments were in the same edifice, and in the upper story the Judges of several Courts from time to time held their sessions. Elias Hicks, the Quaker, also preached there. The reason of its being called the Apprentices' Library was that a few benevolent gentlemen some forty years since, had combined together to establish a Free Library for youths and mechanics; and the enterprise led to their contributing money to put up the edifice which afterwards went by that name. It was intended (so we have been informed by old citizens), that the whole building, when completed, should gradually be devoted to that of the free library, such as educational improvement, lectures, studies, appropriate for mechanics, etc. But this was never carried out, for some reason or another; probably because it was found that the building turned out to be a very handsome pecuniary investment, and returned to its owners eventually, almost cent per cent from its increased value and central position.

(It stood at Henry and Cranberry Streets, and was known in Whitman's youth as the City Armory Building).

The cornerstone was laid in 1825. The writer of these sketches, who was at that time a lad in his seventh year, remembers the occasion perfectly well having been present at it. It was on the 4th day of July. The famous Lafayette was then on his last visit to America—the fourth, we believe. It was a historical event, that last visit, full of solemnity, as most of the old soldiers were dead. A few old veterans still remained, and gathered around Lafayette, here in Brooklyn and New York at this last visit. Well do we, casting our mind back as we write, remember the scene, now more than thirty-five years ago—the group of the bent, thin-faced, white-haired, old-fashioned fellows who were drawn together here in Brooklyn on that occasion and who met Lafayette when he came over the ferry. At that time, the reception of a public man, or other festival of the kind was very different from anything of the sort now—was quite informal and old-fashioned, without the crowds, and the blare and ceremony of the present day; but was fully as hearty and far less tedious. The people on this occasion turned out and formed on both sides a hollow lane nearly two miles long thickly fringed with well-dressed humanity, women, as well as men, the children placed in front. That was about all, yet it was singularly effective.

"Lafayette came over at Fulton Ferry (then called the Old Ferry) in a large canary-colored open barouche, drawn by four magnificent white horses, and passed through these lines of little children (of which the present writer was one), and a number of blacks freed from slavery by the then recent New York emancipation acts. These diversified the assemblage which was composed of all the principal persons and officers of Brooklyn, of course, with Joshua Sands, President of the Board of Trustees, who had gathered at the landing place. The Revolutionary veterans, if I remember right, being entertained in the meantime at Coe S. Downing's Inn, then a well-known public house on the east side of the street, between Front Street and the ferry. I think there was no band of music.

"Lafayette, with his hat off, rode slowly through the lines of children and the crowd that was gathered on the walks, and that looked at him and cheered him from the houses, all the way up. I remember that the fine horses and their impatient action under the curb attracted my attention fully as much as the great visitor himself. The whole thing was curiously magnetic and quiet. Lafayette was evidently deeply pleased and affected. Smiles and tears contended on his homely yet most winning features.

"After he had passed along ahead, to where Market Street now is, the carriage stopped, and the children, officers, citizens, etc., formed behind in procession, and followed him up to the corner of Henry and Cranberry Streets, where the operation of laying the cornerstone was to be performed by Lafayette with his own hands—that is grasp the stone personally. Some half a mile from the ferry he stopped, got out of the barouche, and, in the center of a group of veterans and some of the functionaries of Brooklyn, he awaited the arrival and getting in order, of the children and the rest of the procession. The excavation, etc., for the foundation walls and basement of the proposed building was quite rough, and there were heaps of stone and earth around, as was to be expected in such cases.

"As the children arrived there was a little delay in getting them into safe and eligible



places—whereupon many of the citizens volunteered to lift the smaller fry down the banks of the cellar, and place them on safe positions, etc., so that they might have a fair share of the view and hearing of the exercises. As most of the group around Lafayette were assisting in this work, the old companion of Washington, while waiting the signal to begin, pleasantly took it into his head to aid the same work himself, as he was in a place where there were a number of lads and lassies waiting their turn to be lifted down. As good luck would have it, the writer was one of those whom Lafayette lifted down to be provided with a standing place, I remember I was taken up by Lafayette in his arms and held a moment—I remember that he pressed my cheek with a kiss as he set me down—the childish wonder and nonchalance during the whole affair at the time—contrasting with the indescribable preciousness of the incident since.

"I remember quite well Lafayette's looks, tall, brown, not handsome in the face, but of fine figure and the pattern of good nature, health, manliness, and human attraction. (A life size full length oil painting exhibited years ago in Philadelphia, in 1877, I think, seems to me an admirable likeness as I recollect him at the time.)

"The beautiful sunshiny day, over sixty years since, the spontaneous effusion of all stages of humanity, and the occasion, made a picture, which time has continued to set deeper and deeper in my recollection."

There was quite an amount of speechifying and, we suppose, interchange of compliments of the usual nature: (Dr. Stiles says Clarence D. Sackett was the orator of the day), after which they took Lafayette riding on the Heights and round the city. This was the last time Lafayette ever saw these shores—being, we believe, his fourth visit. Twice he came during the Revolutionary War, once a few years after the close of the war, and the establishment of independence.

Dr. Stiles says that Lafayette was in Brooklyn also on August 10, 1824, when he examined the war steamer "Fulton" at Williamsburgh and visited the Navy Yard, where, on the deck of the "Washington," '74, he was introduced to the board of trustees and a large number of the citizens of Brooklyn, including a numerous concourse of ladies.

Dr. Stiles credits William Wood of New York with the honor of founding the Apprentices' Library. He was born in Boston in 1777, and established in Boston, February 22, 1820, the first mercantile library in the United States. In November of that year he established the famous Mercantile Library of New York. The idea spread to Philadelphia, Albany and other cities, including New Orleans.

The Apprentices' Library was pulled down in the fifties and the cornerstone of the armory was laid in 1858, the same stone Lafayette had touched being used.

The portrait of Lafayette to which Whitman refers is the one painted by S. F. B. Morse which hangs in the Governor's room of the City Hall, New York. Lafayette was between sixty-five and seventy years old.

The Whitman home was in Front, Cranberry, Henry, Johnson and Tillary Streets, successively. Walt says in his memoirs that his father built a nice house for a home in Johnson Street and another afterwards in Tillary. They were mortgaged and the family lost them. The house Walt and his father built together stands at Myrtle Avenue and Bridge Street today. He writes:

"Lived first in Front Street not far from what was then called the New Ferry wending the river from the foot of Catherine (or Main Street) to New York City. I was a little child (was born in 1819), but tramped freely about the neighborhood and town, even then; was often on the aforesaid New Ferry; remember I was petted and deadheaded by the gatekeepers and deckhands (all such fellows are kind to little children) and remember the horses that seemed to me so queer as they trudged around in the central houses of the boats, making the waterpower. (For it was just on the eve of the steam engine which was introduced soon after) Edward Copeland (after mayor), had a grocery store then at the corner of Front and Catherine Streets. Presently we Whitmans all moved up to Tillary Street, near Adams, where my father, who was a carpenter, built a house for himself and us all. It was from here I assisted the personal coming of Lafayette to Brooklyn."



Walt was fond of attending the revivals in the old Methodist Church in Sands Street about this time, sitting in the gallery. He tells of the large number of apprentices who "experienced religion," but does not say whether he was among the number. It is not improbable. Certain it is that his nature was deeply religious, though not dogmatic, and he knew many preachers. He ever opened to them the columns of his papers, and gave much space to advocating church attendance. While he was a pupil at the school in Sands Street he heard the explosion that wrecked the steam-frigate "Fulton" in the Navy Yard, and he writes:

"An occurrence happened in 1829 of a beautiful June day, namely of the steam frigate 'Fulton' (the first steam vessel ever built for any government) being blown up by the vengeance of an exasperated sailor, who fired the powder magazine and caused the death of forty to fifty persons. (Newspaper accounts placed the number at forty-three.) The writer of these paragraphs, then a boy of just ten years old, was at the public school corner of Adams and Concord Street. We remember the dull shock that was felt in the building as of something like an earthquake, for the vessel was moored at the navy yard. But more distinctly do we remember two or three days afterwards, the funeral of one of the officers. (The cemetery was on Fulton Street, east of Smith where the big drygoods stores were erected.) It was a full military and naval funeral—the sailors marching two by two, hand in hand, banners tied up and bound in black crape, the muffled drums beating, the bugles wailing forth the mournful peals of a dead march. We remember it all—remember following the procession, boy like, from beginning to end. We remember the soldiers firing the salute over the grave and then how everything changed with the dashing and merry jig played by the same bugles and drums as they made their exit from the graveyard and wended rapidly home."

Walt went with his father and mother to hear Elias Hicks, the Quaker, preach in a ballroom on Brooklyn Heights in 1829 or 1830. For years the family lived in Myrtle Avenue near Bridge Street. Walter Whitman, the poet's father, was a carpenter and builder all his life. The Brooklyn directory for 1825 gives: Walter Whitman, carpenter, living in Henry Street, near Fulton. The Whitmans are dropped from the following directories for a period of years.

Walt writes:

"At about the same time, was employed as a boy in an office, lawyer's, father and two sons, Clarke's, Fulton Street near Orange. I had a nice desk and window nook to myself; Edward C. kindly helped me at my handwriting and composition, and (the signal event of my life at that time), subscribed for me to a big circulating library. For a time I now revelled in romance-reading of all kinds; first, the 'Arabian Nights,' all the volumes, an amazing treat. Then, with sorties in very many other directions, took in Walter Scott's novels, one after another, and his poetry.

"After about two years (1831-32) went to work in a weekly newspaper and printing office, to learn the trade. The paper was the 'Long Island Patriot' owned by Samuel E. Clements, who was also postmaster. An old printer in the office, William Hartshorne, a revolutionary character who had seen Washington, was a special friend of mine, and I had many a talk with him about long past time. The apprentices, including myself, boarded with his grand-daughter. I used occasionally to go out riding with the boss who was very kind to us boys. Sundays he took us all to a great old stone church, on Joralemon Street near where the Brooklyn City Hall now is (at that time broad fields and country roads everywhere around). Afterward 1832-33 I worked on the 'Long Island Star,' Alden Spooner's paper, my father all these years pursuing his trade as carpenter and builder with varying fortune. There was a growing family of children—eight of us—my brothers Jesse, the oldest, myself the second, my dear sisters Mary and Hannah Louisa, my brothers Andrew, George, Thomas Jefferson and then my youngest brother, Edward, born 1835, and always badly crippled as I am myself of later years.

"I developed (1833-4-5) into a healthy, strong youth (grew too fast, though, was nearly as big as a man at 15 or 16). Our family at this period moved back to the country, my dear mother was very ill for a long time, but recovered. 1836-37 worked as compositor in printing offices in New York City. Then, when a little more than eighteen and for a while afterwards, I went to teaching country schools down in Queens and Suffolk counties, and 'boarded round.' (This latter I consider one of my best experiences and deepest lessons in human nature behind the scenes and in the masses.) In '39, '40, I started and published a weekly paper in my native town, Huntington. Then returning to New





WALT WHITMAN'S HOMESTEAD NEAR HUNTINGTON



VIEW OF PAYNE'S HOME





York City and Brooklyn, worked on as printer and writer, mostly prose, but an occasional shy at 'poetry.'"

Careful comparisons of dates show that Whitman worked as a printer or wrote for other newspapers as follows: The "Long Island Democrat," 1839-41, the "Aurora," the "Sun" and the "Tatler," 1842; the "Statesman," 1843; the "Eagle," 1843-46; the "New Orleans Crescent," 1848; the "Brooklyn Freeman," 1848-49; the "Brooklyn Daily Adventurer," 1850-51; the "New York Evening Post," 1851; "The Brooklyn Times," 1857-58; the "Brooklyn Standard," 1861-62; the "New York Herald," 1888. And he wrote for magazines all his life.

Besides it is recorded that in his adolescence he taught seven schools within five years. He began teaching when nineteen at Norwich, in June, 1836; took the school west of Babylon in the winter of 1836-37; Long Swamp in the spring of 1837; Smithtown in the fall and winter of 1837. He edited the "Long Islander" at Huntington from June, 1838, till the spring of 1839. He taught school between Jamaica and Flushing in the winter of 1839-40; Woodbury in the summer of 1840; Whitestone in the winter of 1840-41. He returned to New York in May, 1841.

Brooklyn in the thirties had about 12,000 inhabitants. Splendid elms lined Fulton Street for a mile eastward from the ferry. Twenty-five acres of meadow at the intersection of Flatbush Avenue and Fulton Street were sold for \$4,000 to M. Parmentier, a French *émigré*.

In the next decade the Whitman family had moved back from the country, for the directories include their names:

In 1845-46, there appears Walter Whitman, carpenter, Prince near Willoughby. In 1847-48, the name of Walter Whitman, Jr., appears for the first time. He is living at 71 Prince Street, and it follows his parents. In the next issue the proprietors of the directory change from the style of Wm. J. Hearne & James E. Webb to H. R. & W. J. Hearne, 35 and 41 Fulton Street. They apologize in a sticker under the front cover because 3,000 additional names overwhelm the new book. This compels them, they explain, to insert a section after page 176, numbered in Roman from I to LVI. But the Whitmans are omitted. In 1850-51 appears Walter, Jr., editor "Brooklyn Freeman," Fulton c. Middagh, 106 Myrtle Avenue. This raises a mental doubt, for the "Freeman," a weekly, was completely destroyed in the great fire of 1848, the night after its first issue. After two months it was revived. It was changed to a daily on April 25, 1849, and enlarged in its staff and circulation. Whitman withdrew on September 11th of that year, saying in his valedictory quoted in "The Eagle":

"After the present date, I withdraw entirely from the 'Brooklyn Daily Freeman.' To those who have been my friends, I take occasion to proffer the warmest thanks of a grateful heart. My enemies—and old Hunkers generally—I disdain and defy the same as ever." As this date cannot be controverted, the directory must have been a long time in its compilation.

In the directory for 1851-52, there is Whitman, Walter, print office and store, 106 Myrtle Avenue. His father lives at the same place. In 1855 there is: Whitman, Walter, Skillman, near De Kalb Avenue. In 1855-56 the version is Whitman, Walter, editor, 91½ Classon Avenue. In 1860 it says: Whitman, Walt, copyist, Portland Avenue near Myrtle.

The Rev. C. C. Leigh read a paper before the Old Brooklynites in 1888 on Walt Whitman, in which he said:

"He loved to study man and was often seated beside the driver on a Broadway omnibus, which gave him time and opportunity to scan the multitudes. He had a liking for one of the drivers by whose side he would converse or silently meditate. It came to pass that



the driver fell and broke his arm. His family was in sore distress. Walt Whitman at once took the seat of the driver and performed the duties of a coachman until the arm was restored, the afflicted man receiving the wages in the meantime."

Whitman was well liked by the printing fraternity and liked his work. He scribbled poems, rhymed and arranged in verses, and was of pronounced political opinions. In 1848 he was appointed to attend the Free Soil convention in Buffalo. Hiram Burney, Seth Hunt, William E. Whiting, Samuel E. Johnson, H. B. Claflin and others attended with him. The files of the "Eagle" for 1846 and 1847 contain not a few of his sentimental tales. A dozen of them were collected by the author in later years, liberally amended, and published in a volume of his complete prose works. Many of them are pathetic. All are didactic as titles such as "One Wicked Impulse," "The Child and the Profligate," "Wild Frank's Return" and the "Lingrave's Temptation" suggest. They are of the Sunday School library type.

Whitman might have been seen seated on the western brow of Fort Greene on any fair morning, a daily newspaper spread before him. He was a great walker with a tremendous stride. Prominent as he was, he never tried to put himself forward. Most of his friends were plain folk like himself, and he could be on the easiest terms with them. He loved opera, he attended the Lyceum lectures regularly, and heard Wendell Phillips, William Lloyd Garrison, John P. Hale, Ralph Waldo Emerson, Cassius M. Clay, and others. Beecher he heard often and liked, both in Plymouth Church and on the lecture platform. It is even said that Beecher called upon him to speak at one time at an evening prayer meeting.

Whitman did not attend church regularly, although in the early fifties he was found frequently at an Episcopal church in Vandewater Street, the Rev. Mr. Evans being pastor. In 1860 he appreciated the sermons of Father Taylor of the Boston Mariners' Church. To his memory as well as to that of Elias Hicks, the apostle of Quakerism, Whitman paid feeling tributes. He was too ponderous to be a social favorite, but he delivered several lectures with a view to becoming a platform speaker. The most signal occasion was on September 7, 1871, he recited an interesting poem he had written for the occasion entitled, "After All, Not to Create Only." This was done at the request of the managers of the American Institute. It was printed among his collected poems and was a favorite with President Garfield. Whitman's earliest lecture of which there is any record was delivered before the Brooklyn Art Union, March 31, 1851. Its diatribe on the remarkable dress of the period will interest all who know of Whitman's own simplicity in such matters. This address, written out by himself and published in the "Brooklyn Daily Advertiser" of April 3, 1851, reads:

"Among such a people as the Americans, viewing most things with an eye to pecuniary profit—more for acquiring than enjoying or well developing what they acquire—ambitious of the physical rather than the intellectual; a race to whom matter-of-fact is everything, and the ideal nothing—a nation of whom the steam engine is no bad symbol—he does a good work who, pausing in the way, calls to the feverish crowd that in the life we live upon this beautiful earth there may after all be something vaster and better than dress and the table, and business and politics.

"There was an idle Persian hundreds of years ago who wrote poems, and he was accosted by one who believed more in thrift. 'Of what use are you?' inquired the supercilious son of traffic. The poet turning plucked a rose and said: 'Of what use is this?' 'To be beautiful, to perfume the air,' answered the man of gains. 'And I,' responded the poet, 'I am of use to perceive its beauty and to smell its perfume.'

"It is the glorious province of arts and of all artists worthy of the name to disentangle from whatever obstructs it and nourish in the heart of man the germ of the perception of the truly great, the beautiful and the simple.

"When God, according to the myth, finished heaven and earth, when the luster of His



effulgent light pierced the cold and terrible darkness that had for cycles of ages covered the face of the deep, when the waters gathered themselves together into one place and made the sea, and the dry land appeared with its mountains and its infinite variety of valley, shore and plain; when in the sweetness of that primeval time the unspeakable splendor of the sunrise first flowed on the bosom of the earth; when the stars hung at night afar off in this most excellent canopy, the air pure, solemn, eternal; when the waters and the earth obeyed the Divine command to bring forth abundantly, the beasts of the field, the birds of the air and the fishes of the sea, and when at last the superb perfection, man, appeared, epitome of all the rest, fashioned after the Father and Creator of all, then God looked forth and saw everything that He had made and pronounced it good—good because ever reproductive of its first beauty, finish and freshness.

"For just as the Lord left it, it remains yet the beauty of His work. It is now spring. Already the sun has warmed the blood of this old, yet ever youthful earth, and the early trees are budding and the early flowers beginning to bloom. There is not lost one of earth's charms. Upon her bosom yet, after the flight of untold centuries, the freshness of her fair beginning lies and still shall lie. With this freshness—with this that the Lord called good the artist has to do—and it is a beautiful truth that all men contain something of the artist in them. And perhaps it is sometimes the case that the greatest artists live and die, the world themselves alike ignorant of what they possess. Who would not mourn that an ample palace of surpassingly graceful architecture, filled with luxuries and gorgeously embellished with fair pictures and sculpture, should stand cold and still and vacant and never be known and enjoyed by its owner? Would such a fact as this cause you sadness? Then be sad. For there is a palace to which the courts of the most sumptuous kings are but a frivolous patch, and though it is always waiting for them, not one in thousands of its owners ever enters there with any genuine sense of its grandeur and glory.

"To the artist, I say, has been given the command: 'Go forth unto all the world and preach the gospel of beauty.' The perfect man is the perfect artist and it cannot be otherwise. For in the much that has been said of nature and art there is mostly the absurd error of considering the two as distinct. Rousseau, himself, in reality one of the most genuine artists, starting from his false point, ran into his beautiful encomium upon nature and his foolish sarcasms upon art. To think of what happened when that restless and daring spirit ceased to animate one of the noblest apostles of democracy, is itself answer enough to all he ever said in condemnation of art. The shadows from the West were growing longer as Rousseau at the close of a beautiful summer day felt death upon him. 'Let me behold once more the glorious setting sun' was his last request. With his eyes turned toward the more than imperial pomp, and with the soft and pure harmonies of nature around him, his wild and sorrowful life came to an end, and he departed peacefully and happily. Do you think Rousseau would have passionately enjoyed that sunset, those clouds, the beauty and the natural graces there, had such things as art and artists never existed? Was not his death made happier than his life by what he so often ridiculed in life?

"Nay, may not death itself through the prevalence of a more artistic feeling among the people, be shorn of many of its frightful and ghastly features. In the temple of the Greeks, Death and his brother, Sleep, were depicted as beautiful youths reposing in the arms of night. At other times Death was represented as a graceful form, with calm but drooping eyes, his feet crossed and his arms leaning on an inverted torch. Such were the soothing and solemnly placed influences which true art, identical with a perception of the beauty that there is in all the ordinations as well as all the works of nature, cast over the last fearful thrill in those olden ages. Was it not better so? Or is it better to have before us the idea of our dissolution typified by the spectral horror upon the pale horse, by a grim skeleton or a moldering skull? The beautiful artist principle sanctifies that community which is pervaded by her. A halo surrounds forever that nation. There have been nations more warlike than the Greeks. Germany has been and is more intellectual. Inventions, physical comforts, wealth and enterprise are prodigiously greater in all civilized nations now than they were among the countrymen of Alcibiades and Plato. But never was there such an artistic race.

"At a neighboring city the other evening was given by a lecturer a beautiful description of this character, making it a model that few in these days would think of successfully copying. The Grecian form he described as perfect: the mind well cultivated as to those things which are useful and pleasing; the man as familiar with the history of his country, not seeking office for its emolument or dignity, believing that no office confers dignity upon him who bears it, but that the true dignity of office arises from the character of the man who holds it and the manner in which he administers it. He is not elated with honors or discomposed with ill success—pursues his course with firmness yet with moderation; and seeks not honors or profit for the services rendered his country, which he loves better than himself. He is neither penurious nor extravagant; does not court the rich nor stand aloof from the poor. He can appreciate excellence whether clothed in the apparel of the affluent or of the indigent; is no respecter of persons, remembering that manly worth cannot be monopolized by any circle of society. He can mingle in festive scenes and seek in them the feast of reason as well as the flow of soul. His entertainments are prepared for the



intellect as well as the physical appetite. The lyre and song, the harp and recital of heroic verse, sculpture, painting, music, poetry as well as grave and philosophical discourse—each in its turn becomes the channel of a refined and elevated pleasure. As a soldier he acts upon the principle 'that thrice is he armed who has his quarrel just,' and appeals to force only when negotiations fail, but then with terrific energy. He counts no sacrifice too great for his country. Dying, his proudest boast is that 'no Athenian through his means ever had cause to put on mourning.'

"Yes, distracted by frippery, cant and vulgar selfishness—sick even of the 'intelligence of the age'—it freshens the soul to bring up again one of that glorious and manly and beautiful nation, with his sandals, his flowing drapery, his noble and natural attitudes and the serene composure of his features. Imagination loves to dwell there, revels there and will not turn away. There the artist's appetite is gratified and there all ages have loved to turn as to one of the most perfect ideals of man.

"The orthodox specimen of the man of the present time, approved of public opinion and the tailor, stands here under the glance of art as stately. His contempt for all there is in the world, except money, can be made of it; his utter vanity of anything more important to him as a man than success in 'business'—his religion what is written down in the books or preached to him as he sits in his rich pew, by one to whom he pays a round sum and thinks it a bargain—his only interest in affairs of state, getting offices or jobs for himself or someone who pays him—so much for some points of his character.

"Then see him in all the perfection of fashionable tailordom—the tight boot with the high heel; the trousers big at the ankle, on some rule inverting the ordinary ones of grace; the long, large cuffs, and thick, stiff collar of his coat—the swallow tailed coat on which dancing masters are inexorable; the neck swathed in many bands giving support to the modern high and pointed shirt collar, that fearful sight to an approaching enemy—the modern shirt collar, bold as Columbus, stretching off into the unknown distance—and then, to crown all, the fashionable hat before which language has nothing to say, because sight is the only thing that can begin to do it justice—and we have, indeed, a model for the sculptor. Think of it; a piece of Italian marble chiseled away till it gets to the shape of all this, hat included, and then put safely under the storage as our contribution to the future ages, taste for our artistic proportion, grace and harmony of form.

"I think of few heroic actions which cannot be traced to the artistic impulse. He who does great deeds does them from his sensitiveness to moral beauty. Such men are not merely artists; they are artistic material. Washington in some great crisis, Lawrence on the bloody deck of the "Chesapeake," Mary Stuart at the block, Kossuth in captivity and Mazzini in exile—all great rebels and innovators, especially if their intellectual majesty bears itself with calmness amid popular odium or circumstances of cruelty and an infliction of suffering—exhibit the highest phases of the artistic spirit. A sublime moral beauty is present to them and they realize it. It may be almost said to emanate from them. The painter, the sculptor, the poet, express heroic duty better in description; for description is their trade and they have learned it. But the others are heroic beauty, the best beloved of art.

"Talk not so much then, young artist, of the great old masters who but painted and chiseled. Study not only their productions. There is a still better, higher school for him who would kindle his fire with coal from the altar of the loftiest and purest art. It is the school of all grand actions and grand virtues of heroism, of the deaths of captives and martyrs—of all the mighty deeds written in the pages of history—deeds of daring and enthusiasm and devotion and fortitude. Read well the death of Socrates, and of a greater than Socrates. Read how slaves have battled against their oppressors—how the bullets of tyrants, have, since the first king ruled, never been able to put down the unquenchable thirst of man for his rights.

"In the sunny peninsula where art was transferred from Greece and generations afterward flourished into new life, we even now see the growth that is to be expected among a people pervaded by a love and appreciation of beauty. In Naples, in Rome, in Venice that ardor for liberty which is a constituent part of all well developed artists and without which a man can not be such, has had a struggle, a hot and baffled one. The inexplicable destinies have shaped it so. The dead lie in their graves; but their august and beautiful enthusiasm is not dead.

"Those corpses of young men  
Those martyrs that hung from the gibbets,  
Those hearts pierced by the grey lead,  
Cold and motionless as they seem  
Live everywhere with undying vitality;  
They live in other young men. O Kings,  
They live in brothers again ready to defy you.  
They were purified by death;  
They were taught and exalted.  
Not a grave of those slaughtered ones  
But is growing its seed of freedom,  
In its turn to bear seed,



CHARLES H. LEVERMORE

BROOKLYN WINNER AND PHILADELPHIA DONOR OF PEACE PLAN PRIZE



EDWARD W. BOK





Which the wind shall carry afar and resow,  
And the rain nourish.  
Not a dismembered spirit  
Can the weapons of tyrants let loose  
But it shall stalk invisibly over the earth  
Whispering, counselling, cautioning."

"I conclude here, as there can be no true artist without a glowing thought of freedom—so freedom pays the artist back again many fold, and under her umbrage. Art must sooner or later tower to its loftiest and most perfect proportions.

Walt Whitman was the founder of Brooklyn's literary colony. The old wooden building on the southeast corner of Myrtle Avenue and Bridge Street where he lived—the house he and his father built, and part of which his father occupied as a carpenter shop is standing, one of America's most interesting literary shrines and the object of many a devout pilgrimage by those who love the "good grey poet" in spite of—or perhaps because of—his frankness and unconventionality.

**Will Carleton**, dean of corps in 1904, farm ballads known to world, began as reporter and lecturer.

**Alice Morse Earle** and **Olive Thorne Miller**, one authority on colonial history, manners and customs; the other authority on animals and birds, particularly birds for children.

**Cyrus Townsend Brady** loved in boyland as much as H. P. Halsey, Elbridge Brooks and others, who created such popular heroes as "Old Sleuth," "Cap Collier" and "Nick Carter."

Brady did up his superhumanly quick-witted boys in the sugar-coated pill of American history, or rather flavored his history with his quick witted boys and their thrilling escapades.

Brady, Harlan, Hudson and Brooks all were prolific. All four did better and more important work than the flood of books they poured out for boys would indicate. It was said jestingly that Brady could write a novel with each hand. Hudson admitted turning out one a week. Mr. Brady was an Episcopal clergyman, but he found writing books so much more profitable that he resigned from his church in 1899 and moved from Philadelphia to Flatbush in 1903. He built a beautiful house in East Seventeenth Street between Avenues D and E, the Ditmas Park section. He had the reputation of having written more complete novels and short stories than any other living writer. He was born in Allegheny, Penn., in 1861. His parents were Jasper Ewing Brady and Harriet Cora Townsend Brady. He was graduated from Annapolis in 1883, and was in the employ of the Missouri Pacific and Union Pacific railroads for several years. He studied theology under Bishop Worthington of Nebraska and was ordained deacon in 1889 and priest in 1890. He served as rector of Protestant Episcopal churches in Missouri and archdeacon of Pennsylvania until 1899, when he became rector of St. Paul's in Overbrook, Philadelphia. He left the church to become chaplain of the First Pennsylvania Volunteers in the Spanish War.

Among the literary clergymen were Dr. John M. Chadwick (q.v.), of the Second Unitarian Church, who wrote poetry, biography, religious works and occasional essays and fiction with a facile pen, winning fame in each line. For fifty years the Rev. Theodore L. Cuyler (q.v.), pastor of the Lafayette Avenue Presbyterian church, contributed to the religious and also to the secular press. He was credited with having published some 4,000 articles before he died. Dr. Almon P. Gunnison, for twenty years pastor of All Souls' Universalist church and after-



ward president of St. Lawrence University was another prolific writer. His travel sketches and essays were of a high order. His successor, the Rev. John Coleman Adams, wrote mainly essays of a religious character. His biography of James Hamilton Gibson, and his "Nature Studies in the Berkshires," although out of the line of his profession had many readers.

**Dr. Thomas P. Hughes**, associate rector of the Church of the Epiphany, wrote several books on the East where he served as chaplain of a British regiment in India. He became a profound student of the history, language, literature and culture of the people of India and Afghanistan, and achieved fame as an orientalist. From 1875 until 1885 he was examiner in oriental languages for the British government. In 1885 he came to America. In the pulpit he wore a scholar's hood bestowed on him by Queen Victoria for his services in translating the Bible into Eastern dialects. Besides he was an authority on heraldry, and wrote a book on American ancestry. "Judge" John Rooney wrote an interesting book on Irish genealogy.

## CHAPTER XXVII

### ACADEMY OF MUSIC

**T**HE old Academy of Music had its inception before the Civil War. It was opened with a concert on the night of Tuesday, January 15, 1861, when S. B. Chittenden, president of the board of directors, occupied the chair. In his address Mr. Chittenden said: "Let me say here that no one of us proposed to build a theater, nor do we propose to allow this building to be used for theatrical purposes." The resolution held good for several weeks; no longer.

Theodore Eisfeld was the conductor of the opening concert. The singers were Mme. Colson, soprano; Signor Brignoli, tenor; Signor Ferri, baritone, and Signor Susini, basso. The Philharmonic Orchestra, led by Jacob Noll, furnished the music, which comprised compositions by Weber, Bellini, Verdi, Rossini, Auber, Donizetti and Meyerbeer. The Wagnerian epoch had not arrived. The night was bad, but the house was filled. After the overture to "Freischütz" had been played, the picture curtain, that old familiar canvas representing a temple of Apollo, was let down and a thousand gas jets turned on to full height. The effect was electrical.

The light revealed a house of noble proportions. Little to surpass it in theatre building was to be seen at the time in any of the other cities of America. The front on Montague Street was 250 feet long and the width 92 feet. The entrance was ample; the lobbies wide. The architecture was a blend of Moorish and Gothic, altogether pleasing. At one time it was the practice to light a strip of painted sky that showed through an arcade above the proscenium, so that it suggested an actual sky of daylight out of doors shining through the starry night sky within. There was an abundance of doors and windows on the ground floor to serve as exits in an emergency and no thought was given to further protection against fire. The rapidity with which the interior was consumed in 1903 showed that it was nothing but a fire trap.

Just after the Brooklyn theater fire, when everyone was timid and the players for weeks appeared to empty benches, there was an alarm of fire in the



ACADEMY OF MUSIC





Academy during a rehearsal of the Thomas Orchestra. A steak was burning in a kitchen to the windward and the fumes entered at the windows with the smoke. There was a scramble in the galleries and a slight disorder, but Mr. Thomas, after a glance at the disturbers, resumed his deliberate beat, and the cooler-headed ones cried, "Sit down!"

The stage was one of the biggest in any theater. Comedians joked about the magnificent distances they had to cover to march down within sight of the audience. It was 90 feet wide and 86 feet deep. The proscenium opening was 55 feet and the height to the paint frame about 60 feet. It was fitted with every modern improvement of the period, except scenery; and the stock of that was something to make the angels weep.

The seating capacity of the house was 2,300. There was the usual parquet, with the old parquet circle in horseshoe form about it, a dress circle and a gallery, uncommonly deep and steep. Eight large boxes were each ample for a party of a score. They were the worst possible points for seeing and hearing; the most advantageous for those desiring to be seen.

Brooklyn had no adequate playhouse at the time and it was not long before the resolution of the directors against theatricals went for nought. Palmy day tragedians were soon roaring "Spartacus" and ranting through "Richard III." on the stage. Indeed, the directors were in no position to deny those actors, for they had permitted Rarey, the horse tamer, to give an exhibition without compunction.

The second opening of the Academy occurred only two nights after the inaugural concert. The occasion was a ball. Dancing was to take place in a spot too chaste for acting. Mr. Chittenden and Samuel Sloan resigned as directors when overruled, and the board decided to admit actors in the future.

The first play presented was "Hamlet," with E. L. Davenport, a finished and scholarly tragedian, in the title role. In the cast were J. W. Wallace, Mark Smith, Harry Langdon, Thomas Placide, Mrs. Wallace, Julia Bennett Barrow, Ferguson and Matthews, and J. Sefton. The house was crowded and the play so successful that the actors were recalled after a few nights to play "The School for Scandal," "Othello," "London Assurance," "Damon and Pythias" and "The Honey-moon."

Edwin Forrest appeared the next year in a repertoire of his greatest parts. Admission to hear the most noted actor on the American stage cost 50 cents in those days, while another half dollar obtained a front seat. Edwin Booth appeared on December 23, 1862, giving Richelieu, Mortimer and Shylock on successive nights. After him came Charlotte Cushman, Laura Keane, Joseph Jefferson, Lester Wallack and all the famous stars of the day.

While a few of the soberer citizens of the orthodox City of Churches looked aghast at the success of the ungodly drama in Brooklyn, there was a large element whose feelings were not disturbed. Indeed, they felt it was a mark of Brooklyn's taste and culture, its affluence and mental growth. And so it was!

The "Eagle" in discussing the need for such an institution had said:

"The erection of a lyric hall in a central location is one of the grand necessities of this city, and the absence of such an edifice is one of the links in the chain of vassalage which binds us to New York, and keeps Brooklyn in the character of a suburb and provincial dependency of the sister city \* \* \* What has been most felt and has exerted the most depreciating influence on the business prosperity and public importance of the city, was the absence of a feeling of local attachment on the part of its inhabitants. Whether to transact business or be amused New York has been the mecca to which the steps of our citizens have been directed. All this is being changed; our capitalists are coming forward to aid in the establishment of institutions that will elevate and concentrate the intelli-



gence of the city, cement the social feelings of the people, and give to public spirit a local habitation and a name. Already as the fruits of this spirit we have the Mercantile Library, the Philharmonic Society, and will soon have a grand shrine at which the veterans of each can present their offerings to the genius of intelligence and the spirit of harmony and sweet sounds."

The rather grandiose announcements of the prime object of the Academy took no account of rivalries with the town over the way. They consecrated the building to liberal arts and self-sacrificing patriotism. It was to be a spot in which could gather all parties and all creeds in times of need and danger "to devise measures for local beneficence and philanthropy, or to lay on the altar of our country all personal or party considerations, that we may unite together as one man to redeem the nation, and transmit to unborn generations the precious and free institutions that for more than eighty years have been the hope of the race. It should be to Brooklyn what the Temple was to Jerusalem, the Parthenon to Athens, or St. Peter's to modern Rome." It was not all those things, but it opened at a critical time to the nascent city whose boundaries and population had outstripped the facilities for the development of a true city life, wider and in need of opportunities.

From the first the building really was an Academy of Music. That is the musical art had precedence there; it was not long before grand opera followed the concerts. It was latterly the home of the Philharmonic Society, which had been accustomed to take its concerts to the almost forgotten Athenæum, in Atlantic Avenue. When the Philharmonic concerts were first put on at the Academy, it was first come first served, for there were no reserved seats. This led to a jam at the doors and a wild rush for seats in which many clothes and tempers were spoiled and many bumps and bruises were received. The practice began of saving the boxes, then the first row of seats, until nothing was left to the plain and impecunious except the last rows in the gallery. The Philharmonic concerts were not merely of artistic importance; they were features of the city's social life. Originally it was the practice to rehearse each concert publicly. Theodore Thomas gave three rehearsals before each evening performance. At those afternoons the women took their knitting and their tatting tidies, and worked while they chatted with their neighbors between the selections. It has homelike and they were delighted. The metropolis and frigid Boston had nothing to compare with it.

Opera had to follow the concerts. Piccolomini had been in America somewhere around 1858, and had sung in the Athenæum. It was agreed to bar "La Traviata" at any rate, for that was wicked. Yet from perversity, or sheer cussedness, "La Traviata" was chosen for the first performance. A howl of protest went up from pulpit, school and boarding house, and the offending opera was withdrawn, while "Il Giuramento," by Mercadante, became the bill. The cast contained Adelaide Phillips, Mme. Colson, Brignoli, the high-voiced tenor, and Signor Ferri. Signor Muzio was the director. Mrs. Lincoln, wife of the President, and her sons were in the audience. Isabella Hinkley appeared a few nights later in "Lucia" with Stefani, Ferri and Coletti. After a brilliant round of operas, Clara Louise Kellogg was introduced in "Rigoletto" in 1861, when the diva just had achieved her fame and was at the threshold of a career of astonishing success. Brignoli was much criticized during the engagements. He had such a regard for himself that he could hardly be persuaded to take an interest in his parts. The prima donnas complained that in the love scenes they were left to furnish all the sentiment, while Brignoli self-complacently accepted their admiration as a matter of course. But his voice was remarkable and little flaws were overlooked.

Opera was given for several seasons from January to May with such success that New York became jealous, and conceded to Brooklyn a better or a surer musical taste than was instanced often across the river. Several singers made their debut in Brooklyn, among them Mrs. Van Zandt, a daughter of the Magician Blitz, who had made his home in the borough for several years; Parepa Root, Patti, Zucchi, Christine Nilsson, Mme. Albani, Pauline Lucca, Gerster, La Grange, Cary, Santley, Wachtel, Formes, Roncomi, Rubinstein, Thalberg, Strauss—indeed, almost all the famous singers of the day.

It was during one of these operatic performances that Luther B. Wyman, whose venerable figure was widely known to patrons of the Thomas concerts, for he always led out the soloist with a flourish and a stateliness everybody relished, announced between the acts that Fort Sumter, just fired upon, had been reinforced. The news was received with prolonged applause, while the audience rose and waved hats and handkerchiefs. Yet loud hisses mingled with the cheers, although Brooklyn was not a copperhead centre. Presently Isabella Hinkley, the star of the evening, appeared before the footlights dressed in red, white and blue and sang "The Star Spangled Banner." This kindled an uproar of enthusiasm. The entire opera company offered its services for a benefit to raise a patriotic relief fund. Captain Abner Doubleday, afterwards General, was present. The Sanitary Fair (q. v.) was held at the Academy in the winter of 1864.

What made the Academy even a more important factor in the civic life of the city was its frequent use by the clergy. Revival meetings and plain services were held within its walls. When the Church of the Pilgrims was undergoing repairs, the scholarly Dr. Storrs preached there. Indeed, it was while preaching from the Academy stage he discovered he could deliver a sermon without the use of notes.

Mr. Beecher often spoke and lectured there and was a prominent figure in the great assemblies summoned to raise funds for charity or for any other good and public purpose. Whenever T. De Witt Talmage lost a tabernacle by fire, he invariably engaged the Academy, and preached there to entranced audiences, and he never knew that the Academy was more perilously exposed to damage by the devouring element than any of his tabernacles.

Another service the Academy performed was to provide an adequate place for graduating classes from schools and colleges. On its stage shy valedictorians delivered high sounding rhetoric, and audiences of admiring relatives and friends sat with solemn faces under French and Latin adjurations, applauding the end of, if not the affliction suffered, and smiling approval throughout. Ushers rushed with bouquets to the timid young woman who read the class poem, and added their admiring smiles to those of the real donors.

For the lecturers of those days the Academy was a lyceum of importance of the first order. No pigmies were they, but men who figured in the history of the country and of mankind. Among them were Edward Everett, Edward H. Chapin, John B. Gough, Beecher, Theodore Tilton, Matthew Arnold, who just appeared—nobody could hear him; Charles Kingsley, Conan Doyle, James Anthony Froude, Bishop Simpson; indeed almost every one who had a voice and a mind to sell. Stoddard, of a different sort, with a lot of magic lantern slides, gave several seasons of talk and pictures at the Academy with great success. Those who did not go to hear Holmes or Emerson learned pleasant things about the foreign towns that lie near the great arteries of travel.

There were hundreds of celebrations at the Academy of personal, social, dramatic and religious events. One of the most notable was that of the tercen-



tenary of Shakespeare's birth, when Mr. and Mrs. F. B. Conway, who afterwards had a theater of their own, gave a performance of "Twelfth Night" as a testimonial to Gabriel Harrison, another Brooklynite of note.

There was an immense gathering in the Academy on the night of October 7, 1862, to indorse President Lincoln's emancipation policy. Applause greeted Cassius M. Clay's remark that "the hanging of such men as Seymour and Wood would have saved thousands of honest lives; that is true philanthropy." Resolutions were adopted accepting the offer of Garibaldi to come to America and fight for liberty here as he had done at home. Governor Seymour had his inning in the same forum of free speech on October 22, when there was a grand Democratic "rally for the Union as it was and the Constitution as it is." "Prince" John Van Buren pointed out that it was the Democratic generals like McClellan who "bowed cheerfully to the mandates of the Government," and Republican generals like Fremont who were "in antagonism to their superiors and insubordinate."

A great union meeting was held on March 16, 1863, under the auspices of the war fund committee. Men of all parties met to give their non-partisan support to the Government in its struggle with armed rebellion. Mayor Kalbfleisch presided and the speakers were John Van Buren, John T. Brady, Governor Wright of Indiana, Augustus A. Low and the Rev. Dr. Willetts. Resolutions expressing loyalty to the Union and determination to preserve it were offered, and were about to be put to a vote when Rodney S. Church arose and offered amendments criticizing in detail the administration of the war, the generals in the field, the cabinet officers and the abolitionists. The greatest excitement followed this, and his reading was interrupted constantly with cries of "Copperhead!" "Put him out!" To these his supporters responded with "Shut up, contractors!" The army contractors were under fire at the time as the greatest of all profiteers. When Church read his aspersions upon Phillips and Garrison, the audience rose as a man determined to silence him. Men shouted to drown his voice and called to each other "Louder! Louder!" to make sure he could not make himself heard. Cooler persons wanted to let him finish and vote him down. Samuel Sloan got the floor finally and proposed that "the gentleman pass his resolutions at the polls and that they now be returned to him." This motion was adopted unanimously. James T. Brady expressed the spirit of the meeting when he said: "There can be no other division at the North than between those who are loyal and those who are traitorous." The formation of the Union League was the practical outcome of the demonstration.

A Democratic meeting in favor of "Free Speech, a Free Press and a Free People" was held on June 11 of the same year. On June 24 a monster meeting was held to welcome home the First Long Island Regiment, to organize the Soldiers' Home Commission of Brooklyn and to look after the widows and orphans of soldiers. Mr. Beecher was the principal speaker. In November there was a meeting to welcome Mr. Beecher home from his foreign trip, famous for his power of winning British sentiment over to the North. Dr. Storrs made the address welcoming him "from a private trip, transformed, not by his own desire, into a real international embassy of peace and good will." There was another huge meeting about the same time to stimulate recruiting the quota of men called for, and avoid a draft in Brooklyn. That winter Anna Dickinson made her first appearance in Brooklyn as a public speaker. With characteristic pertness she begged pardon for mentioning James Buchanan in respectable society. She referred to McClellan as "the general who shall be nameless here tonight and forever more."

William Jennings Bryan spoke at the Academy, not long before it was destroyed, in his own defense. In every political campaign it was used by both parties. The colors given the Thirteenth Regiment were presented on its stage. The news of victories and defeats during the Civil War brought out great public assemblages. It was a house of mourning after the death of Lincoln, and on the first day of June following that tragedy, a day of fasting and prayer, it housed a union meeting of the churches of Storrs, Beecher, Canfield, Eells, Robinson and Putnam. At the time Dr. Storrs delivered his magnificent oration on the life and character of Abraham Lincoln. Among those present were Horace Greeley, William Cullen Bryant, Generals John A. Dix and Robert Anderson, Admirals Farragut and Paulding, George Bancroft, Henry J. Raymond, Daniel S. Dickinson and Governor E. D. Morgan.

There was great applause when General Anderson entered and took his seat upon the platform. John S. T. Stranahan, who was presiding, interrupted his remarks with ready tact to call for three cheers for the hero of Fort Sumter. A month later the Fourth of July saw another vast meeting gathered to welcome home the victorious Brooklyn soldiers. Colonel Wood of the Fourteenth Regiment delivered the address as Mayor of Brooklyn, and Richard C. McCormick also spoke. None of the dramatic episodes of which the period furnished so many exceeded in enthusiasm the demonstration that followed the entry into that meeting of the 158th Veteran Regiment with the dust of travel on their uniforms and the evidence of service in their maimed forms, accompanied by a remnant of the First Long Island Regiment.

In the fall of 1865 President Johnson's "my policy" was discussed. Mr. Beecher defended him as an honest man and a pure patriot, while Garrison and Phillips called him a traitor in league with the rebels, and demanded his impeachment. In 1866 occurred what was for a time called Beecher's recantation of his Cleveland letter on reconstruction, though he always stuck to the sentiments, and simply insisted that they were more likely to prevail under Republican than under Democratic auspices. In 1868 from the Academy stage James G. Blaine made his celebrated comment on the spectacle of Seymour running about the country speech-making and "making a fool of himself at forty miles an hour," while the silent Grant remained at his modest home in Galena quietly awaiting the result. The remark returned to plague Mr. Blaine in 1884, when he was the one making speeches all over the country, while Cleveland remained at home indifferent to the Republican taunts daring him to come out and do likewise if he could.

Beecher also, a strong supporter of Grant, remarked from the Academy stage that "he would rather have Grant drunk than Seymour sober."

Not the least interesting list of liberal Republicans supporting Greeley in 1872 appears in the names of vice-presidents of the great Greeley ratification meeting held in the Academy of Music.

It was in the Academy that Beecher caused much enthusiasm and much criticism by shaking hands with Colonel Ingersoll. He said at the time:

"I come not here as a minister. I am a man and citizen. \* \* \* The gentleman who speaks to you tonight is not speaking in a conventicle or in a church. \* \* \* We greet him tonight as a man who has done valiant things for the right without variableness or shadow of turning for a full score of years. On the grounds of a pure patriotism, of a pure humanity and of a living faith in Liberty, I give him the right hand of fellowship."

The reception given for James G. Blaine in the campaign of 1884 was one of the most enthusiastic public gatherings ever witnessed in Brooklyn. Probably the city never saw so many of her public officials gathered together at one time



as were assembled in the Academy for the reception to President Arthur and Governor Grover Cleveland on May 24, 1883, on the evening of the opening of the Brooklyn Bridge.

A month later Henry Ward Beecher's seventieth birthday anniversary was celebrated, with Judge Joseph Nellson in the chair, and representatives present from all religious denominations, including Catholic and Jew.

To Martin W. Littleton, Borough President in 1904, more than to any other one man is due the vitality of the movement which ended in the successful completion of the building on Lafayette Avenue. Mr. Littleton invited representatives of the Brooklyn League, the Manufacturers' Association, and the Brooklyn Institute to meet in his office on March 14, 1904, to discuss the possibility of erecting a new Academy of Music.

It was decided at that meeting to hold a public meeting in Historical Hall on March 24, at which the project should be launched. An invitation committee was appointed, consisting of Charles A. Schieren, Henry Batterman, Carll H. DeSilver, Henry Rowland, Simeon B. Chittenden, Edwin C. Ward and Edward M. Shepard. A plan and scope committee was appointed also, consisting of Frank Bailey, Alfred T. White, Abraham Abraham, A. Augustus Healy, Robert B. Woodward, Colonel Willis L. Ogden and Alexander E. Orr.

The meeting in Historical Hall drew a large attendance and the project was taken up by the public with great enthusiasm. Frank Bailey, chairman of the Plan and Scope committee, favored the construction of a building to contain two halls, one to have a seating capacity of from 2,500 to 3,000, and the other a capacity of about 1,200. One million dollars was given as the lowest estimate of the cost of such a building. It was resolved to ask the people of Brooklyn to contribute this sum to a subscription of common stock, with the understanding that the money collected was to be refunded if a stated sum should not be subscribed.

The Plan and Scope committee recommended also that no free admissions and no special favors should be extended to the stockholders or the directors. The report was adopted unanimously, as was the suggestion that Borough President Littleton be empowered to appoint a committee of one hundred representative citizens to further the project. This was in the form of a resolution introduced by Alfred T. White, which read as follows:

"That a committee of one hundred be appointed by the chair who together with the chairman shall be a committee to organize a corporation to provide a new Academy of Music for Brooklyn in general conformity with the suggestions contained in the report of the committee on plan and scope, and with such alterations, if any, as the committee of one hundred may deem necessary or wise. That such committee have full power to appoint all necessary subcommittees, to elect their own officers and to add to their numbers."

At the meeting in Historical Hall, the speakers included Borough President Littleton, Frank Bailey, Alfred T. White, Edward M. Shepard, J. Edward Swansstrom, Thomas P. Peters, Charles A. Schieren, Henry Batterman, Elijah R. Kennedy and Hiram P. Steele.

The committee of one hundred was announced by Borough President Littleton on April 5, 1904. It elected as officers: President, Charles A. Schieren; vice-president, Martin Littleton; executive committee, Abraham Abraham, Frank Bailey, E. T. Bedford, Frank L. Babbott, Carll H. DeSilver, A. Augustus Healy, Crowell Hadden, Henry Roth, Martin Joost, Herman A. Metz, J. Adolph Mollenhauer, Wilhelmus Mynderse, Lowell M. Palmer, Clinton L. Rossiter, Timothy L. Woodruff, David A. Boody, Edwin C. Ward, Henry Batterman, Alfred T. White and Willis L. Ogden.

This creation of a new Academy of Music was followed by the dissolution of the old Academy of Music Corporation on April 4, 1904, at a meeting of the stockholders held in Historical Hall, Clinton and Joralemon Streets. The old Academy had been built with \$200,000 raised by the sale of stock. The corporation had carried no insurance since June 15, 1902, and the building was a total loss. The directors, however, were left in possession of a piece of property they had held for forty years. It fronted 205 feet on Montague Street and ran back 105 feet. The building itself had been insured for \$88,000, while \$5,000 was carried on the scenery. Rates advanced and the directors decided to drop their insurance, inasmuch as the destruction of the building would not be a loss in their opinion.

The old building was regarded as having the best acoustics of any auditorium in Greater New York. The corporation's officers and directors were: President, Alexander E. Orr; treasurer, Crowell Hadden; secretary, Edwin C. Ward. Other directors were J. J. Pierrepont, Edgar M. Cullen, George W. Chauncey, William P. Carhart, S. B. Chittenden, Bird S. Coler, Martin Joost, R. B. Woodward, and William Augustus White.

The site was sold at auction to D. and M. Chauncey, the only bidders, for \$617,000.

This was accepted by the executive committee, consisting of Chairman Charles H. DeSilver, Robert B. Woodward, Frank E. Dodge, George H. Southard, and Crowell Hadden. The stockholders were paid off. William M. Calder took charge of the premises as Superintendent of Buildings and pulled down the remaining walls.

Soon after a bill to incorporate the new Academy of Music was introduced in the Legislature at Albany. Assemblyman John McKeon and Senator Marshall were its sponsors in the Assembly and Senate. The incorporators were Martin W. Littleton, Charles A. Schieren, Frank Bailey, Alfred T. White, Abraham Abraham, Robert B. Woodward, A. Augustus Healy, Alexander E. Orr, Henry Batterman, Willis L. Ogden, Carll H. DeSilver, Simeon B. Chittenden, Edward M. Shepard, Samuel Rowland and Edwin C. Ward.

The total cost of the land and new building was fixed within \$1,200,000. Public-spirited citizens subscribed \$1,028,700. It was meant to be "of, by and for the people," and the appeal for support was addressed to every resident of the borough, asking him to do as much as his means would permit. Leslie M. Palmer bore the expense of distributing a booklet, illustrated with photogravures and half-tones, showing the attractive features of the new academy. It was signed by Lowell M. Palmer, as chairman; and Abraham Abraham, Frank L. Babbott, Henry Batterman, Martin Joost, Willis L. Ogden, Alfred T. White, Charles A. Schieren, ex-officio members of the building committee.

Although several hundred thousand dollars was pledged within a few weeks, it was decided not to choose a site until \$600,000 had been raised. The deliberations continued until January 30, 1905, when the directors announced the selection they had made. The site was on the south side of Lafayette Avenue, and embraced the block from Ashland Place to St. Felix Street, with a frontage of 276 feet on the avenue, and 215 feet on each of the side streets. The land cost \$235,950 and it was bought free and clear.

Ten of the foremost architects were invited to submit plans for a building, and they were ready by June 24. A committee of experts, including Warren P. Laird, professor of architecture in the University of Pennsylvania, who had been chosen professional advisor of the building committee; William M. Mead



and John M. Carrere recommended the design of Herts & Tallant, of New York, and it was adopted unanimously. The work of drawing the working plans went forward. At the time, \$300,000 was needed to complete the capital stock, which was pushed with vigor.

Herts & Tallant were the architects of the New Amsterdam, the Lyceum and Liberty theaters in New York. They also won the competition for the Bates college library, Smith College Chemical Laboratory and designed a number of important public buildings.

Their plans called for an auditorium of the same seating capacity as the Metropolitan Opera House, the concert hall to seat 1,500 and the ball room to be 40 by 175 feet. They provided for a large lecture hall and class rooms, to be used by the Brooklyn Academy of Arts and Sciences, so that the building was intended to represent the first great stride in America toward an Academy of Music organized on the lines of the National Conservatory of Dramatic Art and Music in Paris.

The new Academy, like all great monumental structures, is characterized by extreme simplicity in its general arrangement. There are three main divisions—on the right the opera house, on the left the concert hall, on the front and extending the entire length of the block the immense public lobby, which gives access to all parts of the building. Above the lobby on the first balcony level is the ball room, with an area of 5,000 square feet, forty feet high, thus serving as a foyer for the two auditoriums. Five elevators in the centre of the building connect with the ball room and with every gallery of the opera house and concert hall.

The staircases are arranged with equal care. Each of those leading to the upper balconies contains two interlocking flights, which, like the famous staircase of the Chateau of Chambord, intertwine, but never meet. By a similar arrangement of the fire escapes, persons escaping from the upper balconies are kept away from those below. The carriage service of the opera house likewise is apart from that of the concert hall. A marquee large enough to shelter the entire audience of the opera house is carried along the side of the building in Ashland Place. A corresponding marquee is provided for the concert hall in St. Felix Street.

The two auditoriums are separated by a wide court and heavy fire-proof walls, so that they have no connection whatever with each other. Back of them are the stages, dressing rooms and appurtenances. The smallest details of the actor's comfort were studied and everywhere the most ample facilities were provided without the waste of any space. The main entrances were placed directly in the centre, perpendicular to Lafayette Avenue. The theater auditorium contains the orchestra and three balconies, the orchestra seating 971 persons and the balconies 2,030, a total of 3,000. To the right and left of the main entrances to the auditorium are wide monumental staircases serving the balconies and gallery and leading to the smoking rooms, which overlook the main promenade.

The concert hall auditorium followed that of Carnegie Hall in its size and general arrangement. The large pipe organ is in the rear of the stage.

The architecture follows the style of the Italian Renaissance, suggesting somewhat the library of St. Mark's in Venice, albeit larger; but with the simple dignity of the best Italian architecture.

The plan of the concert hall is identical with that of the theater in its general layout. It contains 862 seats in the orchestra and 639 seats in the balcony, or 1,500 in all. Above the concert hall and similar in scheme is the lecture

hall of the Institute of Arts and Sciences, and above this are the class rooms, executive offices and rehearsal rooms. On the Lafayette Avenue side, masked by a balustrade are 200 feet of studios, with a north light used by the Institute.

The Academy stage is a steel cage about 150 feet high with a floor area of 4,500 square feet. It was equipped with all the mechanical devices necessary in the production of the most elaborate scenic effects, including an electrically controlled and moveable stage. The moveable stage consists of a platform about fifty feet wide by thirty feet deep. It is divided into six separate transverse strips, about fifty feet wide and fifty feet long. Each of these panels can be raised or lowered or inclined in either direction. Each end of each bridge is operated by an independent electrical motor, permitting it to be shifted quickly from one position to another. Special electrical appliances for raising and lowering the scenery also were provided. The fire-proof curtain is electrical hydraulic, and consists of a steel frame covered with fire proof material, sliding in steel guides properly protected by steel sleeves.

The heating and ventilating and the sanitary arrangements were the most modern known. Powerful blower fans were placed in the basement to drive air into the auditoriums, foyers and ball rooms. The most modern stand-pipe sprinkler system was introduced, supplied by pumps and large suction pressure tanks beneath the auditorium. The stage is equipped with a system of perforated piping so arranged that by the operation of a single valve at any of a number of points on the stage floor or fly galleries the entire stage can be flooded.

The cornerstone was laid on May 25, 1907, in the presence of 1,000 persons. The Rev. Dr. L. Mason Clarke offered the opening prayer after which Charles A. Schieren, formerly mayor, delivered an address, as president of the board of directors. "America" was sung and Martin W. Littleton spoke. After singing "My Maryland" Dr. St. Clair McKelway, editor of the "Brooklyn Eagle," delivered an address. Bird S. Coler, who had succeeded Mr. Littleton as Borough President, thereupon slipped the cornerstone into place and declared it truly laid, with the assistance of the other directors.

The audience was dismissed with a benediction by the Rev. E. W. McCarty.

The building proceeded rapidly. The general contract for construction was awarded to John Thatcher & Son of Brooklyn, and the work was given out to subcontractors. Practically the only change that had occurred in the board of directors from the beginning of the enterprise up to that time were those made necessary by the change of Borough Presidents and the deaths of Wilhelmus Mynderse and James Olyphant.

The organ built by the Austin Organ Company for the Music Hall at the Jamestown Exhibition was presented to the Academy by John W. Frothingham and Miss Elizabeth Frothingham as a memorial to their father, Benjamin Thompson Frothingham, for many years a director of the old Academy of Music and an active officer in the Brooklyn Philharmonic Society. The organ was the last thing necessary to make the new Academy of Music complete artistically. It received its first test in its new home at the hands of Arthur Depew on August 6, 1908. It was regarded as one of the finest and most elaborate instruments of its kind in the world.

The formal opening of the Academy occurred on September 16, 1908, and the event was celebrated by hundreds of citizens. The Twenty-third regiment band gave a concert in the opera house proper, while an organ recital filled the Music Hall. It was played upon the Frothingham Memorial organ by Huntington Woodman.



The Board of Directors welcomed visitors to the building. Many of them represented the more than 1,500 stockholders. The first selection played by the band was "The Star Spangled Banner" and "America" was the finale. Mr. Woodman played a programme of classic music upon the great organ.

The first public meeting was held on Saturday evening September 26, 1908, and the main auditorium was crowded to the doors to hear Governor Charles E. Hughes deliver a campaign speech.

The next event was the concert with Mme. Schumann-Heink as the artist. It was the really formal opening of the Academy for musical purposes and it took place on the evening of October 1, 1908. An audience of about 2,600 persons Packed the auditorium.

This was followed by the oratorio given by the Brooklyn Oratorio Society on the evening of October 8, 1908. "Creation" was sung admirably before another large audience.

The first dramatic production on the new stage occurred October 17, 1908, when the German Theater Company of New York presented as its first performance in a season of German drama to be given in the Academy "The Devil" by Molnar.

David Belasco gave the first dramatic production in English throughout the week of October 19, 1908, presenting "The Warrens of Virginia" a Civil War play with a cast including Frank Keenan and Charlotte Walker.

The first orchestral concert was that of the Philadelphia Symphony Orchestra under the direction of Carl Pohlig. Emil Sauer was pianist and the date the afternoon of October 20, 1908.

The first ball in the new Academy was held the night of Thursday, November 5, 1908. From 8:30 until an hour had passed the guests assembled on the improvised ball room floor. The reception committee comprised the men and women most prominent in Brooklyn socially. The gathering scattered through the boxes and galleries and it was regaled with three costume dances in which the most widely known young men and women took part.

Brooklyn's Yale alumni furnished a corps to give glees before and between the costume dances. A clever young woman gave a curious Polish dance unattended.

When the ball began men in evening clothes and girls in evening dress danced indiscriminately with Dutch peasant maids, the damsels of the Yale Swing dance in black silk, the Colonial dames in powdered wigs and summer men in white flannels, blue coats and soft, white hats, courtly youth of the old French nobility and Dutch boys in noisy sabots. The costumes of the day massed in black made a striking background.

Officially called the Subscription Ball of the Diamond Festival of the Brooklyn Orphan Asylum it was the opening event of four big days to commemorate the seventy-fifth anniversary of the founding of that institution.

The Heights supplied the executive committee which comprised: James F. Pierce, chairman; W. Sterling Peters, A. Victor Barnes, Clive Livingston Duval, David Stuart, Morris Upham Ely, George F. Crego, Howard W. Maxwell, Herbert Lee Pratt, Frank H. Simmons, E. Hubert Litchfield, Howard J. Haslehurst, Howard Corlies, R. Stuyvesant Pierrepont, Alexander M. White.

The reception committee that welcomed the subscribers to the ballroom floor included: Mrs. A. A. Low, Mrs. Edward Hubbard Litchfield, Mrs. James L. Morgan, Mrs. Alfred T. White, Mrs. Simeon B. Chittenden, Mrs. Watson B. Dickerman, Mrs. Edwin Packard, Mrs. Frederic B. Pratt, Mrs. William Ambrose

Taylor, Mrs. Ernest Green, Mrs. Carll H. DeSilver, Mrs. Edward S. Harkness, Mrs. Herbert Lee Pratt, Mrs. William H. Nichols, Mrs. George W. Chauncey, Mrs. Henry K. Sheldon, Mrs. James L. Truslow, Mrs. Chauncey E. Low, Mrs. Teunis G. Bergen.

A. A. Low, Edward Hubbard Litchfield, James L. Morgan, Alfred T. White, Simeon B. Chittenden, Watson B. Dickerman, Edwin Packard, Frederic B. Pratt, William Ambrose Taylor, William Leslie Van Sinderen, Carll H. DeSilver, Edward S. Harkness, Herbert Lee Pratt, William H. Nichols, George W. Chauncey, Robert B. Woodward, Arthur M. Hatch, John S. Frothingham, Teunis G. Bergen.

The next night the Boston Symphony Orchestra gave its first concert for the season in the Academy and brought Max Fielder as its new conductor. Every seat was filled save a few in the boxes and Brooklyn was represented thoroughly. Ninety-seven men were in the orchestra and the audience could revel in the "Tannhaeuser" overture and its full delicacy and variety in a daring feat by Richard Strauss.

In stage capacity and in acoustics the Academy proved all that could be expected of it. Fielder as a conductor was equal to the occasion and won unstinted praise.

## CHAPTER XXVIII

### OUTSTANDING INSTITUTIONS

#### The Brooklyn Institute—Department of Education

ALMOST a hundred years ago, on July 4, 1825 Lafayette came to Brooklyn to lay the cornerstone of the Apprentices' Library building. He kissed Walt Whitman among dozens of other children; and the story of that eventful day is told in describing Walt Whitman's Brooklyn life and the impressions he received of Lafayette as a boy of five, impressions Walt never forgot in after years.

The centenary of the organization was celebrated fittingly in 1924. The Apprentices' Library was the parent of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences, a huge organization composed of four divisions or units—the Department of Education, the Brooklyn Museum, the Botanic Garden and the Children's Museum.

Each department is under the supervision of a director. Charles B. Atkins was director of the Department of Education in 1924, and his work was something akin to the direction of a great university. There are within the Department of Education some twenty-five branches. Courses are afforded in astronomy, botany, dramatic art, electricity, engineering, ethnology, geography, geology, home economics, music, pedagogy physical education philology, philosophy, photography, political science, psychology, sociology and zoology.

About 1,800 persons were enrolled in the School of Pedagogy for 1923-24, mostly teachers desiring to advance. The instructors were drawn from neighboring colleges and universities—Columbia, Princeton, the City College, New York University, Pratt Institute and local high schools.

The School of Pedagogy was organized in 1898, in response to numerous requests from Brooklyn teachers interested in the establishment of thorough and systematic courses of instruction as a means of helpfulness to them in their school work. The purposes of the school are to provide a means of culture and



professional study and to bring the work of the university, the college and of the professional schools within reach of teachers of the public and private schools. It also furnishes teachers, desirous of promotion or advanced licenses for teaching, an opportunity to prepare for such examinations as the Department of Education of the city may announce. Teachers in the public schools who desire to study for a degree while still retaining their positions have this opportunity open to them through many courses announced in the school.

Classes occupy rooms in the Academy of Music Building on Lafayette Avenue, the rooms being suitably equipped for the work of the students.

The largest part of the Department of Education, however, is that of the Associate Membership, which now numbers nearly 10,000. Any person interested in one or more branches of science or art may be elected an associate member. The cost for this membership is ridiculously small, being but \$8 annually, new members paying a \$5 registration fee.

For the associate member there is an opportunity that is without equal anywhere. There are lectures and entertainments going on every day of the week, two or three times a day, from October to May. An associate member is provided with a weekly ticket entitling the holder and frequently another person to admission to lectures covering every variety of subject. Associate members also receive reduced rates for special concerts, dramatic readings, special illustrated lectures and addresses at the Institute, open to the general public, for which a charge is made.

The platform of the Institute is a liberal one. No one, except those whose word might prove a menace to our institutions, fails to find a welcome there, and consequently Institute members have the privilege of hearing every side of almost every question if they so wish.

Few indeed are the distinguished scientists, philosophers, artists or, in fact, any widely-known personage in any field of endeavor, here or abroad, who are not heard on the Institute platform at one time or another.

The activities of the Department of Education are centered in the Academy of Music, where the complete building, including the Opera House, Music Hall, Lecture Hall and conference rooms are used daily.

Back in the summer of 1823, in "Bidy" Stephenson's tavern on lower Fulton Street, several gentlemen met for the purpose of discussing the advisability of establishing an apprentices' library. From this meeting there developed the Apprentices' Free Library Association. The following excerpt from an appeal made in September, 1823, for the library by Chairman Thomas Kirk, to his fellow citizens in the "village" of Brooklyn is very interesting:

"It is a well known fact that many apprentices are taken from that part of our population, whose situation in life is such as to prevent them from affording to their children the advantages of such an education as would be calculated to advance them in their professions, and to make them useful and respectable members of society. When they become apprentices but few opportunities are afforded them for improvement; and it too often happens that even those they may possess, of making up for the loss sustained in their early years, or of adding to the limited stock of knowledge previously acquired, are negligently improved, or too frequently disregarded.

"The period of apprenticeship is emphatically the most critical in the life of a youth. It is then that industrious and moral, or idle and vicious, habits are acquired. The alternative then is intelligence and virtue, or ignorance and vice—and the character of the future man is stamped accordingly.

"In the formation of a Library for the use of Apprentices, the Association hopes not only to lessen existing evils, but to accomplish a positive good—not only to direct the minds of Apprentices from idle pursuits, but to confirm in their minds the valuable instructions they may have received in childhood—to cultivate a taste for reading and the acquisition of knowledge, and generally to promote those studies which would tend to enlarge their minds, improve their morals and make them eminent in their several stations and professions."





MAIN ENTRANCE  
The Church of the Nativity of Our Blessed Lord





It was upon these ideals that the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences was founded, and it is to the credit of those who carry on its work so ably now that they have never yet lost sight of these objects.

On November 20, 1824, nearly one hundred years ago, the Brooklyn Apprentices' Library Association was incorporated in the Legislature. On July 4, 1825, General Lafayette laid the cornerstone of its building at Cranberry and Henry Streets.

In order to broaden the scope of the association, an amended charter was granted by the Legislature in 1843 and the name therein changed to that of the Brooklyn Institute. For many years thereafter, the Institute was a most important factor in the social, literary, scientific and educational life of Brooklyn. Its library had a good circulation; its public hall was the scene of many historic and social gatherings, and from its platform were heard such eminent scientific men as Agassiz, Dana, Gray, Henry, Morse, Mitchel, Torrey, Guyot and Cooke; such learned divines as Doctors McCosh, Hitchcock, Storrs and Buddington, and such defenders of the liberties of the people as Phillips, Sumner, Garrison, Emerson, Everett, Curtis, King, Bellows, Chapin and Beecher.

During the year 1887-88 a new era in the history of the Institute was inaugurated. The Board of Trustees determined to make the property of the Institute the nucleus of a broad and comprehensive institution for the advancement of science and art and its membership a large and active association, laboring not only for the advancement of knowledge, but also for the education of the people through the lectures and collections in the arts and sciences. Chicago had its Field Museum; Boston its Lowell Institute, A Society for Natural History; Art and Museum; Philadelphia its Franklin Institute, an Academy of Sciences and Gallery of Fine Arts; New York City had the Metropolitan Museum and the American Museum of Natural History. It was felt that Brooklyn should have an Institute of Arts and Sciences in keeping with her tradition, her culture and her people. The organization was effected in the form in which it still exists with its scheme for a large association of members and an increased endowment fund.

**The Church of the Nativity** faces on Madison and Classon Avenues. The Reverend John L. Belford is the Rector of the Parish. Under his direction, this great Church was built and—it is interesting to note—entirely paid for by the Parish.

It is a basilica type: a nave with an apsidal end in which is the main altar; two side aisles terminating with minor apses or large niches in which are the side altars; aisle and clerestory walls; pitched roofs. The idea of a cruciform plan is suggested by the full height clerestory walls carried up in that part of the nave between the apse and the arch interrupting and spanning the nave at the line of the termination of the aisle walls. The nave is expressed by the pedimented main façade embellished only by a small wheel window above the loggia which extends across this front. The opposite end wall which receives the apse and the full height clerestory walls are also pedimented. The three monumental doorways in the loggia provide entrances to the nave and two aisles. The design is evidently inspired by the Early Italian Christian architecture.

Overall dimensions of the Church are: width, 89 feet; length, 195 feet; height, 70 feet. It seats fourteen hundred people and has room for twenty-five hundred.

The exterior is faced throughout with shades of long, red, tapestry brick laid with wide, flush joints in the natural mortar. All walls are panelled and, at their tops, corbelled out in various designs; the corbellings support the gutters,



forming cornices to the walls. Stone occurs in the water table and in the loggia, the wheel windows and some few panels. The roofs are red, Roman tile and the metal work throughout is copper. The aisle and clerestory windows have semi-circular heads and the other windows are circular. The two large circular windows, very rich in design with cusped circumferences, occur in the full height clerestory wall. The middle arch with a fronton over it, of the loggia arcade dominates. The arches are carried on polished green granite columns with exquisitely carved capitals of light pink marble, except that the end arches are carried on brick piers. The church wall of the loggia is panelled in a diagonal brick design, between polished green granite pilasters and brick piers corresponding to the arcade. In the panels occur the three entrance doorways. The ceiling is a cement barrel vault, and the wall panels of the cross barrel vault from the arched openings, are of stone.

The interior is characterized by the golden glow of light that fills the space, augmented by the brilliancy of a galaxy of colors thrown from the wheel windows in the nave walls through which the beautiful and monumental marble altar and ciborium stand out clearly against the decorated walls and ceilings of the apse. The severe simplicity of the nave and aisles, the restraint in decoration and the use of materials are first interrupted by the magnificent arch across the nave, covered with mural paintings and resting on two fluted and polished columns of golden veined marble. Granite columns with richly carved capitals and imposts carry the stone arches and walls supporting the clerestory, the walls of which are of golden brick and the windows are filled with circles of lead and colored glass rondels. A very rich entablature crowns the nave walls and receives the flat, highly ornamented, coffered ceilings. The facing of the aisle wall arcades (corresponding to those of the nave) is of golden brick, laid in patterns between the pilasters. The aisles are barrel vaulted. The heavily leaded designs of the small windows and the carved, dark oak confessionals noticeably add interest to the wall treatment. Filling the wall panels formed by the cross vaults, are the Stations of the Cross modelled by the well-known sculptor, Philip Martini.

This article only directs attention to the most interesting Church. The design was entirely done by the architect even of the mural paintings and glass windows. To attempt to describe the church more in detail, the altars, the Florentine mosaics of the floors, the glass and paintings would necessarily lead to a very long article. We therefore prefer, through the courtesy of the architect, Mr. Raymond F. Almirall, to supplement the description with the accompanying photographs.

### The Brooklyn Museum

The Brooklyn Museum is the second unit in the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences. It stands on Eastern Parkway, the highest point in the borough. Professor Franklin W. Hooper, organizer of the institute on its latest basis, was its original and most active promoter. His idea for the museum was confined to such departments of knowledge as can be illustrated and aided by exhibits, but within those limits it originally included and still includes art, ethnology and natural history. It is, therefore, a general museum, but at the same time its method of presentation is different from other museums. It is the only museum in New York City which has great loan exhibits, and many of these which have been presented in the last few years have been remarkable for their originality and the fact that they were first exhibited in the city in the Brooklyn Museum.

As a result notable collections of contemporary art have been brought here





SIDE ENTRANCE  
The Church of the Nativity of Our Blessed Lord





from overseas, notably from France, Spain, Russia, Sweden and from other countries. This was due primarily to the efforts of William Henry Fox, who has brought the museum into closer relationship with schools, through classes for teachers, lectures and a complete library.

The museum derives its support from methods akin to those followed in New York City by the Metropolitan Museum of Art and the American Museum of Natural History. The trustees control the appointment of all officials and employees as an independent corporation. Exhibits are bought with funds contributed by the trustees, or obtained from the members or private subscriptions. The city contributes the cost and upkeep of the ground and building, and the pay roll of the employees and officers, as well as the running expenses of administration and supplies. The result is that the Manhattan Museum and the Brooklyn Museum are both open to the public free four days in each week and half a day on Sunday.

On two days in the week a small admission fee is charged. This limits the admission on those days, but makes it more convenient to clean the building and make new installations. It also gives the supporting members the privilege of free admission on public pay days. All these institutions obtain a part of their funds for the purchase of collections and exhibits from the contributions of annual or life members. An annual membership costs \$10 a year and a life membership \$500. A sustaining membership costs \$25 a year and includes all the privileges enjoyed by the annual members of the educational department and the botanic garden as well as those of the museum.

With the support and co-operation of liberal Brooklyn folk Professor Hooper's plan for the erection of a museum building was made soon after he had accomplished his successful development of the educational and lecture system of the institute. The construction of the first section of the building was accomplished in 1897. This was a building of three stories (besides a basement floor) 193 feet long, with an average width of 55 feet, and its walls rise 95 feet above the ground. Two additions have been subsequently made. A fourth section is now under construction, and when this is completed the area covered by the building will be about one-sixth of the total plan. The original plan was so arranged as to allow for these additions which are hoped for in the future, and which when made will be paid for by the city.

The Brooklyn Museum comprises four departments—fine arts, ethnology, natural history and the library—headed by a director or curator. The fine arts department includes 83 water colors by John Sargent, 345 water colors depicting the life of Christ by Tissot, some of the finest old masters (the gift of A. Augustus Healy), a remarkable group of Saint Gaudens bronzes and many notable collections comprising statuary, architectural art, etchings, Egyptology, etc. The museum is rich in the art of the Far East, having among its collections the Avery collection of Chinese cloisonne, the finest both in size and character in the world.

The department of natural history has remarkable exhibits in the field of invertebrate zoology, conchology and entomology. It has a fine collection of sponges and corals and splendid groups in the fields of zoology and ornithology are being developed.

The library is well equipped with books and periodicals relating to the subjects to which the museum is devoted and, besides, it has a fine circulation collection of slides and other material suitable for the use of teachers in the schools.

One thinks of a museum usually as merely a repository of rare collections and priceless relics. That a museum can be a very vital factor in the commercial



life of a community is not generally understood, but probably the most interesting thing, to business men especially, about the Brooklyn Museum is its department of ethnology. The very "aliveness" and progressiveness of this department is due to its director, Stewart Culin.

The department of ethnology has much unusual material representing Japanese ceramics, lacquers and costumes and an exceptionally fine East Indian collection. A wealth of new material has been added from the Balkan States, and the work of the Indians of the Southwest is well represented, as is that from the islands of the Pacific.

Probably the first man to discover how valuable a museum might be in the development of industrial art was W. D. C. Crawford, research editor of "Woman's Wear," a well-known authority on textiles and cottons. It was about 1915 when Mr. Crawford, realizing that the American textile industry was over-machined and under-designed, set about finding a way to remedy this. The war was on in Europe, and the great ateliers and studios abroad were inaccessible. He knew that the big museums here contained priceless collections which would afford all that Europe had to offer, if not more. But were they flexible enough to work with? Would he be allowed to work from a manufacturers' viewpoint and not a museum curator's? He tried the Manhattan museums, but, while they were of some assistance, it was only when he got in touch with Mr. Culin at the Brooklyn Museum that he found his dream come true. Mr. Crawford described his experience as follows:

"I regard the Brooklyn Institute Museum as the very hope and soul of the American textile industry, and I make this statement guardedly and after years of observation and experience with this institution.

"I have worked with Stewart Culin for a number of years as an intermediary between the Museum and the needle and textile industries of this country. I can trace many of the most successful styles to this constant and splendid influence. During this period I have made many requests for the use of material that I do not believe there is a museum in the world that would have granted, although the American Museum of Natural History has been very generous and helpful in the work.

"I know of many very important organizations in the textile and apparel industries who have made equally unusual requests and many great retail stores all over America who look to the Brooklyn Museum for that enrichment of ideas which is the basis of sustained and healthy commerce.

"It has been my privilege to compare the work of this museum with the work of museums not only in America but in Europe, and in the point of usefulness and willingness to serve there is no comparison. The Brooklyn Museum is in a class by itself.

"Mr. Culin has been guided in his collections for the last few years almost solely by the relationship of the material gathered to the industrial development of this city. He is one of the few men that I know that I regard as indispensable."

One of the first things which Mr. Culin did, in adding to the new activities of his department, and he appreciated the necessity for this, was to set aside a room where designers might come and study his collection at their leisure and with utmost privacy assured. This privacy is the most essential thing. Only those who are actually creators—people of imagination who are able to put over new things—are encouraged to take advantage of this splendid thing, and as a result some very interesting materials and costumes have come into being at the Brooklyn Museum.

In this connection, Mr. Culin has arranged special exhibits to encourage originality. One of these, held last year, was a remarkable collection of Primitive Negro Art. This exhibit became world-famous and Mr. Culin took part of it to Paris last summer. As a result of this exhibit there were created the following:

By David Aaron Co., Inc., Manhattan, embroidered fabrics inspired by

native Congo textiles. By Blanck & Co., Inc., Manhattan, Congo cloth, inspired by native Congo textiles. By Bonwit Teller & Co., Manhattan, sport costumes made of Congo cloth. By the Knox Hat Company, Brooklyn, women's hats made of Congo cloth. By the Esmond Mills, Esmond, R. I., Congo blankets inspired by Congo textiles; and many other things.

Mr. Culin is ever on the alert to aid industry—and I hope to tell in a subsequent article what he has done in the way of circulating exhibits at retail stores all over the United States, thus greatly advertising the Brooklyn Museum. How he has worked in close relation with the department of domestic science at Pratt Institute is still another story.

At the moment of writing, Mr. Culin has assembled, in the Chinese Hall, a truly remarkable collection of unpublished original designs and sketches illustrating toys from all over the world. A toy manufacturer in Brooklyn, were he alert enough, will find a wealth of unusual material and the aid of a man of the rarest ability and geniality to draw upon if he will take advantage of this opportunity.

Space, unfortunately, does not permit me to say all there is about this extraordinary department in our Museum. Mr. Culin has, however, extended the most cordial invitation to the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce members to visit the Museum in a body—and, some day I hope his invitation will be accepted.

### Brooklyn Botanic Garden

The Alfred T. White memorial bronze tablet was unveiled at the Brooklyn Botanic Garden on June 7, 1924. The tablet was designed by Daniel Chester French, who designed the statue of Lincoln for the Lincoln Memorial in Washington, while the stone mounting and seat of this memorial were designed by Henry Bacon, the architect of the Lincoln Memorial.

Mr. White may well be called the father of the Botanic Garden. He gave generously of his time and money to this project.

The thirteenth annual report of the director of the garden, Dr. C. Stuart Gager, issued in 1924, disclosed a vigorous institution doing a work of the highest civic value in Brooklyn. The objects of the Botanic Garden are public education and scientific investigation based upon plant life.

The Garden serves the local community most directly through its educational activities. These fall naturally into two groups—work for adults and work for children. The latter also falls into two groups—co-operation with local schools and independent work with children outside of school hours.

The report showed an attendance of adults and children at all classes and lectures of almost 100,000 during 1923. Of this attendance over 53,000 came in classes accompanied by their teachers from the schools—public, parochial and other private schools.

Brooklyn schools have come to depend upon the co-operation of the Garden to such an extent that it would be difficult to imagine just how some of their work could be carried on to advantage if this co-operation were withdrawn. During 1923, forty-six per cent of the schools sent classes to the Garden. Many schools are too far away to make this practicable, though classes could come from more distant schools if the Garden had a large automobile bus for their transportation.

Over ninety per cent of the elementary schools and one hundred per cent of the high schools made regular use of the educational advantages offered by the Garden in 1923.

The Garden supplied 1,800 teachers with study material during 1923 and placed 5,000 potted plants in the school rooms of the borough. Every school



class coming to the Garden for a lecture, lesson or demonstration took back a potted plant for its school room.

Gardening by children was stimulated and encouraged by the Botanic Garden's distribution of packets of seeds for planting in school and home gardens. In 1924 over 204,000 packets were distributed.

The Garden's bureau of information received and answered over four hundred requests for information about plant life—including numerous requests from business houses often involving large financial decisions. Recently a firm of brokers in Wall Street sought information from the Garden as to the possibility of growing, with chances of commercial success, a certain plant crop in the Eastern States. On the information thus obtained was based, in part, a decision as to whether several hundred thousand dollars should be advanced to initiate this business.

This Brooklyn institution publishes three scientific journals that circulate throughout the civilized world, and by these journals and other activities, including an international seed exchange, the Brooklyn Botanic Garden has probably done more than any other Brooklyn institution to put Brooklyn on the educational and scientific map of the world.

The Garden library is open free to the public daily (except Sunday). Here may be found over 10,000 books and 7,000 pamphlets on every phase of plant life. The library receives over eight hundred current periodical publications on plant life.

The plantations and grounds are fast becoming the most beautiful spot in Brooklyn, the Japanese Garden and Rock Garden being known throughout the country and widely and favorably in most foreign countries.

Scores of thousands of bulbs come into bloom every spring from the middle of April to the middle of May, including daffodils, narcissus, tulips, crocus, winter aconite, squills, grape hyacinths and others.

The two main purposes of the Brooklyn Botanic Garden are public education and scientific research in botanical science. A gift of private funds made it possible to extend and enrich the scientific work, and the annual report summarizes the results obtained each year. An intensive study is being made of the vegetation of Long Island, and it is anticipated that some of the results of this study will help solve the problem of the utilization of the salt marsh lands for agriculture.

Other research is along the lines of plant breeding and disease resistance in plants, and results are being obtained of the highest scientific and economic importance. The 1923 report points out the importance to New York City of studies in the diseases of trees, since the city has not only several thousand acres of park land, and over fifty miles of shaded parkways, but also over 15,000 acres of watershed planted and being planted to trees. This city has much more than a million trees to keep healthy. More than one million pines, not to mention other species, have been planted on the Ashokan watershed. The destructive chestnut bark disease, which has killed practically every chestnut tree in the eastern United States, started in a New York City park, and killed over 17,000 chestnut trees in Brooklyn alone. The five-leaved pine trees on the city's watershed are in danger from the pine tree blister rust. Such facts emphasize the importance to a city like Greater New York of a better understanding of the nature and control of plant diseases.

The garden is dependent upon private funds for all the plants grown out of





BROOKLYN INSTITUTE OF ARTS AND SCIENCES, EASTERN PARKWAY





doors and in the conservatories, for the books and periodicals in its library, for **much** of its educational work, and for most of its highly important scientific work.

### Children's Museum

William Henry Goodyear is responsible for the Children's Museum in Bedford Park. This branch of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences was opened early in 1899, in a building assigned by the city for its use. Long since that time the Children's Museum has outgrown its quarters and requires a larger place for its activities and its development. In 1924, the Smith property adjacent on St. Mark's Avenue was acquired by the city and the building remodelled as an extension of the museum.

The success of the Children's Museum has been due to its exceptional organization, its ideals and its name. There are excellent small natural history collections, many models for instruction in natural history, and other models and pictures relating to geography, racial costume and the Colonial history of the United States. The subjects of mechanics and physics are also included in the exhibits. As an instance of the activity in this field may be mentioned the interest shown by boys in wireless telegraphy installations in which a number of boys were trained who subsequently became operators.

Through the auxiliary lantern slides and films were purchased for lecture work, and summer field work and assistance for special groups were financed. This summer field work has special significance, as it reaches children who might not otherwise have an opportunity to enjoy the country. Picnics are being organized continually, and children are taken and shown the interesting natural features of the country and are taught many things along with their good times.

An Americanization Committee was formed and under this committee a field secretary has been put to work in the community. Over 900 foreign students have been given special lessons in the museum, revealing the meaning of America's institutions and making history living and vital. Boy Scouts, Girl Scouts and Woodcraft Tribes have been given special instruction. This extension work has carried the Children's Museum into remote parts of Brooklyn.

Interest in the Museum has led its friends and club representatives in the Auxiliary to make many valuable gifts and additions to the collections. These range from equipment for Museum hospitality, an American flag and model groups, to a much-appreciated motor car. The Woman's Auxiliary has financed the Franklin W. Hooper Traveling Loan Collection of natural history material now in preparation. In this community Franklin W. Hooper gave himself to the cause of education, building up the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences in all its branches, and it seemed fitting to place this testimonial in the Children's Museum which he helped to establish. An initial sum of \$10,000 was raised and a number of loan cases were begun last summer. Nine cases are now ready for circulation. They will carry the message and inspiration of the Museum into schools and centers remote from Bedford Park.

While the Children's Museum and its staff is maintained by the city it depends upon private contributions for its collections and field work. The funds are gathered through a very forceful and busy group of women known as the Woman's Auxiliary, of which Mrs. I. Sherwood Coffin is president. The Woman's Auxiliary was organized in 1916 with a handful of women and today its membership roll includes 1,500 women. From this small beginning radiated an influence that spread rapidly with an instant contagion throughout the Borough of



Brooklyn. Women rallied to the call for service to the children of Brooklyn, as the infinite possibilities of the many-sided work of the Children's Museum fired their imagination.

The attendance has always been large and the interest shown by the public, by school teachers and by children has been of a most active character. The attendance at the museum last year was 173,000, or an average of 14,800 monthly. Teachers with their pupils come from all over the greater city, New Jersey and often from remote points on Long Island. Some teachers come with their classes and spend the day at the museum. In such a case the pupils bring their lunch-boxes and the museum, at a very nominal cost, serves them with hot cocoa.

Lectures are given on all sorts of subjects of interest to children. There is an excellent library containing one of the best and most complete nature libraries in the country.

When the institution has more space it is designed to include a department of music and a department of art instruction suited to the capacity and attainments of children.

The idea was due to William Henry Goodyear, who collected and gave the first exhibits under the direction of the trustees of the Brooklyn Institute. The Woman's Auxiliary is responsible for the extension, and Miss Anna M. Gallup, the curator, through her inspiration and enthusiasm has built up an institution which by its originality and practicability has been copied all over the world.

The Children's Museum was the original and parent institution of its kind and as such attracts visitors from points as remote as Japan, Formosa and India, England, South America and all parts of the United States.

**The Brooklyn Public Library** was authorized by an Act approved May 3, 1892, and amended by the laws of 1897; established by resolution of the Brooklyn Common Council, November 30, 1896; and opened in December, 1897. It was consolidated with the Brooklyn Library under the Act of Legislature approved April 15, 1902, and amended in 1903.

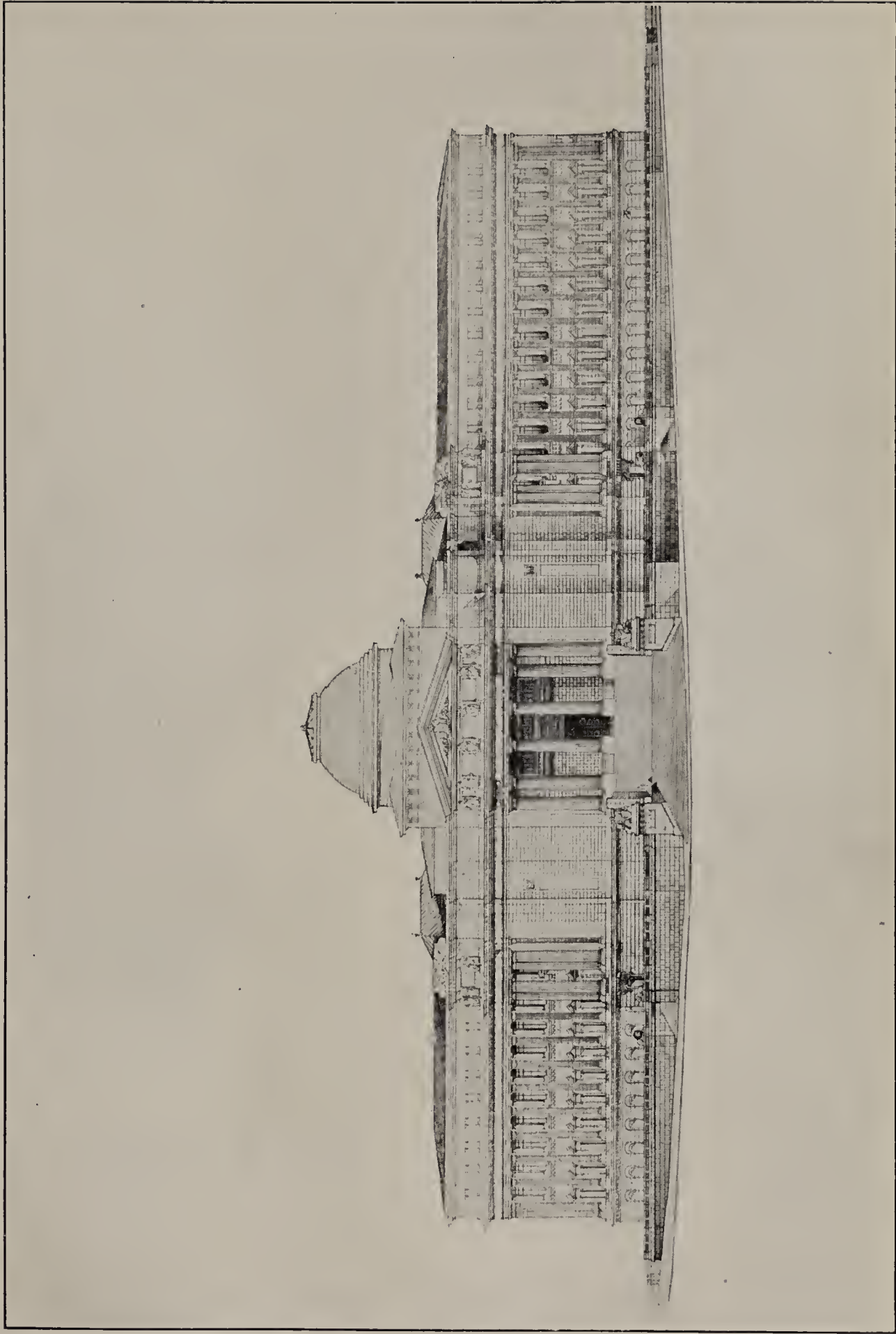
Dr. David A. Boody\* is the only president who has ever directed the policies of the trustees. President Boody resigned from Congress to become Mayor of Brooklyn from 1892 to 1893. His career has been a long one of self-sacrificing devotion to the welfare of Brooklyn, the city and the borough, and many activities have claimed his attention, but none so completely and continuously as the library. Perhaps it is not too much to say that his ambition has been to see the valuable book collections safely housed in the central library building and to realize for Brooklyn advantages and privileges enjoyed by her neighbors which are hers by right.

With President Boody, Dr. Frank P. Hill has served as Chief Librarian since 1901. He has seen the library grow: in city appropriation from \$99,900 to \$709,678; in income from other sources from \$5,093 to \$87,909; in employees from one hundred and five to four hundred and one; in volumes in the library from 144,954 to 966,051; in circulation of books for home use, from 944,128 to 6,072,707. Mrs. Mary E. Craigie was librarian from 1897 to 1899, and Dr. Arthur E. Bostwick served in that capacity from 1899 to 1901.

The present members of the Board of Trustees are: Hon. David A. Boody, president; Messrs. Eugene C. Alder, R. Ross Appleton, Fred W. Atkinson, Frank L. Babbott, R. R. Bowker, Roscoe C. E. Brown, Joseph P. Carlin, John J.

---

\* Portrait by Louis Betts in Brooklyn Museum of Arts and Sciences.



PLAZA ELEVATION OF THE CENTRAL LIBRARY BUILDING, BROOKLYN





Cashman, John Dowd, William H. English, Theodore L. Frothingham, William H. Good, Paul Grout, Darwin R. James, Jr., Nathaniel H. Levi, Frank Lyman, Hon. Harrington Putnam, Francis J. Sullivan, Charles A. Webber, William A. White. Mr. R. Ross Appleton has served continuously with President Boody from the establishment of the library.

In 1901, Mr. Andrew Carnegie gave to the city the sum of \$5,200,000 for the erection of branch library buildings. Of this sum, \$1,600,000 was appropriated for the use of the Brooklyn Public Library system, and the administration of this latter sum was given by Mr. Carnegie to four individuals who were then the officers of the Brooklyn Public Library. The city was given authority by the Legislature to accept Mr. Carnegie's gifts, to purchase sites, and to enter into contracts for the construction and maintenance of eight branch libraries. The agreement between the Carnegie trustees and the city provided that "the Brooklyn Public Library or its successor shall exercise direction and management over the affairs of the several library buildings, and the books, collections and appurtenances."

Up to the year 1901 the Brooklyn Public Library had established only seven branches, and these were all in rented quarters, and possessed altogether only a comparatively small number of books. In 1901 negotiations were begun with the Brooklyn Library with a view to making its large and valuable collection of books available for the public. The Brooklyn Library was a private corporation organized in 1859, and maintained as a subscription library. It owned, in addition to its books, a large library building with adjoining real estate in Montague Street, and a substantial endowment; the whole being then valued at upwards of \$850,000. The trustees of the Brooklyn Library were unwilling to turn their collection over to the city; but were willing, if continuance of independent control could be secured, to devote it to the public use. Accordingly, with the concurrence of the city authorities, the directors of the Brooklyn Public Library, and the trustees of the Brooklyn Library, the following plan was devised and carried out.

By Chapter 606 of the Laws of 1902 a new private corporation was incorporated under the name of the "Brooklyn Public Library," possessing the property of the old Brooklyn Library, and a Board of twenty-two trustees who receive their appointments, half by the Mayor and half by the representatives of the old Brooklyn Library. This act provided that the new corporation should be the one with which the city of New York might contract for the construction and maintenance of free libraries. The agreement was entered into June 5, 1903.

Twenty Carnegie buildings were planned and opened as follows:

<i>Branch</i>	<i>Date Opened</i>
Pacific .....	October 8, 1904
Williamburgh .....	January 28, 1905
Bedford .....	February 4, 1905
DeKalb .....	February 11, 1905
Carroll Park .....	June 3, 1905
Flatbush .....	October 7, 1905
South .....	December 9, 1905
Greenpoint .....	April 7, 1906
Prospect .....	July 30, 1906
East .....	November 7, 1906



<i>Branch</i>	<i>Date Opened</i>
Macon .....	July 15, 1907
Fort Hamilton .....	October 16, 1907
City Park .....	September 1, 1908
Saratoga .....	September 3, 1908
Leonard .....	December 1, 1908
Bushwick .....	December 16, 1908
Brownsville .....	December 19, 1908
Eastern Parkway .....	July 7, 1914
Brownsville Children's .....	September 24, 1914
Red Hook .....	April 22, 1915

and to these was added in 1921 a twenty-first, the Irving Branch, in the Ridgewood section.

The erection of Branch buildings proceeded more rapidly than did that of the central library building. Since 1901, the administration offices of the library have been quartered at 26 Brevoort Place. As long ago as 1899, Dr. Richard S. Storrs and others constituting a sub-committee of the Brooklyn Park Commissioners, recommended a triangular site on the Prospect Park Plaza for the central library building. In 1904, the president of the trustees was authorized to appoint a committee to consider a site. This committee designated the plot selected by Dr. Storrs, and after a careful study of monumental buildings in Europe, plans were prepared by R. F. Almirall, architect. Ground was broken with suitable ceremony on June 5, 1912. Work progressed until the war, when operations ceased because of lack of funds. In spite of efforts on behalf of the library trustees, of citizens singly and collectively, the Mayor and the Board of Estimate have withheld the authority to proceed, and this in spite of the authorization of the Legislature in 1922 to issue bonds sufficient to complete the building.

The library is a going concern, with a purpose of bringing together the best there is in print, and of making it available free to every citizen of the borough. It has a plant equipment representing approximately \$4,400,000; a stock of approximately 950,000 books; and over 3,000 current newspapers and periodicals. Its customers number over 350,000 registered card-holders, and its annual output in circulation of books for home use is something over 6,000,000 volumes.

Information service is the library's chief business, as it has been for the twenty-five years of its organization.

Scattered over the entire Borough, the book service is located as conveniently as possible for library users. There are practically four hundred book-distributing agencies; thirty-one branches and three stations, containing book collections from 8,000 to 40,000 volumes, providing books for home use, and reference and reading-room facilities for adults and children; ten deposit stations in stores, containing fair-sized book collections, kept fresh by new consignments each week; and three hundred and forty-seven other agencies in factories, industrial plants, schools, and institutions.

The main Reference Library is housed in the Montague Branch, 197 Montague Street, and contains an extensive collection of reference books, general encyclopedias, dictionaries, gazetteers, atlases, books on subjects of general interest, business administration and finance, advertising, science, technology, engineering, biography, history, etc.; special collections of books on the Civil War, Costume, Music, Fine Arts, Checkers and Chess; a bound file of approximately a thousand periodicals.



BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
Carroll Park Branch: Clinton and Union Streets; Erected 1905.





The Reference Department maintains a Telephone Information Service.

A system of free interchange of books among the Branches places the resources of the Library at the service of readers in all parts of Brooklyn.

The Library has a corps of workers well equipped and trained to give book-service. Many of the staff are graduates of one of the Training Classes conducted by the Brooklyn Public Library, or from Library Schools, while many have come from other libraries having a professional standard equal to this one. Several of the staff are college graduates, and others are studying constantly in university extension courses. At Branch staff meetings, and at meetings of larger groups, books are reviewed and discussed, in order that each staff-member may be prepared to help borrowers with book-selection.

Qualified assistants with special training are available at the large Branches to help boys and girls to select books, and to assist parents, teachers, and social workers by making up lists, and by giving book-talks before clubs. Story-hours are conducted at regular intervals, at which are told stories carefully chosen to suit the age and taste of the particular group of children who are to hear them. These are followed up with books containing the same or similar stories.

The Department of Library Extension maintains deposit stations. In South Brooklyn, in the newly developed sections, these are the forerunners of branches. In one case a room in a school basement is used under the direction of a librarian. The Community Center, Board of Education, and Public Library have combined in keeping the library open. In another case, a room opening into a store has been given over to the library, and the storekeeper's family take personal charge after school hours. The civic associations of a neighborhood enlisted the interest of a store-owner, who offered the use of his place and keeps the library station open there six afternoons and five evenings a week. Because of the fact that business is not carried on in his store, it is possible to make it more nearly resemble a miniature branch library in furnishings, as well as in such features as visits of school classes and a story-hour carried on by an assistant from the Library Extension Department. Traveling libraries are sent to factories and commercial establishments, and these call for a varied collection of books of the most serious character. This is more frequently obvious in cases in which the libraries are in charge of the welfare workers or personnel directors, people who are interested in encouraging reading of the more serious type.

In several of the City and County Hospitals, as well as in the City Jail, the Library maintains book deposit stations. Many a business man recuperating from an operation welcomes the bedside visits of the little library book-wagon, and uses the time to devour many books he had not found opportunity to read before. Bright pictures and magazines are available for those who do not feel sufficiently strong to hold a bound book long enough to read it carefully.

The Library for the Blind is located at the Pacific Branch, Fourth Avenue and Pacific Street. Books are available in several types. The Librarian in charge gives instruction to sightless people, visiting them in their homes and taking books to them.

Auditoriums in several of the Branches serve as centers for community activities. Here are held public lectures of the Board of Education, civic and literary meetings of various organizations. Exhibits of paintings and sculpture have been arranged by the Art Committee of the People's Institute. At one Branch a series of meetings was arranged by the Librarian for the different nationalities represented in the neighborhood, each evening's program being devoted to one nationality. Classes for the learning of English for foreign-speaking



citizens are held in several Branches under the auspices of various welfare organizations.

From what has been said it may be gathered that the Library seeks to cover the entire Borough and make available information through print to every citizen. Perhaps there is something significant in the fact that it is not housed in one great central building. One was started several years ago at Prospect Park Plaza. Brooklyn is the only large city today which does not have a great central building. Awaiting the completion of such quarters attention has been concentrated upon efforts to take the books to the people of the Borough wherever they may be, rather than to hoard them under one roof. However, the service of the Library will be greatly increased, and the book collections made more valuable to everyone when the Central Building is finished.

#### The Pratt Institute Free Library

When Brooklyn was still an independent city with its own civic consciousness and interesting individuality, Charles Pratt enhanced the city's reputation by erected within it an institution, unique in its conception and aims. Pratt Institute was opened on Ryerson Street in the autumn of 1887 as an educational demonstration, designed to give to young people of limited advantages, but earnest purpose, opportunity for adequate training for useful life and occupation.

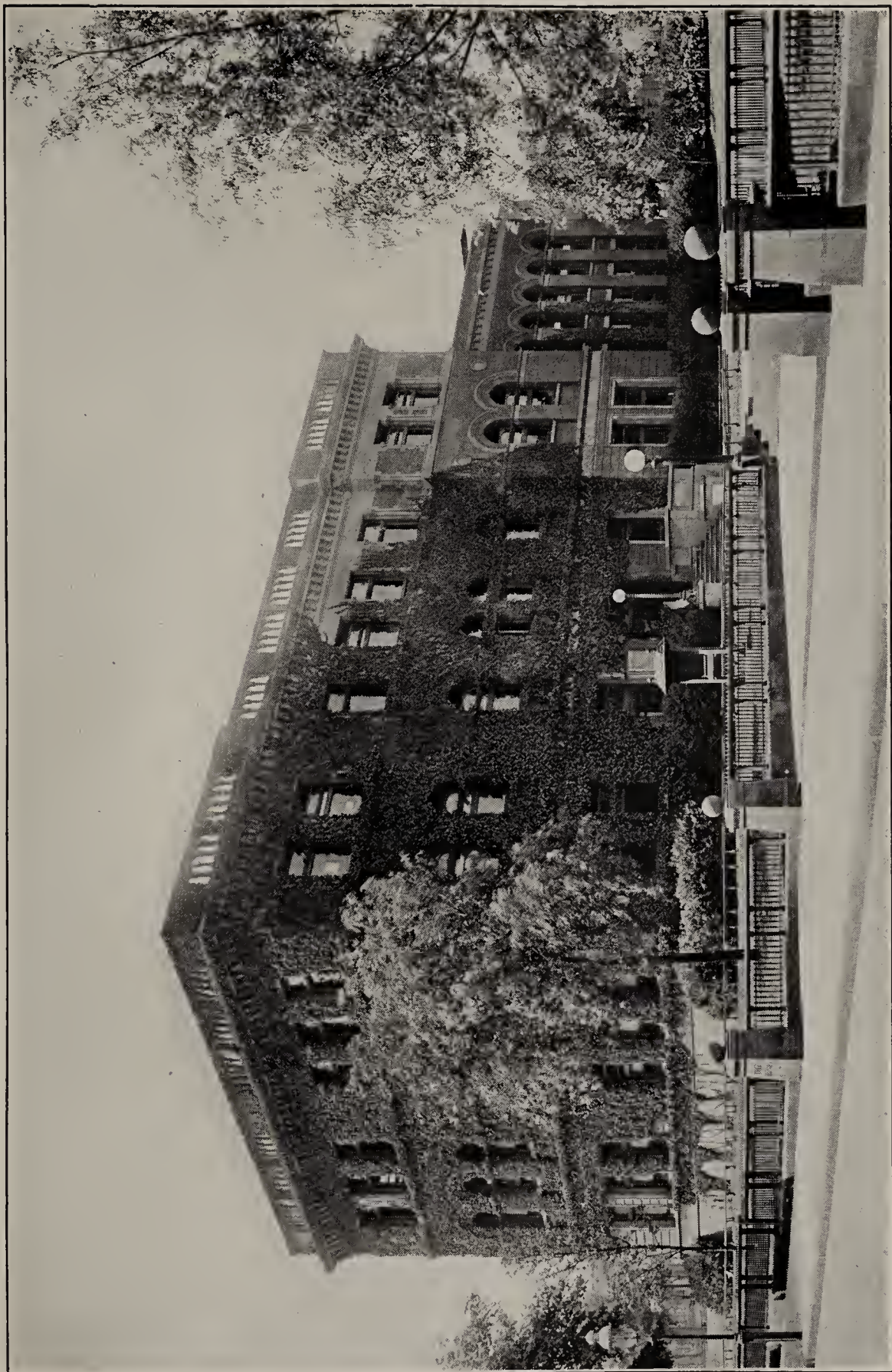
Mr. Pratt's conviction of the value of books and reading as an educational, civilizing and humanizing influence led him to enlarge his first plan for the Institute to include a free library for the people of Brooklyn, which should at the same time serve the students of the Institute in the pursuit of their studies. The Pratt Institute Free Library thus made its beginning on the first floor of the main building of the Institute, opening its doors January 4, 1888.

The immediate and eager response to this benefaction soon overwhelmed the adapted accommodations set apart for the Library, and evidenced the need of more extensive provision to meet the public demand for the free use of books. On May 26, 1896, the present library building was dedicated with ceremony, and on June 1st, the entire establishment, completely equipped for circulation and reference purposes, was placed at the disposal of the people.

The Pratt Institute Free Library at the present day continues as a public benefaction on a private foundation, serving an increased constituency with the abundant and free use of literature under the direction of a trained and unified staff. The library is thoroughly organized into a group of departments separately designed and administered. The Circulating Department issues books to borrowers with liberality as to numbers lent and freedom of selection at the open shelves. The General Reference Room and the Periodical Reference and Reading Room are similar in plan and scope to corresponding departments in municipal libraries. The Children's Room enjoys the distinction of being the first room in a free library designed exclusively for the use of children; and the Children's Porch was added in 1912 to provide a separate entrance to the room. This porch is a replica of the Norman Staircase at Canterbury, England, and was built with the interested co-operation of the diocesan architect of Canterbury Cathedral.

There are other departments at the Pratt Library that are less usual. The Art Reference Room is devoted to the fine and applied arts, and, though chiefly serving the art students of the Institute, puts its wealth of material at everyone's command. The Art Gallery, adjoining, gives free exhibitions of works of art through the Institute year, and Brooklyn art societies have the complimentary use of the gallery for periodic exhibits of their own. The library's own examples of





PRATT INSTITUTE LIBRARY





art objects represented on its walls and stairways are not inconsiderable, nor of minor importance. Paintings, bronzes, glass, textiles, prints, etc., by eminent artists and of rarity, contribute to the adornment of the library's corridors and public rooms.

The Applied Science Reference Room rounded out in 1924 twenty years of exceptional service. Here is a reading room and working library of technology frequented not only by the technical students at the Institute, but equally by specialists and industrial workers from near and far. This room is especially well equipped in the literature of electrical and mechanical engineering and of chemical technology. The annual list of technical books issued from this department makes a world-wide appeal.

The School of Library Science also is a part of the library organization. It was founded in 1890, the second school of its kind in America. The school trains for librarianship a restricted group of selected students in a one-year course of intensive study and practice.

The collection of books in the Pratt Library now numbers approximately 135,000 volumes, carefully selected with a view to the library's most effective usefulness. More than half as many again represent the large proportion of volumes outworn and discarded in the first thirty-six years of the library's strenuous life. The collection is broadly general, with proper recognition of fiction as playing a large part in the mission of books, but at the same time placing emphasis on the art, science and technology with which Pratt Institute is identified as an industrial school. The library publishes an annotated Quarterly Booklist of new acquisitions with a timely bibliography in each number, which is sent gratis to all libraries requesting it. This list also finds its way around the world.

In recent years the environment of the Pratt Institute Free Library has been greatly enriched and beautified. To the south the library grounds have been extended to De Kalb Avenue, forming a spacious park to which the public is admitted. This park has been landscaped appropriately, and its planting has been studied with reference to the trees and shrubs which best survive under city conditions. The central figure of the park is an eighteenth century bronze Spanish cannon from Morro Castle, Havana, purchased by the trustees at the end of the Spanish-American War. This cannon is itself a work of art, and has an interesting history.

To the north of the library the green sweeps in wide extent where greater freedom is allowed for resort and for play than in the more formal park. This area awaits further development in the continuation of the park fence, and the realization of a long-projected stately entrance as a central element of formality and dignity among the Institute buildings.

The Pratt Institute Free Library with its environment is the fruit of a progressive effort to afford to the people of Brooklyn opportunity for study, education and diversion without cost or restriction. To take advantage of its privileges involves the minimum of formality and restraint. The original purpose of its founder, enlarged and developed by those in whose care he left its consummation, has been vindicated in the library's increasing field of usefulness. It has justified the wisdom of its design and remains a memorial to one of Brooklyn's foremost citizens.

EDWARD F. STEVENS,  
*Librarian, Pratt Institute Free Library.*



## CHAPTER XXIX

### NEWSPAPERS

#### The "Eagle" in Brooklyn

THE "EAGLE" grew up with Brooklyn. Founded in 1841, it has kept steady pace with the rapid rise of this borough, soon to be the largest of all the five which make Greater New York. And in the adolescence of Brooklyn the "Eagle" has more than once had the proud opportunity to render signal service to the community.

The early court records of Brooklyn reveal that even among the ancestors of some of the most famous names in New York history, the ordinary quarrels, bickerings, law suits and other differences which make a village a little world sufficient unto itself were conspicuously present.

They brewed their own beer and distilled their own hard liquor, attended church regularly, pursued their work with diligence, and were honest, God-fearing folks with no more than the average human frailties their descendants are subject to. It was a peaceful, contented little colony, prosperous and influential in its own small way.

But with the coming of the nineteenth century a quickening of life was noticeable on the eastern shore of the East River. Population was increasing. When finally chartered as a city in 1834, Brooklyn proudly boasted nearly 30,000 inhabitants.

When the "Eagle" was founded as "The Brooklyn Eagle and Kings County Democrat," the city had 34,000 people.

The birth of the "Eagle" was an omen of its future usefulness.

In the campaign of 1841 the Democrats were gaining strength in a Whig stronghold. The two newspapers published in Brooklyn at the time were both Whig. Naturally the Democrats felt the lack of a medium for broadcasting their claims.

A young man, Isaac Van Anden, a printer by trade and a comparative newcomer from Poughkeepsie, away up the Hudson River, saw where the difficulty confronting the Democrats lay and started in to persuade the party leaders they needed a newspaper. He finally got them together in the office of Lott, Murphy and Vanderbilt, lawyers, to talk over the founding of a sheet for the campaign, at least.

Van Anden was of old Knickerbocker stock, and the son of a farmer. As a boy he determined to become a printer and was apprenticed to the "Dutchess County Telegraph." He finally set up a small job shop of his own, and through it came into contact with Samuel G. Arnold. Arnold owned the "Brooklyn Advocate" and persuaded Van Anden to come down the river to act as its business manager.

At the age of twenty-three the "Eagle's" founder moved to Brooklyn. He arrived only two years after Brooklynites had decided to have their being in a chartered city. The "Advocate" was a Democrat sheet, but its circulation was limited and its income uncertain. Arnold, disgusted, sold out to the Whigs. Thanks to his foresightedness, Van Anden was not left stranded, for although he was out of the publishing game with the sale of the "Advocate," he still had a small job printing establishment which he conducted on the side and which now stood him in good stead.

A few years of industrious pushing of this business made him one of the

coming young men of the city. When the campaign of 1841 arrived, he had money to back up his newspaper talk to Henry C. Murphy, John A. Lott and John Vanderbilt.

The Whigs included the wealthy elements in Brooklyn. The "Advocate" had disappeared, but in its stead reigned the "Star" and the "Advertiser."

These two stalwarts scathingly attacked the Democrats from all angles and extolled the controlling Whigs. The Democratic party in the city of Brooklyn was at a serious disadvantage, one that Van Anden determined to overcome at the meeting in the law offices at 5 Front Street.

He had previously discussed his plan with Mr. Murphy, who at first would have nothing at all to do with it. But as the campaign wore on and the issues appeared to favor the Democrats, Mr. Murphy saw the need for an organ to proclaim the views of his party. Once he had given his consent, he enlisted as an active missionary in its cause.

Judge Greenwood suggested the old title. The rest of those gathered at the conference contributed from their own pockets to the founding of "The Brooklyn Eagle and Kings County Democrat," and all voted to discontinue the sheet as soon as the election was over. All, of course, with the exception of Van Anden.

"While I acquiesced with the overwhelming majority, I then determined that if the issue showed any promise whatever it would be continued, even if I had to do it myself," he explained later.

Murphy was the editor and Alfred G. Stevens was the publisher, Van Anden having agreed with the sale of the "Advocate," to withdraw from the publishing business in Brooklyn. The new paper was printed in Van Anden's job printing establishment.

Once the election was over, the backers of "The Brooklyn Eagle and Kings County Democrat" were anxious to unload their infant on the doorstep of anyone foolish enough to adopt it. None of them had any faith in the paper. None except Van Anden, who after some negotiation, took it over on notes, all of which he paid promptly as they fell due.

And so the "Eagle" started on its way, flapping perhaps a little weakly but saying its say without fear until it was soon recognized as a power in the community. As an example of how lightly it was regarded when Van Anden took hold, Mr. Green, who had bought the "Advocate" and had tied the young publisher up with a promise to do no more publishing, smilingly withdrew the restriction.

"Perhaps he thought he was not in any great danger of formidable rivalry," said Van Anden, writing his reminiscences of the birth of the "Eagle" in 1872.

The next big figure in the "Eagle's" management to appear on the scene was William Hester, nephew of Van Anden, who ten years after the paper's founding, joined the staff.

The Eastern District was then the corporation of Williamsburgh. City Hall, now Borough Hall, was far uptown, so far, indeed, that it marked almost the outer boundary. Sands Street, now dark and noisy under the elevated and flanked elsewhere by small shops, was the fashionable thoroughfare of the town. Lower Fulton Street and its crossroads were the seat of business and public life, with the municipal center at Henry and Cranberry Streets. The ferry to Manhattan drew the prominent lawyers and business men into offices not far distant and stage lines connected Brooklyn City with other parts of the island. Flatbush for years afterward was still a market garden. As late as 1868, a drive along the



old Coney Island Plank Road passed through wide fields of luxuriant turnip tops, reddish-green beet leaves, green lettuce, and tall, waving corn.

Brooklyn at the time was a typical Main Street, with the budding of a metropolitan flower already apparent to those with eyes to see. Henry Ward Beecher was attracting attention to his sermons in Plymouth Church. Where the "Eagle" building now stands, the Rev. Evan M. Johnson occupied the pulpit of St. John's Episcopal Church. The churches of Brooklyn were already famous. There were no theatres except the Athenæum, a sort of Town Hall. Thackeray had to read his lectures on "The Four Georges" in the large room of Polytechnic Institute, while Dickens read his in Plymouth Church.

Such was the community the "Eagle" was serving when William Hester arrived to work on its staff. Isaac Van Anden had brought the newspaper into being and had steered it through the perilous course of a new journal. William Hester developed it into a national institution which while ranking in power and influence among the foremost newspapers of the country, never failed to serve Brooklyn locally and loyally.

The "Eagle" had sponsored a tremendous Democratic victory in 1841. It started out independently, adhering to the Democratic party, but with a disposition to criticize freely that which it believed wrong in the councils of Democrats. Its independence has remained down until 1924.

The history of the "Eagle's" development has been since the first years of early struggle the history of the development of Brooklyn.

Walt Whitman had come and gone, leaving a lasting impression but no great record of editorial achievement. Walt had been a trial to Van Anden, who had stood by him loyally while the other papers poked fun at the "Eagle's" eccentric editor. But after all, Walt was paid to write editorial leaders, and such a thing as a deadline and getting a newspaper to press meant nothing at all in his life. He was succeeded by Mr. Arnold, and later remarked that his job on the "Eagle" had been "the best sit" he ever had.

About this time Henry Ward Beecher began to advocate sending rifles, rather than bibles, to "bleeding Kansas," one of the fiery touches of the campaign before the Civil War. Mr. Arnold sought to support the impetuous Beecher and had a falling out with Van Anden, who was more conservative. Arnold resigned, certain that the "Eagle" would collapse with his departure. But it had already found a sure footing and under Henry McCloskey, carried on brilliantly.

But Mr. Van Anden failed to obtain that conservatism which he was anxious to incorporate in the "Eagle." McCloskey, a passionate Democrat of the Southern school, ranted against Van Anden and Stephan A. Douglas. He supported Breckinridge and fought in all the campaigns with an enthusiasm tempered only with a burning bitterness.

After the campaign of 1861, Van Anden, by no means a Copperhead Democrat, found himself being dragged along by his fighting editor, who espoused the right of the States to secede on the grounds that the Union was only a partnership. He got out of hand, and late in 1861, the Federal authorities let the "Eagle" know that its utterances were unwelcome if not actually treasonable. McCloskey treated the warning with a flourish of contempt. And in August, the "Eagle" was barred from the mails, in company with the "Journal of Commerce," "Daily and Weekly News," the "Daily and Weekly Day Book," and the "Freeman's Journal" of New York. The "Eagle" was later indicted and forced to suspend.

But this was not all. Although Van Anden took the pen from McCloskey's

hand and through his own friends obtained a suspension of proceedings against his paper, the Government refused to permit this unless McCloskey went out.

With the dawn of 1870 Brooklyn had a population of 600,000. It was a factor in the nation. It was facing reconstruction bravely. But it had passed through its period of doubt.

It was this period which saw the "Morning Eagle" born, live healthily for a short time and then die again, because Van Anden felt that the afternoon paper would require all the energy and devotion he could give during that troublous era of the country's history.

But if the "Eagle" was deeply engaged in the strife of the Civil War days, it was none the less active in the great period of reconstruction and prosperity which followed. Van Anden, who was a bachelor and devoted his entire life to the paper, was one of the first to see the possibilities in the dream of Roebling for a Brooklyn Bridge. He subscribed \$25,000 out of his own pocket towards the bridge, declaring that he owed that to any big public enterprise which would improve Brooklyn.

That one act was characteristic of the "Eagle's" enterprise which has always had the ultimate good of this borough in mind.

This has been typified in its news columns, where it has scored many triumphs, all of service to Brooklyn. Among the campaigns and beats, of which there are too many to be listed here, are the exposure of "520 Per Cent Miller," founder of the Ponzi school of finance; the thwarting of a move to seize Union Street for a railroad by a political band; the exposure of the frauds in the City Works Department in 1892, the showing up of the glittering papier-mache ceiling in the Assembly Chamber at Albany; the pricking of the Long Island water job bubble and drawing attention to the "widows' and orphans' funds" grab are a few of the great public services the "Eagle" has performed through its columns.

It was the first to announce the death of President McKinley in New York. It was the first to draw the veil aside at Gallipoli in 1915 and reveal to a dumfounded world the abject failure of the Allies' campaign in the Dardanelles. It was one of the few which did not "bite" at the news of the "false Armistice" on November 9, 1918. One of the most recent successful fights the "Eagle" has staged for the people of Brooklyn was that for the acceptance of Gerritsen Park by the city.

Since the "Eagle" entered into its modern era, Brooklyn has become another city. The paper itself has undergone many transformations, as has the borough.

In 1841, the people travelled in stage coaches. In 1924, they cover the same routes in subways. In 1841, the "Eagle" was excited over the tender story of Goethe and his dancing master's daughters, and enthusiastic over the battle of the Plains of Abraham, fought eighty-two years previously. A big fire in Georgetown, S. C., and a fraud exposure in Philadelphia, were not dignified enough to get better than paragraphs at the bottom of the last column of the first page. Today the "Eagle's" news comes from all over the world, as in 1841, but with the difference that it is only at the most, a few hours after it actually happened. Most of it is "spot" news.

But the "Eagle's" modern era antedates 1924. For the past thirty years this newspaper has occupied a position of power in the community, chiefly because it has fearlessly espoused every cause for the ultimate good. It has frequently refused to enter into so-called popular movements merely as a means of increasing circulation and although it has made enemies in withholding its support from movements which at the moment seemed to have caught the public fancy, it has



lived to see its sober judgment justified, once popular enthusiasm has died down. On the other hand, it has never hesitated to fight for the public interest and has always been lined up for civic rectitude and community progress.

The opening of Brooklyn Bridge, May 24, 1883, with a grand display of fireworks really began the modern epoch in Brooklyn's history. The bridge, which for years had engaged the fancy of the scoffers and the cynics, not to mention the sceptics and the calamity howlers, had always been staunchly supported by the "Eagle" as a public necessity. It was the triumph of this dream of Roebling which made a present day Brooklyn possible. The bridge made Brooklyn part and parcel of New York, even as today it is making Brooklyn the largest, most influential and most heavily populated borough in the city.

#### The "Brooklyn Daily Times"

The "Brooklyn Daily Times" is to-day one of the leading newspapers of the Borough. For more than seventy-five years it has exercised a considerable influence in the life of the community. It made its initial appearance as the "Williamsburgh Daily Times" in February 28, 1848, with the following editorial promise:

"We shall chronicle events as they occur, undeterred by fear or favor. We shall attack vice and corruption in whatever form we may find them disguised, and shall boldly advocate those great reforms which we may believe will have a tendency to promote virtue and ameliorate the conditions of mankind."

Williamsburgh in that year was an incorporated village. Mr. George C. Bennett, then twenty-three years of age, in partnership with Mr. Aaron Smith and Mr. Egbert Guernsey, started the publication, Mr. Bennett being the editor. The office was in a one-story building in Grand Street. After a few years, Mr. Smith and Mr. Guernsey sold their interest to Mr. Bennett, and under his direction its circulation expanded rapidly and it became the home paper of all good Long Islanders, from Newtown Creek to Montauk Point. It moved from its humble birthplace to the three-story brick building at No. 145 Grand Street, at which location it remained until it purchased its own building at 24 and 26 Broadway, which was to be its office for the following fifty years.

The first issue of the "Brooklyn Times" contained a report of the funeral services in Congress of ex-President John Quincy Adams, an obituary notice of a nonagenarian, who had served with Benedict Arnold in the attack on Quebec during the American Revolution, and an account of the peace agreement, closing the war with Mexico.

Mr. Bennett was actively interested in the anti-slavery movement, and he established the political policy of the paper, when in 1856 he took up the cudgels for John C. Fremont and the newborn Republican Party. The "Brooklyn Times" has consistently supported every Republican candidate for President since that time.

During the Civil War and the reconstruction period following, the "Brooklyn Times" flourished, and in 1870 Mr. Henry R. Stiles said: "The paper has since made his (Mr. Bennett's) fortune, and has become a *sine qua non* in the history of the borough." The quotation is from Mr. Stiles' History of the City of Brooklyn.

Mr. Bennett was the first of the three commanding figures who have influenced the destiny of the "Brooklyn Times." The second was Bernard Peters, who purchased the newspaper from Mr. Bennett in 1868. Mr. Peters had been a clergyman and an editorial writer on the "Hartford Post" before coming to

Brooklyn. For a short time he was associated in the ownership of the Brooklyn newspaper, with Mr. George H. Fisher, a lawyer, whose interest was subsequently acquired by Mr. William Cullen Bryant, a son-in-law of Mr. Peters.

The new owner of the "Times" was a man of strong personality and luminous mind. Under his management, and with the efficient aid of Mr. Bryant, and another son-in-law, Mr. James A. Sperry, for a long time city editor, the newspaper expanded in power and circulation.

Mr. Bernard Peters died in 1893, and was succeeded as editor by his son-in-law, Mr. Thomas P. Peters, who after some years sold the property to a corporation headed by Colonel Andrew D. Baird.

Meanwhile, the changing character of Williamsburgh affected the prosperity of the newspaper. A great number of non-English speaking people had come to take the place of old residents. The opening of the Williamsburgh Bridge and the migration across the East River of thousands of families, to whom the traditions of Williamsburgh were strange, and all the signs of the period of change pointed to the necessity for a new policy and a relocation of the offices of the newspaper. It had acquired a circulation in the Western, as well as the Eastern District, and its future manifestly lay in a larger field, and a larger interest.

The third and most important stage in the development of this newspaper, began in 1911, when Mr. Carson C. Peck succeeded Colonel Baird as president of the corporation and acquired through purchase all of the stock. Mr. Peck, whose great success in business life was one of the romances of modern American economic development, applied all his vision and enthusiasm to making the newspaper what he felt it ought to be in the life of the community. Under his energetic management the "Times" assumed its present form and moved to its new quarters in the population center of the Borough. It took possession of the Brooklyn Daily Times Building in Times Plaza, on April 28, 1914. The lamentable death of Mr. Peck was a great loss to his associates. In one of the records of the newspaper is the following minute:

"Mr. Peck's death was a great loss to the men who worked under his direction and at his side. He had a lofty conception of the purpose of a newspaper and its obligations. Those now in the management of the Brooklyn *Times* feel it a duty of the most compelling nature to so conduct the newspaper that it shall fulfill his ideal, and continue to represent in journalism the clean and wholesome life that is to be found in the homes of Brooklyn."

After the death of Mr. Carson C. Peck, his estate continued the publication with John N. Harman as its representative. Mr. Fremont Carson Peck, Mr. Peck's son, joined the "Times" staff in 1921 as Secretary and Treasurer and he is now publisher of the newspaper. Meanwhile, in 1918, the usefulness of the newspaper had been enhanced by the publication of a Sunday edition. In 1922 new presses were installed, and an enlarged mechanical plant afforded the facilities commensurate with the increased circulation. In 1923 a series of special editions increased the circulation and the advertising value of the publication. Notable among these special editions was "The Brooklyn Times Sports Extra," held by experts to be the most complete daily record of sports published in the United States. The "Times" to-day is a complete newspaper, giving primary attention to the news of Brooklyn, and with some features of its own origination of a high literary and educational value.

JOHN A. HEFFERNAN.

#### The "Brooklyn Citizen"

The "Brooklyn Citizen," the representative Democratic newspaper of the Borough, was founded October 4, 1886, by Andrew McLean, who was the Editor-



in-Chief of the paper from the day of its foundation until his death, thirty-six years later, on December 4, 1922.

Before starting the "Citizen," Mr. McLean had been a newspaperman for more than twenty years. He was associated with the New York "Times" when Henry J. Raymond was its Editor. He joined the staff of the Brooklyn "Eagle" in the seventies of the last century, when that paper was conducted by Thomas Kinsella. He rose rapidly on the "Eagle" from reporter to City Editor, Managing Editor, and on the death of Mr. Kinsella in 1884, he became the Editor-in-Chief of the "Eagle."

The "Eagle," which had been started by Issac Van Anden as a Democratic newspaper, under Mr. Kinsella's management, had become an Independent newspaper, and was frequently in opposition to the regular Democratic organization in the County. The Democratic local leaders readily backed Mr. McLean financially in starting the "Citizen." He had been Mr. Kinsella's most trusted associate on the "Eagle" and the brilliancy and intellectuality of his editorials on that paper had won him wide fame in the Borough. Personally, Mr. McLean was a Democrat of the Jeffersonian school and the Democratic leaders regarded him as the best equipped journalist in the Borough for the editorship of a Democratic newspaper.

In addition to the financial backing of the Democratic leaders, Mr. McLean had the warm-hearted support of the leading citizens of Brooklyn, including such men as Henry Ward Beecher, who was his personal and intimate friend; Dr. Storrs, Theodore Cuyler, Abraham Abraham, John Gibb, Samuel McLean and many others.

Mr. McLean was an ardent American. Throughout his long editorship of the "Citizen," his country came first with him and the Democratic party afterward. The "Citizen" has this distinction over all of the other newspapers published in Brooklyn, of being something more than a merely local paper. Brooklyn journalism is primarily local in its character, notwithstanding the fact that Brooklyn is a community of over 2,000,000 population. This intense localism which distinguishes Brooklyn newspapers, is the result of the geographical location of the Borough, overshadowed as it is by the great metropolitan Borough of Manhattan. The average Brooklyn newspaper reader buys the Manhattan morning newspapers for the general news of the world and the Brooklyn newspapers for the home news.

After the Albany "Argus" ceased to be the representative Democratic State paper, the "Citizen" took its place, and the Democratic press of the interior depended for its guidance in all strictly political issues, upon the editorial policy of the "Citizen." There was no newspaper published in the City of New York except the "Citizen" dependably Democratic. This was due to the fact that the "Citizen's" Democracy is based on principle and convictions, whereas the Democracy of the other so-called Democratic newspapers in the City of New York is a dilettante Democracy.

The influence of the "Citizen" in political matters, for the reasons mentioned above, reaches far beyond the confines of the Borough of Brooklyn and the City of New York. Its editorials on all party questions are copied by Democratic newspapers from Montauk Point to Lake Erie.

But while the promulgation of Democratic principles and the printing of local news are fundamental policies of the "Citizen," the paper has been equally strong in its presentation of the news of the world and of the country at large, through its United Press dispatches, its special correspondent in Albany and

its contracts with other great newspaper organizations, like the Newspaper Enterprise Association, the largest and most enterprising of its kind in the country.

The "Citizen" also devotes great attention to the wants of its women readers, giving two pages daily to matters which interest them. Its sporting pages are reliable and accurate. It is essentially a home newspaper. The "Citizen" has been one of the most prosperous newspapers financially in the borough recognized everywhere as conservative, clean, aggressive.

**Andrew McLean**, founder and editor of the "Citizen" for thirty-six years, was born in the village of Renton, Scotland, on August 7, 1848. The character of the man was typified by the manner in which he came to this country. In the latter part of 1863 he worked his passage on the bark "Agra," and at once enlisted in the United States Navy, where he served as a boy aboard the light draft monitor "Chimo," of the Potomac flotilla until the close of the Civil War.

After the war, he entered a commercial college and there remained until his twentieth year, when he began the work as a journalist, to which his life was devoted. At the age of twenty-four he became City Editor of the Brooklyn "Eagle." He succeeded Thomas Kinsella as Editor-in-Chief and remained with that paper until 1886, when he founded the Brooklyn "Citizen."

Outside of his profession, Mr. McLean was long distinguished as a lecturer and after-dinner speaker and an essayist. He also contributed to the stage as a dramatic author, and published a volume of poems, which were recognized as meritorious by critics on both sides of the Atlantic. He was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention of the State of New York in 1915 and was Chairman of the Democratic Campaign Committee of Kings County in 1912, when Wilson ran for the Presidency, and received in Brooklyn the largest majority ever given to a candidate.

The dominating trait in his character was simplicity and sincerity, and a positive hatred of sham and ostentation. He never obtruded himself and was content to rest his claims to the respect and confidence of his fellow-men in that sterling integrity of his character.

The saying that the countenance is an epitome of the soul was fully realized in Mr. McLean's features. His was a face which commanded attention in every crowd, because of its spirituality and intellectuality. It was the face of a thinker over which had passed sixty years of intensive study and culture. Yet there was a firmness about the mouth and jaws which denoted that the man combined with the idealism and vision of a scholar, the hard practical sense of a business man.

A Scotsman by birth, and no Scotsman ever loved the land of his birth more, Mr. McLean was above and beyond anything an American. He loved this country, its institutions and its people with a deep and abiding affection, and was ever-ready to defend it with his eloquent tongue and erudite pen against any and all adverse critics.

Notwithstanding the fact that he never held public office, he was the adviser of all the Democratic leaders in Brooklyn from Mr. McLaughlin to Mr. McCooey. His advice was also frequently sought by Governor David Bennett Hill and Richard Croker and by Democratic National leaders. They could always count upon the fact that whatever advice he gave, was disinterested, with no personal ambition to serve and with only the good of the party and the country at heart.

As a public speaker, Mr. McLean was recognized as one of the two or three greatest orators which Brooklyn has produced in the last fifty years. He spoke



invariably without notes or manuscripts, in a strong, vibrant voice and a veritable torrent of eloquence. His speeches, like his writings, possessed distinction, scholarship, dignity, and an accomplished style.

The "Citizen" was the child of his brain, and he left his impress on every page of the paper. Its columns reflected the cleanliness of his mind which abhorred everything of a prurient or suggestive nature. They reflected the essential conservatism which was a dominant trait in his make-up, but his conservatism was not of a reactionary character. His age did not blind him to the fact that new ideas are borne in each new generation and he approached the discussion of progressive measures with an open mind.

Up to the day of his last illness he was actively at work. Five days before his death, on December 4, 1922, he was seized with a chill while sitting in his office, and succumbed to pneumonia, regretted by his fellow townsmen and women, as one of Brooklyn's ablest and best citizens.

## CHAPTER XXX

### THE MEDICAL SOCIETY OF THE COUNTY OF KINGS

THE history of medicine in Brooklyn constitutes an unbroken service of physicians to the city since July, 1644, a period of two hundred and eighty years. The Medical Society of the County of Kings is the oldest scientific organization in Brooklyn.

The first physician was a West India company's surgeon—Paulus Van der Beeck, of Bremen. He accompanied one hundred and thirty soldiers who came on the ship "Blue Cock" from Curacao to add hope and strength to Peter Stuyvesant's colonists. He was probably the second medical man in the colonies, Hans Kierstede having preceded him in 1639 and settled in New Amsterdam. Paulus Van der Beeck also ran a farm near Third Avenue and Twenty-eighth Street. Three months after his arrival he married Mary Bennett, twice married previously. He held many offices and accumulated such wealth that in 1675, only nine Brooklyn citizens paid a higher assessment than his—£133, 10s. He died in 1679.

The second physician of Brooklyn was Gerardus Beekman, who settled in Flatbush and became a deacon of the Reformed Dutch Church. An active politician, he held many offices until his death in 1724. That he was a man of courage is evidenced by his stand in the Leisler controversy, for which he was imprisoned.

Of the third practitioner, John Nerbury, practically nothing is known except that he resided at Brooklyn Ferry and removed to Staten Island in 1746.

The fourth physician, Henry Van Beuren, revealed that he was a man of ideals by combating "irregular" and "quack" practitioners who abounded in that day. This was caused by the fact that the profession was under no kind of legislation; that medical attention was in demand for epidemics of yellow fever, smallpox, intermittent fevers and dysentery in summer, and throat and lung troubles in winter; and because public credulity was great. The number of legally qualified physicians up to 1849 was seventy, even though the consolidation of Brooklyn, Williamsburgh and Bushwick gave a population of 205,250. Yet no



GERARDUS W. BEEKMAN, SECOND PHYSICIAN TO PRACTICE IN BROOKLYN





one complained of the shortage of physicians, because so many men were practicing whose standing was open to question. A count of those calling themselves physicians up to 1860, as shown by Kings County records, was made by Dr. William Schroeder some time ago, who found the total number to be seven hundred and twelve. A writer in 1753 declared that "New York boasted above forty gentlemen of the faculty, by far the greater part of whom are mere pretenders to a profession of which they are entirely ignorant."

Dr. Van Beuren's campaign went so far that he published a letter in the "New York Gazette" or "Weekly Postboy" of May 20, 1754, setting forth that daily and innumerable abuses were being committed "on the bodies of our fellow creatures" by men "more dexterous at murdering or maiming their patients than at terms of art." They assumed the appellation of doctor "with no small degree of arrogance, until a gentleman of the faculty in New York might well disdain the term when compelled to share it with such Pretenders, and with apothecary apprentices."

Other physicians contemporary with Van Beuren were John Lodewick and Henry Van de Water, an ardent Patriot. His zeal brought him pecuniary loss, social ostracism and death on a prison ship.

Three army surgeons established themselves in Brooklyn after the Revolutionary War—Barbarin, Duffield and Beck. Doubt exists concerning Beck, but it has been established that an English army surgeon located in Flatbush was successful in practice. He became dissipated and met a tragic death, his body being found in a well. Barbarin, also an English army surgeon, resigned from the service and petitioned the Assembly for citizenship. He married a Brooklyn girl, theirs being a war romance. He was fastidious in attire, it having been written of him: "His dress was plain, though rich, and garnished at the wrists with lace." He kept records of his obstetric cases in French. He was a trustee of the incorporated village, and Lawrence Street was named originally for him. A street was also named for Dr. Duffield, and it still bears his name.

Little is recorded of John and James Van Beuren, contemporary with these physicians. It is probable that one of them was the keeper of the County Court House and jail at Flatbush, and resided therein.

Records give no hint of methods or conditions of practice in those pioneer days, though physicians naturally struggled with primitive surroundings and small-town hardships. There were neither omnibuses nor street cars. They had to combat smallpox in 1680 and 1739; something resembling plague in 1702, and two epidemics of "Angina" in 1743 and 1769—possibly diphtheria. No records convey any idea of the exact nature of this disease. Not till 1804, when yellow fever was raging, were systematic records kept. Epidemics of this disease, causing a number of deaths, recurred in 1809 and 1823. Physicians' chief records constituted bills rendered the County or the "Overseer of the Poor" for "sick and vagrant poor"—usually including medicine furnished.

In the early days of the last century, physicians became more numerous. These names stand out: Creed, Clussman, Hunt, Wendell, Ball, Low, Osborne, Carpenter, Vanderveer and Peter. Some of them played an important part in the shortly-to-be-organized Medical Society of the County of Kings.

New Utrecht was the neighborhood Dr. Peter chose for his activities. He built between that section and Fort Hamilton a structure which he used not only for his practice, but wherein he conducted an academy. He also served Gravesend. Arriving at that suburb, he would loudly ring a dinner bell from the door of the



hotel so that the inhabitants could spread the news that medical service was available.

Hunt was the first Health Officer of Brooklyn, with a salary of \$200 yearly. As a surgeon in the navy, he was stationed at the Brooklyn Navy Yard. He had fought under Decatur in the Algerian War and was aboard the "Chesapeake" when she was captured by the "Leopard." On his resignation from the navy, he opened an office at Fulton and Concord Streets. When the County Medical Society was organized in Kings, he became a charter member and its second president, holding office from 1825 until his death in 1830—a longer period than any subsequent president has held the post.

Osborne removed to New York after having become involved in a heated controversy with Drs. Wendell and Ball concerning the yellow fever epidemic in 1809.

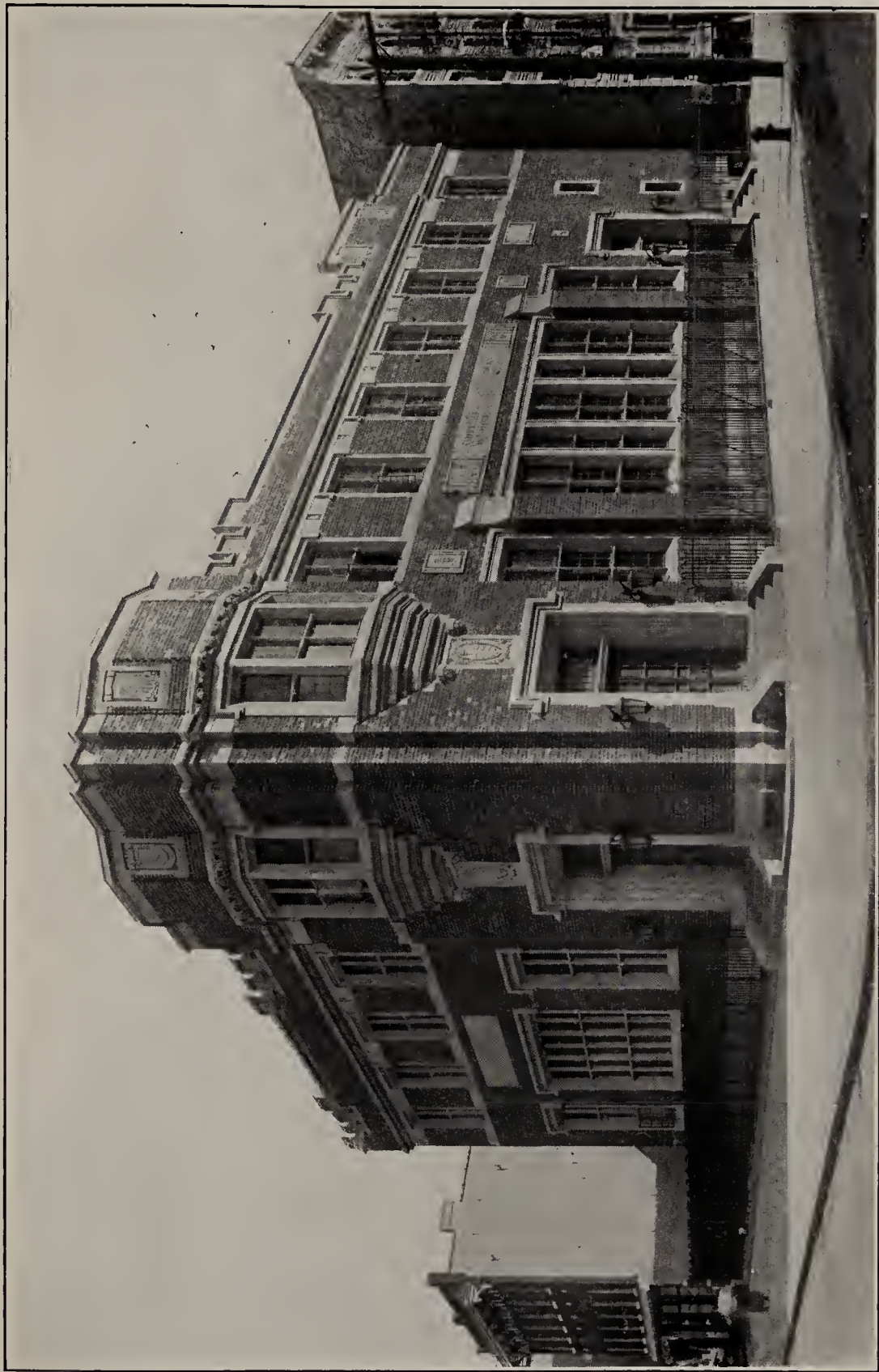
Wendell, a native of Albany, was Ball's partner at Fulton and Sands Streets, and also at Columbia and Cranberry. A licentiate of 1804, he began practice about 1806. A Health Officer for many years, he has a place in history as Brooklyn's first exponent of mild therapy as opposed to drastic drugging, customary at that time. He had the dignity and reticence of the old-style practitioner without pomposity. He was tall and elegant almost to fastidiousness, and was referred to as a "model physician." He was free vaccinator in 1815-1816, and the former year president of the Society for the Prevention of Vice in the town of Brooklyn. He became first vice-president of the County Medical Society and its sixth president.

Ball became one of the organizers of the County Medical Society and its president in 1833. Guy's painting of old Brooklyn when there were about 4,500 inhabitants, shows the three-story brick building he erected at Fulton and Main Streets, the first in the city. It was surrounded by beautiful grounds. Ball was the richest physician of his time, owned all of what is now Brooklyn Heights, and introduced the first doctor's carriage in 1816. A public-spirited citizen, he was a prime leader in a public movement in 1824 through which Brooklyn accomplished the regrading and paving of streets with gutters which replaced the watercourses in the middle. He was a member of the Society for the Prevention of Vice.

Vanderveer, a graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, began practice in Flatbush, his home town, in 1819. Being immensely successful, his Brooklyn office was shortly crowded with a clientele from all parts of Kings County. The seventh president of the County Society and its initial Secretary, he was the first physician to abandon general practice and specialize (1838). This aroused much opposition among his confreres. However, he persisted and accomplished much. He was appointed Health Officer of Flatbush during the epidemic of Asiatic cholera in 1832. His home housed the first meeting of the County Society, and was formerly the seat of Brooklyn's embryonic theological seminary of the Reformed Dutch Church, now a part of Rutgers College, New Brunswick. When divinity students were there, the house was occupied by Dr. Livingston, professor of Divinity of the Reformed Dutch Church. Dr. Vanderveer organized the Flatbush "Sabbath School," and was its superintendent from 1825 to 1857.

It was such types of medical men who fought disease in the county in the first two decades of the eighteenth century when practice was under no control and practically every housewife was a "yarb-doctor" in herself.

The General Assembly first enacted legislation in 1760 when it decreed



BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
Brownsville Children's Branch: Stone and Dumont Avenues; Erected 1914.





that no person should practice surgery or medicine without examinations. In 1806, the Legislature struck a blow at the increasing number of quacks, irregulars and charlatans by a statute permitting the incorporation of a State and of County Medical Societies. The State organized forthwith, and Queens and Suffolk followed with county organizations. Dutch conservatism caused Kings to move slowly, so that it was not until February 22, 1822, that the first steps for organization were taken.

Assembled at the preliminary meeting to organize the Medical Society of the County of Kings were Drs. Charles Ball and Matthew Wendell of Brooklyn; Drs. John Carpenter and Francis H. DuBois, of New Utrecht; and Drs. William D. Creed and Adrian Vanderveer, of Flatbush. Dr. Ball acted as president, the meeting being in Dr. Vanderveer's home in Flatbush.

The second meeting—March 2—was in the residence of William Stephenson, Fulton and Nassau Streets, known as the Auld Lang Syne Tavern. Present were Drs. Ball and Wendell, Carpenter, DuBois, Thomas Wilson Henry, Joseph Gidney, Tarleton Hunt, Cornelius Low, William Duryea and Adrian Vanderveer.

Only one other meeting of the society was in Flatbush—July 8, 1822—while one was at New Utrecht, July 11, 1825. With these exceptions, all other conclaves have been held in Brooklyn. These gatherings were in the middle of the day, traveling being slow and tedious and road lighting unknown. They were assembled pursuant to public notice. Many gatherings were at Willie Stephenson's Inn, where "Biddy" Stephenson's famous turtle soup was delectable. The physicians also met at the Van Beuren Inn, kept by Samuel Voris, in Flatbush. The first officers were: Cornelius Low, president; Matthew Wendell, vice-president; John Carpenter, treasurer; Adrian Vanderveer, secretary and corresponding secretary.

The first physician presented for membership was Nelson L. Hurd, in 1823. By 1849 there were sixty new members. The first Board of Health was organized in Flatbush in 1832 by Dr. John B. Zabriskie. Dr. Vanderveer, who was Health Officer, had as his associates Drs. Creed and Robert Edmond.

The Society then began to meet at the offices of the members, in turn. From 1827 to 1837, it convened in the Apprentices' Library, Henry and Cranberry Streets, and from 1837 to 1865 in the Brooklyn Institute. Next it assembled at the Phenix building, 16 Court Street, during which time there were sixty-two members. The Hamilton building, Court and Joralemon Streets, was used from 1866 to 1873, with one hundred and fifty-one members. From 1873 to 1887, meetings were in Everett Hall, 398 Fulton Street, where the possessions and affairs of the Society were carefully looked after by Captain Charters, due to his friendship for the old veterans who were members, with two hundred and sixty-eight members.

Tired of wandering, the members purchased a home of their own in 1887, at 356 Bridge Street, for \$7,600. A committee consisting of Drs. William Thallon, Joseph H. Hunt and A. Ross Matheson collected subscriptions totalling \$5,300, all of which, except \$250, came from the members themselves.

The step proved the greatest incentive to new life. Membership increased until, eleven years later, when the building was sold, it had reached five hundred and eighty-three. Apollo Hall was the next meeting place.

It had been a struggle during those early years of the Society's life to regulate the practice of medicine. The law compelled all practitioners to belong to the County Society, and conferred on the society the power, through its censors, to license practitioners. A diploma was granted, the fee being \$5, and a copy



had to be deposited with the County Clerk. This diploma, written either in Latin or English, was signed by the society's president and secretary. Upon its receipt, the licentiate signed a declaration to "honestly, virtuously and chastely conduct himself, and with fidelity and honor do everything in his power for the sick placed in his care." Notable among these early declarations is that of Dr. Henry J. Cullen, father of Chief Judge Edgar M. Cullen. The duties of the censors were far more onerous than the general public can realize. The first board consisted of Drs. Joseph G. T. Hunt, Thomas W. Henry and Charles Ball.

Despite the fact that penalties became more severe, many quacks continued to practice without license. In 1827, the Legislature decreed that the presidents of the County Societies serve written notice on every practitioner not affiliated with their organizations that he must apply for membership within sixty days after notice. Failure meant forfeiture of license, and all penalties imposed for unlicensed physicians.

This law continued until 1844. Then the cry of "monopoly" was raised. The legislative halls became crowded with petitioners for the repeal of the statutes. The main argument was that the clause preventing unlicensed practitioners from suing and collecting fees was unjust, this "being urged by men of education and talent."

Under the pressure, the Legislature removed all bans on the suing for and collecting of fees by unlicensed physicians. However, as the act also made them liable for an action for malpractice, small comfort was afforded. The new law created confusion among medical men. The impression was that the duties and prerogatives of the county societies had been curbed materially. But the Brooklyn doctors studied the question exhaustively and analytically, and their committee made a report to the State Society in 1858, that the Act had not altered the status of the County Society in any sense. The report attacked the licensed practitioner who did not affiliate with the County Society, declaring that by such act he degraded himself and voluntarily descended into the ranks of the unlicensed—a motley group of botanics, electricians and animal magnetizers.

Early meetings were devoid of scientific study or discussions. Though cholera raged in 1832, 1849 and 1854 with a death list of 1800, one reference only to the disease occurs in the annals of the Medical Society of the County of Kings. This was a suggestion that cholera be discussed, as was being done by some other societies. The situation finally leading to comment by live members of the organization, a scientific committee was appointed. For the first time, case reports and papers were read. So interesting became proceedings that the "New York Journal of Medicine," after 1858, began to publish accounts of the Society's work. Notable among such papers were two revealing that "orificial surgery" existed even then. A surgeon described a new instrument for removal of foreign bodies from the larynx, and discussed dilatation of strictures of the urethra.

In 1856, the Brooklyn Medico-Chirurgical Society was formed, its purpose devoted exclusively to scientific programs. It ceased to function in 1866.

The Society published its transactions in pamphlet form from 1858 to 1865; and from 1876 to 1884, a small monthly periodical called "The Proceedings" was distributed among the members. It gave accounts of the scientific and executive work of the organization. The first copy of the "Brooklyn Medical Journal," relating transactions of the Society, was issued January 1, 1888. This monthly was an enterprise undertaken shortly after the purchase

of the Bridge Street property, and took high rank among similar productions of America. It has been superseded by the "Long Island Medical Journal," published by the Associated Physicians of Long Island.

In the meanwhile, an especial urge for a permanent headquarters for the County Society was increasing. This was caused by the accumulation of an invaluable library. A fireproof place to house it was urgently required. While the society had been established in 1822, it was not till twenty-two years later—in 1844—that any attempt to collect medical volumes was made. Dr. Bradley Parker, president in 1844, was first to act, and a committee consisting of Drs. J. Sullivan Thorne, T. L. Mason and J. W. Carson was appointed to collect books and money. A year later the committee had collected sixty volumes and \$50, and arranged with the city library of the Brooklyn Lyceum (the Brooklyn Institute), to place the library there—the Society's meeting place. For nearly thirty years thereafter, interest lagged and little was done to increase this collection. The library was managed by a standing committee until 1859, when an elective librarian was installed in Dr. George I. Bennett, who held the office from 1859 to 1868 inclusive.

In 1867 a special library committee recommended that a medical department be established in the library of the Long Island Historical Society, title in the books to be vested in that society for its housing and care of the volumes. The recommendation adopted, the committee collected two hundred volumes and nearly \$1,000. Two years later, nine hundred volumes were added in the gift of Dr. D. C. Enos' library. This special collection soon reached 3,500 books and pamphlets and so remained for a period of thirty years.

Fraternity with the Historical Society did not prove as satisfactory as had been hoped. Only those who were members of that organization could consult the medical books. Dr. William W. Reese, elected librarian in 1869, sought to remedy this situation and thereby became father of the present County Medical Library. In 1874 he purchased a portable bookcase and placed it in the meeting room of the society in Everett Hall, asking contributions. Shortly it was filled, these volumes being the nucleus from which the great library now containing more than 100,000 volumes dates its growth. The Society acknowledges its great debt to Reese, also instrumental in founding its "Proceedings," from which library additions of great value accrued. Dr. Reese was also prime mover in the establishment of a free reading room—open from 10 o'clock in the morning till 10 o'clock at night—when the Society met at Everett Hall.

Under successive librarians—Drs. W. H. Thayer, T. R. French, A. Hutchins, H. N. Read, and chiefly Joseph H. Hunt—the library began to exceed expectations. When Dr. French took it over in 1879, it contained five hundred and eighty-five volumes. On his recommendation, a committee of ten was appointed, which raised \$500 for its increase. Dr. Hunt more than doubled the library in his five years' tenure of office from 1886. During Dr. Browning's incumbency, from 1891 to 1901, the valuable Cutter library of 1,000 volumes and the Watson collection of over 5,000 books and pamphlets and some tons of material from the New York Academy of Medicine were acquired, giving the library more than 20,000 volumes in 1900. He added the library of Joseph Jones, Surgeon-General of the Confederate Army, as his personal purchase and gift.

A salaried part-time assistant librarian in the person of Miss Estelle K. Provost was installed in 1886. In 1900 the title of the elective officer of the Society was changed to "Directing Librarian," and Mr. Albert T. Huntington was engaged as the salaried full time librarian, in which position he continued



until 1917. Accessions in 1900 numbered 17,401 books and pamphlets and 33,900 journals.

When Dr. James MacFarlane Winfield became Directing Librarian in 1901, that year's accessions amounted to 23,960 books and pamphlets and 66,222 numbers of journals. This included the Purple collection, the library of Dr. A. J. C. Skene; the Fisher library, comprising works of great antiquity; and the Physicians' library of the German Hospital and Dispensary of New York, which greatly augmented the library's foreign section. Through the influence of Drs. Joseph H. Raymond and William Browning, the Long Island Historical Society placed on the library shelves as a permanent loan the collection of 2,041 volumes of medical books and some 1,400 pamphlets, to which reference has already been made, which had so long remained in their possession. Drs. Harris, Tilney, Warbasse and Sherwood followed as directing librarians, and then again Dr. Browning, to whom the Society was so deeply indebted.

Although the directing librarian often referred to the deplorable way the library contents had to be stored and the danger of its loss by fire or theft, it was not till Dr. George MacNaughton became president of the Society in 1894 that action was taken. This followed a stirring and forceful address in which he pointed out that a medical building was an imperative need. His enthusiasm and courage banished inertia. An investigating committee recommended a Committee for New Building, by appointment of two members from each ward, to devise ways and means, consider the site and building. This committee was to co-operate with the Board of Trustees and report from time to time. Dr. William Maddren was made chairman, Dr. David Myerle secretary, and Dr. Francis H. Stuart treasurer. Despite the country's financial depression, which particularly affected the medical fraternity, a large amount of money was subscribed, all of which represented personal sacrifice. The movement was given its basic financial impetus by the "conditional subscriptions" of one hundred members of \$100 each. This conditional fund was fully met and formed a part of the more than \$20,000 contributed by two hundred and fourteen members of the Society.

A site was found at 1313 Bedford Avenue. An executive building committee consisting of Dr. Frank E. West, chairman; Dr. William Browning, secretary; Dr. Charles Jewett, Dr. William Maddren, and Dr. MacNaughton, represented the original building committee and the trustees in matters concerning the new structure. The cornerstone was laid November 10, 1898, exercises being in the armory of the 23rd Regiment, Bedford Avenue and Pacific Street. The Rev. Dr. Richard S. Storrs, president of the Long Island Historical Society, offered the invocation, and the address was made by Seth Low, president of Columbia University, the first institution which ever granted a medical degree in the state. Dr. Frank West, Dr. MacNaughton, Dr. Joseph Hunt, president of the Society, each spoke.

The dedication of the completed building took place about a year and a half later—May 19, 1900—with the Rev. Dr. A. J. Lyman offering the invocation. Dr. Lewis S. Pilcher, president of the Society, was chairman, three notable addresses being made by Dr. George M. Gould, Philadelphia, president of the Association of Medical Librarians; Dr. James R. Chadwick, librarian of the Boston Medical Library; and Dr. Abraham Jacobi, chairman of the board of trustees of the New York Academy of Medicine. Others on the program were Drs. William Maddren and Dr. Frank E. West. Benediction was pronounced by





BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
DeKalb Branch: Bushwick and DeKalb Avenue; Erected 1905.





Rev. John P. Chidwick, U. S. N., chaplain on board the battleship "Maine" when that ship met her fate in Havana harbor.

The total cost of the building and site was \$90,000, the greatest help being given by "the Woman's Auxiliary to the Committee on New Building," which raised \$17,130 through a Graeco-Roman festival which lasted two weeks and ended with Olympian games. This auxiliary was composed of the wives, daughters and relatives of the members of the Society. The festival, held at the 13th Regiment Armory, Sumner, Putnam and Jefferson Avenues, was the most imposing spectacle, outside of the Sanitary Fair, ever seen in Brooklyn. Its arrangement suggested days of Athens and Rome. All manner of attractive articles were for sale in settings like Roman marts and bazaars. There was a Trojan horse decked in the grandeur and mystery of the East; fountains played; a Parthenon looked down upon a bustling improvised Roman city. Laces and antiques and mysterious old-world rugs formed apartments for Greek and Roman dancers. Even Cleopatra dreamed under a Sphinx, and there was a dark-browed prophet from Turkey. Upstairs and down, the panorama was so true to alien things that it was like traveling to a distant world. On the first—or official night—Monday, January 23, 1899, the Auxiliary's guests were state and civic dignitaries. On Greek night, the Greek consul and other foreign consuls were especially entertained. The Italian Consul and other foreign diplomatists were honored on Roman night. On Clerical night, noted clergymen were invited; on Legal night, prominent judges and lawyers, and on Medical night—which followed a Children's Carnival—the brightest lights in the Brooklyn medical world were present. Prominent merchants were guests of the Auxiliary on a special evening, while on Auction night, great hilarity and fun was the program. At a Graeco-Roman ball, officers of the army and navy were lions of the occasion, and on Olympian night, the spectators witnessed a review of the 13th Regiment, Major George D. Russell commanding. The art loan exhibition was magnificent. Practically the whole city turned out.

Officers of the Auxiliary under whose management the fair was put on were: President, Mrs. J. Elliott Langstaff; vice-presidents, Mrs. Homer L. Bartlett, Mrs. I. H. Barber, Mrs. Cornelius N. Hoagland, Mrs. John L. Zabriskie, Mrs. Alexander Hutchins, Mrs. George A. Evans, and Mrs. J. A. Hamilton. The recording and corresponding secretaries, respectively, were Mrs. William Simmons and Mrs. Frank E. West, their respective assistants being Mrs. Joseph A. Kene and Mrs. Sidney Allan Fox. Treasurers were Miss Alice Jewett and Mrs. H. Beeckman Delatour. These were chairman of the various committees: Mrs. Evans, Mrs. Geo. R. Fowler, Mrs. J. W. Hamilton, Mrs. Joseph Hunt, Mrs. Wm. Schroeder, Mrs. John E. Sheppard, Mrs. Jas. W. Fleming, Mrs. J. C. Cardwell, Mrs. Wm. M. Hutchinson, Mrs. J. M. Staebler, Mrs. E. A. Day, Mrs. W. H. B. Pratt, Mrs. H. B. Bayles, Mrs. Alexander Hutchins, Mrs. Victor A. Robertson, Mrs. William B. Lane, Mrs. Samuel H. Olmstead, Mrs. Charles C. Henry, Mrs. Homer L. Bartlett, Mrs. William Maddren, Mrs. Frederick Cranford, Mrs. George Wackerhagen, Mrs. H. P. Bender, Mrs. Daniel Kissam, Mrs. Charles P. Peterman, and Mrs. Frank H. Milbury. Silas B. Dutcher was special treasurer of the press committee.

When the new library was erected, it put the Medical Society in a position to strive for and house a collection of books which should be an outstanding contribution not only for the benefit of the Brooklyn public but for the aid of the State and County as well. With such ideals the library has become the



fifth largest medical library of the United States. It houses the library of the Medical Society of New York State as well.

Charles Frankenberger, present librarian and superintendent, who took office September 1, 1917, has done an enormous work during his seven years' incumbency to build it up from a service standpoint, stimulating greater interest among officers and members of the society and other local medical organizations in the acquisition of books and periodicals. Many gifts of material and monetary contributions have been received, and interchanges of publications established with other medical libraries and periodicals throughout the world. The library is now making accessible to Long Island physicians and the public productions concerning medicine written in all languages and from practically all foreign countries. Regularly over 1,000 current periodical publications are on file, a hundred per cent increase since Mr. Frankenberger's incumbency. The number of books consulted is three times larger than in 1918. In the last five years, the usefulness of the library to the public has more than tripled. The only medical library on Long Island, it regularly supplies information to about 3,300 members of the medical profession. The first library endowment was the Dr. John Lloyd Zabriskie Memorial Fund of \$2,000. The following library endowment funds have since been established: Alexander J. C. Skene Memorial; George MacNaughton Memorial; William Browning; James M. Winfield; George Ryerson Fowler Memorial; William Jarvie Dental; Burton Harris; Dr. John E. Shepard Memorial, and Lewis Stephen Pilcher Funds.

Otherwise, the library is largely supported financially by the dues of the members of the Society. Since its foundation, the Society has received but two bequests, that of Dr. George MacNaughton of \$1,000, and that of William Jarvie, D.D.S., of \$1,000 for dental literature. Except accessions from the "Brooklyn Medical Journal," most of the books have been individual donations, and the large collections, such as the Watson, Purple, Fisher, and German Hospital, were purchased by personal contributions of interested members of the Society.

It occupies the second and much of the third floor of the medical library building, the whole of which, from basement to roof, has become a beehive of medical activity and scientific study. Immediately upon the building's completion, no less than seven distinctly medical organizations besides the mother society began to assemble therein, these being the Pathological, Neurological, Laryngological, Gynecological, Surgical, Dermatological, and Brooklyn Medical Book Societies. Now these additional organizations also meet there: Pediatric, Internal Medicine, Italian, Urological, Ophthalmological and Homoeopathic. The two local dental societies, the Second District and the Kings County, make the building their headquarters.

The large auditorium on the first floor—which bears the name of MacNaughton—is capable of holding four hundred persons. It has been and is now, month by month, the scene of all the regular meetings of the society. All the Practical Lectures are held here, and it has been marked by many stirring celebrations and discussions of interest in the scientific world. From its platform have spoken eminent men of the medical fraternity from all parts of the United States and foreign countries, and outstanding specialists in all branches of medical healing, as well as prominent laymen interested in community health matters. The Professional Guild for Long Island occupies an office on the first floor, its labors being to keep an eye on legislation that would be detrimental to the work of physicians, dentists and druggists of the island. It also frames

constructive measures looking toward public health. The third floor has section rooms for meetings of smaller societies. The building is one of the finest specimens of Colonial architecture in New York City.

As the oldest scientific organization in Brooklyn, the Medical Society of the County of Kings took a step in its centennial year that put it ahead of all the county medical societies in the world. Through the efforts of Dr. Frank D. Jennings, who conceived the idea that graduate medical education could be carried to every doctor in Brooklyn through properly established methods, the County Medical Society, in conjunction with the Long Island College Hospital, now provides graduate extension courses.

As president of the Society in 1922, Dr. Jennings appointed a committee to initiate a program. It arranged a Practical Lectures Series. These lectures are clinical, cover the problems of everyday practice, and are sound from a teaching standpoint. Lecturers considered the best qualified are chosen to expound the selected subjects. Beginning in 1922, and continuing each succeeding year, twenty lectures have been delivered on Fridays at 5 o'clock, the hour when the greatest number of physicians could be present. The response was so overwhelming the MacNaughton auditorium would not hold those who sought to attend. So the Society extended its program for clinical teaching to educational work that would include the various Brooklyn hospitals. The Commissioner of Public Welfare, Bird S. Coler, took keen interest and helped by opening the wards of the departmental hospitals of Brooklyn to the work, granting teaching privileges to the Long Island College Hospital as the only Long Island institution chartered for and actually engaged in medical education. The Society affiliated with the College and established a school for graduate teaching. Acting for the Medical Society was this committee: Dr. Charles A. Gordon, chairman; Dr. Russell Story Fowler, Dr. Leon Louria, and Dr. Thurston Scott Welton. The committee from the medical college faculty who worked with it included: Dr. John O. Polak, chairman; Dr. Luther Fiske Warren, Dr. Emil Goetsch and Dr. Henry Mitchell Smith. This joint committee decided to continue the practical lectures and intensive courses, and offer extension courses to the medical profession for fees to cover cost of administration and materials.

In 1923 there were two formally announced sessions. In 1924, more departments and courses were added and the Committee projected courses for winter and spring. Thus Long Island physicians can constantly advance in all branches of their profession, courses being framed for what is most helpful for doctors with small time for study on account of routine practice, but who desire to familiarize themselves with the most recent advances in the solution of their every-day problems. Departments in which instruction is offered are anatomy, dermatology, genito-urinary diseases, medicine, neurology, obstetrics and gynecology, ophthalmology, orthopedic surgery, otolaryngology, pathology, pediatrics, and surgery. Courses are now offered at thirteen hospitals on afternoons between four and six o'clock and are open to any physician, regardless of whether he is a member of the County Medical Society.

Notable among the celebrations of the Society through the years was a dinner for Dr. Andrew Otterson, April 25, 1895, to honor his fifty years of active practice in Brooklyn. The Jenner Centennial, May 14, 1896, commemorated the inauguration of vaccination, all the guests receiving bronze medal souvenirs. The seventy-fifth anniversary of the Society was honored April 11, 1897, while the centennial celebration, October 7, 1922, was a notable occasion, Dr. Nicholas



Murray Butler being present. Dr. Jennings arranged the program, a valiant endowment drive for \$100,000 being launched under the guidance of a centenary committee under Dr. Russell S. Fowler's chairmanship, through which over \$60,000 were subscribed. The organization at the time contained 1,250 members.

No one can estimate the vast amount of work done through the years by medical men of Long Island for public health. They have labored unstintedly, with or without fees, the work being monumental. Some have died in their fights to save men and women stricken with disease when scourges struck the city. Among these were Drs. John L. Crane and James E. DuBois. They gave their lives at New Utrecht during the yellow fever epidemic of 1856. Others serving in dangerous capacities were Joseph C. Hutchinson, who took charge of the Brooklyn Cholera Hospital in 1854 and retained the management for some years. In the 1866 epidemic, Dr. William Henry Thayer devoted his energies to the Hamilton Avenue Cholera Hospital. William J. Swalm took charge of the Cholera Hospital called the City Park Hospital, near the Navy Yard.

Even though early charged with enforcing the law, the Medical Society of the County of Kings found time to aid the poor even as early as 1835—which practice it still continues—since it was instrumental in 1839, through Dr. Isaac J. Rapelye, president, in having the Common Council establish the Brooklyn City Hospital. The first hospital building in Brooklyn was on Clarkson Street, and is still in existence for another purpose as part of the present Kings County Hospital. The first Brooklyn dispensary was carried on after 1833 at Jay and Sands Streets, with these attending physicians: Drs. J. Sullivan Thorne and W. A. Clark, with Dr. Matthew Wendell as consulting physician. The Long Island College Hospital also owes its inception to medical men of the County Society, Drs. Daniel Ayres, Louis Bauer and John Byrne, together with the first council, and all its first faculty were members of the Society.

When the Department of Health was reorganized in 1873, the work of the Society was given official recognition by constituting the President of the Medical Society of the County of Kings and the Mayor of Brooklyn, together with the regular Board of Health, an extraordinary commission to act in the presence of great and imminent peril to the public health in the city. From 1824 until consolidation, almost every Health Officer or Commissioner was a member of the Society—a long record of public service. Dr. Frank J. Monaghan, a member of this Society, is the present Commissioner of Health for New York City.

The Hoagland laboratory, across the street from the hospital, was founded by Dr. Cornelius Nevins Hoagland. The ambulance system in Brooklyn is due to Dr. Joseph H. Raymond. While an interne at the Brooklyn Hospital he became interested. The Brooklyn newspapers took up the subject and the Common Council inaugurated the present system, which has been perfected through the years.

Brooklyn physicians have also given much time to the improvement of the public schools, always having been represented on the school board. Dr. Theodore F. King was the first president of the Brooklyn Board of Education upon its organization in 1843. When he moved to Perth Amboy, he became superintendent of New Jersey's public school system. The second president of the Board of Education was Dr. John Sullivan Thorne in 1845, who again served from 1868 to 1870. Two vice-presidents of the School Board were also physicians—Drs. John Moriarty and John Harrigan, while among the members of the Board of Education from 1843 to 1898, there were nineteen physicians. This reveals how physicians helped lay the foundation of Brooklyn's educational system. Dr.





BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
Flatbush Branch: Linden Avenue near Flatbush Avenue; Erected 1905.





John A. Ferguson, a Brooklyn physician and member of the Society, is a member of the present Board of Education of New York City.

The second offspring of the County Medical Society was the Brooklyn Pathological Society, founded in 1870, and these societies have come into being since: Neurological, Pediatric, Internal Medicine, Gynecological, Surgical, Ophthalmological, Urological, Italian Medical, and local neighborhood societies which have had careers of splendid medical service—the Brooklyn Association, Brooklyn Society, the North Brooklyn, Flatbush, East New York, New Utrecht, Bay Ridge, Williamsburgh all serving well defined and useful purposes.

Among famous physicians developed here whose work has benefited the entire country have been Hutchinson, Skene, Benjamin Westbrook, Squibb, Raymond, Stiles, John Byrne, Jewett, George R. Fowler, Bristow, MacNaughton, Mason, Thorne, Cullen, Otterson, Speir, Isaacs and many others. A monument has been erected to Skene facing Prospect Park and a tablet in the Kings County Medical Society Building; a memorial tablet in front of the Hoagland laboratory memorializes that great philanthropist; George R. Fowler and Isaac Henry Barber are honored with tablets at the Kings County Medical Society building; a bronze tablet at the Long Island College Hospital perpetuates the name of Samuel G. Armor, and one at the Brooklyn Hospital that of Dr. Joseph C. Hutchinson. The medical library building forever suggests MacNaughton, after whom the auditorium has been named and over the entrance of which hangs a beautiful bronze memorial.

The record of the Brooklyn profession during the Civil War was notable, as it was during the Spanish-American and World Wars. Loyally, tirelessly, faithfully did they labor behind the front lines of No-Man's-Land, in the hospitals of the war zones and throughout America. Brooklyn medical men sent nearly \$1,400 for the relief of Chicago fire sufferers, being among the first contributors. They also forwarded a substantial sum when yellow fever ravaged the South.

Many Brooklyn physicians have been called to fill positions of honor demanding highest integrity and intellect, both in the state and national societies. The following have been presidents of the New York State Medical Society: Joseph Chrisman Hutchinson, Edward Robinson Squibb, Alexander Hutchins, Lewis Stephen Pilcher, Algernon Thomas Bristow, Charles Jewett, William Francis Campbell, John Richard Kevin, now a member of the State Board of Charities—another public service.

These have been presidents of Medical Societies outside of Kings County: Theodore L. Mason, American Association for the Cure of Inebriety; Elias H. Bartley, American Society of Public Analysts; Alexander J. C. Skene, American Gynecological Society and Honorary President International Congress of Gynecology and Obstetrics; John Byrne, American Gynecological Society; Samuel Sherwell, American Dermatological Association; Thomas R. French, American Laryngological Association; Charles Jewett, American Gynecological Society and honorary president of the Obstetrical section of the Pan-American Medical Congress; Agrippa N. Bell, American Congress of Tuberculosis; Lewis D. Mason, American Society for the Study of Alcohol and Narcotics and the American Association for the Cure of Inebriety; Arthur Mathewson, American Ophthalmological Society; Landon Carter Gray, American Neurological Society; Glentworth R. Butler, American Climatological Society, and the American Congress on Internal Medicine; James MacFarlane Winfield, American Dermatological Association; William Browning, Association of Medical Librarians; Lewis S.



Pilcher, American Surgical Association; Robert L. Dickinson, American Gynecological Society; Hubert Arrowsmith, American Bronchoscopic Association; H. Sheridan Baketel, American Medical Editors' Association; William H. Donnelly and Harris Moak, both of whom have been president of the American Association of Medical Milk Commissions.

At monthly evening meetings, through the Kings County Medical Society, Brooklyn physicians now consider economic and public health questions and developments of modern medicine, pay clinics, administration of the compensation law, medical education of today, pure food, industrial medicine and surgery, garbage disposal and contamination of city waters, and similar subjects.

As life has become more complicated and the city expanded, many Brooklynites have ceased to be general practitioners and become specialists in various branches of medicine. Among such special branches they have chosen are: Surgery, which probably commands the largest following; gynecology and obstetrics, pediatrics, dermatology, urology, ophthalmology, ear, nose and throat specialties, neurology, psychiatry, proctology, X-ray operating and interpreting, radium therapy, physio-therapy, pathology, bacteriology, and many others, which reveal how far medical science has advanced since the catnip tea era.

The council these days at the Medical Society of the County of Kings that manages the affairs of that body is an outstanding group of men. They are: President, John E. Jennings; vice-president, O. Paul Humpstone; secretary, Thomas M. Brennan; Associate secretary, James Steele; treasurer, Charles H. Goodrich; associate treasurer, Eliot Bishop; directing librarian, William Browning; associate directing librarian and curator, Jaques C. Rushmore. The trustees: William Linder, chairman; Arthur H. Bogart, Frank D. Jennings, Charles E. Scofield and Charles A. Gordon. These are censors: Robert F. Barber, senior censor; William V. Pascual, Howard T. Langworthy, Henry Joachim, and Thurston S. Welton. The Society in 1924 numbered 1,530 members, the organization being the only County Medical Society in the United States which maintains a building and library of its size.

Because of its paramount place in the medical history of Brooklyn, here are given short biographies of some of the early members, founders, and presidents of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, men to whom the community owes a debt of perennial gratitude for their part in weaving the fabric of civic life called Brooklyn.

The Medical Society of the County of Kings has in its library thirteen bound volumes containing the records of its 3,205 members admitted to membership from April, 1822, to December, 1922. These biographical records are about two-thirds complete and are still in the making. They were compiled by Dr. William Schroeder, chairman of the Historical Committee.

**Cornelius Low**, first president of the Society, was born about 1750 at Albany. He was licensed to practice medicine in 1782. Little of his personal history is known besides the fact that he served three terms as president, and that he died at Bushwick, L. I., in 1830.

**Dr. John Carpenter**, the Society's first treasurer, and one of its organizers, was, in addition to his medical work, the father of the Brooklyn Sunday School system. He organized the first Sunday School in Fort Hamilton, serving thirty-eight years as its superintendent. He was the early tutor of Governor DeWitt Clinton, and the son of Anthony Carpenter. His mother was the daughter of Rev. John Moffat, a Presbyterian minister. Born at Goshen, N. Y., April 17,

1791, his education was under the supervision of Rev. Dr. Moffat. About 1807 he came to New York, where he lived with the Rev. James B. Romeyn, D.D., and found employment in the Governor's office. He studied medicine under Dr. Douglas of New York, attending lectures at the old College of Physicians and Surgeons. It is believed that his license, given in 1822, was the first granted by the Kings County Medical Society. He had formerly been licensed to practice by the State Medical Society in 1812. He was connected with the United States Army during the War of 1812, and continued with it ten years thereafter.

Dr. Thomas W. Henry was the only member of the County Society at its organization, outside of Dr. Adrian Vanderveer, who was a graduate of a medical college. All others were licentiates. Dr. Henry, born in New York City, obtained his education in private boarding schools of the city. His degree was granted from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1820, and he began practice in the village of Brooklyn when it had about 5,000 souls and did not extend much farther than the present City Hall. He was one of the members of the first Board of Censors. Dr. Henry's first office was at Jay and Sands Streets, then at 65 Henry Street. At the former station, he conducted a drug store for years—a customary business of physicians in those days. He was preceptor for George Gilfillan and Ripley E. W. Adams, and a man of noted education. His manner was stern and conscious, but he was ever ready to assist the needy by advice and medical treatment. He was president of the Society in 1831.

Dr. Francis DuBois, another founder, was born May 21, 1783, the son of John E. DuBois, of New Utrecht. His wife was Sarah Bergen. He died January 22, 1827.

Dr. William D. Creed, born in Jamaica in 1787, was educated at Friars' Hall Academy and at Columbia College. He studied medicine with Dr. Comaine, of New York, attended medical lectures at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, and was licensed to practice medicine in 1809. He was the second interne in Bellevue Hospital, entering in 1810. His practice began in the village of Brooklyn in 1811, and the same year he became sheriff of Kings County, the only medical man in Kings to hold that office. During the War of 1812, he was surgeon in Jeremiah Johnson's brigade, at Fort Greene. Besides being one of the members of the first Board of Health organized in Flatbush in 1832, he became president of the Queens County Medical Society in 1856, and was a member of the Suffolk County Medical Society. He was an ardent temperance worker, as were so many of the old physicians, and for several years was president of the Queens County Temperance Society. He laid the cornerstone of the First Reformed Church at Queens September, 1858, also being its organizer. He was eighty-three when he died in 1870.

The biographies of some of the deceased presidents of the Medical Society of the County of Kings throw sidelights upon many useful lives among Brooklyn physicians.

Dr. Isaac J. Rapelye came of an interesting family—tradition having it that the first white child born on Long Island bore that family name. A graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1820, he practiced from that year till 1830 in Newtown, and in Brooklyn from 1830 to 1847, when he met a tragic death. A favorite dog sprang upon him as he was going upstairs, hurling him the full length of the steps. Death was instantaneous, his neck being



dislocated. He had held the position as Health Officer 1839-1840, and was one of the Society's Censors in 1831-1832-1833. He was its fifth president.

**Dr. John Barrea Zabriskie**, eighth president of the Medical Society, acquired his early education at Millstone, N. J., and then attended Union College, Schenectady. He began the study of medicine in the office of Dr. William McKeesick, of Millstone, in 1824, and entered the College of Physicians the following year. The New Jersey Medical Society licensed him to practice medicine in 1826, but, not satisfied with his legal qualification, he entered the University of Pennsylvania, and received the degree of M.D. in 1827. His first practice was in New York City, but in 1830 he removed to New Lots and then to Flatbush, where he actively practiced medicine eighteen years. Having joined the County Medical Society in 1829, he became censor and secretary in 1831-1832, vice-president in 1833-1834-1835, and president in 1839. He represented the county organization in the State Medical Society in 1829-1831, and there presented a paper on the medical topography of Kings County. This was published in the transactions for 1832. He was a member of the Flatbush Board of Health, and in 1847, superintendent of the Flatbush school district, which included New Lots. He held the important position as physician in charge of the Kings County Almshouse. At another time, he was surgeon to the 241st Regiment, New York State Militia. He was an elder in the Dutch Reformed Church and a trustee of Erasmus Hall Academy. He died of a contagious disease contracted in his professional service in 1848. His son, Dr. John L. Zabriskie, was a member of the County Society, and two grandsons have been affiliated with its activities.

**Dr. Purcell Cook**, licensed by the County Medical Society in 1824, received the honorary degree of M.D. from the Regent of the University of the City of New York in 1851. His whole life as a physician he gave to Brooklyn, holding the following positions in the County Society: Censor, 1835; vice-president, 1839; president, 1840, 1841 and 1845. He died a bachelor, December 24, 1860.

**Dr. Theodore Lewis Mason**, born in Cooperstown, N. Y., September 30, 1803, was the son of the Rev. David Mason, of Norwich, Conn., and a direct descendant of the John Mason who came to Boston from England in 1632. Dr. Mason's early educational preceptor was Rev. Isaac Lewis, and his early medical education was acquired under Darius Meade, M.D., at Greenwich, Conn. After matriculating at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, with David Hosack as his preceptor, he graduated in 1825. First practice was at Milton, Conn., then in New York City. He came to Brooklyn in 1834, where he remained to practice until his death in 1882.

**Dr. John Sullivan Thorne** assisted in 1830 in organizing the first dispensary in Brooklyn. When this was discontinued, he helped to organize the City Hospital, was one of the attending physicians until 1855, and president in 1844 and 1845. He was physician to the Cholera Hospital in 1832, and physician to the Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum from 1840 to 1880. A member of the Council of the Long Island College Hospital, and one of its consulting surgeons, he became a member of its board of regents in 1879. He was a vice-president of the County Medical Society in 1844, president in 1846 and censor in 1851. Besides his work as president of the Brooklyn Board of Education, he was a director of the Packer Institute and of the Brooklyn Female Academy. He was





BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
Macon Branch: Lewis Avenue and Macon Street; Opened 1907.



BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
Brownsville Branch: Glenmore Avenue and Watkins Street; Erected 1908.





a New Yorker by birth, being born in the city April 19, 1807. He received his A.M. degree in 1826 from Union College and began his medical studies in the office of Drs. Wendell and Ball of Brooklyn. He was a graduate of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, and in 1829 began his practice in Brooklyn at 51 Sands Street. His whole life was an exemplary record of usefulness.

**Chauncey Leeds Mitchell**, born at New Canaan, Conn., November 13, 1813, was graduated at Union College and received his M.D. degree from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1836. Identified with Brooklyn medical affairs from 1843 to 1888, he held these positions: member of the council of the Long Island College Hospital, 1860-1888, and member of the board of regents, 1878-1888. He was professor of obstetrics at Castleton, Vt., Methodist College, 1842-1845; president of the County Medical Society in 1848, as well as in 1858-1859, and held membership in the New York Academy of Medicine, American Academy of Medicine, and the Brooklyn Pathological Society.

**Henry James Cullen** has been called one of the worthiest practitioners Brooklyn ever had. He was born at Manor Hamilton, Sligo, Ireland, July 2, 1806. When about fourteen, he came to this country, remained in New York six or seven years and removed to New Orleans, where he began the study of medicine. He was graduated in 1828 from the Geneva Medical College, New York, and went to Matamoras, Mexico, for three years, and thence abroad. He settled in Brooklyn after 1837, where he passed his life. A licentiate of the County Medical Society in 1843, he became a member in 1844, vice-president in 1846-1847, and president in 1849. He was a censor in 1851, and in 1856-1857. For years he was one of the physicians of the Brooklyn City Hospital, and was consulting physician to St. Peter's and St. Mary's Hospitals at his death. He became president of the Brooklyn Medico-Chirurgical Society in 1866. Dr. William Schroeder, secretary of the historical committee for the County Medical Society, in 1899, has written of him:

"Dr. Cullen was a practitioner of the old school, but in perfect sympathy with the progressive spirit of the profession. The last time he was seen by some of his medical friends was on a cold night when the air was filled with snow and rain, the pavements slippery with sleet, walking a goodly distance in spite of chronic asthma, to witness the transfusion of blood from the carotid of a lamb to the veins of a man enfeebled by disease. Such occasions Dr. Cullen never allowed to pass. To him, the medical corps of the Navy owes a great debt of gratitude, since he instigated in 1859 the movement to secure for the surgeons rights often asked for and as often denied. At his recommendation, the Society appointed a committee with power to promote, by all lawful means, the passage by Congress, according to the Naval Medical Corps, their just demands. Circulars were addressed to medical societies far and wide. Petitions were sent to Washington, and members of Congress appealed to personally to further the cause, which two years later signally triumphed. Cullen was a man of decided natural ability and high intellectual qualities."

**Dr. Samuel Johnson Osborn**, born at Mount Airy, Germantown, Pa., May 4, 1813, was educated at the Middleton Academy, Conn., and Joseph Hoxie's School, N. Y. He first entered the drug business, but began to study medicine after 1840 in New York City, under the guidance of Drs. Nichol H. Deering and Joseph Smith. He entered the medical department of Rutgers College in 1842, and the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1843. Receiving his M.D. degree in 1844, he began practice in Brooklyn that year. He was a censor of the County Medical Society in 1846, 1850, 1852 and 1855; its secretary from 1845-1851, becoming its president in the latter year. He removed to Oshkosh, Wis., in 1855, where his great ability was recognized by the citizens, who called upon him to fill the following positions: Supervisor, school superin-



tendent, 1859-1869; school commissioner, 1869-1871; alderman, 1871-1872. He was connected with the Masonic order for many years, having held the position of master and high priest. He graced his profession as an upright man and a profound student of human nature.

**Dr. George Marvin**, born at Norwalk, Conn., February 23, 1798, graduated from Yale in 1817 and took his M.D. degree at the University of Pennsylvania. He began practice in Rochester, but came to New York City in 1828 and to Brooklyn in 1831. He became assistant physician to the City Hospital, and was a member of the Council of the Long Island College Hospital from 1867 to 1874. He was censor of the County Medical Society in 1837-1838-1839, vice-president in 1840-1841, and president in 1852. For thirty-five years he was a member of the First Presbyterian Church of Brooklyn.

**Dr. Andrew Otterson** received his academic education at Hempstead Harbor, L. I., and Freehold, N. J., and began to study medicine under the preceptorship of Dr. William Johnson at Whitehouse, N. J. He graduated from the University Medical College in 1844 and chose Brooklyn for his fame and success. He was a member of the Medical Society of the County of Kings fifty-two years, and saw it grow from seventy-eight members to more than six hundred. At the time of his death, he was the oldest president in active membership, the oldest non-resident ex-president being Dr. Samuel J. Osborn, who removed to Wisconsin. A warm friendship always existed between these two, which time nor distance never impaired. Dr. Otterson was of great usefulness to the County Society, serving it three times as president—in 1853-1854 and 1868. He was censor in 1849, 1864 and 1865, three times its secretary, and its treasurer from 1855 to 1861. He was also president of the Brooklyn Medical Society in 1857 and of the Brooklyn Medico-Chirurgical Society from 1857 to 1859—three terms. He belonged to the Brooklyn Pathological Society from 1877 to 1897, the Brooklyn Medical Book Club and the Alumni Association of the University Medical College of New York City of which he was vice-president in 1896. He was a 33rd degree Mason and belonged to the Odd Fellows. It has been declared that his presence was ever an inspiration for good; that his life was purposeful and effective. In his early professional life he was attending physician to the Brooklyn Dispensary from 1850 to 1855, and Health Officer of the City of Brooklyn both in 1872 and in 1883. He was president of the Board of Health in 1875 and 1877, Commissioner of Health in 1879 and 1880 and again from 1886 to 1888. A practical man, Dr. Otterson never failed to take advantage of a suggestion, and always had a helpful one to propose. His reports of cholera epidemics in Brooklyn in 1848 and 1854 show keen understanding of hygienic requirements necessary in such sudden outbreaks of disease. Though so busy he found little time to contribute to medical history, his life was a continued earnest effort. Dr. Schroeder says of him: "Right or wrong, he knew no middle ground. To his brothers in the profession he was singularly courteous, upright and void of dissimulation, ever ready to extend a helping hand. In ethics, he was a moralist; in politics a Jacksonian Democrat; in the practice of his profession an ideal physician, kind, conscientious, faithful and beloved."

**Dr. George I. Bennett** was the first outdoor temperance orator of Brooklyn. His arguments were made the more effective in that, during his lectures at Fort Greene Plaza on Sunday afternoons, he used the stomachs of patients who had died of alcoholism, prepared by Dr. John G. Johnson, of the

borough, to drive his text home. He served the County Medical Society as vice-president in 1851, as censor in 1858, librarian from 1859 to 1869, and as president in 1855.

**Dr. Samuel Boyd** studied medicine with Dr. Alexander Stephens, of New York City, graduated from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1828, and took postgraduate work in Dublin, Edinburgh and Paris hospitals. Having begun practice in New York, his home city, in 1829, he removed to Staten Island in 1844, where he remained until 1848. He also had an office in Brooklyn from 1830 to 1860. He served the City Hospital as visiting physician from 1840 to 1843, and was Health Officer of Brooklyn from 1857 to 1859. He was president of the County Medical Society in 1857, and the only member to contribute a pamphlet concerning the yellow fever of 1856 as it prevailed at New Utrecht. He was a surgeon in the Seminole War, and physician to the Seaman's Retreat at Staten Island from 1844 to 1848.

**Dr. Christopher Raborg McClellan**, born in Baltimore, Maryland, and a graduate of Yale, received his medical degree at the University of Maryland in 1835. He was interne in the Baltimore City Hospital and County Almshouse, 1835 to 1836, and practiced medicine in Brooklyn from 1837 to 1887. He was Health Officer of Brooklyn, attending physician to the City Hospital, consulting physician to St. Peter's Hospital, and served the County Society as censor, vice-president, the latter being in 1861. He was professor of botany in the New York College of Pharmacy in 1839, and a member of the New York Mutual Aid Association, New York Academy of Medicine, and the State Medical Association. He died in Brooklyn, January 13, 1887.

**Dr. Samuel Hart** gave lasting service to Brooklyn when he bequeathed his library to the County Medical Society in 1878. He was a Harvard graduate, both in his classical and medical education, and began the practice of medicine in Beverly, Mass. He removed to Oswego, and in 1855 to Brooklyn, where he remained until his death in 1878. He was curator of the medical department of the University of Buffalo; a member of the Oswego Medical Society, American Medical Association, New York State Medical Society, and a Fellow of the Massachusetts Medical Society. He was surgeon to the Riflemen of Oswego, and served the County Society three terms as a censor, and was its president in 1862.

**Dr. DeWitt Clinton Enos** was Professor of General and Descriptive Anatomy in the Long Island College Hospital from 1860 to 1867, and professor of operative and clinical surgery at the Long Island College Hospital from 1867 to 1868. He practiced medicine in Brooklyn from 1847 to 1868. His native home was De Ruyter, N. Y., where he was born March 17, 1820. He took his medical degree in 1846 from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, and was president of the County Society in 1863.

**Dr. Joseph Chrisman Hutchinson**, born 1827 in Howard County, Missouri, received his M.D. degree from the University of Pennsylvania in 1848, and his LL.D. degree from the University of Missouri in 1880. From 1860 to 1867 he was professor of operative surgery and surgical anatomy of the Long Island College Hospital, and president of its collegiate department in 1886 and 1887. He was Health Commissioner of Brooklyn from 1873 to 1875 and president



of the County Medical Society in 1864. The New York State Medical Society named him its president in 1866, and the New York Pathological Society in 1871.

**Dr. John Terry Conkling**, who became superintendent of the Metropolitan Board of Health from 1864 to 1870, and who was president of Brooklyn's Board of Health in 1873, gave a service-filled life to the city. He was a member of the Board of Education from 1864 to 1870; member of the council of the Long Island College Hospital from 1886 to 1893; physician to the Brooklyn Dispensary and Eye and Ear Infirmary, and consulting physician of the Long Island College Hospital. Dr. Conkling, a Long Island man, was born at Smithtown, March 19, 1825. He graduated from the State Normal School of Albany in 1847, shortly after which he came to Brooklyn and began the study of medicine with Dr. DeWitt Clinton Enos. He graduated from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1855, and practiced in Brooklyn from the beginning. He was a member of the Long Island Historical Society, and served the County Medical Society as censor and president—holding the latter office in 1864.

**Dr. Richard Cresson Styles** was a broadly educated man, and a devotee of science. He gave much time to the study of Texas cattle disease, and discovered the parasite which caused the malady. For this, Professor Haller, of Jena, named the fungus *Conisthecium Stilesianum*, in honor of the discoverer. Dr. Styles was Registrar of Kings County in 1866, under the Metropolitan Board of Health, and Assistant Sanitary Superintendent from 1868 to 1870. He was born in Philadelphia, October 4, 1830. After graduation from Yale in 1851, he studied medicine in the office of Dr. Thomas Turner, of Flatbush, and graduated as an M.D. from the University of Pennsylvania in 1854. The years of 1855 and 1856 he spent in Paris hospitals. He began the practice of medicine in Vermont, where he remained until 1862, when he was appointed surgeon of volunteers. From 1863 to 1864, he was surgeon in Hancock's corps, and came to Brooklyn, where he began the practice of medicine at 16 Court Street. Appointed resident physician to the Kings County Hospital, he remained there till 1866. During 1865-1866 he was the hospital's superintendent. Before coming to Brooklyn, Dr. Styles had held these positions: Lecturer on Physiology, New York College of Physicians and Surgeons (1861-1862); Professor of Physiology and Pathology, Vermont Medical College, 1857-1865; Professor of Physiology, Berkshire Medical Institution, Mass., 1858-1862. He served the Medical Society of the County of Kings as vice-president in 1867 and as president from 1868 to 1869. He was a censor in 1870, one of the organizers of the Brooklyn Pathological Society, and a member of the New York Academy of Medicine.

**Dr. William Henry Thayer**, along with Dr. Styles and nine associated physicians, laid the foundation of the Brooklyn Pathological Society. He was president of the County Medical Society in 1872 and 1873. Born in Milford, Mass., June 18, 1822, he took his literary and medical degrees at Harvard, interning at the Massachusetts General Hospital during his student period. He practiced in Boston and at Newtown Centre, Mass., for ten years; then resided at Keene, New Hampshire. He belonged to the New Hampshire and Vermont State Medical Societies, and was a surgeon of the New Hampshire Volunteers. From 1862 to 1865 he was Medical Director of New York, the second division of the United States Army Corps, being mustered out in July, 1865.

**Dr. William Wallace** held many positions of trust during his thirty-three years of practice in Brooklyn, which began in 1864. Born in Cork, Ireland,





BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
Prospect Branch: Sixth Avenue and Ninth Street; Erected 1906.



BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
East Branch: Arlington Avenue and Warwick Street; Erected 1906.





May 14, 1835, he began to study medicine in Edinburgh in 1851. He was graduated from the Royal College of Surgeons in 1856 and the Royal College of Physicians in 1860, and was acting assistant surgeon to the Royal Navy in the Russian War. For seven years he was surgeon for the Cunard Steamship Company. In Brooklyn, he became attending physician to the outdoor department of the Long Island College Hospital, then visiting physician to that hospital, St. John's Hospital and Home for Consumptives. Other important titles conferred upon him were consulting physician to the Long Island College Hospital and St. Mary's Hospital, and medical director to the college dispensary. As evidence of the confidence reposed in him by the general public, he became a member of the council of the Long Island College and Hospital Committee of St. John's Hospital, and the board of managers of the Church Charity Foundation. He was president of the Brooklyn Pathological Society, and served as censor, trustee and president of the County Medical Society. He died in 1897.

**Dr. John Henry Hobart Burge** was a surgeon of the old school who admitted he was never too old to learn. He was the son of the Reverend Lemuel Burge, and was born at Wickford, Rhode Island, August 12, 1823, and died in Brooklyn, New York, March 24, 1901. His medical education was received at the University of New York, where he graduated as doctor of medicine in 1848. During his professional life he was president of the Medico-Chirurgical Society in 1864-1865, and the Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1870-1871, Journal Association, Long Island College Hospital, 1870-1871, and surgeon to the Long Island College Hospital.

**Dr. Alexander Johnston Chalmers Skene** is generally looked upon as one of the foremost physicians of his time. He was born in Aberdeen, Scotland, June 17, 1838, and died at Highmount, New York, July 4, 1900. He received his degree of M.D. at the Long Island College Hospital in 1863 and that of LL.D. from the University of Aberdeen in 1897. During his professional life he held the position of president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1874-1875; Alumni Association, Long Island College Hospital, 1880; Brooklyn Gynecological Society, 1891-1892; New York Obstetrical Society, 1877-1878-1879; American Gynecological Society, 1886-1887; Long Island College Hospital, 1893-1899; International Congress of Gynecology and Obstetrics, honorable president; a distinction that has never come to any physician located on Long Island—to have his name connected with any part of the human body—Skene's Urethral Glands, discovered by Dr. Skene in 1880. The monument in memory of Alexander J. C. Skene, M.D., LL.D., at Prospect Park Plaza, unveiled May 5, 1906, and the tablet in the building of the Medical Society of the County of Kings indicate the esteem in which he was held by the profession and the people of this city.

**Dr. Alexander Hutchins** was fitted by nature for his life work. He was a man of sterling qualities and endowed with an intellect to practice the healing art. He was born in New York City, January 24, 1835. He died in Brooklyn, New York, July 30, 1906. He was the son of John and Julia Ann (Lines) Hutchins. Educated at Peekskill Academy and Williams College, receiving his A.B. in 1857 and A.M. in 1862, graduating as M.D. in the New York Medical College in 1860. He held the position of president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1876-1877-1878, and the New York State Medical Society in 1883; a member of the council of the Long Island College



Hospital, 1886-1893. He was editor of the proceedings of the Medical Society of the County of Kings from 1876-1883. And physician to the Long Island College Hospital, St. John's and St. Mary's Hospitals.

Dr. Charles Jewett was a member of the medical profession in Brooklyn, respected by all who knew him. He was born in Bath, Maine, September 27, 1842. He died in Brooklyn, New York, August 6, 1910. He was the son of George and Sarah (Hale) Jewett. He was educated at Bowdoin College where he was graduated in 1864, receiving the degree of A.M. in 1867 and ScD in 1894. His medical education was received at the Long Island College Hospital and the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, where he received the degree of M.D. in 1871. During his professional life he held the following positions: Long Island College Hospital, 1880-1882, professor of obstetrics; 1883-1898, professor of obstetrics and diseases of children; 1899-1910, professor of obstetrics and gynecology; president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1880-1881-1882; Brooklyn Gynecological Society, 1893-1894; New York State Medical Society, 1910; American Gynecological Society, 1900; honorary president, obstetrical section, Pan-American Medical Congress; founder of International Congress of Gynecology and Obstetrics. He was gynecologist to the Long Island College Hospital, Bushwick, Kings County, Swedish, German, St. Mary's and St. Christopher Hospitals.

Dr. George Gallagher Hopkins was an old practitioner of Brooklyn. He was born at Peoria, Illinois, June 9, 1843. He died in Brooklyn, New York, May 23, 1908. He was the son of William Rogers and Mary (Murray) Hopkins. He was educated at Hobart College, where he received the degree of A.M., in 1862. His medical education was at the University of Pennsylvania, graduating as M.D., in the class of 1868. He entered the Civil War in 1861 and at its close, with the rank of Major, he was mustered out of service. He was commander of Veteran Post No. 277, G. A. R., in 1868. He was president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1883, and surgeon to the Long Island College Hospital and St. John's Hospital.

Dr. John Alva McCorkle was a teacher of medicine for a great many years. He seemed to have the faculty of imparting to the students a knowledge of the healing art in such a way that they were benefited by his instructions. He was born in Lordstown, Ohio, February 4, 1847. He died in Brooklyn, New York, August 15, 1916. He was the son of Archibald and Mary (Jones) McCorkle. He was educated at Hiram College, receiving his degree of M.D., from the University of Michigan in 1873, and in the same year from the Long Island College Hospital. He was president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1884-1885, and the Alumni Association, Long Island College Hospital, 1896, and of the Long Island College Hospital from 1904-1916. He was connected with the Long Island College Hospital during his professional life as Professor of *materia medica* and the practice of medicine. A memorial has been erected in his memory by this institution.

Dr. George Ryerson Fowler, genial and beloved, was one of the foremost surgeons in his day in Brooklyn. His aim in life was to do good for his fellow men and elevate the medical profession, to this extent, he devoted his lifework. He was born in New York City, December 25, 1848. He died at Albany, February 6, 1906. He was the son of Thomas W. and Sarah Jane (Carman)

Fowler. He received his medical education at Bellevue Hospital Medical College, receiving the degree of M.D. in 1871. He held the position of president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1886; Brooklyn Anatomical and Surgical Society, 1880; Red Cross Society, Brooklyn, 1890; Brooklyn Surgical Society, 1890-1891; Alumni Association of the Bellevue Hospital Medical College, 1890; a member of the State Board of Medical Examiners. During the Spanish-American War, he was chief surgeon of the Seventh Army Corps. As surgeon he was at various times connected with every hospital in Brooklyn. A memorial tablet has been placed in the building of the Medical Society of the County of Kings and one in the Methodist Episcopal Hospital, Brooklyn, New York.

Dr. Zachary Taylor Emery was not in active practice for a number of years, but he maintained his interest in the healing art until the end of his life's journey. He was the son of John C. and Mary (Yerkes) Emery. He was born at Novi, Michigan, February 22, 1847. He died at White Plains, New York, October 7, 1924. He was educated at the University of Michigan and graduated from the Detroit Medical College in 1874 and in the same year from the Long Island College Hospital. He was president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1892; Commissioner of Health in Brooklyn, New York, 1894-1897. During this time the water supply of Brooklyn was not very good. Examination revealed impurities—*Bacillus Emerieusis*—in honor of the commissioner. He was for a number of years medical director of the Manhattan Life Insurance Company, New York.

Dr. John Cargill Shaw was the son of John and Christiana (Drew) Shaw. He was born at Jamaica, West Indies, September 25, 1845. He died in Brooklyn, New York, January 23, 1900. He received his medical education at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, where he received his M.D. degree in 1874. He was president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1893; New York Neurological Society, 1877-1878; Brooklyn Pathological Society, 1889-1890, and the Brooklyn Society for Neurology. Clinical professor of diseases of the mind and nervous system at Long Island College Hospital. He introduced the non-restraint treatment of the insane at the Kings County Insane Asylum. He was neurologist to the Long Island College Hospital, State Hospital for the Insane, St. Catherine's Hospital, St. Peter's Hospital, Kings County and the Brooklyn Eye and Ear Hospital.

Dr. Joseph Hill Hunt was a historian by nature, interested in the old masters of medicine, in fact, everything that pertained to the history of medicine claimed his attention. He was the son of Samuel Hill and Mary (Price) Hunt, born at Huntsburg, New Jersey, April 12, 1848, where he died on January 15, 1911. He was educated at Washington and Lee University where he received his degree of B.S. in 1869. He received his M.D. degree at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, New York, 1873. He was president of the Brooklyn Pathological Society in 1887-1888, and the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1898-1899. He was a member of the Brooklyn Board of Education and the Brooklyn Board of Pharmacy. He was the author of about one hundred biographical sketches of the old masters of the healing art, published in the "Brooklyn Medical Journal."

Dr. Walter Benajah Chase was the son of Charles P. and Ruth D. (Baldwin) Chase. He was born November 18, 1842, at Lexington, New York.



He died in Brooklyn, New York, November 15, 1920. He held the position of president of the Greene County Medical Society in 1873-1875; Brooklyn Gynecological Society, 1892-1893; the Medical Society of the County of Kings, 1899; second district branch of the Medical Society of the State of New York, 1912. He was surgeon to the Long Island College Hospital, Nassau, Jamaica and Bethany Deaconesses Hospitals.

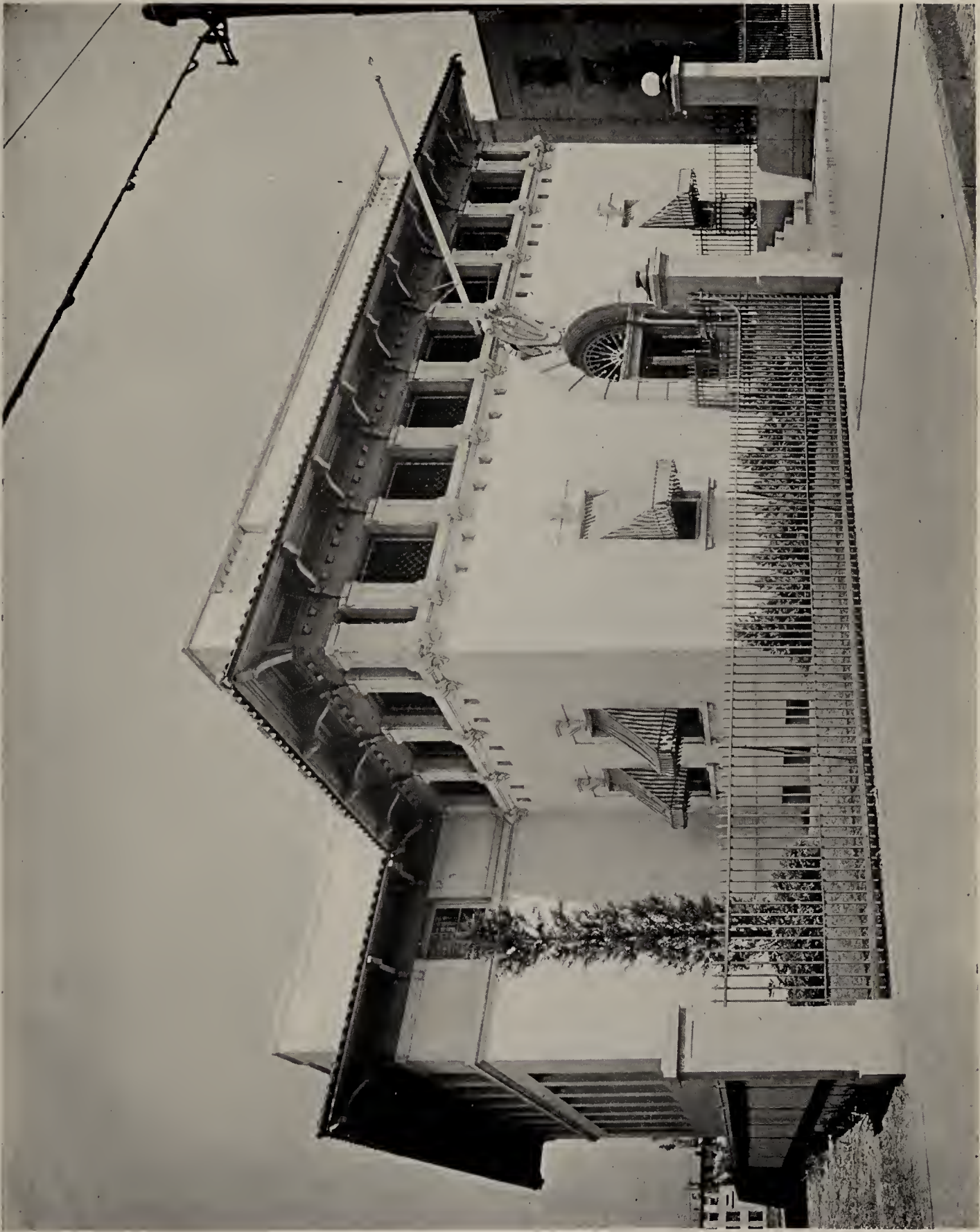
**Dr. John Evans Sheppard** was born at Shoe-Creek, New Jersey, June 1, 1859. He died at South Woodstock, Connecticut, September 13, 1915. He was educated at Haverford College where he received his A.B. in 1879, and graduating M.D. at the University of Pennsylvania in 1882. He was president of the Brooklyn Pathological Society in 1898-1899, and the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1904. He was clinical professor of otology at the Long Island College Hospital.

**Dr. James Watt Fleming** was the son of George Lyall and Jessie Grant (Wall) Fleming, both of Scotland. He was born April 24, 1854, in Edinburgh, and died in Brooklyn, New York, February 7, 1922. He received his medical education at the Long Island College Hospital, graduating in the class of 1880. He held the position of president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1905; Alumni Association of the Long Island College Hospital in 1908. He was a member of the Board of Regents of the Long Island College Hospital; physician to the Baptist Home, and physician to the Eastern District Hospital and the Long Island College Hospital.

**Dr. James MacFarlane Winfield** was the son of John Van Aken and Margaret Marie (Deyo) Winfield. He was born at Ulster Park, New York, May 11, 1859. He died in Brooklyn, New York, April 24, 1923. His medical education was received at Bellevue Hospital Medical College, where he graduated in the class of 1882. He held the position of president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1913; Brooklyn Dermatological and Genito Urinary Society, 1898-1904; Associated Physicians of Long Island, 1900-1901; New York Dermatological Society, 1901; Brooklyn Medical Library Association, 1905; American Dermatological Association, 1913. He was clinical professor of dermatology of the Long Island College Hospital in 1905-1920.

**Dr. Stephen Henry Lutz** was the son of Stephen M. and Margaret (Cook) Lutz. He was born in Elizabeth, New Jersey, May 16, 1873. He died in Brooklyn, New York, October 17, 1919. He was educated at the College of the City of New York. His medical education was at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, where he graduated in the class of 1893—in the same year he also received the degree of M.D., from Dartmouth Medical College. He was president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings in 1919, and the first president to die in office. He was president of the Alumni Association, College of Physicians and Surgeons on Long Island, in 1908. He was surgeon to Brooklyn Eye and Ear Hospital, Eastern District Hospital, Kings County Hospital, Jamaica Hospital and Bedford Hospital.

**Dr. John Aloysius Lee** was born in New Britain, Conn., in 1872. He died in Brooklyn, New York, April 4, 1920. He was educated at Yale University, where he received his A. B., in 1895, and his medical degree in the same university in 1897. He was president of the Medical Society of the County of Kings



BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
Red Hook Branch: Richards Street and Visitation Place; Erected 1915.





in 1920, and the second president to die in office. He was president of the Brooklyn Surgical Society in 1911-1912. He was surgeon to St. Mary's and Kingston Avenue Hospitals.\*

**Brooklyn State Hospital**—The Brooklyn State Hospital stands in the geographical centre of Greater New York. On the east is Utica Avenue, on the west Albany Avenue, on the north Winthrop Street and on the south Clarkson Avenue. It is accessible from New York by the subway, Brighton Beach line, to Church Avenue, where a transfer is made, and by other routes.

In the early days of Kings County the milder cases of so-called insanity were cared for in poorhouses, while the more violent were sent to Bloomingdale Asylum. In 1830 the Superintendent of the Poor of Kings County bought seventy acres in Flatbush and built a County House. In 1837 they contracted for a lunatic asylum and workhouse on the County Farm. Laws passed in 1844 provided for a new asylum; but there are no records to show when it was finished. In 1852 laws authorized a loan to enlarge the hospital connected with the almshouse. This was intended for asylum as well as hospital uses, for in 1853 and in 1855 more money was applied to the lunatic asylum on the County Farm. The Kings County Lunatic Asylum was adopted for its name. It became the Long Island State Hospital and is now the Brooklyn State Hospital. The building as it stands was opened in 1854 or thereabouts. The additions were completed in 1869. The property was turned over to the State in 1914, although it had been used as a State hospital since 1895.

Dr. Stiles says in his history that the first almshouse in Kings County stood on the south side of Nassau Street about 100 feet from Jay Street, surrounded by two acres of land. It was a large frame building. A lower room served as a police station or lockup. In 1824 nineteen and three-quarters acres were bought from Leffert Lefferts near Fort Greene as a site for a poorhouse and hospital. In 1824 the supervisors were empowered by law to buy not more than 200 acres as the site for a poorhouse, the cost not to exceed \$7,000.

In March, 1829, the Board of Supervisors, created in 1703, appointed a committee to report on the expediency of establishing a county poorhouse, and whether the almshouse in Brooklyn could be used until a county poorhouse was completed. The committee reported favorably, and in August, 1829, the Supervisors adopted a resolution favoring the building of a county poorhouse.

Superintendents of the Poor were appointed by the Supervisors in 1830 and ordered to prepare estimates and plans. The Supervisors bought the Martense farm in Flatbush of seventy acres, and the County House was built. The Superintendents of the Poor, reporting to the Supervisors in 1832, mention three inmates of the lunatic asylum who had been connected with the poorhouse. In 1832 two lunatics and an idiot are mentioned.

In 1837 a lunatic asylum and workhouse were undertaken on the County Farm. In the report for that year the Superintendents said that the number of persons at the lunatic asylum boarded out by the county were eight. In 1838 six were being boarded at Bloomingdale and \$3,382.90 was expended in building the new asylum. On August 1, 1838, there were twenty lunatic paupers in the

\* Compiled from Dr. Frank D. Jennings Inaugural Address, January 17, 1922, before the Medical Society of the County of Kings; from the 1903 "Medical Library and Historical Journal"; from the "Brooklyn Medical Journal" of February, 1902; from the "Souvenir Program of the Graeco-Roman Festival" of 1899; from the "Long Island Medical Journal" of October, 1923; special articles by William Schroeder, M. D., Chairman of the Historical Committee of the Medical Society of the County of Kings, and through information and documents furnished by Charles Frankenberger, Librarian, of the Kings County Medical Library.



poorhouse. In August, 1839, fourteen lunatics were received and in 1840 they numbered sixteen.

In 1844 a committee recommended a new building of wood, filled in with brick and covered with shingles, 110 feet long, 33 feet wide, three stories high, with a basement underneath, "calculated to meet, not only the present, but the future wants of the county," and accommodating sixty patients. The cost was to be between \$8,000 and \$9,000. The building actually built was 86 by 36 feet, pursuant to a law passed at Albany. It was probably the Old Lodge, standing where the old hospital stands today, and at the time of its construction moved to the rear of the block near Winthrop Street. In August, 1844, the Supervisors borrowed \$6,000 to erect a new asylum on the County Farm. In November \$2,000 was added for this work. In 1845 the committee recommended the establishment of a clubroom and chapel in the old lunatic asylum and planted trees and shrubbery about the buildings. The Superintendents reported the completion of the new almshouse in 1845 and the physician in charge added: "The good effects of the facilities afforded by the new buildings are very manifest in the conduct and in the feelings of the patients. The want of room in the old buildings and the restraint upon the patients occasioned thereby led them to suppose they were prisoners, instead of patients, especially those who were inclined to be furious and destructive." He also spoke of the healthful effects of the bathing rooms and apparatus for bathing.

In 1846 the physician of the almshouse and lunatic asylum reported that eighty-two had been admitted to the asylum, while the whole number from May, 1838, to August 1, 1846, was 237. The committee reported the greatest deficiency was the lack of sufficient sources of amusement and reading matter for the moderately insane.

In 1848 Dr. J. B. Zabriskie, appointed in 1832, died on February 10. Dr. T. M. Ingraham and Dr. Philip O. Hyett succeeded him in March. Dr. Ingraham died in 1895. Dr. Hyett was succeeded by Dr. D. Tilden Brown, the first resident physician. He resigned in 1851 to become superintendent of Bloomingdale. Dr. Thomas Turner, Dr. R. Cresson Stiles and Dr. Tunis Schenck followed. Dr. P. L. Schenck, appointed in 1881, was succeeded by Dr. John Allen Arnold, afterwards transferred to Blackwell's Island. Dr. Schenck was made superintendent of the Hospital for Incurables. Dr. Bullock, physician to the asylum, died in 1853 from typhus fever contracted in the discharge of duty.

In 1852 the question of a new lunatic asylum was settled by locating it on the County Farm, the plans following those of the asylum at Trenton. The county borrowed \$50,000.

In 1854 there were no adequate accommodations for the rapidly increasing number of smallpox cases. In May, 1854, the lunatic asylum had cost \$100,000 and was unfinished. In November it was reported that \$30,000 was needed to complete it. In December a tower 80 feet high was proposed to supply the county buildings with water; but operations were suspended until an adequate supply should be obtained by the City of Brooklyn.

The Committee on the Lunatic Asylum reported on December 29, 1854:

"Your committee cannot refrain from remarking on the inadequacy of the plans under which the work is now prosecuted. One Board of Supervisors will adopt plans; another board composed of different members may undo the work of the first. The first may contract to build under their plans. A third board composed yet of different members may see the edifice nearly completed under the contracts and plans of their predecessors; while a fourth and entirely new board may complete the work, and make a final settlement with the contractors, to the great detriment of all interests. However, when a new building is finished it is turned over to an entirely new board, to be at once made the subject of altera-

tions and repairs. The result of such a system has been, and is, exhibited at the County Farm in a series of buildings of extravagant cost, but partially supplied with water; and, in some instances with air; inadequately protected from fire, and in many other respects inconvenient. The committee therefore recommend that the buildings should be subject to less frequent changes in the management, and in the plans, specifications and contracts under which they are erected, or are to be erected."

On March 27, 1855, the County Treasurer was directed to borrow \$35,000 to complete the lunatic asylum. The building was reported completed on July 25 of that year. On July 31 there were 185 lunatic inmates. In August, 1856, Dr. Turner, resident physician, reported a daily average of 453 patients in the hospital and Dr. Baiseley, resident physician, reported 330 lunatics under treatment. He recommended the building of a wing for women to relieve the overcrowding. In 1859 Dr. Edwin R. Chapin reported 296 lunatics and 96 employees in the asylum. The old asylum was occupied and the new one was too full for comfort.

Two wings were added and the report for 1861 describes the asylum in complimentary terms, saying:

"It stands on a richly cultivated plain four miles southeast of the City Hall in Brooklyn and one mile east of the village of Flatbush. The edifice comprises the center building and four wings and presents a front of 450 feet. The buildings are constructed of brick, with brownstone water tables, window caps and sills, and are roofed with tin. There is a chapel in the main building, 46x24 feet and 25 feet high, with fixed seats or slips for 140 patients; and also an elevated gallery containing an organ and seats for strangers. The external appearance of the building is grand and imposing."

Dr. Chapin in the annual report for 1866 said the enlargement of the lunatic asylum should not be delayed. It had become crowded again to about the same degree as when the extension was proposed seven years before. Although two wings had been added it still lacked a wing at each extremity to reach the dimensions of the State Asylum of New Jersey after which it was modelled.

In 1867 the crowded state of the asylum was presented in a report, which obtained \$37,000 to make additions. The report added: "The price of board in the asylum for patients able to pay is \$5 a week; but \$4 was accepted from those who were unable to pay more. This entitles the patient to a diet a little superior to the ordinary fare. In no other respect is there any other distinction between the boarders and the county patients."

A Dime Savings Bank was established in the asylum about 1857. With the Graham legacy it produced quite an income for minor expenses. In 1867 the proceeds sufficed to buy reading matter for the inmates.

Dr. Chapin, physician in chief to the asylum, reported that additional wings to the asylum which were begun on May 1, 1868, and completed July 1, 1869, gave the whole asylum a frontage of 683 feet. The center building and two wings were commenced during the fall of 1853 and finished in October, 1855; two additional wings of the same dimensions were commenced on July 9, 1860, and finished in June, 1861. The new wings are considerably larger than the old, each measuring 442 feet. Each of the old is 327 feet around the outer walls. The asylum will now accommodate 700 patients.

A tower was erected adjoining the engine house to introduce pure air in the buildings. At the time it was excelled in point of convenience, capacity, management and regard for the comfort and health of the patients by but few in the State.

The Legislature of 1871 designated the Superintendents of the Poor of Kings County as Commissioners of Charities of the County of Kings.

Dr. Edwin R. Chapin became the resident physician of the lunatic asylum and Dr. Carlos F. MacDonald was appointed assistant. Two years later Dr.



Chapin resigned after sixteen years of service and Dr. MacDonald succeeded him, while Dr. Archibald Campbell became assistant. The number of patients was 718. The report of July 1874, shows Dr. James H. Blanchard was medical superintendent, but makes no reference to the resignation of Dr. MacDonald during the year. The institution was excessively overcrowded and one homicide occurred.

In 1874 it was stated that the practice of receiving pauper lunatics indiscriminately had overcrowded the institution to such an extent that the law that "no persons should be admitted unless committed by the County Judge or Surrogate" was rigidly enforced. The Commissioners immediately discharged from the asylum as fast as regard for humanity would permit, all persons not paupers not lawfully entitled to remain in the asylum; and after August 1876, no person, not a pauper, could be received into the asylum unless by competent judicial authority. This excluded all non-resident lunatics.

Dr. Blanchard in 1876 reported that it seemed almost impossible to find accommodations for patients. That frequently newly arrived patients were obliged to wait two or three days until a vacancy occurred to be admitted. That in a population of 500,000 people there was a daily average number of 800 persons classed as insane. In other words, 16 in every 10,000 population of the county were under treatment for lunacy. That there was no doubt within the next decade not less than 1,200 of these unfortunates would be assigned to the care of county authorities. The need of another asylum was set forth earnestly. A committee of the State Board of Charities had inspected the asylum with pleasant results, and weekly surgical clinics for a year were mentioned favorably. But "large numbers of visitors were coming out of morbid curiosity as to a menagerie with results injurious to the inmates."

It is apparent that lunatics were still cared for in the County Almshouse, for the report of 1875 says that seventy-six were transferred to the asylum.

The nursery building was altered into a hospital for incurables as well as for defective children likewise incurable. The building was completed in January, 1876, and in February 260 patients were transferred there—epileptics, idiots, imbeciles and defectives and demented persons—with quiet and order. At the time the asylum held 827 patients, with a capacity for only 600.

In 1877 it was charged that the employees were inefficient, duties were neglected, lunatics robbed or beaten to such an extent that the details were brought before a meeting in the Academy of Music composed of leading citizens of the city and county. A resolution was adopted condemning the management of the commissioners and the creation of a new board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections was recommended.

Dr. Blanchard resigned about 1877 for the report for July 31, 1878, speaks of Dr. R. L. Parsons as medical superintendent of the asylum. He wants a large room 60x90 feet in area for the general assembly of patients for lectures, readings, concerts, dramatic entertainments, dancing and the like. It could be adapted also to the use of women patients as a gymnasium or exercise room. He also recommends a new cook house and an omnibus drawn by stout draft horses be placed at the service of the patients to ride about the country. This was in conformity to a similar practice at the New York City Asylum, where it was said the most violent and excitable patients were taken out for excursions with good effect.

In 1880 the Legislature created the Board of Commissioners of Charities and Corrections. At the time, Dr. John C. Shaw was medical superintendent of the Asylum; Dr. Guy Daly was in charge of the Hospital for Incurables.

Dr. John A. Arnold, Dr. John S. Woodside, and Dr. John Frank were assistants to Dr. Shaw.

Early in 1881, W. M. Shipman, President of the Board of Charities and Corrections, represented to the Supervisors that the asylum and hospital for incurables were inadequate for the increasing needs of the inmates and the community; that the Lodge was unsafe, and the Asylum so overcrowded that the efforts of the physicians were defeated to a large extent.

In the June following, Dr. Shaw commends the steps taken to erect two wooden cottages near the asylum to hold from 80 to 100 patients. Six others had been recommended; but the doctor warned against temporary measures of relief and suggested that a large tract of land be acquired, in order to meet the needs of many patients.

Fire almost destroyed one wing of the asylum, February 21, 1862, and deprived 175 patients of their home in the coldest days of winter. Two were killed, and one died from cardiac syncope due to fright. The fire was caused by one of the patients wearing soiled clothing, which caught fire as he passed under a gas jet. Without noticing that in the garment fire was smouldering, he threw it into a closet where there was a straw bed.

As a result, the President of the Board of Charities and Corrections informed the Supervisors that the lunatic asylum was entirely inadequate to accommodate with any degree of comfort its large number of inmates, who were increasing daily. He asked for \$30,000 to effect improvements and repairs, in addition to the repairs made necessary by the fire.

In 1882, Dr. Shaw recommended ventilating turrets to free the wards from bad odors, changes in the heating plant to warm the sleeping rooms in certain wards and more land. At the time not a sleeping room in the asylum could be warmed; and this was a source of danger to the patients. The grounds he wanted were to provide a better diet, milk, eggs, fruit, and vegetables; and room for a special building to accommodate about 100 patients paying board. He also suggested a frame amusement hall to cost \$1,500 to \$3,000.

Work was found for many patients and underwear, bedding, towels, table spreads, embroidery knitting and other fancy work was turned out, to the advantage of the county.

At the time there were 868 patients.

Dr. John S. Woodside, its medical superintendent, reported the Hospital for Incurables much over-crowded. The cubic space in the sleeping rooms was 350 cubic feet, when it should have been 1,000. There was no adequate place to care for sick, violent or filthy patients. The smallest number sleeping in one room was ten or twelve. There were several cases of smallpox during the winter of 1882-83.

The hospital farm of 185 acres is at Creedmoor, near Jamaica, fourteen miles out. It provides a healthful resort for convalescents, and for those able to do farm and garden work. The farm produces a large quantity of potatoes, turnips, carrots, parsnips, cabbage, cauliflower, corn, onions, beans, beets, tomatoes, lettuce, chard, and cucumbers, with forage for the stock. A herd of 900 swine is maintained, yielding a large supply of pork.

In Flatbush, an acute hospital for 150 patients and a building for chronic cases, which will hold 400. Storehouses, a laundry and boiler room are recent additions.

The Brooklyn State Hospital District coincides with Kings County, but,



owing to the limited facilities for accommodation, only the weak and infirm, unable to journey to one of the other State hospitals, can be admitted.

The Managers from 1896 to 1922 were:

John G. Deubert, 1896-1900; Evan F. Smith, 1896-1900; Theron L. Smith, 1896-1900; Mary E. Jones, 1896-1900; Truman J. Backus, 1896-1900; Frances W. Goodrich, 1896-1897; Alexander E. Orr, 1896-1913; Silas B. Dutcher, 1896-1899; Bradish Johnson, during 1900; James McMahan, 1900-1913; George L. Thompson, 1901-1907; William B. Savage, 1902-1903; W. H. Good, 1902-1903; Henry W. Baldwin, 1902-1905; John Rooney, 1903-1905; William J. White, 1905-1911; Norman J. Dike, 1905-1906; Louisa M. Wingate, 1905-1908; Mrs. J. H. Burtis, 1905-1912; Hugo Hirsch, 1905 to present time; J. Edward Swannstrom, 1906-1910; Mabel L. Hastings, 1908-1912; Richard W. Bainbridge, 1911-1913; Grace W. Whitehall, 1912 to present time; M. F. McGoldrick, 1912 to present time; Mrs. Penelope B. Lee, 1913-1916; Henry R. Chittick, 1914-1916; Charles Partridge, 1914 to present time; George E. Bower, 1914-1918; Edwin H. Thatcher, 1917 to present time; Agnes D. Druhan, 1917 to present time; Herbert F. Gunnison, 1919 to present time.

#### GENERAL SUPERINTENDENTS

Dr. W. E. Sylvester, 1892-1896; Dr. C. M. Deming, 1896-1900.

#### MEDICAL SUPERINTENDENTS

Dr. H. M. Elliot, 1895-1904; Dr. O. M. Dewing, 1904-1910; Dr. W. L. Russell, 1910-1911; Dr. R. E. Doran, 1911-1912; Dr. E. M. Somers, 1912-1915; Dr. Isham G. Harris, 1915 to present time.

**The Brooklyn Hospital** was the first public hospital established in the city. The town in 1845 had reached a population of 55,000 without such an institution. Patients needing hospital care had to be moved painfully and tediously either to the County Hospital—now in Flatbush—or to the New York hospital.

So necessary was a public hospital that Mayor Cyrus P. Smith bought a house on Adams Street to be used for temporary relief. This, although hardly surviving its infancy, was the beginning of the Brooklyn Hospital. For it started an agitation which culminated, early in 1845 in the appointment of a committee to convene a public meeting to discuss the establishment of a public hospital. This committee was composed of Cyrus P. Smith, Robert Nichols and John Greenwood. The public meeting was held in February after which in May, 1845, the Brooklyn City Hospital was incorporated by the Legislature.

The president of the board of education—Mr. Smith—was president of the first board of trustees and Mayor Robert Nichols was vice-president. They drew up the first code of by-laws. Other trustees were William S. Packer, Augustus Graham, afterwards president of the board, Edgar Hicks, Henry E. Pierrepont, Edgar S. Bartow, A. A. Low, Elisha Hurlbut, Joseph Harper, Peter C. Cornell, Edward W. Dunham, George Howland, Henry Sheldon, Nicholas Luqueer and John H. Smith.

Meetings to raise funds were held at the Brooklyn Institute, first appeals being made to the churches. Responses were not encouraging. The newspapers deplored the scant attendance at a meeting held in Dr. Spear's church, and recorded that at a public meeting in the Institute only \$95 was given. Subscription books were taken about and the public asked to contribute. Private fortunes were not large in those days and small amounts only were given. Although subscription

books were given to forty physicians to distribute, only two—Drs. Cullen and Corsen—collected money in any significant amounts. In a few months \$9,000 was in hand, and the first large gift was received—\$20,000, from Captain F. Hebard, with certain stipulations as to the payment of interest on this amount during his lifetime.

The Committee on Lands in December, 1848, reported that it had purchased seventy-four lots from Mr. Howland at \$200 per lot, bounded by Raymond Street, DeKalb Avenue, Canton Street, and land owned by Kings County. This site on high ground was a part of the Cowenhoven's Woods territory, and was the site of Fort Putnam. The section was again fortified and called Fort Greene, which name it retains. Little more than a decade was to pass before its wards were taxed by soldiers wounded in a war to preserve that Union which their forefathers, on that very spot, had fought to bring forth.

Funds being slow to accumulate, officials realized some time must elapse before a regular hospital could be built, and so in 1846 bought a frame house on Jackson Street—later Hudson Avenue—from the Misses Titus and therein opened a temporary hospital, demands for which were more urgent every day. The first medical staff consisted of Drs. T. L. Mason, J. S. Thorne and Daniel Ayres, attending surgeons, and Drs. H. I. Cullen, Purcell Cook, C. R. McClellan and C. L. Mitchell, who took care of medical cases.

From various sources a medical library was assembled, and to this a student could have access for \$2.50 yearly. If found guilty of "profane swearing" he would be deprived of the privilege. Mr. and Mrs. Bare were the first attendants and resided at the hospital. Dr. William Smith was the first interne and December 10, 1846, the first patient was admitted. The fact that another application for admission was on file became an item to be spread on the minutes.

The first report of the hospital was published in 1850 and showed that, for the year 1848-9, ninety patients had been treated, sixty medical and thirty surgical, with ten per cent mortality.

Difficulties of surgery may be judged by Dr. Ayres' first report: "Several capital operations have been performed, and at times the surgeons have been embarrassed to provide accommodations for their patients. When all rooms were occupied, it has been necessary to perform bloody operations in a ward before several sick patients."

Another man stated that he owned a carpenter shop in the vicinity, and that one day a surgeon had come from the hospital in great haste to borrow a saw with which to make an amputation.

A generous gift by Augustus Graham—whose donations amounted to \$38,000—made it possible to begin work on a new hospital building. Ground was broken, with appropriate exercises. Mr. Graham turned the first spadeful of old Fort Greene's sod, and on June 11, 1851, also laid the cornerstone, more than six years after the building of the hospital was first agitated.

Representative men and women of the city congregated on that gala day, the principal address being made by the Rev. F. A. Farley.

The main hospital building was opened April 28, 1852, a general invitation being extended to the public, among those attending being hundreds of school children brought by their teachers to see the modern Temple of Healing. Work in the temporary hospital was transferred to the new building.

Nine additional lots were purchased on November 13, 1858, on Raymond Street, for \$7,000, and in this same year a Pathological Hall, designed for the study of Pathological Anatomy, was built. This was the second hospital in the



country to have a separate building for such study, Bellevue being the first. Autopsies and coroner's inquests were held there, and lectures in pathology.

Dr. J. C. Hutchison, a leading surgeon and active member of the visiting staff, made the inaugural address and congratulated the medical profession that the hospital trustees not only recognized the value of such humane institutions to their fellowmen, "but were not unmindful that they should also be made adjuvant to the science of medicine."

In 1869 when the Orthopedic Infirmary was opened a part of Pathological building was utilized for its work. Under Dr. Hutchinson's direction, this dispensary became very active, poor patients seeking its relief from all over Long Island.

Later the Pathological building became the nurses' home. While not ideal for the purpose by its original design, it was made more attractive by the addition of a wide veranda, which partially with its delightful location, made up for interior inconveniences.

From 1862 to 1866, many sick, injured and wounded soldiers and sailors were cared for; while in November, 1880, the Brooklyn Hospital Training School for Nurses was opened, making it the first training school for nurses in the city. This was organized by women connected with the Fruit and Flower Mission and was under the control of a board of women managers. Mrs. Seth Low was its first president and Miss Snyder first superintendent. Others active in its affairs were Mrs. F. P. Bellamy, Mrs. T. J. Backus and Mrs. T. R. French.

The school occupied a rented house on Adelphi Street, where in 1882, its first class of five pupils was graduated. In June the nurses undertook the care of the patients in the Long Island College Hospital, performing this service several months. This same year a part of Pathological building was given the nurses as a home, and as the classes grew, the whole building became necessary for their use. In 1891 the school was turned over by the Ladies Board and came under the management of the hospital's regular Board of Trustees.

The present year (1924) marks the forty-fourth year of its work, and is, as well, the sixty-fourth anniversary of the founding of the first nurses' training school by Florence Nightingale at St. Thomas' Hospital in London.

In order to offset the impression that the Brooklyn institution might be a corporation supported by the city proper, its name was changed March 10, 1883, from "The Brooklyn City Hospital" to "The Brooklyn Hospital."

Ambulance service was established in 1890, responding the first year to 971 calls. It ministered in that thickly populated Navy Yard section, on the river front where many manufacturing plants were operated, and in the busy down-town areas. The service grew until, in 1910, the ambulances were answering 2,300 calls annually, necessitating the maintenance of three outfits.

In 1893, a four-story extension was built on the south end of the hospital costing \$60,000. This was given largely by the Board of Trustees. The basement was utilized for a steam laundry while the first floor was used for dispensary work. An interlocking system of referring and reporting patients between the dispensary and hospital did much to increase interest and benefit to the public. Special features were the cystoscopic and night gynecological clinics.

The second floor, occupied by the obstetrical department, was furnished in honor of Anne Davidson Bedell Low by her son and called the Low Maternity. The third floor contained private rooms, well away from the street noises and made attractive by a southern exposure and glimpses into the tree tops and the park. This additional space allowed the hospital to accommodate 170 patients. In

November, 1910, the social service department was organized and in 1912 the Herriman Dispensary opened.

Beginning in 1914, the general hospital was rebuilt at a cost of over \$1,000,000, and in 1920 included 300 beds. There were 40 private rooms, 56 private ward beds and over 200 general ward beds. In the dispensary 275 patients were treated daily, the hospital occupying a five-acre plot of ground opposite Fort Greene's parkage of 30 acres.

Excavation for the new building was started June 30, 1914, and September 14, 1915, the new home for nurses was opened, containing 90 rooms. An addition was opened in February, 1921, accommodating 85 additional nurses. Each nurse had her own room, the building being equipped with all modern conveniences and comforts, with library, large attractive reception room and three smaller reception rooms furnished for the entertainment of friends. It had two kitchenettes, two class rooms, diet class room, sewing room, small laundry for the nurses' private use, pleasant roof garden, a solarium and three verandas. Connected with the home was a large lecture hall, seating over 100 persons. The training course covered a period of two years and three months, of which three months was considered the probationary period in which the applicant decided definitely whether she cared to complete the training course, and the directress of nurses discovered whether the applicant was adapted and qualified to succeed in the work. The training school was registered as maintaining a proper standard of instruction by the Regents of the University of the State of New York.

In 1920, the graduating class of nurses was the largest in the school's history, consisting of 30. Affiliation with the army school of nursing was completed.

The hospital's busy social service department took care of 1,053 cases in 1920.

In November, 1915, patients were transferred from the old building into the east pavilion of private rooms and wards and the west pavilion which included, besides the general wards, pathological laboratories, storerooms, kitchens and dining rooms. Automobile ambulances were installed during this year.

November 22, 1915, marked the taking down of original hospital buildings, to be replaced with the north pavilion, which included, besides nurseries and maternity wards, a pharmacy, conference amphitheatre, administrative offices, operating rooms and house staff quarters. The new main offices were opened June 17, 1916, and the north pavilion's new operating rooms used for the first time, March 22, 1917.

During the World War, from September, 1917, to March, 1919, the top floor of the west pavilion, consisting of 60 beds, was occupied by sick and wounded or injured sailors referred by the naval hospital. February 3, 1920, nine additional private patient rooms were opened on the top floor of the east pavilion. February 1, 1921, the west wing of the nurses' home was completed and occupied. April 1, 1921, ambulance service was discontinued.

This year marks plans for additions to three hospital structures. The east pavilion will have more rooms for private patients; there will be another floor in the dispensary for enlarged X-ray quarters; 20 extra rooms for help, and probably an enlarged laboratory. All constructions will be of tapestry brick.

The hospital boasts the proud fact that Walter B. Reed, world famous yellow fever expert, was one of its graduates of 1871. With the United States health service and at the head of a commission, he cleared Cuba of yellow fever, proving conclusively that the *Stegomyia fasciata* species of mosquito is the one which carries the disease, and that the scourge is spread by the bite of such an insect.



Walter Reed also did excellent service in the fight against typhoid fever in army camps.

The Brooklyn Hospital owes its prestige and existence to unselfish labor, gifts of many persons and human enterprise. In the early 70's Dr. Thomas S. Stooke gave liberally, and among other outstanding patrons was Dr. John Haslett who took a personal interest in its affairs and who was President of the Board of Trustees for 26 years. In succession, Peter C. Cornell, William G. Low, and Alexander M. White were presidents. Associated with them were such well known men as Isaac H. Frothingham, Edward Merritt, Henry Sanger, Henry E. Pierrepont who, with others, rendered the hospital distinguished service. Dr. D. E. Kissam served on the surgical staff, actively and as consultant, 42 years; while Dr. S. Fleet Spier served the staff 26 years. Dr. J. D. Rushmore was also a member of this staff.

In 1910 the hospital had granted diplomas to 187 physicians, 53 of whom were practicing in the city. Dr. George H. Fowler as the hospital's surgeon-in-chief for many years, not only enriched it by his professional skill, but gave it remarkable ability as an executive. He reorganized and improved the service. Dr. Francis H. Stuart was for long years the oldest active member of the professional staff.

The trustees and officers in 1921 were: President, Harold I. Pratt; Vice-President, Henry F. Noyes; Secretary, Bayard S. Litchfield; Treasurer, Edwin P. Maynard; Assistant Treasurer, David H. Lanman.

Trustees: Frank Lyman, Frank C. Munson, Theodore L. Frothingham, Henry F. Noyes, Charles F. Neergaard, Henry L. Batterman, Walter St. J. Benedict, William H. Cary, Edwin P. Maynard, Howard S. Hadden, Harold I. Pratt, George Hadden, David H. Lanman, Francis L. Noble, Baynard S. Litchfield, Richardson Pratt, William G. Low, E. LeGrand Beers, R. Stuyvesant Pierrepont, Jackson A. Dykman, W. S. Morton Mead, Eugene A. Widmann, David G. Leggett, and the mayor of the city, ex-officio.

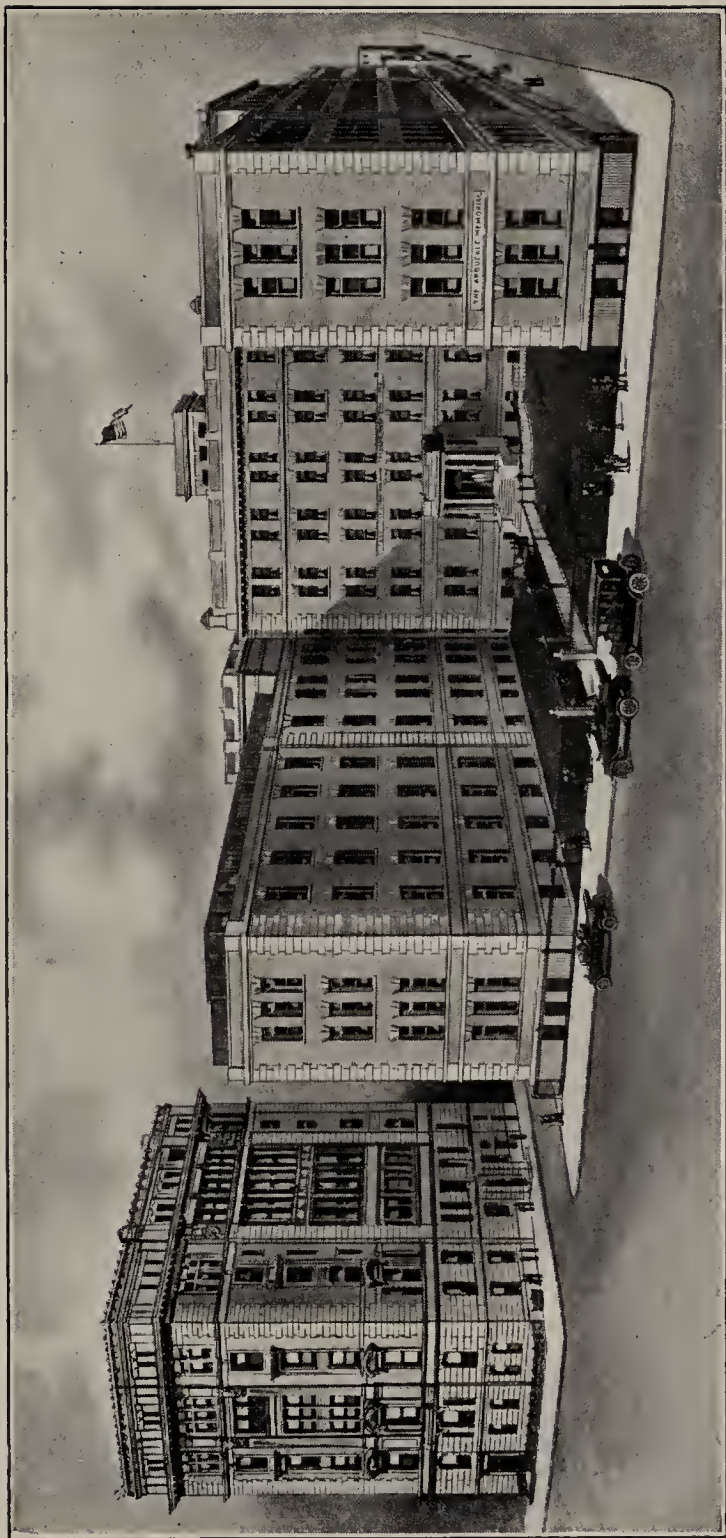
The superintendent of the hospital was Dr. Willis G. Nealley.

**Long Island College Hospital.**—Woven into the life of Brooklyn with a record of sixty-eight years of service to rich and poor, soldier, sailor, and citizen, is the Long Island College Hospital, which is able to accommodate four hundred and fifty patients—seventy-five private and three hundred and seventy-five public.

Located at 340 Henry Street in the South Brooklyn section at the junction of the Heights and South Brooklyn, it has always stood for constructive progress, and associated with it have been some of the most prominent citizens and physicians of the city.

Besides its regular hospital work, it maintains the Long Island Medical College, a nurses' training school, started in March, 1883; a social service department, and a pathological laboratory which does outside work, and work for institutions not equipped for such service.

The hospital was a part of the naval base during the World War and the Navy Hospital unit with the A. E. F. was composed principally of members of its staff. During the Civil War it took care of sick and wounded for the Union Army. Later, in the Spanish-American War, it did most of the work for the United States forces which came here, ministering to four hundred and twenty-one men. When the United States took the control of immigration from the State, the Long Island Hospital took care of its sick until hospital buildings were erected on



LONG ISLAND COLLEGE HOSPITAL





Ellis Island. When these burned down, the hospital again took care of most of this work.

The hospital is a \$2,500,000 plant, and includes the Henry W. Maxwell memorial building and the Arbuckle memorial building—which comprise the main structure; the Polhemus memorial clinic, of which the six upper stories are used for the medical college and the two lower for outdoor patients; the Hoagland laboratory building; the Dudley memorial building which, with the Herriman and John A. McCorkle memorial buildings, constitutes the nurses' home; two small temporary one and two-story brick buildings erected eight years ago, and at least three other private houses which are lodgings for the staff.

The hospital absorbed the Brooklyn German General Dispensary, organized in March, 1856, at 132 Court Street—later 146 Court Street. In 1857 this dispensary was housed at 145 Court Street—later 217 Court Street—in a small, three-story brick building. The consulting physicians were Drs. Augustus Kalb (Kalt?) and Gustave Brauenlich, and the consulting surgeons Louis Bauer and Charles Neuhaus. The resident physician was Daniel Pfeiffer, and the cupper and leecher was named Hermann.

The dispensary was open to the poor from 2 to 4 o'clock, except on Sundays. Its first case was treated March 17, 1856, an early "*Diarium*" recording the patient's name as Louis Prell, 3 Hamilton Avenue, suffering from "*Splenitis chronica*."

A meeting was held at the dispensary, October 27, 1857, which was the beginning of the Long Island College Hospital. Samuel W. Slocum was presiding officer and C. N. Bovee secretary. The meeting decided it was expedient to establish a charitable institution in Brooklyn to be called St. John's Hospital. Those present pledged their support and co-operation. A committee was appointed to draft a charter and by-laws and to formulate plans for immediate temporary organization of the hospital on the basis of the German General Dispensary. The committee was: Cornelius Dever, Daniel Ayres, Harry Messenger, and the chairman.

The hospital passed from the hands of its original organizers November 6th. As the German General Dispensary it treated eight hundred and fifty patients. The dispensary proposed, through Dr. Louis Bauer, to transfer its furniture and property at 145 Court Street to the hospital, together with the lease. Samuel Sloan, Daniel Chauncey and Harry Messenger were appointed to procure incorporation. The following were appointed on the staff: Physicians—Drs. Gustavus Graeunlich, R. L. Olmstead and John Byrne; surgeons—Drs. Daniel Ayres and Louis Bauer. Dr. Herman Zundt was named house surgeon and physician, Messrs. Samuel W. Slocum and Daniel Chauncey the committee of management, and Cornelius Dever, treasurer.

At the third meeting of the projectors of St. John's Hospital the regents had grown from twenty to twenty-five; there was \$115 in the bank, and L. K. Miller was added to the committee. Charles Storrs gave \$100 and became the first life member.

Soon after the word "College" was introduced—"St. John's College Hospital"; and the name was again changed December 23, 1857, to the "Long Island Hospital and Medical College." The name "Long Island College Hospital" appeared February 4, 1858.

Joseph A. Perry's house on Henry Street between Pacific and Amity Streets became the hospital's first home. The lot was a part of the Ralph Patchen farm. The owner, Dennis Perkins, transferred the property for \$31,250, on May 1, 1858.



Samuel Sloan gave his bond for the money, and Daniel Chauncey, N. E. James, H. Messenger, R. L. Delisser, Samuel W. Slocum, Jacques Cortelyou, Joseph Hegeman, Livingston K. Miller and Cornelium Dever each gave \$400. Dr. Ayres reported nine men willing to take life membership at \$100.

The Legislature granted a charter March 6, 1858, and the board elected: President, Samuel Sloan; secretary, C. N. Bovee; treasurer, Cornelius Dever. The council was composed of Drs. Chauncey L. Mitchell, William H. Dudley, Theodore L. Mason, and John Byrne. Drs. Daniel Ayres and Louis Bauer were appointed to the faculty with orders to fill its membership forthwith.

The eighteen regents present agreed to pay \$100 each as life members, and pledged themselves to lend the institution \$500 each before the following April. The Brooklyn City Railroad gave \$50.

The circular letter, of which 2,000 were sent out, brought money, furniture and utensils. It related that, in proportion to its population, Brooklyn had invested less capital in such charitable projects than any other city in America or Europe.

Medical gentlemen attached to the institution, it stated, received no pay for their services. Besides the \$100 life membership, it held out a \$300 life membership permitting the holder to educate one medical student or two nurses free. Larger donations were to obtain further acknowledgment and rewards.

Mr. Esslinger was appointed first warden April 17, 1858. The committee on furniture for the new building contracted for twenty-five beds at \$4 each. With these, housekeeping began in the Perry mansion. The dispensary was vacated about May 1st.

An "inauguration festival" was held June 3d at the Athenæum, which took the form of a dinner attended by two hundred persons. Samuel Sloan presided. Present were Dr. J. S. Francis of New York, Archbishop Hughes, Charles Christmas, Bishop Loughlin, Richard O'Gorman, the Rev. William H. Milburn, Samuel I. Prime, the editor; Rev. Joseph A. Schmeller, the Rev. Dr. R. S. Storrs, the Rev. Dr. Frederick A. Farley, James S. T. Stranahan, A. Augustus Low, S. B. Chittenden, John H. Raymond, president of the Polytechnic Institute; Dr. James R. Wood, C. C. Tracey, and leading members of the medical profession of Brooklyn and New York.

Samuel Sloan, president of the Regents, summed up the work in these words:

"This institution whose inauguration we celebrate owes its existence to a few warm and generous hearted citizens of German birth, who designed at first to minister to the suffering poor in a thickly populated section of our city. In this effort their devotion, zeal and attention soon enlisted the sympathy of others who, with their united energies have in a few months soothed the suffering and ministered to the relief of nearly 2,000 applicants. Many of these cases were of intense severity and involved surgical skill, the results reflecting highest credit upon the talent and ability of the professional gentlemen who have rallied around this struggling charity, who not only contribute their time, but their means, for the relief of the unfortunate."

The dinner netted the hospital \$79.62. It was decided to spend \$2,500 for alterations and improvements. The joint board of the council and faculty raised \$2,200. A lecture by Ralph Waldo Emerson realized \$100.

The new building was opened in 1858. Medical college work was pressed in 1859. The joint board was urged to speed in organizing the medical college department and with making a complete plan, with list of candidates, for the several chairs. A lot on Henry Street given the institution by Nicholas Luqueer was pledged to several regents, in August, for a loan of \$50 each to meet pressing

debts; while in September, the treasurer reported debts exceeding \$5,000. It was resolved no new patients would be received excepting accident cases.

Meanwhile, the regents having laid upon the joint board of council and faculty the task of selecting professors, recommended the speedy opening of the medical college. The committee, of which Dr. T. L. Mason was chairman, had induced foremost men to accept positions on the teaching staff. Suddenly the regents returned their recommendations owing to financial embarrassment.

But they had not reckoned with the joint committee. It wrote a letter to the regents. It set forth that the joint board's task bore directly and forcibly upon the public interests of the inhabitants of Brooklyn; that the members had done their duty assigned them by the regents, even at the risk of their reputations for sound judgment and integrity. Finally it declared in polite language that it had expected a regents' board holding such an honorable and trustworthy position and important public trusts, to redeem any obligation it had caused its agents to perform. It urged the regents to reconsider their decision; stating that, whereas in the first place their joint board of council and faculty had offered to guarantee \$3,000 to carry on the collegiate department if the regents would raise enough money to cancel the floating debt, take steps to liquidate the mortgage and thus place the institution on a permanent basis, it now withdrew any such demands, and would assume the whole cost of the teaching department for the first course.

That letter was responsible for the continuance of the institution. The regents reconsidered and reconfirmed the joint board's report, the vote standing ten ayes, five noes, while one refused to vote. Then followed the sale of the property at auction to Dr. William H. Dudley for \$28,550. There was a gala "reopening" of the hospital, with the addition of the medical school, March 25, 1860, following its sale January 12th to Dr. Dudley, in whom the title remained vested until 1865.

The "re-opening" took the form of evening commencement exercises. In the audience were many first citizens, who were deeply interested. The exercises were opened with a prayer for the success of the hospital by the Rev. Francis Vinton.

Students who had matriculated for the first lecture course were addressed by Dr. Mason, who promised them that "nothing should be wanting on the part of their teachers to make them theoretically and practically acquainted with their noble profession."

The first commencement was held in the chapel of the Packer Institute on July 24, 1860. The "Brooklyn Eagle" chronicled that the hospital had pulled through because of the self-sacrificing spirit of those at its head. Dr. Storrs offered prayer, while Dr. Mitchell addressed the students and read the Hippocratic oath. Then Dr. Dudley, the registrar, presented the class for the degree, naming each of the twenty-one, after which Dr. Mason, president of the collegiate department, conferred the degree of doctor in medicine, in Latin, giving each a diploma, Dr. Arthur Du Berceau being the recipient of the first. The valedictory was delivered by S. J. Morrison.

The council proposed to increase the accommodations at a cost of \$6,000. But the regents instructed the finance committee to work out a plan to repay Dr. Dudley. A lot in Henry Street, given to the hospital by Nicholas Luqueer, was transferred to him.

Samuel Sloan resigned the presidency after weathering many storms. H. B. Cromwell was elected president, and directed to ascertain from Dr. Dudley for what sum he would agree to carry on the hospital department for the current year. Mr. Cromwell resigned after six months because he had been unable to



obtain the necessary assistance to carry on the institution. Mr. Sloan was re-elected. He obtained pledges of \$8,500 for the hospital, a portion of which had been paid to Dr. Dudley. He asked for a committee to adjust the accounts with the doctor. The council agreed to assume again all responsibilities of the collegiate department, and the hospital faculty and staff to carry on the hospital department without charge to the hard-pressed regents.

From a series of lectures \$415 was made, while a money-raising committee obtained \$9,244.18.

The Civil War being in progress, the hospital by July, 1862, had received one hundred and twenty-five wounded soldiers. When a meeting was called on December 29th at the home of Dr. Dudley, 291 Henry Street, it appeared that only \$1,300 was due him. State funds to assist hospitals had brought in \$963.

Dr. Mason reported December 29, 1862, that between six hundred and seven hundred hospital cases had been treated in the outdoor department, and that the teaching department had been self-sustaining. Application was ordered made to the common council for city funds for hospital purposes.

In March, 1864, Dr. T. L. Mason, elected a regent, reported that a few friends had subscribed \$7,000 toward paying off the hospital debt, amounting to \$22,000, provided the whole amount be raised and the institution freed from liabilities. In the meanwhile Theodore Polhemus, Jr., had been elected president. Dr. Mason, the president, related that during the six years of the hospital's existence, the institution had relieved more than 40,000 patients, and the twelve months previous had treated 1,000 indoor and as many outdoor patients. The college was out of debt for current expenses, and the permanent debt had been reduced from \$32,000 to \$21,000, while \$5,000 had been spent for alterations, improvements and furniture, making, in all, an outlay of \$16,000. The only debt not provided for was \$21,000, secured by mortgage. Toward this \$18,000 had been subscribed on condition that the whole amount be raised. In order to procure the \$21,000, and \$5,000 additionally for hospital maintenance, the regents offered special medical service to those subscribing \$10; \$100 won a life membership and similar medical privileges, while \$500 allowed life membership and a free scholarship in the medical school or two free scholarships in the school of nursing. Larger donations secured similar privileges with other acknowledgements.

The meeting on December 5, 1864, showed that \$22,800 had been obtained by the campaign for \$25,000. Dr. Dudley had advanced \$10,874.94 to meet the hospital's current expenses from January 14, 1860, to February 20, 1862; \$9,659.18 had been repaid, \$3,000 of which was by himself, balance due being \$1,215.76. Samuel Sloan and other regents and citizens had contributed toward the debt. Theodore Polhemus died and Joseph Ripley was elected president.

The council that year declined to be responsible for the hospital expenses. The first superintendent was ordered employed on June 27, 1864. In 1865, a stable on Pacific Street was converted into a dispensary at a cost of \$1,000, and a matron appointed at \$200 a year. Including \$4,000 from the city, there was money enough in the treasury to pay off the mortgage on the institution and the floating debt through November. The Theodore Polhemus estate had given \$5,000.

In January, 1866, the last balance due on the Dudley mortgage was paid, leaving \$7,000, which was applied to the floating debt. The deed to the Long Island Hospital from William H. Dudley and his wife was executed May 11, 1865. John James Van Nostrand was elected president in 1866 to succeed Mr. Ripley, resigned.

In 1868 an additional building was erected on Pacific Street, improvements made in the old building, and a loan of \$20,000 was authorized. The new wing was opened March 18, 1869. In 1870, the hospital was able to pay one-half the deficiency—\$3,500—for operation of the collegiate department.

A new wing to accommodate additional United States sailors was built for \$12,000 in 1870, and opened at the beginning of the collegiate term. Ambulance service was also inaugurated.

A reading and recitation term beginning in the fall and lasting till the regular term opened, was inaugurated October 7, 1872. The faculty at this time included Drs. Jarvis S. Wight, William Wallace, Joseph H. Raymond, Edward S. Bunker, Lewis D. Mason, John D. Rushmore, Lewis S. Pilcher, Henry N. Read, and William H. Bates. The last reading term was held in 1897, when the regular term was lengthened and the graded four-year course adopted.

In 1873, a pavilion hospital was constructed at a cost of \$300, and the "city ambulance service" established with one ambulance at the Long Island College Hospital and the other at the Eastern District Hospital. In 1874, a dissecting room was built for \$3,000, the faculty contributing \$500 of this sum. Mr. Van Nostrand resigned as president and Thomas H. Rodman was elected. In 1881, the Brooklyn Pathological Society was invited to hold its meetings at the hospital.

The professors had to use a one-story wooden structure facing Henry Street for lectures, and the faculty proposed that if the regents would replace it with a \$6,000 two-story brick building they would pay off the debt in yearly installments. A mortgage of \$12,500 was authorized; the regents raised \$4,650 to make the building still more commodious, and the alumni and undergraduates gave a musical to buy the seats for the new amphitheatre.

In 1882, the pathological laboratory was opened, and in 1883, sanitary science was added to the curriculum.

The school for nurses was started in 1883, and a nurses' home established May 1st. The regents allotted \$100 as a prize for the student passing the best examination.

In November, 1884, a building to be used for a nurses' home and the lying-in department of the hospital was authorized to cost \$14,000.

Dr. William H. Dudley died October 9, 1886, providing in his will for a medal to be given each year to that member of the medical graduating class who wrote the best report or thesis on a case in the medical ward. Regent Henry Maxwell, in remembrance of Dr. Dudley, established another medal known as "The Dudley Memorial Medal" to be awarded for the best student thesis or report on a case in the surgical ward.

Outdoor obstetric service was established in 1887. Mrs. James Humphrey in 1888 left \$10,000 to the institution. The alumni association was represented on the board of regents by Dr. Z. T. Emery. By the will of John James Van Nostrand, the hospital received \$3,000. The department of orthopedic surgery in the dispensary was established in 1890, and improvements to cost \$25,000 were authorized, to consist of a new story on the Amity Street wing and the portion of the building between the wing and the centre building.

A store on Atlantic Avenue was rented for temporary use as a chemical laboratory for medical instruction. In 1891, three courses of lectures in different years were required for graduation, and Dr. J. M. Van Cott, Jr., was sent to Berlin to obtain a supply of tuberculin from Dr. Koch for hospital use.

Bequests of \$5,000 from R. P. Buck and John Ruszits were received in 1891. In July, work was started on a vault in the hospital yard for two steam boilers,



an engine room, and laundry. A lavatory building was begun for the nurses' and female wings, and fire escapes authorized. These operations cost \$35,000.

In 1892, the department of electro-therapeutics was opened in the dispensary. A \$1,000 fund was sent by the Rev. Charles L. Mitchell, of Winchester, Mass., to establish a prize in the college in memory of his father, Dr. C. L. Mitchell. Interest was to be used to purchase books or instruments. The faculty decided to award it to the student best qualified in all departments of medicine. Thomas S. Moore was elected president of the board of regents. In 1894, William W. Browning, professor of anatomy, gave a \$1,000 fund to establish the Corydon L. Ford prize for the student performing the best work in the dissecting room.

Henry Ditmas Polhemus died in 1895, having been a regent since 1872. In his memory his widow, Mrs. Caroline Herriman Polhemus, erected the Polhemus Memorial Clinic, devoting it to the relief of the worthy poor along the waterfront and the advancement of medical science. It was completed in 1897 at a cost of \$490,000, and Mrs. Polhemus added an endowment of \$800,000.

In June, 1897, a fair was held at the hospital which netted \$3,175.55. In November, 1897, the guild of the Long Island Hospital was established through the efforts of Mrs. Frank E. West, to provide infants' and children's underclothing or necessary garments for the sick poor in the hospital.

In April, 1898, the regents moved the dispensary to the Polhemus Memorial Clinic.

During the Spanish-American War a large part of the hospital was used for the sick and wounded. Of the four hundred and twenty-one men treated, only twelve died. The first soldier was entered July 17, 1898, and the last was discharged March 12, 1899.

Thomas S. Moore dying in April, 1899, Henry W. Maxwell was elected president of the board.

The alumni association was organized twenty years after the opening of the collegiate department on May 25, 1880, after six hundred and eighty-three men had been graduated. Its first meeting was convened in the amphitheatre of the hospital, J. S. White being temporary chairman, and F. H. Stuart secretary. First officers were: President, Dr. Alexander J. C. Skene; vice-president, James Watt; secretary, Francis H. Stuart; corresponding secretary, George H. Atkinson; treasurer, James J. Terhune.

In June a prize of \$100 was offered for the best essay written on a medical subject by an alumnus. Albert Leffingwell, class of 1874, won this, and the essay was published in the "Archives of Medicine" in 1882. Charles Storrs was the first life member. The alumni instituted an annual dinner, and in 1887, provided for a permanent historian. In 1888, Dr. Daniel Ayres presented a check for \$10,000 to the Hoagland laboratory. In 1894, the association erected a tablet to Dr. Samuel Glasgow Armor, dean of the college, on the north wall of the college lecture room. In 1899, Henry W. Maxwell, president of the board of regents, announced a subscription of \$10,000 toward a new hospital building.

Among leading physicians of Brooklyn who unselfishly gave years of their lives at the hospital were Dr. Alexander J. C. Skene (q. v.), Dr. John A. McCorkle, Dr. Joseph H. Raymond, at one time health commissioner of Brooklyn; Dr. Jarvis S. Wight, Dr. Elias H. Bartley, Dr. Thomas R. French, Dr. Charles Jewett, Dr. John O. Polak, Dr. Richard E. Shaw. The latter in 1924 had been associated with the hospital forty-three years. Entering the college in 1881, he served as pharmacist and later as superintendent from 1884 to 1921, a

period of about thirty-seven years. In 1924, he was supervisor of the marine and other departments.

In 1888, the Hoagland laboratory was built and equipped by Dr. Cornelius N. Hoagland, a regent, for about \$181,000.

In 1904, the Maxwell memorial building, which forms the south and central wings of the hospital, was erected in memory of Henry W. Maxwell, regent from 1881 to 1902, by his brother J. Rogers Maxwell, who succeeded him as president of the board of regents.

The Arbuckle memorial, comprising the north wing, was erected by Miss Christina Arbuckle and Mrs. Catherine Jamison, in memory of their brothers, Charles and John Arbuckle.

To the Dudley memorial building, which is the nurses' home, originally a three-story terra cotta and brick structure containing rooms, lavatories and assembly rooms, two additions were added. It was the corner building on Henry and Amity Streets. The "Herriman Memorial" addition formerly consisted of two apartment houses—a double and a single—on Henry Street which were remodeled and connected. Its "John A. McCorkle memorial" addition was formerly a four-story double apartment building on Amity Street. Dr. McCorkle was one of the visiting physicians of the hospital, and president of the college. The donors of both the Herriman and McCorkle buildings were Mrs. Horace C. Hazen and her sister, the former being given in memory of their parents. Dr. McCorkle had long been their family physician.

The "College of Medicine" of the Long Island College Hospital is the only medical school in Brooklyn, and has been since its establishment sixty-four years ago, March 30, 1860.

These days, about one-third of all the physicians practicing in Brooklyn and Queens are graduates of the hospital—or about eight hundred and sixty men. The school is attended by from three hundred to four hundred students yearly, and there is a graduating class of approximately seventy each season.

Students for the most part are drawn from Brooklyn, New York City, Connecticut, and New Jersey, though practically every state in the Union is represented. About one hundred and ten students can be accepted each year in the college's first-year class, and applicants are so numerous that each season hundreds have to be turned away. Figures in 1924 showed that five hundred men were seeking to be among the small accepted number. But the college will not take more students than facilities permit. A regular four-year course is followed, the second-year class numbering around ninety-five students; third-year class approximately eighty-five and seniors about eighty. The school ranks eleventh or twelfth in point of attendance out of the seventy medical colleges of America.

About ten years ago, students could be admitted to the college who had only a high school education as a foundation of knowledge. This was true practically everywhere. Now, the Long Island Medical School will not accept a man for entrance who has not had at least two years of college, and the tendency is to take those who have had the broadest fundamental education. The result is that, of the students at the hospital, more than twenty-five per cent have baccalaureate degrees. In demanding proper preparation, the college seeks to give a more intelligent, better trained class of physicians to its homefolks and outside states.

Graduating exercises are held in the Academy of Music, following a precedent of many years, the medical students and the hospital's group of trained



nurses receiving their diplomas on the same evening. In 1918, during the war, commencement was held at the hospital in order to reduce expenses.

The college is unique in that it has no university connection, and that it is owned by, and is an integral part of, a great hospital. Its students for years have had access to the thousands of cases treated at the Long Island College Hospital.

During 1922, two great innovations were introduced: the college became officially affiliated with the Department of Public Welfare and with the Medical Society of the County of Kings. Since the public welfare department cares for the sick poor of the city, the medical college students at once acquired the right to study in the Kings County Hospital of 1,500 beds, with the privilege of using the clinical material therein, under supervision of the faculty of the medical college, and to study in the Greenpoint Hospital of approximately three hundred beds.

The Public Welfare Department is qualified to undertake construction and maintenance, and steps are being taken to obtain funds to construct and maintain a building for the fundamental medical sciences. This building, which will be placed in the grounds of the Kings County Hospital, will be a unit of the medical school.

Co-operation with the Medical Society marks the first occasion in history that such co-operation has ever been effected, the system seeking more perfect graduate medical education. In 1921 the medical school offered for the first time a series of graduate courses. In 1922, the Medical Society, which represents the organized profession of the borough, proposed co-operation in such graduate education. The result is that the courses are offered under the auspices of the joint committee on graduate education, representing both the college and Medical Society. Possibilities are shown by the fact that to further the work, eleven hospitals in the city have opened their doors for teaching, representing co-operation of medical and educational units highly promising for the general good. These hospitals are: Brooklyn Home for Consumptives, Coney Island Hospital, Cumberland Hospital, Greenpoint and Jewish Hospitals, Kingston Avenue Hospital for Contagious Diseases, Norwegian and Long Island Hospitals, and St. Catherine's United Israel-Zion and Wyckoff Heights institutions.

The president of the college now is Dr. James Chidester Egbert, graduate of Columbia University, who is that institution's present director of the university extension work, as well as one of its professors of Latin. Dr. Adam M. Miller is dean. A Princeton graduate of 1901, he came to the College of Medicine from the College of Physicians and Surgeons at Columbia, where he had taught for eleven years. He came to the Brooklyn institution as professor of anatomy in 1914, which position he still holds, being appointed dean in 1921.

The medical college is now putting forth active effort to obtain additional laboratory buildings and endowment sufficient to equip and maintain them. A campaign for funds already has been made. The sum of \$500,000 was sought, which was included in the hospital's campaign for a million dollars, made in 1923, when the hospital further sought \$250,000 for the erection and equipment of a new home for nurses, and \$250,000 to liquidate hospital debts accumulated during the World War when no increased charges were made. While the drive accomplished little more than the liquidation of the debts, it obtained about \$300,000.

Out-of-town students house themselves, living in the Heights neighborhood or various parts of Greater New York. There are few student activities, most of the time being spent in application to medical work. Among the few are the

students' council, which not only concerns itself with student welfare but larger activities like the publication of "The Lichonian," the first four letters of which stand for "Long Island College Hospital," which the college year book, and the establishment of things like "The Students' Activities Fund," used for various school benefits. It also was the students' functioning body in the million dollar drive. Soon it expects to found a students' loan fund such as exists at many other colleges. The 1924 officers of the council were: President, Arnold J. de Veer; vice-president, Morris J. Glass; secretary, Max Grolnick; treasurer, George D. Appold.

To the class of 1924 goes the distinction of having conceived the idea of the year book, and launched the movement for it. Its class officers then were: President, Clarence A. Renouard; vice-president, Paul McGowan; secretary, Walter J. Shields; treasurer, Eugene R. Mazullo; sergeant-at-arms, Daniel W. Shea. Student council delegates were Joseph H. Schwab and Harold R. Hedden. Ben Borkow, of the class, was editor-in-chief of the 1924 edition, and had much to do with the success of the first and second editions. Representatives from all the classes published it.

Several national medical fraternities have chapters in the college, the members renting the chapter houses. They give commencement dances in local or New York hotels. Some of the students room in the chapter houses. The graduating class always has a banquet.

In 1924, the department of anatomy developed a series of motion pictures to supplement text-book and lecture work. The plan is new and original, the college probably being the first to develop such a method of teaching.

Among famous men who have gone out from the graduating classes are William Alanson White, head of St. Elizabeth's, the Federal hospital in Washington for nervous and mental cases, where there are 4,000 beds; Dr. Henry Waldo Coe, who not only has done much for medicine, but who has become popularly known through his many presentations of statues of Roosevelt to municipalities and organizations. He was an intimate friend of Roosevelt. Dr. Glentworth Butler, who graduated at the college in 1880 and still resides here, has made an international reputation as an expert on internal medicine. Dr. Lewis S. Pilcher, formerly of the faculty, though not a Long Island graduate, is an expert surgeon of great reputation and editor, since its organization, of the "Annals of Surgery." Many hundreds of the school's graduates have written authoritative books, and are outstanding in numerous special branches of medicine.

Dr. T. L. Mason was the college's first president in 1859, and its first faculty: Drs. Austin Flint, Sr., Frank H. Hamilton, James D. Trask, Joseph C. Hutchison, John C. Dalton, R. Ogden Doremus, DeWitt C. Enos, and Edwin N. Chapman.

The 1924 faculty included: James C. Egbert, John Osborn Polak, John C. Cardwell, Archibald Murray, Matthew Steel, Adam M. Miller, Luther F. Warren, H. Sheridan Baketel, Wade W. Oliver, Carl Henry Law, Frederick E. Crane, Emil Goetsch, Henry H. Morton, William Browning, Henry Mitchell Smith, Charles Waldo Stickle, Jaques C. Rushmore, Alfred Potter, A. L. Loomis Bell.

This was the 1924 board of regents, under which college and hospital function: President, Percy S. Dudley; vice-president, Albert L. Mason; secretary, Richmond L. Brown; treasurer, Herbert K. Twitchell; Dwight E. Austin, H. Staunton Brown, Hon. William M. Calder, Dr. Jesse T. Duryea, James C. Egbert, Dr. Henry A. Fairbairn, Thornton Gerrish, Frederick A. Goetze, Dr. Charles A. Gordon, Dr. Frank D. Jennings, Howard W. Maxwell, Chaster U. Palmer, Samuel Rowland, Dr. Charles E. Scofield, Robert F. Tilney and Henry C. Turner.



### The Methodist Hospital

Brooklyn is the home of the first hospital ever owned by the Methodist Episcopal Church.

It is the "Methodist Episcopal Hospital," occupying a whole city block at 6th Street and 7th Avenue. It was completed in 1924, after an eighteen months' drive for a million dollars, a modern maternity hospital unsurpassed anywhere for completeness of equipment. This building cost \$650,000, additions to the power plant to take care of it \$156,000, while \$200,000 was added to the endowment fund in the campaign.

With the completion of this six-story structure containing 100 rooms, the hospital properties reached a total of eight buildings, endowment fund \$1,250,000 and the valuation of the plant the huge figure of \$4,000,000. It serves the people of six Methodist conferences, embracing upwards of 300,000 Methodists.

The erection of the hospital has inspired the establishment of more than seventy similar institutions throughout the United States, and twenty-four Old Peoples' Homes.

The hospital was born in the thoughts, prayers and plans of one man—the Rev. Dr. James M. Buckley. While pastor in Stamford, Conn., between the years 1875-77, his organist suffered an accident in New York City which necessitated the amputation of an arm. The man was compelled to lie for an hour upon the sidewalk before an ambulance came, and died in surroundings far from Christian.

In that hour of pastoral anxiety, Dr. Buckley registered a vow that, if possible, he would secure the erection of a hospital where Methodists, rich and poor, could be cared for according to their religious training, and all others as well, regardless of race or creed.

In 1880, Dr. Buckley, becoming editor of the "Christian Advocate," lost no time in attempting to fulfill his vow. Certain investigations he and assistants made in New York City hospitals strengthened his purpose, for he found that many Methodist poor were being treated free in their wards, St. Luke's alone having cared for 833 Methodists, most of them charity patients. It seemed to him that Methodism was not concerned about her suffering sick, nor could she reciprocate the kindness offered her creed.

These facts gave power to perhaps the most effective editorial ever appearing in the "Christian Advocate"—which was January 27, 1881—in which Dr. Buckley declared that the church was without a hospital, dispensary, industrial school or an orphan asylum, except in mission fields, and he added "Is it not time that somewhere we build a hospital?"

George I. Seney, widely known philanthropist, saw the editorial and sought an interview with Dr. Buckley, offering on February 1, 1881, sixteen eligible lots valued at \$40,000 as a site, and \$100,000 in cash "toward the erection of a Methodist Episcopal General hospital, which shall be open to Jew and Gentile, Protestant and Catholic, heathen and infidel, on the same terms." A month later he made his cash subscription \$200,000 instead of \$100,000, and purchased an entire block containing about 3 1/5 acres at a cost of \$70,000, which he substituted for the original lots. He continued to increase his gifts until they reached \$410,000. The hospital was incorporated May 27, 1881.

It was doubtless Mr. Seney's purpose to turn over to the Methodists a hospital perfectly equipped in every particular but becoming embarrassed financially, he was compelled to give over three great structures—the main building and the east and west pavilions in an unfinished state.

The hospital faced a crisis. The Board of Managers turned to the Board of Bishops for support and encouragement. But the Bishops were not agreed as to the wisdom of the undertaking, and one of the ablest suggested that the hospital be boarded up until another Seney should appear. Bishop Stephen N. Merrill saved the day. He said Methodists had never been afraid of crises; that Providence had set an open door before them, and that it would be a disgrace to retreat. Thus, endorsed by the Bishops, strong men and women got behind the work, and there came two years of remarkable service from the Rev. Dr. George P. Mains as financial agent. His task was to raise \$70,000 to complete the west pavilion and the basement of another. Since Methodism had never engaged in hospital work before, there was prejudice to overcome, and the task was Herculean. Nevertheless in the two years, Dr. Mains raised \$100,000, or \$30,000 more than stipulated.

That was at the 1887 conference. Everything around the hospital was in a chaotic state, but anticipating its opening a few months later, the Rev. Dr. J. S. Breckinridge was appointed superintendent.

He caught up the work almost before it was out of the hands of the Rev. Dr. Mains and began a whirlwind campaign which lasted almost to the hour, when he died twelve years later. So great was his service that the hospital bestowed on him the title of Associate Founder. During the twelve years, his wit, optimism and burning appeals resulted in the erection of a new annex building, a stable, a pathological building, a corridor connecting all the buildings, private rooms and a dispensary in the east pavilion, and finally an operating pavilion. These improvements cost not much less than \$200,000, and the money was provided, with the exception of about \$50,000.

Through these years, though Managers and Superintendent were pushed to meet increasing current expenses, they never lost sight of the importance of creating a substantial endowment fund, and when Dr. Breckinridge "ceased to work and live," the hospital plant was an \$800,000 investment and the endowment \$385,000.

The Rev. Dr. Eugene A. Noble, associated with Dr. Breckinridge for three years, became superintendent for two years more, and shared with Dr. Breckinridge the credit for the three partnership years. In his two years alone, he added \$30,000 to the endowment fund, a notable gift being \$10,000 from Mr. and Mrs. R. D. Armstrong in memory of their son.

Among early builders and workers who aided Dr. Buckley were: the Rev. Dr. Daniel A. Goodsell, afterwards bishop, who co-operated in sending out the first editorial appeal; Bishop Edward G. Andrews, who despite episcopal duties, gave attention to the hospital's work; Bishop James N. Fitzgerald, the first secretary; Bishop John F. Hurst, who conducted the dedicatory services and the enthusiastic Bishop Merrill. Among its managers were Bishops Harris, Simpson and Foster. There were powerful laymen: Oliver, Mark and William Hoyt, Samuel Booth, John French, William M. Ingraham, James H. Taft, Albert D. Vail, James McGee, William H. Stiles, John M. Phillips, Daniel Ayres, George Copeland, J. S. Stout, James M. King, Anderson Fowler, John Bentley, George Barlow, Polly B. Crary, John J. Barnier, A. P. Strout, William Collins, George Harvey, William McEchron, Commodore Louis Luckenbach, Dr. and Mrs. John M. Reed, William L. Hoge, O. K. Eldridge, Mrs. Sarah M. Billings, Mrs. Susan T. Ensign, Mrs. Mary Preston, Mrs. Cornelia Prosser and Mrs. Aurelia Leake.

The building of the endowment fund is like a story, so much of the money and endowment for beds, cribs and hospital rooms springing from smitten



hearts. Like the hospital, born in pastoral sorrow, it holds endowments in memory of mothers, fathers and children, with the hope that the poor, in illness, may have the tenderest service that love can inspire.

They followed the example of Dr. and Mrs. Charles H. Buck, who, in Dr. Breckinridge's first report, endowed a bed. Dr. Buck was one of the best beloved members of the Eastern Conference. Others gave in happiness, one on a wedding anniversary, "in recognition of the mercy of God extending over forty years of married life," and \$20,000 was from an Episcopalian woman in memory "of Methodist parents."

Literally hundreds of thousands of gifts, great and small, from a glass of jelly to contributions of stupendous sums, have poured in upon the hospital until today the institution can be called rightfully "Everybody's gift to humanity."

Proving its popularity is the fact that, although it attempted to obtain a million-dollar fund in 1923 while the church was raising its centenary moneys reaching into millions, \$950,000 was subscribed in eighteen months.

In 1912, the Rev. Dr. Abrahm S. Kavanagh, the hospital's superintendent for fourteen years, reported that of the more than \$800,000 collected in a few years before 1912, \$200,000 was largely through the practical aid of the ministry. He wrote he had never seen such unbounded generosity in the pure desire to help humanity. During one eight-year period, he receipted for more than \$1,000,000.

With his advent, the hospital entered a new epoch. Dr. Kavanagh interested Mr. and Mrs. William Halls, Jr., in the completion of the unfinished buildings. During these struggling years, the east pavilion was boarded up eighteen years and the administration building needed completion. Finally, December 15, 1902, at the hospital's crystal anniversary, Mr. and Mrs. Halls offered \$125,000 to complete these two buildings provided friends of the institution would raise \$500,000 to pay certain debts and increase the endowment. They later increased this sum by \$50,000, then by \$14,000 until finally their gift amounted to \$189,000. A vast host of ministers and laymen assisted, and the buildings were finished at a cost of \$300,000; \$100,000 of which was the aggregate public gift. In its gathering Dr. Kavanagh did stupendous service. A debt of \$75,000 was paid and the endowment fund increased from \$425,000 to \$850,000.

Methodism was set a-thrill with the great success of the work. December 4, 1906, the main structure was dedicated, and named the Halls Administration Building, in honor of the institution's "re-founders."

Meanwhile the hospital was establishing a reputation for scientific and skillful work in medicine and surgery. The earliest annual reports record Dr. A. Ross Matheson, Dr. W. H. B. Pratt and Dr. Glentworth R. Butler as physicians, and three surgeons—Dr. Lewis S. Pilcher, Dr. George Ryerson Fowler and Dr. John Bion Bogart. On the threshold of successful careers, the young progressive institution offered these men a place where they could work out individual methods of procedure and utilize new discoveries in surgery and medicine, aided, though not hampered by past traditions. Results are shown in the international reputations some of them attained. Fowler was the first who ever elevated the head of the bed in appendicitis and was tremendously successful in wrestling with the new ailment. Hospitals all over the world followed his lead. Dr. Butler, who became the hospital's physician-in-chief, holds a notable position as author and diagnostician, his

textbooks in medicine still being used in England. Dr. Pilcher had a notable career, while Drs. Matheson and Pratt were for years on the staff of consulting physicians, managers of the hospital and members of the training school.

During the first decade in the history of appendicitis, the hospital attained a great leadership. It treated proportionately more than twice as many patients as did the Roosevelt; almost three times as many as the Presbyterian; nearly six times as many as St. Luke's; almost six and a half times as many as did the New York Hospital, and five and eight tenths as many as Johns Hopkins. Dr. Fowler and his disciples received especial credit for this work, and his students, inspired by his example, continued to improve. Dr. Fowler would have considered himself fortunate in those days if mortality was below twenty-two per cent. Now appendicitis mortality at the hospital is less than three per cent. This is not only due to more perfect asepsis and skillful surgery, but also to the fact that physicians now recognize appendicitis quickly.

The hospital policy always has been that if a serious mistake or an unusual success is made by any physician or surgeon, the entire staff is made familiar with the fact, with the result that the average ability of the great number of physicians is constantly improved. In 1912 there were eighty-three physicians on the staff.

In honor of Dr. Fowler, the ex-internes erected a bronze tablet March 31, 1907, and shortly after, December 5, 1907, tablets were unveiled by the hospital to George I. Seney and Mr. and Mrs. Halls, Jr. When the Eastern pavilion was completed, on September 24, 1908, a reception was tendered Mr. and Mrs. Halls, and when Dr. Fowler died in 1914 he was elected an Associate Founder.

Along with the work on the main and eastern pavilions, the western pavilion was being reconstructed at a cost of \$78,000, and was reopened February 22, 1910. In it the greater part of the hospital's service had been done for twenty years. A bronze bust of Dr. J. M. Buckley, president of the hospital since its incorporation, and whose editorial had made it possible, was placed in the main hall, February 26, 1912. It was the work of Gutzon Borglum. Meanwhile Superintendent Kavanagh was struggling to have a \$10,000 solarium. Finally, Mrs. Elizabeth Barnier Shaw, one of the hospital's largest benefactors, presented the solarium, which cost \$12,000, in memory of her parents, John J. and Elizabeth B. Barnier. It was named "The Barnier Solarium," and was opened October 20, 1913, with a dinner for Mrs. Shaw. The solarium consists of two splendid rooms with windows from the ceiling to the floor, a tower room with windows on four sides, and a roof garden commanding a wide view of New York.

In 1888, a nurses' training school was organized with Dr. Matheson, Dr. Pratt and Dr. Pilcher as the training school committee. The money was borrowed and ground broken for the Nurses' Home December 11, 1914, Dr. Matheson turning the first sod. The building cost \$181,332, and the work was done under Dr. Matheson as chairman of the building committee. The cornerstone was laid April 17, 1915, by Bishop Luther B. Wilson, resident bishop of New York, assisted by Bishop William Burt, resident bishop of Buffalo, and President Buckley. Others making addresses were Borough President Lewis H. Pounds, Dr. Matheson, the Rev. Dr. J. Farrar and the Rev. Dr. Kavanagh. At the dedication September 30, 1915, a great outpouring of people inspected the building and visited its roof garden. It accommodated



one hundred and thirty-six nurses, was five stories high, had a two-ward infirmary for sick nurses, and was built of Philadelphia pressed brick. Shortly after its dedication, there were one hundred and ten graduate and pupil nurses in the school, and by 1924 growth of the hospital had been so great fourteen nurses were being cared for in an outside rented building. An annex is now planned to remedy this condition.

The nurses have a special reception hall where they entertain at monthly dances. During Christmas and Easter they march through the corridors and wards singing carols, while the chaplain holds brief services of prayer and responsive reading.

They attend religious service in the chapel in the administration building. Between thirty-five and forty nurses are graduated yearly. The board of managers in 1915 were: Bishop Wilson, the Rev. Dr. Buckley, John M. Bulwinkle, Seth W. Fox, William Halls, Jr., Frank A. Horne, George S. Ingraham, James R. Joy, Allan McRossie, the Rev. Dr. Mains, Dr. Matheson, Lewis E. Pierson, Dr. Pratt, A. P. Sloan and Charles E. Teale.

The first year of the hospital's life following its opening and receiving of the first patient—which was December 15, 1887—it treated three hundred and fifteen persons. The fifth year it cared for 1,097, the tenth 1,339, the fifteenth 1,984, the twentieth 3,269—while in 1922 it was serving more than 13,550 patients yearly, and in its thirty-seven years more than 300,000 persons have received medical treatment within its walls. To the pastors of more than 1,200 churches and to their families, service is without charge, and more than seventy-five per cent of the treatment at the hospital is free, or partially so. Hospital expenses run to \$350,000 a year.

The hospital maintains an excellent dispensary where, in 1921, 4,211 persons were treated. They made 16,435 visits and had eighty-one operations.

Each year the hospital gives 70,000 days of treatment. It has a complete and modern pathological department, and is one of the few institutions to own radium. It bought 150.08 millograms of radium in 1921, at a cost of \$15,000, and, in charge of an expert custodian, it was used for almost one hundred and fifty treatments the first six months. The laboratory made 20,000 tests in 1921. There is an X-Ray and pharmacy department. The hospital makes its own ice, electric light and heat, and maintains a large laundry. There is an especial diet kitchen, and 1700 meals daily were served in 1924. The hospital also has its own general store. There are children's wards, where remarkable operations for deformities have been made. Fingers were built for the stump-hands of a child, while a rib, transplanted into a little girl's leg, made her walk again. Motor ambulances are maintained.

It was a United States government declaration which inspired the hospital to build its maternity building for more than half a million dollars. The declaration said that "16,000 women lose their lives at childbirth each year, and 75,000 babies die before they are a month old." In addition, the hospital (because of overcrowded conditions), was turning one applicant away for every patient admitted. The plea of such needed service to humanity, with the government's claim that "all the mothers and fully half the children could be saved by proper care," had the effect of making the public pour out its money for the new building. Heading the drive were William H. English, honorary chairman; the Rev. William J. Thompson, chairman; Lewis E. Pierson, treasurer; and the following executive committee: J. Franklin Bouker, William B. Codling, the Rev. David G. Downey, William Halls, Jr.,



ALL SOULS UNIVERSALIST CHURCH, OCEAN AND DITMAS AVENUES,  
BROOKLYN



TRINITY HOSPITAL





the Rev. James E. Holmes (superintendent of the hospital), Frank A. Horne, George S. Ingraham, James R. Joy, Henry L. Langhaar, the Rev. Wallace McMullen, Walter M. McGee, Joseph B. Morrell, Richard W. Rhoades, E. P. V. Ritter, John D. Slayback, Alfred P. Sloan, John W. Vroonan and Z. W. Van Zelm.

The hospital's original house staff was Dr. H. W. Cardwell, Dr. Purdy H. Sturges, and Dr. H. B. Delatour. It has had five superintendents: Dr. Breckinridge, Dr. Noble, Dr. Kavanagh, the Rev. Dr. George P. Mains, and the present superintendent, the Rev. Dr. James E. Holmes. Associated with Dr. Holmes as assistant superintendent and chaplain since March, 1923, is the Rev. Dr. Warren F. Cook, who also takes care of the important department of publicity and the hospital's field work. Other 1924 officers were: President, Alfred P. Sloan; vice-president, William Halls, Jr.; second vice-president, George S. Ingraham; secretary, Henry Ingraham; acting treasurer, Alfred N. Nelson; assistant treasurer, Dr. Matheson.

The hospital, which holds the Class A rank from the American College of Surgeons, each year draws internes from Columbia, Harvard, Johns Hopkins, and similar institutions. It graduates about ten yearly.

During the World War one entire building was given over to government patients, being filled with men from the navy.

Very soon a superintendent's home will go up on the corner of Eighth Avenue and Sixth Street, and room has been left behind the new maternity building for a second unit of similar design. Toward the new maternity building Alfred P. Sloan, president of the board of directors, donated \$100,000. The old maternity ward and private maternity rooms, as well as the front of the administration building, were being remodeled during 1924.

The hospital maintains a social service department, which was organized in 1911, with Miss Lucy C. Catlin in charge. Greatly aiding general growth and success is the Florence Nightingale Federation, organizations of women who furnish money for the institution's work and untold garments yearly for the sick. Its Florence Nightingale Societies are organized in most of the Methodist churches, and they lately paid sums of from \$500 to \$2,000 toward the new maternity building. The Federation pledged \$8,000 toward the building and \$10,000 for furnishings. Mrs. William Kennedy has been Federation president since its organization December 4, 1916. These were the other 1924 officers: First vice-president, Mrs. J. F. Dettmar; second vice-president, Mrs. J. Manuel King; recording secretary, Miss Julia F. Ring; corresponding secretary, Mrs. C. H. Goodrich; and treasurer, Mrs. H. N. Dubois. Ladies' Aid Societies, Epworth Leagues, missionary societies and many other women's organizations help.

Hospital structures in 1924 included: Halls Administration Building, Halls Annex, East Pavilion, West Pavilion, Nurses' Home, New Maternity Building, and two small structures, housing garages, chemical laboratory, carpenter and paint shop and male help quarters.

Among those giving \$25,000 or upward to the hospital have been: Oliver Hoyt, George Barlow, estate of Mrs. Polly B. Crary, estate of Martha T. Fiske-Collord and George W. Collord. Gifts of \$20,000 were from Elizabeth S. Barnier Shaw, Mary A. Astor Woodcock, Mr. and Mrs. William McEchron and their daughter, Mrs. H. A. Bowden, and Commodore Luckenbach. Benefactors to \$15,000 or upward were Dr. and Mrs. J. M. Reed, William Hoyt, A. P. Strout, estate of William L. Hoge, and Mr. and Mrs. John D. Archbold.



The hospital's 1924 superintendent, Dr. Holmes, was for several years pastor of representative Methodist churches, five years superintendent of the Brooklyn Church Society, and four years a member of the Book Committee, a most important church position.

**Kings County Hospital**—Kings County Hospital is an outgrowth from the sick wards of the almshouse and for that reason no definite date of its establishment can be fixed. The first almshouse in Brooklyn was opened about 1800 and was occupied until 1808 when a new building was erected on Nassau Street between Jay and Bridge Streets. In 1824, because of the need of greater facilities, twenty acres of land adjoining Fort Greene were purchased and the almshouse was moved to the new location. The present site of the Kings County Hospital was purchased in 1830, and the cornerstone of the first building was laid on July 9, 1831. This building was occupied April 9, 1832, when the inmates were removed to it from the Fort Greene building. It was during this year that the first paid physician was employed to care for the inmates—Dr. John B. Zabriskie of Flatbush at \$70 per annum—and this employment undoubtedly indicates the beginning of the Kings County Hospital. It must be remembered that hospitals, as we recognize them today, did not exist as such in that early period, and the County of Kings was not in any way behind other communities of the period in caring for its dependent sick and infirm. In fact, a study of the old records shows that the County of Kings was and had been very much abreast of the times in the care of its dependent citizens. Beginning with 1833, and annually thereafter, the report of the Superintendents of the Poor carried the report of the physician regarding the medical work in the almshouse during the year. In 1837, a building was erected solely for the care of the sick and injured, it having been found that the presence and care of the other inmates were prejudicial to the proper care of those requiring medical attention. And so, two dates are accepted as the establishment of the Kings County Hospital: 1832, as marking the beginning of definite medical work, and 1837, as the beginning of the physical plant devoted only to the medical care of patients.

The Kings County Hospital is a general hospital for the care of the sick and injured poor and is conducted under the auspices of the Department of Public Welfare of the City of New York. Its physical plant occupies sixteen city blocks or about twenty-six acres and consists of thirty-eight buildings. The official bed capacity for patients is 1,809, and for employees is six hundred. Every department of medicine and surgery is maintained within the institution and every kind of disease, except the acutely contagious, is treated.

During the year 1923, 19,504 patients were treated in the hospital proper, with an average length of stay of twenty-six days each, making a total of 505,169 patient hospital days afforded during the year. In the out-patient department there were 18,488 visits made by patients who required medical attention but not hospital care. The annual cost of operation was about one and one-quarter million dollars. The total value of the plant is estimated at about three million dollars.

The territory served by the hospital is that of the Boroughs of Brooklyn and Queens. The emergency ambulance district is essentially that of the Flatbush section.

Mortimer D. Jones is medical superintendent.

**Lutheran Hospital**—The Lutheran Hospital was established in 1881 by

the efforts of the Lutherans of New York City, who formed the Lutheran Hospital Association of New York City and its vicinity.

The hospital is a frame building converted into a hospital from a residence. It has a capacity of forty-five beds. The number of patients cared for during 1923 was 1,357. The property value is \$300,000. Additions since the purchase is a brick building with ten beds, for clinical work. This building is known as the eye, ear, nose and throat pavilion. Clinics are held every day; 26,049 patients were treated during the year, 3,182 operations were performed in the ear, nose and throat department, and 6,076 treatments were given in the eye department.

**Cancer Research Hospital**—The first wing of the new Brooklyn Cancer Research Hospital, No. 1835 East New York Avenue, was opened to the public on Saturday, March 1, 1924. Dr. William Francis Campbell is clinical director and chief surgeon.

The new hospital is the first of its kind in Brooklyn and has a clinic for diagnosis and treatment to be available to all sufferers regardless of their financial condition.

Dr. Campbell said that those who can afford to pay for the treatment will be required to do so in order to help support the institution. The hospital will not receive financial aid from the city, but will derive its maintenance from private contributions and the fees of its patients.

It was decided to open the clinic daily from nine to twelve o'clock except on Saturdays and Sundays. Many noted physicians serve on the staff of both the clinic and the hospital and make every case the subject of study. The main object of the institution is to discover, if possible, the cause of cancer and to apply to the patients in the meanwhile the most up-to-date approved methods for treatment.

Dr. Campbell is one of the most noted cancer specialists in the United States, and for the last fifteen years devoted most of his energies to its study.

The new Cancer Research Hospital was the result of his own idea and efforts, and he intends to organize and develop it to such an extent that it will become an important and permanent Brooklyn institution. He said at the opening:

"Brooklyn is the only large community in the United States which has had no cancer hospital. Such an institution, to my mind, is more than necessary, and I am happy to say that in evolving my idea into an actuality, I have come almost to the realization of my life's ambition.

"The building is only one wing of three which have been projected. Eventually, the present building of the Trinity Hospital which was established about twelve years ago will be razed, and the other two wings of the Cancer Research Hospital will be constructed.

"The completed building will accommodate more than 200 patients. The present wing will have seventy-five beds."

Inspection of the new building shows that the time honored wards of other hospitals are missing. Each patient in the Cancer Research Hospital will have an individual room. Everything that is possible, apparently, has been done for the comfort and welfare of the cancer sufferer.

Each room is equipped to permit the installation of electric lights, telephone, call bell and radio. The managers have planned so that a central radio will be placed in the same room with the telephone switchboard. The operator of the switchboard will have as an additional duty the supervision of the radio. Her duty will be to keep posted on the best radio programs of the day, and to keep the hospital radio tuned in with them at all times.



Patients who desire amusement will merely have to ask the nurse to plug the radio receivers into the wall.

Dr. Campbell added that one of the most important factors in the treatment of cancer is to keep the patient cheerful. He said that patients who can be forced to take their minds off themselves have won half the battle. He continued:

"Introspection is poison to the cancer sufferer. They think continually about themselves and their plight, and often think themselves into the grave.

"Physicians who treat cancer are beginning to know that the psychology of the human being changes when he is afflicted with cancer. Those physicians and surgeons who do not take the psychology phase into their study of the case will proceed with it under a terrific handicap.

"I feel certain that the introduction of the radio into the Cancer Research Hospital will arrest introspection on the part of all of the patients. I feel certain that one cannot listen to a radio programme intently, and at the same time go over the symptoms of one's malady."

The central radio with extension to the room of the patients was absolutely a new idea. Dr. Campbell said the idea is original with him, but that it is possible others also have thought of it.

The new institution was incorporated under the name of the Brooklyn Cancer Research Hospital. It is part of the Trinity Hospital and stands adjacent to that structure. The names of both hospitals are displayed at the common entrance, but it was believed that the Trinity Hospital would be absorbed. The Trinity institution is a general hospital. Cancer patients only are admitted to the new institution.

It is the aim of Dr. Campbell to force all of the cancer patients into a normal frame of mind before they have passed many hours in the new institution. He says most sufferers, as soon as their cases are diagnosed, feel that the death sentence has been pronounced upon them, and that many of them really think themselves to death.

He added that the Cancer Research Hospital will be just what its name implies, and that there will be no cures promised, but that every case will be studied.

He said, however, that cancer, if taken in time, is curable by means of an operation, and that those who know they suffer from the affliction should not permit it to progress without medical care, simply because they have been taught to believe that the malady is certain to cause death.

The directors of the new hospital are James A. Smith, former president of the Brooklyn Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children; William E. Young, Dr. Edwin F. Lindridge, Erik Lagerquist, and Dr. William Francis Campbell.

**The Carson C. Peck Memorial Hospital** represents the last word in modern hospital construction, and is one of the show places of the hospital world. It was erected as a memorial to Carson C. Peck, for several years Vice-President and Chairman of the Board of Directors of the F. W. Woolworth Co., by his family, in accordance with a wish which he expressed during his lifetime. The hospital was incorporated on December 12, 1917, and the trustees appointed a building committee, of which Charles F. Neergaard was Chairman. This committee made a careful and exhaustive survey of hospitals throughout the country. They visited more than one hundred of the more modern institutions of the East and Middle West and the hospital was structurally planned to meet certain functional requirements, to wit, the best inter-relations of departmental and service units, a wholesome and cheerful atmosphere, and furnishings, equipment and decorative



CARSON C. PECK MEMORIAL HOSPITAL





effects were calculated to soothe the mind of the physically ailing. It was also designed to furnish hospital accommodations for a social class for which inadequate provision had been made in Brooklyn prior to the construction of this establishment. The middle class or semi-private patients without the means to pay for the most expensive hospitalization, and who had too much self respect to apply for treatment in hospitals where the cost of such treatment was not commensurate with the cost of the upkeep of the establishment were specially considered. By a careful balance of accommodations the institution was made practically self-supporting.

The cardinal idea of the builders of the Carson C. Peck Memorial Hospital was to provide a home for the sick with the least possible institutional atmosphere. The architectural design and equipment were all motivated by the desire to provide comfort, efficient service and low maintenance cost, and keep concealed the technical appliances and hospital accessories which might have a terrifying and depressing effect on the mind of the patient. All waste of space was avoided so that every foot of enclosed area might be utilized for hospital purposes. Arrangements were made to give flexibility to the different units of the institution with the result that the Carson C. Peck Memorial Hospital operates on an average capacity of ninety-four per cent of the beds filled at all times, compared with the general hospital average of less than seventy per cent. The hospital was constructed to accommodate a maximum of one hundred patients at a given time. It contains capacious wards and comfortable and wholesome private suites and bedrooms.

The building was completed by the close of the year 1918, although the war had interfered with the work. It was formally dedicated on January 10, 1918, on the anniversary of Mr. Peck's birthday. This was two years to the day from the cornerstone laying. At the exercises were Mrs. Carson C. Peck, Miss Clara Sargent Peck, Fremont Carson Peck, Major Charles F. Neergaard, Clinton P. Case, the Reverend Dr. Samuel A. Hayt of Watertown, N. Y., the Reverend Dr. Nehemiah Boynton, pastor of the Clinton Avenue Congregational Church, and the Reverend Dr. S. Parkes Cadman, pastor of the Central Congregationalist Church. Five acres of ground surround the hospital, comprising the entire block bounded by Albany Avenue, Crown Street, Troy Avenue, and Montgomery Place. This block is one of the highest elevations of Brooklyn, and overlooks Jamaica Bay and the ocean beyond. The main building is a seven-story structure of modified Georgian architecture with granite base and limestone and terra cotta trim. The floor plans, interior finish and equipment were worked out after extensive research, so that only the most modern and, in many instances original, ideas were incorporated. The operating rooms on the fifth floor are equipped with an unusual method of lighting and a system of heating and ventilating which thoroughly filters the air entering the rooms. On the upper story is a water still supplying the operating rooms and all the floors with distilled water. On each floor are large solariums and open sun porches for the benefit of convalescing patients. The construction and equipment is such that every bed may be wheeled on to solarium or sun porch without disturbing the patient. Nearly all of the rooms have southern exposure so as to have the full benefit of sunshine and fresh air. All semi-private rooms and wards have steel cubicles affording a feeling of privacy. All diet kitchens are finished in tile with built-in refrigerators equipped with the brine-circulating type of refrigeration. The main kitchens, nurses' and staff dining rooms are on the lower floor. The board of trustees consists of Clinton P. Case, president; Charles F. Neergaard, secretary; Fremont



C. Peck, treasurer; Mrs. Carson C. Peck, Baron W. Gage, Dr. Magnus T. Hopper, and Dr. Bruno W. Bierbauer. The superintendent is Captain Harry H. Warfield.

## CHAPTER XXXI

### DENTISTRY IN BROOKLYN

THE history of dentistry in Brooklyn dates back nearly one hundred years. The first authentic record of any borough dentist is that of T. Jefferson Jones, who in 1828 practiced dentistry and kept a drug store at 4 Sands Street. One of his advertisements in 1832 reads:

T. JEFFERSON, JONES, M. D.,

would inform his friends that he continues to officiate in the capacity of a dentist at his residence, No. 4 Sands Street, Brooklyn, where teeth of every description, from one to an entire set, can be inserted. Teeth cleaned, filed and filled so as to add much to their durability and beauty. He would also recommend the Persian Dentifrice (teeth powder) kept by him to all those who are desirous of having their gums healthy and teeth white and clear from tartar without any injury to either. Also a general assortment of drugs, medicines and perfumery for sale."

It would seem that the Brooklyn population was solely dependent upon Dr. Jones' ministrations—with the possible exception of some doctors who pulled teeth as part of their medical practice—until the year 1831, when W. K. Northall, Jr., opened a dental establishment at 79 Fulton Street. His father, W. K. Northall, F. S. A., was principal of Mount Pleasant Academy, 278 Fulton Street. In 1833, when Dr. Jones died, Dr. Northall was left alone in the field, and removed his offices to 56 Fulton Street. His advertisement in the directory of that year showed that he not only replaced lost teeth with Premium Incorruptible Teeth of the very best quality, but of every variety of shade, durability, cleanliness and natural appearance, "which rendered them permanently superior to all other kinds," while they were also available for all purposes of articulation and mastication. Cavities in teeth were filled with cement, gold or silver. Teeth loosened by tartar, disease or mercury were, by a course of treatments, almost always restored to their pristine firmness, while irregularities in children's teeth could, in most instances, be obviated by well-directed aid. Dr. Northall published two books, one called "Hints to Parents on the Importance of Early Attention to Children's Teeth," and one entitled "Five Minutes' Advice on the Teeth."

Dr. Martin K. Bridges settled in Brooklyn in 1837 and commenced practice at 118 Fulton Street. He edited the "Dental Mirror," a leaflet for free circulation, in which appeared conspicuously in 1843 the following notice:

"Two hours in each week day, from 7 to 9 o'clock in the morning, are devoted to the service of the poor without charge." Dentists arose early in those days.

Ten years later—in the autumn of 1853—the first society of dentists on Long Island was organized, and was called "The Long Island Association of Dental Surgeons." This preceded any dental organization in New York City proper. At its first meeting, held in the office of Dr. H. N. Stratton, 137 Atlantic Avenue, the following were elected officers: recording secretary, D. H. Nulford; corresponding secretary, G. A. Cooper; treasurer, James

E. Miller; librarian, Martin K. Bridges; examining committee, John Branique, James E. Miller and J. B. Frederics; executive committee, B. S. Lyman, A. H. Griswold, and C. B. Hammond.

Its declaration stated: "This society is organized for the improvement and elevation of dental science, and the establishment of a proper sentiment of respect among dental practitioners." The constitution provided that "The Examining Committee shall have been practicing dentists in good standing for at least five years," "the yearly subscription shall be \$3, payable in advance," and that "members of the association shall not take students for a less term than two years."

The society never had a president, but elected a chairman for each meeting. Its object was more of a social than of a scientific character. Interest soon subsiding in it, it passed out of existence after two or three years of an uneventful career.

A group of dentists, June 12, 1862, met at the office of Dr. O. E. Hill, Fulton, near Clinton streets, and organized the "Brooklyn Dental Association." Its first officers were: President, W. C. Parks; vice-president, A. C. Hawes; treasurer, John Allen; secretary, William B. Hurd. This society, largely composed of the most able and progressive of New York dentists, had, as its Brooklyn members: O. E. Hill, A. Appleton Wheeler, C. A. Marvin, and William Jarvie, Jr., Williamsburg was represented by W. B. Hurd, W. C. Parks and W. C. Horne. It met every two weeks at the offices of the members, and during a five years' existence, was the most useful and active society of the time.

Unfortunate differences arose in 1867 and the society disbanded, some of its New York members organizing the "New York Odontological Society," while, on December 14th of that year, thirteen dentists met at the office of Dr. George A. Mills, 133 Henry Street, and formed "The Brooklyn Society of Dental Science and Art." These dentists were: George A. Mills, H. G. Mirick, O. E. Hill, A. H. Brockway, L. E. Brockway, William Jarvie, Jr., I. C. Monroe, John Scott, N. M. Abbott, Thomas Fry, E. L. Childs, H. E. Bird and George E. Bretz. They named as first officers: President, H. G. Mirick; vice-president, C. D. Cook; recording secretary, E. L. Childs; corresponding secretary, William Jarvie, Jr.; treasurer, I. C. Monroe; executive committee, G. A. Mills, O. E. Hill and John Scott.

The society changed its name to the Brooklyn Dental Society January 4, 1869, and the following made application to have the organization incorporated: C. D. Cook, O. E. Hill, E. L. Childs, William Jarvie, Jr., I. C. Monroe, James H. Race, H. G. Mirick and George A. Mills. The application was granted April 5, 1869.

The society was composed of a group of thoughtful workers. Their minds were pregnant with new projects. Splendid results were attained. Experimental ideas were advanced and developed which proved of benefit to the dental fraternity in general. The keen desire was carried out to elevate the beneficent as well as the social and scientific side of the profession.

The society organized a dental infirmary January 10, 1870, locating it at 260 Washington Street. It was open every week day, and dental operations were performed for the worthy poor without charge. A superintendent was employed, and a member of the society placed in charge each afternoon. Members not only volunteered their services, but aided by a few public-spirited citizens, paid all expenses for one year. After this, the city of Brooklyn contributed \$1,500 annually toward the infirmary's support. It existed about four years, the society,



through it, endeavoring to teach the people to appreciate the value of their teeth and to educate them in their proper care.

To many dentists, these infirmary studies became a post-graduate course. Clinics were frequently given, and Brooklyn dentists and the public owe a debt to Dr. William H. Atkinson, who at great personal loss and inconvenience, would frequently leave his private patients in New York and come to Brooklyn to conduct them. Dr. John M. Riggs was invited from Hartford, and gave clinics concerning his original treatment of what was popularly known as "Riggs' Disease"—now called pyorrhea. Dr. Riggs spent a week at the infirmary, which created great interest, and brought numerous dentists and visitors of prominence from many parts of the country.

As far as is known, this infirmary was the first institution of its kind ever in existence. It accomplished great good, and its relinquishment was forced principally because people able to pay endeavored to obtain good dental service free, thereby defeating the charitable object for which it was established.

The Brooklyn Dental Society in 1882 opened a library and reading room in connection with the Kings County Medical Society in Everett Hall, 398 Fulton Street. It was afterwards removed to the rooms of the Medical Society in Bridge Street and much enlarged. It is now owned by the Second District Dental Society, and is in the new home of the Kings County Medical Society in Bedford Avenue.

It was in 1895 that the Brooklyn Dental Society retired from the field of scientific activity in favor of its somewhat younger brother, the Second District Dental Society. The State Legislature passed a law April 7, 1868, entitled: "An Act to Incorporate Dental Societies for the Purpose of Improving the Regulating the Practice of Dentistry in the State." This provided for a dental society in each of the eight judicial districts, eight delegates from each of which were to meet at the Capitol at Albany and organize what was to be known as The Dental Society of the State of New York. In accordance with the law, 38 of the dentists of the Second Judicial District, which comprised the counties of Kings, Suffolk, Richmond, Westchester, Orange, Rockland and Putnam—and to which Nassau was added in 1897—met at the Brooklyn City Hall June 2, 1868. There was organized the Second District Dental Society, and the following officers named: President, W. B. Hurd; vice-president, George A. Mills; recording secretary, William Jarvie, Jr.; corresponding secretary, L. S. Straw; treasurer, H. G. Mirick. Delegates to the State Dental Society: C. D. Cook, W. B. Hurd, O. E. Hill, H. G. Mirick, A. H. Brockway, G. A. Mills, L. S. Straw, and C. L. Houghton.

This society with an uninterrupted career of activity and usefulness, is one of the most prosperous and influential in the State. It meets once a month, from October to May, at the Kings County Medical Society Building, at 1313 Bedford Avenue, and has about 600 members—dentists of Brooklyn and Long Island. Scientific papers are read, clinics and practical demonstrations in dentistry given. Post-graduate classes in various subjects are held each year under the society's auspices.

The officers for 1923-1924 were: President, Fred R. Adams; vice-president, Henry M. Childs; recording secretary, George C. Douglas; corresponding secretary, Henry Bade; treasurer, Walter C. Riggs; librarian, Mr. Shapiro. The board of directors consists not only of these, but of the chairmen of all the committees: F. O. Kraemer, J. A. Burgun, A. Frank Zalauf, K. E. Hillyer, LeRoy S. Edwards, P. J. Phillips, William Steinbuch.

Life members, elected only after 30 years of service to the society, include many prominent men who have worked untiringly to bring the organization to its present standard of usefulness. They are: Drs. F. P. Abbott, F. S. Emerson, H. C. Ferris, H. C. Gilchrest, R. T. Holly, P. L. Hull, E. G. Parker, W. M. Ramsdell, E. T. Rippier, J. W. Russell, H. L. O'Brien, F. C. Walker, W. H. Johnson, J. B. Brown, L. A. Cuniet, F. P. Hamlet, C. B. Parker, V. F. Parker, F. C. Royce, A. D. Seaver, W. M. Turner, F. T. VanWoert, R. Ottolengui, Ernest C. Huskinson, G. W. White, Charles F. Ash, and R. G. Hutchinson, Jr.

Dr. Ottolengui is editor of "Dental Items of Interest."

Since the old days when anybody who had sufficient nerve or knowledge to pull a tooth could practice dentistry, and the fashion was to advertise a dental business, dentistry in Brooklyn has traveled a far pace. These days, a man must complete a four-year course before being allowed to practice, and he must be at least a high school graduate. In certain colleges, entrants must have an A.B. degree. These conditions have been brought about by the State Board of Dental Examiners, Board of Regents at Albany, members of the boards of dental faculties and members of the State dental societies.

Few Brooklyn hospitals now are without dental clinics, and all public institutions are equipped with dental departments, to care for the inmates. From the practice of dentistry in general, many men have broken away and joined the modern ranks of specialists. It has become the custom more and more with each passing year that the general practitioner uses the specialist and does not attempt to do his work. Dentists are specializing in these lines, there being numerous ones in each such specialty in Brooklyn: Regulation of teeth, extraction of teeth, surgery of the mouth, X-ray examinations of the oral cavity, treatment of pyorrhea and the making of artificial teeth.

Each member joining the Second District Dental Society, or any district society, automatically becomes a member of the State Society and the National Dental Association. Under these organizations, much demonstration work is done and dental education promoted.

The Second District Society has furnished eight presidents to the State organization: W. B. Hurd, 1871; C. A. Marvin, 1872; O. E. Hill, 1880; F. T. VanWoert, 1893; William Jarvie, Jr., 1904; W. J. Turner, 1905; Ellison Hill-lyer, 1911, and Horace P. Gould, 1919.

Practically every well-known dental man in the country has spoken before the present Brooklyn organization. These include many professors of dental institutions who are specialists in their branch of work.

While working scientifically with the Second District Society, the old Brooklyn Dental Society is not out of commission. It retains its charter and is kept together for social purposes, one meeting being held each year, which takes the form of a banquet. Such dinners are usually held in a hotel or club, among the favored spots being the University Club, the old Union League Club and the Clarendon Hotel. It has about 70 members, two of the oldest being Dr. E. T. Rippier and Dr. F. C. Walker. There are only two officers: Dr. Walker, who is president, and Dr. Warrington G. Lewis, who for many years has been secretary and treasurer. It is due to the efforts of this society that much of the history of dentistry in Brooklyn has been preserved.



## CHAPTER XXXII

### THE YOUNG WOMEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION OF BROOKLYN

**I**N DECEMBER, 1887, a group of thirty Brooklyn women, feeling the great need in Brooklyn for some organized work among the city's girls and women on the plane of mutual co-operation, sympathy and Christian fellowship, met at the home of Mrs. James Truslow to organize the Young Women's Christian Association of Brooklyn.

The following officers were elected: Mrs. Charles N. Judson, President; Mrs. D. W. McWilliams, Mrs. Geo. H. Prentiss, Miss M. A. Brigham, Mrs. S. Duryea, Vice-Presidents; Mrs. Clark Burnham, Secretary; Miss E. S. Wood, Treasurer.

The Executive Board comprised Mrs. Charles N. Judson, Mrs. A. S. Barnes, Mrs. Edwin Beers, Mrs. Teunis G. Bergen, Miss M. A. Brigham, Mrs. Clark Burnham, Mrs. S. Duryea, Mrs. C. W. Ide, Miss C. D. Jennings, Miss Adela J. Lyon, Mrs. Edw. Marsh, Mrs. Thos. B. McLeod, Mrs. D. W. McWilliams, Miss H. Packer, Mrs. Geo. H. Prentiss, Mrs. G. W. Read, Mrs. Albert H. Smith, Miss Sarah Truslow, Miss E. S. Wood.

In order to establish the work on as broad a basis as possible, the Membership, Bible Class, Finance, House, Hospitality, Library, Boarding House Directory, Employment, Education and Emergency Committees were organized. Rooms were taken and furnished in the Johnston Building, Flatbush Avenue near Fulton Street. At the end of the first year the Membership Committee reported three hundred and eighty-eight active members, and by the year 1890 the membership had reached 1,500; at the close of the year 1900, there were 3,131 members enrolled.

With the growth of the work, the need for a permanent building was evident, and on November 1, 1892, the first permanent Brooklyn Y. W. C. A. at 376 Schermerhorn Street was opened to the public, being dedicated as a memorial to Mrs. C. D. Wood. The Brooklyn Heights Seminary Club, composed of the Alumnae of the school with which Miss Mary A. Brigham had been connected for twenty-six years as teacher and associate principal, decorated and furnished Memorial Hall in her memory.

The problem of proper housing for girls and young women who were working at a moderate wage, became an important one and the President of the Association, Mrs. Charles N. Judson, interested herself greatly in this question. Her investigations had disclosed many girls living in furnished rooms without proper companionship or recreation and with no place in which to entertain their friends. In November, 1891, the Home Association for Working Girls and Women affiliated with the Y. W. C. A. to establish a home where, for a moderate sum, working girls could live comfortably; this building was at 352 Pacific Street. In 1897, Mr. Albion J. Newton gave a residence at 370 Union Street, rent free, to the Association for two years, this building accommodating nineteen young women. Even then there was a great need for a larger home, and in 1898, the adjoining house was added, so that thus forty-one girls could be accommodated. There were so many applicants that in 1910 the Union Street house became inadequate and it was decided by the Trustees and the Board of Directors that a new building would be the only solution.

During 1910 the property on which the present Harriet Judson stands was purchased, and in a whirlwind campaign in 1911, \$500,000 was raised by

the citizens of Brooklyn from about 6,500 contributors; \$400,000 was expended for land, the building and equipment—the Harriet Judson had become a fact.

As an outgrowth of a demand from the colored people of Brooklyn—some two hundred women from various colored churches, led by Rev. A. J. Henry, one of the pastors, making the appeal—a committee for work was organized in 1902. After some difficulty in finding quarters, a house at 122 Lexington Avenue was leased for the work, and dedicated in July, 1902. Mrs. Mary Storrs Haynes was the first chairman. Classes in Bible study, millinery, dressmaking, cooking were started at once. In two years the branch membership had grown to two hundred and eighty. The house proved inadequate and a special fund of \$2,400 was raised, largely through the efforts of Mrs. Haynes, so that a boarding department and an employment bureau might also be established.

In 1917, a campaign for \$60,000 was launched to purchase, remodel and equip the property at 45-47 Ashland Place. By 1918, the proposed new home had become a reality and was dedicated in February, 1919. The present quarters contain a gymnasium, a cafeteria, employment bureau, class and club rooms, and living accommodations for thirty-one young women.

During these years of Association growth, Brooklyn, which had been a "city of homes," was fast changing into a large industrial center. Over in the Eastern District where many of Brooklyn's factories and commercial enterprises are established, a club for work among girls had been meeting at the Jane Addams House, 109 South Third Street. The executives felt that the work would be more effective if done in conjunction with the Y. W. C. A. and so in 1904, the question of a Y. W. C. A. center in the Eastern District was agitated. In 1905, the Eastern District Branch was formed with Miss Lillian Mollar as Chairman. In the year 1907, the Branch was moved to 136 South Ninth Street. The same campaign which provided the funds for the Harriet Judson building provided also the money to erect the fine new building at 575 Bedford Avenue, which was opened in October, 1914.

In 1913, Mrs. Charles N. Judson, after twenty-six years of continuous and devoted service, resigned and was elected President Emeritus, Mrs. Henry M. Halsted taking her place as President.

The war brought with it heavy demands upon the Association. The industrial life of the city was enormously stimulated. Brooklyn in addition was a point of embarkation; in consequence there were large numbers of soldiers and sailors for whose welfare, in relation to its womanhood, the city was responsible. The war work for Brooklyn was placed in the hands of Mrs. Frank G. Wild, and under her skilful direction much was achieved.

The recognition of the war need of the foreign communities in Brooklyn made necessary a survey, with the result that an International Institute was organized here and financed by the National Board War Work Council, Miss Nellie Twyeffort becoming its chairman. The first center was at 107 Court Street. In May, 1919, this was moved to 106 Montague Street, but that building being demanded for trade, it was soon necessary to find new headquarters. These are at 54 Sidney Place, where the organization is now serving twenty-two different nationalities, having eight full time nationality workers.

Much work has been done at Bush Terminal as war-time conditions made activity there especially imperative. The Bush Terminal Cafeteria at 40th Street and 2nd Avenue has proven a tremendous success from its inception, ministering to the needs of hundreds of people daily. After carrying on club work from Building 19 of the Bush Terminal location it was decided to establish separate



club headquarters at 931 Third Avenue, under the chairmanship of Mrs. Ralph I. Lloyd. Two years of activity there proved conclusively that many of the Brooklyn foreign girls were not yet ready to go to a separate building for recreation and instruction, and the best way to conduct industrial clubs was by organizing these in the factories. This is, therefore, the present mode of procedure.

During the war period, Zachariah Jellison gave to the Brooklyn Association his own home at 245 Carlton Avenue. From May to December, 1918, this was conducted as a Hostess House for the wives and families of soldiers and sailors stationed in Brooklyn. At the request of the Navy Yard on January 1, 1919, it was transformed into a home for overseas nurses and conducted as such until the completion of the new Navy home for nurses. From August of that year until the latter part of 1921 it was a home for business girls, when it was decided to combine this residence with the new Junior League House which had been started.

During the year 1921, the Junior League Girls completed their plan of co-operating with the Association to open up additional residences for Brooklyn girls and women. This is called the Junior League House, 50 Nevins Street. It accommodates one hundred girls, the first to take up residence being entered February 11, 1922. The formal opening of the building took place on March 2nd of that year. It was felt that much credit was due to the great generosity of Mrs. S. E. Stokes (Miss Lydia Babbitt), in making the Junior League House a reality.

It was found imperative that a way be found of helping the girls of the city to a summer vacation. Prospect Camp on Upper Twin Lake, Central Valley, N. Y., was organized under the direction of Mrs. F. A. M. Burrell, the camp equipment expenses being met by the Camp Fund held in trust by the Board of Trustees, and the ground being rented from the Palisades Interstate Park Commission in the year 1920. During the year 1925 it plans to build another camp which will be for girls of high school ages only, the demand having far exceeded the possibility of taking care of the applicants.

There is also a branch at Greenpoint. This was the suggestion of Mr. Taylor of the Greenpoint Y. M. C. A., with the help of the Ladies' Auxiliary of that Association. The only work in the community that had preceded this was that of the Pratt Institute's Greenpoint settlement. The committees were subsequently organized with headquarters in the basement of the Greenpoint Y. M. C. A. In December, 1920, the present building at 138 Milton Street, was purchased and occupied by our Association in time for a Christmas party.

In 1917, it was decided to make a city wide organization of the Association with a Board of Directors having city powers. To further this, the parent organization at 376 Schermerhorn Street became the Central Branch, the metropolitan offices being located in this building.

At the present time (December, 1924) there are 11,506 active Association members. During the year 1924, 4,040 were placed in education classes; 2,227 in health education classes; 22,757 were taken in the Eastern District swimming pool during the year; 3,365 live in Y. W. C. A. residences; 2,031 in investigated living quarters, and 1,110 stayed at Camp Prospect. We have 2,206 in our Clubs, and 8,520 took part in organized recreations during the year.

The present branches of the Association are: Metropolitan Office, 376 Schermerhorn Street; Eastern District Branch, 575 Bedford Avenue; Bush Terminal Cafeteria, 40th Street and 2nd Avenue; Greenpoint Branch, 138 Milton







Brooklyn Club  
1890.

Street; Harriet Judson and the Junior League House, 50 Nevins Street; Harriet Judson Apartments, 417-419 State Street; International Institute, 54 Sidney Place; Camp Prospect, Central Valley, New York.

The officers are: President, Mrs. Henry A. Ingraham; Vice-Presidents, Mrs. Herbert K. Twitchell, Mrs. Henry M. Halsted, Mrs. Frederic B. Pratt; Secretary, Mrs. Thomas D. Hewitt; Treasurer, Mrs. Wm. Allen Putnam, Jr.; Chairman of Finance Committee, Mrs. Herbert K. Twitchell.

Board of Directors: Mrs. Edward Adams, Miss Alice G. Chase, Mrs. Frederick L. Cranford, Mrs. H. Edward Dreier, Miss Gladys Gilmore, Mrs. James Gilmour, Mrs. Henry M. Halsted, Mrs. Thomas D. Hewitt, Mrs. Oliver W. Ingersoll, Miss Grace Ingraham, Mrs. Henry A. Ingraham, Mrs. Palmer Jadwin, Dr. V. Morton Jones, Mrs. Sidney R. Kennedy, Mrs. E. P. Maynard, Jr., Mrs. J. Adolph Mollenhauer, Miss E. Jessie Ogg, Miss Mabel Parker, Mrs. James H. Post, Miss Jessie Post, Mr. Frederic B. Pratt, Mrs. Richardson Pratt, Mrs. Rudolph Reimer, Jr., Mrs. Victor A. Robertson, Mrs. Clinton L. Rossiter, Miss H. A. Steingester, Miss Ellen Yale Stevens, Mrs. Herbert K. Twitchell, Mrs. A. J. Valentine, Miss Jane Van Vleck, Mrs. Richard W. Westbrook, Miss Emily S. Wood, Mrs. Howard O. Wood.

Board of Trustees: President, Mr. James H. Post; Treasurer, Mr. Clinton L. Rossiter; Mr. Edward H. Bancker, Mr. Charles M. Bull, Dr. William H. Cary, Mr. George W. Felter, Mr. Lewis W. Francis, Mrs. Henry M. Halsted, Mr. Henry A. Ingraham, Mrs. Henry A. Ingraham, Mr. Horace J. Morse, Mr. Richardson Pratt, Mr. Rudolph Reimer, Jr., Mrs. Herbert K. Twitchell, Mr. Howard O. Wood.

## CHAPTER XXXIII

### CLUBS AND SOCIETIES

**T**HE Brooklyn Club—The Brooklyn Club was the forerunner of all social clubs in Brooklyn. It sprang from an idea of Dr. A. Cook Hull, noted homoeopath of the Heights, who suggested to John Winslow, a public spirited citizen, that twelve or fifteen men band themselves together to hire a room where they could meet to discuss matters of common interest. Membership was to be restricted to residents of the Heights.

The general scheme appealed to Mr. Winslow, but his ambition was on a larger scale. He outlined the policy of a social club, and defined the lines, followed with so much credit and prestige during fifty-nine years. The club was incorporated April 24, 1865, with fifty members. The idea of restricting the membership to the Heights was dropped forthwith and every section of the city was represented by judges, lawyers, business and professional men.

The first home was on the southeast corner of Pierrepont and Clinton Streets, now occupied by the Brooklyn Trust Company. The building had been a seminary for women; it was large and new, and cost \$24,000. In December, 1883, the adjoining brick building on Pierrepont Street was bought for \$18,000, and rented out until 1886 when the income from the property had covered the purchase price. The two buildings were renovated and thrown into one, having sixty feet on Pierrepont Street and one hundred on Clinton Street.

Fifty years passed in these quarters before the club moved to 131 Remsen Street, its present home. This had been the Robbins' Mansion, famous for its



splendid housekeeping and its hospitality. The building, of three floors and a basement, on a lot fifty by one hundred feet, cost the club \$70,000. After that it was remodelled. It was occupied on May 15, 1915. The grill was enlarged and its lighting improved. Seats were provided for 140 persons. The club's wine cellar was long famous and its kitchen of world wide renown. Age-old brands of imported liquors cheered the stranger and the old inhabitant. Its fame was heightened by the sumptuous feasts that were spread for such men as General Grant, Admiral Farragut and General Sherman. Men among the most famous in the United States were entertained and men of international reputation from abroad. Henry M. Stanley, the African explorer, John Tyndall, among England's foremost scientists, the Grand Duke Alexis of Russia, and the Duke of Connaught.

Judges gathered daily at the club's table of the Appellate Division of the Supreme Court. In 1909 Justice John B. Woodward was its presiding genius, while Justice Hirschberg, Justice Burr, Justice Rich and Justice Miller gathered almost daily.

The fiftieth anniversary of the club, April 24, 1915, brought from far and near men who had known club fellowship for years. The stirring addresses inspired the younger members to take a mental vow that they would carry public work begun and push it to outstanding success. William H. Wallace, the only living charter member was honored with the only toast. A notable old timer also present was George W. Chauncey, long called: "The youngest man of his age in Brooklyn." Justice Almet F. Jenks, the speaker of the occasion, told of having been taken into the club by his father, when a boy. Other addresses were those of Ex-Justice Augustus Van Wyck, George W. Chauncey, Colonel Timothy S. Williams, President of the Brooklyn Rapid Transit System, and the veteran Andrew N. Cahoon.

There had been a feast likewise on the club's twenty-fifth anniversary. The steward, Mr. Schmidt, a pupil of Delmonico's, outdid himself, while the reminiscences included the shooting of birds by members present when the site of the clubhouse had been an orchard stretching toward the harbor.

Newspapers told how the club had raised the city from a negative social state to one of high degree; and "Brooklyn Life" remarked that scarcely a breeze had disturbed the club's tranquillity—"an unusual record in organizations of the kind made up of so great a variety of elements."

The membership might have been doubled or trebled at the outset; but the organizers moved conservatively, for the club was an experiment. Breaking the ground as a pioneer, the club made the way easier for other exclusive clubs of a later day, among them the Oxford and the Hamilton. The original limit was 300, but it was disregarded in 1915. Nevertheless the requirements never have been relaxed and the high standard maintained has been the real secret of the club's success. These rules impart an atmosphere to the club which is distinctive and refined, though it never borders snobbery. Harmonious activity pervades the entire membership without exception. It continues and perpetuates its past without living in the past. In 1924 there were 370 members with a long waiting list.

Always the Brooklyn Club has been favored with gifts of works of art from its members. The leaders, the presidents, the pace makers of Brooklyn have presented portraits of themselves done by artists of renown, and these hang in the reading rooms. There are beside them art treasures, old and valuable prints and handsome paintings. Possibly the most famous is Guy's "Snow Scene." (q. v.)

Thus the club has been the means of instituting new policies, shaping public

opinion and advancing the interests of the community along altruistic, artistic or business lines, enhancing the fame of Brooklyn. Its members were among the first active exponents of the doctrine of citizenship. While other clubs stressed social activity and club life merely, the Brooklyn always regarded itself as an integral part of the city, owing to the city certain collective and specific duties.

In the old days, the Brooklyn Club used to take a hand in politics. Practically no Brooklyn man could be a candidate for the Supreme Court bench unless he were "nominated" by the club. While the party conventions actually made the nominations according to the programs of the party leaders, the leaders made it a practice to accede to the suggestions of the Brooklyn Club. Supreme Court Justiceships outranked average political offices, and the patronage connected with them was not great. The political leaders felt that their entire ticket would be benefited by the club's approval of their nominations for high judicial honors, and its support was valued. Sometimes the leaders broke away from this practice, but on almost every occasion they only brought defeat for their candidates. Of late years, the club seldom has taken a hand in politics, even indirectly.

The presidents in order have been: Henry E. Pierrepont, Henry R. Pierson, who died Chancellor of the University of the State of New York; Benjamin D. Silliman, David M. Stone, General Henry W. Slocum, General Benjamin F. Tracy, Henry D. Polhemus, Joseph C. Hendrix, William Hester, Edward M. Grout, George W. Chauncey, Frank W. Conn and Charles Jerome Edwards. Their terms of office varied from one to several years' incumbency, Mr. Silliman having served the longest—the period of twenty years, from 1869 to 1890. Concerning his service, "Brooklyn Life" chronicles:

"No review of the Brooklyn Club would be complete with merely a passing reference to Mr. Silliman. He was a man of ideas and the faculty of putting them into successful execution. He was indefatigable as a worker and had developed executive ability to a science. The club was his idol. Under his administration it flourished far beyond the fondest hopes of its early members. The membership embraced 300 and the indebtedness of the organization was so reduced it practically became a thing of the past. Small wonder that the names of Mr. Silliman and the Brooklyn Club are indissolubly associated, and that the members cherish an affection for this man which will endure as long as the club exists. If there is anywhere a parallel of a twenty years' presidency of a club like this one it has eluded vigilant attention."

The same publication, November 15, 1890, tells a remarkable story concerning the resignation of Mr. Silliman's successor, Mr. Stone. This reveals how the club, quick to adopt modern improvements, blazed the trail for the timorous:

"'Mr. Edison did it with his little electric lamp'—that's the verdict. The case in point is that Mr. David Stone has resigned the presidency of the Brooklyn Club because, forsooth, that up-to-the-times organization has determined to use electric lights in its building instead of the dull and innocuously desuetudinous glimmer of gas. 'What! have that highly dangerous and perniciously unhealthy electric glare in the clubhouse—never!' quoth the veteran editor of New York's great commercial paper; 'I, as director, protest.' President Stone's voice was the only one, however, raised against the startling innovation, and it was voted that the lights be put in. Mr. Stone said little else, but waited developments. Each morning on his way to his office he stopped to inquire if operations had been begun, and each morning the answer was 'No,' until one morning it was changed to 'Yes.' Whereupon Mr. Stone said nothing, but acted. Reaching his office on that fatal day, he sat down and wrote his resignation as president and director of Brooklyn Club affairs."

On the club membership rolls the names of Andrew N. Cahoon and Edward F. Patchen remained for more than fifty years. Their interest never waned, and the younger members never tired of hearing them tell of the glories, trials and joys of the club, and the men who had made it up, with their claim to fame, humor, honors or eccentricity. So great was their constancy that absence from their accustomed places in the club for even an afternoon immediately created



comment and inquiry. Other long-time members were Ex-Mayor David A. Boody, James Bryar, George V. Brower, Col. William Hester, H. V. Hubbard, W. D. Steele, W. C. Trull, Alden S. Swan, William M. Van Anden, Augustus Van Wyck, Jere A. Wernberg, both Justices of the Supreme Court; F. W. Bocock, Nelson G. Carman, George W. Chauncey, William N. Dykman, A. Josephson, L. Liebmann, E. H. Litchfield and G. V. Wilcox.

Horace B. Claflin founded a huge dry goods business, and won fame as a public spirited citizen. Simeon B. Crittenden led scores of good movements, and was in Congress. John Winslow was a leader in political and civic work, while William C. De Witt was a distinguished lawyer and corporation counsel. He was also a member of the commission which framed the first charter of Greater New York. Almet F. Jenks was presiding Justice of the Appellate Division of the Supreme Court, and Joseph Aspinall a Justice of the Supreme Court.

In other lines of activity its members have included Seymour L. Husted, who rose from stage line ownership to president of the Brooklyn City Railway Company. Henry C. Murphy was a member. William C. Kingsley and Seth Keeney his partner who began the construction of the Brooklyn Bridge as a private enterprise and General Benjamin F. Tracy were members. So were Joseph C. Hendrix, at one time Postmaster, at another in Congress and later President of the Kings County Trust Company; William Van Anden and Colonel William Hester, builders of the Brooklyn "Eagle" and men devoted to the advancement of Brooklyn. Alden S. Swan was a member of the Board of Aldermen. Augustus Van Wyck was a justice of the Supreme Court and candidate of the Democratic party for Governor in 1898. David A. Boody was mayor in 1891-95, and ever has been devoted to promoting its public library. George W. Chauncey was President of the Mechanics Bank and William N. Dykman a leader at the bar. Charles Jerome Edwards, President in 1924 is district manager for the Equitable Life Assurance Society in Brooklyn, director of several banking institutions and affiliated with other large and important interests. When Mr. Edwards was elected President of the club April 12, 1917, it needed the energetic guidance of a master hand. His energy and popularity soon restored its prestige and opened new opportunities of activity. The club was freed from debt and it has become one of the most efficient in the country.

The other officers in 1924 were: Vice-President, General George Albert Wingate; treasurer, Harry M. De Mott; secretary, Fred. H. Timpson. The directors were George W. Baker, William M. Calder, Stephen Callaghan, James P. Judge, George A. Wingate, David Porter, Edward M. Grout, Clinton D. Burdick, J. Turner Lynch, John N. Harman, Meier Steinbrink, Frank H. Tyler, George W. Chauncey, Charles Jerome Edwards, Henry M. De Mott, Henry S. Acken, Herman A. Metz, Charles H. Pulis, Fred H. Timpson and Thomas Fair-servis.

The original corporators were: Dr. A. Cook Hull, Charles J. Lowrey, Ethelbert S. Mills, George W. Parsons, and John Winslow. The twenty original directors were Henry E. Pierrepont, George W. Parsons, Henry C. Murphy, Samuel McLean, William Kent, Henry R. Pierson, Charles J. Lowrey, Luther B. Wyman, Henry Sanger, Franklin Woodruff, James Humphrey, Robert J. Hunter, William A. Fowler, William H. Wallace, Ethelbert S. Mills, John D. McKenzie, William B. Kendall, John Simpkins, William M. Vail and A. Cook Hull.

**The Hamilton Club**—The Hamilton Club for 42 years has been one of the leading and exclusive men's clubs of Brooklyn.

It was incorporated May 15, 1882, for "literary, artistic, economic and social purposes, with the aim of establishing a library, a gallery of pictures, statuary and other works of art."

The club has 500 members, and it has been said that it comprises a greater percentage of men from the learned professions than any other general club in the United States. It always has held a high reputation for forensic eloquence. A majority of the most prominent men of Brooklyn have been and are among its members.

The organization grew out of the old Hamilton Literary Society, formed about 1740, some of the organizers of which were Henry Ward Beecher, A. A. Low, Dr. Richard S. Storrs, and John Winslow. The Literary Society met in the old Hamilton office building owned by Mr. Low at Joralemon and Court Streets, and occupied the lower floor. Temple Bar now stands on the site. The club boasted a reading room and public library, and probably had about 100 members.

From the first the organization was a "club of gentlemen," but, interest dying out in it as a literary society, a group of approximately fifty of the leading members turned it into the social club it has remained.

The incorporators were David H. Cochran, Samuel McLean, Joshua M. Van Cott, John Winslow, Charles Storrs, Stewart L. Woodford, Thomas M. Rodman, Nelson G. Carman, Jr., James McKeen, John F. Praeger, John D. Pray, John W. Hunter, Thomas S. Moore, William Cary Sanger, John Notman, Bryan H. Smith, Joseph Yeoman and J. Spencer Turner.

Nineteen directors were named the first year—David H. Cochran, Samuel McLean, Joshua M. Van Cott, Joseph E. Brown, John Winslow, Charles Storrs, Stewart L. Woodford, Thomas H. Rodman, Nelson G. Carman, Jr., James McKeen, John F. Praeger, John D. Pray, John W. Hunter, Thomas S. Moore, William Cary Sanger, John Notman, Bryan H. Smith, Joseph Yeoman and J. Spencer Turner. After 1886, only 18 directors were chosen.

The reorganized club removed to a private residence, still standing, at Joralemon and Clinton Streets. Here it had adequate reception parlors, a dining hall and a few rooms to rent. But the club was restive until it acquired its own home, the handsome structure at 146 Remsen Street, which it built in 1884, the cost being about \$200,000. The first floor includes lounging, billiard and card rooms, while upstairs are grills, directors' rooms and a special dining salon for women—the latter an unusual feature.

In 1917, the members added a five-story fireproof addition on an adjoining lot. It contained 14 bedrooms, each with private bath, and cost \$83,389. The main building was put up under the plan that the members subscribed for stock in the company; the latter was given outright by subscriptions from the members.

Large sums have been spent for redecorating and remodeling the building. Almost \$9,000 was expended for such work in 1902; around \$11,000 in 1906, and similar amounts in other years. At first the club had bowling alleys in the basement, but they were torn away and a grill, called "The Dutch Room," built in. The grill was opened Nov. 3, 1908.

The club's library, containing a long list of modern and ancient volumes, has cost thousands of dollars. As early as 1901, the organization's art treasures were valued at \$23,922 and its handsome furniture at \$14,000. By 1924, valuation of furnishings and machinery was placed at more than \$55,000, while works of art were extended enormously in value and scope.

At the general opening of the Hamilton's present home, there was a loan



exhibition of pictures from Brooklyn residents, and many other pictures which were for sale. In 1885 the club's most famous painting was acquired—"Martha Washington's Reception," steel engravings of which are to be found in half the homesteads of the country. The picture, done by the artist Daniel Huntington, had been possessed by A. T. Stewart. At his death, his wife offered it for sale. Latham Fish and George Chauncey bid it in for about \$3,500. When Mr. Chauncey offered it to the Hamiltonians at the purchase price, the money was raised in a jiffy. For years the picture hung in the directors' room, then in the main dining room and now is placed over the downstairs mantelpiece in the reading room. The value of the picture is around \$50,000.

The club, years after the purchase of the masterpiece, entertained the artist with a dinner. Huntington explained how he attained likenesses of the famous figures on the canvas, among whom are, besides George and Martha Washington, Mr. and Mrs. John Adams, Mrs. Alexander Hamilton, Mr. and Mrs. John Jay, Thomas Jefferson, Henry Laurens, Mrs. Van Rensselaer and the Duke of Kent. All were reproduced from silhouettes or daguerreotypes of the originals and collected, at great pains, by the artist.

George Arliss, famous actor, with his leading lady, made a special trip to view the picture before presenting the play "Hamilton," and costumes of the drama were created identical with those of the painting.

On the walls of the directors' room, curios recall the life and days of Alexander Hamilton, in honor of whom the club was named. Among them is a lock of Hamilton's hair, presented by Dr. Allan McLane Hamilton, and two autographed letters of Hamilton. One was given to the club in 1903 by Edward T. Hulst and the other by Frank P. Hill in 1911. There is also a copy of the famous ballad "The Drum," sung by Hamilton in the presence of Burr at the dinner of the Society of the Cincinnati, July 8, 1804, one week before the duel. Hamilton, president general of the society, presided, and while he sang the song "Burr, silent and gloomy, sat at his left, gazing at him with fixed earnestness."

Another club treasure is a part of the flag of the old armored cruiser "Brooklyn," Admiral Schley's flagship, which took part in the battle of Santiago in the Spanish-American war. Over one of the club's interior doors is a quaint Hindu wood carving more than 500 years old, presented in 1883 by Abbot L. Dow. It represents Vishnu surrounded by his worshippers, and came from an ancient temple in Cochin, on the Southwest Coast of India, a town in the center of the country where the Apostle Thomas preached. The city is famous additionally in that Vasco Da Gama was originally buried in an old church there, wherein is preserved the slab which covered his remains.

Artistic club ornaments are three vases given the organization by the French government in appreciation of courtesies extended to the French dignitaries visiting Brooklyn during the ceremonies attending the gift of the Statue of Liberty. The club entertained within its walls the sculptor Auguste Bartholdi.

Outside the entrance of the Hamilton club stands a masterful statue of Hamilton on a massive base. This was erected in 1892, the work of the artist, William Ordway Partridge. He presented the club also with a bust of Edward Everett Hale.

Besides such cherished pieces, the organization possesses a wealth of high-priced and beautiful canvases, loveliest among which is a peasant girl painted by Stanley Middleton. Many mounted heads of animals and trophies of forest and stream have been donated by members who are devotees to outdoor life. Outstanding among the latter is a tarpon weighing 100 pounds, taken at Boca

Grande, Fla., by Theodore B. Brown, one of the club's fishing enthusiasts. The small hook and line with which it was captured are also preserved with it.

Traditional events of the club's official year are four: The celebration of Alexander Hamilton's birthday; that of George Washington, the Army and Navy dinner and the Sportsmen's dinner.

The former takes on, with its festivities, a sentimental seriousness and dignity, attained by addresses commemorating the life and work of America's first Secretary of the Treasury and a foremost framer of her Constitution. The latter calls for gayety unconfined. The club's grill is converted into forests or landscapes, its walls one season being entirely covered with birch bark. The menus were printed on wood, while animal skins, heads and mounted birds transplanted the guests into a wilderness setting. These have always been crowded affairs. Army and Navy dinners are brilliant, the military guests attending in full dress. The club has always included naval and army men as members, and ever keeps its doors hospitably wide to Uncle Sam's officers stationed or living here, or visiting New York.

Many conspicuous guests have been received at the Hamilton. Among these are Admiral Robert E. Peary, North Pole discoverer, who for years was also an associate member of the club. In his honor, several dinners were arranged, one on Jan. 5, 1907, in which he gave an account of his journey into the Arctic reaches. Woodrow Wilson was tendered a reception there while he was president of Princeton Thursday evening, Dec. 11, 1902. In 1898, the club gave a dinner for the Rev. Lyman Abbott. Japanese dignitaries—Baron Kentaro Kaneko, LL.D., ex-minister of Justice and of Agriculture and Commerce of Japan—were its guests at a reception and dinner May 12, 1904. S. Uchida, Japanese Consul General at New York, and other Japanese officials, attended.

Herbert Hoover, Secretary of Commerce, was the club's visitor Thursday evening, Dec. 16, 1920. Making the feature address at the Alexander Hamilton dinner in 1913 was Dr. Nicholas Murray Butler, president of Columbia University. So eloquent and unusual was his speech that the press carried it almost in full, while the club had it bound and sent a copy to each member.

The noted explorer, James Barnes, lectured and exhibited motion pictures of his expedition across Africa on Feb. 6, 1915, along the trail blazed by Stanley. Occupying the place of honor at the Washington Birthday dinner in 1902 was James M. Beck, Assistant Attorney General of the United States, while Detective William J. Burns, who rendered so much service to the United States, was complimented Dec. 20, 1911. Lieutenant General Robt. L. Bullard has been the club's frequent honor guest. Colonel George B. McClellan, Mayor of New York, was entertained April 6, 1905, and F. Hopkinson Smith, the author, was tendered a reception New Year's Eve of 1907.

David Bispham put on a song recital at a dinner Nov. 14, 1907, while Prof. William Lyon Phelps, of Yale, spoke at the club Jan. 30, 1908. Gov. Nathan L. Miller was given a dinner and reception Feb. 22, 1921, among the guests also being the U. S. Senators from New York, William M. Calder and James W. Wadsworth, Jr., and the Judge of the Court of Appeals, Frederick E. Crane.

A dinner was given for Capt. Ian Hay Beith, of the British Army and author of "The First Hundred Thousand," Nov. 13, 1916, and Arthur Guy Empey, of the Royal Fusileers, told of his experiences in the trenches at an informal dinner arranged for him June 26, 1917. Another noted World War visitor was Capt. A. Radclyffe Dugmore, of the King's Own Yorkshire Light Infantry, on Oct.



9, 1917. Lawrence F. Abbott, president of the Outlook Company, was the club's especial guest on Jan. 6, 1922, on the third anniversary of Roosevelt's death. He referred to the former President as "The American." William Butler Yeats, Irish poet and lecturer, was honored with an informal reception after his appearance at Historical Hall, Dec. 5, 1903.

An especially noted event was the dinner to the eight Justices-elect of the Supreme Court in the Second Department, December 7, 1906: George B. Abbott, Joseph Aspinall, William J. Carr, Lester W. Clark, Frederick E. Crane, Hon. Walter H. Jaycox, Hon. Townsend Scudder and Hon. Edward B. Thomas.

A banquet was given for Edgar M. Cullen, Chief Judge of the Court of Appeals, Dec. 3, 1904; and on Feb. 14, 1905, Richard Barry, only American correspondent with the Russian forces in Port Arthur, gave an account of the siege. Seth Low was entertained on his accession to the presidency of Columbia University, while Dr. John H. Finley, formerly Commissioner of Education of New York State, was the principal speaker at one of the Hamilton birthday dinners.

The Charter Revision Commission appointed by Gov. Roosevelt were especial guests of the club January 28, 1901, and an "Admiral's dinner," Oct. 26, 1900, complimented Admirals Norman Von H. Farquhar and Albert S. Barker, and captains of the vessels of the North Atlantic fleet in the harbor. Other admirals entertained in 1920 were James H. Glennon, commandant of The Third Naval District, and John D. MacDonald, commandant of the Brooklyn Navy Yard.

In December, 1889, a reception was given for the delegates to the International Conference, the club's hospitality being described in the United States government report of the tour of the Pan-American visitors. The club took an active interest in the Hudson-Fulton celebration in 1909, its steamer "Sagamore" being in the naval parade in New York Bay which proceeded up North River past the United States' and foreign war vessels, the "Half Moon" and the "Clermont."

Largest of the club's events of 1916 was the Army and Navy dinner Feb. 24. These guests spoke on subjects of vital importance during those critical times: Rear Admiral Nathaniel R. Usher, Judge Almet F. Jenks, Col. W. A. Simpson, U. S. A.; Lieutenant Commander Earl P. Jessop, U. S. N., and Elmer A. Sperry. Herbert F. Gunnison, New York State commissioner to the Brazil Centennial Exposition, was entertained Oct. 19, 1922. Lieutenant Commander W. B. Brinsmade, U. S. N., was the honor guest April 16, 1919, at which time he described the work in France of the Hospital unit organized in Brooklyn.

The New York State Bankers' Association held its winter dinner at the club Jan. 22, 1916.

Besides national and local figures, the club has honored many of its fellow members, and all its presidents, with dinners. Throughout the years it has kept itself up to the minute with lectures, motion pictures and entertainments concerning the world's progress. The club was one of the first to hear about "The Art of Practical Flying," from an expert. It has constantly engaged explorers and travelers to relate their experiences. The members heard Laura Lilly tell of her "Three Years Alone and Unprotected in the African Jungles." They witnessed motion pictures in colors almost as soon as they were invented. Widely diversified topics taken up were "The Tragedy of Martinique," "Wireless Telegraphy," "Lectures on Arabia," "The Panama Canal and Existing Conditions on the Isthmus," "Lincoln's Use of the English Language," and the preservation of forests, rivers, fish and game. Frank Mura and Herbert Dunton exhibited

original drawings and paintings at the club, and there was an exhibition of canvases by a group of living American artists in March, 1912.

Topics of current interest are still part of the organization's yearly program of winter evenings, and anticipated events are Songfests, at which the merry-makers assemble in the main banquet room. With a cheer leader at each table, gay melodies are sung in chorus and there are "stunts from 6 o'clock onward."

The members also amuse themselves with annual handicap pool and billiard tournaments, and golf tournaments held at various fields, among them Dyker Meadow, Nassau Country Club at Glen Cove, L. I., Richmond County Country Club, and Rockland Country Club. Prizes add interest to these contests.

The club keeps open house at New Year for members and guests, and there is almost always a Thanksgiving dinner. Some years ago, Thursday evenings were marked with a special *table d'hote* service and an orchestra.

The club's Musical Benefit dinners have assisted numerous young artists to complete their musical educations. At these affairs, the protege students would give programs displaying their talents.

During the world war, the club suspended the payment of dues by members in service, and although many social clubs over the country failed or disbanded at this time, the Hamilton weathered the storm, its stay-at-home members meeting its problems by contributing almost \$10,000 to care for deficits and increased expenses. More than 85 per cent of the regular and life members paid \$25 each to this fund. Besides the work of Hamiltonians in the numerous war organizations, the club as a whole aided the Red Cross and Refugee Relief funds.

A man whom the organization honored as having worked unceasingly and efficiently in its behalf was James McKeen, the lawyer, who served on its directing board for eighteen years. He was secretary for ten years, and president for eight. Upon his retirement as president, the club gave him a notable dinner.

Outstanding gifts to the club have been two contingent bequests for \$5,000 each—one from Judge Frederic A. Ward and the other from James Hale Bates. A. A. Low during 1889-90 gave \$2,000 in bonds of the club, interest and principal to be used for purchasing books. In the long roll of prominent members in 1924 may be mentioned William C. Redfield, Secretary of Commerce under President Wilson; Frederick E. Crane, Associate Judge of the Court of Appeals; Judge Townsend Scudder, Judge Abel E. Blackmar and Harrington Putnam, formerly justices of the Supreme Court of New York; Judge Almet F. Jenks formerly presiding justice of the Appellate Division of the Supreme Court, Second Judicial District; Supreme Court Justice David F. Manning, and Justices Charles H. Kelby and William J. Kelly.

Two of the oldest living members of the Hamilton Club are Isaac Cary, present when the Hamilton Literary Society became the Hamilton Club, and Judge Hiram Steele.

These are the officers of the club since 1882: Presidents, Samuel McLean, George M. Olcott, James McKeen, Frederic A. Ward, Sanford H. Steele, Frank Lyman, Alexander M. White and Edwin P. Maynard; Vice-Presidents, George I. Seney, Charles Storrs, David H. Cochran, George M. Olcott, J. Spencer Turner, William H. Wallace, Truman J. Backus, William B. Kendall, Frederic A. Ward, Sanford H. Steele, Albert G. McDonald, Frank Lyman, Walter S. Brewster, Alexander M. White, David F. Manning and E. Carleton Granbery; Treasurers, Tasker H. Marvin, William A. Read, I. Sherwood Coffin, Francis L. Eames, Jonathan Bulkley, Francis L. Hine, Theodore B. Brown, Isaac H. Cary, David H.



Lanman, Edwin W. Belcher, Charles A. Boody, Ward W. Pickard, Oliver E. Yale and D. Irving Mead.

Secretaries, A. A. Abbott, James McKeen, Robert B. Woodward, Duncan Edwards, William A. Taylor, Robert F. Tilney, John B. Holland, A. Victor Barnes, Percy S. Dudley, Percy S. Mallett, Furman T. Nutt, Jr., and Henry A. Ingraham.

Incumbent officers in 1924 were: President, William B. Brinsmade; vice-president, Walter H. Crittenden; secretary, Rufus D. W. Ewing; treasurer, Gilbert H. Thirkield. Directors: Alexander M. White, William B. Brinsmade, Rufus D. W. Ewing, Francis L. Durk, William J. Montgomery, and Gilbert H. Thirkield, Edwin P. Maynard, Henry A. Ingraham, William H. Thurston, John E. Bailey, D. Irving Mead, Adrian Van Sinderen, R. Ross Appleton, Joseph D. Allen, Clarence R. Hyde, Walter H. Crittenden, Furman T. Nutt, Jr., and George Hewlett.

**The Montauk Club**—situated just outside the entrance of Prospect Park—can be said to be not only an ideal “neighborhood club” for socially prominent and influential residents of the Prospect Heights section—but additionally it has built around itself traditions and a secluded atmosphere of quiet, old-world charm.

Out of the bustle of city affairs and set amid trees and greenery, it is alluring at all hours of the day. Therein have trod some of the world's greatest men. Therein have materialized projects like the sale of Liberty bonds, and drives for the various phases of America's world war—invaluable national service, such as the average social clubs did not participate in as clubs proper, but only as their individual members took part in other war service units. The drive conducted from the Montauk Club in the last Victory loan, which included the Park Neighborhood, netted the government \$5,000,000.

The club, which now has 650 members, was organized “to promote social relations among its members, to provide a suitable clubhouse as a place of resort and entertainment, and to establish therein a library and collection of works of art for their improvement.”

It held its first meeting Dec. 13, 1888, in the house of N. Q. Pope, with about twenty-five Brooklynites present. At subsequent meetings, committees were appointed, and at two general meetings in the following February about one hundred and fifty persons were present at each. At the first, a general discussion of a name of the organization took up most of the time. At the second, the Indian name “Montauk” was chosen.

With three hundred members, the club was incorporated March 13, 1889. The incorporators were: Charles A. Moore, David A. Boody, William M. Cole, Albert E. Lamb, J. Rogers Maxwell, William M. Rossiter, James E. Hays, Rufus T. Griggs, Leonard Moody, Edward I. Horsman, Timothy Lester Woodruff, John F. Tapscott, Albro J. Newton, John W. Wilson, Edwin H. Sayre, Algernon S. Higgins, George S. Sillcox, and Thomas E. Pearsall.

The incorporators acted as the first Board of Directors and elected President, Charles A. Moore; Vice-president, James E. Hays; Treasurer, William W. Rossiter; Secretary, John F. Tapscott.

The latter part of March the club rented a private dwelling house at 34 Eighth Avenue for temporary club quarters. Here the members busily planned for a permanent home, electing as a site and building committee J. Rogers Maxwell, chairman; Rufus T. Griggs, secretary; Leonard Moody, Edward I. Hors-

man, and Albro J. Newton. A building site had been purchased previous to the hiring of the temporary clubhouse. Its dimensions, fronting on Eighth Avenue, Lincoln Place and Plaza Circle, were respectively 100 x 117 x 110 feet. Plans for the building, drawn by Francis H. Kimball, were accepted April 18, 1889, and first ground broken Oct. 2, 1889. The day the cornerstone was laid—December 14—a driving snowstorm was powerless to hinder the attendance or enthusiasm of a representative crowd which assembled for the ceremonies.

The building consists of four stories and basement, and is one of the most striking in the world. It cost \$100,000, but it could not be duplicated today for approximately less than \$250,000. While the architecture is Venetian, panoramic carvings around openings and in the friezes breathe only of America and the progress of her civilization. A connected series of sculptured pictures begins with a forest scene showing deer drinking from a lake. Indian hunting groups, with realistic accoutrements, then flash before the view, the arrival of Hendrik Hudson's "Half-Moon," and carvings of the life of pioneer settlers. The series closes with the era of steam transportation.

Recessed loggias, bay windows and projecting balconies break the monotony of the Montauk structure. One gallery, extending around the entire top floor, commands magnificent views of the bay as far as the Narrows on one side, and a square mile of Prospect Park vistas on the other. In color, the building tones softly from dark brown to a tawny yellow, but violent contrasts were avoided. Long Meadow brown stone forms the basement, reddish Runcorn stone the first story, while above yellow brick is used in conjunction with terra cotta trimmings.

In the interior of the club, the first floor is made up of reception, library and reading rooms, cafe and morning room. All these connect and are reached from the main hall. Billiard, card and directors' rooms make up the second floor, while the third houses the main dining room—scene of brilliant dinners—a ladies' dining room and parlors. A ladies' entrance connects directly with the latter apartments, both by staircase and elevator, and does not pass through any of the halls of the club proper. It permits also a passageway for wives and daughters of the members and their women guests to pass to the bowling alleys in the basement.

The dining rooms are all thrown into one on formal occasions. Tables are extended the full length of the building and across the Plaza end. Thus 300 persons can be seated. Such arrangements permit guests at the speakers' table to be in full view and hearing from all parts of the room.

Sleeping apartments make up the fourth floor—and here is the "Jolly room," which extends entirely across the Plaza end and opens out upon the sight-seeing balcony. Servants' quarters and kitchens occupy a portion of this floor, as well as the upper floor in the roof.

The main-floor reception room serves as the club's auditorium. It seats 300 persons during the brilliant winter seasons, when members are entertained bi-monthly with programs consisting of lectures, concerts, moving pictures or educational features. A stage is built for occasions of especial importance.

It was only shortly after the club's official opening—around the Yule tide season of 1890—that it became the organization's policy to arrange complimentary dinners and receptions for public men. One such dinner given for Chauncey M. Depew in April, 1892, happened to be on his birthday. From this circumstance has grown up one of the traditional customs of the club. For Depew was immediately elected to honorary membership and invited to a birthday dinner at the club each year as long as he lived. The statesman's ninetieth anniversary



was thus commemorated April 26, 1924, marking the club's thirty-third annual celebration of the event. The venerable Depew spoke on "How the World Looks at Ninety." These occasions, attended by ladies, as well as club-members and guests, have achieved national conspicuousness.

Among others who have been entertained with Montauk dinners have been four Presidents of the United States—Grover Cleveland, William McKinley, Theodore Roosevelt and William H. Taft. Admiral Robert E. Peary was thus complimented after his discovery of the North Pole.

Notable was a dinner for Admiral Sampson, commander of the American fleet at the Battle of Santiago, and Admiral John W. Philip, commander of the Battleship "Texas" in the Spanish war. The majority of the commanding officers of the various battleships participating in the Battle of Santiago attended.

Others to whom such club courtesies were extended include Admiral George W. Melville, of the ill-fated Arctic exploring ship "Jeannette," and for years chief engineer of the Navy; Mayor William J. Gaynor, who was a member of the club, Stewart L. Woodford, American Minister to Spain at the outbreak of the Spanish war, General Horace Porter, secretary to President Grant, Bishop Malloy, of the Roman Catholic diocese of Brooklyn, and St. Clair McKelway, editor of the Brooklyn "Eagle." Mr. McKelway's dinner was attended by representatives of the editorial staffs of all the newspapers in New York and Brooklyn.

Dinners were put on for the Justices of the Appellate Division of the Second Department, which all of the trial justices attended, and for the various mayors of Brooklyn upon their assumption of office. Present were their department heads or cabinet members.

Several dinners were given during the World War for army and navy officers. One of these was for Major General Leonard Wood.

A club custom is to take part each season in Brooklyn's celebration of Sunday school anniversary day in Prospect Park, when thousands of little boys and girls, clad in rainbow colors, parade on the green. Because of its close proximity, the club usually entertains for luncheon the principal speaker of the day—nearly always a national figure. Among such guests have been President Coolidge, here June 4, 1920, when Vice-President of the United States, and Theodore Roosevelt, Assistant Secretary of the Navy, who reviewed the youngsters in 1924.

A gala annual merrymaking is the "Neighborhood Dinner," which really starts the club's official social season. It is a stag affair at which the complimented guest is some prominent member of the club chosen by the organization for the honor. It is usually attended by more than 200 men, who must be members of the club.

Almost every year since its organization, the Montauk has acquired art treasures, and its pictures, antiques and statuary are valuable. A priceless treasure is a directory, in which visitors inscribe their names and the date of their visits at the club. Signatures of hundreds of prominent persons are written therein. Of note is a black scrawl reading "Theodore Roosevelt," who signed April 8, 1919, and listed himself from New York City. John Wanamaker's name appears, and those of leading personages from almost every state in the union.

The club is non-political, and has always been conducted on a non-partisan and non-sectarian basis. Its membership includes men of all political parties and all religious creeds.

Prominent on its membership rolls are Supreme Court Justices Charles H.



BROOKLYN RIDING AND DRIVING CLUB





Kelby, Stephen Callaghan, William B. Carswell, Harry E. Lewis and Judges George J. O'Keefe, Franklin Taylor, Edward J. Dooley and William D. Niper. From United States Senatorial ranks have been drawn William M. Calder and Chauncey M. Depew; while these are outstanding members: Lewis E. Pierson, President of the Irving Bank and the Columbia Trust Company; Eugene G. Grace, president of Bethlehem Steel Corporation; Charles M. Schwab, chairman of Bethlehem Steel Corporation; James A. Farrell, president of the U. S. Steel Corporation; David A. Boody, first mayor of the old city of Brooklyn; William H. Childs, Sheriff John M. Harmon, William A. Prendergast, chairman of the Public Service Commission, and John T. Rafferty, collector for internal revenue for this district.

The Montauk has had but four presidents. The present incumbent, William H. English, has done invaluable service for the club's progress and standing, and has headed the organization for sixteen years—since 1908. His predecessors were Charles A. Moore, who held office from 1889 to 1901; Thomas H. Troy, president from 1901 to 1904, and Timothy Lester Woodruff, who led the club's affairs from 1904 to 1908.

Vice-presidents of the club through the years have been James E. Hayes, J. Rogers Maxwell, John M. Rider, L. J. Busby, Julian D. Fairchild, Edward M. Grout, James G. Shaw, Frank M. Smith and Edwin A. Ames, president of the Brooklyn Dime Savings Bank.

Treasurers have been William W. Rossiter, Edwin H. Sayre, Henry B. Henson, James Matthews, William H. Childs, Charles A. Boody, James G. Shaw and Frank J. Heaney.

These have served as club secretaries: John F. Tapscott, Algernon S. Higgins, Emory M. Downs, Henry Firth Wood, Bartholomew A. Greene, and Arthur E. Beggs.

Besides Mr. English, the president, the 1924 club officers were: Edwin A. Ames, vice-president; Frank J. Heaney, treasurer; and Mr. Beggs, secretary.

The 1924 directors were: William H. English, James H. Ward, Edward B. Jordan, Stephen Callaghan, Frank J. Heaney, William A. Prendergast, Isaac R. Oeland, Richard G. Hollaman, Jesse L. Hopkins, J. Scott Wood, John M. Rider, Lewis E. Pierson, Charles H. Kelby, Arthur E. Beggs, Charles C. Rhodes, John Hughes, Edwin A. Ames, and Frank Morse Smith.

**Atlantic Yacht Club**—The Brooklyn Yacht Club was first organized in 1857, and its growth was vigorous and healthy from the very first. Some ten years later the membership had grown to such proportions that a division occurred on account of too much prosperity, perhaps. At any rate, about half the members decided to strike out for themselves along new lines. They were a goodly sized body, even when they left the club and, therefore, had no reason for anxiety. They were incorporated in 1866 as the Atlantic Yacht Club, and prospered until they were recognized as one of the big yacht clubs of the country.

Its first headquarters was at the foot of Court Street, but the neighborhood grew more and more unpleasant and the members looked for a new home farther down the bay. They decided on the Bay Ridge Shore at 56th Street. An old Dutch farm house, once belonging to the Bergen estate, stood there, and its ancient owners had sent out many a boat load of produce for the markets of New York, but things had changed. The club overhauled the old house thoroughly. To protect the smaller craft, a long, square dock of piles was built, within which the water was always calm and smooth. The spot was full of charm and the



members soon began to think a new club house necessary. They wanted something modern and better adapted to their needs, for the old farm house was wholly too small. Almost at the beginning it was not adequate for half their membership. They acted quickly and in the early summer of 1890, the new clubhouse was built out over the water in front of the old farm house. It was one of the brightest, prettiest and coziest club houses along the shore. Rare paintings began to accumulate and models of famous yachts were hung on the walls. Among them were boats turned out by John H. Dimon, the veteran builder and one of the first members of the club. On the pool room wall hung a picture of the famous race of 1851, in which the "America" carried off the Queen's Cup, which has been the bone of contention in so many international races since that time. It was once the property of Mr. Dimon, in whose house it hung for thirty years. He received it the winter after the great race and Dick Brown, the Sandy Hook pilot who took the "America" to England, vouched for its correctness. Another interesting picture showed the start of the three boats, "Henrietta," "Fleetwing" and "Vesta" in their race to England, begun on December 11, 1866.

In 1890 there were about 300 members on the roll. They owned a fleet which included twenty-four schooners, seventy sloops, fifteen mainsail rigged and fifteen steam yachts. Among the former craft, those which brought honor to the club were the "Agnes," the "Azalea," the "Comet," the "Fortuna," the "Grayling," with an enviable name, the "Montauk," and the "Tidal Wave," which did some good work in its day. Among the laurel crowned sloops were the "Anaconda," the "Bansche," the "Athlon," the "Clara," the "Daisy," the "Shadow," the "Fannie," the "Gracie," the "Katrina," with a splendid record, the "Papoose" the "Shamrock," the "Titania," first among second-class sloops of her day, and the great "Volunteer," defender of the America's Cup. Nevertheless, the members were quite as fond of the neat little craft which afforded a spanking run down the bay, returning in time for a good dinner at the club house on their return. The Old Bay Ridge ferry came in a short distance below the club house, and the dummy road in Third Avenue gave it easy access considering the time.

**J. Rogers Maxwell** was the most versatile of Brooklyn's yachtsmen in his day and generation. He built, remodelled, designed, and sailed his own yachts in a long series of regattas, being all the time an active, busy railroad man, notable as a meticulous executive and as a man of breadth of vision, and always enthusiastic. In the late '80's and the '90's, he was training his sons to succeed him and another decade saw three Maxwells on the deep instead of one. The sons were John R. Maxwell, Jr., and Henry L. (Harry) Maxwell. John R. Maxwell, Jr., sailed the famous "Hamma" in the early '90's, with the old Maxwell captain, Jimmy Smith, at his elbow.

Other famous Maxwell yachts carried the Maxwell pennant to victory and gave Brooklyn a name in the yachting annals of America alongside of New York, Boston, Providence, Newport and Marblehead. The boats were the "Black Hawk," "Peerless," "Crusader," "Daphne," "Shamrock," "Kismet," and "Emerald," stretching back into the '60's and down into the '90's. Only the famous "Grayling," of Latham A. Fish, can be compared with them—the "Grayling" and her sailing master, Captain Norman Terry, inseparable for many years. The Atlantic Yacht Club grew up about these boats and became a factor through their excellence and skillful handling. And they were its very heart.

Mr. Maxwell's history began at the Gowanus canal, near Hamilton Avenue and the old Penny Bridge in South Brooklyn, a district now covered with huge

manufacturing plants. John Mumm had a small establishment and the seceders from the Brooklyn Yacht club met there to organize the Atlantic. The next year was seen another notable gathering to make these craft, notably John Mumm, the builder, Jimmy Smith, the captain, and Harry Wintringham, yacht designer and naval architect, besides Mr. Maxwell, himself. In those days, yachts were designed by rule of thumb. Mr. Maxwell was his own designer through all the years that followed. He and John Mumm and Jimmy Smith would meet and work out line after line. Later Wintringham became an important member of the council. He officially designed the "Emerald," deserves half the credit for the lines of the "Shamrock," and designed the steam yacht "Kismet," which Mr. Maxwell used for many years. While his strong personality dominated, Mr. Maxwell was not always right, as the races often proved. Some of the famous boats were changed two or three times before they did their best. At sea Mr. Maxwell sailed his own boats, having under him only a high-class mate. It is doubtful whether any other amateur yachtsman in America had his knowledge of sea and the art of sailing.

When the Atlantic Yacht Club was founded in 1866 he was the first treasurer. In 1869 he was rear commodore and in 1870 commodore. He grew as yachting grew and made the Atlantic club famous in racing circles. He entered the "Black Hawk," a 37-foot sloop, in the first Atlantic club regatta in 1866. The little "Gracie," the sloop "Peerless," the first "Daphne" (1869), followed. In 1871 Mr. Maxwell joined the New York Yacht club and his yachting history actually began. That was the year in which the "Peerless" came out.

For ten years or more the "Peerless" was matched against Commodore George A. Thayer's "Triton" (John Herreshoff, designer), Latham A. Fish's "Agnes," George H. Seeley's "Vision," Sheppard Homan's "Foam," and General Paine's "Halcyon." Those were the first great days of schooners about New York. In most of the contests raced in the bay the "Peerless" held her own. She was a Pouillon schooner, 68.3 feet overall and 63 feet waterline. Outside the Hook on one occasion she carried away both masts.

After the "Peerless," Mr. Maxwell built the "Crusader" in 1880, a schooner of 78 feet water line. She was lengthened a year later to 81 feet and made 97 feet over all. Latham A. Fish's "Grayling" came in two years later. She had a better model with inside ballast. Famous vessels entered the contests—the "Atlanta" (William Astor's old "Calypso" remodelled), Anson Phelps Stokes' "Clytie," William H. Langley's "Comet," James H. Smith's "Estelle," with the "Crusader" and the "Grayling."

The Maxwell boats had been of the centreboard type. His next great yacht, the "Shamrock," was a centreboard with outside keel, more of the "Puritan" type. She was a compromise sloop, cutter-rigged, between a cutter and a sloop and fairly deep. She was launched in 1887. Between her and the "Crusader" was the "Daphne," a sloop, shapely, designed by John Mumm, Jimmy Smith and Maxwell himself. She was not a racing type, but rather more of a cruising sloop, and she was the first boat Maxwell built with outside ballast. She was launched in 1885 and measured 51 feet overall, 46 feet water line. Too many extraordinary boats were pitted against her to permit of great success. The top-notcher of the day in that class was George Gould's "Fanita," and she won time and again. The "Enterprise," the "Rover," and Dr. J. C. Barron's "Athlon."

The "Shamrock" had better success. Built for the 70-foot class, she measured 67 feet water line. Her owner felt that to do well she should be the length



of the old "Peerless." She did not do well at first and in a year he had her lengthened and rebuilt. The 70-footer class was well established by 1885. The earliest boats were the "Gracie," the "Hildegard," the "Mischief," the "Winona," the "Bedouin" and the "Ilene." The "Titania" and the "Shamrock" were built in 1887 to beat anything afloat. They were triumphs of the shipbuilder's art. Burgess, designer of the cup defender "Volunteer," designed the "Titania" at the same time. She was owned by C. Oliver Iselin and raced by Hank Haff. She was a modern steel vessel an inch over class. The "Katrina" was built for E. B. Auchincloss in 1888, from designs by A. Cary Smith and, during the seasons of 1888-89, these three yachts had everything their own way. They were closely matched and fortune varied. The "Shamrock" was altered many times to improve her sailing qualities. Mr. Maxwell raced her until the class went out and she passed to William P. Ward, who put her in schooner rig.

To explain: In 1887 the big ninety-foot cup defenders went out of favor and the 40-footers took their place in popularity a year later. In 1889 the "Minerva" began her successful career against a dozen American yachts. In 1890 the 40-footers disappeared and a movement was started for a new class of 46-foot water line. Mr. Maxwell gave Mr. Wintringham a commission to build the "Nautilus," a keel cutter and his first keel boat. The "Nautilus" proved a good cruising boat and had a long career, but she was only one of many that were beaten by "Gloriana."

The "Emerald" appeared in 1893, excellent in every way and a fine example of American yacht designing. She was built too small for her class and suffered accordingly. Entered in the 80's class against such a boat as "Iroquois," she would have done better, and no doubt would have proved invincible. Instead, as the smallest of her class, she had to meet "Colonia" and the "Lasca," of John Brooks. In spite of the handicap, she beat the "Colonia" and the Boston yacht "Merlin" in August, 1896. This was due chiefly to the skill of Petersen, her skipper, but Rogers Maxwell himself took command at several critical periods.

The "Emerald" was a deep-keel schooner, 82 feet water line, 110 overall. She was altered twice and extensively, but was never brought up to her class. William Iselin bought her in 1888 and made a fine cruising yacht.

Between the "Emerald" and the "Humma," of 1901, Mr. Maxwell built only his steam yacht "Kismet," 145 feet long, 18.6 feet beam (1899), and traveled in her every day to and from Glen Cove. His sons had a long succession of smaller boats, notably the "Possum," the "Leda," the "Oiseau." In 1901, the "Leda" won eleven races out of thirteen. John R. Maxwell, Jr., won eleven races out of fifteen with the "Possum" in 1899. In 1890 she did not do so well. Young Maxwell's "Oiseau," in the 30-foot class, won thirty firsts and eleven seconds in two and a half years of sailing, with a total of forty-four starts. Gordon Pirie, of Sea Cliff, bought her in 1901.

J. Rogers Maxwell was born in New York City in 1846. Before he was a year old his parents moved to Brooklyn where he attended the Polytechnic. Years after he was one of its trustees. His father was a successful banker under the style of Maxwell & Co., established in 1837. The firm dealt largely in notes issued by persons in other states, especially the South, before the Civil War. The value of this paper fluctuated daily and notes issued in one state often were subject to a discount in another state. When the war came the firm dealt with gold and government securities. In 1865, the son with his father organized the house of Maxwell & Graves.

For years the father had been the broker for Austin Corbin, banker, of



Davenport, Iowa. In 1880-81, Maxwell & Graves with Austin Corbin purchased the Long Island Railroad. Mr. Corbin was elected President and J. Rogers Maxwell Vice-President. In 1886, he represented a syndicate which bought the Central Railroad of New Jersey, and upon its reorganization, he was chosen President. He was a man of pleasing address and enjoyed yachting in all its phases. He lived at the southwest corner of Eighth Avenue and Union Street in one of the finest houses in town.

Charles R. Flint, with a boy's experience in deep-sea sailing and fishing off the Maine coast, took up yachting in 1879 when he bought the "Gracie" the largest sloop yacht in American waters, for \$7,500. He took in three partners—Edmond Robert, Joseph P. Earle and Wendell Goodwin, all bachelors, and they made the "Gracie" their summer home. They sailed on the New York Yacht Club cruise in that year and the "Gracie" won honors.

Mr. Flint was not able to be on board the "Gracie" at the Buzzard's Bay race of 1880 for the Spirit of the Times Cup, but he arrived at New Bedford the next morning. His ship mates who included Robert Low Bacon, afterward Ambassador to France informed him the yachts had run into a dense fog at the end of the race. They believed the "Gracie" had won, although the Regatta Committee had awarded the cup to the "Mischief." Mr. Flint ascertained that this was the case and asked that the award of the cup be withdrawn. This was refused. Thereupon Mr. Flint telegraphed his house broker for the name of the owner of the "Mischief" and found that it was the chairman of the Regatta Committee. The Committee on sober second thought withdrew the award and awarded the cup to the "Gracie." Mr. Flint offered the cup for a second race and the "Gracie" won again and the cup is in his possession.

As she entered a race at another time a squall off the high land of Staten Island carried away the topmast. The crew every one of which was a Corinthian including Fred Tams, Emlen and Alfred Roosevelt, the founder of the Seawan-haka Yacht Club, Wallace Soule and Sidney Chubb, cleared the wreck and took the one chance in a thousand of winning. The "Gracie" being to windward was able to blanket the "Mischief" and hold her alongside to the southwest spit. Meanwhile one of the Corinthians made fast a rope around the broken end of the topmast so that the "Gracie" succeeded in setting an improvised spinnaker. The "Mischief" running free with all sails set gained rapidly, but the "Gracie" kept on knowing that inasmuch as the yachts had to beat home against a strong wind a topmast would be of little advantage. In fact the "Mischief" housed her topmast before she reached the lightship.

Noting this, Mr. Flint, who was on board the Club steamer remarked, "Don't you think that was a very courteous act, the 'Mischief' lowering her topmast because the 'Gracie' hasn't any?"

"Courtesy be damned," replied an old salt, "there's no courtesy in yacht racing!"

The "Gracie" crossed the line a winner.

The third exceptional event occurred in 1881, when the "Gracie" sailed a race with the "Mischief," while the latter was defending the America's Cup. The contests between the two yachts for the honor of defending the America's Cup had been very close. In a twenty mile test to windward and back, the "Gracie" was ahead of the "Mischief" by several minutes, but owing to a tow which got in her way, the boat lost that test race by only two seconds. While there was no question as to the Committee's fairness in selecting the "Mischief" as the defend-



ing yacht, the owners of the "Gracie" wanted to show the speed of their craft.

Mr. Flint brought out the speed boat "Arrow" soon after the Spanish American war. She made a world record on the water and was shown in movies throughout the world, with the fastest locomotive and the fastest horse. She was often seen in front of the Atlantic Yacht Club. When Count Cassini was Russian Ambassador, Mr. and Mrs. Flint entertained the Countess Cassini, his daughter, on board the "Arrow." She boarded the yacht at Jersey City accompanied by the Secretary and Attaches of the Russian Embassy, and went to the Ardsley Club where a graceful welcome was extended to the visitors.

From Ardsley the "Arrow" took them to the Atlantic Yacht Club, which was decorated with flags. There the Countess, abandoning her diplomacy, lost her temper, and demanded: "Why do you bring me to a club decorated with Japanese flags—the flags of the nation with which my country is at war?"

Mr. Flint had had nothing to do with putting up the Japanese flags, but here was a case which called for presence of mind and prompt action. He sent for the International Code of signals, handed the code to the Countess, and called her attention to the fact that the flag with the white ground and the red ball stood for the letter C.

"Countess," he explained, "we thought the greatest compliment we could pay you was to have the most prominent feature of our decorations the letter C, which stands not only for Countess but for Cassini."

In seeing the sights of Coney Island, the party was accompanied by a police escort and special attention was given to making the sights attractive to the Countess. As the wee small hours approached, Mr. Flint ventured to remark to her: "It is getting late and the Count may be anxious about you."

The reply was characteristically diplomatic: "Yes, father may worry a little, but now that we are here he would expect me to see everything!"

Which she did.

The "Arrow" was the first vessel built in the United States to adopt the only radical change in ship modelling that had been made for thousands of years, namely, the flat floor aft or flat run, which prevented squatting and which upset all previous tables of the power that could be put in different lengths of hulls. There was put in the "Arrow" three times the maximum horse power—7,000 H. P.—that was allowed in the old table. The yacht was 132 feet long and weighed only sixty-seven tons. This was a condition and not a theory when Lewis Nixon came on board, and I asked him to write in "The Log." He was a true prophet when, on July 12, 1904, he wrote: "In the 'Arrow' we see the perfection and maturity of the steam engine. In this there is seen the need of further advance which will be the gas engine—no boiler—no steam—smokeless—noiseless—always ready."

Mr. Flint was a member of the Cup Defender's Syndicate which won the races of 1893 with the yacht "Vigilant" against Lord Dunraven's yacht "Valkyrie II." He was a guest of Sir Thomas Lipton on board the steam yacht "Erin" when the "Valkyrie III" was defeated by the "Reliance" in the race for the America's Cup in 1903.

Mr. Flint made money out of the sport of yachting. The "Gracie" furnished a summer home, and by taking in three partners the expense was divided by four. He bought the "Nada" for \$3,700 and, after running her two years, sold her to George J. Gould for \$7,000. The "Fiseen" and the "Javelin" he transformed into torpedo boats for a South American government. The forty-five foot steam yacht "Sport" he sold to advantage.

In the case of the "Arrow" he made a profit on a cost of \$100,000. During the war with Spain he was impressed by the fact that, according to the naval records, the Spaniards had a larger torpedo fleet than the United States. So he ordered two quadruple expansion engines of 3,500 horse power each, with the intention of building a second class torpedo boat in association with Lewis Nixon. But after Cervera had been defeated the United States Government did not want a small torpedo boat at any price, and there was no way of marketing two highly refined 3,500 horse power engines. Mr. Flint then decided to make the world's record for speed on the water, and, although he knew by experience that aluminum disintegrates when it is used in boat construction for salt water, he built a very light hull. The result was that the "Arrow" steamed a measured mile at the rate of 45.6 miles an hour.

In 1887 the Legislature passed a bill to open Fifty-sixth Street to the Bay. It would have cut through the middle of the Atlantic Yacht Club Basin and deprived it of a home. All efforts to block the legislation or to have it revoked or annulled failed, and Paul H. Jeannot suggested that the club should try to enlist the efforts of Hugh McLaughlin to help in the dilemma. J. Lawrence Marcellus, corresponding secretary, and Mr. Jeannot presented the case, and Boss McLaughlin agreed that it was not right to do what they stoutly opposed. Thereupon he wrote a note and told his callers to send it to the Assemblyman of their district. The law was revoked and the club's home was not molested.

H. Hobart Hogins was commodore in 1884-85 and 86. At the June regatta in 1886, Mr. Jeannot was a guest aboard his sloop "Enterprise." As she was heading for the finish, Commodore Hogins pointing to the present site of the club house, said: "That is the proper place for us; but we shall have to wait until the transportation facilities warrant our removal."

John H. Prague presented the club plans for the house that was built at the end of the basin. He designed it so that it could be moved easily, which eventually was done and it stands upon the eastern end of the property. Mr. Prague was a good yachtsman and owned several noted boats, among them the "Crocodile" and the "Anaconda," both fast sailers designed by Philip Ellsworth.

George A. Thayer was Commodore in 1875-76-77 and 78. His schooner "Triton" a Herreshoff creation generally was first at the finish of a regatta. His daughters, the Misses Alta and Jane Thayer were both good sailors, and owned the steam yacht "Zoraya."

J. Lawrence Marcellus was the corresponding secretary from 1877 to 1887. In 1888 he was elected Commodore, thus rounding out his work for the club. He owned the sloop "Stella."

Latham A. Fish was commodore in 1879-80 and 81. His schooner "Grayling" was a widely known boat and a winner of the Goelet cup. Commodore Fish headed a syndicate which built the sloop "Atlantic" as a possible defender of the America's cup. She was designed by Philip Ellsworth.

David Banks was commodore for five terms—1892-93-94-95—1900 and 1901. In 1892 when the forty-footers were the prominent class, he presented a cup for a special race, the start and finish to be the Atlantic Yacht Club. The "Gloriana" sailed by Nat Herreshoff won with E. D. Morgan, the owner on board. When the cup was presented Commodore Banks wanted to have it inscribed suitably; but Mr. Morgan said that if it was agreeable he would prefer to take the cup away with him. He said it was the first of several that he had won to pass into his possession and the first one he ever had seen. Commodore Banks entertained handsomely. His schooner "Water Witch" was always a welcome sight. He



presented a handsome launch to the club which was known as the "Banks Launch."

George J. Gould was Commodore in 1895-96-97. In the sloop "Fanita," an Ellsworth boat, he won fifteen races in one season which was an unusual record. He became owner of the cup defender "Vigilant" and inherited the big steam yacht "Atalanta." He presented the Club an up-to-date launch which was called the "Gould Launch."

R. C. Field was elected treasurer in 1878 and re-elected in 1881, serving until 1888. He was popular and was one of the quarter-deck crew with Commodore Hogins.

Charles T. Pierce was treasurer in 1901-04, and served on the regatta committee in 1885-86-87-88-89-90 and 1900. He was Vice Commodore for two years. He owned the yawl "Imperia II."

Sir Thomas Lipton presented the mast of "Shamrock III" to the Club. He caused it to be erected for its flagstaff at his own expense, as a lasting memorial of the cup races. The mast is 165 feet long and twenty-two inches in diameter. The Jack yard was the No. 1 Club topsail sprit.

The clubhouse at Sea Gate was built in 1919 when the Bay Ridge clubhouse was likewise moved there, George J. Gould being Commodore. He extended liberal financial aid to the Club in building.

The Club prospered up to the time of Prohibition and its membership was up to the limit. Prohibition immediately caused a loss of fifty per cent of the members.

Brooklyn Woman's Club—Scarcely had the public and newspapers, always nervously anxious about any advance steps made by women, recovered from the shock of the organization of Sorosis in New York in 1869 and the New England Woman's Club in Boston, when another surprise came in the formation of the Brooklyn Woman's Club in Brooklyn.

In the spring of 1869 a little group of women met in the home of Mrs. Anna C. Field in Hicks Street, to discuss the possibility of a woman's organization in Brooklyn. The idea came to Mrs. Field in a railway car in company with Mrs. Burleigh and Miss Hillard.

It was during the troublous years following the Civil War and women were timid and doubtful of the outcome. But Mrs. Field had a brave following whom we delight to honor. Among them Mrs. Burleigh, Mrs. Brockway, Mrs. Ford, Mrs. Manning, Mrs. Catlin, Mrs. Ovington, Miss Hillard and Mrs. Howland. It was christened the Social Science Club, and its first regular meeting was held January 6, 1870, in Lowe's Building, corner of Court and Joralemon Streets, when its name was changed and Mrs. Celia Burleigh was elected President. The eight trustees for the first year were Celia Burleigh, Ellen T. Brockway, Mary Hathaway, Kate Hillard, Elizabeth R. Tilton, Mary H. Holly, Jennie Boggs and Mary E. Rowley.

One of its first activities was to found the Home for Business Women at 80 Willoughby Street, using the spacious parlors for meeting rooms and for social functions. In these rooms the articles of incorporation was signed March 31, 1871. The immediate successors of Mrs. Burleigh were Miss Kate Hillard, Mrs. Imogene C. Fales and Mrs. Ellen T. Brockway. Mrs. Brockway's term began in 1880 and continued for six years. Up to that time there had been frequent changes of officers, but a steady, strong growth and foundations laid from which the Club has never swerved. It was an earnest body of workers, discussing noble themes and doing brave initiative work.



The newspapers of the day were unable to see any other influence but suffrage and consequent neglect of home. Twenty years later it was written, "From the start it has on its membership noted women in the various walks of life. The lofty ideals which animated the charter members have borne abundant fruit."

During the first decade associate members were admitted, and men were included among these associated, many honored names showing on the roll. Evening social meetings were held monthly, at which many men were present. Among the Honorary Members were Maria Mitchell, George Sand, J. G. Whittier, Emily Faithful, Frances Power Cobb, Ralph Waldo Emerson, George William Curtis, Mary Putnam Jacobi and Jennie C. Croly.

In these early days much work of a philanthropic nature was undertaken and successfully carried out, and an impetus given to several movements that today claim a large measure of public attention.

The appointment of women inspectors of jails, station houses, etc., the appointment of probation officers, the Club paying the salary for the first appointee; placing boxes in public places for distribution of magazines to hospitals and prisons; establishing a training school for kindergartens and maintaining it for two years; starting the first free kindergarten leading to the establishment of the Free Kindergarten Society; organizing and supervising the Business Woman's Home; all had their inception in these years of the Woman's Club. It never ceased to appeal for the placing of women on the Board of Education, for the establishment of a training school for nurses, and to the pronounced interest taken by the Club in legal matters as they affect women, the Women's Legal Educational Society owes its inception and a large measure of its prosperity. Among the speakers have been some of the finest minds in the country, and special receptions were given to Julia Ward Howe, Louisa M. Alcott, Maria Mitchell and Moncure D. Conway.

With Mrs. Brockway there served as Vice-President, Mrs. M. C. F. Godfrey and none who attended the meetings of that day can forget the picture the two contrasting types of women presented. Mrs. Brockway is now the only present member of the Club who attended the initial meeting at Mrs. Field's house in 1869. To her energy and untiring effort is due the establishment of the Free Kindergarten system in Brooklyn. In 1885 she resigned on account of impaired health and for several months the Club held its regular meetings, doing its committee work, but depending on volunteers for its presiding officer.

In January, 1886, Mrs. Amelia K. Wing was elected President, with Mrs. C. W. DeWitt Stannard as Vice-President. It was Mrs. Stannard who presented the Club with the gavel now in use. In April of that year the first annual luncheon and reception was given in honor of Mrs. Brockway, at the Hotel St. George, being the first function held in the new hotel. It will be remembered as a most brilliant affair, the speakers being the President, Mrs. Brockway, Mrs. Croly, Mrs. John White Chadwick, Mrs. Abby Sage Richardson, Mrs. Laura C. Holloway, Miss C. Rounds and Mrs. Gordon L. Ford. The effects of this luncheon were unmistakable, the newspapers became respectful and the Club popular. From a membership of forty the Club increased to one hundred and fifty, which was made the limit.

During Mrs. Wing's term of office the rooms were open every Monday for a social meeting, to talk informally of the welfare of the Club. Committees were better organized, each member to choose one on which she would serve. A serious effort was made to buy, or build a clubhouse, and several thousand dollars was subscribed. An effort was made to celebrate the 21st anniversary by an exhibition



of woman's work, artistic and otherwise, to be open to the public for a week. A compromise was made on a reception in the Assembly Rooms of the old Academy, with the walls most creditably adorned with pictures by women artists.

An evening meeting, which men of note attended, was held on the departure of Dr. Stanton Coit for his well-known work in London. The same month a committee called on Mayor Chapin, having for company Dr. Storrs, General Woodford and Mr. Hinrichs, to urge the appointment of women on the school board, such appointments soon following.

January 7, 1891, Mrs. Truman J. Backus was elected President. The influence of her able leadership is still with us. She held the office for four years and established many improvements. Business meetings were held quarterly, preceded by a luncheon and were for members only. A strong Hospitality Committee was formed, and a President's Auxiliary. In January, 1893, the Club moved from 80 Willoughby Street to rooms in the Y. W. C. A. Building. The Woman's Club book, "The Silver Year," was issued as a memento of the 25th anniversary, and a reception was held in the Academy of Music.

After four years service Mrs. Backus resigned her position, May 20, 1895, and Mrs. Mariana Chapman was chosen her successor. Her winning and beautiful personality is still vivid in the minds of many. During her term there was much agitation for a free public library, the movement led by Mrs. Craigie, and the appointment of police matrons again urged. The Art Committee, of which Mrs. Mary E. Jacobs was chairman, was instrumental in introducing flowers and beautiful reproductions of pictures in the public schools. After a term of two years Mrs. Chapman resigned and Mrs. Backus was again chosen as President. Agitation for a general clubhouse was renewed at this time, without success. The 29th anniversary was held in the Union League Club House, to honor the five women appointed on the Board of Education, Mrs. Jacobs, Mrs. Pettengill, Mrs. Powell, Miss Perry and Miss Chapman, four of the number being members of the Club.

A Whist circle was formed to meet weekly, and for a short time was successful, but mere pleasure had never been the aim of the Club, and its existence was brief. At the expiration of two years Mrs. Franklin W. Hooper was elected President on March 20th, 1899, and the early history of the Club may be considered closed. So thoroughly was it established, so well organized and harmonious had it become, going its way without friction and in a strong, helpful manner that succeeding Presidents had but to keep the machinery in motion, and to maintain the standard long since reached, and the high ideals of its incorporators. The present success of the Club bears ample testimony to the manner in which this has been done.

In March, 1912, Mrs. Ida W. Coffin was elected President, and during her term of office a committee under the very able leadership of Mrs. Frank Melville, Jr., was appointed to investigate the practicability of having a clubhouse for the Brooklyn Woman's Club.

As the result of the work of this committee the Club, in October, 1913, occupied and took possession of its own well-appointed clubhouse at 114 Pierrepont Street.

In this year 1924, the Brooklyn Woman's Club has a membership of three hundred and fifty-five and with Miss Elizabeth H. Perry as its newly elected President expects to continue to carry out the aims and ideals of its founders.

The founder was Mrs. Anna C. Field, 1869. Former presidents have been: Mrs. Celia Burleigh, 1870-1872; Miss Kate Hillard, 1872-1879; Mrs. Imogene C.

Fales, 1879-1880; Mrs. Ellen T. Brockway, 1880-1885; Mrs. Amelia K. Wing, 1886-1891; Mrs. Helen H. Backus, 1891-1895; Mrs. Mariana Chapman, 1895-1897; Mrs. Helen H. Backus, 1897-1899; Mrs. Martha H. Hooper, 1899-1903; Mrs. Martha K. McKay, 1903-1906; Mrs. Susan K. Wright, 1906-1908; Mrs. Julia O. Moore, 1908-1910; Mrs. Anne C. Edsall, 1910-1912; Mrs. Ida Willets Coffin, 1912-1916; Mrs. L. Gertrude Chittenden, 1916-1918; Mrs. Elsie Patchen Halstead, 1918-1920; Mrs. Permelia Hogg Lindridge, 1920-1922; Mrs. Helen B. Schoonhoven, 1922-1924.

### Knights of Columbus

From a soldier's frolic in a New Haven armory came the idea that developed into the organization of the Knights of Columbus, a fraternal insurance body of Catholics numbering 763,815 members.

Company C of the Second Connecticut Regiment after a hot and hard evening of drilling sent out a sergeant to procure supplies for a company meeting. On his return a burlesque initiation was staged of which he was the initiate. It was so successful that an organization known as the Red Knights grew from it. Branches were formed in various Connecticut cities and towns. Because of a lack of serious purpose the Red Knights languished and died, but two of its friends and supporters, the Rev. Michael J. McGivney, assistant pastor of St. Mary's Church, New Haven and Daniel Colwell, conceived from it the idea of a fraternity of Catholics "to comprise solid fraternal benefits with the attractiveness of selected membership and secret initiations, and yet not oath-bound and only secret upon promise of man to man, which promise must ever yield to the authority of Church and State."

A charter to the Knights of Columbus, the first issued to a national fraternal organization in the State of Connecticut, was granted March 29, 1882. The Order spread rapidly throughout the New England States.

Samuel D. Cronin and John Clarke, members of a Connecticut Council, as the subordinate bodies are called, removed to Brooklyn, and with the aid of certain influential residents, organized a council in the South Brooklyn section that was instituted September 24, 1891, by Supreme Knight John J. Phelan of Bridgeport, National Secretary Daniel Colwell of New Haven and a degree corps from the Elm City. For four years Brooklyn Council No. 60 was the only Council of the order on Long Island.

Thomas Harrison Cummings, the National Organizer, came to Brooklyn in the early Spring of 1895 and organized Columbus Council No. 126 with one of the largest charter memberships in the Order. It was Instituted May 26, 1895, by the degree corps of Brooklyn Council, Park City Council, of Bridgeport and Woburn Council of Woburn, Mass. The third degree was conferred by District Deputy William F. Kenny, Editor of the "Boston Globe." The Order spread rapidly. National Organizer Cummings organized Christopher Council which was instituted June 30, and in November organized Washington Council in the Eastern district. The year 1895 closed with the organization of America Council in the Heights section. About this time the work of organization was suspended on Long Island pending the result of a searching investigation into the object and aims of the Order by the Right Reverend Charles Edward McDonnell, Bishop of Brooklyn, whose diocese extends over Long Island. Satisfied that there was nothing in the Order's intent prejudicial to faith, morals or good citizenship he offered no obstacle to its extension. Although not a Catholic Society, in the sense



of a confraternity or sodality, its membership is composed of Catholics and they desired the good will of the church authorities.

Unity Council was organized in 1896 and, later in the year, the first State Council was held in the Wilson building on Fulton Street. There was a spirited contest for the State Deputyship between Justice John J. Delany of Manhattan and Charles A. Webber of Brooklyn, which resulted in the election of Justice Delany. The Brooklynites elected were: State Treasurer James P. Maloney; State Warden James P. White; State Chaplain the Rev. William B. Farrell; State Advocate Charles A. Webber and Auditor of the Reserve Fund Arthur S. Somers. William A. Prendergast was appointed District Deputy Supreme Knight in 1896, but business engagements necessitated his resignation, and William H. Bennett was appointed to succeed him.

Long Island Council, recruited in the Ocean Hill and East New York sections, was instituted December 6, 1896.

In 1897, a body known as Long Island Chapter was organized. It was composed of the Grand Knight, the presiding officers of the subordinate councils, and one delegate from each council. It was a central body in which all business concerning inter-council matters and public functions was discussed and arranged. Brooklyn had the distinction of organizing the first chapter. It was adopted by the National Council and introduced into all the larger cities in the United States. Its first public function was a banquet in the Knapp Mansion, October 12, 1897, commemorating the four hundredth and fifth anniversary of the discovery of America by Columbus. The respondents to toasts were State Deputy John J. Delany, Supreme Knight James E. Hayes, the Rev. William F. McGuirl, James M. E. O'Grady, Luke D. Stapleton and Francis A. McCloskey. These banquets on discovery day continued for several years and finally gave place to annual public patriotic meetings in the Academy of Music.

War with Spain was declared in 1898. As soon as the mobilization of troops began the Long Island Chapter, in May, appointed the three Long Island District Deputies, William H. Bennett, Charles A. Webber, and Francis D. Thorne, an army and navy committee. Councils and individual members subscribed \$1,000 towards a soldiers' and sailors' aid fund. A song sheet of fifty popular songs was printed and 20,000 copies sent to the camps, naval stations and war vessels. A precious acknowledgment of receipt of two hundred of these songsters was received from Chaplain Reaney, U. S. N., dated U. S. S. "Olympia," Manila, August 8, 1898, on the eve of the fall of that city. Clothing to the extent of fifty dozen pairs of socks, ten dozen shirts, fifty dozen handkerchiefs, large quantities of pipes and tobacco and cases of books and magazines were distributed. The Rev. Edward W. McCarty and the Rev. Dr. William J. White volunteered for service as chaplains with the 14th Brooklyn Regiment at Chickamauga Camp, and 6,000 prayer books and various religious articles were sent them. When it was proposed to land and encamp the returning soldiers at Montauk Point, a big tent was bought and sent to the Very Rev. E. H. Porcile, S. P. M., who was ministering to the soldiers at Montauk Point, to be used as a recreation hall, but, owing to a change in the War Department plans, ordering the removal of the invalid soldiers to Brooklyn hospitals, the tent was not used.

While the sick and wounded soldiers were in the hospitals, fruit and wines were provided for them.

"As far as I knew then," wrote District Deputy Charles A. Webber, "and as a National Director I was in touch with the Order, ours was the only work of the kind done by the Order during the Spanish War. In fact, the people in general had not begun to be aroused to the necessity of helping the boys when the war ceased. So we were almost alone

in the work. Little as we did in the light of present-day work yet we earned some praise and gratitude and were glad of our bit."

Lafayette, Unity, Marquette, Montauk, Greater New York, Bedford, Morning Star, Fort Greene, John Loughlin, Carroll, Lexington, Admiral Dewey, and Leo Councils had been instituted in Brooklyn; Colon in Long Island City, the first Council in Queens County, organized in 1898; Lincoln in Astoria, Champlain in Elmhurst, in 1898, and Jamaica in Jamaica, May 1.

The Order was extended to Suffolk and Nassau Counties by District Deputy William F. Reynolds, assisted by George E. Lanagan and Valentine Hickey. Gate of Heaven Council, the first Council in Suffolk County, was instituted in Huntington December 3, 1899, and was followed, March 31, 1901, by Penataquit Council, Bayshore.

The first Council in Nassau County was Westbury, organized June 25, 1905.

The National Board of Directors appointed a committee to revise the ceremonials of the Order and prepare a fourth degree. Brooklyn took an important part in the work. The committee was made up of Supreme Knight Edward L. Hearn, ex-officio; Daniel Colwell, National Secretary; the Very Rev. Joseph H. Conroy, D.D.V.G., now Bishop of Ogdensburgh, New York; State Deputy P. J. McArdle of Illinois; John J. Delany, later Justice of the Supreme Court, first district; John W. Hogan, recently retired Justice of the New York Court of Appeals; National Director Charles A. Webber, and District Deputy William H. Bennett. The first meetings of the committee were held in the Clarendon Hotel, Brooklyn, May 22-23, 1899. Charles A. Webber, chairman of the committee, Vicar General Conroy, and John J. Delany were named to write the ceremonial of the fourth degree. The committee met later in the Brighton Beach Hotel and in Manhattan.

The text of the fourth degree is patriotic in every line, most of it, appropriately, from the pen of Charles A. Webber, whose father, a Union soldier, was killed in the battle of Gettysburg. In it is the only oath or affirmation in the ceremonials of the Knights of Columbus—the statutory oath to support and defend the constitution of the United States. It also contains copious extracts from the writings of one of the greatest expounders of the constitution, Justice Joseph Story of the United States Supreme Court. The first exemplification of the degree was on Washington's birthday, 1900, in Lenox Lyceum, Manhattan. Fourteen hundred candidates were initiated, including large delegations from Long Island councils. On Decoration Day of the same year the degree was exemplified in the Clermont Avenue Rink, Brooklyn.

Not long after the first exemplification of the degree the anti-Catholic press assailed it, asserting that while the lower degrees of "that dark lantern Roman Catholic conspiracy, the Knights of Columbus," were bad enough, the fourth degree contained an oath which bound its initiates to war on non-Catholics. It was the oft-exploded bogus "Jesuit oath," revamped to suit the occasion. The National Council of the Order instituted criminal libel suits against newspapers in various parts of the country for printing the bogus oath and invariably the defendants were convicted. So general became these accusations that Joseph Scott of California obtained the consent of the National Board of Directors to submit for investigation and report the entire ceremonial of the Order to a committee consisting of five Past Grand Masters of the Masonic Order in California. The report of these eminent Masons completely exonerated the Knights of Columbus of all the charges brought against the order. The report of the committee was subsequently printed in the "Congressional Record." Actuated



by that beautiful sentiment of one of the early fathers of the Christian Church, "In essentials, unity; in non-essentials, liberty; in all things, charity," the relations between the two great fraternities have been marked by courtesy and kindness, as evidenced by the Independence Day celebration of the Bronx Knights of Columbus in 1924. Last Past Grand Master Tompkins, of the Masonic Jurisdiction of New York State, delivered the principal address on the campus of St. John's (Jesuit) College, Fordham.

A Knights of Columbus Lyceum course, introducing a series of public monthly entertainments consisting of lectures and musical numbers was begun in 1897 and continued for several years, but eventually took the form of a lyceum course of lectures delivered in the Council chambers. Edward McLoughlin, a talented young member of Augustin Daly's famous company, compiled a directory of lectures and subjects and inaugurated the Council lectures which are still in operation.

In 1900, there were twenty-five Councils on Long Island, and the necessity for a central headquarters to be used as a meeting place and home for the Chapter and its activities became urgent. Members of the Order subscribed \$18,000 towards a building fund, and to increase the amount necessary a Columbus Memorial Fair was opened in the unoccupied 13th Regiment Armory, Flatbush Avenue and Hanson Place, January 8, 1900. It was a big financial success under the management of William A. Burns, director general; John J. Keough, chairman; William F. Reynolds, vice chairman; Daniel A. McCann, secretary; Arthur W. Sellers, treasurer; and a board of management made up of M. J. McCarty, Edward A. Duffy, William Daly, George Tracy, Robert O'Grady, and William H. Bennett. The sum of \$11,473.83 was realized. With the funds in hand No. 81 Hanson Place, formerly occupied by the Columbian Club, was purchased and entirely reconstructed by Washington Hull, a widely known Brooklyn architect.

The First New York Regiment, Knights of Columbus, was organized in 1902, with the following field and staff: William A. Burns, Colonel; William J. Crawford, Lieutenant Colonel; Francis D. Thorne, Major; the Very Rev. Eugene H. Percile, S.P.M., Chaplain; William H. Bennett, Adjutant; Richard P. Thomas, Quartermaster; William Daly, Commissary; Charles Newman, M.D., Surgeon; Arthur W. Sellers, Regimental Sergeant Major. Captains: Co. A, John J. Claffey; Co. B, Edward P. Daily; Co. C, James E. Kenney; Co. D, Peter J. Skelly; Co. E, John F. Scanlon. The uniform worn is an adaptation of the naval undress uniform. The commanding officers succeeding Colonel Burns have been William F. Crawford, John J. Claffey, James C. Day, and George E. Lanagan. The regiment was reorganized February 22, 1923, as Troop A. The present officers are: John H. Beetha, Captain; John J. Cumming, First Lieutenant; Frank J. Murray, Second Lieutenant; Thomas J. Guilmartin, First Sergeant; John W. Fitzpatrick, Second Sergeant. The object of the organization is to supply guards and a color guard at Fourth Degree exemplifications and all public functions of the Order. Its ranks are almost wholly filled with former National guardsmen or overseas war veterans. Shortly after the organization of the regiment it acted as a guard at the Memorial Field Mass solemnized on the Marine Barracks parade ground, Brooklyn Navy Yard, Decoration Day, 1904, in memory of the dead of the army and navy. The services were under the joint auspices of Gloucester Naval Command No. 17, Spanish War Veterans, and Long Island Chapter, Knights of Columbus. The altar and memorial columns were erected by the Knights of Columbus. These Decoration Day memorial services were held annually at the



Marine Barracks until the parade ground during the world war was covered with temporary buildings. Since that time they have been held on the parade ground at Fort Hamilton.

The first "safe and sane" celebration of Independence Day was held at the music stand, Prospect Park, under the auspices of Long Island Assembly, Calvert province, fourth degree, July 4, 1905. After the city's "safe and sane" celebration at the City Hall, Manhattan, in 1916, Dr. Kunz, at a gathering in the Mayor's office, inquired as to whom belonged the credit for the "safe and sane" fourth. Comptroller William A. Prendergast explained that the practice had its re-birth in the action of the Knights of Columbus, in Brooklyn, in 1905. Acting on Dr. Kunz's suggestion, a brief history of the revival was filed in the archives of the Scenic Society of New York and other organizations.

The nineteenth Independence Day celebration was held in Prospect Park in 1924.

The first of an annual series of charity balls was held under the auspices of Long Island Chapter, in 1907. These balls were given to accumulate a fund to endow or sustain beds in all the hospitals of Brooklyn for sick and disabled members of the Order; to found scholarships for boys whose parents were unable to educate them for the priesthood or the professions. Charles F. Goodwin, the originator of the scholarship plan, realizing that the youth who manifested an inclination for the church would be assisted by the clergy or religious orders, designed the scholarships for young men who aspired to medicine, law or engineering; to defray the expenses of memorial services for those who die in the country's service or members of the order.

The scheme of consolidating Councils was first broached in 1910 when the officers of Columbus, John Loughlin and Immaculate Councils met to discuss the plan. It was argued that a considerable saving of rent and general expenses would result and that one Council of large membership would be more effective than three or four weak and struggling councils.

The result of these deliberations was the ultimate consolidation of Columbus, Christopher, America, Unity, Lafayette, Bedford, Fort Greene, John Loughlin, and Carroll Councils under the name and number Bedford Council No. 126, which later became Columbus Council No. 126, with a membership of 5,000. The Councils of the Order are now (1924): Sag Harbor, of Sag Harbor; Sterling, Greenpoint; Immaculate Conception, Riverhead; Southampton, Southampton; Penataquit, Bay Shore; Patchogue, Patchogue; Central Islip, Central Islip; St. Lawrence, Sayville; Our Lady of Perpetual Help, Lindenhurst; St. Kilian's, Farmingdale; Bishop McDonnell, Babylon; St. Martin of Tours, Amityville; Gate of Heaven, Huntington; Kings Park, Kings Park; Joan of Arc, Port Jefferson; Oyster Bay, Oyster Bay; Port Washington, Port Washington; James Norton, Glen Cove; John W. Mackay, Roslyn; Maris Stella, Far Rockaway; Hempstead, Hempstead; Holy Redeemer, Freeport; St. Mary's, Lynbrook; Westbury, Westbury; Floral Park, Floral Park; Corpus Christi, Mineola; Joseph Barry, Hicksville; Olympia, Flushing; St. Ambrose, College Point; Great Neck, Great Neck; Joyce Kilmer, Flushing; Jamaica, Jamaica; South Ozone Park, South Ozone Park; St. Ann's, Queens Village; Morris Park, Richmond Hill; Ridgewood, Ridgewood; Sacred Heart, Woodhaven; Colon, Long Island City; Lincoln, Astoria; Champlain, Elmhurst; General Sherman, Corona. The Brooklyn Councils are: Lexington, Loyola, Fidelity, Angelus, Long Island, Montauk, Marquette, Isabella, Cardinal Gibbons, St. Columba, Parkway, Washington, Greater New York, La Salle, John Hughes, General Philip H. Sheridan, Baron de Kalb and



Thomas Dongan, Brooklyn, Admiral Dewey, Our Lady of Loretto, St. Paul, Columbus and Morning Star.

During the Mexican border trouble there were about 250,000 American soldiers stationed along the Rio Grande and in July, 1916, the Supreme Board of Directors decided to establish huts for the entertainment and spiritual aid of the soldiers. Nineteen of these centres were maintained at the expense of the order, until the last of the troops left the border during the spring of 1917.

Then came the entry of the United States into the World War. The Supreme officers at once offered to the Government the resources of the Order in aid of the soldiers. Raymond B. Fosdick, Chairman of the War Department's Commission on Training Camp Activities, wrote to Supreme Knight James A. Flaherty, June 21, 1917:

"At a meeting of the Commission on Training Camp Activities, held June 19th, it was unanimously voted to recommend to the Secretary of War the acceptance of the generous proposition of the Knights of Columbus of June 13th, in regard to the erection of buildings for social purposes in the army training camps in the United States. Secretary Baker, yesterday, indicated his agreement with our resolution, and I understand that word has already been sent to the officials of your organization. May I say, too, that we welcome the strong position which your organization has always taken in regard to the moral hazards surrounding a young man's life, and I am confident that your influence in the camps will add much to their general tone."

The Order raised among its members within thirty days \$1,000,000, which elicited from James, Cardinal Gibbons, a letter dated July 4, 1917, in which he said:

"The timely and handsome patriotic gift of one million dollars to build recreation halls for the soldiers at the sixteen cantonment camps, deserves gratitude from half a million fathers and mothers, and from a hundred million loyal Americans. The Knights of Columbus DO things, and it is my pleasant duty to thank you and wish you the most hearty co-operation from not only your four hundred thousand knights, but also from our eighteen million admiring Catholics. May God bless the Knights and this superb work! God wills it!"

On December 31, 1917, the Order had erected seventy-five buildings in charge of forty-nine Knights of Columbus chaplains and one hundred and thirty-seven secretaries. With the overseas armies were 1,075 secretaries and a large number of chaplains. Forty-five buildings were erected in France.

Long Island Knights had not been idle. Several weeks prior to the entrance of the United States into the war, Long Island Chapter, at its regular monthly meeting, May, 1917, adopted the following resolution:

"*Resolved*, That the Chairman of the Long Island Chapter, Knights of Columbus, be authorized to appoint a committee, the number constituting same to be decided by him, to look to the moral and spiritual welfare of the men now in the service of the United States who are located in camps, navy yards or reservations, that the committee may decide on as being embraced in the territory under the jurisdiction of the Long Island Chapter, Knights of Columbus."

The committee appointed by Chairman John J. McGroarty consisted of the following: Maurice Breen, John T. McLean, John J. Duffy, Thomas F. Ahearn, John T. Barry, John H. Beetha, William H. Bennett, John F. Brennan, William Call, John F. Cassidy, Michael Connell, James A. Corcoran, William J. Corcoran, Edward I. Cullen, Joseph A. Cummings, James F. Curtin, William J. Dolan, Thomas J. Donovan, Thomas J. Evers, Bernard Fee, James E. Finegan, William R. Foley, William F. X. Geoghan, John A. Giblin, Harry M. Gill, Thomas J. Garven, Lawrence J. Hanley, John L. Hanophy, Joseph Hurson, Edward Kelleher, S. P. Lahey, George E. Lanagan, John E. Larney, Joseph F. Loughlin, James McArdle, William McBrien, John F. McGroarty, John F. Monaghan, Thomas P. Murphy, Fred B. Murrin, James Murtha, Lorenzo Pando, James Phelan,

Joseph F. Quinn, James S. Ramsey, Timothy J. Reardon, George A. Roesch, Edgar A. Sharp, John J. Shevlin, Michael H. Smith, Alexander J. Stiles, Joseph J. Timmes, John Tobin, and James S. Walsh. This committee included the State Deputy, James E. Finegan, the past chairmen of Long Island Chapter, the entire Board of District Deputies, and representatives of all the Councils.

In the meantime the Right Reverend Charles Edward McDonnell had appointed a committee of the clergy, under the chairmanship of the Right Reverend Edward W. McCarty, pastor of St. Augustine's Church, with which the Knights of Columbus' committee was to co-operate. The committee of fifty met at the Knights of Columbus Institute, 81 Hanson Place, June 24, 1917, Chairman John J. McGroarty, presiding. A temporary organization of the committee was effected and Maurice Breen was elected chairman; John T. McLean, secretary, and John J. Duffy, treasurer. These officers were afterwards made permanent, Joseph F. Quinn later succeeding Secretary John T. McLean. Messrs. Breen, Duffy and Quinn devoted their entire time during the war to the Committee's work and to them is due the success that crowned it.

A meeting held June 30th, was addressed by Monsignor McCarty, who called for immediate attention to the needs of the sailors at the Navy Yard and to the troops at Fort Hamilton, Fort Totten, Rockaway Point, and the cantonment at Yaphank. Great enthusiasm greeted his remarks and those of State Deputy Finegan, Chairman McGroarty, Maurice Breen, William R. Foley, George E. Lanagan and Joseph J. Timmes.

The following resolution was adopted: "That we, the Knights of Columbus of the Long Island jurisdiction, within whose confines have been and will be established some of the largest army and navy centers, gladly pledge our sincerest and most enthusiastic support to this work of patriotism, because of our deep sense of love of God, of His Church and of our country."

One thousand dollars was voted from the Chapter funds for immediate use, and it was resolved to add to it the entire receipts from a field day about to be held.

National Secretary William J. McGinley explained at a meeting, July 10th, what the Supreme Council purposed doing and it was apparent that the local situation must be cared for by the Chapter, with the exception of Camp Upton.

Then began the collection of funds to meet the gigantic task that faced the Chapter's War Activities Committee. The Bishop authorized a collection by the Knights in the churches of the diocese. From this source \$46,963.23 was realized. The donations from the Knights of Columbus, National Catholic War Council, other organizations and individuals were \$54,825.59. The, at that time, popular block parties, Coney Island week, field days, concerts and enterprises of various kinds, brought the total receipts up to \$245,130.91.

The Rev. James H. Casey, faithful friar of the Fourth Degree, now State Chaplain of the Order, and stationed at Babylon, volunteered as temporary chaplain at Fort Hamilton and afforded not only spiritual but much material aid to the large garrison.

Chairman Maurice Breen immediately signed contracts for the erection of buildings. That at Fort Hamilton cost, with its appurtenances, \$10,348.55; Fort Totten, \$3,738.25; Fort Tilden, \$5,613.75; Field No. 2, Garden City, \$11,863.69; Manhattan Bridge Plaza center, \$14,497.93; Field No. 1, Garden City, \$6,947.76; buildings No. 1 and 2 and tent, Camp Mills, \$20,190.22; Fort Terry, \$9,360.81; Montauk Point, \$14,204.04. Later, buildings were erected at the Naval Base, Shore Road, costing \$18,173.76, and a large tent at Comack, \$663.53.



The Knights of Columbus had six buildings and seventeen secretaries at Camp Upton, Yaphank. Aside from the activities conducted at Camp Upton, the Knights of Columbus war activities were conducted at the Federal rendezvous, foot of Fifty-second Street, Brooklyn, where four secretaries were employed; Fort Hamilton, three secretaries; 81 Hanson Place, one secretary; Sand Street, two secretaries; receiving ship "Bay Ridge," three secretaries; some activities were conducted at Brinley Field, Comack, where we had a tent. The Knights of Columbus had quite an establishment at Camp Mills, with four buildings, three tents and seventeen secretaries; one secretary at Montauk Point; one building and two secretaries at Fort Terry, Plumb Island; building and a secretary at Fort Tilden, Rockaway, and a building and a secretary at Fort Totten, Whitestone.

Independent of the war activities and disbursements of Long Island Chapter, the Supreme Office expended the following amounts in soldiers' and sailors' care on Long Island.

Camp activities .....	\$331,153.97
Community centre activities .....	55,088.62
Employment activities, Brooklyn .....	9,363.02
Educational activities .....	86,712.49
Hospital activities .....	36,610.31
Total.....	\$518,928.41

In addition to these, clubs were outfitted and maintained at 255 High Street, Brooklyn; Ellis Island; on the receiving ship "Adirondack," at Bayshore, Sayville, Westbury, Hempstead, and Long Island City. The club at Bay Shore was conducted by Penataquit Council in its clubhouse, with the financial assistance of the War Activities Committee. Mrs. Brinckerhoff and her assistants, most of them non-Catholics, co-operated in making this southside canteen one of the finest in the country.

Athletic equipment, games, and stationery were provided for the men at the Naval Reserve Armory, foot of Fifty-second Street, Brooklyn. John Hughes' Council kept open house for the Coast Artillerymen in its headquarters on Cropsey Avenue, Bath Beach. The Manhattan Bridge Plaza Canteen was under the directorship of Miss Josephine M. Bennett and Mrs. John J. Duffy, assisted by units from the Visitation Convent Alumnae, Newman Club of Adelphi College, and the Ladies' Catholic Benevolent Association. The Chateau du Park, Park Place and Vanderbilt Avenue, given by Peter Rouss, was maintained as a Rest House for soldiers and sailors, under the direction of Miss Mary Markey.

The War Activities Committee had lived up to the war slogan of the Knights of Columbus, "Everybody welcome, everything free," with a lavish hand, erecting buildings at every point on Long Island where soldiers and sailors were located and outfitting them in the completest manner possible, still when the armed forces had been disbanded the Committee found a large balance of funds on hand. The money had been contributed from patriotic motives. On one point the Committee was a unit. Not one cent of it should be expended for the purposes of the Knights of Columbus.

State Deputy Daniel A. Tobin and the other officials of the Order were determined on this course, and the funds collected for soldiers' and sailors' relief and assistance have been and are being applied to that purpose solely.

Prior to the World War a fund had been gathered by contributions of

members and various forms of entertainments for social service work. The Long Island Chapter incorporated the Long Island Chapter, Knights of Columbus Social Service.

The following officers were elected: James E. Finegan, President; John J. McGroarty, Vice-President. The present officers are: Charles J. Dodd, District Attorney of Kings County, President; Edward I. Cullen, First Vice-President; William R. Foley, Second Vice-President; Joseph F. Quinn, Secretary; John J. Duffy, Treasurer. The object of the Social Service is the care of boys, a branch of the Big Brother movement. Centers are in operation on Warren, near Hicks Street, Brooklyn, and on Newtown Avenue, Astoria.

An estate of two hundred and twenty acres was purchased four miles from Monroe Village, Orange County, New York. A six acre lake offers opportunity for boating and bathing. There is an administration building, large mess hall, recreation hall and wash house. The boys are housed in bungalows, each accommodating eight inmates. Camp K. C., as it is named, was formally opened June 30, 1924.

The National Board of Directors maintains in St. Augustine's Academy Building, Park Place and Sixth Avenue, a night vocational school for ex-service men with a mechanical department attached.

The excellence of its staff and curriculum has attracted to it many students. Former service men and women, without regard to race or creed, receive free tuition. All others, even Knights of Columbus, are charged tuition fees.

The best proof that either an individual or an organization has come to a community to stay is afforded by the acquisition of a permanent home.

The first building erected in Kings County for purely Knights of Columbus purposes is the home of Lexington Council. In 1912, when the Council's membership numbered only three hundred, the building on the southeast corner of Meserole Avenue and Lorimer Street was purchased. By 1920 the membership had increased to 1,400 and the accommodations were inadequate. In the Fall of that year the Council decided to erect a new building. Adjoining property was bought and on the site the cornerstone was laid July 30, 1922, and the building dedicated February 18, 1923.

The edifice is fifty feet by one hundred feet and its cost was \$99,621.37.

The Councils of the eastern section of the Borough bought the spacious building of the Bushwick Democratic Club at 719 Bushwick Avenue and, after alterations, opened it as the Brooklyn Knights of Columbus Home.

Many of the Councils in Brooklyn and Queens, and several on Long Island, own their homes, representing an outlay of nearly \$3,000,000.

In January, 1925, Colon Council, of Long Island City, bought the club house of the B. P. O. Elks, and will reconstruct it for Knights of Columbus purposes.

Twenty years ago a young man, recently admitted to the bar, came to Brooklyn from a small city in the northern part of New York State. He was practically friendless and, like so many thousands of his kind, sought shelter in a boarding house. He suffered all the bitter pangs of nostalgia. Sitting in his cheerless hall room, one night he pictured to himself a great edifice, with all the comforts of home and all the joys of companionship for the young Catholic stranger in the great city, and he resolved that he would work towards the realization of his dream. In the fall of 1923, Maurice Breen, the one-time stranger, as President of the building committee of Columbus Council, signed on behalf of the Council,



the contract for the purchase of a plot two hundred feet on Prospect Park West, by one hundred feet on Union and President Streets, directly opposite the main entrance to Prospect Park.

Headed by Columbus Council band several thousand members of the Council marched to the site of the new club house, July 1, 1924, and with appropriate ceremonies, under the direction of Grand Knight Joseph W. Conklin, turned the first sod. The cornerstone was laid October 12, 1924, and within sixteen months the \$2,000,000 club house will be ready for occupancy. It will be of brick and stone, ten stories in height and will contain an auditorium, with a seating capacity of 1,800, dining room, lounge, swimming pool, bowling alleys, gymnasium, class rooms and two hundred sleeping rooms. John J. McGroarty is chairman of the General Committee and of the Executive Committee; Joseph A. McNamara, Chairman of the Building Committee; Maurice Breen, Chairman of the Drive Committee and William R. Foley, Chairman of the Site Committee; William D. Till, construction manager; R. Thomas Short and John T. Riggs, architects.

Long Island has been honored in the selection of five of the brotherhood as State Deputies: Judge Francis A. McCloskey, Francis D. Thorne, Daniel J. Griffin, James E. Finegan, and the present incumbent, Daniel A. Tobin, all men of the highest character and standing, and indefatigable in their labors for the extension of Columbianism.

State Deputy Tobin's aim is to enlarge the scope of the Order's work and to add to its fraternal features and physical and spiritual care of the young.

At the last session of the Supreme Council (1924) he was elected a member of the Supreme Board of Directors.

WILLIAM HARPER BENNETT.

**The Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks** was organized in the garret of a theatrical boarding house in New York City late in 1867. The theatrical men who composed the original membership called themselves at first the Jolly Corks. They changed to the present name within a few months.

Traveling members carried the ideas and principles of the order to other cities, and requests came gradually for the institution of lodges. They were so slow, however, that at the end of the first year only eight lodges were in existence. In 1915, the order had a total of 1,320 lodges, with a total membership of 450,000. At present it is exceeded by no American fraternity, having almost 1,500 lodges and 800,000 members.

The history of Brooklyn Lodge, No. 22, parallels the history of the order. It likewise began modestly and made slow progress for some years. In the same way it advanced by lusty strides to its present prominence and prosperity.

Charity, Justice, Brotherly Love and Fidelity—these are the cardinal principles of the Elks. Together with a steadfast devotion to the American flag and all which the flag represents, these principles have built up the Elks to their present prominence. The story is the same in Brooklyn. Beginning simply, and with a slow growth at first, Brooklyn Lodge has progressed beyond all the dreams of its founders. In 1915, when the present clubhouse on South Oxford Street was opened, the lodge had 4,400 members, and the facilities of the new home seemed ample. Today the lodge has 12,000 members, and larger quarters have long since been a necessity.

To Brother Frank Girard—a name well known and lovingly remembered in Brooklyn theatrical history and Elkdom—belongs the credit for the establish-

ment of Brooklyn Lodge. The rules of the Grand Lodge in the early days permitted any three members of the order in good standing to apply to the Exalted Grand Ruler, as the head of the order was then known, for a dispensation to form a new lodge in a city where no lodge was then existing. Early in 1883, three members of New York Lodge, No. 1, who were residents of Brooklyn, petitioned for the formation of a lodge in Brooklyn. The petitioners were Brothers Frank Girard, Percy G. Williams, and W. Harry Kennedy.

Exalted Grand Ruler John J. Tindale approved of the application and granted the necessary dispensation. Newark Lodge had just been instituted as No. 21, and Brooklyn Lodge became No. 22. The first meeting was held on Sunday evening, April 15, 1883, in the Halsey Building on Fulton Street, now remodelled and known as the Arbuckle Building. Brother Girard presided over the installation ceremony. The original membership roll consisted of the three petitioners, who were later transferred from New York Lodge, together with Walter L. Sinn, J. De La Harpe, John J. Mackey, George W. McCarthy, Walter E. Lamb, Robert Stewart, Joseph H. Smith, David T. Lynch, J. H. Thompson, Emory Brown, H. A. Meyer, Thomas T. Hayden, H. H. Adams, Harry W. Stevens, D. Baldwin, William Merritt, George Merritt, W. A. McConnell, and H. H. Wheeler. The first Exalted Ruler was David T. Lynch, who served until the regular election later in the year.

The second meeting was held at Grand Central Hall on Fulton Street, on the site of the present Abraham & Straus store. The third meeting was held at Masonic Hall, 304 Fulton Street, recently called the Assembly, which remained the headquarters for some time. The Grand Lodge granted a charter to Brooklyn Lodge when it met in December, and the formal presentation was made on December 30, 1883.

The lodge moved back to Grand Central Hall, and after some time went again to its first meeting room in the Halsey Building. In May, 1885, headquarters were secured in the Cole Building, 389 Fulton Street, where the lodge remained until 1893. In that year a change was made to the Clover Club Building, 163 Livingston Street.

It is interesting to note that at the time of this removal the membership of the lodge numbered only one hundred and twenty-six. Although the membership had not been limited to the theatrical profession since early in the history of the organization, Sunday had been the meeting night, and this had not attracted many members outside of the profession. With the change to the Clover Club the lodge selected Friday as its meeting night, and promptly began to grow.

For a few months in 1894 the lodge met at Huber & Gebhardt's Casino, 10 Elm Place, and then at the Johnston Building on Nevins Street. In the meantime, in September, 1893, the lodge purchased its first real home, the residence of Judge Massey at 123 Schermerhorn Street. This was refurnished and occupied with appropriate ceremonies on April 27, 1894, the members marching from the Johnston Building to their new home. The facilities of the building became inadequate in 1902, and it was arranged to tear down the old residence and erect a modern clubhouse on the site. While this was being done the lodge met at 118 Schermerhorn Street across the way. The new clubhouse had a cornerstone-laying on July 16, 1902, and a formal dedication on December 20, both occasions being marked by great enthusiasm.

Membership grew rapidly with the opening of the new clubhouse, and in 1903 Brooklyn Lodge for the first time enjoyed the honor of being the largest



lodge in the order. This distinction has belonged to Brooklyn much of the time since then. At present No. 22 is securely at the head of the list.

With the growth of membership the Schermerhorn Street clubhouse soon became too small, and in 1911 a committee was appointed to find larger quarters. This movement resulted in the purchase of a plot on South Oxford Street, where the cornerstone for a new building was laid on December 20, 1913. The new home was thrown open for inspection on Sunday, January 10, 1915, and formally opened on Saturday evening, January 30, with a fair which continued to February 6. Great as was the pleasure of the members with their new home at that time, it is already apparent that the structure is too small for the remarkable growth of the lodge, and a committee is now seeking larger quarters.

During the years which have been sketched in this history many names noted in Brooklyn affairs were prominent in the annals of Elkdom, and many incidents of Brooklyn history were marked by the participation of the Elks. The complete list of Exalted Rulers of Brooklyn Lodge shows many names well known in Brooklyn. This is the roster:

1883, David T. Lynch; 1883, Frank Girard; 1884, Frank Girard; 1885, Walter L. Sinn; 1886, John J. Mackey; 1887, W. Harry Kennedy; 1888, W. Harry Kennedy; 1889, Thomas T. Hayden; 1890, William H. Friday; 1891, William H. Friday; 1892, William H. Friday; 1893, William B. Lindsay; 1894, Walter A. Cooper; 1895, Charles M. Newins; 1896, Charles M. Newins; 1897, George L. Weed; 1898, Charles H. Williamson; 1899, George W. Dalton; 1900, Charles Cranford; 1901, Charles Cranford; 1902, William J. Buttling; 1903, William J. Buttling; 1904, William J. Buttling; 1905, Philip A. Brennan; 1906, Edward S. McGrath; 1907, Edward J. Kane; 1908, Edward J. Kane; 1909, John Feitner; 1910, Albert T. Brophy; 1911, Albert T. Brophy; 1912, Peter S. Seery; 1913, Thomas J. Moore; 1914, John J. McDermott; 1915, Harry A. Greene; 1916, Fred C. Reynolds; 1917, James J. Byrne; 1918, John J. Delaney; 1919, Joseph F. Hammill; 1920, Daniel A. McCann; 1921, John F. Lantry; 1922, Harry C. Kensing.

The history of Brooklyn Lodge is replete with acts of service to the public and with innumerable acts of consideration for its own members. When calamity has brought distress upon a community, the lodge has been quick to send help. Many public ceremonies in Brooklyn have been carried out with the help of the Elks. Fraternal visits have been paid to the lodges of many other cities, and a number of younger lodges have been installed with the aid of No. 22.

Every year a memorial service is held for departed brothers. Every year Flag Day is observed. Every year a great fund is raised for Christmas baskets and shoes for the poor of Brooklyn. Every year a great field day is held for the entertainment of the children of the orphan homes. Every night, at the hour of eleven, goes out the greeting "to our absent brothers." This custom, dating from the earliest days of Elkdom, is suggested in the closing chorus of the first part of this year's minstrel show.

The social activities of Brooklyn Lodge are too numerous to be listed.

#### Odd Fellows

For forty years the Odd Fellows of Brooklyn have dreamed of an Odd Fellows Temple, and committees have been formed every few years for the purpose of providing a way in which to erect an Odd Fellows building in Brooklyn. It was not until 1920 that a committee of the "never-say-die" type was formed,





ODD FELLOWS MEMORIAL HALL





and today the Odd Fellows and Rebekahs of Brooklyn are the proud owners of a wonderful building at 301-309 Schermerhorn Street. This is without doubt the most central point in the Borough of Brooklyn, a point where all subways, elevated, trolley cars and the Long Island Railroad meet.

The property with the building has been appraised at \$650,000. At the present time there are fifty-four lodges meeting in the building and the large auditorium on the first floor is being rapidly booked for entertainments. The hall has a seating capacity of about 1,200, and a dance space of 4,500 feet. The stage is thirty-two by eighteen and capable of handling a first-class show. In the basement of the building is a banquet hall, which will accommodate five hundred guests at one sitting. The building is equipped with an electric elevator of the latest type.

While the building is rented and in operation, it will no doubt take several years before it is fully equipped. A large portion of the money necessary to erect the building was raised through a bond issue, and was subscribed entirely by members of the fraternity.

The executive committee that has so successfully handled the affairs of the building consists of: Christian Loeffler, Miles Hoyt, Earl D. Bent, Max Prokasky, William H. Nelson, George S. Frost, John F. Bullenkamp, Frank Polato, Isadore Sachs, Anna V. Parquet, Max Reiss, A. D. Bennett, Alex. McCarroll, and Henry Logan.

The progress of the Odd Fellows building was as follows: On October 10, 1921, the property at 301-307 Schermerhorn Street was purchased for the sum of \$47,000, and an additional twenty feet at 309 Schermerhorn Street was purchased on February 23, 1922. On July 28, 1923, ground was broken, and on November 10, 1923, the foundation was completed. On December 15, 1923, the first carload of steel arrived. On January 20, 1924, the steel was completed. On January 25th the first bricks were laid. On February 1st concrete floors were started and completed twenty days after. On March 1st the cornerstone was laid by Grand Master Roderick G. Waller. The building was completed sufficiently to procure a temporary permit for occupancy on May 1st, and each week from that time to date has seen some improvement in general conditions.

## CHAPTER XXXIV

### GEORGE HALL THE FIRST MAYOR

**H**ISTORICALLY, April 8 is a memorable one for the first city of Brooklyn. For this date, in 1834, marked the end of the old village days and the beginning of city life. What is known as the second city of Brooklyn came into being some twenty years later when Williamsburg was annexed.

There were fewer than 25,000 people, where there are more than 2,000,000 today. The Charter Act, passed April 8, went into effect April 10. Brooklyn had been a village eighteen years, the act incorporating the village having been passed by the Legislature April 12, 1816.

Brooklyn came very near not being a city at all. The charter was only obtained at Albany after the hardest of fights and in the face of great opposition. Speculators and municipal authorities on Manhattan Island saw in the making of a city out of Brooklyn territory increased development of the Long Island shore, and thus, as they looked at it, a hindrance to the growth of their own property



toward Harlem and above. So they fought the city plan of Brooklyn tooth and nail and blocked it over many years.

The historian, Stiles, relates entertainingly, of such matters in January, 1834:

"The Brooklyn people, undaunted by previous defeats and confident in their own resources, and the justice of their claims, again renewed their application to the Legislature for a city charter. The City of New York, with the spirit of the 'dog in the manger,' still threw the whole weight of her wealth and influence against the movement. Her objections, as stated in the report of a special committee of the Common Council, on the 30th, were substantially these: That the limits of the City of New York ought to embrace the whole of the counties of Kings and Richmond. That all commercial cities are naturally rivals and competitors, and that contentions, inconvenience and other calamities grow out of such rivalries. That the period was not far distant when a population of 2,000,000 would be comprised within the three counties of New York, Kings and Richmond. That the limits of New York already extended to low water mark, on all the shores of Brooklyn, east of Red Hook. That an act of Legislature, passed in 1821, relative to the village of Brooklyn was virtually an encroachment on the rights of New York, inasmuch as it provided for the election of a harbor master whose duty in Brooklyn would be within the city limits of New York, and further, that the Sheriff and civil officers of Brooklyn were allowed to execute processes on board of vessels attached to the wharves of Brooklyn, etc., etc."

The real key, however, to the opposition made by New York was undoubtedly to be found in the fear of her real estate speculators and her municipal authorities. The former, who held large quantities of land in the upper portion of the city, foresaw that the incorporation of Brooklyn as a city would give a new impetus to her growth and population, and that Brooklyn lots would soon become formidable rivals to their own in the market. The latter saw, in the energy of their youthful and aspiring neighbor, a power which, when grown to maturer strength, might wrest from New York her long contested and profitable water and ferry rights. So capital, speculation, and monopoly joined hands in a most formidable league against the aspirations and endeavors of Brooklyn.

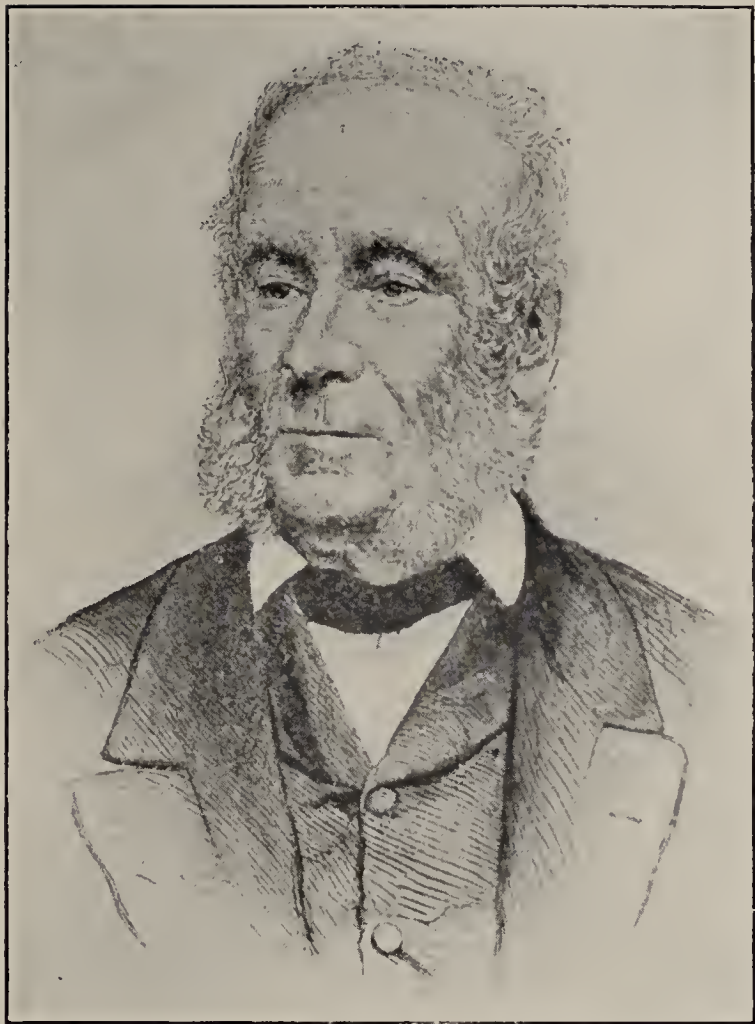
The village had a total debt of \$42,000, a very large amount for those times, which the joyful little city at once assumed. Twenty-two thousand dollars of this had been for village market debt. A celebration in the new city's honor came off April 25, its features being a civic procession and public exercises in the First Presbyterian Church. William Rockwell was the orator of this occasion. On May 5 the first election was held and on May 20 this first Board of Aldermen elected Brooklyn's first Mayor—George Hall of the Know Nothing Party.

Hall had been a candidate for village president only a short time before, and aroused great opposition because he favored keeping pigs in the streets and wanted all unlicensed rum shops closed.

Twenty-one years were to pass when he was to be elected Mayor again.

Mayor Hall was a remarkable man. He was the leading advocate of temperance in a time when anti-intoxication was, curiously enough, the watchword and the reason for being of a municipal party. In 1844 he ran for Mayor as the candidate of the Temperance Party, and was defeated. But, notwithstanding that, in the little city's early days, temperance was one of the greatest movements, the cry to shut up public houses was pressing, and this first Mayor was the chief fighter for it, being the first in Brooklyn to sign both the old Temperance Pledge and the Washingtonian Pledge.

In the fifties, while he was Mayor, a plague of cholera raged. The people became very much panic-stricken, and there seemed to be no one with sufficient courage to face the epidemic until Mr. Hall literally took it in hand. He went right into it; superintended the removal of victims, cleaned out houses, took responsibility after responsibility, and his efforts met with deserved success. But he did not pass untouched. The epidemic seized him, and his determination was shown. Going to his home, he sat down before a hot fire, called for one medicine



GEORGE HALL, FIRST MAYOR OF BROOKLYN





after another until he had taken a large amount of various mixtures, and apparently by his determination not to succumb to the disease, fought it off. A report was circulated that he was dead, which report brought him to the front of the City Hall that the people might see that he was not dead, and did not intend to die just yet. His fellow citizens were so gratified by, and so much admired his courageous efforts that, as a testimonial, they presented him the house at 37 Livingston Street. He died in the house April 16, 1868. His funeral was conducted by Henry Ward Beecher, who stood in front of the building and delivered a stirring address to thousands of listeners.

Mr. Hall, early in life, kept a paint shop in Fulton Street, between Cranberry and Orange, and made a fortune. He did pretty much all the house painting in Brooklyn at the time. When he was elected Mayor in 1854 he had four apprentices, named McKinney, Jamison, McNiel, and William Bonner. Mr. Hall presented his business to them, but the first three did not like Bonner, who was the uncle of Robert Bonner of the "New York Ledger," and froze him out. The trio went farther uptown near Clark Street, where Ovington's store stood thirty odd years ago, and started business, while Bonner went to the corner of Middagh and Henry Streets and began by himself. John McComb became an apprentice to Bonner in 1842 and served six years with him. In those years Robert Bonner arrived in America and served his apprenticeship in a New England printing office. After he had mastered his trade he came to Brooklyn and boarded with his uncle, William, while working on the "Sunday Courier" in New York. Robert, like all of his family, was a strict Covenanter, and refused to work on Sunday. For that reason he preferred to set type on the "Courier" rather than on a morning daily. At the time he slept in the same bed with McComb for one year, both occupying a room in a small frame house in the rear of the lot on which William Bonner's paint shop stood.

His apprenticeship finished, McComb started in business at 85 Orange Street and continued for about forty years. The three apprentices who went up Fulton Street to work out their own success with the start given them by Mayor Hall were ill-starred. McKinney bought a farm in New Jersey and died there; McNiel went to New Orleans and died soon after, leaving the old business of Mayor Hall to Jamison, who one Friday went to New York to collect a bill and fell into the East River. On the following Sunday his body was brought up by some boys who had cast their lines for fish at Fulton Ferry. McComb bought their shop fixtures and installed them in his own shop, where he was proud to show them as memorials of the first Mayor Brooklyn had. McComb painted the wooden railing around the City Hall Park and Mayor Hall signed the warrant for his pay.

When McComb came here in 1842 there was no business in Fulton Street above Orange, where a grocery was kept by a man named Sutton. There were a few private residences in Fulton Street at Sprague's Alley, while above was mud and dust. When McComb went to work for Bonner he had a job near the Wallabout and the two had to walk to and fro every day.

Water was first introduced through pipes in November, 1858. It proved its value forthwith in putting out a fire. It was brought from Ridgewood and was pronounced far superior to New York's famed Croton. The citizens determined to celebrate the event fittingly. This was done on April 27, 1859. In spite of drenching rain, the City Hall was thronged with delegations from other cities. They stayed over till the next day. The fountain in the park was playing when about one hundred and fifty members of the city governments of Philadelphia, Baltimore, Boston, Hartford, New Haven, and other cities went out in carriages. The engine was pumping 6,000 gallons a minute.



The next day was bright, and a parade of about 15,000 persons and 3,000 horses marched through the streets. The spectators numbered more than 300,000 half of them from out of town. Governor Morgan and Peter Cooper spoke in the Common Council Chamber, and Richard C. Underhill delivered an oration. Fireworks at the City Hall in the evening closed the day. Greenpoint and the Eastern District likewise outdid themselves. For years it was the greatest celebration Brooklyn had seen and it compared favorably with the best New York itself had ever done.

Among the leading Brooklynites of the ante-war period, Judge Alexander McCue was conspicuous. Paris offered suggestions for beautifying Brooklyn, and Atlantic Avenue was chosen for the first experiment. It was to be made an ornamental thoroughfare like the famous boulevards of the gay capital of France.

The Legislature had to act, but great opposition was aroused because of the indebtedness it would add. In 1860, however, the Legislature did authorize a public drive or promenade on the avenue one hundred and sixty feet wide. A strip forty feet wide was taken from the lands along the north side.

Alexander McCue, J. Carson Brevoort, Charles Jones and Eliakim Sherrill were named Commissioners to lay out and regulate the avenue from its intersection with Classon to the city line. It gave them power to do anything they might deem proper, and to appoint necessary engineers, surveyors, and assistants.

**Building the City Hall**—Brooklyn's boundless possibilities were realized by Mayor Jonathan Trotter ninety years ago. The city had been growing rapidly and the question of building a city hall was discussed. Trotter favored a building to cover the whole square worthy of the city, while his more sanguine supporters prophesied that before the century closed its population would not fall short of half a million. (The reality in 1900 was 1,166,000.) The prophecy was judged visionary and beyond reason, and much more modest estimates were accepted. Nevertheless everybody realized that the expansion of the city was amazing, and that the future should be taken into account when plans for the new building were being prepared. Party feeling ran high, but it was suppressed in a purely local issue. The conservative members of the Board of Aldermen thought an unpretentious building would serve every purpose, while the broader minds, both Whigs and Democrats, thought Brooklyn should have a city hall of which it could be proud. They urged that the city should build for posterity, not merely for the present. The debates were protracted. Those who favored the large outlay were pronounced dangerous men, and it was predicted that if they were permitted to have their own way the bankruptcy of the city would be a matter of only a short time. There was no dispute about the site. All agreed the triangle bounded by Fulton Court and Joralemon was the right place. The land was appraised at \$55,000. As a matter of fact it cost less. The deeds are by Edward Remsen and wife to the Mayor, land for \$20,955; Sarah Remsen, land for \$100; Sarah Remsen, guardian of Matilda Remsen, land to the Mayor, \$20,362.80; Hezekiah B. Pierrepont and wife, land to the Mayor, \$11,590.20. All the deeds are dated in May, 1835. The total consideration was \$53,008. The purchase was made by virtue of a resolution of the Board of Aldermen dated July 17, 1834.

The committee advertised for plans offering architects \$700 in premiums, the plans adopted to receive the largest share of the award. On September 10 a plan was adopted, but the wiseacres shook their heads. They were confident that such folly and extravagance would submerge the city under a colossal debt. No attention was paid to their mutterings, the work going bravely on in spite of

them. Before the year 1835 ended the new city hall was building. The plans provided a structure which would be imposing even for the present day. It was to cover the entire triangle and it was to be large enough to accommodate all the officials of the city, a municipal building, a city hall and a court house in one. It would obviate the necessity for erecting another public building in Brooklyn for nobody knew how long. About three months after the work began the cornerstone was laid by Mayor Trotter. The ceremonies were all such a memorable occasion could suggest or justify. The flowery imaginations of the speakers, however, fell woefully short of what Brooklyn was to become within the century before them.

The grumblers were silenced and joined in the festivities. In the evening there was a dinner in the Military Garden and a band discoursed music. Contracts were being fulfilled with all possible rapidity when a chill struck business, and capital was alarmed throughout the country. Unhappily for Brooklyn, 1836 was a year of panic. Old houses failed and all securities were regarded with distrust.

D. L. Northrup entered in his diary:

August 7, 1837—Building suspended. The basement story at the time of the suspension had been carried to its full height and was roofed over with boards. The cause of the stoppage of the work on the hall arose out of the fact that the panic of 1837 prevented the sale of the bonds issued for the erection of the building.

In fact, Brooklyn was stirred deeply by the enterprise. The conviction that the conservatives were right after all had taken possession of the public mind, and it was felt that the wiser course would be to let posterity look out for itself. This was helped along by the financial stringency which came at a most unfortunate time for Brooklyn. Much money had been raised by the sale of bonds to pay the contractors, but a time arrived when the bonds could not be sold to advantage. The advisability of stopping the work altogether, or at least of modifying the plans was threshed out for three or four years. A decision was not easily reached. The originators had gone into private life, leaving a white elephant on the hands of their successors. To abandon the sum already expended—it was close to \$200,000—and tell the taxpayers of their loss made them pause. Several years passed before the Aldermen ventured to reopen the subject. In the meantime, Masterson & Smith, the marble contractors, recovered a judgment for \$72,999.98 in the courts.

The original contract was called off because C. H. Sprague and Samuel Smith, leading men, said the people could not stand the tax such an expenditure would involve. These two men called public meetings and the whole idea was abandoned. The hard times of 1837 helped to achieve this and the finished part of the work lay forsaken to whiten in the sun, a reproach to the city, and to the extravagance of the instigators of the project.

The point of the flatiron ran in the direction of Fulton Street, which was narrower than in later years, while the City Hall Park extended much nearer to Washington Street. During Mayor Talmage's term the plans were cut down and remodeled by Gamaliel King, the architect. When they were approved by the Board of Aldermen, Denike took up the original foundation and used part of the stone in the present one in 1844. The large excess of stone went into other buildings. Denike had the contract for the masonry, Leonard Cooper did the carpenter work, and Stephen Haynes was general superintendent. Mayor Talmage held office during the first year of construction and Mayor Francis B. Stryker was in office during the last two years until its completion at a cost of



\$250,000 in 1848. Everybody was well paid for what he had done. The top stone was put in place amid the shouting and enthusiasm of the public, who were fond of the plain, substantial building which was to ornament the city from the first.

**Mayors of Brooklyn**—Francis B. Stryker, Mayor of Brooklyn in 1846, 1847, and 1848, for three terms of a year each, was a carpenter in early life. He was working in an apron when the great cholera epidemic broke out in 1839, and he owed his nomination for Mayor indirectly to that. Twelve Brooklyn men volunteered to take care of the sick. They effected no formal organization, but when clergymen and physicians were fleeing to safe places they were at their posts. Only three clergymen remained to face the terrible ordeal—the Rev. Dr. McIlvaine, afterward Bishop of Ohio; the Rev. Charles W. Carpenter, and the Rev. Father Farnam.

Mr. Stryker, an octogenarian half a century later, said:

Why, when friends used to meet in the streets in those days they would shake hands on parting and say goodbye, just as if the chances were that they never would meet again in this world. Twelve of us volunteered and we all survived the epidemic. I am as sure it was not contagious as I ever was of anything. It was infectious, but no person ever caught it by contact with another person. I cannot remember the names of the twelve volunteers, but Richard Cornwall and Commodore Hudson were among them. All are dead except myself, and I hope they are getting their reward for what they did in those days.

I remember one night when we all came pretty near weakening. We used to meet and make reports of what we had done, and I was the last one to join the party on that occasion. All had had a particularly bad day, and I had had a worse one than any of them. Before I submitted my report they were all badly scared, but after I reported the fright seemed to have become general, and, to tell the truth, I felt a little of the dismay myself. When I got home that night I told my mother all that had happened. She listened until I had finished, and then she did what she never was in the habit of doing unless some kind of a crisis in my affairs provoked it. She walked across the room, and, pointing her finger almost full in my face, she said:

"Francis Stryker, I want you to understand that your father never was a coward!"

That settled it with me. After that I would not have hesitated if I had known that the very next case I attended was equivalent to going into the very jaws of death itself. Well, I got to be pretty well known in those days. I went all over my district and other places and the people never seemed to forget what I did. All they wanted was a chance to show what they would do for me if I would give it to them.

I never forget the night they first nominated me for Mayor. The Whig convention was in the Old Log Cabin built in Fulton Street during the Harrison campaign, next door to a tavern.

I was a journeyman carpenter, working at my trade, and the party I belonged to was the party of the aristocracy of those days. Mind you, I wasn't even a boss carpenter. I was getting fifteen shillings a day, and the nomination surprised me as much as if I had been nominated for President of the United States. I had been elected a tax collector, but tax collectors were elected from districts just as aldermen now are, and a collector by no means represented the whole city. I had, however, been tax collector and sheriff; but those offices did not amount to anything in a financial sense, and I had to go back to my carpenter bench as soon as I became a private citizen again. There had been talk of nominating me before, but my refusals were taken in good faith and others chosen to make the race. This time I was more peremptory in my refusal than ever and supposed that it would end the matter. Well, the night the convention was held, the Old Log Cabin was packed to the doors. The first intimation I had of what was going on was when my friends came to me and said:

"Come along! We want you!"

They forced me to go with them and they really dragged me along. Some of the men at the top of the stairs shouted out: "Have you really got him?"

"Yes, we've got him, and it was all we could do to bring him here."

The aristocrats were in control of the convention and my nomination was their work. As I tell you, I was wearing a carpenter's apron at that time; but they wanted to win, and they thought I was the man for them. David Leavitt was in the chair. He was about the wealthiest man in Brooklyn, and he introduced me. I thought they would tear the Old Log Cabin down; but I was too badly scared to think of anybody but myself. I would have given everything I had in the world to escape, for my tongue was clinging to the roof of my mouth, but there was no way out. I said in reply:

"I am only a journeyman carpenter working by the day!"





BOROUGH HALL WHEN FIRST BUILT IN 1846





That was about as far as I could get, but you ought to have heard the cheering. How it ended, I do not remember; but I finally managed to get out, and as I walked up Fulton Street the crowd followed me. They shouted: "Three cheers for Francis Stryker, the next Mayor of Brooklyn!" and they kept it up until I got home. I never meant to run, even then; I hadn't the least idea of doing it. My mother opened the door and said:

"Why, my son, what on earth is the matter? What does all this mean?"

"Shut the door and I'll tell you, mother."

The crowd was still shouting when I said:

"Why, mother, it's the most ridiculous thing in the world. They have actually nominated me for Mayor of the city."

What did she say? She said:

"Did you do anything dishonorable to get this nomination?"

I explained that the nomination was something I wanted to avoid.

"Well, my son," she said, "if the people want you to be Mayor, it is your duty to obey the call, and that's all there is about it."

And that was all there was about it.

Mr. Stryker was born in lower Fulton Street near the ferry. His father was Burdette Stryker, a butcher, known to every man, woman and child in Brooklyn in those days. He never married.

General Jeremiah Johnson became Mayor in 1837. He was styled "Brooklyn's Foremost Citizen," and held the distinction until the rise to greatness of Henry Ward Beecher. General Johnson was of Dutch descent. His maps, reminiscences, and descriptions of the past have been treasured as the most authentic records of the ground they cover. In 1796 he became a trustee of the village and held the post for twenty years. From 1800 until 1840 he was a Supervisor. In 1808 and 1809 he represented Kings in the Assembly.

During the War of 1812 Johnson started as junior captain. Soon after, when others declined, he volunteered to go out in command of a frontier post. For this he became a colonel. Always ready for any service at call, he became a brigadier general and commanded the 22d Infantry Brigade at Fort Greene for three months. It consisted of 1,759 men. In those three months not one of his soldiers died. He was promoted major general after the return of peace.

When Brooklyn became a village in 1816 General Johnson's home was left outside the limits and he was deprived of any part in its affairs except in a private capacity. When the city charter was obtained in 1835 General Johnson was brought within the bounds and he became eligible to office. He was elected Mayor in 1837 and again in 1838 and 1839. He was elected a member of the State Legislature again in 1840 and 1841, and was a judge of the Court of Common Pleas. He was chosen the first president of the St. Nicholas Society of Nassau Island, a post he held until death. He belonged to the old Dutch Reformed Congregation. He was a communicant for fifty years and clerk of the consistory for forty years, until he resigned in 1843. He was social and genial, and fond of his pipe, which he did not lay down until a quarter of an hour before his death. He was a fine shot and tramped the country with his gun. He was eighty-six when he died in 1852. Johnson Street was named for him.

While he was Mayor, Greenwood Cemetery was incorporated as a stock company. The ground was bought in 1842.

**The Court House**—Court was held in only two buildings in Brooklyn in 1839. The Apprentices' Library of brick, three stories high, stood at Cranberry and Henry Streets, plain and unpretentious, though substantial in finish. The basement was let to lawyers, surveyors, and others; the Common Council met on the main floor and the top floor was devoted to the Municipal Court. In 1840 that court was abolished and a City Court established, taking over the records of the old tribunal. The Mayor, Comptroller, and City Clerk occupied a building



in the rear of the library in Henry Street, except that the ground floor was the home of Engine No. 2 of the Fire Department.

Hall's Exchange Building was a large four-story brick structure erected by Mayor Hall, Brooklyn's first Mayor, at the southwest corner of Fulton and Cranberry Streets. The street floor was used for stores, one of them being the hardware shop of Nathan Young and John Dimon. A dry goods store was conducted by William Rushmore, afterwards judge of the Municipal Court and Superintendent of the Poor. Theodore K. Horton, father of Philip Horton, dry goods merchant at 396 Fulton Street in after years, kept a similar establishment in the Exchange. Among the lawyers with offices on the second floor was Judge Dyckman, who remained there until the great fire of 1848. Law students in his office were Judge Reynolds, Richard Ingraham, Thomas Holmes, W. Murphy, a relative of Henry C. Murphy, and Charles Thomas, afterwards Clerk of the City Court.

The Court of Common Pleas, the Circuit Court and the jury room were on the third floor and remained there until 1847, when they were held in the Raymond Street jail pending the completion of the City Hall.

Among the noted cases tried in the old courts was that of W. H. Cook, son of an English lawyer in Williamsburgh, charged with murdering a boy whose throat was cut from ear to ear and his body thrown in a vacant lot. Cook and his gang were burglars with a rendezvous in the Eagle Tavern at the foot of Joralemon Street, kept by John McIlhenny. It was supposed the boy, Reynolds, knew something about the burglaries the gang committed and was killed lest he talk. Cook was tried before Judge Kent, in 1841, and found not guilty in a proceeding lasting one day. He was arrested for burglary at a later time and sent to prison.

One of the old time lawyers of a generation ago said:

The first time I ever saw Horace Greeley was in Hall's Exchange Building. He was a witness in the case of John R. Pitkin (q.v.), founder of East New York, against Moses Y. Beach of the "New York Sun," for libel. When Greeley entered court he sat outside the rail among the audience but before business began he arose and walking over to where the jury sat, he took one of the seats. A court officer tapped Mr. Greeley on the shoulder, for he was going to sleep when the officer noticed him. His face was smooth and while his head nodded he looked as innocent as a babe. His dress was slovenly, but when he took the stand, it was apparent to everyone that he was quite a match for all the lawyers in the case. It proved impossible to get him to say anything he did not want to. When a clipping from the "Sun" was shown him and he was asked if he knew the print, he replied that he would know that type in any part of the world. Nevertheless the case went against his friend, Pitkin, and the charge of libel was dismissed.

Ogden Edwards was the Circuit Judge before whom the case was tried. Among the leading lawyers of that period was Nathan B. Morse, the first Supreme Court Judge elected by the people. William Rockwell was a Supreme Court Judge in later life; he died in New Utrecht from yellow fever. Others were William A. Greene, who moved to Watertown; John P. Rolfe, N. F. Waring, Rodney S. Church, father of Louis K. Church and afterward Governor of Dakota Territory; Judge John N. Lott, Judge John Greenwood, General Hermanus Duryea, Cyrus B. Smith, afterwards Mayor, and Henry C. Murphy, who came within an ace of becoming President in place of Franklin Pierce. The law firm of Lott & Murphy was a great political power in Kings County. Its approval was necessary for anything to pass, and its strength was enhanced materially after John Vanderbilt of Flatbush became a partner. Mr. Vanderbilt was State Senator in the days when Kings County was entitled to only one member of the Senate. Henry C. Murphy was Mayor and Representative in Congress.



BROOKLYN BOROUGH HALL AS IT APPEARS IN 1925





Hall's Exchange was burned down in the great fire of 1848, and the Apprentices' Library was bought by the city for armory purposes and finally became a storehouse before it disappeared.

Joseph Sprague served five years as Village President and two years as Mayor. He had a card factory where cotton and woolen cards were made. The machinery was run by dog power. A dozen dogs were kept going on the treadmill all the time. People came from far and near to see the dogs. Elections at that time lasted several days. Each night the ballot boxes were sealed and put into a safe place.

Parks and a drive like Riverside along Columbia Heights had been the dream of Hezekiah B. Pierrepont and other progressive citizens. Samuel Smith was elected Mayor in 1850, to serve from May 1 until the close of the year. He advocated the drive and staked his political future on the outcome. He wanted only \$200,000 for the purpose, but in those days such an assessment was considered huge. It was voted down and the progressive Mayor Smith was defeated.

In 1850 No. 3 Front Street contained the offices of several of the foremost lawyers. At that time and for several years thereafter it was the distinctive lawyers' building. Judge Samuel D. Morris of Morris & Whitehouse, with offices afterwards at 164 Montague Street, and Richard Graham long survived the change.

Judge Morris was born in New Jersey. He was admitted to the bar in **Plattsburg, New York, in 1850 and came to Brooklyn in 1851.** His first partner was Alden J. Spooner. Besides Morris & Spooner, the other lawyers occupying No. 3 Front Street were Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt, Richard and William M. Ingraham and John Hess. Henry A. Moore, afterward county judge, studied with Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt, the most important firm of the day. Lott became a judge, Murphy was a State Senator for twelve years, and Vanderbilt became Lieutenant Governor.

In 1851 there were barely twenty-five lawyers in the city, and almost all had offices in the immediate neighborhood of the Front Street building. Among them were Cyrus P. Smith, Nicholas Van Brunt, Gilbert & Story, Lewis & Brown, Rolf & Trembly, N. P. Trist, John W. Greenwood, Ernestus Culver, Jared Sparks, Nathaniel P. Waring, and William Rockwell. Gilbert became a judge of the Supreme Court. Rolf moved to Montague Street, where he practiced until his death in the nineties. Trist got the Legislature to pass the bill establishing the first City Court. Although he hoped to be elected judge, the honor went to John W. Greenwood, who was more successful at the polls. Ernestus Culver, George P. Thompson, and Jared Sparks all filled the bench. Nathaniel P. Waring was corporation counsel for years.

Lack of business was one reason why the lawyers took up politics. Judge Morris took the stump in the Pierce campaign. He was elected to the Assembly in 1853. Kings County had three members at the time, the other two being John G. Bergen and Samuel T. Backus. Judge Morris was elected a county judge in the fall of 1855 by 9,000 majority, with only 20,000 votes cast. There were two other candidates. Brooklyn had 90,000 population and there were no railroads on Long Island. The Supreme Court, the City and County Courts, and the Surrogate's Court all sat in the Borough Hall. It contained also the offices of the Mayor, the Register, the City Clerk, the District Attorney and the judges' chambers. In fact, all the principal city and county offices were housed in the building.



Judge Morris fell on the ice in Lafayette Avenue the evening of January 8, 1902, when eighty years old, and broke his hip. He was lifted into a chair and carried into his home at 55 South Oxford Street close by, dying soon after. He was District Attorney for nine years and a County Judge for four years. He won every murder case in which he was interested. Turning to civil practice he became the attorney for the Brooklyn City and Newtown, Prospect Park and Coney Island, and other railroads.

### Kalbfleisch Chosen Mayor

To every Brooklynite, the mayoralty was an office of prime importance. It concerned the people more nearly than any other official place from President down to ward constable. While under the city charter of 1891 its powers were enormous, it was always a prize of high import and animated contention between parties. From the consolidation of Brooklyn with old Williamsburgh, the mayoralty succession always excited fierce rivalry, elaborate conflicts of partisan forces and strife, not surpassed in the disputes in the influential voting constituency which decided results in State or Nation.

Circumstances governing the election of city executives during the twenty years previous to 1891, unfolds an interesting panorama of public life in the community.

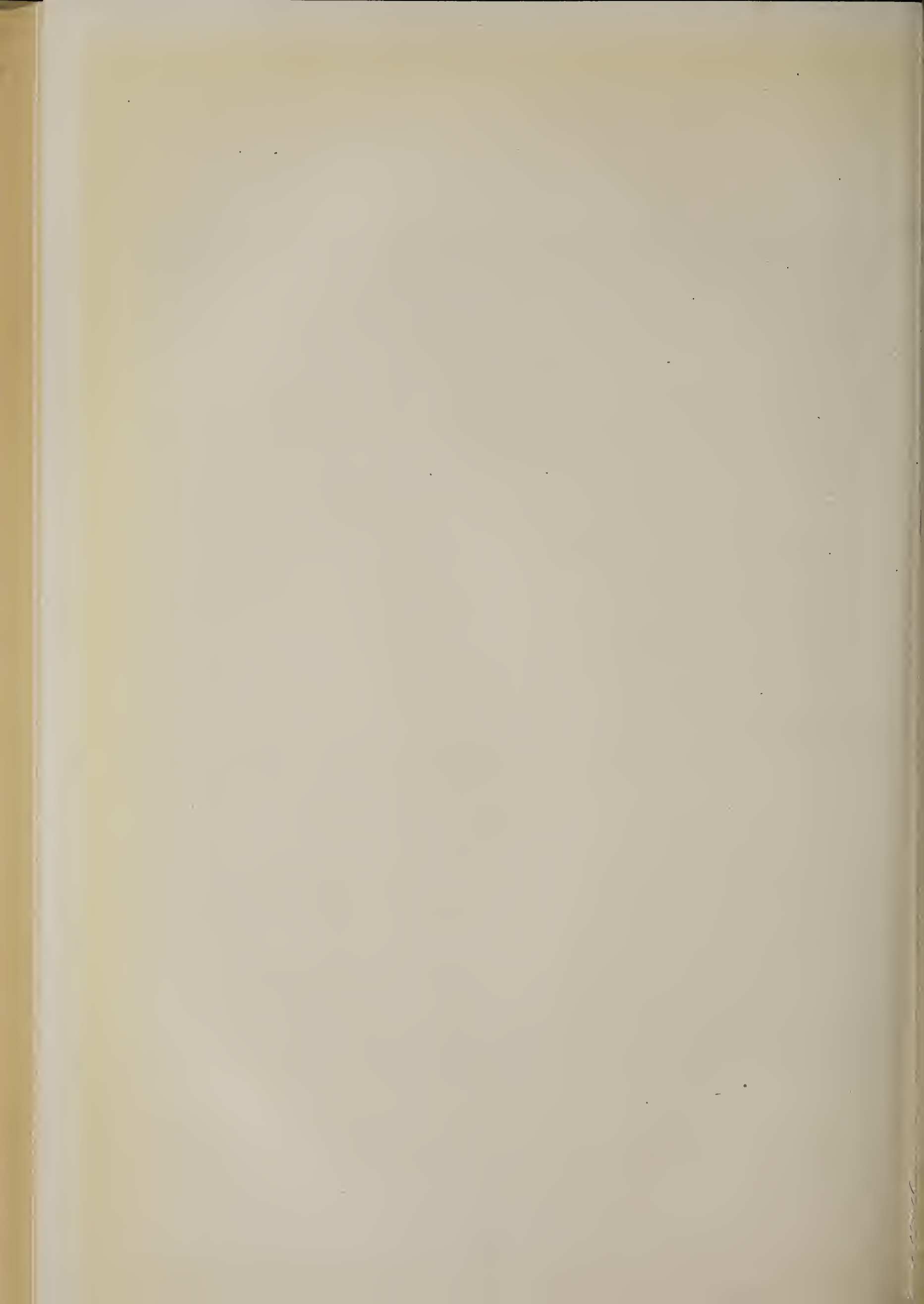
In 1871 Martin Kalbfleisch occupied the mayor's chair. No more picturesque person ever sat in City Hall than the "honest old Dutchman," as he was familiarly called. Six or seven times, with varying results, Kalbfleisch contended for mayoralty honors. Back in the fifties, when the Eastern District came under the municipal wing, he sought to "clutch the skirts of happy chance" by running for mayor. In his first venture he was defeated by George Hall, rival candidate. Later he won the place, and during 1869 and 1870 was still in office. His re-election in the former year was by a vote of 28,793 to 18,151 for William Mayo Little, Republican competitor. His success was regarded as a high tribute to his running capacity, particularly as that year the head of the county ticket, John Cunningham, running for sheriff, was beaten by Anthony Walter, Republican. But Kalbfleisch's good fortune finally forsook him. Rightly or wrongly, after the 1869 election he quarreled with the Democratic leaders of the city, various other causes intensifying the disturbance. The Mayor and his party representatives steadily drifted apart as the time for choosing his successor approached. On the eve of the 1871 campaign an Independent Citizens' movement was organized to place Mayor Kalbfleisch in renomination. Samuel S. Powell was made the nominee of the regular Democrats.

The Republican party presented as candidate ex-Mayor Samuel Booth, then postmaster. The triangular struggle was bitter. Powell, with a phenomenal record as a political race horse, kept steadily on the Democratic track. Mayor Kalbfleisch sailed into what he called the "ring" with all the vehemence of his impetuous nature. Booth went quietly along, hoping, like Micawber, for something favorable to turn up. Returns showed Powell had 27,321 votes; Booth, 23,226; Kalbfleisch, 17,216. The aggregate poll was the largest ever made, up to that time, at a city election. Great excitement followed. Charges of fraud in the count poured in thick and fast, and indignation meetings were held in the Academy of Music and elsewhere, and measures were taken to investigate the methods through which, it was alleged, Booth and Kalbfleisch had been compelled to neutralize each other in Powell's interest. The indictment of many



NIGHT VIEW OF BOROUGH HALL





election officials followed, and though numerous irregularities were proven, Powell remained in office undisturbed to the end of his term.

For the dominant party, the succeeding two years were pregnant with evil fortune. While Powell personally was an honest and well-informed man, he could not restrain the predatory influences threatening the municipality. Corruption was revealed in the city treasurer's office, and in the offices of the controller and tax collector. Defalcation followed defalcation until it seemed to observant citizens that the City Hall might be carried bodily off. Frederick A. Schroeder, city controller, exposed the rascalities of his predecessors, and vigorous reform steps were taken.

With the 1873 canvass, the continuance of Democratic municipal supremacy was almost hopeless. But the leaders proved equal to the emergency. By one of the remarkable twists for which they have gained celebrity, they determined to have a finger in the reform pie. So they nominated, to succeed Powell, John W. Hunter, a representative of the "better element" in organized Democracy. Mr. Hunter, an old Brooklynite, had served creditably in Congress and was occupying a responsible post as treasurer of the Dime Savings institution. Because of his independence of character, unblemished reputation in banking and business circles and acknowledged executive ability, he was a formidable candidate.

The Republicans were not dismayed and put forward Dwight Johnson, a respected and upright Heights citizen, who had done splendid service for the First Ward in the board of supervisors. The canvass was stirring in both factions, and until election eve, on account of the maladministration in city affairs, the Republicans were confident. But the count blasted their hopes, revealing 32,281 votes for Hunter and 24,837 for Johnson.

In 1875 occurred the memorable contest between Edward Rowe and Frederick A. Schroeder for the mayoralty. Matters had not gone well in the two-year interval with the city Democracy. Confirmation by the Common Council was essential to the selection by the Mayor of heads of city departments. Mayor Hunter was restive under machine influences, and very shortly in office, engaged in open warfare with several influential aldermen. Subsequently, he refused, point blank, to obey dictates either of the Democratic aldermanic caucus or of Hugh McLaughlin, city and county leader of the Democratic party.

Among those he selected for an important commissionership was General Henry W. Slocum, and Slocum's name went before the aldermanic board.

While the nomination pended, McLaughlin warned Slocum he would be rejected unless he withdrew. The old soldier was not only indignant but so was Mayor Hunter, who, to the end, persisted in resisting the encroachments of the active managing politicians on the executive prerogative.

Schroeder was regarded by the opponents of the regular Democrats as the most available man for mayor. In the controller's office he had established a reputation as an aggressive reformer. Unwilling to run, it was only after repeated insistence that he could be persuaded to accept the nomination of the Republican city convention. With utmost confidence in the results, the Democrats named his adversary Edward Rowe, who had served conspicuously as alderman, occupied high place in the business community, and who had been chairman of the Kings County Democratic general committee.

There was a battle royal. Mr. Rowe himself took the stump, with Hugh McLaughlin as chief supporter, who, throwing aside his customary reserve, stepped boldly upon the platform and assailed the Republican opposition. Neither before nor afterwards did McLaughlin ever exhibit such passionate



feeling as in the Rowe-Schroeder campaign. But while the Democratic oratorical guns were thundering, the Republicans redoubled their energy. To Schroeder's standard rallied a vast army of independent citizens. The Republicans were firmly united in his support, while supplementing their endeavors were hundreds of German-Americans who desired one of their nationality in the mayor's chair. As a climax, General Slocum ascended the rostrum and made the Academy ring with his denunciations of "bossism" and "the one man power."

Rowe, certain of success, informed his hearers that the "carriage had come round" for him, and promised it would come round some day for them, too. When the boxes were closed, the melancholy discovery for Rowe was that he had taken passage on the wrong vehicle. The vote showed: Schroeder, 34,968; Rowe, 33,635, a majority of 1,333 for the Republican nominee. At the same election Albert Daggett defeated Thomas F. Nevins for the shrievalty of Kings County.

Then came a period of political strife unparalleled in the partisan history of the town. There were giants abroad in those days. For every blow Schroeder received, he returned another with equal ferocity. Attacks upon him were persistent. His retaliation was courageous and far-reaching, and his steadfast purpose to turn out of office every regular Democrat in the city government. To accomplish this, all sorts of deals were necessary, most notable being the "Shannon deal," by which all the Democratic commissioners were ruthlessly thrown on the mercies of a cold world and Republican or anti-machine Democrats installed. Schroeder's nominations were confirmed with the assistance of Patrick Shannon, elected, as an independent Democrat, to represent the Fifth Ward in the common council. The stroke Schroeder dealt the McLaughlin interests was the most damaging it ever had received. Throughout his administration Schroeder was surrounded by tumult because of his aggressive partisanship. He continued such warfare upon the Democratic machine to the end of his term, and declined renomination.

By this time the Republicans had become convinced they could elect a mayor on a straight party issue. Accordingly, in 1877, they put up John F. Henry, active Tenth Ward politician. Mr. Henry had been brought into prominence by a powerful canvass made by him in opposition to John C. Jacobs for state senator in the Second District. He whittled Mr. Jacobs' majority down to nominal figures and narrowly escaped beating him. Everything looked favorable for Republican triumph when he took the field. The Democrats, however, steadily preparing to recapture the lost mayoralty, selected as their leader James Howell, of the Eleventh Ward. Mr. Howell's work as an alderman and supervisor and also as supervisor at large, had commended him to many conservative citizens. His veto message to the supervisors interrupted and destroyed many schemes of jobbery aimed at the welfare of taxpayers. To his election the Democrats bent every resource, and while their county ticket, with Winchester Britton at its head, was defeated, Mr. Howell was chosen to the mayoralty by a vote of 36,266 to 33,730 for Mr. Henry. General Catlin, Republican, defeated Britton for district attorney by more than 3,000.

With Howell's election the Democrats assumed they would regain control of city offices, but were doomed to disappointment. While electing the executive, they failed to secure a trustworthy majority in the board of aldermen, so that for many months the Schroeder municipal appointees held over in the various departments. Until near the close of Howell's first term all efforts to dislodge them failed.

Finally, through dickering with the Republicans, a break in the Republican line was effected, and 1879 witnessed the extraordinary transaction known as the "September deal." Nearly all the Republican leaders were out of town attending the State convention which nominated A. B. Cornell for Governor.

While that nomination was going on, four Republican aldermen, J. H. B. Smith, M. J. Petry, John Dreyer and James Powers combined with the Democrats to throw the regular Republicans out of the commissions.

This transformation came upon the Republican managers like a thunderclap. On returning from the convention, they found their followers ousted from public station, their voting forces dismayed and their machine demoralized. Bewildered and uncertain, they pulled themselves together for sturdy battle with their powerful adversaries.

Howell's renomination by the Democrats was a foregone conclusion. In opposition, the Republicans nominated Franklin Woodruff, one of the most influential leaders. As the canvass proceeded, confusion for the Republicans became worse confounded. Bolts and bolters sprang up on every side.

Schroeder, Republican nominee for senator in the Third District, was beset by irreconcilable enemies led by William W. Goodrich, independent Republican candidate with Democratic endorsement. In the populous Eleventh Assembly District, William H. Waring, Republican nominee, was antagonized with an independent movement headed by Daniel Webster Tallmadge. Behind these bolting candidates was marshaled a very large faction of the party which disliked Schroeder's methods and refused to follow Woodruff's leadership.

To offset them, John W. Flaherty ran as an independent Democrat, hoping to draw off Howell votes. The verdict against Woodruff's candidacy was of the most sweeping character, the vote standing: Howell, 43,600; Woodruff, 33,960; Flaherty, 1,314. But one drop of sorrow fell into the Democratic victory cup. Schroeder, with a narrow plurality, got into the State Senate, his presence, to the Democrats, being the most unfortunate thing that could have happened to the machine. One clearly defined object carried Schroeder into the legislature. While mayor, he had carefully studied municipal questions, and his observation and research had convinced him that the charter of Brooklyn was very defective. In his judgment, divided responsibility meant confusion and general demoralization.

To gain better conditions, and to improve the city administration by radical changes was his main purpose in re-entering official life and accepting a place agreeable neither to his temperament nor inclinations. Democrats, seeking to beat him at the polls, displayed remarkable foresight. At the capital, he was no less aggressively their foe, than as Brooklyn's Mayor.

Just as he was taking his seat in the senate chamber a rancorous internal warfare broke out in the local Democracy, and many influential Democratic leaders, weary of the one man power, encouraged him in charter amendment and reform. A more remarkable struggle than the one he precipitated to modify the organic law of the municipality has never been witnessed in Albany. Schroeder planned carefully, made elaborate preparation for the consummation of his projects, and with rare patience and unwavering perseverance endeavored to attain decisive results against the powerful Democratic influences. Day by day on the senate floor his proposed charter modifications were fought, principal Democratic opponents of his plan being John C. Jacobs and William H. Murtha, both of whom in the attendant exciting debates displayed great ability. The men resisting the Schroeder charter almost succeeded in defeating it, covertly aided



by a part of the Republican majority, which only yielded at the last moment to the iron pressure of a well-disciplined party caucus.

Final passage of the amendments took place under almost ludicrous circumstances. Mayor Howell had sent to Albany an amendment to the license laws which his private secretary, George Rice, relic of a paleozoic age, was commissioned to carry through. Rice for weeks made daily pilgrimages up Capitol Hill nervously awaiting the fate of his pet measure. A memorable afternoon, with winter snows whirling over the Helderberg Mountains, he was electrified on returning to the legislature to find that his license bill had gone through. What was his astonishment and consternation to ascertain that the bill not only had survived the adverse Republican majority, but passed the legislature with a "rider" containing all of Schroeder's important charter amendments. The Democratic fat was in the fire.

While divesting the common council of appointing power, the new charter lodged it temporarily with the controller and city auditor, both Republicans. Authority to appoint the commissioners was to pass to the mayor only after an election had been held with the charter in full operation. The Republicans promptly proceeded to reclaim the municipal offices from which they were ejected by the "September deal."

With 1881, both parties were placed on their mettle. So far as the offices were concerned, everything depended on the cast of the mayoralty die. If the Democrats could hold the city executive office they would once again be able to turn out their Republican opponents. If the Republicans could hold, their retainers would go undisturbed.

On the Democratic side, the renomination of Mayor Howell was early predetermined. His 10,000 majority over Franklin Woodruff had convinced his party managers he was invincible, and they ridiculed the idea that the third-term cry could be effectually raised against him. They discounted that manifestations of Democratic discontent through Jefferson Hall and other independent channels could cost him any considerable votes. Formulated early in the season, their plan to renominate him was carried out as the autumn canvass drew near. Thousands meanwhile were determined that the new charter should not go into operation under Mr. Howell, their opposition assuming various phases. In informal preliminary discussion, available candidates were considered, most prominent of these being Seth Low. Sentiment crystallized so rapidly about him that Low in midsummer wrote a letter to the "Brooklyn Eagle" absolutely refusing to permit his name to be used as a candidate. Instead of diminishing the demand for him, this only made his advocates more earnest and persistent. As the nominating conventions drew near, a stirring citizens' movement, formed on a non-partisan basis, was inaugurated, which culminated in a tremendous mass meeting at the Clermont Avenue Rink. General Alfred C. Barnes presided.

Attending were hundreds of representative men of all parties, and with acclamation and great enthusiasm Ripley Ropes was nominated for mayor. The Ropes' movement spread like wildfire, the Brooklyn Young Republican Club, then in fullest vigor, making his cause its own. Before endorsing him, however, it sent a delegation to confer with the regular Republican city convention—which absolutely refused to accept Ropes. Heading the conference committee to the convention was Seth Low, who pleaded with the delegates to sustain the Ropes' movement at all hazards. The Republicans politely but firmly declined to do anything of the kind. The Republican convention nominated General Benjamin F. Tracy for Mayor. He accepted with a promise that he would remain

in the contest until the end unless the men who had asked him to run requested his withdrawal. Independent Democrats registered their disapproval of Howell's third-term candidacy by nominating General Henry W. Slocum. Four candidates—Ripley Ropes, Generals Tracy and Slocum and Mayor Howell—were in the field. As matters stood, nothing could be more certain than Howell's re-election. Regular Democrats were jubilant, and their adversaries exceedingly glum.

Finally, by the practice of as fine "politics" as was ever played in the county, things were simplified. Slocum, convinced that his candidacy would only defeat a Democrat, retired. Communication was opened between Mr. Ropes, representing the citizens and independents on one side, and General Tracy, representing the regular Republicans, on the other. Mr. Ropes and General Tracy said that if they could agree upon a third candidate, both would withdraw. No name was more acceptable than Seth Low's. The latter was exceedingly reluctant to run after his declination and his enthusiasm for Ropes, and only when convinced his nomination was indispensable to Howell's defeat did he consent to run. After protracted and delicate negotiations, Ropes and Tracy drew out, leaving a straight contest between Low and Mayor Howell. The public rallied with enthusiasm around the young candidate of the Republicans and reformers, and Low served notice in unmistakable language that he was running not as a Republican nor a representative of any party organization, but as a non-partisan, intent solely on giving Brooklyn an administration based on business principles. He made a stumping tour of the whole city, his captivating personality, winning manners and attractive administration program giving him a tremendous hold upon the people. Whether he spoke at the Rink or in the Academy to well-dressed multitudes, or to sons of toil in industrial centers or on the water front, his welcome was unmistakable and his message appealing.

The Democratic managers sought in vain to resist the impending wave. The Low movement was contagious, and his campaign managed with exceeding skill. At the critical moment, Henry Ward Beecher, still wielding his splendid powers, came forward and pleaded effectively for his younger neighbor. Election night of 1881 was an unforgettable occasion, the returns showing a total vote of 45,321 for Mr. Low to 40,967 for Howell. All that night the defeated Democrats were forced to hear the hills and Heights resound with the ringing cheers of Low's jubilant supporters.

To the politicians, Low's administration was a genuine surprise. It shook them up dreadfully. The ante-election promises they had heard in other years had been like piecrust. The new mayor early made it apparent he meant to keep his word. When selecting his official advisers, or forming his "cabinet," he gave a trivial share of patronage to the Republican managers. Ripley Ropes, avowed Independent, was made head of the City Works Department. Theodore F. Jackson, Democratic city controller, was made registrar of arrears. William H. Fleeman, another Democrat, succeeded John Mitchell as city treasurer. Colonel John N. Partridge and John A. Taylor, Mugwumps, were put respectively in the fire commission and the office of corporation counsel. One excise commission went to Richard Lauer, a Democrat. The only outspoken Republicans appointed to place were General Jourdan, retained as police commissioner; John Truslow, president of the department of assessment; Corporal James Tanner, tax collector; T. T. Evans, excise commissioner, and William H. Gaylor, building commissioner.

Mr. Low discouraged political activity among municipal subordinates. Nevertheless, he took a lively hand in city politics himself. His pet project was to



promote the selection of a city controller and city auditor in sympathy with his administration. So his Republican friends nominated Alexander Forman for controller and Joseph C. Hacker for auditor.

A great hullabaloo was kicked up about this time over the alleged delay of work on the New York and Brooklyn Bridge. Low boldly gave out the impression that the election of Forman and Hacker would mean a change in bridge management and the expedition of the work.

The Democracy maintained that work on the bridge was making as rapid progress as proper regard for safety and strength would permit. The fight waxed hot. Mayor Low, at his own expense, hired a hall and delivered an address in favor of municipal reform. But that was a great tidal wave year, and the revulsion against Charles J. Folger carried before it almost everything opposed to the Democratic party. Forman was beaten by over 9,000 majority. Hacker, popular with the Germans, ran ahead of his colleague, but lost by between 4,000 and 5,000. Though the result looked like a knockdown blow for Mayor Low, he was neither dismayed nor disconcerted. He continued his non-partisan attitude, so far as the Republicans were concerned. When the term of J. S. T. Stranahan as president of the park commission expired, Low, to the astonishment of half the people of Brooklyn, put William B. Kendall in his place. As if displacement of the "magician" were not enough to provoke antagonism, Low proceeded to reprove Corporal Tanner for alleged offensive partisanship. Tanner, still holding the job of tax collector, was elected chairman of the Kings County Republican General Committee. Low intimated to the collector he would have to give up either his political office or official relation, and the corporal abandoned the former.

These are only slight indications of the perseverance which Low exhibited to divorce partisanship from municipal government. The Republican leaders behaved more moderately than might have been imagined. One reason was that their henchmen occupied most of the subordinate offices and no disposition was manifested to turn them out. Notwithstanding the fierce factional encounters between the stalwarts and half-breeds in 1882, the year 1883 found both factions firmly in line for Low's renomination. It was decided, as a matter of course, to give him a second term. Without a dissenting voice he was put up by the Republican city convention. No sooner than renominated, a tremendous canvass in his interest began. Upon the stump he defended and vindicated his official course, pointed out what he had done for Brooklyn people, and candidly appealed for renewed confidence. Grim determination characterized the Democratic approach to the 1883 municipal canvass. The tremendous victory of the party in state, county and city in the previous year had inspired that party's managers and members with hope in the coming contests. Efforts were made to harmonize the contending factions, which for several years had weakened the Democratic voting lines in the community. Without underestimating Low's popular career in office or his availability before the people, his adversaries felt sure that if they could unite on the right man his defeat would be certain. One qualification in their candidate was deemed indispensable. He should be able adequately to set forth the Democratic argument on the stump.

To Howell's deficiency in this respect was attributed much of the adverse sentiment causing his defeat. Casting about for a suitable leader, the Democracy chanced upon Joseph C. Hendrix, and to thousands his nomination was a surprise. As a reporter for a New York newspaper at the Brooklyn police headquarters he had exhibited diligence and capacity, but few persons supposed



he would soon be running for the mayoralty of Brooklyn on what was regarded as the majority ticket.

Hendrix entered active politics when the Democratic party was distracted. The feud between Jefferson Hall and Willoughby Street was raging with unabated fury. With other Democrats who perceived that continued Democratic division meant sure Democratic disaster, Hendrix interested himself in reuniting the party. Upon completion of peace negotiations and the burial of the hatchet he was elected president of the Tenth Ward Regular Democratic Association.

He acquired additional prominence by membership in the board of education, to which Mayor Low had appointed him. Hendrix adhered closely to his party obligations, mingled freely with Democrats and acquired a hold on their sympathy and support. Leaders of the Democratic machine agreed that he was as well qualified as any man to cope with Mayor Low, and to the nomination of a Democratic candidate that year was contributed all the enthusiasm that a party organization could muster. The keynote of Hendrix's campaign was the desirability of getting Brooklyn, as a Democratic city, into line for the great presidential battle of the following year. He boldly drew the sword of national controversy and threw away the scabbard of local debate. The succeeding struggle was intense, the Democrats never making a more heroic fight. Hendrix addressed huge and enthusiastic meetings of his Democratic supporters, while Low was busy on the stump until a night or two before election. As the canvass warmed up, signs of defection from Mr. Low among the regular Republicans became visible, and the utmost tact and nicety of management became necessary to prevent a stampede. Through skillful stimulation and encouragement, however, the party line held firm. The day before the balloting, the betting in Brooklyn on the mayoralty was perhaps heavier than it had ever been before. The Democrats were so confident that they gave odds on their candidate, though their confidence was scarcely justified by the outcome of the vote, which was: Low, 49,934; Hendrix, 48,092, or a plurality for Low of 1,842.

During his second term, Mayor Low was still more determined to maintain non-partisanism. Among his earliest movements was the enforced retirement of General James Jourdan as head of the police department. Jourdan was not exactly turned out. He was merely given the alternative of giving up certain promising outside investments, which did not interfere with his official duties, or retiring from his official post. Without hesitation he chose the latter. The breach widened as the presidential campaign canvass drew near. After Mr. Blaine's nomination, the Republicans sought in vain for Low's help for their candidate. His principal official advisers, including Commissioner Ropes and Corporation Counsel Taylor, came out strongly for Cleveland. Low made no sign.

The aggressive Republicans contained themselves till they heard of Blaine's defeat by a narrow plurality in the State; then their rage against the mayor knew no bounds. They announced openly that they would oppose whatever he wanted in city politics, and they kept their word. In these discouraging circumstances Low still exerted himself to perpetuate non-partisanship. He counseled, as the municipal canvass approached, the nomination of a citizens' candidate. If a nominee of Democratic antecedents could be found, so much the better. With his coadjutors, he finally settled upon General John B. Woodward. The general was placed in the field at a mass meeting held in the Academy of Music. Into the campaign conducted in General Woodward's behalf by the Citizens' League and the Young Republican Club, Low threw himself with accustomed ardor. A great many representatives of the better element followed him. All efforts



to induce the regular Republicans to join the movement proved futile. The defeat of Blaine by Mugwump influences rankled like a poisoned arrow. At their convention in Music Hall they determined to nominate Colonel Andrew D. Baird as regular Republican candidate. Colonel Baird declined to run, and the party was brought to a standstill. At midnight an impetuous delegate, while the convention was at sea, sprung the name of Frederick A. Schroeder. It took like wildfire. Schroeder was nominated by acclamation, but the following morning a delegation which waited on him learned that he had no more intention of running for mayor than of enlisting in the marine corps or becoming a circus acrobat. The delegates, reconvened to more perplexity, nominated unanimously General Isaac S. Catlin, who twice, as a candidate for district attorney, had shown himself to be the strongest Republican who had run for office in Kings County. He had declined the Republican nomination for surrogate a short time previously. Although he knew that the campaign with Woodward in the field would be a "forlorn hope," his fidelity to Republican principles made him acquiesce, and his acceptance of his unwelcome task aroused intense enthusiasm. He took up the fight in earnest, the Democrats in the meantime playing a shrewd game, their nominee being Daniel D. Whitney, well known and respected merchant in the lower part of the city who for years had served in the common council. A spectacular triangular struggle consumed the time to November. On the surface, Woodward men seemed to be having their own way. A handsome campaign fund was raised and many eloquent speeches were made. The cry was raised that the "salvation of the city" depended on General Woodward's election, but for some reason the masses did not rally joyously to his support, and as voting time drew near the Woodward meetings grew smaller. Election night the disillusioning process was complete when the citizens were surprised and disappointed that their nominee polled only 13,614 votes. General Catlin received 36,905, while Whitney polled 49,002. Many Republicans, resenting the Mugwump influence, voted for Whitney to make Woodward's defeat more complete. Catlin's supporters were content because they had given him what was regarded as a fine compliment, and had also preserved the Republican organization.

At the close of Whitney's term, the Democrats found their supremacy again imperilled. Whitney had not given the city a brilliant administration. He did not demand a renomination, but was not averse to one. A careful survey of the field by the Democrats convinced them that he might be defeated. An ominous storm was brewing. The "labor" movement, engineered by Henry George and his coadjutors in New York City, became contagious in Brooklyn. A year earlier Mr. George, as candidate for mayor of New York, had polled over 68,000 votes. The labor agitators on this side of the East River concluded they had an opportunity of electing local officers. They placed a full list of candidates in the field. John J. Clancy, resident of the Eastern District, was put up for mayor, Captain James Webb for sheriff and James Waters, former car conductor, for supervisor-at-large. To offset the anticipated "labor" defection, the Willoughby Street authorities determined to pitch Mayor Whitney overboard and take up Alfred C. Chapin, in the zenith of his personal popularity. Formerly a member of the Legislature and speaker of the Assembly, he had just completed two terms as state controller.

It was shrewdly argued by his supporters that whatever loss occurred of workingmen's votes would be followed by a compensating gain from Republicans and independents. Chapin's nomination was the signal for a stirring canvass in his behalf. Meanwhile, the Republicans sought to take advantage of the labor

diversion by nominating Colonel Andrew D. Baird for mayor, deemed exceptionally available among the toilers. Unlike Chapin, Baird was not a speaker. Nevertheless he had been a gallant soldier in the Union Army, performed diligently his labors as a member of the Common Council, and enjoyed the esteem of the building trades and other influential interests.

Everything was uncertain as the voters went to the polls that fall. When the boxes closed Chapin had, by the narrowest margin, despite the labor disaffection, prevailed over Colonel Baird, the vote standing: Chapin, 52,753; Baird, 51,871; Clancy, 11,668, or a plurality for Chapin of 882 votes. The Prohibitionist vote reached high water mark, Samuel S. Utter, their candidate, obtaining 1,993 ballots.

Two years later the renomination of Chapin followed as a matter of course. His friends were more confident than ever of his availability. They held that his office record was creditable to himself and the municipality, and they waged a campaign of striking energy and ability.

Again the Republicans fancied they might defeat Chapin with Baird, since between the two in 1887 the result had been so close that not a few persons believed Baird had been counted out. The colonel did not share this opinion, since he knew that after the voting on his first candidacy the returns from every election district had been carefully tabulated, examined, and compared under the direction of Republican leaders. Such comparison convinced the Republican managers that while the result was disappointing there was no tangible ground for challenging the honesty of the count. Some Republican politicians imagined that because the party had regained ascendancy in the nation its chances locally would be improved. To their surprise and disgust they soon learned that the strife over Federal patronage had created dissensions in their organization and rendered it ineffective for real political work. Long before election day, indications portended a Republican defeat all along the line. These were verified by the November poll, the vote on the mayoralty standing: Chapin, 66,503; Baird, 57,331, or a plurality for Chapin of 9,172. At the same election, Mr. Ridgeway was chosen to a third term in the district attorneyship by more than 10,000 majority; Dr. Paul H. Kretschmar was elected supervisor-at-large, and County Treasurer Harry H. Adams was re-chosen by a phenomenal vote.

The Democrats found themselves at the close of the mayoralty campaign as securely in possession of the municipal administration as they had ever been before.

The aggregate vote for mayor of Brooklyn from 1871 to 1891, inclusive, is shown by the subjoined table:

Year	Candidates	Vote
1871—	Samuel S. Powell (Dem.).....	27,321
	Samuel Booth (Rep.).....	23,226
	Martin Kalbfleisch (Ind. Dem.).....	17,216
1873—	John W. Hunter (Dem.).....	32,281
	Dwight Johnson (Rep.).....	24,837
1875—	Frederick A. Schroeder (Rep.).....	34,968
	Edward Rowe (Dem.).....	33,635
1877—	James Howell (Dem.).....	36,266
	John F. Henry (Rep.).....	33,730
1879—	James Howell (Dem.).....	43,600
	Franklin Woodruff (Rep.).....	33,960
	John W. Flaherty (Ind.).....	1,314



Year	Candidates	Vote
1881—	Seth Low (Rep. and Cit.)	45,321
	James Howell (Dem.)	40,967
1883—	Seth Low (Rep. and Cit.)	49,934
	Joseph C. Hendrix (Dem.)	48,092
1885—	Daniel D. Whitney (Dem.)	49,002
	Isaac S. Catlin (Rep.)	36,905
	John B. Woodward (Ind.)	13,614
1887—	Alfred C. Chapin (Dem.)	52,753
	Andrew D. Baird (Rep.)	51,871
	John J. Clancy (Labor)	11,668
	Samuel S. Utter (Pro.)	1,993
1889—	Alfred C. Chapin (Dem.)	66,503
	Andrew D. Baird (Rep.)	57,331

**David A. Boody**, familiarly called "the last Mayor of Brooklyn," was a New York Stock Exchange broker and member of Congress when he was recruited by the Democratic party to head its ticket in 1891, and became the twenty-third Mayor of Brooklyn. He gave an effective and business-like administration. No more loyal resident of the borough ever lived. Mr. Boody had been a member of the House of Representatives from March 4, 1891, to October 31, 1891, when his election to the mayoralty led him to resign his seat to serve the community he loved.

As Mayor he did much for the cause of temperance. He fought the increase of drinking places by obtaining the passage of a law to forbid the granting of new licenses, although it permitted the holders of licenses to move their business. The bill also established a radius around schools and churches within which saloons could not do business.

Mayor Boody continued the policy of his predecessor, Mayor Chapin, in regard to an extensive paving program, demanded by the bad condition of the streets, as he did in regard to the erection of public buildings and police stations. In his administration the Brooklyn Public Library and the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences were both chartered. The scheme was perfected to make the library a great institution by gradual steps extending over a long period, erecting buildings in sections at a cost of about \$300,000 each and thus avoid a large outlay in any one fiscal year.

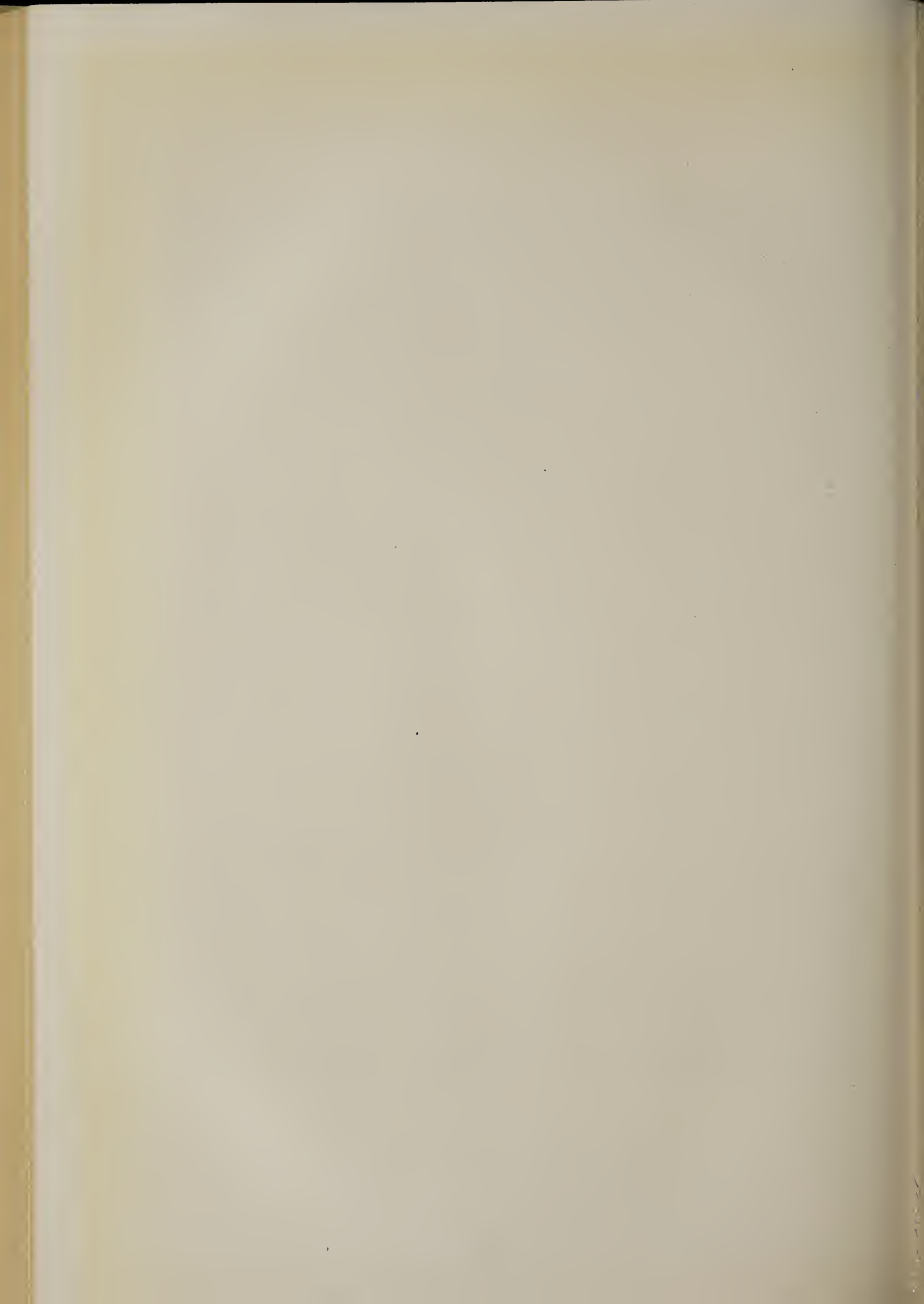
At the end of his term Mayor Boody became chairman of the committee to present the plans to Charles A. Schieren, the new executive, who was agreeable to requesting an appropriation of \$300,000, at the same time requiring figures on the ultimate total cost, being unwilling to lead the municipality into a work that would result in a heavy financial burden. Mr. Boody gave \$5,000,000 as an estimate on the completed plan, explaining the idea in detail, with all of its far-sighted provision for the requirements of the city as the years should bring added growth and population. The building of the library was not begun until the second administration following Mr. Boody's, and the work has gone on, although still incomplete, while in point of service rendered to the public it is said to be the next to the largest library organization in the world. Mayor Boody directed the laying out of the present Shore Road, one of Brooklyn's most beautiful drives,





BROOKLYN MUNICIPAL BUILDING, NOW (1925) IN COURSE OF CONSTRUCTION





commanding an impressive view of the lower harbor and the forts commanding the entrance at the Narrows.

When Mayor Boody retired from office it was with his personal interests and business largely sacrificed in the public service, and upon his return to private life it was necessary for him to re-enter Wall Street to recruit his depleted fortunes, and now, at the advanced age of eighty-seven years, though necessity no longer requires, he can be found at his office every day, giving personal attention to those items of the firm's and his private business which most interest him, and discharging the various duties which he retains with old time capability and exactness.

David Augustus Boody, son of David and Lucretia (Mudgett) Boody, was born in Jackson, Maine, August 13, 1837. As a youth he worked on his father's farm, obtaining his education in the district schools, which he last attended when seventeen years of age, beginning in the following year a teaching career that extended over several years. During the summer vacation he worked on the farm and when he was nineteen years of age he taught the school he had had the previous year and another one as well. About the time the second school closed the young man received word from his uncle, Henry Boody, who had been for a number of years a professor at Bowdoin College, that he would finance a college course for his relative. Accordingly, during the summer of his twentieth year, Mr. Boody attended Phillips Academy at Andover, Massachusetts, and had been a student there for six months when his uncle met with reverses that made it impossible for him to continue his financial assistance to his nephew. Returning home, Mr. Boody obtained a teaching position at Fox Island, then teaching a private school for a time, subsequently entering the law office of Charles P. Brown of Bangor. The year following he taught school at Dixmont, Maine, and then, going to Belfast, Maine, he was for two years associated as a student with Nehemiah Abbott, at the end of that time gaining admission to the bar. During his study he had taught school at Frankfort, Maine, and he continued pedagogical work for a term following his admission to the legal fraternity, for professional demands were not heavy at first. Going to Rockport, Maine, he became a member of the law firm of Talbott & Boody, but, prospects being rather unpromising, he withdrew from this association and sought a larger field in Portland, Maine, where advancement in accordance with his ambitions was not forthcoming. Consequently, when his uncle, Professor Boody, who had recouped his losses and had become rich through transactions in the financial market, wrote for Mr. Boody and offered him the position of private secretary the young lawyer accepted and served in this capacity for three years. The elder man was at that time transportation agent of the Chicago and Northwestern Railroad in New York City, and his financial operations continued to prosper until he had accumulated a fortune in securities amounting to \$1,200,000, noteworthy assets for those days. In the meantime Mr. Boody had become a partner in the business and his uncle's trust in him was so great and his confidence in his ability so implicit that when Mr. Boody requested a loan of \$10,000 to establish himself in an independent enterprise it was readily forthcoming. Before the year for which the loan was to run had expired the capitalist had lost his entire fortune and David A. Boody was called upon by the creditors to take up his note. This he managed to do and then entered in what was then known as the "open board" of stock brokers, and when that was consolidated with the Stock Exchange, Mr. Boody automatically became a member of the latter body.

He is one of the oldest members of the New York Stock Exchange now living



and soon after the consolidation he became a member of the Board of Governors, a post he retained until his resignation about twenty-seven years ago. More than forty years ago he formed a partnership with Charles W. McLellan under the firm name of Boody & McLellan, the firm transacting a strictly stock brokerage business and being one of the oldest houses in that line. Mr. McLellan's death occurred about 1913 and Mr. Boody's present partners are Theodore Ames and his son, Edgar Boody. In addition to his executive responsibility in the business of Boody & McLellan, Mr. Boody has been a director of the Peoples Trust Company of Brooklyn from the time of its organization and is also a director of the United States Title Company. He was the first president of the City Savings Bank and held that office until within a few years and he was also at one time president of the Sprague National Bank.

Mr. Boody became a resident of Brooklyn in 1862 and about 1880 he joined the Memorial Presbyterian Church, in which he has labored in every office from usher to president of the board of trustees. A few years ago he withdrew from the presidency of Berkeley Institute, an office he had held for thirty-four years. Hamilton College recognized the worth of Mr. Boody's activity in educational and civic work with the degree of LL.D. Mr. Boody has done much public speaking, not only in political and public matters, but at dinners and social gatherings, a pleasing delivery and interesting manner of presentation making him much in demand.

David A. Boody married June 1, 1863, Abbie Harriet Treat, born July 15, 1841, daughter of Henry and Abbie (Treat) Treat of Frankfort, Maine.

## CHAPTER XXXV

### GREATER NEW YORK REALIZED

**A**NDREW H. GREEN was the father of Greater New York. It was, when first suggested and advocated, nothing more than "Green's hobby." But the dreamer thought of public convenience and utility, and the material comfort of the millions who would come to fill the land and waters of the metropolitan district. He lived to see the fulfilment of his visions and his hopes.

In 1868, in a report to the Park Board of New York, he called attention "to the important subject of bringing the City of New York and Kings County, a part of Westchester, and a part of Queens and Richmond, including the various suburbs of the city within a certain radial distance from the center, under one common municipal government to be arranged in departments under a single executive head."

This was the real start of the movement which was to bear fruit after thirty years.

In 1874 the lower part of Westchester County was incorporated with New York City, and Mr. Green again predicted the ultimate consolidation of all the communities which now form the greater city. The idea was not his originally, but it was he who gave it life and vitality. Brooklyn got its first city charter only after a stiff fight in the Legislature at Albany, backed by New York.

The body of Legislators took the view that the incorporation of Kings County with New York was only a matter of time, and that to grant Brooklyn a city charter would retard development and be adverse to the interests of both communities.

In 1833 the Brooklyn charter passed the Assembly, but was defeated in the Senate. The next year the Common Council of New York made a report on January 30 to the effect that the city limits ought to include both Kings and Richmond, and that separate city governments for New York and Brooklyn would have an unfavorable influence on both communities. It predicted that a population of over 2,000,000 would be included in the two boroughs within a brief time. In spite of this Brooklyn got its charter on April 8, 1834.

Kings County made the next proposal. Cyrus P. Smith, State Senator, introduced a resolution in the Legislature of 1856 looking to consolidation. Brooklyn opposed it on the grounds of local patriotism and civic pride. The Metropolitan Police and Excise Acts and similar legislation in regard to the Fire and Health Departments of the two cities of 1857 brought the two cities into close communion until April 5, 1870, when the Tweed charter gave each city control of its own affairs.

Andrew H. Green began his work of educating the people of the metropolitan district in regard to the disadvantages of divided political jurisdiction. He talked of public utility, such as water supply, sewage, navigation, and rapid transit.

To New York he pictured the necessity of bringing together the many communities which were all drawing sustenance from the vast commerce of the metropolis while many of them gave little toward its support. The area he proposed to include in the metropolitan district comprised the places of residence as well as the business places of most of its population of 1,500,000. This solved the problem of taxing non-residents, a disturbing question at the time.

Transit facilities were already lagging behind the growth of the community, and the suburbs were harder every day to reach. Great bridges across the East River were built or projected. Staten Island was improving its ferry and railways to meet the call. Harlem was sure to grow with the completion of the elevated road. In all this Mr. Green saw the assurance of consolidation and unity of administration. The communities were struggling by every means to get closer together. They were held apart by the determined struggle of petty interests which saw much to lose as each step was taken toward the inevitable goal.

Mr. Green replied to the politicians: "A big man will have a wider field; only the small fry will suffer." He was giving the big man his opportunity.

In 1890 a Commission of Municipal Consolidation Inquiry was created by the Legislature. Andrew H. Green was president; J. S. T. Stranahan, vice-president, and Albert E. Henschel, secretary. Edward F. Linton and William D. Veeder were the other members from Kings. Meetings were held in the National Park Bank Building, No. 214 Broadway, Manhattan.

Edward C. Graves of Brooklyn was one of the advocates of consolidation.

He compared the taxes paid in the two cities through ten years. Each one of the twenty-five wards of Brooklyn had a separate tax rate. In 1889 these rates varied from \$2.79 on \$100, the lowest, to \$3.02, the highest. New York had a uniform rate of \$1.95 on \$100, a difference of more than one-third in favor of New York. Moreover, New York assessed on sixty per cent of the actual value of property, while Brooklyn assessed 70 per cent. Brooklyn taxes were rising every year; New York's were falling. In August, 1890, Brooklyn reduced the average for the twenty-six wards to \$2.577 per \$100, but increased the valuation. This made Brooklyn's ratio for the year \$3 per \$100, while New York paid \$1.97.

Brooklyn in 1890 was essentially a residential city—a city of homes. All the big terminals and railroad and steamship properties were in New York, and those great properties paid millions in taxes to the city. At the same time miles



upon miles of great stores, of office buildings, bank buildings, warehouses, and other huge paying properties were owned by Brooklyn men. Brooklyn at the time did not have as many big stores, banks, clearing houses, newspapers or hotels as a city of 50,000 inhabitants. Everything it did to give fame and reputation to a city went to swell the greatness of New York. Brooklyn had no markets, fixed no prices. One of New York's great office buildings paid more taxes in a year than five hundred Brooklyn houses.

New York had an inalienable right to own and control all ferries given by King James II of England the day he signed the Dongan charter April 22, 1686. The ferry houses, wharves, and landings on the Brooklyn side, in Brooklyn, were thus owned by New York and could not be taxed in Brooklyn, as they pertain to New York's ferry franchises, but the Union Ferry Company, controlling the Hamilton, South (Wall), Fulton, and Catharine Street Ferries had to pay New York City twelve and one-half per cent of its gross receipts. For the year 1891 this amounted to \$107,887. Every dollar was contributed by Brooklyn residents using the ferries to and fro. New York had the whole United States at its back door. Brooklyn had Long Island, nothing more.

Brooklyn's representatives at Albany fought against consolidation for years. When the bill was passed finally in 1898 it got through the Assembly by a single vote—the vote of Timothy “Dry Dollar” Sullivan's Assemblyman. Those from New York who opposed it argued that Greater New York meant that Brooklyn would become the premier borough and pass New York in wealth and population.

Tunnels to Staten Island and New Jersey will put the continent back of Brooklyn, and in a few years what was feared will come to pass.

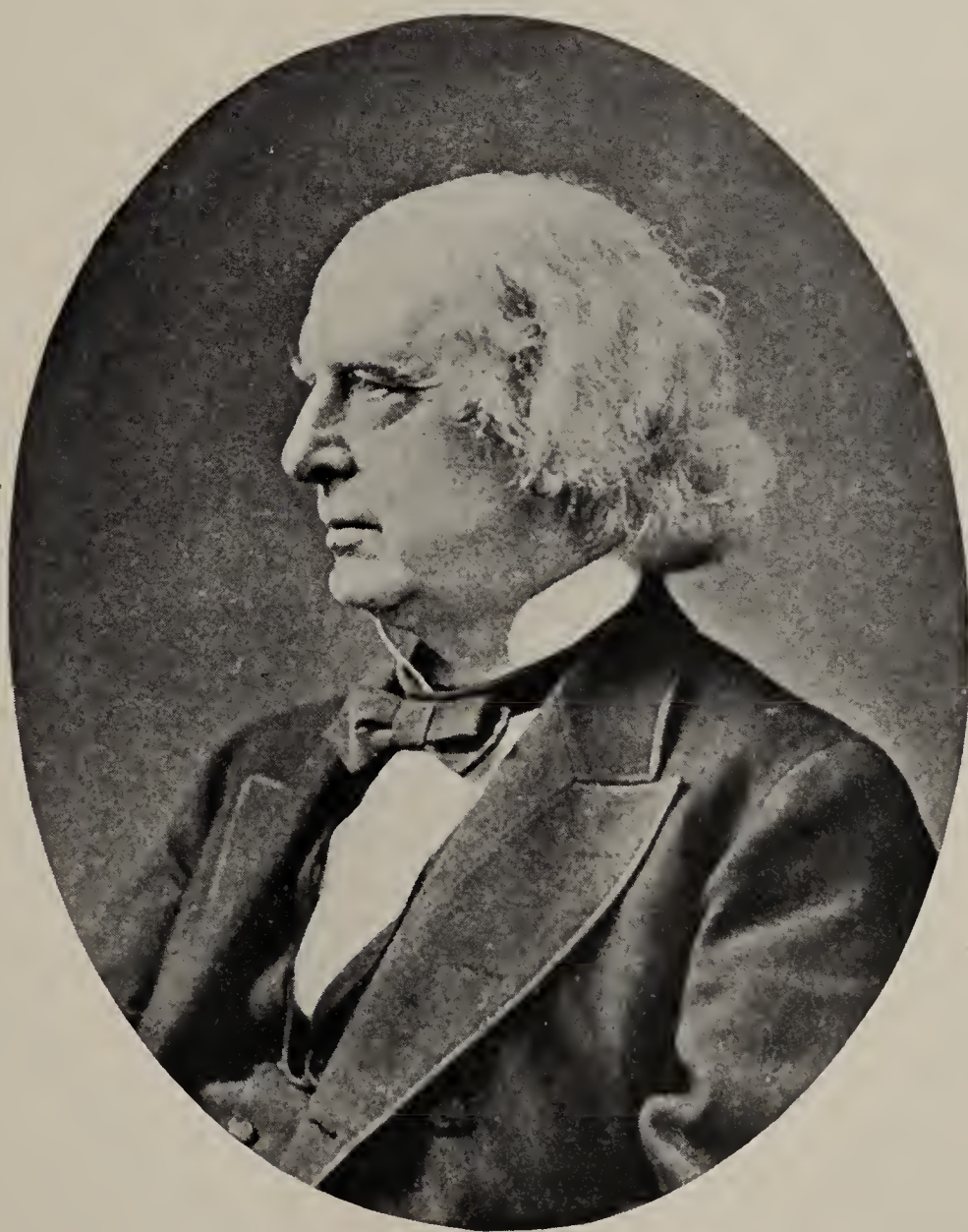
In nothing did Brooklyn derive so much advantage from consolidation as in education. Its homes and its children are in a far greater ratio to the total population than those of the other boroughs. It needed sewers, it needed streets, and better pavements. Above all, it needed schools, and it has them in greater degree. The buildings built since 1898 are of the latest type, the teachers are more adequately paid, and of the best. The city charter changed the name of its Board of Education to School Board. A Board of Education for the entire city took the colloquial name of Central Board. The salaries of all teachers, men, and women, were equalized.

**James S. T. Stranahan** was called the “first citizen of Brooklyn,” and Prospect Park is a perpetual memorial to him, as well as the work he did to bring about the union of Brooklyn and New York.

The city largely stands as the visible evidence of a life whose far-reaching influence has affected for good so many of his fellowmen.

He spent vast labor in practically all great projects affecting the city, was connected with the Brooklyn Bridge Company from its organization, a director of the New York Bridge Company, and continuous trustee from the time the work went into control of the two cities until June, 1885. A member of the executive committee, he served on nearly all the important committees during construction. Foreseeing the traffic the bridge must carry, he insisted that original plans be altered so that the giant structure could support the weight of a train of Pullman cars. Mr. Stranahan consulted Commodore Vanderbilt, who agreed that the time would arrive when such trains would pass out of Brooklyn to country-wide points.

President of the Park Commission 22 years, Mr. Stranahan developed a park program to care for the city's growing needs, and originated the



*J. S. Stranahan.*

The Man and a Monument





boulevard system, the Ocean Parkway and Eastern Parkway, which connect the sea in drives unsurpassed. Later, this led to the development of Coney Island.

Because he could foresee possibilities, practically every work with which Mr. Stranahan was associated proved of greatest value to the citizenry.

He managed far-reaching enterprises, being for more than 40 years director of the Union Ferry Company. The great Atlantic docks were developed under his direction. Brooklyn had no warehouse on its waterfront, and where the docks were placed was shallow water at the edge of the bay. He foresaw the commercial possibilities of docks and labored for them with a patience scarcely approachable in the annals of material affairs. And although it was 26 years before the Atlantic Dock Company paid dividends, the shipping returns became greater than those of almost any other port of the world.

James S. T. Stranahan was born April 25, 1808, at the family homestead, near Peterboro, Madison County, N. Y., his parents being Samuel and Lynda (Josselyn) Stranahan. His lineage was Scotch-Irish, of Presbyterian faith—the men with rugged, determined characteristics, and the women of culture and industry. The first of whom record is left was James Stranahan, born in 1699 in the north of Ireland. The name has been spelled in many ways, as Stranahan, Strachan, and Strahan, and is derived from Strachan parish, Kincardineshire, Scotland. Mr. Stranahan's grandfather came to America in 1785 and was a prosperous farmer of Scituate, R. I. He removed to Plainfield, Conn., and died in 1792 at the age of 93. His eldest son, James, and namesake, served in the Revolution and lived and died in Plainfield.

When eight years old, James S. T. Stranahan lost his father, and his boyhood soon was occupied with labor, since he assisted his stepfather on the farm and caring for the stock. After the farming season, he entered district schools, there acquiring his early education, which he supplemented by several terms in an academy.

From the age of 17, he depended entirely upon his own resources, and after his academical work took up teaching, with the intention of becoming a civil engineer, but this was not big enough business for his ingenious mind, even at 19.

Trading with the Indians in the Northwest seemed to offer greater inducements. He visited the upper lake region in 1827, conducting a party of emigrants, and tried to enlist Lewis Cass, Governor of Michigan territory, in his trading plans. But he had not yet become the expert manipulator of men which Brooklyn knew, and his efforts came to naught.

Returning East, he went into the wool business at Albany, which paid. He might have continued indefinitely had not Gerrit Smith, the Abolitionist, gone to Albany to renew the acquaintance of the boy whose caliber he remembered on his stepfather's farm. Smith seems to have been the first man of influence who saw there was unusual stuff in Stranahan. He owned vast tracts of land in Oneida County, and persuaded Stranahan, now twenty-four years old, to establish a manufacturing city on one of them.

So great was Stranahan's enterprise, the town of Florence grew and throve to a city of thousands, and when it was six years old it sent its young founder to the Assembly as a Whig, though the county was strongly Democratic. Stranahan made a mark in Albany as a speaker on the suspension of specie payments, a prominent issue, and upon the sub-treasury act proposed by President Van Buren.



Permanent attraction did not lie in Florence nor in the Assembly, however, so Mr. Stranahan removed to Newark to become a railroad contractor, building portions of the Erie and other roads. Railroading was new, and he was one of the first to take stock in payment for work. Thus he became a large owner in railway stocks, which made him comparatively wealthy.

Four years he stayed in New Jersey. He came to Brooklyn in 1844 where, for the first time, he met opportunity commensurate with his abilities.

To appreciate the great work he did, it is necessary to visualize the city as he found it. There were 50,000 inhabitants, the city's charter was ten years old, and there was no city hall. There were a few houses on Livingston Street east of City Hall, but most of Brooklyn lay between Court Street and the East River. Court Street was built up for a few blocks south of Atlantic Avenue; and Washington, Concord and Nassau Streets were a genteel neighborhood, though the strongest social element lived on the Heights. There were no trolley cars, no Brooklyn Bridge, and omnibuses were the only public conveyances. New York was ten times as large as Brooklyn and monopolized the business and the commerce of New York Bay.

For a man seeking investment with a view to attaining fortune and position in the community to have seized the idea of the Atlantic Dock system from a stretch of shallow water shows uncommon foresight. And to be able to induce others to put their money into it with him reveals strong persuasive powers, a faculty Mr. Stranahan possessed to an uncommon degree. The dock system was the most perfect in the world, forty acres of water being surrounded with mammoth warehouses more than a mile in extent. Two hundred acres capable of accommodating a resident population of 15,000, was reclaimed; the docks were two miles long and the warehouses one mile, while the valuation of the property paid one two-hundredth part of the taxes of Brooklyn.

Mr. Stranahan had not been in Brooklyn long before the city began to feel his influence, though it was many years before he acquired the high eminence and honor finally accorded him and won an abiding affection in the hearts of the people.

He was first elected an alderman in 1848, a post of meager pay but great responsibility. This increased his knowledge of city forces and men which he afterwards controlled with such good results. In 1850, he was nominated for mayor by the Whigs, but the party being in the minority, he was defeated. His candidacy brought him before the public, and in 1854, when the Republican party was coming into existence in Michigan, Vermont, Maine and other states, Mr. Stranahan was nominated for Congress by the elements hostile to the controlling Democrats. The fight was spectacular, but Mr. Stranahan's aggressiveness, vigorous campaigning, and popularity won the day. Slavery was the great issue. His boldness and courage made him a good abolitionist, and he served his party with entire satisfaction.

He was next pressed into service as a commissioner when the police system for the two cities was organized in 1858, his shrewdness and aptitude for practical politics having made heavy scores for him in party counsels. There he quelled some hot conflicts which came near breeding riots in the struggle between the displaced constabulary organized under Mayor Fernando Wood, known as "The Leatherheads," and which opposed the new order.

In 1864, Mr. Stranahan was a Republican presidential elector on the Lincoln and Johnson ticket, and a delegate to the conventions of 1860 and 1864, where

he supported Lincoln for the presidency. He was one of the electoral college and elector-at-large when Harrison ran for President.

Mr. Stranahan was president of the War Fund Committee, an organization of more than one hundred leading Brooklyn men, whose patriotism organized the "Brooklyn Union," a newspaper that upheld President Lincoln's policies. Its purpose was to help the President prosecute the war and encourage enlistments. He came into close association with A. A. Low, Samuel McLean, and other eminent citizens more active than he in the social, charitable and religious life of the city. His labors assisted powerfully the historic "Sanitary Fair" (q. v.), a general community work of the commission, co-operating with the Women's Relief Committee, of which Mrs Stranahan was president, and by which \$400,000 was raised for the work of the Sanitary Commission of the war.

After the war, Mr. Stranahan worked so persistently and successfully for great public purposes that he began to be called "the wizard," "the magician," and finally "the first citizen." This was the time of his great activity for the park system. The city desired and needed a great central park like that of New York, at that time beginning to attract the attention of the country. Brooklyn's appointed commissions had failed to create such a park.

An act was passed at Albany for the construction of Prospect Park by the first twelve wards of the city. Mr. Stranahan, an earnest advocate of concentrating all the money and effort upon the Prospect Park location, began the labor which resulted in the reality of the park, of Ocean Boulevard and Eastern Parkway. He was also responsible for the Coney Island Concourse, which would have been larger except for niggardly appropriations.

During his twenty-two years as commissioner, proof of the confidence reposed in his ability is shown by the fact that the people permitted him to spend \$9,000,000 of the city's money for ends in which many less sagacious or imaginative persons could not see either beauty or utility. He accomplished this by the extremely difficult task of keeping the public in that active and sympathetic attitude necessary to obtain legislation and sufficient funds at the proper time to insure the speedy and economical construction of the park. Among these were legislators, partisan leaders, speculating theorists, and an especially irritating class of irrepressible cranks.

His service he gave solely out of pride in citizenship. To show his public spirit, when his term was ended, and after the vast funds had been spent, there was a shortage of \$10,604; he sent the comptroller by return mail his personal check to cover this amount. That was his characteristic way of dealing with things. He knew people would not believe in the theft of so small an amount of money, and where a weaker man might have demanded an "investigation" to clear his own hands of any corruption, Mr. Stranahan dealt with the matter abruptly and decisively and turned his mind to constructive affairs.

After the opening of Brooklyn Bridge, where he presided, Mr. Stranahan was called upon often to preside on important public occasions. Few persons live to have their labors appreciated or until the world loves to honor their names. But Mr. Stranahan personally received numerous tributes of note from a grateful citizenship.

He presided when the handsome Union League Club House on Bedford Avenue was dedicated in 1889, and his presence at any meeting was considered an especial honor.

Crowning distinction was that, while living, a monument was erected to him through private subscription by his fellow citizens. The Hamilton Club



initiated this at a dinner for Mr. Stranahan on December 13, 1888, which two hundred men attended. The Rev. Dr. Richard Salter Storrs introduced the topic, the following extract from his speech graphically revealing the spirit of the day and the club toward Mr. Stranahan:

"I am a contemporary of Mr. Stranahan, though he got ahead of me in the matter of being born. He came upon the planet twelve or thirteen years before I did, and I have never been able to catch up. I came to Brooklyn in 1846; he in 1844. I have watched his work and seen the things he has just referred to grow from the root upward. A great many things he has not referred to. He has not referred to his connection with the war fund committee in our critical time. He has not spoken of his connection with a great many of our institutions; with the Athenæum, which has started many other things in this city; with the libraries and galleries which have made the city attractive and beautiful. He has not spoken of the ferry company of which he is president. He has spoken of but three things: Brooklyn Bridge, Atlantic docks and Prospect Park. Well, they are great things; and I cannot help thinking how much came into Brooklyn when Mr. Stranahan brought his wife and children here 44 years ago! How much came with this head and this will, and as much with the will as in the head. Then Prospect Park! There was hardly a tree removed or planted, hardly a drive or walk laid out or a bit of shrubbery set to which his personal attention was not given. It is all very well for him to say that they had the best landscape artists in the world, but they could not have done anything without him. It is very well for him to say that there were wise and able men associated with him, and they were wise, and they showed that they were wise and able, by always making their agreement with him unanimous. I don't know what he would have done if he had had that other park of 1,300 acres. Sir Joshua Reynolds said of Rubens, if I remember aright, that his genius always expanded with his canvas, his best pictures being uniformly the largest.

"We see what Mr. Stranahan did with 550 acres, creating beauty and harmony; taking that rough, rocky, hilly waste, as we remember it, and making it the pleasure ground of hundreds of thousands for all time; taking that narrow, winding country road—if there was any there, which I doubt—and converting it into the magnificent boulevard, fronting the sea on one side and the park on the other, and which gives Brooklyn fame in the country and the world. What a tremendous work it was to do! I think that if he had had another 1,300 acres under his care we should have had a succession of parks that would have astonished the continent. People say not infrequently: 'By and by we must put up a statue to Mr. Stranahan in Prospect Park.' Of course we must. But why do we need to wait?"

The question brought speedy action. While no one was allowed to contribute more than \$100 for the statue, the entire amount for it—\$20,000—was raised immediately.

Such a statue to a living man is as unusual as the career the bronze commemorated. Frederick MacMonnies, its famous Brooklyn sculptor, created a monument Saint Gaudens and other critics pronounced an artistic masterpiece. It stands at the entrance of Prospect Park.

It was unveiled June 6, 1891, in the presence of Mr. and Mrs. Stranahan. General John B. Woodward acted as chairman. The veil was removed by the sculptor. Mr. Stranahan relinquished the privilege to him.

In his last days, Mr. Stranahan advocated consolidation of Brooklyn, part of Queens and all of Richmond Counties with New York, and lived to see Greater New York, of which he had dreamed, become a fact.

Almost every day he drove through Prospect Park. He loved nothing better on Sunday school anniversary day than to drive up before the reviewing stand and watch the thousands of little folks attired in gala trappings parading under sunny skies, with banners waving over the long meadow which was the creation of his genius.

Mr. Stranahan was twice married, being first wedded to Marianne Fitch, who was born in Westmoreland, Oneida County. She was a daughter of Ebenezer R. Fitch. They first resided in Florence. In Newark their two children were born. She had much to do with the famous Sanitary Fair, work



of which really hastened her death, which occurred in Manchester, Vermont, in 1866, after twenty-two years in Brooklyn. His second wife was Clara C. Harrison (q. v.), a native of Massachusetts.

The following speech of Mr. Stranahan was delivered before the annual banquet of the Chamber of Commerce, New York, May 8, 1883. It is reproduced because it tells so much about the construction of Brooklyn Bridge, the union of the two cities, and gives insight into the views and characteristics of Brooklyn's great benefactor. He gave it in response to the toast: "The Great Bridge, the Engineering Triumph of the Nineteenth Century; its Originators and Directors, for their Patience, Fidelity and Zeal Deserve Everlasting Gratitude; its Constructors Achieve Immortal Fame in its Complete Success."

"I feel confident that, on the opening of the bridge, the opinion of the general public will concur with that of a distinguished member of the chamber, who, after a walk with me over the structure, exclaimed as we came near the New York side: 'Well, I had no idea of the magnitude of this work. It is indeed grand in its conception, and, if possible, grander still in the courage of its execution.'

"The bridge told its own story to that gentleman; and that story it will repeat to the ears of millions. To stand upon it and see it, and see all that it reveals to the eye, is to admire. All sense of danger and all ideas of weakness at once disappear. The marvel is that human power, even when availing itself of natural laws, could produce such a result.

"I do not know, Mr. Chairman, whether you have heard it or not, yet I may as well say that the people of Brooklyn have an idea in regard to the bridge which is quite sure to reveal itself at no distant period. Brooklyn, as you are aware, is by the East River isolated from the mainland. The people of that city hope that the bridge will remove that isolation, and put them in direct railway communication, not only with New York City, but with all parts of the country. This will greatly serve their convenience and promote their prosperity. New York will certainly not object, and will not be the loser. If a bridge over the Harlem River connects New York with the mainland, why should not a bridge over the East River perform a similar service in behalf of Brooklyn and Long Island? Brooklyn believes in utilizing the bridge to this end; and, fortunately, the end can be gained without any serious disturbance of existing conditions in the City of New York.

"The Second Avenue Railway has, between the Harlem River and Twenty-third Street, sufficient width for four tracks, and between this street and the New York terminus of the bridge, for three tracks, and it is withal so strongly built as to make it entirely possible to utilize it to the full extent of giving to Brooklyn and the system of railroads on Long Island an outlet through the Hudson river and New Haven roads to all parts of the country. The view contemplates no public or private concessions on the part of the City of New York. It rests simply upon that business theory which so strongly marks the great trunk lines of the country, and to which the Hudson River and New Haven roads are no strangers. Though Brooklyn does not expect to rival the commercial grandeur of the greater city, she does expect in this way to be put in rapid and easy connection with the outside world, and by her extended waterfront, by her capabilities of indefinite territorial expansion, and by her numerous attractions as a place of residence to maintain, at the least, her past record in the growth of population and wealth.

"Mr. Chairman, Brooklyn has another idea, and has long had it, the accomplishment of which she hopes will be facilitated by this bridge. The Thames flows through the heart of London, and the Seine through the heart of Paris. But in neither case have you two cities. It is London on both sides of the Thames, and Paris on both sides of the Seine. The corporate unity is not dissevered by either river. Numerous bridges make the connection between the two sides in both cities, and it is best for both that it should be so. The population on neither side would be advantaged by being split up into two municipalities. Here, however, we have our New York City and our Brooklyn with the East River rolling between them. They are distant cities in immediate contiguity with each other and separated by a water highway. Is this distinctness of municipality any advantage to either? I think not. Would the consolidation of these two cities into one municipal corporation be any harm to either? I think not. The people are the same people, have the same manners and customs, and have common commercial and social interests; and one municipal government would serve them quite as well as two, and at far less cost. I know of no reason why this distinctness should be continued other than the fact that it exists; and I confess I see no good reason why it should exist at all. I may be mistaken, but I think that the public



sentiment of Brooklyn would cordially welcome a consolidation of the two cities under the title of New York. The East River bridge, now superadded to the ferry system, will, as Brooklyn hopes, so facilitate their mutual intercourse that both, without any special courtship on either side, will alike ask the legislature of the state to enact the ceremony of a municipal marriage; and if this shall be done, then I venture to predict that each will be so happy and so well content with the other that neither will ever seek a divorce.

"I have thus, Mr. Chairman, briefly responded to the toast upon which I have been asked to speak; and as I close I cannot forbear to express the solid satisfaction which the trustees, who for years have given an unpaid service to the construction of the East River bridge, now feel, not only in view of its completion, but also of the character of the result attained. They will pass away; generations will come and go; but the monument will live. Centuries will roll away; and the bridge, though it may grow old in years, and in the far-distant future be studied and used as a product of a by-gone age, will still retain its strength. The cables will not snap, and the towers will not fall. The anchorages will be true to their trust. The massive arches will not collapse. The steel and granite will not rot. Fire will not burn the bridge. Freight trains and Pullman cars will not break it. The winds will not shake it. Time and toil will not fatigue it. Its youth and age alike will be periods of vigor. That bridge, Mr. Chairman, was built to stand; and stand it will—so long that we may well call it immortal."

Mr. Stranahan died in Saratoga September 3, 1898, his funeral cortege being the first ever permitted to pass through Prospect Park. The park's workmen stood in long lines of honored respect, an especial place also having been set apart for them at the Church of the Pilgrims, where the sermon was preached by the Rev. Dr. Storrs, a life-long friend, assisted by the Rev. E. H. Byington.

Seats were arranged for trustees of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences, of which Mr. Stranahan was a vice-president. The institute had his interest and sympathy from its inception. He was the first to subscribe to its endowment fund at its reincorporation in 1890.

Among the honorary pallbearers was Russell Sage, with whom Mr. Stranahan was in Congress, and there was a reason for the selection of every man invited. Alexander E. Orr had long been an associate in the grain and warehouse business, and also in the South Brooklyn Savings Bank, of which Mr. Stranahan was a trustee. S. V. White was a park commissioner part of the time that Mr. Stranahan was building the park. George H. Seward aided in the organization of the Casualty and Fidelity Trust Company in which Mr. Stranahan was interested; C. C. Martin was engineer under Mr. Stranahan in the park department and afterwards engineer of the Brooklyn Bridge. Similar associations marked the selection of Andrew H. Green, Dr. St. Clair McKelway, E. H. R. Lyman, A. M. White, General Benjamin F. Tracy, William Berri, Prof. Franklin Hooper, Dr. D. H. Cochran, Thomas Moore, Alanson Trask, General Stewart L. Woodford, at the time Minister to Spain, and Park Commissioner George V. Brower.

Dr. Storrs spoke not only of the great work of the man in every-day affairs, but declared that Mr. Stranahan's faith and trust in God was like a child's, and to Him he unfailingly gave credit for whatever success he was enabled to attain. He followed the principles of Christianity in his daily life, serving his church faithfully with his abilities as well as with his means.

The National City Bank directors passed resolutions of sympathy for the family. Mr. Stranahan was one of the bank's organizers. The trustees of the Kings County Trust Company, of which Mr. Stranahan was vice-president since its organization, appointed a committee to attend the burial.

The funeral throng was composed of distinguished persons and the public from far and near and from all parts of New York and Brooklyn.

Patrick Henry McCarren, one of Brooklyn's most typical political leaders, a man identified with the borough so closely that his career was considered an example of its possibilities, was born in East Cambridge, Mass., July 18, 1849. He always asserted that the record of the town of Cambridge made him two years older than he really was; and just before his death, in October, 1909, he asserted that he was fifty-nine. His mother would say that Pat was always like a girl about his age.

He was two years old when his parents settled in the Eastern District. With his brother, Charles, he romped about the unoccupied section around Newtown Creek, playing the games and living the life of a boy. The father felt that they needed an education and sent them to Public School No. 17, on Driggs Avenue. There he developed unusual ability as a baseball pitcher. He said of those days:

When I see one of those baseball games nowadays it always reminds me of the old days. For more than five years of my life, baseball had me going. I was the best schoolboy pitcher in the Eastern District. We had to pitch straight arm then, and we used a different kind of ball. It was stuffed with something soft and had a bullet in the middle. They couldn't knock it very far and when men got on the bases they were in danger of their lives. If a man got off his base, you could throw the ball at him, and if you hit him, he was out. I remember once the opposing pitcher hit me in the eye while I was standing on first base. I didn't say much, but from that time on I practiced until I could hit a man at fifty feet every time. I got this fellow off the base a little later on and they had to carry him home. It was a strenuous game in those days.

When McCarren finished his course in the public school, his father told him he had to earn his own living. He asked him what he preferred to do. McCarren had several friends whose fathers were coopers and they all took up the cooperage trade together. At sixteen he was apprenticed to a cooper.

In the three years I was a cooper's apprentice, I worked harder and was abused more than ever before or since. I've taken a good many knocks in politics, but none of them hurt me like the right fist of the boss. He had a notion that we had to be beaten into shape, and he was a man who always followed his convictions.

At nineteen McCarren became a journeyman cooper. He used to say that the day he began to earn the full wages of an accomplished mechanic was the proudest of his life. He worked at the trade about ten years. His ability won him the post of oil inspector with Archer & Co., at 64 Beaver Street, New York. It was while looking over a shipment of oil barrels on a pier in New York that he first met John D. Rockefeller.

McCarren used to relate:

I was down on the dock one summer morning testing the hoops of barrels, when a rather dapper-looking young fellow, with a shrewd face, walked down and stood watching me. He followed me and asked so many questions that I became annoyed. I asked him who he was and what business he had to interfere with my work. He replied that his name was Rockefeller, that he was an oil man and expected some time to have docks of his own in New York. He said he was doing some business with Archer & Co., and thought he would like to learn something about the barrel end of the business. I knew him pretty well later in life and several times we recalled the incident.

About this time McCarren married Miss Kate Hogan, a school teacher of the Eastern District. He enjoyed a happy married life of ten years during which five children were born, all dying in infancy.

When rumors were spread that he was to marry again, McCarren remarked:

When I was thirty years old, I buried my wife and five children. Do you think I have forgotten her and our five babies? That is just as green in my memory as if it happened yesterday. She was my wife, the only wife I ever had, or ever will have. If I had Russell Sage's hundred millions, I would give every cent of it, whatever else I have in the world, to have my wife and children back.

People say I am hard, as hard as nails. That story sounds softy, doesn't it? It isn't softy; it is just a plain statement of fact, and I've mentioned it only to show what nonsense all this talk is.



While he had a home life with the incentive it gave him to get on in the world, McCarren met a coroner with glittering finger rings and glittering diamonds on his shirt. He reflectively said to himself:

That man is not a remarkable man. He apparently is a successful one; I wish to be a successful man. I shall try politics. This fellow has nothing on me. I have got a good many things on him. If he can play politics and wear diamonds there's no reason why I can't.

The young cooper began to take a keener interest in politics. He was one of the Democratic ward organization. He took the stump for the candidates for assembly and alderman. He developed a straightforward, sincere style of speechmaking and came to be one of the best debaters the State Legislature has had, and he put the greatest orators on their mettle when he began to dissect and combat what they had said.

In 1881 McCarren was elected to the State Assembly and forthwith became the leader of the Democratic group from Brooklyn. He perceived the power of committees and never once went back on the report of a committee to which he belonged. He was reelected in 1883. That year the last of his family and his wife died. His brother Charles had died two years before, and his father while he was still a cooper's apprentice. He was saved from misanthropy by his game-ness, his nerve, as some called it, but rather his indomitable will.

He decided to study law and began a system of self-education which continued through life. He read history and reflected on the methods the leaders of men had applied in the past. He came to be regarded as a man of greater education than he really possessed.

I do not pretend to know law, he used to say. It is true I am a lawyer; but that is not my business. Every man had to have a side line. I'm a politician. When I want real up-to-date law, I go to one of my friends who makes law his business.

Yet McCarren's knowledge of law was of immense advantage to him as a legislator and helped him win many a debate in Albany.

McCarren was elected to the State Senate in 1886 and continued to be a member of that body to the day of his death, excepting only one term—'94-'95. He reduced legislation to the exactness of a scientific basis.

"Legislation is a matter of having enough votes. One is enough of a majority. Give me that one and I will do whatever I please," he would say.

During his first term in the Senate, McCarren led the Democrats from Kings County, and eventually he became leader of the party in both houses. Hugh McLaughlin encouraged him in every way and made him a lieutenant. In the early nineties McCarren and James Shevlin were known as deputy leaders under the big boss. His fame grew and McLaughlin admitted that he was an abler manager of men than himself.

In 1903, Charles F. Murphy, dominating the Tammany delegates in the Democratic city convention, forced the nomination of Edward M. Grout for Comptroller and of Charles V. Fornes for President of the Board of Aldermen. McCarren stood loyally with McLaughlin, who was overridden in the convention, and bolted with the Brooklyn delegation on every resolution. When Tammany had put through its programme and had beaten McLaughlin at every turn, McCarren urged his chief to move to make the nominations unanimous in accord with the tradition of all political parties.

Instead, McLaughlin issued a defiance to Tammany the next day with a declaration that Brooklyn Democrats would not support the ticket. The veteran chief persisted in his course, with intense bitterness, and permitted his feelings



to sway his judgment. At the end of three days, McCarren served notice on him that if he persisted in his course his leadership must end.

McCarren explained afterwards:

I did not want to break from the old man. You may not believe it, but I had no ambition to become county leader. I realized that I was the leader in fact, if not in name, and I preferred that to being the recognized head of the county organization. The old man was consumed with hatred for Murphy and Tammany Hall and would not listen to reason. I was forced for the sake of the organization to take the stand I did.

For a time McLaughlin held a few of the executive committee with him, but in a short time a majority were arrayed with McCarren. Even after this he tried to induce McLaughlin to change his mind and resume the leadership. The result was that he came to share with Murphy and Tammany Hall the bitter resentment of Hugh McLaughlin.

McCarren had been leader for six years when he died. He changed the Democratic headquarters from 9 Willoughby Street to the Jefferson Building, 4 Court Square. The followers who stayed with McLaughlin came to be known as "the Willoughby Street crowd." Shevlin encouraged the leaders opposed to McCarren; but he withdrew gradually from political activity, and lost his hold on the party machinery. Nevertheless he exerted all the force of a strong personality to make McCarren's leadership uncomfortable.

Charles F. Murphy, the master of Tammany Hall, was another thorn in McCarren's flesh. Never for a moment did he stay his hand in trying to reduce Brooklyn to a state of political vassalage and make the Kings County organization a dependency of Tammany Hall, thus destroying its independence. Although Kings County was in the minority in all city conventions, McCarren always strove to maintain the independence and autonomy of his organization. He was successful as long as he lived and was able to draw strength from the attacks of Murphy.

The Tammany leader never took up openly any of the Brooklyn leaders opposing McCarren and trying to break his hold upon the party. He worked by more subtle and devious methods. By forming a combination with William F. Conners of Buffalo in 1905, Murphy controlled the State Convention in that city, the state committee and all the machinery of the state organization. When the seven leaders came out against McCarren in the spring of 1907, they had the immediate and fullest support of the state organization, directed by Charles F. Murphy and Daniel F. Cohalan.

In the convention the anti-McCarren delegates were informed beforehand that the McCarren men who made up most of the Brooklyn contingent would be ejected summarily from the convention. The antis were instructed to go through the form of contesting the validity of the primary returns. Murphy and Cohalan, nothing daunted, took the drastic step of throwing out the regularly elected Brooklyn delegates by virtue of superior numbers and nothing more. The McCarren men were permitted to take no part in the convention.

Murphy, with the aid of "Fingey Conners," followed this up by throwing out the regular state committeemen and appointing others to fill their places. They adopted the same tactics with unfriendly members from up the State and put in the aids of "Fingey Conners."

McCarren had been forewarned of Murphy's intention and gave the situation careful study. He knew he could not prevent the Murphy-Conners alliance from carrying out its scheme and turned to new tactics. He obtained injunctions against all the members of the state committee forbidding them from organizing or holding the convention until they had answered the charges made against



them in court. Conners and Murphy were unequal to the situation and stood dumbfounded. The convention was postponed and Cohalan was sent for in great haste. He went before the Republican judge who had issued the restraining order and obtained a partial dissolution of the injunction. Thereupon the convention proceeded with the crude scheme of Murphy and carried out his orders.

McCarren's injunction established the fact that the proceedings of voluntary political bodies operating under the election law are proper subjects for court review. Litigation followed at the instigation of the regular Kings County organization directed by McCarren, and the effect of Murphy's strong-arm tactics was almost entirely wiped out.

Murphy, however, did not stop. He was able to deliver the New York delegation to Bryan at the Denver convention of 1900, and he induced the Bryan managers to repeat the tactics of the state convention and throw out the regular delegates from Kings County. McCarren was strengthened by Murphy's course rather than weakened, and the resentment of the better Democrats was aroused against Tammany Hall and its chief. A law to make its repetition impossible was recommended to Governor Hughes and it was condemned with severity by a gathering at Saratoga Springs, which organized the Democratic League.

Murphy attempted to deprive McCarren of his share of the city patronage and had he succeeded McCarren would not have been able to maintain his hold on the party organization. He proved able to hold his own with the Mayor, and he was loyally supported by Comptroller Herman A. Metz, a member of his own organization.

Soon after McCarren became the recognized leader of the Democratic party in Kings County, Murphy gave out that he was dissatisfied with the way things were going on this side of the East River. He announced that he had selected a new leader in William A. Doyle, who would be *persona grata* with Tammany Hall. Doyle was a resident of the Ninth Assembly District and a deputy fire commissioner. The Shevlin followers forthwith acclaimed him as leader, and Doyle told the district leaders he would himself dispense all patronage for the county.

McCarren hurried to the City Hall and had a long talk with George B. McClellan. The Mayor sent word to his commissioners and appointive officials, that he intended to recognize McCarren in appointments as the head of the Kings Democracy, for a time at least. Doyle tried in vain to win over members of the executive committee, but failed signally. After a few weeks he surrendered to McCarren and asked to be taken back into the regular organization. McCarren now was able to assert that Tammany Hall was trying to invade Brooklyn and his position was strengthened materially. One by one the leaders went to his headquarters in Court Square and deserted the McLaughlin element which soon became negligible. Those who did not capitulate on McCarren's terms were beaten at the primaries. By the fall of 1905 all had declared themselves regular and all animosities had been eliminated. McCarren's leadership was recognized everywhere and he was able to take solid delegations to every convention.

In the spring of 1907 an insurrection occurred almost without warning. Seven district leaders came out with a proclamation that there was no chance of success under McCarren, and that they would oppose him until they forced his resignation. It was learned that these men had been called to the Astor House in New York to confer with an agent of Charles F. Murphy and that the hope of favors from Murphy had inspired the revolt.

McCarren was equal to the emergency, and not at all disconcerted. Assur-





THE FLATBUSH AVENUE 'TRAFFIC' PROBLEM





ing himself that the sixteen remaining leaders were true to the organization, he turned upon the seven recalcitrants. In the fall he made his first personal campaign before the primaries, speaking in the districts of all the hostile leaders. He announced that he would not rest until every one of them had been driven out of politics. Doyle, McGuire in the Sixth District, and Melody in the Fourth were defeated that year. He lost another district which elected Bridges, his opponent. The party was not winning in elections at least to a satisfactory extent, and the wiser heads counselled harmony within as the first step toward success at the polls.

Six months before his death, McCarren and James Shevlin were brought together by common friends at a dinner, unexpectedly to both. After discussing the situation fully they determined to turn over the direction of the party to a harmony committee of leading Democrats without bias in the factional struggles of the county. After six months the harmony committee made a report to the general committee recommending the appointment of the provisional committee agreed upon by Shevlin and McCarren. Several district leaders refused to accept the good offices of the provisional committee and carried their fight through the county convention of 1909; but all of them announced their intention either in the convention or soon after to support the ticket suggested by the provisional committee.

Although the provisional committee was nominally in charge of affairs of the Kings County Democrats at the time of McCarren's death, he was as powerful as he had been at any time before he recognized the supremacy of the committee. His judgment decided all questions of policy. To him the candidates went invariably for counsel and advice.

McCarren's strong traits were imperturbability and an unconquerable will. Many times he was reduced to poverty and accepted the situation unmoved. Nor was he elated by prosperity. When he had accumulated money enough to permit, he maintained for several years a racing stable, and was moderately successful. He enjoyed the excitement, and became almost as conspicuous at the Jockey Club meets as he was in politics. Often he bet heavily; but he did not expect to win invariably. His racing days no doubt cost him a large sum. Win or lose he was the same smiling, imperturbable man. After 1903 he did not own a horse of commanding importance.

In 1903 when racing was at its height he was a frequent winner, and no doubt found profit in the stakes. In that year his two-year-old filly Ocean Tide met the famous Beldame, owned by August Belmont, who was taking honors on all sides, in the Great Filly Stakes, run on September 3d. The race was worth \$14,000 and McCarren put a plunge bet on his horse to win besides. In a furious drive of a quarter of a mile Ocean Tide swept past the judges a good head in front of the Belmont entry.

Mr. Belmont went into McCarren's box to congratulate him on the victory. The senator's back was turned toward the number board as he accepted Mr. Belmont's hand and thanked him. A cry in the box caused him to turn and he saw the number of Beldame hoisted above Ocean Tide's. He smiled slightly and turned to Mr. Belmont, saying: "I must congratulate you, Mr. Belmont."

It seemed his jockey, Coburn, was so sure of the race that he did not whip out Ocean Tide in the final strides, while Bullman, the Belmont jockey, was sure Beldame was beaten but he rode his best to the last. The result astonished the crowd and furnished no end of talk. The odds were ten to one for the



McCarren commission on Ocean Tide. Had she won, the senator's winnings would have run into six figures, on top of the \$14,000 the race was worth.

McCarren did much toward passing the Percy-Gray law which put racing on the highest plane it ever reached in the United States. New York rivaled England and France in the value of its stakes and purses and the quality of the thoroughbreds the sport produced.

The real McCarren, as his friends knew him, was tolerant of others, easy as a political boss, with a self-control amounting almost to indifference. His brief periods of anger were witnessed only by his closest associates. Under all circumstances he preserved an outward calm. He despised pretense of all kinds. His ambition was to restore his party to a position of dignity as the great conservative force in national affairs, repudiating radicalism and everything that suggested socialism.

He lived in the Clarendon Hotel, where he always had a room. His legal residence was at 97 Berry Street, where his mother and several other relatives lived. He permitted nothing to interfere with his regular visits to his mother. Senator McCarren was seated in the Clarendon Hotel corridor, talking with friends, October 13, 1909, when he complained of sharp pain in the abdomen. His attack was diagnosed as acute appendicitis. An operation disclosed even more serious conditions. Death followed on Saturday, October 23d, in St. Catherine's Hospital.

**William J. Gaynor** was born in 1849 and brought up on a farm near Oriskany, Oneida County, New York. He was of mixed Irish and English stock. The village of Whitestone, his birthplace, was in the district popularly called Skeeterboro. His mother was born in the adjoining town of Nancy of one of the pioneer families of the Mohawk Valley. His father was noted as an educator, and he was one of the few who voted for James Gillespie Birney, the first abolitionist candidate for President.

Mr. Gaynor had the usual life of a farmer's boy of the period in a poor country. He worked in the woods and fields, did chores, and attended the neighborhood school each winter for a few weeks. Afterwards he went to the village school and seminary, and he taught school in Boston, and in the end achieved a good education. He was a rare mathematician and delighted in the solution of intricate problems. He was about twenty-four when he settled in Brooklyn in 1875. His first work was for a newspaper; but he had studied law and soon opened an office. He continued to study and was careful in his practice. He settled cases whenever he could, and he had the reputation of doing a great deal for nothing. When he went into court, however, he was a formidable antagonist and his practice became large and lucrative.

At an early day he began to take an interest in public affairs, but as a non-partisan. His home was in Flatbush, a small town lying outside of Brooklyn at the time, with 10,000 population. Two bosses, equally bad, controlled its affairs. Waste, peculation, and favoritism existed. Of the forty saloons only one was licensed. A colony of road houses flourished on the patronage of drivers to Coney Island and the beaches. Gaynor was young and not talkative, but he had tried several cases at the Town Hall with marked ability. One day he was heard to say that the government of the town was a disgrace and the people should not suffer it. Everybody familiar with the bosses, their power and methods, smiled cynically. Whichever happened to be in power the result was the same. The cynics said they worked together on an understanding. Soon after Mr. Gaynor

sent a printed circular to all voters inviting them to a public meeting in the Town Hall to nominate candidates for the approaching election. The hall was packed. The two bosses were in the throng and the chairman was one of their henchmen.

When a motion was made naming candidates, Gaynor offered a substitute resolution naming a new set of men throughout. The chairman refused to put it to a vote. Gaynor got up on a chair in full view and reviewed the local situation in the tersest language. He demanded that the chairman put the substitute motion, and told him it was an easy matter to pitch him out of the window and appoint another in his place. At this the whole meeting broke out in cheers. The chairman lost his nerve and called for a vote on the substitute resolution. It was carried overwhelmingly. The bosses combined on a ticket, but were beaten three to one at the polls. Gaynor refused to run for the Legislature; he said he wanted no office. He declared in his speech, as he did often in after years, that "Ours is a government of laws and not of men." And he read the famous passage in the Massachusetts Bill of Rights.

When the Flatbush government was organized, Mr. Gaynor became police commissioner. He went to work quietly, systematically and effectively. Everything was done in a strictly lawful manner. No lawless raids by the police were made; but in a few months the colony of evil places was tenantless, and every hotel and saloon had a license. In a year Mr. Gaynor resigned his office. Flatbush had been "cleaned up." His work was done. The police were compelled to respect the law, and not do as they liked. In after years as Mayor, he tried to teach the same lesson to the 10,000 policemen of New York City, and forbade every act of unlawful violence. He taught them and the community that "the way to enforce the law is the way prescribed by the law itself." When a conspicuous citizen once said to him that that way would not detect and punish crime he replied dryly: "Then don't."

Mr. Gaynor moved into Brooklyn soon after; but the politicians distrusted him. He went his way and did not court their favor.

In 1889, the town of New Lots was annexed to Brooklyn. It had received its water supply from a small concern called the Long Island Water Company. It was charged that Boss Hugh McLaughlin and other Democratic politicians had bought up the water company for \$185,000 and sought to sell it to the city for \$1,500,000. Mayor Alfred C. Chapin, and the other officials, were persuaded to sign a contract binding the city to buy the company on terms which would have left the politicians a profit of \$1,300,000.

Mr. Gaynor began by denouncing the transaction. He secured the aid of William Zeigler, a taxpayer, willing to permit the use of his name in a motion for an injunction to prevent the sale. Mr. Gaynor gave all the facts, showing the transaction to be as he said, "a spoliation of the funds of the city." The court proceedings aroused the highest interest among the people. Gaynor won in every stage of the proceedings in all the courts. It was a year of hard work with all the powerful financial and political interests against him. At first his suit evoked laughter, but that only made him work more grimly, harder and harder.

The case was tried before Justice Willard Bartlett, and Mr. Gaynor's argument was considered one of the best ever heard in the Supreme Court. Throughout he contended single handed against such an array of talent as Corporation Counsel Almet F. Jenks, Thomas E. Pearsall, and William C. DeWitt, of Rochester, just off the Court of Appeals bench. His next step was to institute proceedings to compel the city to collect all back taxes from the elevated railroads, amounting



to millions. The ring had large holdings in them, given in return for influence, and protected them. He took similar steps to expose the so-called Columbian parade frauds and prevent the payment of dishonest claims. His activity was marvellous. It was the common saying that he heard every pin fall in the city, and that nothing escaped his attention.

When the next Mayoralty election approached in Brooklyn, Mr. Gaynor was the outstanding choice of the people for the nomination. The demand was so pronounced the politicians sneered and said: "That is it; that is what he has been after all along; we shall now see him as a self-seeker." He was nominated at a great meeting in the Academy of Music, but he would not run. He remarked that no one ever would be able to say that his public services had been given with a view to getting office. That trait, at times even petulant, manifested itself at other periods in his career when he was asked to run for Mayor or Governor. He wrote declining again when he was nominated for Justice of the Supreme Court, but leading citizens induced him to run to help the city ticket, the city being in the judicial district. The normal majority of the opposition had been about 30,000 in the district and the ring controlled the city by about 20,000 on the record of past elections. Mr. Gaynor carried the district by more than 30,000 majority; Charles A. Schieren was elected Mayor, and the McLaughlin ring suffered the severest defeat it ever had.

The campaign was the undoing of John Y. McKane (q.v.), political boss of Gravesend. The imprisonment of McKane taught a lesson to all corrupt politicians in the country, and had a wholesome effect which remains today. Gaynor was the citizen who attacked McKane, gathered the evidence against him, and caused him to be brought to trial and adjudged guilty. In the overthrow of McKane it was said he spent \$15,000 of his own money.

As a judge Mr. Gaynor by untiring industry set a new pace. He tried a number of cases each year beyond anything known. His activity was noted in the report of the legislative committee on the law's delays. His opinions on the rights of the individual, on immunity from unlawful arrest and police interference, and on libel and other kindred subjects became read and known throughout the country. Indeed, some of them are legal classics. It was not thought Judge Gaynor would remain long on the bench.

In 1894, the Democratic nomination for Governor was offered Mr. Gaynor. His candidacy caused a stormy controversy which was quelled only when he declined the nomination from the convention as well as that of a Judgeship in the Court of Appeals. He refused to run for Mayor of Brooklyn in 1895, because the Democrats were disunited. In 1903, he was put forward for Mayor of New York by the Brooklyn Democratic delegates. Odell and Hearst offered him the fusion nomination for that office on his return from a European trip in 1905. Again he declined. He always said that the nomination was the duty of a convention and that the two leaders had no right to make such an offer.

In 1906, a movement was started to nominate Judge Gaynor for Governor; but Hearst and Murphy defeated it. Friends urged Judge Gaynor to come out for Hughes; but the Judge insisted he would support the Democratic ticket and put the stamp of his approval on its principles.

At the end of his judicial term he did not seek renomination, or mention the subject. However, all the parties renominated him without exception and he served four years of his new term. His last four years on the bench were occupied as a member of the Appellate Division of the Supreme Court.

Just before starting for Europe on his annual vacation in 1909, he took up



FLATBUSH AVENUE AT CHURCH AVENUE, SHOWING THE OLD DUTCH REFORMED CHURCH





the cudgels in behalf of a youth named Duffy who was arrested frequently by the police on petty charges until the boy's father went to Judge Gaynor and complained. Police Commissioner Bingham was forced out of office in the controversy which followed, although Mayor George B. McClellan yielded reluctantly to circumstances in making the dismissal.

While in Europe he was the object of public attention at home more than ever. After his return he refused to be considered a candidate; but on Labor Day he gave out a letter he had written in reply to another sent him by nine prominent Brooklyn men headed by Abraham Abraham. He said that if chosen a candidate he would accept the nomination. He was informed that if he would not accept the Democratic nomination he could have that of the Republicans and other fusion elements against Tammany. He was nominated by the Democratic party. The Republicans nominated Bannard. Mr. Gaynor was elected by 73,000 majority, although all his associates on the Tammany ticket were defeated.

Judge Gaynor was elected primarily because of his stand on the subway issue. It was not settled in the end just as he would have wished, for he was not in favor of the entrance of the B. R. T. into Broadway. Nor was he wholly in favor of the dual system laid out by the Public Service Commission. There can be no doubt, however, that he brought about many modifications by his attitude and his counsel in conference. In the Board of Estimate he indorsed the work of the Board of Estimate Committee and the Public Service Commission, acting as a conference body. From the beginning he supported a comprehensive subway system for all the boroughs.

He made no promises or alliances to win the office. He chose men to head the twenty-eight departments on his own judgment. His knowledge and insight regarding the workings of the city government were an object lesson to others and amazing to everybody. He cut off millions of expense. He abolished boards and bureaus every predecessor had considered legal fixtures. He made the government of the first American city a pattern and an object lesson for the country. He drew the eyes of Europe upon his achievements, and he was discussed abroad almost as much as he was at home. The departments attained high efficiency; the police especially. The men were kept within the law and required to do their duty. The Mayor caused all appointments and promotions to be made in numerical order from a competitive list, and with this no money or influence was permitted to interfere. No one could make charges of fraud, ring rule or favoritism in the government of the city. He made enemies, but his friends loved him the more because of the enemies he made.

The philosophical turn of the Mayor's mind gave him a road to the hearts of all his countrymen. In the wider field of Chief Magistrate of the city it attracted widespread attention, for his words at dinners and on every public occasion were quoted widely. Always he had something witty and pertinent to say. He wrote letters innumerable in the same direct, frank, open way and couched in the purest English. When a preacher wrote asking for a license to preach to the Jews in the hope of converting them he replied:

Do you not think that the Jews have a good religion? Have not the Christians appropriated the entire Jewish sacred scriptures? Was not the New Testament written entirely by Jews? Was not Jesus also born of the Jewish race, if I may speak of it with due reverence? Did not we Christians get much of the most of what we have from the Jews? Why should anyone work so hard to proselyte the Jew? His pure belief in the one true, living God, comes down to us from even the twilight of fable, and is the one great unbroken lineage and tradition of the world.

In a book review he wrote:



The Western world derives the very warp and woof of its laws and systems of government from Rome. But when we turn to the Jews we cannot fail to perceive that our foundations not only in laws, manners and usages, but also in religion are set deep in their legislation and literature. This is particularly true of the English-speaking peoples. The Jews have brought down to us from that border line where fable hardly ceases and history hardly begins our knowledge of the one true and ever-living God, which is the sum and substance of our religion.

Mayor Gaynor wrote of his habit of taking long walks in the "Independent" of June 1, 1911:

I do not pretend to be anything more than an ordinary truder. During the sixteen years that I was a justice of the Supreme Court I made it a rule to walk from five to seven miles a day. When I became Mayor I simply continued my walking. I walk from my house to the City Hall in the morning and back in the evening. That gives me seven miles a day. But I am no walker nor am I an athlete. I walk for health and also for the joy of walking.

I have for years done my principal work while walking. As a judge I framed my decisions and opinions in my mind while walking. I can think best while walking and then I can come in and sit down and write off-hand the whole subject.

The Mayor ever took a deep interest in national politics. His speech on the tariff in the first Cleveland campaign was read widely. For years he declared favoritism in freight rates the grossest wrong of the age.

In August, 1910, a discharged city employe attempted to kill Mayor Gaynor. He went up behind the Mayor on the deck of an ocean steamship where Mr. Gaynor stood talking with friends who had called to see him off to Europe. The group also included Commissioners Thompson, Lederle, Edwards, Corporation Counsel Watson, his secretary, Robert Adamson. Mr. Montt, President of Chili, and Mrs. Montt just had passed by and he had spoken a few words to them. Adamson remarked that the ship was dressed in flags in the Mayor's honor. Just then the man, placing a pistol close to the back of the Mayor's head, fired. The bullet entered back of the right ear, and changing its course two or three times, passed through his throat. It never was extracted, nor did the powder marks ever disappear. The attack disclosed a new phase of Mayor Gaynor's character, unusual physical as well as mental hardihood, and courage. The concussions stunned him for a moment, but he rose to his feet and was calm and collected though bleeding from mouth and nose. He did not show the slightest fear of death, although all present thought him dying.

James G. Gallagher, a crazed city employe, who had been discharged, fired the bullet. Mayor Gaynor was taken to St. Mary's Hospital, Hoboken. On August 19 he was pronounced out of danger and on August 29 he left the hospital and went to his country home at St. James, L. I. In October he was at his office. The piece of bullet which had lodged in his palate seemed to cause him constant annoyance. His constitution was shattered by the shock and there was a steady decline of all his vital powers until the end.

From time to time after the shooting the Mayor withdrew for brief periods to be under the care of physicians. The public believed the trouble was with his throat, but medical men looked for his collapse at any time. Nobody suspected heart trouble. Often he had attacks of coughing and his articulation when he spoke in public was no longer distinct. He also became irritable over trifling matters. He was annoyed by tobacco smoke and asked smokers who came near him to desist.

The Mayor took his daily walks and strove to create the impression that his health was mending. He accepted many dinner engagements to speak and appeared in public rather more often than had been his wont.

As the preliminary campaign of 1913 approached, and nominations for

Mayor were discussed, the question was raised at the beginning as to Mayor Gaynor's position. It was apparent that he was a candidate for renomination. After the fusion movement took shape it seemed that Tammany could do no less than place him at the head of the ticket. It was just as apparent that Charles F. Murphy had no such intention. Indeed, the Mayor himself remarked that "no one loved him," in discussing the nomination with a friend.

Early in the campaign an organization was formed to put him in nomination by petition. It was actively at work as soon as it became apparent that neither the fusionists nor Tammany would honor him. The movement was pushed with vigor until news was received of his death.

Mayor Gaynor died at sea September 10, 1913, aboard the steamship "Baltic," of the White Star line, which was taking him to Europe. Rufus W. Gaynor, his son, accompanied his father on what was to have been a brief vacation. He sent a wireless message to Robert Adamson, the Mayor's secretary, almost immediately; but owing to the limited wireless range of the Baltic and the fact that other vessels failed to pick the message from the air, the news did not reach New York until the following morning. The station at Fastnet on the Irish coast caught the first flash when the "Baltic" was two hundred and fifty miles west of the station and about three hundred miles from Queenstown. The message read: "Father died Wednesday at one o'clock. Death due to heart failure. Notify mother. R. W. Gaynor." The city was appalled.

Colonel Ardolph L. Kline, of Brooklyn, assumed the office of Mayor and almost immediately began arrangements for a public funeral. He issued a proclamation, ordered all the flags on municipal buildings at half mast, and sent a message of condolence to Mrs. Gaynor at St. James, Long Island. Edward M. Grout, formerly controller and at one time a law partner of Mr. Gaynor, hastened thither, as did Charles H. Hyde, formerly City Chamberlain, who also had been a law partner of the Mayor.

When the "Baltic" arrived in Liverpool the body of Mayor Gaynor was met at the wharf by the Lord Mayor and escorted to the Town Hall where it lay in state until the sailing of the "Lusitania" for New York a day later. The Lord Mayor's carriage preceded the hearse. Mounted police acted as escort and picked men guarded the coffin while it remained in the Town Hall, resting on a great catafalque brought from Westminster Abbey. A death mask was taken of the features and the body was embalmed.

The clergy of Liverpool, headed by Bishop Francis James Chavasse held a religious service at seven o'clock the next morning. In the dim light of candles and in the thick fog which enshrouded the hallway, the Rev. Theodore A. Howard, vicar of St. Matthews, conducted the impressive rites of the Church of England over the body. The only attendants were Rufus L. Gaynor, the nurse, Horace L. Washington, American consul in Liverpool, and the secretary of the Lord Mayor.

The hearse, drawn by four horses, passed through the half-deserted streets to the landing stage where the coffin was placed in a ship's tender and draped with the American flag. The coffin was hoisted aboard the "Lusitania" lying in mid-stream. It was placed in a specially prepared chapel under a guard of honor consisting of eight uniformed quartermasters.

Mayor Gaynor's body was landed near the Battery on Friday, September 19. An escort of mounted police and a committee of city officials followed the hearse to the Gaynor home at 20 Eighth Avenue, Brooklyn. Simple services were held there the following morning by the Rev. Frank W. Page, formerly rector of St. John's Episcopal Church, Brooklyn, where the Gaynor family worshipped.



The body was removed to the City Hall where it lay in state in the rotunda all day Sunday, September 29. At 10:15 o'clock Saturday it was borne down Broadway to Trinity Church, escorted by a regiment of police, a squadron of mounted patrolmen, representatives of the National Guard of the State and about 20,000 citizens from many organizations.

The public funeral service began in Old Trinity at eleven o'clock, with Bishop Greer officiating. After the service at noon the cortege started for Greenwood cemetery. The line of march was through Broadway to Park Row and across Brooklyn Bridge to Liberty Street, to Clinton Street, to Montague Street, to Borough Hall. There the procession halted, and the unmounted escort dropped out. It passed the Gaynor home on its way through the streets to Greenwood.

William Howard Taft, who laid down the Presidency of the United States that year, headed the honorary pall bearers.

The honorary pall bearers were William Howard Taft, Robert Adamson, secretary to the Mayor; Police Commissioner Rhinelander Waldo, Jacob H. Schiff, Herman Ridder, James Creelman, Mayor Ardolph L. Kline, Dock Commissioner R. A. C. Smith, Corporation Counsel A. R. Watson, Justice Martin J. Keogh, John D. Crimmins, and Edward M. Grout.

Behind them followed the Board of Estimate and Apportionment, as follows: William A. Prendergast, George McAneny, Lewis H. Pounds, Cyril C. Miller, Maurice E. Connolly, and George Cromwell. A committee of the Board of Aldermen followed, headed by their chairman, J. A. Bolles. The heads of departments came next, headed by Big Bill Edwards street cleaning commissioner. After them were the members of the judiciary, justices of the Appellate Division, First Department; justices of the Appellate Division, Second Department. The justices of the Supreme Court, twenty-six in number, followed. The judges of the inferior courts were next, ending with the magistrates from Brooklyn. After them were the public service commission and the representatives of the army and navy, led by Major General Barry, commanding the Department of the East. This group included Rear Admiral Winslow and Captain Albert Gleaves, commandant of the navy yard. The commanding officers of the National Guard with their staffs made the most brilliant display in the entire line. Consular representatives, a representative of the Lord Mayor of Liverpool and mayors from many cities in New York state had a place behind the glittering militiamen. Most of these persons rode in carriages.

Fully 20,000 persons followed the body on foot. More than 50,000 gathered to pay their last respects at the Borough Hall in Brooklyn.

Charles F. Murphy was the last of the Big Four leaders of Tammany Hall and was considered by many the greatest head the organization ever had. In the last fifty-two years Tweed, Kelly, Croker and Murphy have guided the destinies of Tammany and it remained for Murphy to put the organization in a position where it was respectfully recognized in national affairs and for the first time in history was prepared to offer the nation a candidate for the presidency in the person of Governor Alfred E. Smith.

Like Tweed, Kelly and Croker, Murphy rose to leadership from the bottom. Born in poverty, he worked his way up by the exercise of natural talents in politics, perseverance, truthfulness, adherence to obligations, knowledge of human nature and deeply religious sentiments.

Charles Francis Murphy was the second son of a family of eight children.





THE OLD SWIMMING HOLE—BROOKLYN STREET VERSION





He enrolled as a pupil in a lower east side public school at the age of six. His name disappeared from the public rolls when he was fourteen. In those eight years he absorbed all the education school teachers could give him. He could read and write and figure simple sums.

He had no bent for reading, but was a good mixer as a boy and young man and studied human nature from contact with it. From his earliest boyhood he was a first class ball player, and in his teens he divided his attention outside of working hours between playing ball and playing politics.

Before he was old enough to vote he organized the Sylvan club, a social organization with the membership in the vicinity of Nineteenth Street and First Avenue. This was the foundation upon which he afterward built up the Anawanda club, the Tammany district organization of which he was leader.

When Murphy was a boy the East River front along what is now the Gas House district was lined with shipyards. In one of these young Murphy, who was an extraordinarily strong and well balanced lad, obtained his first employment. It was hard labor with wood and iron, and under it he gained in strength and bulk. He was able to handle himself in the disputes in which he became engaged and had the reputation of being hard to arouse to action but dangerous in action.

The horse cars running across town offered attractions in those days to young men of the east and west sides. There were no cash registers, and the conductor and driver considered themselves partners of the owners rather than mere paid employes. For three or four years young Murphy drove a horse car on Twenty-third Street, which was a main artery of crosstown traffic. He contributed to the support of his younger brothers and sisters and put money in the bank.

The saloon was an important factor in the social life of the old city of New York forty years ago. The saloonkeeper was a man of standing in his neighborhood. No stigma attached to the liquor business in the estimation of the people of the tenements among whom Charles F. Murphy was reared. It was among those people, in East Nineteenth Street, near Avenue A, that he set up in the business of selling liquor and beer, in 1879, when he was twenty-one years old.

The young business man had never been a drinker and he did not change his personal habits when he undertook a business of his own. He seldom took a drink with a customer, he never allowed a woman to enter a place he conducted, he insisted upon decorous conduct and his standards gained for him respect and prosperity. It was not long before he was able to open another saloon at Nineteenth Street and First Avenue, which became his headquarters until he had gained the leadership of Tammany Hall, when he sold out all his liquor interests.

His most pretentious enterprise in the saloon business was at Twenty-third Street and First Avenue, a big ornate establishment, which he later turned over to his brother John, who became a member of the Board of Aldermen. By strict attention to business, frugality and natural merchandising shrewdness, Charles F. Murphy had established himself in the late eighties and early nineties as the most influential liquor dealer east of Third Avenue.

Even after he had entered the saloon business young Murphy was an ardent follower of baseball. He belonged to a semi-professional nine called the Sylvians, which played on Sundays in Jones' Wood, and ranked as probably the best pitcher in New York outside the professional ranks. Also he had not neglected politics.

At the age of twenty-two he was an election district captain. As his business grew his political influence spread, and within ten years he was the deputy leader of the assembly district. He took a long step toward the high position he after-



ward attained by a stroke of typical political acumen during the great blizzard of 1888.

Distress was acute following that extraordinary catastrophe. The Tammany organization of the district, under the active leadership of Charles F. Murphy, who contributed the leading and largest donation, raised \$4,000 for the relief of the suffering.

Charles F. Murphy personally took \$1,400 of this fund to Dr. George Rainsford, pastor of St. George's Episcopal church in Stuyvesant Square, which J. P. Morgan attended. The unexpected contribution enabled Dr. Rainsford to do much more in relieving distress than he had anticipated with the funds at his command. On the succeeding Sunday Dr. Rainsford told of the occurrence from the pulpit and declared that if Tammany had more leaders like Charles F. Murphy it would be an admirable organization.

The incident drew a lot of attention to the East Side leader, then thirty years old. He took over the actual leadership, and when the greater city was consolidated his district club was the most efficient in the Tammany organization. Richard Croker had high regard for Murphy and named him Dock Commissioner in the Van Wyck administration.

Under the leadership of Croker and the administration of Van Wyck, the Tammany organization fell into public disrepute almost as acute as at any time in its history.

Croker, who had gone into racing and practically taken up his residence in England, relinquished the leadership but aspired to be the power behind the throne. The district leaders were at each other's throats. Croker, reaching toward an appearance of respectability, forced the appointment of Lewis Nixon, the ship builder, as chairman of the Executive Committee, which carries the leadership of Tammany Hall.

Mr. Nixon, by training and temperament, was unfitted for the place and unhappy in it. He lasted only from January 14 to May 17. Then the Executive Committee, pulled this way and that by aspiring forces, got together on a compromise proposition and placed control of the organization in the hands of what later became known as the Triumvirate, which was composed of Daniel F. McMahon, a west side leader and a Croker product; Louis F. Haffen of the Bronx, and Charles F. Murphy.

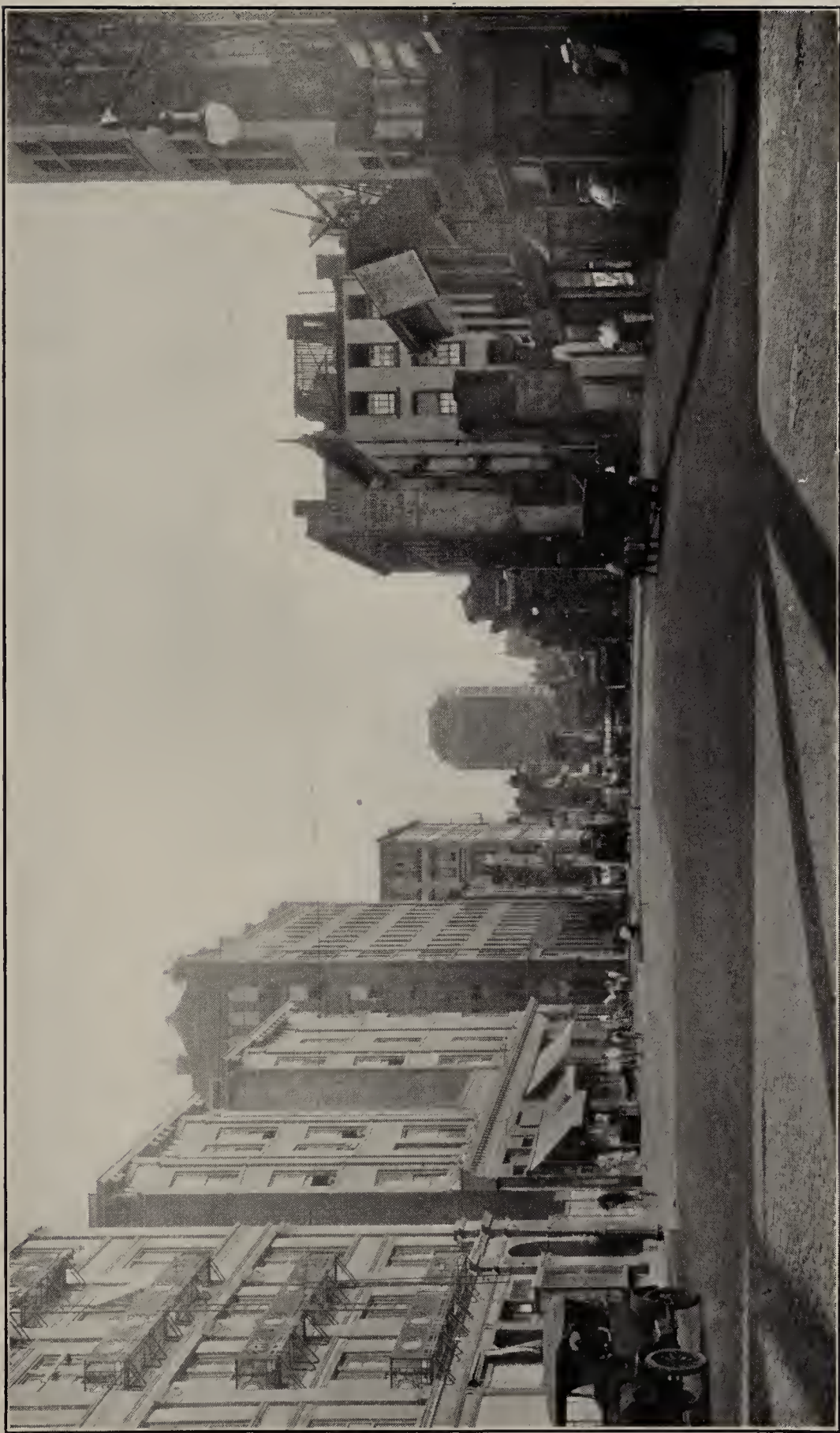
William S. Devery, having a short time before retired from the police department and broken into politics, speedily made the Triumvirate ridiculous by declaring that "Charlie Murphy is a good sport, but Haffen is a joke and Dan McMahon is a two-spot." This interview, published in the *Evening World*, gave the city a laugh and it was then only a question of the power of one of the Triumvirate to oust the other two.

McMahon and Haffen fell. On September 19, 1902, the Executive Committee by a vote of 26 to 9 adopted the following resolution:

"Whereas, the experiment of a committee of three having proved the desirability of undivided responsibility and leadership,

"Resolved, that the powers and duties heretofore exercised and performed by the committee of three be hereafter exercised and performed by Charles F. Murphy."

Since John Kelly took hold of Tammany there had not been a time when the organization was at such a low ebb in public estimation as well as in integral strength. Mr. Murphy took up a job that was often precarious in the next few



LIBERTY STREET, BROOKLYN, CHAMBER OF COMMERCE BUILDING IN BACKGROUND





years, but his innate qualities of leadership, his ability to bring conflicting elements together in satisfactory compromise and his almost unerring instinct of adherence to the sentiment of the rank and file of the organization gradually strengthened his hold.

The Croker influence was still strong. Led by John F. Carroll, who had opposed the selection of Mr. Murphy, the "Croker Old Guard" laid every trap known to political politics before the feet of the new leader. Gradually he eliminated the Carroll influence, drew the leadership of Manhattan together, extended his influence into Brooklyn and Queens and established a record that no leader of a powerful political machine has ever equaled.

In the one hundred and thirty-five years of Tammany's history no leader ever held power so long. During his twenty-two years of control Mr. Murphy directed the election of three governors—John A. Dix, William Sulzer and Alfred E. Smith—won five mayoralty elections, two with Hylan, two with McClellan and one with Gaynor, and forced the election of one United States Senator, James A. O'Gorman. At present (1924) the Tammany organization is in absolute control of the city government, every district leader who aspired for it is in a position at the head of a department or bureau, absolute harmony prevails in the district organizations, and for the first time, as evidenced at the convention in Albany which endorsed Governor Smith for the presidential nomination, the New York City and upstate Democratic machines are presenting a solid front.

None of Mr. Murphy's enemies and only those close to him among his friends gave him credit for an extraordinarily acute political foresight. Against the advice of his counselors he favored the primary and the Massachusetts ballot, figuring that these systems would add to, rather than detract from, the power of the organization.

When the movement for woman suffrage grew strong enough to warrant recognition Mr. Murphy foresaw that it would eventually triumph and he helped the cause along. By his direction the Tammany forces in the legislature took the lead in advocating the adoption of the amendment to the Constitution giving women the vote.

When women got the vote Mr. Murphy was the first leader of importance in the United States to accord them recognition in the organization. By his direction women were given associate places on the executive committees of nearly every district in the city. Long before the city Republican organization woke up to the change in conditions, Mr. Murphy's organization had sent a woman to the assembly. Tammany nominated in 1922 and elected as registrar Miss Annie Matthews, whose salary, \$12,000 a year, made her the highest paid woman officeholder in the United States. Tammany was the first organization of importance to send a woman delegate at large to a national convention—Miss Elizabeth Marbury, who served in San Francisco in 1920.

At this point it is opportune to tell about how William Sulzer came to be nominated. He was not the choice of Charles F. Murphy. The Tammany leader not only distrusted him but entertained for him a feeling approaching contempt.

Sulzer, by dint of repeated personal appeal to the upstate voters and leaders and by persistent work in certain districts of the city, had built up an underground following which was first revealed when the Democrats met in convention in September, 1912. To Murphy's astonishment, Sulzer, who had in some way enlisted the aid of John B. Stanchfield, presented proof that he controlled close to a majority of the delegates and was in position to raise serious trouble in a presidential election year.



"Let the convention decide," said the Tammany leader. "If they want Sulzer give him to them, but they will be sorry."

They wanted Sulzer and got him. Before long Mr. Murphy felt, from reports he had received, that it would be advisable to impeach the Governor. He did it reluctantly, realizing it would cost the next mayoralty election.

Going back to Mr. Murphy's early days of leadership we find him responsible for the present state of the Tammany organization—a compact machine covering the city from the Westchester line to Tottenville and from the North River to the Nassau county border. As soon as he assumed the reins of leadership Mr. Murphy set about the accomplishment of an object he had determined upon—the absorption of the Queens and Brooklyn Democratic organizations.

Crocker had tried to gain a foothold in Brooklyn and failed. Hugh McLaughlin and Senator Patrick H. McCarren, his lieutenants, were in control of an organization as efficient as Tammany and as loyal to its leadership. The Crocker efforts had given rise to the declaration, "The Tiger shall not cross the bridge," and it looked as though the way was barred when Mr. Murphy dictated the nomination of George B. McClellan in 1903 and, in spite of the opposition of McLaughlin and the Brooklyn organization, elected him by 68,000 plurality.

It was in this election that Mr. Murphy first displayed unusual qualities of leadership. The Republicans and Fusionists had joined in nominating Seth Low to oppose Mr. McClellan and had placed on their ticket Edward M. Grout, president of the Board of Aldermen, Democrats.

The Tammany leader daringly placed both Grout and Fornes on the ticket with McClellan, virtually kidnapping them from their unaccustomed Fusion and Republican environment. This coup caused the collapse of the fusion movement.

Senator McCarren succeeded McLaughlin in control of the Brooklyn Democracy and steadily fought the encroachments of Tammany. It was not until 1909 when Mr. Murphy went across the bridge and took William J. Gaynor from the Supreme Court to make him the candidate of Tammany Hall that Brooklyn opposition gave way. John H. McCooey became leader of Kings County and came into Tammany with all his cohorts. In the meantime Maurice Connolly and his associates in the Queens leadership had allied themselves with Fourteenth Street. Richmond County had also been absorbed. Memories of the old fight between Mr. Murphy and Senator McCarren were aroused in the Albany convention when former Congressman John Fitzgerald of Brooklyn, who was even more bitter than McCarren in opposition to Tammany, read from the stage the resolutions amounting to the platform of the gathering.

Mr. Murphy remained unmarried until he was forty-four years old. In June, 1902, when he felt that he was on the way to the position of power at the head of Tammany, which he achieved three months later, he married Mrs. Margaret Graham, a charming widow of his own age, who had grown up with him in the old Gas House district. It was rumored at the time of the wedding that Mr. Murphy might have married this same lady twenty years before when she was still a spinster, but that his bashfulness restrained him from popping the question and a more attentive suitor won the prize.

The couple had no children but Mr. Murphy adopted Mrs. Graham's daughter, who was married in 1924. Mr. Murphy also reared and educated a son of his brother, John.

Throughout his career as leader of Tammany Hall Mr. Murphy devoted much of his time to the training in politics of young men of promise. Under his tutelage Tammany Hall developed such high types of politicians and officeholders

as Governor Smith, Surrogate Foley, Supreme Court Justice Robert F. Wagner, William Harmon Black, Edward J. McGoldrick, Salvatore A. Cotillo, Charles D. Donohue, Edward J. Glennon and Jeremiah T. Mahoney.

Loyalty was his outstanding principle. This is shown by the fact that under his leadership the membership of the executive committee was changed only by deaths or the adoption of the rule of dividing district leaderships. The old timers who stood by him in his fight with the Carroll faction were always in his favor.

Mr. Murphy maintained, besides his home in Stuyvesant Square, a country place at East Hampton, formerly Good Ground, Long Island. He spent most of his summers there except in campaign years, and there he received his intimates in the organization and in state and national politics. His only hobbies were golf and politics. He seldom attended the theatre and preferred the company of men to the company of books.

Mr. Murphy's wealth was often a topic of discussion among his friends. He had business interests of importance but was secretive about his private affairs. Those closest to him believed it will be found that he died possessed of only a moderate fortune. He made many men rich by giving them advantage of his knowledge of forthcoming political developments which would react on real estate values by reason of public improvements. Whether he profited to any extent by his foreknowledge probably never will be known. Law suits in which he figured over money matters disclosed that he was not a very astute business man.

"I guess," he told a friend not long ago, "I am one of the few supposedly wise men who were stung in a business mix-up by both sides—those who were with me and those who were against me."

Mr. Murphy was a devout Catholic. In his private life he practiced all the old-time virtues. He scrutinized the morals of men seeking political advantage, and many a candidate who was turned down did not know it was because of some scandal affecting him, which he had forgotten or deemed of little importance.

From the time Charles F. Murphy took the Tammany leadership anti-Tammany forces in New York sounded the slogan "Murphy Must Go." Murphy has gone—to his reward, whatever that may be.—(By Martin Green in the *Evening World*.)

**Edward M. Grout, First Borough President**—Edward M. Grout had been a leading lawyer in Brooklyn for years before he went into the borough president's office in 1898. He had been interested in reform movements, had run for mayor of the city of Brooklyn in 1895, reducing the adverse majority of 1893 from 33,000 to 2,000. He was one of the active advocates of the consolidation of New York, Brooklyn and the adjacent territories, which now comprise the city of Greater New York. He was elected the first borough president of Brooklyn after consolidation. As such he had little more power than an office boy. In those days the board of public improvements was the dominant force in the city government. It was made up of the borough presidents and the heads of the departments appointed by the mayor. The borough presidents made no appointments and could do nothing without the approval of the board of public improvements.

Handicapped by lack of power, Mr. Grout nevertheless made himself felt in the dominant board. He was the first to attack the proposed Ramapo water contract, and he fought it until it was beaten. He obtained an injunction from Justice Smith of the Supreme Court at his own expense, and



thus prevented the city authorities from flying in the face of public opinion and signing the contract. He also in like manner attacked successfully in court the specifications for asphalt paving which were so framed as to favor the contractors.

As borough president his most noteworthy public service was the lead he took in the movement for borough home rule, and for giving the borough presidents more power. It was due largely to that fight that the borough presidents were made important factors in the government of the city.

When the charter revision commission was appointed, Mr. Grout appeared before it and submitted to it a brief embodying his suggestions for giving the borough presidents adequate power. Among the changes he suggested were these:

Giving the borough presidents seats in the Board of Estimate and Apportionment.

Providing for facilitating the opening of streets by authorizing the establishment of a topographical bureau in each borough, under borough control.

The abolition of the board of public improvements, which had proved itself a stumbling block in city government, and transferring its powers to the board of estimate and apportionment.

Increasing the influence of the local boards of public improvements by clothing them with the power of authorizing assessable improvements with the approval of the board of estimate and apportionment.

Giving the borough president the right to appoint certain administrative officials in the boroughs.

Every one of these suggestions was adopted by the charter revision commission.

At the end of his term as borough president he was elected city controller.

**J. Edward Swanstrom, Second Borough President (1902-1904)**, was nominated by the Brooklyn Citizens' Union in 1901 and the fusion forces, and was elected by a large majority. Seth Low had been nominated for mayor by the fusionists, and it was felt that a man of unusual qualifications should head the Borough ticket. After several names had been proposed, Timothy L. Woodruff suggested Mr. Swanstrom as a compromise candidate, and he proved to be acceptable to the Republicans, the Single Taxers, Citizens' Union and the Michael J. Coffey organization. When Mayor Low ran a second time, Mr. Swanstrom had decided that he could not give two more years to the service of the city and intended to resign. It was only through the personal appeal of President Roosevelt that he decided to waive his personal inclinations and run for the office again.

Mr. Swanstrom was born in Brooklyn on July 26, 1853. His father was the Rev. J. P. Swanstrom, who came from Sweden in 1840 with John Ericsson, the designer of the "Monitor." Mr. Swanstrom received his early education in the public schools and attended the University of the City of New York. He was graduated from its law school in 1878, three years after he had entered the law offices of Miller, Peet & Opdyke. He received the highest honors obtainable at graduation. He began a private practice. The reports of the state bar attest the extent and the importance of the cases committed to his care.

During the preceding four years, the local administration had been one in name only, for the framers of the charter inadvertently had deprived it of





WALLABOUT MARKET SCENE





all real power and authority. All the departments now under the jurisdiction of the Borough were administered from Manhattan. Mr. Grout found so little to do that at one time he threatened to resign.

Brooklyn citizens who had grievances, or who were interested in local improvements, were obliged to see the heads of departments in Manhattan. They found that many of those officials scarcely were aware of the existence of the Borough of Brooklyn. To them, Manhattan and the Bronx represented the City of New York—all else was regarded as rural territory of little consequence.

This led to a general demand for a change in the law, looking to Borough autonomy. In compliance with this, the City Charter was amended, the Legislature set up a new government for each of the boroughs, and placed its machinery under control of the borough president.

Mr. Swanstrom undertook to install and perfect an entire system of city government for which no precedents existed. To do this and to bring about improvements of permanent value to the borough in the short space of two years was the task before him. His method was to create a business office in the City Hall for the conduct of borough affairs, and to appoint business men to posts of executive responsibility. His keen judgment of men in choosing his assistants was proved by the subsequent careers of his appointees. William C. Redfield, Commissioner of Public Works, was a Democrat, elected to Congress in 1910 in a strongly Republican District, and Secretary of Commerce under President Wilson. William M. Calder, Superintendent of Public Buildings, was the only Republican elected to Congress from Brooklyn in 1910. He afterwards was elected United States Senator, serving until 1923. Otto Kempner, Deputy Commissioner of Public Works, was appointed a City Magistrate by Mayor Gaynor. John Thatcher, Superintendent of Sewers, became Superintendent of Buildings under President Steers. Frank J. Helmle, Superintendent of Public Buildings, became one of the foremost architects of the City of New York.

Nelson P. Lewis, chief of engineers in the Highway Department, became Chief Engineer of the Board of Estimate at his suggestion. Lewis's successor in the Highway Department was appointed to reorganize the Department of Engineering in Manhattan, and became its chief engineer. All of them were chosen for merit and efficiency without regard to politics.

By the revised charter, the Borough President had two out of sixteen votes in the Board of Estimate and Apportionment, and by a skilful use of his power was able to enforce improvements for Brooklyn. He had exclusive charge of the administrative departments of the Borough, and could do what even the mayor could not do—that is approve or disapprove great public improvements.

Taking advantage of the increased powers of his office, Mr. Swanstrom compelled the street railways to fulfil the conditions of their charters, and pave between the tracks at a cost of \$795,000, whereas under the preceding administration they spent only \$133,000. Mr. Swanstrom likewise defied the asphalt ring and its privileged bids for paving streets, and the price of asphalt paving was reduced from \$2.85 to \$1.95 a yard. This made it possible in his official term of two years to pave 121 miles of streets with asphalt, a distance equal to the length of Long Island, as against thirty-three miles in the preceding term. This was done at a cost of \$6,000,000, and also at a saving of \$2,000,000. Great thoroughfares were opened to the suburbs as a



result and great trunk sewers were constructed. Public lavatories and baths were erected, in perfection of appointment and usefulness equal to those of ancient Rome. The County Court House was renovated and an extension added to the Hall of Records. A new municipal building was projected and the Appellate Division of the Supreme Court was established in the Borough Hall amid surroundings which had no superior for beauty and dignity in the State. This was accomplished within the time limit of the contract, notwithstanding strikes and the suspension of work on many public and private buildings. To do all this, President Swanstrom suspended his law practice and devoted his entire time and energy to the Borough.

Mr. Swanstrom died February 15, 1911, at his home in Brooklyn. A bronze memorial tablet was unveiled in the Borough Hall on October 20, 1912. The chief speakers were Congressmen Richard Young and William M. Calder.

Skilled miners were employed in the summer of 1901 to excavate a sewer in Sixtieth street between Fort Hamilton and Thirteenth avenues. Three shafts were sunk to a depth of more than sixty feet, while others went down almost to a hundred feet below the surface. Drifts were driven out from the base of the shafts for more than 300 feet, and 300 experienced Austrian miners were at work excavating and timbering every hour in the twenty-four. Underground tramways were laid, cages and skips were operated in the shafts, and scores of mules at the surface were used to cart away the material excavated. The fact that this material was valueless was the only difference between the work done and actual mining.

When it was finished a huge trunk tunnel extended more than eight miles under the city with ramifications covering more than half the borough. No other city in the country had planned so vast a sewer system as Brooklyn. The line of its watershed runs along the parkway, cutting off a corner of Prospect Park. It extends west almost to Eighth Avenue. From there it follows a line almost identical with Eighth Avenue to Fort Hamilton. The sewage north and west of this line had long been provided for, and it caused little difficulty, but many were the obstacles encountered in disposing of the waste south and east of that line. The territory involved includes Flatbush and many other populous sections. South and West of the watershed line, the natural flow is toward Jamaica and Gravesend Bays, but a law forbids the discharge of crude sewage into Jamaica Bay. The tide in Gravesend Bay is so slow as to make it a menace to health, especially as the beaches are frequented by so many bathers.

Several methods were suggested for disposing of the sewage of this vast area. One of them received a partial trial. By following the natural flow of the land, it was thought possible to carry the sewage to the shore, partly filter it, and carry it by submarine extensions far enough out to sea so that it would be caught up and scattered by the swift tides. The plants required would cost \$1,250,000, to which a perpetual maintenance cost would be added.

All this could be avoided only if another system were devised. Such a system involved tunnelling the watershed for 18,300 feet from the corner of Sixtieth Street and Nineteenth Avenue to the point where Sixty-fourth Street ends at the Narrows. The cost of tunnelling was less than the cost of sewers feeding the filtration plants and the plants themselves. Besides it would save the expense of their operation. This plan therefore was decided upon as the

cheapest and the best because the sewage would be discharged at a point where the tide is swifter than anywhere else in the vicinity of the city.

Work was begun in September, 1900. The tunnel was made about three and a half miles in length and cost about \$1,300,000. It ends near the intersection of Sixtieth Street and Nineteenth Avenue. The remaining five or six miles through Flatbush and its vicinity was open cut work. At the point of discharge the sewer is fifteen feet in diameter. At Sixtieth Street between Fort Hamilton and Thirteenth Avenues, it was cut down to thirteen and one-half feet, and the remaining lines diminish gradually as the territory to be drained becomes less extensive.

The course of the tunnel is from the beginning of Sixty-fourth Street at the point of discharge to Sixth Avenue, to Sixty-second Street, to Fort Hamilton Avenue. From there the sewer extends to Sixtieth Street, thence to Nineteenth Avenue. In order to secure the proper fall this entire line of sewers was placed at a depth of fifty to one hundred feet and open cut work therefore was out of the question. During its excavation period the center section of the tunnel was reached by three shafts at intervals of nine hundred feet. One shaft was at Fort Hamilton Avenue and Sixty-first Street, one at Eleventh Avenue and Sixtieth Street, and the other at Sixtieth Street and Thirteenth Avenue. At the bottom of shaft No. 2 a stope about six feet high was driven horizontally in the direction the sewer was to follow. The top of the stope was brought to the line of the sill, which also formed the spring line of the arch, but the bottom rested a little more than a foot below the bottom of the true section, making provision for a twelve-inch drain pipe to carry off the water percolating through the sand into the excavation. Had this not been done the place would soon have filled. The material bored was coarse sand, making it impossible to leave any portion unsupported. Boards were first driven into the sand with sledges, and props inserted to sustain the vertical and lateral pressure. As the sand was shovelled out it was carried back by hand and loaded on tram cars, as soon as the tunnel was big enough to admit tracks. As the lower stope advanced the sills were placed and propped. After that the stope was widened and extended until its contour was almost identical with that of the lower half of the true section. Meanwhile the upper stope was driven. It was pushed ahead much in the same way as the lower, except that the ceiling was raised to a distance above the top of the true section to provide room for laying the crown and upper sides of the brick wall. Every prop was placed with the utmost precision and skill. It had to follow a line which was the direction of the resultant force of all the pressures. To arrive at that required no simple calculation.

The operation was carried on in set lengths of twelve feet. The preliminary drift, in other words, was carried to twelve feet before the next was started. The whole section was excavated and cleared for the same distance before any attempt was made to lay the brick. Thus the preliminary work on the lower stope was sometimes forty or fifty feet ahead of the brick work. In the farthest end of this stope which was so small the men had to work on their knees, the air was oppressive, and the candles which furnished light, made the heat almost unbearable. Indeed, only a miner could have endured such heat.

The work was carried on night and day in eight-hour shifts without interruption for Sundays or holidays. The shafts became permanent manholes with bases formed of granite masonry and exist today.

When the huge sewer was completed Mayor Seth Low and a party went through it by automobile as the guests of William C. Redfield, Commissioner of



Public Works. They reached the first hole in the ground at the Sixty-fifth Street terminus of the Elevated Railroad one day in May, 1902. The shaft here led down to the tunnel eighty feet below where the automobile trip was to be made. There was only a series of slim ladders with slender rungs by which to descend. Several persons in the party refused to enter. The Mayor with his silk hat backed into the hole, clinging tightly to the rungs of the ladder and making sure of his footing as he stepped down. As he reached the bottom there was a flash of light and the Mayor saw two long lines of incandescent bulbs stretching toward the bay, and feebly lighting the red brick lining of the sewer. They were not near enough together to recognize a person five feet away. Candles were lighted between them on the curving sides, but they gave little relief.

The automobiles had been lowered by large cranes, with much difficulty. The Mayor made a step and went splashing into the water on the bottom of the sewer. "Ugh, Redfield!" he exclaimed, "you have already put the sewer to use, haven't you?"

Most of the water had been pumped out however before the party descended. Originally it amounted to fourteen inches. The Mayor and the Borough Presidents climbed into the automobiles and started on their trip. As the sewer is perfectly round most of its length, the roadbed was uniformly a long concave gully. The slightest turn of the steering wheel would send the cars climbing the side walls, and once or twice the passengers thought they were turning over. The section traversed by the automobiles was 1,500 feet long. It terminated in a dead wall three hundred feet from the water. There the fifteen-foot brick cylinder had been broadened and flattened and then narrowed down to three arched nozzles that carry the sewer nine hundred feet further into the bay where they were protected by a huge pier.

Commissioner William Redfield explained that the sewage of three hundred miles of pipes would flow through the three nozzles.

"It certainly is a wonderful work," said the Mayor.

"There won't be another like it in the world when it is completed," said Mr. Redfield. "There is a sewer in Paris that is as large, but not so long and there is a short sewer in Washington still larger, but there will be 8,000 feet of this 15-foot tunnel. It will be ready for use in about two years."

Returning, there was not room to turn the automobiles and they had to be picked up by hand and lifted around. This took time and hard work. A flash-light picture was taken of the party before it emerged. The official party included: Mayor Low and Park Commissioner Richard Young, Comptroller Edward M. Grout, the chauffeur and Edward M. Fisher in the first car; Borough President Edward Swanstrom of Brooklyn, Jacob A. Cantor, Borough President of Manhattan, Charles V. Fornes, president of the Board of Aldermen, and President Cassidy of Queens in the second. They went through the streets in Flatbush drained by the sewer before they descended underground.

The sewer was disabled by the caving in of one of the mouths in Bay Ridge which had been built on quicksands. The cellars were flooded in adjacent streets and the residents were obliged to move out.

**Martin W. Littleton, Third President**—Martin W. Littleton ran for Borough President as a proscribed Democrat in 1903 and was elected. The regular candidates of the organization refused to speak from the same platform. Mr. Littleton drew strong support from Seth Low Democrats and Seth Low Republicans. The political workers were cynical over his chances of success; the organization did nothing to help him.



UPPER FULTON STREET, BROOKLYN





One masterful speech in the Academy of Music awakened Brooklyn's civic spirit and Brooklyn's conscience. It elected him. Coming into power he was confronted with real difficulties and real dangers. He succeeded an official who had been on good terms with his associates in the Board of Estimate and Apportionment at all times and seasons. He had been ostracized by Mayor George B. McClellan and his running mates, and there was danger that Brooklyn might suffer in the Board of Estimate in consequence of his isolation.

The opposite occurred. Mr. Littleton was wise enough to recognize certain claims upon him; he did not make his administration a political machine however. He bestowed offices without binding himself to support either faction in his discordant party. Never did he permit himself to be drawn into the vortex of the fight during the two years he served as Borough President.

When the famous battle cry of "Brooklyn autonomy" ran through the Borough, Mr. Littleton was invited to attend a meeting to protest against a possible Tammany invasion. He did not go and his refusal indicated his belief that autonomy was a good enough cry for primary purposes.

Mr. Littleton got on well with Mayor McClellan from the very first. The claims of Brooklyn were heard and recognized and granted without hesitation or delay. In 1902-1903 the two years of the Swanstrom administration, 102.61 miles of improved pavement were laid by the Bureau of Highways. It was the largest amount of work of the kind ever known in Brooklyn, yet in 1904 and 1905, under Mr. Littleton's administration, the mileage of improved pavement installed amounted to 145.36. And a record for prices charged was also set. The asphalt trust, tottering from the blows it received in the Swanstrom period, was utterly demolished. In 1903, the average price for a square yard of asphalt with a concrete foundation was \$2.05; in 1904, it was reduced to \$1.66, and in 1905, prices went to \$1.45 a running foot.

The administration prepared sewer relief plans and obtained an appropriation of \$2,000,000 to begin their installation. Part of this plan was the construction of the St. Nicholas Avenue sewer, the largest in the world, which drains a portion of Brooklyn, and a large area of Queens, hitherto untouched.

The mileage of sewers installed in 1902 and 1903 was 39.05. The mileage installed by Commissioner Brackenridge and Superintendent O'Keefe in the Littleton administration in 1904-1905 was 52.17, also a new record. A great saving was effected by broadening the specifications and admitting into competition cement pipe with the vitrified sewer pipe. The average price of twelve-inch sewer pipe in 1903 was \$2.39 a running foot; in 1905 it was \$1.45 a running foot.

Another important improvement started by the Littleton administration was the flushing of the Gowanus Canal by introducing tidewater through a tunnel at DeGraw Street. Within a year a clear and odorless stream replaced the stagnant water.

The Littleton administration built three interior public baths, and began work on three others for which he obtained an appropriation of \$345,000. The Hall of Records was rebuilt, after delays and expenditures bordering on scandal. The dome of the Kings County Court House was restored and the interior beautified, and the Raymond Street Jail was made habitable and healthy. Changes were instituted in caring for public offices and in buying supplies economically.

Besides, the Littleton administration extended the sewers and streets into the suburbs in an unprecedented manner and to an unprecedented extent. Brooklyn began to develop rapidly and attract the attention of the continent. This



was disclosed by the report of the Superintendent of Buildings for 1905, who gave these figures:

YEAR 1905—FIRST EIGHT MONTHS

5,764 new buildings .....	\$43,038,151
2,370 alterations to buildings .....	3,752,085
4,166 slip permits .....	958,624
<hr/>	
12,300 .....	\$47,748,860

ESTIMATE FOR THE COMPLETE YEAR, 1905

18,000 operations, to cost .....	\$70,000,000
----------------------------------	--------------

During 1904 permits were granted for 15,246 operations at a cost of \$48,700,000. This showed an increase for 1905 over 1904 of forty per cent and an increase over any year prior to 1904 equal to three hundred per cent.

Two other notable achievements of Mr. Littleton were the widening of Livingston Street from Court Street to Flatbush Avenue and undertaking the construction of a new municipal building at Court and Joralemon Streets. While Mr. Littleton did not initiate either enterprise, he aided both materially and was the guiding hand in their advancement.

He was thwarted by corporate interests in his scheme to build a connecting railroad between the three bridge terminals in Manhattan. His plan, in fact, was to abolish the bridge terminals as such and to make them and other stations on the line subsidiary to the great scheme of distribution which the project was intended to accomplish.

President Littleton appointed a committee of noted citizens with Colonel Willis L. Ogden at their head to work for the achievement of this purpose. He enlisted the support of Alexander E. Orr, president of the Rapid Transit Commission; but influences in Manhattan foiled their efforts.

The last great speech delivered in the old Academy of Music before it was destroyed by fire was probably that of Mr. Littleton a few nights before election in 1903. It was the initiative of Mr. Littleton, seconded by a few other public spirited men, which started the movement to replace the historic structure. The result was an enlarged and beautified academy in a far better location.

In office Mr. Littleton was the embodiment of courtesy and tact, and his example was followed by his subordinates.

Among his public acts were the speech nominating Judge Alton B. Parker for President in the Democratic National Convention at St. Louis in 1904, a speech which made him famous. He was considered as a candidate for Governor that fall, but D-Cady Herrick was the nominee. He declined a nomination for Mayor the same year, although his candidacy would have united the Citizens' Union, the Hearst forces and the Republican organization in his support.

**Bird S. Coler, Fourth Borough President**—The public and political career of Bird S. Coler, of Brooklyn, is closely related history of Greater New York. Born in Champaign, Ill., he was brought to Brooklyn in his youth by his father, Colonel W. N. Coler, Civil War veteran and Wall Street banker. He was educated at the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute and Andover College. He was married to Miss Emily Moore, of Brooklyn, and became the stock exchange member of the banking firm of W. N. Coler & Company, which had been founded by his father.

Young Mr. Coler took a great deal of interest in Democratic politics, and particularly in the financial affairs of the city. Although he was only twenty-nine years old, he was an expert on municipal finance. When Hugh McLaughlin, Democratic leader of Kings County, selected him as the candidate for city comptroller in 1897, it was an extremely important office. Greater New York had just been consolidated and the government to be elected in that year would be the first of a city in which it would be necessary to coordinate and make function as a unit the financial systems of ninety-seven municipalities. Elected in November and taking office on January 1, 1898, Mr. Coler addressed himself vigorously to the tremendous task of getting this huge financial machine in effective motion. He soon found himself in conflict with a number of grafting contractors who were submitting exorbitant claims to the city. To stop this practice he went to the Legislature and obtained additional powers for his office. In 1899, Mr. Coler won nation-wide fame in his successful fight against the Ramapo water grab. He had already quarreled with Richard Croker, the Tammany boss, and was winning a reputation for his work in obtaining a new subway. As Comptroller of the city he signed the first construction contract for the Interborough subway. He retired from office on January 1, 1902. Many Democrats had been in favor of his nomination for mayor in 1901, but the opposition of Richard Croker prevented his nomination.

In 1902 he was nominated for Governor by the Democratic Party. The plurality of about 6,000 votes obtained by his opponent was denounced as fraudulent by Democrats of the time, and Mr. Coler has been called "the only unaugurated Governor of New York."

In 1903 Hugh McLaughlin quarreled with Senator Patrick H. McCarren and Charles F. Murphy, and McCarren took the leadership of Kings County from its former incumbent. In that struggle Mr. Coler was loyal to McLaughlin. He was appointed President of the Municipal Civil Service Commission by Mayor McClellan, but after a brief service at the head of the Commission, he resigned. In 1905 he ran as an independent candidate for President of the Borough of Brooklyn, and was elected over the regular Republican and Democratic candidates. He began an active and exciting term of office in 1906. His first fight as a member of the Board of Estimate and Apportionment, was for the construction of the Triborough subway, which was to be an independent system operated by the city. After great opposition, he forced the project through, and had the construction work started on the Fourth Avenue line in Brooklyn. In the struggle for this subway Mr. Coler ran counter to the wishes of the big traction and financial interests of New York and Brooklyn. He made many enemies and they attacked him through the newspapers. The "Brooklyn Daily Eagle" became an insistent and persistent critic. That newspaper published a series of articles attacking the administration of the borough officers which culminated in a charge that Mr. Coler was favoring a Medina Sandstone Trust of which he had been president, and in which he owned stock. Mr. Coler replied that he had resigned his office and had sold his stock to his partner, Judge Hole.

Upon his election as Borough President he brought suit against the "Eagle" for \$100,000 for libel, and the case was a *cause celebre* in Brooklyn's legal history. There were two trials. In the first the jury stood ten to two in favor of Mr. Coler. In the second trial, before a special jury, Mr. Coler lost.

In the Board of Estimate, President Coler had quarreled with Mayor



McClellan, and John Purroy Mitchel, as Commissioner of Accounts, investigated his department. The investigation lasted several years, and ended in the presentation of a report during the last month of Mr. Coler's term of office. The Borough President asked Governor Hughes to give him a day to reply. The Governor decided that as the report of the Commissioner of Accounts had been presented too late for adequate consideration, he would dismiss the charges.

The fight with the traction interests centered around Borough President Coler's fight for the authorization of the Triborough system subway contracts. He carried the struggle successfully through the Board of Estimate and the courts, and had the satisfaction finally of seeing the work begun on the Fourth Avenue Brooklyn line. Mr. Coler, also while Borough President, constructed the first municipal asphalt repair plant.

After the close of his official term, Mr. Coler went back to the banking business. While in private life, he wrote several works attacking Socialism, one entitled "Two and Two" having a large circulation. He also wrote "The Red Paper of the City of New York," which was a treatise on city finances.

In 1917 he was considered for mayor on the Democratic ticket, but his firm getting into financial difficulties at that time through war involvements, he relinquished his hopes of that nomination and entered the primaries in Brooklyn in a contest for the Borough Presidential nomination. He was defeated by a few thousand votes, and was appointed Commissioner of Public Charities by Mayor Hylan on January 1, 1918. He has since been at the head of that department, now known as the Department of Public Welfare. He reorganized the department, co-ordinated its labors with those of the great private charities, built hospitals and equipped them, got a grade A certificate for the institutional hospitals, and organized in Kings County Hospital in Brooklyn a post graduate medical course.

In 1918 Mr. Coler was a candidate for State Comptroller on the Democratic ticket.

**Alfred E. Steers, Fifth Borough President**—The Fusion victory of 1909 swept into the office of Borough President Alfred E. Steers, and inaugurated a policy which was continued for eight years with credit to the community. Borough affairs remained in practically the same hands during that period with little deviation from the course first mapped out. The result was to make Brooklyn the most convenient and attractive of all boroughs as a place of residence; and through improved facilities to extend and strengthen its natural inducements to commercial trade and general business. Mr. Steers chose Lewis H. Pounds for Commissioner of Public Works, and in 1913 when the Borough President was appointed a City Magistrate, he resigned, throwing the election of his successor into the Board of Aldermen.

Many of the great improvements brought to completion in subsequent years were started or initiated under the administration of President Steers.

**Lewis H. Pounds, Sixth Borough President**—Following the resignation of Borough President Steers in June, the Board of Aldermen met on July 2, 1913, and elected Lewis H. Pounds, Commissioner of Public Works, to succeed him. He was the candidate of the sixteen Republicans and Fusionists, while the eight Democrats offered no candidate. In the following November, Mr. Pounds was nominated and elected to the office with a plurality of more than 50,000 over Frank Mann.

When Mr. Pounds left the Borough Presidency on January 1, 1918, the population had grown since 1910 about fourteen per cent, and numbered 1,928,432 inhabitants, more than the total accredited to the Greater City at the time of consolidation just twenty years before. He predicted that the yearly increase of from 50,000 to 60,000 would become larger every year, in view of the improvement in transit facilities and the growth of manufacturing and commercial business. It was a period on the threshold of the vast development which began with the Bush Terminals and swept along the waterfront to the Williamsburg Bridge.

The Borough also came to take a more active part in the work of the Board of Estimate and thus exercised greater power in the affairs of the city, with the result that its administration received a corresponding consideration and attained an importance in municipal affairs never given it before. This was apparent forthwith in the budget-making for the city and borough, in the Corporate Stock Committee and in appropriations made for improvement. The Borough President and the Consulting Engineer, George W. Tillson, took part in making the budget of all other departments; and they were equally careful in making up the amount of money to be expended by Brooklyn. After January 1, 1910, the Borough budgets decreased steadily until 1917, when a slight increase appeared, due to the mandatory increases of salaries and the higher cost of materials. Nevertheless, the budget for 1917 was \$250,000 less than the budget for 1910, the first year of the Gaynor, and to a large extent, Fusion, administration.

During this period the Borough administration took on many new activities. Among them were the Municipal Bath at Coney Island, the payroll of the Topographical Department, changed to a budget appropriation instead of being provided by corporate stock, and large increases in the highway and sewer departments, incident to the larger amount of work. In other words, while the increased population of the Borough, and the work resulting therefrom, had been fourteen per cent, the appropriations had decreased about twelve per cent. The departments were reorganized and vacancies once created were rarely filled. This was at the bottom of the reduced costs and the improvement in service.

In 1916 a survey disclosed that the street surface of the Borough was eighty-five per cent without defects, a condition which perhaps no other American city ever attained. The report was based upon the examination, block by block, made under the direction of H. H. Schmidt, Chief Engineer of the Highways Bureau. About eight per cent showed only one defect; about four per cent showed two defects, and about three per cent three or more defects. About 30,000 openings in the streets were made each year; and a large percentage of the 9,000 blocks of pavement must always have one or more defects.

In the period following 1910, the streets of the Borough were rebuilt to all intents and purposes. Of approximately 1,700 miles of paved streets in the Greater City, Brooklyn had about eight hundred and eighty-two. At the time of consolidation the Borough had three hundred miles of cobblestone pavements, and little of any other kind; whereas by 1917, it had more than six hundred miles of asphalt and wood-paved streets, all of smooth surface. There were about one hundred and seventy miles of granite and iron slag, much of the granite being of modern type. There were about one hundred miles of macadam, and only twelve miles of Belgian block and cobblestone. The Borough had been repaving about sixty miles of streets each year. In 1916, this dropped to about thirty miles, due to the inability of the contractors to obtain material and labor.



Since the Borough asphalt plant was established in 1907 the cost of a cubic yard had fallen from eighty cents to a little more than forty cents. Seventy different gangs were kept constantly at work on the streets. Strict account was kept of the work done, the amount of material on hand and the cost of upkeep for each block. Brooklyn led in laying the improved type of granite block which made a comparatively smooth surface, while it was recognized as the best pavement to stand the wear of heavy traffic.

In 1913, the administration decided to rebuild the pavements of the principal streets, such as Fulton Street, Myrtle Avenue, Broadway, Bedford Avenue and Flatbush Avenue throughout their lengths. This was done forthwith, except where subway construction caused delay. Harway Avenue, running from Twenty-third Avenue to Coney Island, was rebuilt in 1916, and pleasure riders were able to follow a smooth, dustless pavement over this important link of travel.

Sewer construction was advanced apace. The average in the eight years following 1909, was about fifty miles a year. Many main outlets were provided, and the work of connecting up with lateral lines of drainage was pushed with vigor. The district lying between Kings Highway, Sheepshead Bay and Coney Island, and extending to Gravesend Bay, was the last to be provided with good drainage facilities, the expense of construction and design causing most of the delay. The topography of the country made this problem difficult. Pumping stations were provided, and a modern form of sewage disposal instituted. The best talent obtainable was engaged to protect the ocean fronts, rivers and other waterways. Advanced work along this line was carried on for several years. Relief for the Jamaica Bay and the Canarsie sections of the Borough, the Twenty-sixth Ward, as well as the Brownsville district was afforded through a new system intersecting Ralph Avenue, Remsen Avenue and lateral connections. Lack of title to streets and other causes prevented an earlier fulfilment of this need.

Another extensive outlet system was run through Louisiana, Hegeman, Stanley and other avenues. All were provided with sanitary and surface-flooding requirements ample for any emergency. Sewers of large capacity were completed in Maspeth Avenue and North Twelfth Street, and they relieved the extreme southeastern section lying along the boundaries between Williamsburg and Greenpoint and extending to the Queens Borough line. The Classon Avenue system of sewers was inaugurated to replace old sewers built fifty years before. Floods in the low levels from Wallabout Basin to East New York had deterred new building and had menaced this important residential and business section for years. The new system, costing upwards of \$3,000,000 gave relief to the entire section from Wallabout Basin to Eastern Parkway; thence to Broadway and beyond. The assessment upon the area was heavy, and the property owners fought it, finally obtaining relief through legislation which changed the system of payments.

The paving of all streets and the connecting of all buildings with sewers added many fold to the requirements of providing for flooding periods. Ample provision for drainage by way of large, combined sewers—one for sanitary flow, and one for surface drainage—was made in the outlying sections from Bay Ridge and Bath Beach, through Coney Island, Sheepshead Bay, and Flatbush, easterly to East New York. Thus, in 1917, Brooklyn had almost 1,100 miles of sewers, the greater part modern. E. J. Fort was Chief Engineer of the Bureau





AEROPLANE VIEW OF BROOKLYN, 1925





of Sewers when this was accomplished and received credit for solving the vast problem which confronted the Borough.

Brooklyn issues more building permits than any other borough. In 1916, as a result of legislation at Albany, inspections were taken from the city-wide department and centralized in each borough. The zone-districting and use-of-buildings resolution was put into effect and more and more work was heaped upon the Building Bureau, conducted by Commissioner P. J. Carlin.

The mapping of the Borough was practically completed by the Topographical Department. The Substructures Bureau pushed forward the charting and adjusting of structures below the surface. The value of this was shown by the bringing into the Borough of the vast subway system and new water mains. Here again, Brooklyn led the other boroughs in an orderly placing of sub-surface structures and a more scientific adjustment of the improvements made.

The County Court House was overhauled and modernized, and put in condition to meet the demands upon it even should a new Court House be completed. The Williamsburgh Trust Company Building was bought by the City and remodelled for a Magistrate's Court on the Williamsburgh Bridge Plaza.

While Mr. Pounds was Borough President, important improvements were begun, and the work undertaken in many cases. Among these were:

The Coney Island Boardwalk; the Jamaica Bay Improvement; the addition to the Coney Island Municipal Bath; the Children's Court House; the new Municipal Building; the Snyder Avenue Municipal and Magistrate's Court; the widening of Lafayette Avenue, and the widening and development of Kings Highway.

Mr. Pounds was defeated for re-election in 1917 by Edward Riegelmann in the general Democratic city victory. He was appointed Port Authority Commissioner in 1921, which office paid no salary, but was regarded as of the highest importance to city, state, and nation. He was elected State Treasurer on the Republican ticket in 1924, getting the largest vote given any Republican candidate.

**Edward Riegelmann, Seventh Borough President**—Was born on the East Side of Manhattan and lived in Brooklyn from his boyhood. His home was in the Fourth District, where he was active in the affairs of the Eastern District. After attending the public school, he studied law at the Metropolis Law School, now a part of New York University. He took an active part in Democratic campaigns in the county, city, state and nation. He was chairman of the State Speakers' Bureau in 1904 and his success in directing the oratorical campaign in that year won general recognition. In 1903, he was counsel to the Sheriff of Kings County and became thoroughly familiar with the duties of the office of Sheriff to which he was elected in 1916.

In 1910 he was appointed an assistant corporation counsel by Mayor William J. Gaynor and assigned as counsel in charge of the Bureau of Street Openings in Brooklyn. He filled the office with success during the four years of the Gaynor administration. He was appointed subsequently a member of the legal staff of the Public Service Commission, because of his wide knowledge of the law relating to the acquisition of property for municipal uses.

He was chairman of the Manhattan Bridge Approach and Manhattan Bridge Plaza Commissions for acquiring the terminal property necessary for the construction of the bridge. He is a member of the Seneca Club, the organization club of the Fourth District, of the American Bar Association, the State Bar Asso-



ciation and of the Brooklyn Bar Association, of which he was at one time a trustee.

As Sheriff, he organized a force of some 2,500 men divided into four regiments. Of this number, 1,000 entered the State Defense Corps when the National Guard entered the Federal service. The Sheriff's organization did not cost the State, City or county anything until it was turned over to the State on August 5, 1917. An appeal was made for funds. Camp Riegelmann, at the Sheepshead Bay Speedway, was opened to the members on July 18. It became the 47th Regiment, New York Guard, and Sheriff Riegelmann returned \$8,000 to sixty firms which had subscribed for its equipment.

He was nominated for Borough President in the fall of 1917 by the Democrats over Bird S. Coler. He defeated Lewis H. Pounds, the Republican candidate. He was re-elected in 1921. It was a period of great development. Work suspended because of the World War was taken up and finished and new enterprises were started and brought to a head.

Brooklyn's progress during the three years ending with 1923 was probably the greatest in its history. Many accomplishments in the fields of its numerous industries added to its fame from one end of the land to the other. The vast improvements in the needs of its ever-increasing population, brought about mainly through the efforts of the present City Administration, added in a great measure to the onward progressive march of the community. The year 1924 added another lustrous page of accomplishment to its record and the report of Borough President Riegelmann on the activities of that year will compare with favor with the previous year for big things done for Brooklyn.

The year 1923 was one of the most progressive for the Borough of Brooklyn. The activities of the Bureau of Buildings marked an unprecedented record which no borough of the Greater City nor any City in the United States has ever equalled. Some 26,566 building applications were filed, the estimated cost amounting to \$284,215,480, which excelled the record of 1922 by more than \$70,000,000, adding a total of 25,663 new buildings to the total. Of these buildings, 17,094 were of a residential character, 7,123 garages, 260 stores, 21 schools and the remainder were of a miscellaneous character, such as churches, office buildings, hotels.

Some 46.46 miles of new pavement were laid, comparing with 45.14 in 1922, 41.98 in 1921, 22.37 in 1920, and 15.68 in 1919.

The total cost of highway improvements approved by the Local Board and forwarded to the Board of Estimate for authorization was \$2,419,394. The total cost of new pavement laid in 1923 was \$3,147,939.45.

Some of the important paving projects were as follows:

Avenue U from Ocean Avenue to Flatbush Avenue, providing a link between two of the main northerly and southerly arteries in the borough and a direct route from Gravesend Bay to Jamaica Bay and intersecting other main arteries, such as 86th Street, Gravesend Avenue, Ocean Parkway, Coney Island Avenue, Ocean Avenue, Bedford Avenue, Rogers Avenue, Nostrand Avenue and Flatbush Avenue; Linden Avenue from Brooklyn Avenue to Kings Highway, providing a connecting highway between Kings Highway and Flatbush Avenue, south of Eastern Parkway, opening up a vast section of new territory; Furman Street, from Fulton Street to Atlantic Avenue, where the railroad tracks were removed and a well-paved highway provided for the shipping industry and general traffic along the East River waterfront; Washington Avenue, from Wal-labout Canal to Flushing Avenue, repaved with improved granite, providing a

well-paved artery through the Wallabout District to Flatbush Avenue and intersecting such main arteries as Myrtle Avenue, Fulton Street, Atlantic Avenue, Eastern Parkway and Empire Boulevard. Almost five miles of unpaved streets or dirt roads received repairing, surfacing and scraping.

Reports on petitions filed for sewer improvements in 1923 involved an estimated cost of more than \$9,000,000. The total cost of improvements for sewers, approved by the Local Board and forwarded to the Board of Estimate, was \$7,786,050. Approximately twenty-five miles of new sewers were constructed and nearly 27,000 basins cleaned all over the borough. Contracts completed and entered into aggregated a cost of nearly \$3,000,000.

Preliminary and final authorization has been obtained on construction work of more than \$4,500,000 for sewers in all parts of the borough. Efforts were concentrated on the drainage plans for relief sewers for the Flatbush districts, and the Flatlands, Canarsie, Bay Ridge and Sheepshead Bay and Nineteenth Avenue relief sections. The drainage plans for the Flatbush and Flatlands sewers will provide relief for 3,600 acres, and the drainage plans for the Canarsie sewer will benefit about 500 acres, and aid in opening up a large new home area.

The new interior bath and swimming pool at Bedford and Metropolitan Avenues was opened up for use in June.

The new \$200,000 court house on Snyder Avenue, housing the Municipal and Magistrates Courts, was turned over to the City in December.

Authorization was received for the construction of a Municipal Building, estimated to cost \$6,000,000, and which will save an annual rental to the City of approximately \$300,000.

Alterations on the Gates Avenue Court building will provide accommodations for another court part.

During the summer, the Coney Island Life Guards, of which there were seventy-six, took care of approximately 25,000,000 persons who visited the beach. Their record showed almost 500 persons saved from drowning, losing only six persons, while they recovered three bodies.

A saving was effected amounting to \$247,267.59 by filling vacancies at lower than budget rate by the elimination of posts where work could be distributed among other members of the force, centralization of purchasing supplies, materials and equipment, and the standardization of various types of motor vehicles.

A new source of revenue over 1922 was derived through the privilege of renting chairs at the Coney Island beach. This privilege was awarded for the sum of \$5,100. The increase in revenue over 1922 was as follows:

Vault Permits .....	\$10,218.92
Sewer Permits .....	24,010.00
Map "O" Tax .....	663.32
Receipt from Municipal Bath, Coney Island .....	6,120.55
Coney Island Pier Privileges .....	3,750.00
Sale of Waste Paper .....	153.58
Signs .....	235.00
Subpoena Fees .....	48.52
Total .....	<u>\$45,199.89</u>

Proceedings were initiated to acquire land as a site for a new Municipal Asphalt Plant at Gowanus Canal and Hamilton Avenue. On this land it was the intention to erect a plant which, on a four-unit basis, would have a capacity of



4,000 square yards and which would go ultimately to 6,000 square yards. This building will be designed to meet the needs of the Borough of Brooklyn, when the borough has been fully improved with pavements. This structure will cost approximately \$500,000.

The erection of a Central Public Library is a project that has been discussed for almost a quarter of a century. While the City of New York appropriated almost \$1,000,000, some ten or twelve years ago, for the construction of one wing of the building, it was only partly completed. The Borough President succeeded in having the Legislature pass a bill exempting \$11,000,000 from the Pay-as-you-go Act and in 1923 he requested the Board of Estimate and Apportionment appropriate the necessary money to complete the Library building. As the construction of additional rapid transit facilities was deemed more urgent at that time, the matter was held in abeyance. It was the expressed intention of the Borough President to revive this matter in the very near future.

The need for additional Interior Public Baths, especially in the thickly-congested section of this borough, has been recognized. In every budget, since coming into office, the Borough President requested sufficient funds to erect six additional interior public baths. These baths, being non-revenue producing, must be financed out of the corporate stock allowance permitted under the Pay-as-you-go Act. Owing to the fact that all repaving, throughout the entire city, as well as the construction of new fire houses and police stations, must be financed out of the corporate stock allowance, there had not been sufficient funds available for public baths.

Another project for which the Borough President requested an appropriation of \$750,000 in every budget since the war was the installation of six swimming pools, one in each of the existing public baths. These also being non-revenue producing there was not sufficient funds to permit their construction.

The Borough President having secured an appropriation of \$75,000 for the erection of two additional Comfort Stations made every effort to insure their rapid completion. The President also asked the Board of Estimate and Apportionment for funds to erect additional Comfort Stations.

Plans were prepared calling for the erection of five Comfort Stations and five Pavilions on the ocean front side of the Riegelmann Boardwalk, at Coney Island. These pavilions, while adding an artistic appearance to the Boardwalk, were intended also to provide a resting place for women and children.

Realizing the unsatisfactory conditions existing in the minor courts, the Borough President renewed the request he had made in every budget, namely, funds for the construction of new buildings of a type similar to the court house on Snyder Avenue.

In order to provide adequate highway facilities to Jamaica Bay and access to Marine Park, the Borough President caused plans to be prepared calling for the extension of Flatbush Avenue from Avenue U across Barren Island to Rockaway Inlet, approximately three miles. This roadway will be 100 feet wide and have a temporary granite pavement, until the fill has settled, when a first-class granite pavement will be constructed.

A ferry from the foot of Flatbush Avenue to Rockaway Beach was promoted, so that the Ferry might be ready as soon as the paving of Flatbush Avenue is completed. The improvement of Flatbush Avenue and establishment of the Ferry reduced the distance from Brooklyn to Rockaway Beach, by way of Valley Stream, 15 miles.

The President had plans drawn for the purpose of continuing the Boardwalk



PIERREPONT AND HENRY STREETS





and reclamation of the beach from Ocean Parkway to Coney Island Avenue, a distance of, approximately, one mile.

The population of the Borough of Brooklyn had grown to such an extent within the past few years it became necessary to provide additional parks and playgrounds while the space is still available. Realizing this necessity, Mr. Riegelmann acquired the following sites:

Location	No. of Acres
Public Beach Coney Island .....	285.5674
Brooklyn Ave. and St. Marks Ave. ....	1.438
18th Ave. and 82nd Street .....	0.476
4th Avenue to 5th Avenue, from 3rd Street to 4th Street	3.035
Bensonhurst Park addition—Cropsey Avenue, between Bay 28th and Bay 29th Streets.....	0.849

After final action was taken on the sites now pending before the Board of Estimate and the City Plan Committee and approval given by Mr. Riegelmann to numerous other sites which he had under consideration, the Borough of Brooklyn gained a park or playground in those Aldermanic districts where they are now lacking.

Authorization having been given by the Board of Estimate for the acquisition of about 50 acres of property, owned by the United States Government, on Plumb Island, he had a plan prepared to include this portion in the proposed Marine Park. When completed, this park will include Plumb Island, part of Barren Island, a large stretch of property on each side of Gerritsen Basin, extending from the proposed Gerritsen Basin Park to Rockaway Inlet and will embrace about 1,300 acres. When all improvements have been made, the park will comprise about 1,800 acres and will exceed the combined size of all the parks in Brooklyn.

Kings Highway from Ocean Avenue to Howard Avenue and Eastern Parkway was widened to 140 feet. The Borough President proposed continuing this improvement through Avenue P, which has a width of 100 feet, over to Bay Parkway. The plan as laid out calls for the improving of Sixty-fifth Street at Gravesend Avenue at a width of 100 feet to connect with Bay Parkway. When these improvements are finally completed there will be a complete artery running from Eastern Parkway and Howard Avenue through Avenue P to Gravesend Avenue to Sixty-fifth Street to Bay Ridge and connecting with Shore Road Driveway.

Through the construction of a granite pavement on Linden Avenue from Brooklyn Avenue to Kings Highway, the Flatbush section of the borough has been provided with an artery connecting Kings Highway and East New York sections. Therefore, a connecting artery now exists from Flatbush Avenue to Kings Highway. Plans were prepared to extend this improvement and tie in Kings Highway with the Conduit Boulevard by constructing a new highway, 175 feet wide, beginning at the junction of Kings Highway, Linden Avenue and Remsen Avenue, crossing private property to Lorraine Avenue at East 98th Street, following the line of Lorraine Avenue to Fountain Avenue to Hegeman Avenue and connecting with Conduit Boulevard beyond the borough line. This improvement, about three and one-half miles long, affords a connecting link between Kings Highway and Conduit Boulevard.

Provision has been made for the Canarsie section, through a plan calling for the widening of Remsen Avenue to a width of 100 feet extending from East



New York Avenue to the Canarsie waterfront. When completed, it will add an outlet for the Canarsie section to the rest of the borough and Long Island.

The widening of Neptune Avenue, which parallels both Surf Avenue and the Boardwalk, will relieve the congestion which exists on Surf Avenue during the summer. This street will have a width of 120 feet and extend from West 37th Street to Ocean Parkway, an approximate distance of one and one-half miles.

Plans were drawn for the widening of West 17th Street and its continuation, Cropsey Avenue, to a width of 120 feet, tying in with the Shore Road and Bay Parkway.

Stillwell Avenue will be 100 feet wide and afford a direct route from Bay Parkway to Surf Avenue.

Gravesend Avenue will have a width of 100 feet and be one more artery leading from its beginning at Tenth Avenue into Coney Island.

Mr. Riegelmann presented the Board of Estimate and Apportionment a plan calling for the widening of the Coney Island Pier, known as Steeplechase Pier, from 33 feet to 120 feet, thus affording better accommodations for the people of the Greater City, as well as visitors from out of town, who prefer travelling to Coney Island by steamboat.

#### REVENUES

##### ASSISTANT COMMISSIONER OF PUBLIC WORKS

Auction Sales .....	\$	161.10	
Renting Chairs, Coney Island .....		5,100.00	\$ 5,261.10

##### BUREAU OF HIGHWAYS

Vault Permits .....	\$	21,335.38	
Incumbrances Permits .....		27.86	
Subpoena Fees .....		41.27	21,404.51

##### BUREAU OF SEWERS

Sewer Permits .....	\$110,300.00		
Map "N" Tax .....	730.98		
Map "O" Tax .....	3,434.26		
Subpoena Fees .....	10.00	114,475.24	

##### BUREAU OF PUBLIC BUILDINGS AND OFFICES

Receipts from Baths and Comfort Stations....	\$	13,145.10	
Receipts from Municipal Bath, Coney Island..		62,703.80	
Receipts from Municipal Bath, Lost Keys, etc.		65.00	
Coney Island Pier Privileges .....		15,750.00	
Sale of Waste Paper .....		230.00	91,893.90

##### BUREAU OF BUILDINGS

Signs .....	\$	587.00	
Subpoena Fees .....		112.70	
Miscellaneous Receipts .....		80.00	779.70

Total Revenue for 1923 .....		\$233,814.45
------------------------------	--	--------------

#### EXPENDITURES

The expenditures were—

Bond Funds, etc. ....	6,254,754.74
-----------------------	--------------

Total Expenditure	\$10,035,594.66
-------------------	-----------------

Tax Levy .....	3,780,839.92
----------------	--------------

Mr. Riegelmann resigned to become a Justice of the Supreme Court, elected in 1924. Joseph A. Guider was elected his successor by the Board of Aldermen, taking office January 1, 1925.



THE TEMPLE BAR AND CHAMBER OF COMMERCE BUILDINGS,  
ON COURT ST., BROOKLYN





## CHAPTER XXXIII

### BENCH AND BAR

THE Kings County Bar was organized soon after the county's formation in 1683 by an act of the Colonial Assembly dividing the province into counties and abolishing the ridings created by the first English Governors. The profession drew from the first the master spirits who knew the law and were capable of arguing its fine points, and it trained the orators and the statesmen who in another century were to help guide the Revolution through its stormy period to success.

Colonial judges of high attainments presided over the provincial courts. Lawyers great and small practiced before them. Their names have been overshadowed by the great legal lights who followed the Revolution and the great judges who sat in the Kings County Courts. John Marshall, John Jay, Joseph Story, Oliver Ellsworth, Bushrod Washington, Samuel Nelson, were only a few of the more conspicuous judges of the United States Supreme Court who presided over trials in Kings County at one time or another. Famous names in the history of the State were Brockholst Livingston, John Sloss Hobart, James Kent, Ambrose Spencer, William L. Marcy, Esek Cowan, John W. Edmonds, members of its Supreme Court.

Hamilton and Burr often appeared at its bar. Their close relationship with Kings County is exemplified in the letters they wrote in a case which is described below.

Gravesend had the first court house, erected in 1668. It stood on one of the squares of the original village plot near the present Reformed Dutch Church. Courts were held there until 1686, when the Colonial Assembly by act of November 7, 1685, gave Flatbush the Court House, owing to the remoteness of Gravesend.

The Flatbush Court House occupied the Court House Lot. When the jail was burned in the winter of 1757-58, the Court House was saved by throwing snowballs upon it. After a time a larger building was erected and in part used for a Court House and in part for a jail. It was two stories high and the jailer's room was on one side of the long dividing hall, while the jail was on the other. The court room was on the second floor. It was used as a ballroom by the British officers during the Revolution. The building cost originally £448. A larger structure was demanded in 1792 and was built from the plans of James Robinson. The commissioners to superintend its erection were John Vanderbilt, Johannes E. Lott, Charles Doughty and Rutger Van Brunt, who succeeded Mr. Vanderveer. Michael Van Cleef bought the old court house at auction and sold the timbers to the Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker. He built a house which was occupied for years by his son, Stephen Schoonmaker.

The new courthouse and jail was completed in 1793, and was much after the plan of the first building, although larger. Jail deliveries were more frequent, and the comment was that prisoners were in danger of falling out. The building burned down in 1832. All the prisoners, save one, worked hard to fight the flames and voluntarily submitted to imprisonment after the fire. Until a jail was built in Brooklyn, prisoners were sent to the old Bridewell prison in the city of New York. The fire terminated the days of Flatbush as the county town of Kings County. During the next five years the courts were held in the Apprentice's Library at Fulton and Cranberry Streets.

The English courts were organized in the province of New York under "The Duke's Laws" promulgated in 1665 (q. v.). They included a Court of



Assizes, a Court of Sessions, and Town Courts. Courts of Oyer and Terminer were also authorized. The Mayor's Court of New York took over the duties of the Dutch Burgomaster's and Schepens. This judicial system lasted from 1665 to 1683. The Governor, by virtue of his powers, could create a Court of Admiralty.

The Second Judicial System (1683-1691), continued the Town Courts, the Courts of Session and Oyer and Terminer, and added a Court of Chancery.

The Third Judicial System instituted in 1691 lasted until the Revolution. It added a Court of Common Pleas and a Supreme Court into which the Court of Oyer and Terminer was merged. After the Revolution, the Court of Sessions, the Court of Chancery, the Supreme Court, the Court of Common Pleas, and Court of Oyer and Terminer were continued with such modifications of procedure as the new government required, down to 1821.

By the Constitution of 1846 the Court of Common Pleas and the Court of Sessions were abolished, a County Court and a new Court of Sessions were created, and the Court of Oyer and Terminer was retained as a branch of the Supreme Court, which was reorganized. A Court of Appeals replaced the Court for the Correction of Errors.

In Kings, as in all other counties of the province, there existed during the Colonial days a Town Court, composed of the High Constable with at least five overseers of the town. They had power to make by-laws and issue orders for the welfare and improvement of their town, or impose a penalty of not more than twenty shillings. They had jurisdiction in civil suits as high as £5. The appeal for sums of larger amount was to the Court of Sessions. In 1683, this court was changed. Three commissioners sat on the first Wednesday of each month, in each town of the county, and determined causes for debt and trespass up to forty shillings without a jury, unless one of the litigants made a written demand for a trial by jury.

Every Justice of the Peace, assisted by a freeholder, had power to try such small causes with a jury. Afterwards three justices, one of whom was to be of the quorum, could try without a jury any offender who did not find bail within twenty-four hours of being in custody, for any offense less than grand larceny, and to inflict any punishment that did not extend to life or limb. Such three justices, with five freeholders, had power to try summarily slaves charged with murder or other capital felonies, and to impose even the death penalty.

The First Court of Record from which any trustworthy minutes were handed down convened at Gravesend on March 17, 1668. Magistrates, or justices, courts with limited civil and criminal jurisdiction were of much importance for years before the Revolution. Each town had a number of magistrates appointed by the Governor of the province.

The Supreme Court of the State was established by act of the Legislature, May 6, 1691, and continued by divers acts until 1698. It was continued finally by proclamation and by an ordinance of the Governor dated May 15, 1699. It had jurisdiction akin to that of the English Courts of Kings Bench. It had four terms a year and always sat in the City of New York. The judges *ex-officio* were trial judges. They made circuits through the counties to try cases. At the same time they held a Court of Oyer and Terminer, or general jail delivery, in which they were joined by some of the Common Pleas judges of the county where they happened to sit.

At first there were five judges, two of whom, together with the Chief Justice,



BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
South Branch: Fourth Avenue and 51st Street; Erected 1905.





constituted a quorum. From 1701 until 1758 there was a chief justice and two associate judges.

A Court of Common Pleas was established in every county of the province by an act of the Legislature passed in 1691. It was composed of one judge, with three associate justices; but in 1702 it was decreed that the judge be assisted by two or more justices in holding the court. It had cognizance of causes above £5. The presiding judge held a Court of General Sessions of the Peace at the sittings of the Common Pleas. Its practice followed the English King's Bench and Common Pleas at Westminster. Writs of error were granted in the first instance. Appeals were made to the General Term of the Supreme Court. The first judge and justices were appointed by the Governor and Council, and afterwards by the Governor of the province and state. These courts were continued under the republic with little change. In 1821, there were five judges in each county, one being first judge. The Constitution of 1846 abolished the Courts of Common Pleas in all counties and created County Courts in their place. The Constitution gave the County Judge with two Justices of the Peace to be designated by law the right to hold Courts of Sessions with such criminal jurisdiction as the Legislature might prescribe, and perform such other duties as might be required by law.

The First Circuit Court and Court of Oyer and Terminer held in Kings County after the organization of the Government sat in Flatbush June 6, 1800. Egbert Benson, a Justice of the Supreme Court, presided. He was active in the Revolution, and in 1777 was appointed the first Attorney-General of the state. He discharged the duties of that office until 1794, when he was appointed an Associate Justice of the United States Supreme Court, and resigned his seat in the State Supreme Court.

At the time, Leffert Lefferts, Jr., was county clerk and the sheriff was Cornelius Bergen. Fifteen lawyers composed the Kings County Bar. In 1836, there were twenty-one members: James B. Clark, Richard D. Covert, George C. Dixon, John Dikeman, Theodore Eames, Gabriel Furman, William A. Green, Nathan B. Morse, Henry C. Murphy, Nathaniel Porter, Alpheus P. Rolph, Gilbert Reed, William Rockwell, John Smally, Cyrus P. Smith, William B. Waldo, and Nathaniel F. Waring. Fisk & Bridgman practiced law with success in Williamsburg.

The last court held at Flatbush was opened Monday, May 4, 1832. No judge was present and the sheriff directed an adjournment until the next morning. Judge Ogden Edwards appeared and organized the court and began the trial of causes.

In 1818, Judge Edwards introduced the bill at Albany calling for the Constitutional Convention of 1821. He was a delegate from New York County, while John Lefferts represented Kings County. Edwards became one of the judges of the reorganized Supreme Court.

Judge Dikeman presided at the first court in Brooklyn when it began its sittings in the Apprentices' Library, November 1, 1832. Abraham Vanderveer was county clerk and clerk of the court. John Lawrence was sheriff by appointment of March 15, 1831. He succeeded John T. Bergen, who resigned on being elected to Congress from the Second District of the State.

John Wells, a resident of Brooklyn, was the acknowledged leader of the bar of the State for many years. He was born in Cherry Valley in 1770. When his family perished in the massacre of 1778, he was saved by the almost miraculous intervention of Providence. An aunt placed him in school in Schenectady and



afterwards brought him to Brooklyn where he was under the instruction of the Rev. Mr. Cutting of Jamaica, a scholar and eloquent preacher. He was graduated from Princeton in 1788, taking two degrees. Opening an office in Pine Street, New York, and living in Brooklyn, he found the way difficult until Alexander Hamilton recognized his genius and encouraged him as a writer until he took his proper place at the bar. For a time he was a partner of Josiah Ogden Hoffman. He died in 1823, while one of the counsel in the great case of Seymour vs. Ellison pending at Albany.

George M. Wood, born in Trenton in 1788, moved to Brooklyn in 1837, and soon had a practice which extended to the United States Supreme Court. His opinions in real estate law were regarded for years as those of an oracle.

Once when he was the opponent of Daniel Webster before the United States Supreme Court, Webster was informed that a lawyer named Wood was to conduct the case against him, "a dull, drowsy man who seems always to be asleep."

"Is it George M. Wood?" asked Webster. "Yes," was the reply, "that's his name."

"Well, then, pray don't awaken him, for when George M. Wood is awake, he is one of the most troublesome opponents I have," said the Great Expounder.

Wood lost the great case of Cleveland vs. Boerum, and never appeared in court again. He owned forty-three houses and lots at the time of his death and had accumulated a large fortune. He died in 1861 in his seventy-third year.

Gabriel Furman was born in Brooklyn in 1800. He was educated for the bar and practiced his profession for a time. His father was Judge William Furman, a supervisor for several years, member of Assembly in 1826; president of the Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company, incorporated in 1824, and a life-long friend of De Witt Clinton, whom he supported in digging the Erie Canal. The son was educated for the law in the office of Elisha W. King, which he entered in 1823. He was admitted to practice in 1826. When the Municipal Court was established in 1827, Governor Clinton appointed him one of its judges. In 1838, he was elected State Senator. Peter R. Livingston, the Lieutenant Governor, placed him on many important committees. In 1841, he prepared lectures on "The Discoveries of the Northmen," and "Aboriginal Remains in North America," which he delivered in Brooklyn, New York, Albany, Utica and other cities.

The Whigs nominated him for Lieutenant Governor in 1842, but the Democrats were successful, electing William C. Bouck and Daniel S. Dickinson. He died in the City Hospital, November 11, 1854.

Grenville Tudor Jenks was born in Boston July 24, 1830. His father, the Rev. Francis Jenks, died when he was two and his mother placed him in the Dover Academy under Professor Alonzo Gray, the principal, whom she married. He entered New York University and afterwards Williams College. After teaching in the common schools he entered the law office of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt in Brooklyn. He was with Storrs & Sedgwick in New York when he was called to the bar in 1851. After a brilliant career at the bar he died at Saratoga, August 14, 1870, at forty. The Brooklyn sojourners at Saratoga met in Congress Hall to pass resolutions in his memory and to praise his character. Courts adjourned as a tribute of respect and Henry Ward Beecher paid a final eulogy when he conducted the funeral services.

John A. Lott was a descendant of Englebert Lott, who came from the Netherlands to New York in 1680. He was born at Flatbush in 1805, the son of Abraham and Maria Lott. He formed a partnership with Henry C. Murphy and Judge Vanderbilt in the famous firm of Lott, Murphy & Vanderbilt, in 1835. It

continued in existence for more than twenty years, when Murphy was appointed Minister to The Hague, and it became Lott & Vanderbilt.

In 1838, Governor Marcy appointed Mr. Lott First Judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Kings County. While discharging his judicial duties Judge Lott was elected Member of Assembly in 1841. He was appointed to second place on the ways and means committee and chairman of the judiciary committee. Horatio Seymour, Sanford E. Church, John A. Dix, Michael Hoffman, Levi S. Chatfield and Samuel G. Hathaway, Jr., were members of the Assembly of 1842. He succeeded Gabriel Furman in the Senate in 1843. He left the Senate December 31, 1846, and resumed his law practice. In 1857, he was elected a Justice of the Supreme Court on the Democratic ticket and entered upon his duties on January 1, 1858. In 1869, Judge Lott was elected an Associate Judge of the Court of Appeals. Having served out his term he was appointed by the Governor Chief Commissioner of the Commission of Appeals. He served from 1870 until 1875, when the commission expired. This commission was created to relieve the Court of Appeals from the tremendous pressure of business. He died in Flatbush, July 20, 1878.

William Rockwell was born in Canaan, Conn., January 4, 1802. He was graduated from Yale College at nineteen. In 1827, he came to Brooklyn and became a law partner of Nathan B. Morse. At the first judicial election which took place under the Constitution of 1846, Mr. Rockwell was elected County Judge of Kings County. He served until 1848. He was elected a Justice of the Supreme Court in 1853. He died suddenly on July 12, 1856.

Cyrus P. Smith was the first corporation counsel of Brooklyn. He was mayor in 1839, and under his guidance, Myrtle Avenue, Court Street and other important streets were opened. He was a State Senator in 1855 and 1856.

Alden J. Spooner was born at Sag Harbor in 1810. Colonel Alden Spooner, his father, was editor and founder of the "Long Island Star," published in Brooklyn, and a man of great native ability. Though not a lawyer, he was appointed Surrogate of Kings County in 1841, and could transact business and decide cases without often asking lawyers for advice.

The son completed his preparatory studies at Cambridge Academy in Washington County, and was admitted to the bar in 1833. He was fond of literary labors and wrote for the "Long Island Star" and the "Knickerbocker Magazine." He wrote a complete sketch of Brooklyn, published in "Johnson's Encyclopedia." He was twenty when the Hamilton Literary Society was organized on November 18, 1830, and was elected its first president. At its semi-centennial, held in the art gallery on Montague Street on January 19, 1880, he led in the singing. He signed the call for the meeting held on February 16, 1863, when the Long Island Historical Society was organized. He died in August, 1881. Mr. Spooner was instrumental in establishing the Brooklyn Institute and the Society of Old Brooklynites.

General Philip S. Crooke was born on March 2, 1810, and was admitted to the bar in 1833. He lived in Flatbush, and was its representative on the board of supervisors for nineteen consecutive years. In 1862, he formed a law partnership with John H. Bergen and in 1867, Calvin E. Pratt joined it, and the firm became Crooke, Pratt & Bergen. When Judge Pratt was elected to the Supreme Court Bench, N. H. Clement joined the firm. General Crooke was elected to Congress in 1873, and the firm was dissolved. General Crooke rose to his rank in the militia and National Guard. He commanded the 14th Regiment, and was able, popular and valuable. During the Civil War he was active in raising troops



and sending them to the front. He represented Kings County in the Legislature of 1864. Five of his colleagues from Brooklyn were John O'Connor, Edward D. White, John C. Perry, Andrew Welsh and Jacob Worth. Angelo Newton was from Williamsburgh. General Crooke died in Flatbush, March 17, 1881.

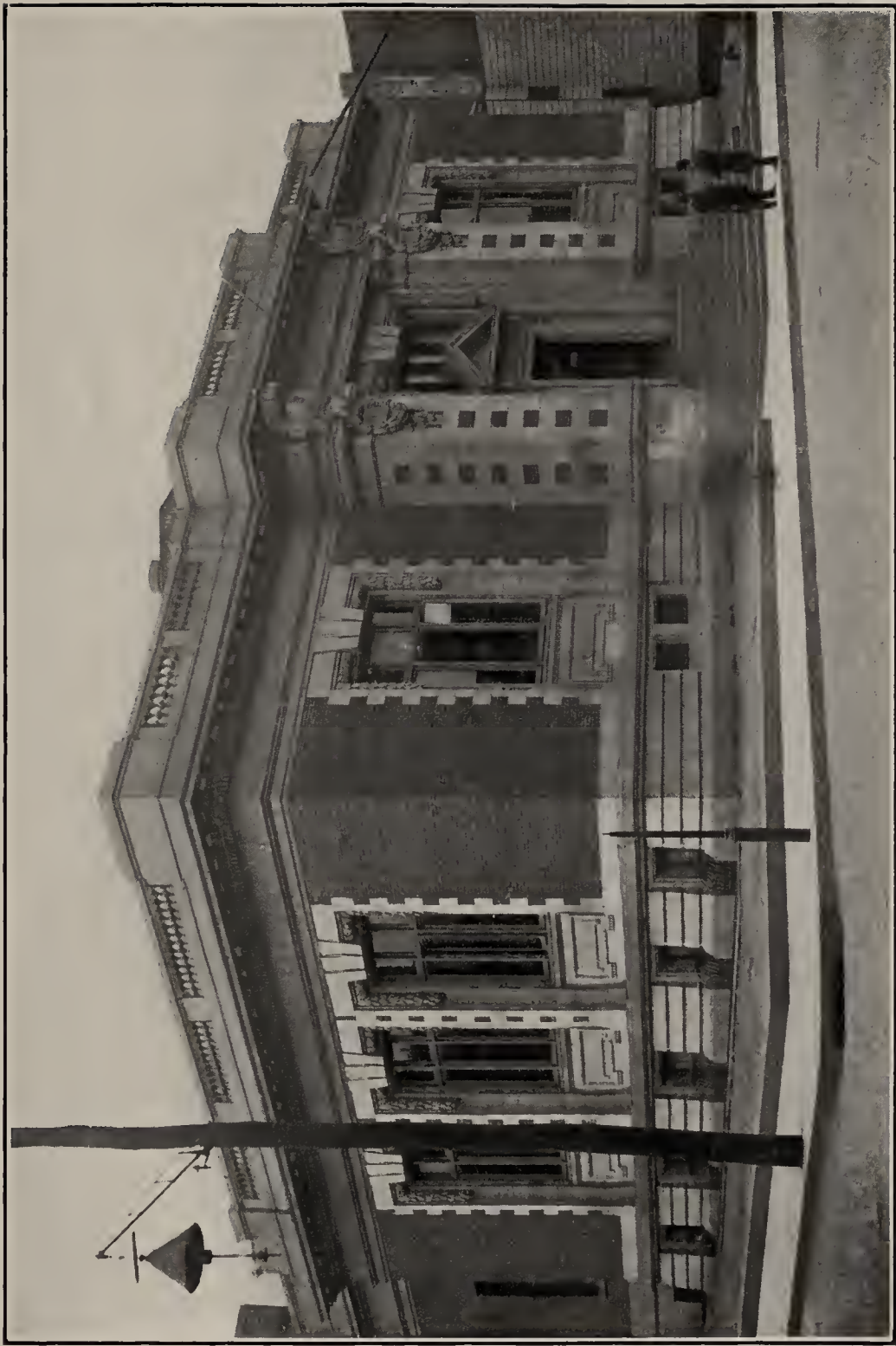
John Dikeman was born at Hempstead in 1795. In May, 1816, he taught a district school which was established with seventy pupils. A two-story frame schoolhouse was built at Concord and Adams Streets and from that beginning grew the enormous school system of today. He was first judge of the Court of Common Pleas of Kings County. In 1863 he was elected county judge. The Native American party elected him to the Assembly in 1865.

Benjamin F. Tracy, while not born in Brooklyn, always had its welfare at heart. He was born in Owego, Tioga County, New York, April 16, 1830, and was a boyhood chum from the same town with Thomas Collier Platt, for many years the Republican leader of New York State. He attended the town schools and the Owego Academy. He studied law in the office of Nathaniel W. Davis, of Owego, and was admitted to the bar in May, 1851, on attaining his majority.

In two years he was elected district attorney of Tioga County, and was re-elected. The Republicans and War Democrats elected him member of the Assembly in 1861. Taking his seat in January, 1862, he soon became known as a debater. When the war times of 1862 were puzzling Governor Morgan, he appointed a committee in each senatorial district in the State to organize a general recruiting effort. Mr. Tracy was one of the committee for Broome, Tioga, and Tompkins Counties, and besides doing his duties on this committee, he requested that the Governor grant him a commission. He made his headquarters at Binghamton, and in thirty days had recruited two regiments—the 109th and 137th. He was appointed colonel of the 109th and reported to Colonel Wood at Baltimore, where the regiment remained until transferred to Washington. In 1864, the regiment was ordered to join Burnside's Corps (the 9th), a part of General Grant's advance army. At the Battle of the Wilderness, Colonel Tracy distinguished himself for great gallantry in leading the charge on May 6, 1864, seizing the flag from the color bearer and leading his command into the enemy's works. At the close of the day, Colonel Tracy fell exhausted, but would not relinquish command. He was urged to go to the hospital, and after the three days of fighting at Spottsylvania, he broke down completely and had to resign. He was brevetted Brigadier General for bravery on the field. Secretary Stanton in September of the same year tendered him the command of the 127th Regiment, stationed at Elmira, in charge of a large Confederate prison, where he remained until peace was declared.

General Tracy joined the law firm of Benedict, Burr & Benedict, in New York City. In 1866, he was appointed United States attorney for the Eastern District of New York, which included Brooklyn and all of Long Island and Staten Island, Benjamin D. Sullivan having recently resigned. Mr. Tracy in 1873, resigned this post to carry on a private practice. He was engaged in many important trials in Kings County. In 1881, he was nominated for mayor, but he retired in favor of Mayor Low. In December, 1881, Governor Cornell appointed him an Associate Justice of the Court of Appeals. After his retirement from the bench he opened a law office in Brooklyn.

For a number of years General Tracy, with General James Jourdan and Silas B. Dutcher were known as the Three Graces—the Republican political leaders—and what they said was law. In 1889, President Harrison asked him to take the portfolio of Secretary of the Navy, which he accepted. On March 3, 1890, his



BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY  
Greenpoint Branch: Norman Avenue and Leonard Street; Erected 1906.





house in Washington was burned down, and his wife, his daughter Mary, and a maid were burned to death. Secretary Tracy was rescued while unconscious and so remained for a few days. His wife was a sister of General Isaac F. Catlin. General Tracy, upon retiring from President Harrison's cabinet at the end of his term, returned to New York and resumed the practice of law. His grasp upon public questions was as firm and secure as it was upon abstruse legal points, and both in the private practice of his profession and in public office he was an outstanding figure.

He died in New York in 1905 and received a public funeral which was attended by thousands.

Joseph Neilson was Chief Judge of the City Court when he presided at the trial of the Tilton-Beecher case. It began on January 11, 1875, and occupied one hundred and twelve days. He was born at Argyle, N. Y., April 15, 1815. Samuel Nelson, the most conspicuous of the family, one branch of which dropped the "i" in spelling the name, was Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of New York, and an Associate Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States. Joseph Neilson was a gifted writer and contributor to the magazines. His charge to the jury in the Beecher trial was remarkable for its logic and clearness and from the fact that not one exception to it was taken by counsel on either side.

Benjamin D. Silliman was born in Newport in 1805. After leaving Yale, he studied law in the office of Chancellor Kent and his son, William Kent, afterwards a judge of the Supreme Court in the City of New York. He was admitted to the bar in 1829. He was active in political conventions and while he sought no public office, he was a Member of Assembly and attorney of the United States for the Eastern District of New York.

Thomas G. Shearman came to New York from his birthplace of Birmingham, England, at nine. His father was a physician, and his mother a woman of superior mentality. He was admitted to the Kings County Bar in 1859, but before completing his studies his literary tastes led him to prepare with John L. Tillinghast a treatise on practice known as "Tillinghast and Shearman's Practice." The second volume was written by Mr. Shearman alone. In 1869, in association with A. A. Redfield, he published a treatise on the Law of Negligence, which saw several editions.

Thereafter he devoted himself to practice. Important and difficult questions arose with the Civil War and Mr. Shearman won repeated successes in the appeal of causes which were considered desperately hopeless by the lawyers who retained him. In 1868, he went into partnership with David Dudley Field, and his son, Dudley Field, as Field & Shearman. John W. Sterling was taken into partnership later in the year. The firm took charge of the legal business of the Erie Railroad. The law suits arising from the contest for control of the Erie Railway Company, the Atlantic and Great Western, and the Albany and Susquehanna attracted wide attention. Among the many innovations he applied was the use of a writ of assistance as a means of putting a receiver appointed *pendente lite* into possession of the property. Also the service of an injunction by telegraphic copies.

In the fall of 1873 Mr. Shearman and Mr. Sterling formed a new firm. As a warm personal friend of many years, Henry Ward Beecher engaged Mr. Shearman to conduct his defense in the Tilton-Beecher trial; and Shearman & Sterling became the attorneys of record. His application for a bill of particulars



had no precedent in this country and was considered by the bar generally as hopeless.

The court before which it was argued seemed to be of the same opinion, but McCue, J., dissented, and the Court of Appeals reversed the decision of the lower court in an elaborate opinion by Judge Rapallo which has been followed.

Mr. Shearman's firm defended Jay Gould in about a hundred actions for damages brought against him and others believed to be interested in creating the Gold Panic of 1869. In every instance the defense was successful.

Edgar M. Cullen was born in Brooklyn December 4, 1843, the second son of Dr. Henry J. Cullen, noted physician and surgeon. His mother was Elizabeth Montgomery McCue, sister of Alexander McCue, a prominent lawyer. They lived in a house at the southwest corner of Clinton and Montague Streets where the Franklin Trust Company has erected its large building.

## CHAPTER XXXIV

### TRADE AND COMMERCE

**I**N 1924, more than half of the vast traffic of the Port of New York, aggregating \$10,918,976 for each working day of the year, was handled along the Brooklyn waterfront—an average of approximately \$5,500,000 a day. Of the 120 prominent ocean steamship freight lines whose vessels sail from the Port of New York, sixty dock along the Brooklyn waterfront.

Brooklyn leads the world in importation of coffee and sugar—has more foreign commerce than any other port in the Western Hemisphere. Brooklyn has the largest piers in the world, as well as the greatest terminal and warehouse system that has ever been built—the Bush Terminal.

The most valuable waterfront property owned by private interests of any place in the world is that of the New York Dock Company. This property extends over two and a half miles along our waterfront. The business transacted over the piers of these two great terminals mentioned brings in millions of dollars of profit every month to the business interests of Brooklyn.

Ships leave Brooklyn docks for almost every port of the world. For instance, in April there were eight different ships sailing from Brooklyn to Sydney, Australia; thirteen ships to Kobe, Japan; five ships to Algoa Bay, Africa. The sixty-one important shipping lines using Brooklyn terminals sent their ships to two hundred and seventy-one different ports. No other port in the world can beat our record for frequency of sailing or for the number of foreign ports directly served.

The value of the export and import freight passing over our piers every month is greater than the monthly value of the exports and imports passing over the piers of San Francisco, Boston, Philadelphia, Norfolk, Newport News and Baltimore combined.

For the last three years the foreign commerce of the Port of New York has averaged over a quarter of a billion dollars a month. Of this a little over half, or about \$125,000,000 worth of imports and exports are handled each month at Brooklyn piers.

This does not include the great coastwise and intercoastal shipping to and from the different ports in the United States nor the tremendous shipments arriving and leaving Brooklyn by car and ferry.

Among the lines of business directly affected by this shipping are steamship lines, railroad lines, banks and financial institutions, dock companies, warehouse companies, marine and fire insurance companies, freight forwarders, custom house brokers, fuel oil and lubricating oil companies, coal companies, express companies, ship chandlers, provision merchants, touring companies, stevedore companies, lighterage companies, trucking companies and various other lines of business. The crews of these ships coming into Brooklyn spend millions of dollars in the borough.

Among the lines leaving the Bush Terminal are the American-Hawaiian, Baltic-American, Dollar Steamship Company, American-Indian, China Mutual Steam Navigation Company, Ellerman Bucknell, Java-New York, Ocean Steamship Company, International Freight Corporation, Lloyd Brasileiro American and African Line, American-Australian Steamship Company, Phelps Brothers Company.

The lines sailing from or arriving at the New York Dock Company's piers, Jay Street Terminal and other points along the Brooklyn front are the following:

Elder-Dempster, Beard's Basin; Barber, Pier 37; Black Diamond, Pier 5, army base; Booth American Shipping Corporation, foot of Thirty-third Street; A. H. Bull & Co., Pier 26; Bull Insular, Pier 27; Clyde Santo Domingo, Pier 34; Ellerman's Wilson, foot of Seventh Street; Export Steamship Corporation, foot of Kent Street; Faber Line, foot of Thirty-first Street; Commonwealth Dominion, Pier 10; Furness Withy Company, Prince, Quebec, and Trinidad, all Pier 28; Garland, Pier B, Erie Basin; Grace, Pier 33; Holder, Weir and Boyd, Piers 5 and 29; Houston, Pier 3, Erie Basin; Isthmian and Pacific Coast lines foot of Twenty-ninth Street; Kerr Steamship Company, foot of Fifty-seventh Street; Lamport and Holt, Piers 7 and 8; Lloyd Royal Belge, Pier 2, Erie Basin; Luckenbach Steamship Company, foot of Thirty-third Street; Mallory Transport, Pier 2, Erie Basin; National Steam Navigation Company of Greece, Pier 22; New York and Porto Rico, Pier 35; Norton and South America, foot of Twenty-ninth Street; Norwegian-American, foot of Thirtieth Street; Pacific Mail, Pier 33, Atlantic Basin; Reardon, Smith, Pier 44; Red Cross, foot of Java Street; Red D Line, Pier 11; S. O. Stray Steamship Corporation and United States and Australian lines, Pier 4, army base; Wessel, Duval & Co., West Coast Line, Pier 45; Wilhelmson Steamship Company, Pier 26, and Williams Steamship Company, Pier 18.

The story of the statistics of the foreign commerce of the Brooklyn waterfront may appear dry to the general reader, but back of it all there lies a wealth of sentiment—a human interest narrative. These sacks, casks and boxes of spices, nuts, dates, figs, almonds, raisins, grapes and barks, filling the air with their fragrance, tell the story of the far off isles amidst tropical seas and lands of the antipodes, where hundreds of thousands of men and women working for a small wage dig, pick and pack the products demanded by our American markets, where long queues of boys and girls returning from their labors bear with them the trays and baskets loaded with the yield of the plantation and the orchard.

Hundreds of casks of olives tell the story of the dark-haired, black-eyed *senoritas* of the Iberian Peninsula, with a complexion matching the fruit, gathering and sorting the esteemed pickle; the thousands of pounds of figs and dates bring to mind the army of men and women of Algeria, Tunis and Smyrna gathering the fruit and transporting their crop on camels' backs over long stretches of desert to seaport cities; the vast stores of rubber, the pure Para product gathered by the natives paddling over the upper reaches of the Amazon or its tributaries and threading their way through the dark forests, slashing the



trees for the precious gum, one of the most valuable products used in the industrial arts of today; the thousands of bags of coffee, fragrant with the odors transported from the fields of Brazil, Porto Rico or the distant fields of Java and Arabia—all of these form one vast moving panorama, a world-wide procession moving in a continuous current toward the Brooklyn wharves.

The wealth obtained from this commerce goes to establish and maintain tens of thousands of happy homes in the cities and hamlets of the Orient or the steppes of Russia, the countries bordering on the Mediterranean and the pampas of South America and adds to the happiness of mankind. It is the music of a commerce that girdles the world.

About one-half the sugar supplied to the United States comes from Cuba, Java, Porto Rico, Hawaii and the Philippines. The greatest sugar refineries in the world are located on the banks of the East River in Brooklyn. Brooklyn leads the world in the receiving, refining and distributing of sugar. Over 60 per cent of the coffee consumed in the United States is handled over Brooklyn piers. Most of this coffee is from Brazil. If you use tea that also is an important product from Japan, China or the East Indies.

The magic of foreign trade begins early in the day and is with us in everything we do all day long. When I awoke this morning I threw aside the English blankets and imported linen sheets which covered me and stepped out of bed on a rug from China, the East Indies contributed their vegetable oils to my bath soap and shaving cream, the sponge I used came from the tropical waters of the Caribbean, I brushed my teeth with fine bristles from the Far East, I combed my hair with a comb made from rubber from Singapore and used tooth paste which was put up in a tin container made from tin from the Federated Malay States. Silk worms from Japan and China contributed to my hose and tie, wool from Australia entered into the manufacture of my suit, my shoes were manufactured from material from all parts of the globe, even my collar and linen handkerchief are made from flax from Ireland. If I had the time I could show you that practically every modern convenience we have is in some way affected by foreign trade. There are eighteen different imported products in the telephone in your home. The radio set you are using at the present time also uses a number of imported commodities. Almost every sport that we go into, whether it be automobiling, using tires made from imported rubber, whether it be playing baseball with a ball made from imported cork and rubber, or whether it be mah jong brought to us direct from China, you will find that again we call on the magic of foreign trade to assist us.

The Port of New York has been truly called the gateway of the nation. Brooklyn alone has a shore line of 201 miles, twenty-five of which are improved. The five longest piers in the world are located in Brooklyn, as is also the greatest terminal and warehouse system ever built—the Bush Terminal, which houses about 300 different manufacturing concerns, employing about 30,000 persons. Twelve of the most important trunk line railroads in America come directly into the Port of New York. Approximately 200 companies operate steamship lines to every important port in the world. The Port of New York has inland waterway connections with Buffalo, Oswego and the Great Lakes via the New York State Barge Canal, with New England via Long Island Sound and the Cape Cod Canal and with the South via the Delaware and Raritan Canal, the Delaware River and the Chesapeake and Delaware Canal to Chesapeake Bay ports.

About three-quarters of the passengers going abroad from the United States leave from docks in Manhattan. Brooklyn, however, has more foreign freight

commerce than Manhattan or, for that matter, any other port in the Western Hemisphere. The value of the export and import freight passing over Brooklyn docks every month is greater than the monthly value of the exports and imports passing over the docks of the ports of San Francisco, Boston, Philadelphia, Baltimore, Norfolk and Newport News combined.

Two-thirds of the foreign trade of the whole United States once passed through New York. The average statistics from 1880 to 1917 showed that one-half the nation's foreign trade passed through the Port of New York. For the year ending December 31, 1923, the proportion has shrunk to 41.68 per cent. This means an annual loss to the Port of New York during the last few years of nearly 9 per cent of the total foreign commerce of our country. In order to visualize what this loss means, the commerce statistics for the last year show that this loss equals the combined annual total foreign shipping of the great ports of Philadelphia, Baltimore and Norfolk. This 9 per cent loss is more than twice as much as the annual foreign commerce of the Port of San Francisco.

H. EDMUND BULLIS.

Walt Whitman was a schoolboy when Brooklyn applied for a village charter in 1824. The village was the third town of the state and the sixteenth of the United States. In 1814, the town contained 3,805 inhabitants; in 1820, it contained 7,175; in 1824, the population was estimated at 9,000. In 1822, ten large warehouses were built, fifty dwelling houses, two extensive white lead manufactories costing from \$15,000 to \$20,000 each. In the following year two large brick churches, one frame church, one hundred and sixty-four dwelling houses, a large glass factory, a wool and cotton card factory and ten stores were built. One large brick church was building and another contracted for. There were seven churches, eight rope walks, seven distilleries, two chain cable factories, two tanneries, two large white lead factories, a glass factory, a floor cloth factory, a card factory, a pocketbook factory, a comb factory, a sealskin factory, seven tide and two wind mills, an extensive drug manufactory and articles required for dyeing and manufacturing, seventy grocery and dry goods stores, two printing shops, lumber and wood yards, master masons and carpenters.

The rope walks made 1,130 tons of cordage annually, at an outlay of \$260,000, and employed two hundred hands. The distilleries consumed on an average seven hundred and eighty bushels of grain a day, at an annual expense of \$368,000. The sealskin factory employed sixty men; the pocketbook factory, forty persons; the comb factory, twenty; the card factory was to employ three hundred; and other branches, in all, four hundred to five hundred. Immense quantities of naval stores, hemp, cotton, India goods, hides, provisions and lumber were stored in Brooklyn. Kings County paid into the coffers of the state more than any other county of its size, cities excepted.

From February 16, 1823, to February 15, 1924, there were inspected in Kings County 5,825 barrels of superfine flour; two hundred and sixty barrels of fine flour, and one hundred and twenty-four hogsheads of corn meal. Most of the flour was manufactured in the town of Brooklyn, where there were seven water mills owned by John C. Freeke, Jordan Coles, Nehemiah Denton, the heirs of John Cornell, the heirs of Nicholas Luqueer, Thorne Carpenter and Van Dyke. Two wind mills were owned by Isaac Cornell and Hezekiah B. Pierrepont. The last, however, did little business.

Whitman predicted that a sturdy child living in 1862 would see Brooklyn a city of a million inhabitants before he died. He estimated the population at



the time at fully 300,000, somewhat more than the census of the preceding summer. He felt that the manufactures were of such wide variety and so large in amount that he turned from literature and reminiscence to enumerate them. The list he gives was that of the state census of 1855.

ANNUAL MANUFACTURES AND PRODUCTS OF BROOKLYN, ACCORDING TO THE  
STATE CENSUS, 1855, (NOW LARGELY INCREASED, AND WITH NEW  
BRANCHES, NOW PROBABLY DOUBLE)

Market produce .....	\$120,078	Confectionery .....	\$20,000
Agricultural implements ....	30,000	Drugs and medicines .....	15,000
Brass and copper foundries. ....	400,000	Dyewood .....	100,000
Silver plating .....	7,000	Fish and whale oil .....	200,000
Bronze castings .....	26,000	Gas .....	462,000
Copper smithing .....	375,000	Glue .....	150,000
Fish hooks .....	10,000	Distilled liquors .....	6,000,000
Furnaces .....	9,000	Clocks .....	16,000
Gold and silver refining ....	224,000	Pianos .....	250,000
Iron pipe .....	350,000	Brown powder .....	10,000
Francis' metallic life boats..	80,000	Soap and candles .....	250,000
Safes .....	200,000	Refined liquorice .....	50,000
Silverware .....	60,000	Malt .....	100,000
Tin and sheet iron .....	150,000	Oil cloth .....	200,000
Wire sieves .....	25,000	Linseed and other oils ....	300,000
Cotton batting .....	75,000	Paints and colors .....	54,000
Felting and wadding .....	5,000	Kerosene .....	200,000
Dressed flax .....	6,000	Saleratus .....	50,000
Fringes and tassels .....	40,000	Vinegar .....	12,000
Paper .....	20,000	White lead .....	1,250,000
Rope and cordage .....	2,500,000	Whiting .....	68,000
Twine and nets .....	12,000	Lamps and lanterns and gas fixtures .....	125,000
Lager beer .....	750,000	Ivory black and bone manure	110,000
Stoves .....	85,000	Japanned cloth .....	200,000
Steam engines .....	75,000	Lamp black .....	4,000
Ships' blocks .....	70,000	Lard oil .....	10,000
Shipbuilding .....	945,000	Shingles .....	10,000
Steamboat finishing .....	150,000	Veneering .....	16,000
Tree nails .....	20,000	Glassware .....	800,000
Thermometers .....	1,500	Lime .....	12,000
Sashes and blinds .....	120,000	Marble .....	100,000
Coaches and wagons .....	70,000	Cut stone .....	250,000
Registers and ventilators ...	100,000	Leather (ordinary) .....	50,000
Pumps .....	15,000	Patent leather .....	250,000
Steam pumps .....	200,000	Morocco .....	2,000,000
Flour and feed .....	1,000,000	Paper hangings .....	30,000
Packing boxes .....	25,000	Rugs and mats .....	100,000
Casks and barrels .....	13,000	Window shades .....	50,000
Dressed furs .....	120,000	Gold pens .....	100,000
Planed boards .....	500,000	Hats and caps .....	100,000
Camphe(n)e .....	2,000,000	Tobacco and cigars .....	200,000
Chemicals .....	60,000		
Refined sugar and syrup....	2,000,000		

Whitman made the comment that many of the principal productive interests of Brooklyn were not included, such as the house builders, the cartmen, drivers, City Railroad employees, etc., etc. There were in 1855 the number of 22,573 buildings in Brooklyn. Of these five hundred and eleven were of stone, valued at \$5,000,000; and 8,039 were of brick, valued at \$40,000,000. The rest were, of course, of wood, valued at \$30,000,000.

There were hat factories that turned out the amount of work alone, to say nothing of other large factories. One of the largest distilleries absorbed 3,000 bushels of grain per day when in full operation. There were ten rope walks employing from ten to fifteen hundred men and boys. There were from fifteen to twenty breweries in the Eastern District, in the Bushwick neighborhood, "the sources of mighty outpourings of ale and lager beer," the poet says, "refreshing the thirsty lovers of those liquids in hot or cold weather." There were eight or ten ship yards at Greenpoint, employing from five hundred to seven hundred men when in operation. Brooklyn had the only plate glass manufactory in the United States. The white lead factory employed two hundred and twenty-five men. Immense quantities of spirits were shipped from here to France, to return, we suppose, in the shape of pure French brandies, wines, etc.

He cited the immense amount of capital employed in the bank, insurance offices, Union Ferry Company, Brooklyn City Railroad Company, the Central, the Long Island Railroad (capital \$3,000,000), the Atlantic Dock Improvements, the gas companies, and the immense and triumphant Brooklyn Water Works.

The Navy Yard employed 3,000 men and turned out products worth tens of millions of dollars every year.

Witness the gains in the last few years:

	1899	1909	1914	1919
No. of establishments.....	4,301	5,218	6,096	6,738
Average No. Wage Earners.	87,445	123,883	140,881	166,724
Capital invested .....	\$263,471,000	\$362,337,000	\$448,757,000	\$729,166,203
Wages and Salaries .....	42,341,000	68,328,000	.....	.....
	9,097,000	21,146,000	109,832,000	266,514,179
Value of materials used.....	206,335,000	235,132,000	298,269,000	670,470,696
Value of products.....	313,617,489	417,222,770	515,303,000	1,184,973,144

Brooklyn's strategic location also accounts for the great diversity of products manufactured, which rivalled any of the great manufacturing cities. The variety is indicated by the following larger groups:

Brooklyn rivals all of the great manufacturing cities in the size and variety of its industrial groups. Among them are these:

	No. Establishments	No. Persons Employed	Value of Products
Boots and Shoes .....	143	9,725	\$45,158,936
Knit Goods .....	241	6,702	43,185,419
Bread and Bakery Products .....	837	6,062	39,397,797
Paints and Varnishes .....	68	2,265	37,677,776
Tobacco and Cigars .....	408	2,950	35,761,932
Men's Clothing .....	507	13,115	35,680,343
Foundry and Machine Products .....	207	13,932	32,417,504
Women's Clothing .....	558	8,345	26,695,969
Confectionery and Ice Cream .....	231	4,465	25,859,532
Furniture .....	118	2,934	14,641,657
Food Products .....	100	1,497	8,572,981



	No. Establishments	No. Persons Employed	Value of Products
Printing and Publishing .....	267	2,577	7,804,340
Copper, Tin and Sheet Iron .....	130	1,057	4,550,893
Automobile Repairing .....	124	737	2,543,354
Millinery and Lace Goods .....	108	1,383	2,153,264

Every trunk line railroad with a tidewater terminal at New York made use of the piers and wharves and shipping facilities of Brooklyn in 1923. A vast terminal system, not yet complete, but of unusual efficiency, linked the borough with the transportation of the continent, from Maine to California, and from Florida to Vancouver Sound—Puget Sound. The Hell Gate Bridge opened direct communication with New England a few years before. It was built to unite the Long Island and New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad systems. Its inception permitted freight to be received and delivered at Long Island Railroad stations in Brooklyn and on Long Island for and from all the trunk lines of the country. All direct traffic for the North and East was shipped to their terminals by the New York Connecting Railroad as soon as the new Hell Gate Bridge was opened. In one year the number of cars exchanged between the New Haven and the Pennsylvania Railroad over the Long Island and the New York Connecting Railroads was 478,000.

In 1923, Brooklyn was the fourth greatest industrial centre in the United States. It was third in population among American cities. Its population had increased by 3,200 persons a month on an average since the census of 1910.

In 1919 the Federal Census gave Brooklyn 6,738 factories, employing 203,021 persons, with an annual production valued at \$1,750,000,000. In 1822, it was estimated the borough had more than 10,000 establishments, with 250,000 employees. The value of the manufactured product was more than \$2,000,000,000 annually.

In 1922, the port of Brooklyn handled more than one-quarter of the foreign commerce of the United States. It handled 1,945,000 tons of sugar, enough to supply the whole country for five months.

Brooklyn was running ahead of any other borough of the City of New York, of any other city of the country, in the value of buildings under construction, at the rate of \$100,000,000 in three months.

In 1922, Brooklyn baked 1,700,000 loaves of bread daily in 1,600 bakeries. It employed more than 3,000 bakers, or more than one-tenth of the whole number in the United States.

Lynn, famous as the home of shoe manufacture, was outclassed by Brooklyn, a city never associated by reputation with the manufacture of shoes. Lynn had one hundred and eighteen factories; Brooklyn had one hundred and seventy-three, turning out 114,850 pairs of shoes a day.

And Brooklyn stood forth peerless as the greatest summer resort city of the world. Coney Island attracted more visitors than any other place. Figures given by the Brooklyn Rapid Transit Company showed that its lines carried 19,800,000 passengers to the Island during the season of 1922, while only 2,000,000 were carried to Atlantic City in the same period by the Pennsylvania Railroad.

Brooklyn had nine hundred miles of paved streets and about twenty-nine miles of boulevard. It had one hundred and ninety-three public and private schools with an enrollment of 350,000 pupils, the second largest number in the

United States. It had almost five hundred miles of street railway tracks, including subway, surface and elevated lines.

Its foreign population was estimated at 659,287, representing forty-nine nationalities. It included 189,481 Russians, 138,245 Italians, 56,778 Germans and 53,660 Irish.

Situated at the gateway of the country's immigration, a supply of skilled and unskilled labor ever has been available. Unusual educational, religious, recreational and home facilities have kept Brooklyn's working population contented, while its vast industries have kept them profitably employed. Wages have been high, strikes few, and the turnover of labor low indeed compared with other great manufacturing centers. Forming a part of the greatest industrial center in the world, Brooklyn has been going ahead at rapid strides.

The advantage of having a great city as a near neighbor was never more aptly illustrated than in the growth of Brooklyn since 1848, in which year gas and sewers were first introduced in what has come to be the great "Borough of Homes," having a population second only to Manhattan and now forging ahead so rapidly that it is only a question of a few years when Brooklyn will occupy first place among the boroughs of the largest city in the world.

Seventy-five years ago Brooklyn had a population of less than 135,000, went to bed by the light of a tallow candle or kerosene lamp and still regarded the ferries to "New York" with fear and trembling.

In the light of these facts and figures it is interesting to compare the growth of Manhattan since 1624 with that of Brooklyn since 1848 and to speculate a little on the future of these two boroughs that practically have been molded into one by the East River subways and bridges.

Kings County, created in 1683, was composed of the settlements of Brooklyn, Bushwick, Flatlands, Flatbush and New Utrecht. In 1685, the Court of Sessions of Kings County was removed from Gravesend to Flatbush, and this was the beginning of the greatness which since has been that of Flatbush, which for many years was of far greater importance than Brooklyn.

**Brooklyn Bridge Suggested in 1788**—In 1788, Brooklyn, Bushwick, Flatbush, Flatlands, Gravesend and New Utrecht were incorporated as separate towns.

In the same years, when the State of New York was admitted to the Union, it was suggested that a bridge over the East River be built, but this suggestion was not acted upon until almost a hundred years later, when the construction of the Brooklyn Bridge was begun in 1870 and completed in 1883.

The next important step was the annexation of Bushwick to Brooklyn as of January 1, 1855, when the old town became the Eighteenth and Nineteenth Wards of the consolidated City of Brooklyn. In the same year Williamsburgh was annexed to Brooklyn and became the Thirteenth, Fourteenth, Fifteenth and Sixteenth Wards of the city.

The town of New Lots was formerly a part of Flatbush and was created a town in 1852.

Previous to the consolidation act, Brooklyn was organized as a village in 1801 and received a new village charter in 1816.

The greater importance of Brooklyn began in 1819 with the removal of the County Clerk's office from Flatbush.

An interesting sidelight on values in Brooklyn in 1824 is the fact that the taxable value of all local real estate and personal property at that time was only



\$2,550,080, or considerably less than the value today of the entire Sheepshead Bay Harkness estate property (formerly the Sheepshead Bay racetrack and motordrome).

Also, in the same year, a nineteen and three-quarter acre tract near Fort Greene was purchased by the town of Brooklyn for \$3,720 for use as a hospital site and burying ground.

**Navy Yard Bought for \$40,000**—In 1801, the land now used by the navy yard was sold to the government by John Jackson for only \$40,000. In 1831, three years before the incorporation of the City of Brooklyn, application was made for a railroad to be built between Brooklyn and Jamaica, but it was April, 1836, before ground was broken for the construction of the road. In March, 1837, the Long Island Railroad was opened between Brooklyn and Hicksville, and in July, 1844, the line was completed to Greenport, L. I.

Meantime the value of real estate in Brooklyn was increasing slowly, and the total assessment valuation in 1834 was \$7,829,684. The total for the rest of Kings County was \$1,600,594 additional.

In 1836, one year after the act establishing the South Ferry, Samuel Cheever, Isaac Tiffany and Alonzo G. Hammond were appointed commissioners to lay out the City of Brooklyn. The same year the cornerstone of the Brooklyn City Hall was laid and the ferry from Peck Slip to Williamsburg was put in operation.

The great Brooklyn fire of 1848, which wiped out \$2,000,000 worth of property between Washington and Henry, Pineapple and Main Streets, was followed in 1854 by the operation of horse-cars on Myrtle Avenue, Fulton Street, Court Street and Flushing Avenue and the incorporation of a fire department in 1855.

In the same year, 1855, the Nassau Water Works of the City of Brooklyn were incorporated, and in 1860, the Legislature authorized the laying out of Prospect Park; also the building of a new courthouse at Fulton and Joralemon Streets on a plot 140x351, for which \$70,000 was paid in 1861. Nine years later, in 1870, was begun the construction of Brooklyn Bridge by Colonel John A. Roebling and associates from designs of William C. Kingsley. This improvement was completed on May 24, 1883, in which same year elevated railroad trains began operating across the bridge. The first surface cars operated over the bridge in 1898.

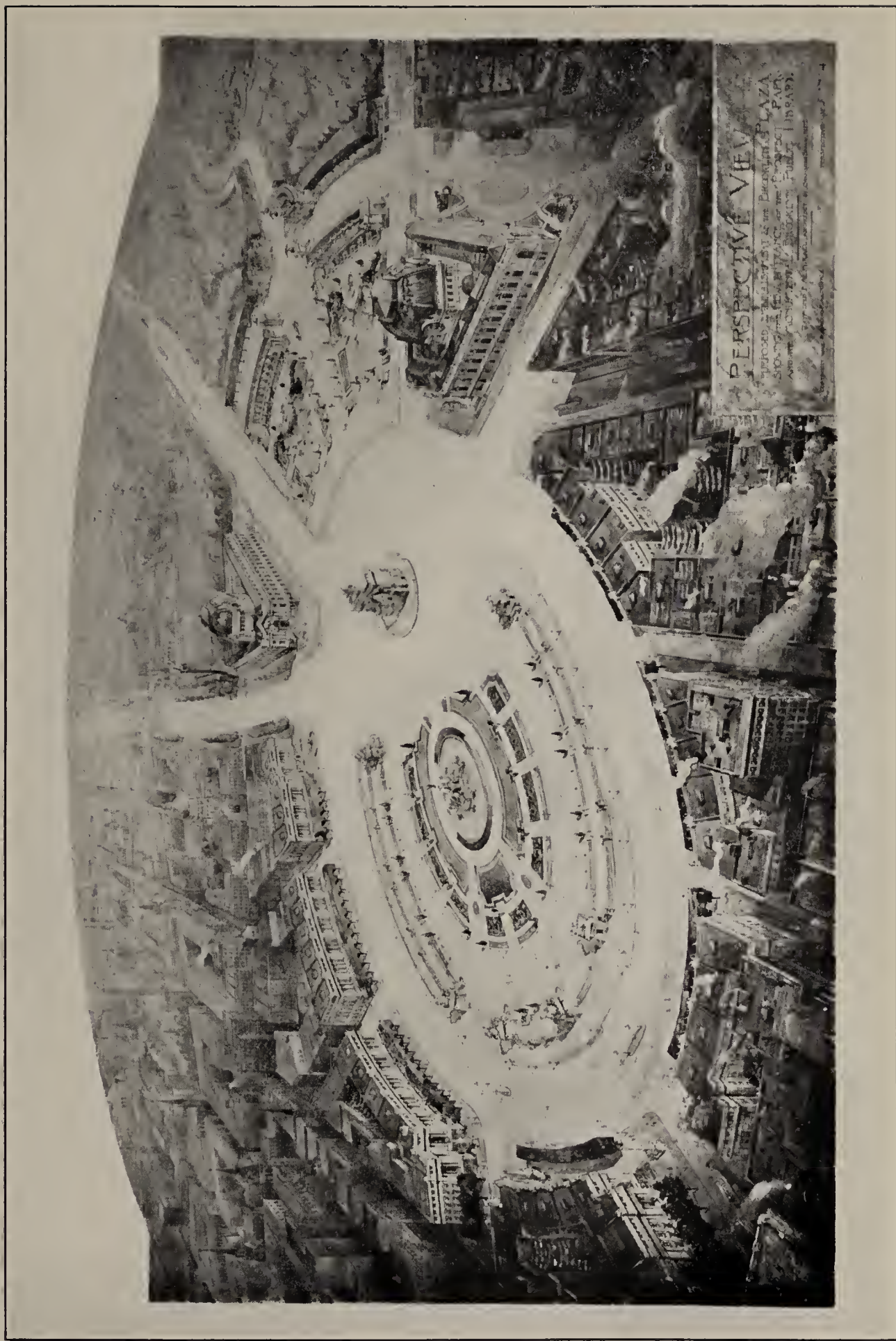
**Farming Country in 1880**—A sidelight on the immense growth of Brooklyn since 1880 is the fact of record that in that year Kings County contained four hundred and eighty-six farms, comprising 9,075 acres, valued, with buildings, at \$4,872,055. Five years later, in 1885, Brooklyn was credited with having 85,000 buildings.

The Williamsburgh Bridge was begun in 1896 and completed in 1903; the Manhattan Bridge was begun in October, 1901, and completed in December, 1909. Surface cars began running over the bridge in 1912 and subway cars in June, 1915.

The Queensboro Bridge was begun in July, 1901, and completed in March, 1909.

This chronological summary of the growth of Brooklyn from a population of less than 500,000 in 1883, when the Brooklyn Bridge was opened, to more than 2,000,000, illustrates the axiom that population follows on the heels of rapid transit and forecasts the creation of a greater Flatbush when that old established





PERSPECTIVE VIEW OF THE PROPOSED EMBELLISHMENT OF THE BROOKLYN PLAZA  
 Showing the new entrance of Prospect Park and the Monumental Central Library Building





section of Brooklyn shall have been extended down to the Sheepshead Bay Harkness estate property, which, after having been held for years by the millionaires who developed it for use as a race track and motordrome, is now to be sold, in part, to the home seekers, builders and investors of New York.

What has happened to real estate values in Flatbush since the subways made the outlying sections of Brooklyn as accessible as Washington Heights and the Bronx, if not more so, may best be judged from the real estate and building records.

**Section of High-Priced Flats**—Take, for instance, the corner of Flatbush and Caton Avenues, a plot one hundred and five by one hundred and fifty feet, where a nine-story apartment house—the first of its kind in Flatbush—has been erected, to rent for \$40 a room. Twenty years ago this corner was sold by the John Reis Company for \$26,000 and a year later resold for \$32,000. Further down Ocean Avenue, that is, from Avenue H to and beyond Avenue M, perhaps a dozen four-story apartments are being erected, many of them covering entire block fronts. Builders are paying from \$6,000 to \$8,000 a lot for sites for these buildings which one year ago could have been bought for \$3,000 a lot or less.

But by far the great proportion of building throughout this section has been of the one and two-family residence type. Minimum increases in values of one hundred per cent over those of ten years ago are recorded throughout this district. Lots on Ocean Avenue which three years ago sold for \$1,000 to \$1,200 are today selling from \$2,000 to \$3,000, while interior lots on side streets on Ocean Avenue which as late as two years ago sold for \$500 and \$600 are today bringing \$1,000 or more for the few that are left.

Last year the Midwood Associates built a group of attached dwellings on Bedford Avenue in the Flatbush section which they sold for \$12,500. Offers of \$14,000 for these same houses are now being refused.

When ten to twelve years ago the W. E. Harman Company opened the East Midwood section around Avenue J, \$400 a lot was considered a very stiff price for the land. Today there is nothing in East Midwood to be had under \$2,500 a lot.

Lots on Avenues M and N and East Seventeenth Street, which the Midwood Associates divided and sold ten years ago at \$1,000 to \$1,200 a lot, today are valued at \$2,500 to \$3,000 a lot.

**Builders Selling from Plans**—William H. Jones, associated with W. H. Goldey, a leading Flatbush broker, said recently that the demand for homes in this section is as great as it ever has been and that builders cannot keep pace with it. At Kings Highway, Avenue Q and Nineteenth Street, a row of houses has been sold out entirely before the plaster is on the walls. A builder named Harris, operating on Avenue R, Avenue S and East Nineteenth Street, has sold a dozen homes on which he started late in the spring, and has begun another group. Most of these houses are of the one-family detached type of six rooms, selling at \$10,500 to \$11,500.

Success with the apartment operations in this lower Flatbush section is equally great. Most of the individual apartments are rented before the completion of the building, and in many instances the building itself is sold before it is ready for tenants.

Real estate authorities who know the Sheepshead Bay Harkness estate well declare that the upbuilding of this great section will be very rapid. With good



transit service to the property by means of the Brighton Beach subway to Neck Road or Sheepshead Bay station, and by means of the Ocean Avenue and Nostrand Avenue trolley lines, this property already is brought within a few minutes of downtown New York and Brooklyn. Application has been made to the Brooklyn City Railroad and the Gravesend & Coney Island Railroad to extend the Nostrand Avenue trolley line, which now stops at Avenue U.

### Brooklyn—World's Knitwear Center

A few weeks ago, while having lunch in Utica, I overheard a gentleman at the next table say, "Yes, during the last year, our firm has sold more knitting machinery in Brooklyn than in all the rest of the United States put together."

Upon inquiry I found that the gentleman who made this remark represented a large knitting machinery manufacturing firm. Although I realized that Brooklyn was a great knitting center, this statement was rather startling to me. I resolved that on my return to Brooklyn I would investigate and see if what I had overheard was true.

During the year ending August 1, 1923, there have been established throughout the United States and Canada, three hundred and seventy-six new knitting industries. Of this number, 31.4 per cent, or one hundred and eighteen new knitting factories, have been started in Brooklyn. This does not include the old mills that have been enlarged or the new buildings that are contemplated. The only two other manufacturing centers that anywhere near approached this record were Manhattan with forty new plants and Philadelphia with thirty-eight new knitting industries.

At present there are four hundred and ninety-one knitting factories in Brooklyn, against two hundred and thirty-three in the rest of Greater New York. Since the last Federal census in 1919 the number of knitting mills in Brooklyn has more than doubled and it is safe to assume, since authentic figures are not available for 1923, that in value of manufactured products the knit goods industry leads all the other trade groups in Brooklyn by a considerable margin.

The tremendous importance of the industry can be seen when we examine the government report for 1919. During that year the value of knit goods products produced in Brooklyn was \$43,185,419 and the two hundred and forty-one factories operating at that time employed 6,702 people, or an average of twenty-eight employees to an establishment. During 1919 about seven and a half millions of dollars were paid out in wages to the workers in the knitting trade in Brooklyn. With the wonderful increase in the number of knitting factories in Brooklyn, it can be clearly seen that the stupendous figures for 1919 will be greatly exceeded in next year's census. The table below shows how rapidly the knit goods industry has been growing in Brooklyn.

Year	Number of Establishments	Number of Employees	Average Employees Per Establishment
1900	16	668	42
1919	241	6,702	28
1922	373	9,039	24
1923	491	*11,000	22

\* Estimate.

Of course most of the new mills are small and employ comparatively few people, the majority of them having less than ten employees. Nevertheless

many of them are growing fast and more skilled operators are being trained each month, so that Brooklyn will undoubtedly keep the supremacy she now has in the knitting field.

Practically every knit article known to the trade is produced in Brooklyn. The most widely distributed and best known knit products sent out from Brooklyn are sweaters. They are manufactured in four hundred and twenty-six factories in Brooklyn. Brooklyn sweaters are known throughout the world.

Wherever you are—on the beach at Waikiki, Honolulu; Ostende, Belgium; or at Coney Island—there will be Brooklyn bathing suits in evidence, for there are forty-two factories manufacturing the latest styles in knit bathing suits located here.

The link-and-link style of knit goods which is used in the manufacture of babies' sweaters, sacques, carriage covers, toques, hoods, leggings, etc., is almost an exclusive Brooklyn process, as one hundred and ninety-six out of the two hundred and fifty-nine factories in the United States and Canada that manufacture link-and-link goods are located here.

Forty factories in Brooklyn manufacture pure or art silk knit fabrics which have become so popular of late in women's sport clothes. Hundreds of different styles of knitted fabrics are made, ranging from knitted velvet to printed knit silk goods, and from knitted materials for sport suits and overcoats to thin Jersey cloth. Twenty-nine factories in Brooklyn turn out knit neckties and scarfs.

There are seven knitting yarn mills in Brooklyn which, by the way, are the only ones in the metropolitan area. There are also five silk yarn mills located here.

Four of the largest knitting establishments in Brooklyn have their own dye houses. There are five Brooklyn firms who dye, finish and bleach knit goods for the trade.

Practically all the raw silk and artificial silk is bought from importers in Manhattan or Paterson, there being only one raw silk importer and three artificial silk importers located in Brooklyn.

Comparatively little of the machinery used in the knitting trade is manufactured in Brooklyn. On the surface it looks as if Brooklyn is the logical place for the manufacture of this type of machinery, and it is the writer's opinion that within the next five years we will see a number of new knitting trades machinery plants established in Brooklyn.

The paper box industry in Brooklyn should also grow, for quite a proportion of the sweater boxes and other boxes used by the Brooklyn trade are made in Manhattan.

Prior to the war, the art of knitting by hand was confined to ladies well along in years. Then when sweaters were needed by the soldiers all the women from nine to ninety learned to knit. After the war many of the younger generation tried out their knitting skill on some sport sweaters for themselves. They found these sweaters attractive, comfortable and practical. Sweaters came into vogue. Girls who had not the time nor the skill to knit for themselves, bought machine-made sweaters, belted sweaters with scarfs, and sleeveless sweaters. Sweaters made of wool or silk, thin sweaters and heavy sweaters, sweaters of every shape and hue became popular.

Knit fabrics for sport dresses also became popular and it is predicted that knitted men's sport clothes will continue to grow in popularity. Knit bathing suits have never before had the run they are having now. Knit neckties are



being widely worn. Consequently it would seem that this great industry of Brooklyn is here to stay, for it has been conclusively proven that clothes made from knitted fabrics are practical, as they wear very well, and are attractive.

In the Ridgewood section there is a sweater factory in practically every block. Most of these factories employ less than ten people, and do contract work for jobbers. Some of these small shops are called "kitchen shops" by the trade, as they have a knitting machine in the rear of the house and sell the finished sweater in the front room. A few of these shops give out work to be done at home.

There are few unskilled operators in the knitting industry, consequently few children are employed. A great majority of the Brooklyn knitting factories are conducted on the open shop basis.

From a survey conducted last spring by the State Labor bureau, it was found that seventy per cent of the people engaged in the sweater industry were women. Most of the employees were paid by the week, rather than by piece work. The average wage for women in the sweater trade was from \$21 to \$22. The least skilled operators were the folders and packers, who averaged about \$15 per week. Some of the very skilled knitting machine operators averaged over \$30 per week. The average rate of pay for men was from \$35 to \$40, although some of the machine repair men and knitters averaged much more.

Much of the knit goods manufacturing is seasonal. For example, wool sweaters are made from February until late in the summer, while bathing suits and neckties are made from September until February. Most of the shops work overtime in season and are very slack out of season.

The National Knitted Outerwear Association, which is composed of the most progressive and larger mills manufacturing outerwear, is accomplishing a great deal in regulating trade practices along the right lines. A Brooklyn man, Albert S. Waitzfelder, president of the Waitzfelder Braid Company, is president of this national organization.

The question has been asked, why has Brooklyn become the knit goods manufacturing center of the world. Close proximity to the greatest jobbing and retail knit goods center in the world, Manhattan, is one reason. In Brooklyn rents are cheaper and industrial sites can be purchased at a more reasonable figure than in Manhattan. Brooklyn has been growing at the rate of about 4,000 people per month for some time, which means labor is available in the great Borough of Brooklyn with its population of almost two and a quarter millions. Until the knitting industry took its spurt, Brooklyn had a surplus of female labor, which undoubtedly was the great factor in the rapid growth of this industry.

Practically all of the new knitting mills being started are owned by Jewish capital, and are operated under Jewish management. Naturally when looking for a place for their factories, it is not strange that they should select the Ridgewood section of Brooklyn, as statistics show that a very large percentage of the population in this section is Jewish.

The gradually increasing number of trained knitting mill operators in Brooklyn is a lure to a prospective industry. Labor conditions on the whole have been satisfactory in Brooklyn. This factor has made Brooklyn the fourth greatest industrial center in America, being exceeded only by Manhattan, Chicago and Philadelphia. Brooklyn is third in population, second in number of children attending school, and last year was first in the country in the building of new houses and buildings.

One out of every five residents of the State of New York now lives in Brooklyn. Manhattan has reached its saturation point in population, with its density of population of one hundred and sixty-two people per acre. Brooklyn now has thirty-nine people per acre. When Brooklyn has the same density of population that Manhattan now has, and that time is not so far off, Brooklyn will have 10,000,000 population. Brooklyn is destined to be the overwhelming city of the world, and the knitting industry will do more than its share in accomplishing this end.

H. EDMUND BULLIS.

**The Sperry Gyroscope Company and Brooklyn**—In 1913, when the Sperry Gyroscope Company moved from Manhattan to its new quarters at 126 Nassau Street, Brooklyn, it added a very unusual and unique industry to the manufacturing organizations of this Borough.

Mr. Elmer A. Sperry, the president and founder of the company, who possessed a long record for the invention and manufacture of a variety of scientific and electrical apparatus, had developed a number of gyroscopic devices, which demanded greater facilities for their manufacture than were available in the Manhattan factory. Space was leased for this purpose, until a suitable building could be erected—the choice of location being influenced by the Brooklyn Navy Yard, for a major part of the work done at that time was in behalf of the United States Navy. In fact, the Sperry Gyroscope Company might have been regarded as being a large experimental laboratory for the Government, devoted to the development of apparatus which has since helped our navy to attain and preserve its position of high efficiency and rank among other navies of the world.

Its some fifty engineers and factory employees were at that time busily engaged in designing and building Sperry Gyro Compass Equipments and their auxiliary Gun Fire Control apparatus, Gyro Airplane Stabilizers and Gyro Ship Stabilizers.

The Gyro Compass resulted from a marvelous application of gyroscopic principles utilizing the rotation of the earth to make a navigational instrument of precision—a compass which indicates the true geographic north pole and which is utterly oblivious to the stray electric currents or disturbances which would entice a magnetic compass to point to some phantom north pole. This property of the Sperry Gyro Compass makes it an invaluable instrument for vessels built of steel. In the case of the submarine, for example, under-water navigation would be impossible without a gyro compass. Then, too, the repeater compasses which are operated from the gyro compass are valuable for many purposes, as they may be installed in any position, on any part of the ship and give continuous indications of the ship's heading at any time—faithfully reproducing the readings of the compass card located on the gyro compass.

The Sperry Gyro Compass, being a consistent and persistent indicator of direction, made it possible to develop apparatus used in conjunction with it, which is absolutely essential to accurate control of gun fire and to certain maneuvers which play an important part in a modern naval battle.

It was in the year following the Sperry Gyroscope Company's moving to Brooklyn that Mr. Elmer A. Sperry and his son Lawrence won the \$10,000 prize offered by France for an airplane stabilizer. Mr. Sperry had invented and built a gyroscopic stabilizer which could maintain an airplane in a state of equilibrium without human control. This wonderful performance was fully demonstrated during the prize contest, when the mechanic walked back and forth on one of the



wings, while Lawrence stood up, leaving the airplane to the automatic control of the stabilizer, while the machine was in the air. This seemingly impossible feat was repeated again and again at various altitudes, some near to the earth, others thousands of feet above the ground.

Prior to 1914, the Sperry Gyro Ship Stabilizer had given startling demonstrations of its ability to eliminate the roll from a vessel in a stormy sea. As Mr. Sperry has said: "We don't have to consult the weather-man a bit. We don't care whether the storm is big or little, the masts are absolutely vertical under all stormy conditions. Why? Because we install in that ship a gyro which will take care of the largest single wave increments that ever reach a ship. It simply shoulders all the troubles of that ship and does it so easily that the ship is perfectly willing to have it, and the ship doesn't roll at all."

Thus it was that the demand for these devices grew. Their importance made the industry an essential one, requiring more space—greater facilities to meet the calls that came in. So property was acquired in Brooklyn on Flatbush Avenue Extension between Chapel and Concord Streets for building purposes and on July 29th, 1915, Mr. Sperry broke ground, starting the work of erecting an eleven-story reinforced concrete factory; a light and airy structure of much architectural beauty, and with some 175,000 square feet of floor space.

Rapid progress was made in the construction, so that on December 8th, 1916, the architects officially turned over the key to the building to Mr. Sperry, during a celebration marked with much pomp and ceremony. There were speeches from Borough President Lewis H. Pounds and Rev. Newell Dwight Hillis, as well as a flag-raising participated in by representatives delegated from the U. S. Navy and witnessed by all of the Sperry employees.

With the new building, there was installed on the roof a high intensity searchlight, invented and built by Mr. Sperry. This searchlight, with its beam 60 inches in diameter of over a billion candlepower, revolutionized the science of searchlight construction. Its properties were those of sunlight—its rays were so intense that they would severely "sunburn" a person exposed to them in close proximity—and it would brilliantly illumine a target many miles away. While this particular searchlight has thrilled the people of Brooklyn many a time as it flashed its beam across the sky on test, in signalling election returns, or on other occasions of importance; many hundreds of others, in sizes ranging from 12 inches to 60 inches, have since been built for purposes of defense in time of war and for anti-aircraft work, as well as for many peace-time purposes.

As the apparatus developed and built by the Sperry Gyroscope Company was so essential to the United States Government, as well as to the Allies, for their navies and armies, it was only natural that the company outgrew its quarters to such an extent that an addition to the Sperry Building, providing some 90,000 new floor space, was built in 1917, to facilitate the work being done by its 3,000 employees.

While the Sperry Gyroscope Company's contribution toward the successful winning of the World War of 1917-1918 through the devices mentioned, as well as others of a secret nature, was invaluable, this does not mean that the company operated a "war plant." Its products have been developed to meet a demand of "peace-time" purposes. The Sperry Gyro Compass has been enjoying an increasing popularity in the Merchant Marine, and its operation has made it possible to develop and place on the market the Gyro-Pilot, an automatic steering device for ships. The installation of these devices, popularly known as "Metal Mikes," have created a sensation in the shipping world by reason of their ability

to steer and keep a ship on a given course straighter and with less strain on the vessel than when a human being is at the wheel. The name "Metal Mike" was bestowed by ship operators because the device actually turns the "wheel" to operate the ship's rudder, leaving "Mike," the human quartermaster, free for other duties for hours at a time. There has been an increasingly incessant demand for this wonderful mechanism, which works in a seemingly weird, yet really simple fashion.

Other navigational aids have been developed, which include:

Helm angle indicators—instruments which report back to the bridge the manner in which a ship's rudder responds to the steering wheel.

Course recorders, which give a graphic record of a ship's travel.

Speed indicators, which record the speed of the ship and the distance covered.

Then, too, there are the Sperry Searchlight Beacons and portable searchlight outfits developed and installed to make it possible for the U. S. Air Mail Service to carry on its night flights across the continent.

While Mr. Sperry has been and still is adding his influence towards getting the world's work done through introducing new apparatus, there has also been developed an organization of men who are proud to be employees of the Sperry Gyroscope Company—men who possess a pride in their workmanship and who not only intelligently apply their skill towards building apparatus which gives the best and most efficient service, but who also work with the management in building and maintaining an organization which is stable and has high ideals of service to customers, to its employees, to owners of the company, to Brooklyn and to the world at large.

Thus, Brooklyn has an industry of which it may be well proud—an industry which, though it has its home office and main factory in Brooklyn, is an international company with a factory in London and service branches located in the leading ports throughout the world.

M. R. Lott.

### Borough Grows—Its Old Concerns

The population of Brooklyn is growing at the rate of 40,000 a year. The following table shows a comparison of Brooklyn's population with that of Manhattan, from 1790 to 1920:

Year	Brooklyn	Manhattan
1790 .....	4,495	49,401
1830 .....	20,535	202,589
1860 .....	279,122	813,660
1890 .....	838,547	1,441,216
1900 .....	1,166,582	1,850,093
1910 .....	1,634,351	2,331,542
1920 .....	2,018,356	2,284,103

Of the 2,000 inhabitants in Brooklyn in 1920, more than 1,300,000 were native born.

Approximately four hundred Certificates of Recognition were awarded to various concerns of Brooklyn by the Chamber of Commerce at the Industrial Exposition at the Twenty-third Regiment Armory, Monday evening, April 9, 1923.

The committee, including Dr. Edward B. Shallow, chairman, Dr. Frank D.



Blodgett and T. I. Jones, decided that certificates should be awarded to concerns which have been in business continuously for twenty-five years or more.

The Brooklyn Savings Bank, which began its career in 1827, was the oldest concern known. It had been in existence ninety-six years. Two, C. A. Mettler's Sons and the Brooklyn City Mission and Tract Society, tied for second honors. They had been in existence ninety-four years, having started in 1829.

Following is a list of concerns which received the Certificates of Recognition:

Name of Concern	Started	Years in Existence	Name of Concern	Started	Years in Existence
The Brooklyn Savings Bank.....	1827	96	Hilo Varnish Corp.....	1863	60
C. A. Mettler's Sons .....	1829	94	John A. Casey Company.....	1864	59
Brooklyn City Mission & Tract Society .....	1829	94	Dilthey's Millinery .....	1864	59
Balch, Price & Company.....	1832	91	Howard & Morse .....	1864	59
Wm. Wise & Son.....	1834	89	Noah Clark, Inc. ....	1864	59
Long Island Railroad Company	1836	87	Mason, Au & Magenheimer		
P. Belford & Son.....	1840	83	Conf. Mfg. Company .....	1864	59
John L. Spence.....	1840	83	James T. Kelley's Sons.....	1864	59
"Brooklyn Daily Eagle".....	1841	82	J. B. Hoecker .....	1864	59
J. W. & W. H. Reid, Inc.....	1841	82	"Brooklyn Standard Union"...	1864	59
Chauncey Real Estate Company	1843	80	A. N. Nelson .....	1865	58
National Licorice Company....	1845	78	F. Weidener Printing & Publish- ing Co. ....	1865	58
J. D. Williams, Inc.....	1845	78	Abraham & Straus, Inc. ....	1865	58
Tuttle & Bailey Mfg. Co.....	1846	77	Lincoln Savings Bank of Brooklyn .....	1866	57
National Lead Company.....	1846	77	Henry Martin .....	1866	57
The Brooklyn Union Gas Co..	1847	76	Brooklyn Trust Company ....	1866	57
The Brooklyn Daily Times, Inc.	1848	75	F. O. Pierce Co.....	1866	57
E. Greenfield's Sons.....	1848	75	Lewis & Gendar, Inc.....	1867	56
J. C. Henderson & Son.....	1849	74	Fulton Savings Bank, Kings Co.	1867	56
Charles Pfizer & Co.....	1849	74	H. Batterman Co. ....	1867	56
The South Brooklyn Savings Institution .....	1850	73	Brooklyn Friends School.....	1867	56
Geo. W. Wilson & Son.....	1850	73	Wm. Vogel & Bros., Inc.....	1867	56
J. R. Wood & Son.....	1850	73	Theo. A. Crane's Sons Co.....	1867	56
F. A. Van Iderstine & Son....	1850	73	Webers Medical Tea Co.....	1867	56
Mechanics Bank .....	1852	71	Joseph Ryan, Inc.....	1868	55
Howard & Morse .....	1852	71	W. H. Gieseler .....	1868	55
Fidelity Phoenix Fire Ins. Co..	1853	70	Allegaiier Bros. ....	1868	55
Davenport Real Estate Co., Inc.	1853	70	M. S. Brown .....	1868	55
Charles E. Earl's Sons.....	1853	70	East New York Savings Bank.	1868	55
Cross Austin & Ireland Lumber Co. ....	1853	70	Chas. Ross & Son.....	1869	54
Home Insurance Co., N. Y.....	1853	70	Empire State Dairy Co.....	1869	54
Brooklyn Y. M. C. A.....	1853	70	Wm. R. Young Co. ....	1869	54
Kelsey, Suydam & Mollenhauer.	1854	69	N. Y. & Brooklyn Casket Co..	1869	54
B. G. Latimer & Sons Co.....	1854	69	Emil Lazansky .....	1869	54
The Chapman Docks Company.	1854	69	G. & W. Halbert .....	1869	54
Polytechnic Institute .....	1855	68	W. G. Creamer & Co.....	1869	54
Theo. Brouwer & Son.....	1856	67	Chas. Ross & Son Co.....	1869	54
L. Blumenau's Sons.....	1856	67	C. F. Mentzinger's Sons .....	1869	54
A. Pearson's Sons.....	1856	67	Adelphi Academy .....	1869	54
B. Schellenberg & Sons.....	1857	66	A. A. Webster Co. ....	1870	53
Edwin J. Webster Co.....	1858	65	Bulkley & Horton Co.....	1870	53
John A. Scollay, Inc.....	1858	65	Frederick W. Starr.....	1870	53
John Robertson & Co.....	1858	65	John McGahie Co.....	1870	53
John F. James Co.....	1858	65	N. Ryan Company .....	1870	53
Geo. Pool & Son, Inc.....	1859	64	O'Flynn & Verity, Inc.....	1870	53
Dime Savings Bank of B'klyn..	1859	64	National Meter Company.....	1870	53
Guardian Life Insurance Co....	1860	63	August Moll Mfg. Co.....	1870	53
Wilson Bohannon, Inc.....	1860	63	C. A. Brandt Co.....	1870	53
The P. H. Gill & Sons Forge & Machine Works .....	1860	63	American Sugar Refining Co..	1870	53
Barth S. Cronin Co.....	1860	63	Estate F. H. Evans.....	1871	52
Walther & Company .....	1861	62	J. J. Snyder & Son, Inc.....	1871	52
Rustin & Robbins .....	1861	62	Samuel Stein & Sons.....	1871	52
Frederick Loeser & Co., Inc....	1861	62	Frederic N. Whitley, Inc.....	1872	51
			Eberhart Faber .....	1872	51
			The Evergreens .....	1872	51

## KINGS COUNTY

1599

Name of Concern	Started	Years in Existence	Name of Concern	Started	Years in Existence
Benisch Bros. ....	1872	51	James H. Harden Co. ....	1881	42
Caleb V. Smith & Son.....	1872	51	E. Krieger & Son .....1881	42	
Carl H. Arwe Mfg. Company..	1872	51	Dr. Charles J. Lundbeck .....	1882	41
Jacob Muller .....	1872	51	Chas. H. Williams .....	1882	41
Independent Salt Company...	1872-3	50	Wm. A. Force & Co., Inc. ....	1882	41
A. Kreamer, Inc. ....	1873	50	Adolph Stoecker & Son .....	1882	41
Brooklyn Furniture Co. ....	1873	50	Gleason Tiebout Glass Co. ....	1882	41
John Thatcher & Son .....	1873	50	David Porter, Inc. ....	1882	41
Levy Bros. ....	1873	50	Robert Brautigam .....	1882	41
Rentrop Silk Dyeing Corp. ....	1873	50	Frederick Elfein & Sons .....	1882	41
J. R. H. Flege .....	1873	50	New York Telephone Co. ....	1882	41
Howard J. Smith & Son, Inc...	1873	50	Philip Bender .....	1882	41
N. Y. Life Ins. Co. ....	1873	50	Winant B. Wardell & Son ....	1882	41
Drake Business School .....	1873	50	Chas. Schaefer & Son .....	1883	40
Verona Pharmacy .....	1874	49	Geo. W. Baker Shoe Co. ....	1883	40
Frederick Emmerich, Inc. ....	1874	49	Boody, McLellan & Co.....	1883	40
Herman Behr & Co., Inc. ....	1874	49	Wm. Walker .....	1883	40
M. Goodwin & Co. ....	1874	49	Benjamin Moore & Co. ....	1883	40
Castle Braid Company .....	1874	49	Ketcham & McDougall, Inc. ...	1883	40
Shults Bread Co. ....	1875	48	Miller & Van Winkle, Inc....	1883	40
Brooklyn Brass Works, Inc....	1875	48	C. Lehman Packing Co. ....	1883	40
Th. Engelhardt .....	1875	48	Louis T. Weiss .....	1884	39
Donigan & Nielson, Inc. ....	1875	48	Henry Schlaefer .....	1884	39
A. I. Namm & Son .....	1876	47	Frank H. Tyler .....	1884	39
J. D. Johnson Co., Inc.....	1876	47	Morse Dry Dock & Repair Co..	1884	39
Pioneer Fireproof Storage			Skene Sanitarium .....	1884	39
Warehouses .....	1876	47	R. P. & C. H. McCully, Inc. ...	1885	38
John A. Schwarz, Inc. ....	1876	47	Mutual Life Ins. Co. of N. Y...	1885	38
Hecla Iron Works .....	1876	47	H. Healy .....	1885	38
Fulton Paint & Color Works..	1876	47	H. S. Chardavoyne, Inc. ....	1885	38
Pendleton & Pendleton .....	1876	46	J. F. & W. F. Atkinson .....	1885	38
M. T. Davidson Co. ....	1877	46	I. N. Sievwright .....	1885	38
R. H. Comey Co. ....	1877	46	Jacob Hofer, Inc. ....	1885	38
Jason Moore & Co., Inc. ....	1877	46	John Reis Co. ....	1885	38
Burden & Company .....	1877	46	Thomas Paulson & Son, Inc...	1885	38
J. Lehrenkrauss & Sons .....	1878	45	Fred L. Lavanburg Co. ....	1886	37
Chas. C. Steele .....	1878	45	Fairchild Sons, Inc. ....	1886	37
Brooklyn Bureau of Charities ..	1878	45	John Middleton .....	1886	37
Geo. Schmitt & Co., Inc. ....	1878	45	H. C. Kieselbach .....	1886	37
Charles R. Doane .....	1878	45	Cranford Bros. ....	1886	37
Hugo H. Jahn .....	1878	45	Brooklyn Section, New York		
Royal Arcanum .....	1878	45	"World" .....	1886	37
McEnery's .....	1878	45	Dayton & Montgomery, Inc. ..	1886	37
J. B. Doblin, Inc. ....	1878	45	Brooklyn "Citizen" .....	1886	37
E. J. Sutphin & Son .....	1878	45	Self Winding Clock Company..	1886	37
Joseph Fallert Brew. Co., Ltd.	1878	45	Todd Shipyards Co. ....	1886	37
Eissesser Engineering Co. ....	1878	45	Wm. Eiermann .....	1887	36
Coyne & Delaney Co., Inc. ....	1879	44	Chas. W. Strohbeck, Inc. ....	1887	36
W. M. Evans Dairy Co., Inc. ..	1879	44	Wm. Gleichman & Co. ....	1887	36
Gage & Tollner, Inc. ....	1879	44	Gasau Thompson Co. ....	1887	36
Anthony Sessa & Son .....	1879	44	Robert Gair Company .....	1887	36
Shaw & Truesdell Co. ....	1879	44	International Time Recording		
R. Tyson White's Sons.....	1879	44	Co. ....	1887	36
N. Y. Stamping Co. ....	1879	44	Brooklyn Metal Ceiling Co.		
H. Kohnstamm & Co., Inc. ....	1880	43	Inc. ....	1887	36
Parsons Ammonia Co., Inc. ...	1880	43	Dr. Charles M. Clark .....	1888	35
Stephen H. Cornell .....	1880	43	Hammond B. Clark .....	1888	35
Cary, Harmon & Co., Inc. ....	1880	43	John C. Creveling & Son, Inc...	1888	35
Brooklyn Shield & Rubber Co..	1880	43	E. A. Fitter .....	1888	35
Chas. M. Wiggins & Co. ....	1880	43	Chas. Grismer .....	1888	35
Patrons Paint Works .....	1880	43	C. R. Macaulay Company ....	1888	35
Peter J. Donohue's Sons, Inc. .	1880	43	Tompkins & Tuthill, Inc. ....	1888	35
Chas. M. Higgins & Co. ....	1880	43	John Spicer, Inc. ....	1888	35
Prudential Ins. Co. ....	1880	43	Deverall Perfection Mfg. Co. ..	1888	35
Julius Kayser & Co. ....	1880	43	Wheeler Bros. ....	1888	35
J. D. H. Bergen & Son .....	1881	42	Trepel Florist, Inc. ....	1888	35
James P. Judge .....	1881	42	W. F. Mangels Co. ....	1888	35



Name of Concern	Started	Years in Existence	Name of Concern	Started	Years in Existence
Wm. Knappmann & Co., Inc. ....	1888	35	Johnson Brothers .....	1893	30
Schaeffer Budenberg Mfg. Co. ....	1888	35	Edward Everett Cay, D.D.S. ..	1893	30
Mechanics Bank .....	1888	35	Miller & Doing .....	1893	30
Mergenthaler Linotype Co. ....	1888	35	Industrial Home for Blind ....	1893	30
Justus D. Doenecke & Son ....	1888	35	Totten Furniture & Carpet Co.,		
Michael F. Gleason .....	1889	34	Inc. ....	1893	30
Hermann & Grace Co. ....	1889	34	J. B. Currie & Son .....	1893	30
J. O. Forker's Sons .....	1889	34	Seaberg Elevator Co., Inc. ....	1893	30
A. Price & Son .....	1889	34	Eagle Warehouse & Storage Co. ....	1893	30
Julius Kayser & Co. ....	1889	34	Robinson Brothers .....	1893	30
India Wharf Brewing Co. ....	1889	34	Hatton & Doyle, Inc. ....	1893	30
Wolf Bros. ....	1889	34	Atlantic Woodheel Co. ....	1893	30
Berrian Bros. ....	1889	34	Edward J. Maguire .....	1894	29
Adolph Zink .....	1890	33	Collison & Klingman, Inc. ....	1894	29
Harragans Storage Warehouses,			R. L. Williams, Inc. ....	1894	29
Inc. ....	1890	33	The Pilgrim Steam Laundry Co. ....	1894	29
John Van Ranst .....	1890	33	J. Blair .....	1894	29
Louis Huethwhol Brass Foun-			Frederic Godfrey, Inc. ....	1895	28
dry, Inc. ....	1890	33	Geo. W. Cranbuck Co., Inc. ....	1895	28
Morse & Burt Co. ....	1890	33	Rufus H. Brown .....	1895	28
Jos. W. Malone, M.D. ....	1890	33	Igoe Bros. ....	1895	28
John McQuade & Co., Inc. ....	1890	33	The Fulton Auction Rooms ..	1895	28
Metropolitan Pottery Co., Inc. ....	1890	33	Greenpoint Metallic Bed Co.,		
Thomson Meter Company .....	1890	33	Inc. ....	1895	28
The National Cash Register Co. ....	1890	33	Dr. A. Posner, Shoes, Inc. ....	1895	28
Bedford Branch, Y. M. C. A. ....	1890	33	F. Bischoff, Inc. ....	1895	28
Kramer & Wagner, Inc. ....	1890	33	Thomas Gregory Galvanizing		
Clarence B. Smith .....	1890	33	Works .....	1895	28
M. Cohen & Company .....	1890	33	Wm. H. Curtin Mfg. Co. ....	1895	28
Chelsea Fibre Mills .....	1890	33	New York Dock Company ....	1895	28
Bay Ridge Sheet Metal Works ..	1890	33	Roberts Numbering Machine		
Browning King & Co. ....	1890	33	Co. ....	1896	27
Knox Hat Co. ....	1890	33	Empire Pipe Corporation .....	1896	27
Wingate & Cullen .....	1891	32	Frederick J. Dassau .....	1896	27
Charles L. Gilbert .....	1891	32	E. T. Trotter & Company ....	1896	27
D. Price & Co. ....	1891	32	U. S. Galvanizing & Plating		
Chas. Leffler & Co. ....	1891	32	Equip. Corp. ....	1896	27
Norwegian News Co., Inc. ....	1891	32	Brooklyn Vault Light Co. ....	1896	27
Thomas Burkhard, Inc. ....	1891	32	Nathan Straus, Inc. ....	1896	27
Alfred Bernheim & Sons .....	1891	32	The Manufacturers Under-		
E. J. & S. Grant .....	1891	32	writing Agency .....	1896	27
John Perry .....	1891	32	H. A. Knauber .....	1896	27
Haines Brothers .....	1892	31	Bechtold & Co. ....	1896	27
Geo. E. Hatfield Co. ....	1892	31	Adelphi College .....	1896	27
Prospect Hall .....	1892	31	C. Kenyon Co., Inc. ....	1896	27
J. Sklar Mfg. Co. ....	1892	31	Manhattan Dial Mfg. Co. ....	1897	26
Geo. Weiderman Electric Co. ....	1892	31	Penn Mutual Life Ins. Co. ....	1897	26
Charles E. Bowman Co. ....	1892	31	Sidney A. Meren .....	1897	26
U. S. Printing & Lithographing			Cameron Machine Co., Inc. ....	1897	26
Co. ....	1892	31	Fenwick B. Small .....	1897	26
Star Towel Supply Co. ....	1892	31	Michaels Bros. ....	1897	26
G. Sasso & Sons .....	1892	31	Belmont Stable Supply Co., Inc. ....	1897	26
Nathan Bregstein .....	1892	31	Central Iron Works .....	1897	26
Burns & Astarita .....	1892	31	Charles Tisch, Inc. ....	1897	26
Charles Schad, Inc. ....	1892	31	Lewis H. Pounds .....	1897	26
E. Reed Burns Mfg. Corp. ....	1892	31	John F. McKenna, Inc. ....	1897	26
Leonard N. Vaughan .....	1892	31	Colonial Works .....	1897	26
Orr's Detective Agency .....	1893	30	Electrical Contractors of		
Jones Bros. Tea Co. ....	1893	30	Brooklyn and Queens .....	1897	26
Henry C. Ibbotson .....	1893	30	The Sterling Piano Corporation ..	1897	26
Martin Forge Co., Inc. ....	1893	30	Pierce W. Grace .....	1898	25
Charles A. Soper .....	1893	30	Equitable Life Assurance Soc. ....	1898	25
Brooklyn Metal Decorating and			John M. Wolf Co. ....	1898	25
Dial Co. ....	1893	30	T. B. & H. W. Ackerson .....	1898	25
Henry L. Redfield .....	1893	30	Dondera Dec. Co., Inc. ....	1898	25
Frank J. Gallagher .....	1893	30	Frank A. Seaver & Co. ....	1898	25
Edward Lyons .....	1893	30			

Name of Concern	Started	Years in Existence	Name of Concern	Started	Years in Existence
Charles Partridge Real Estate Co., Inc. ....	1898	25	Brooklyn Blue Print Works ..	1898	25
International Correspondence Schools .....	1898	25	Joseph M. May .....	1898	25
Voss & Lauritzen .....	1898	25	McElraevy & Hauck Co. ....	1898	25
Sunlight Reflector Co. ....	1898	25	William C. Helling .....	1898	25
David H. Smith & Sons, Inc. ..	1898	25	House Pharmacy .....	1898	25
The Albertype Company .....	1898	25	The Myrtle Laundry .....	1898	25
R. W. Bennett & Co. ....	1898	25	S. Lesnick & Sons .....	1898	25
			Wm. Greilich & Sons, Inc. ...	1898	25

#### Borough's Mortgage Total \$750,000,000.

As an indication of the growth in realty investment in New York City in 1923 the total direct mortgage loans on real estate in the five boroughs during the twelvemonth was \$1,296,283,753, as compared with \$946,335,922 in 1922, a gain of \$349,947,831, approximately 37 per cent. Adding to this the total of assignments and extensions of mortgages the grand total is nearly \$2,000,000,000.

Brooklyn led all boroughs with a total of \$502,628,302 direct mortgages, as compared with \$285,696,192 for 1922, a gain of over 75 per cent. Manhattan came next with a total of \$445,576,221, as against \$369,873,200 in 1922, a gain of over 20 per cent. The total for Queens was \$170,804,522, as compared with \$133,969,418 in 1922 a gain of 27 per cent. The aggregate for the Bronx was \$156,746,400, as compared with \$139,383,306 in 1922, a gain of over 12 per cent. The Richmond total was \$20,528,308, as compared with \$17,413,806 in 1922, a gain of \$3,114,502, or approximately 18 per cent.

To the above must be added the money put into assignments and extensions of mortgages. This has been computed as \$215,000,000 for the County of New York and \$28,000,000 for the Bronx. While no accurate computation has been made for the amount in dollars in the Kings County office yet, the total number of assignments, extensions and other mortgage agreements was 47,850, as compared with 61,351 straight mortgages. It is estimated that the average amount of these assignments and extensions is at least equal to 75 per cent of that of the straight mortgages. Many are second mortgages sold by builders. But many are first mortgages sold by the bond and mortgage and title companies. One title company has sold \$1,000,000,000 worth in the thirty years since its formation. It is estimated by experts that the value of such instruments recorded in Brooklyn last year was not less than \$250,000,000; not less than \$100,000,000 in Queens and \$7,000,000 in Richmond. This would give a total approximately of \$600,000,000 put into assigned mortgages, extensions and other transfers, and a grand total of \$1,900,000,000 put into real estate loans in the year 1923.

It is said by realty experts that in no city in the world was so much money put into real estate in 1923 as in Greater New York. In fact they say there is no near approach to it by any other city.

The growing attractiveness of real estate as an investment brought into the field a number of big bond houses which had dealt heretofore solely in railways, industrials and other forms of securities. This departure was due to the fact that a number of long-term bonds having thirty to fifty years to run had depreciated and some had defaulted. Owing to the fact that their low rate of interest was fixed and could not be changed during their term, when interest rates go up owing to the demands for money in times of prosperity, these bonds cannot be sold by the owner except at a loss. The real estate mortgages run from three to five years and never defaulted.



The payment of the one-half of 1 per cent recording fee frees them from State and local taxation, and with lowering of the Federal surtax still larger amounts were regarded as sure to flow into the real estate field and give every department of the building industry a new impulse.

The great activity in real estate sales was shown by the fact that there were 171,381 conveyances in the entire city in 1923, as compared with 139,416 in 1922. Brooklyn led with 63,828. Queens was a close second with 62,572. Then follows Manhattan with 21,533, the Bronx with 17,178 and Richmond with 6,720.

According to totals compiled in the office of Register James A. McQuade the total of money loaned on Kings County real estate in 1923 was \$502,628,302. The recording fees and taxes collected aggregated \$3,156,124.76.

The total number of deeds recorded in 1923 was 63,828, as compared with 50,379 in 1922 and 46,736 in 1921; the total number of mortgages recorded, 109,201, as compared with 87,082 in 1922 and 65,390 in 1921; the total of miscellaneous papers, such as judgments, liens, etc., was 1,158, as compared with 1,382 in 1922 and 1,014 in 1921. The total of fees of the office turned over to the City Comptroller for recording papers of all kinds and the city's share of the mortgage tax was \$639,463.15, plus \$504.34 interest on amounts deposited in banks. The total cost of collecting the more than \$2,500,000 mortgage tax was \$15,637.21.

In 1923 2,350,000 folios of deeds and mortgages were recorded in Brooklyn, for which the regular charge by the city is 15 cents per folio. The copyist gets 5 cents. A small portion of the surplus is used for the expense of comparing, etc., but the larger part goes to the city treasury.

Judging by the first five months of 1924 there was every indication that the activity in real estate would continue. During that period 94,201 papers were recorded and filed affecting real estate, an increase of 16,861 over the corresponding period of 1923. In the chattel mortgage division of the Register's office 34,598 instruments were filed, an increase of 2,115 over the same period in 1923.

## CHAPTER XXXVIII

### BROOKLYN CHAMBER OF COMMERCE

GROVER CLEVELAND was responsible in reality for the Manufacturers' Association of New York. Probably he did not intend to bring about such a result. At the time he was elected for a second term in 1892, prosperity smiled upon the American manufacturer. The Little Giant of industry felt his strength and was stretching out his arms to grasp or to embrace in every direction. American superiority was matched against the world and was gaining every year. In Maryland a boiler tube, considered the best made anywhere, was being turned out by the Principio Rolling Mill and Iron Company. Whittaker Bros., of Wheeling, owned the plant, and they also owned as fine a grade of ore as had been discovered anywhere. It was abundant and it was unequalled. It needed capital, and Brooklyn came forward to provide it. Henry B. Haigh, Jacob Murer, Isaac Cary and James T. Hoile were able to do this.

The plant was to be completed and operated at full capacity. The Vice-President and General Manager was to have an elegant home in Principio, but Mr. Cleveland was elected President. His tariff views were known to all, and



NIGHT VIEW OF CHAMBER OF COMMERCE BUILDING





the Principio proceedings stopped short. They were called off. When Haigh realized that the election was going against his interests, he remarked dryly: "The people have voted for it. If they want the empty dinner pail, why let them have it."

The empty dinner pail did follow, but before labor suffered the manufacturer who employed labor felt the pinch of the hard times. Manufacturers got together to act in concert; to find out what their best interests demanded and to try to get it. A year after Cleveland took office, they incorporated the Manufacturers' Association. The date was March 16, 1894; the place the old Union League Club in Bedford Avenue and the incorporators: Lowell B. Palmer, Henry B. Haigh, William H. Nichols and E. Dwight Church. At first, meetings were held in the Pouch Gallery in Clinton Avenue. Afterward it held forth at No. 199 Montague Street, a building with another entrance at No. 16 Court.

**The Manufacturers Association of New York**—The first meeting looking forward to the organization of the manufacturers of Brooklyn into a corporation for their mutual benefit and for their advancement and protection was held at the Union League Club, February 20, 1894.

An invitation had been sent out to many of the leading business men of Brooklyn, and the result was a call issued by the following: Lowell M. Powell, Brooklyn Cooperage Co.; H. B. Haigh, Iron Clad Man. Co.; T. C. Smith, Union Porcelain Works; D. R. Morse, Howard & Morse; W. H. Nichols, Nichols Chemical Co.; W. H. Leitch, Abenroth & Root Manufacturing Co.; J. Adolph Mollenhauer, Charles R. Keator, R. Dunlap & Co.; H. C. Beck, W. C. Vosburg Manufacturing Co.; James Cochran, Lalance Grosjean Manufacturing Co.; J. H. Schuman, Moller & Schuman; W. L. Pearce, Lidgerwood Manufacturing Co.; E. Dwight Church, Church & Co.; H. J. Vogel, Vogel & Co.; A. R. Jennings, Jennings Lace Works; A. R. Whitney, Whitney & Co.; J. G. Dunscombe, Chrome Steel Works; Walter Manderville, E. C. Smith & Co.; J. Meurer, Meurer & Bros.; William Logan, Logan Iron Works.

The invitation set forth the lofty objects of the proposed association as follows:

"The fundamental object of this association shall be to promote the interest of the manufacturers and employees of the manufacturers, in such manner as may best conserve the interest of all concerned. A further object shall be the promotion of social intercourse among the members, and an exchange of views upon such subjects as may be of interest and importance to the manufacturers, and to keep the members advised of any legislation, which in any way affects the manufacturers."

On March 9, 1894, with ninety manufacturers present, a permanent organization was perfected. The names of the first officers were as follows: President, Henry B. Haigh; 1st and 2nd Vice-Presidents, W. H. Nichols and E. C. Webb; Secretary, James T. Hoile; Treasurer, W. H. Leitch, with a board of twenty directors. The first name under which they were incorporated was "The Manufacturers' Association of Kings and Queens Counties"; then followed its long and widely-known name, The Manufacturers' Association of New York.

This association was at the forefront of all good civic movements and to fight all bad ones. Its power and influence were felt, and anxiously sought for, not only in the city but at Albany and at Washington. Any committees that were sent to the front to represent it were made up of the brightest and most representative men, irrespective of their political affiliations. Men in whom the community at large reposed confidence and who, when they sought any one thing, were almost always sure to gain their end.



Their annual dinners were attended by many hundreds of members and guests, and the speakers were from all over the country, the ablest and best.

This association submitted many valuable suggestions to the city as well as the State government.

About three hundred men controlling the industries around New York harbor were behind the movement. They made their headquarters in Brooklyn and their membership was composed largely of Brooklyn manufacturers. Indeed, the name of Brooklyn stuck to the organization. It was logical to have the headquarters of this association in Brooklyn, because fully 55 per cent of western freight which went out from New York City was shipped from the Brooklyn side of the East River between South Second and South Tenth Streets, and a very large proportion of the big manufacturing interests of New York were in Brooklyn. This meant that everything of civic importance in Brooklyn—the waterfront situation, the transit problem, the condition of the streets, the building laws and a multiplicity of other things were of vital importance to a number of men of affairs.

In 1898, another organization was formed, called the Brooklyn League, whose object was to bring together all citizens of Brooklyn interested in the betterment of conditions in their city. Its headquarters was in 44 Court Street. Its functions were purely of a civic nature.

For almost twenty years, the Manufacturers' Association and the Brooklyn League were the principal civic bodies in Brooklyn. At various times there was wide discussion of a project to bring about the consolidation of these two organizations, so as to form a large body which would be truly representative of Brooklyn. Both of these organizations sought to represent Brooklyn as a whole, but the power of each was very limited. It seemed proper, too, to bring about the coalescence of various small civic and social organizations in Brooklyn, each of which were functioning separately and often in direct conflict with each other.

On April 16, 1913, there appeared in one of the local papers a statement from Simon F. Rothchild, of Abraham and Straus', to the effect that the proper solution of the whole problem was the formation of a Chamber of Commerce.

"The thought came to me a number of years ago," he said, "in view of the different Brooklyn organizations taking opposite sides on an important public question with the result that nothing was accomplished. One strong central organization is very desirable and, personally, I welcome the idea. Too often sectional interests have impeded improvements in this borough. With a proper central organization this would be a thing of the past. Brooklyn needs this Chamber of Commerce and if formed it would grow to be of great importance to this borough."

Shortly after, and sometime during 1913, the Manufacturers' Association became the Chamber of Commerce of Brooklyn, still operating in a more or less limited capacity.

In 1915, the City Club of Brooklyn, another civic organization, and the Brooklyn League, finding that their interests and memberships overlapped, united their forces and became the Brooklyn Civic Club.

The Civic Club became a factor in the community through its interesting forum and luncheon meetings. The Chamber of Commerce of Brooklyn, while it kept to the old policies of the Manufacturers' Association, found that instead of increasing its power was gradually diminishing. A much stronger central body than either of these was necessary to be worthy of a city of the size and importance of Brooklyn. So, on February 6, 1918, before the Hon. David R. Manning, Justice of the Supreme Court, articles consolidating the Brooklyn



#### LOWER FULTON STREET BEFORE THE DAYS OF THE ELEVATED RAILROAD

This picture shows an old neighborhood of Brooklyn, which at the time was one of the busiest sections in town. Fulton Street, the main approach to the old Fulton Ferry, was the business address of some of the most prominent firms of Brooklyn. Some readers will remember the names of the old firms listed here: Hetfield & Ducker, cracker bakers, who later consolidated with the National Biscuit Company; W. H. Moore, the largest harness maker in Brooklyn at that time; Heaney, the Artist Hatter; Turnbull, the Hatter; The Brooklyn Bank, corner of Fulton and Front Streets; The Kings County Bank, 47 Fulton Street; Towns & James, now at 217 Duffield Street; T. C. and D. D. Whitney, wholesale grocers; Valentine & Bergen, wholesale grocers; William E. Smith, wholesale pork butcher; John D. Prince, paint manufacturer. The picture is the property of Ray, Daisley & Co., sheet metal workers, now at 226 Sands Street, who succeeded Ray, Forder & Co., in 1870. Ray, Daisley & Co. occupied the building shown in the picture until 1922, when it was torn down for the enlargement of Peronti's garage.





Civic Club and the Chamber of Commerce of Brooklyn were signed and a new organization came into being, which is the present Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce.

The Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce began its career with a membership of about 1,000 and occupied the offices of the Civic Club at 127 Remsen Street. The organization of the Chamber came at a very difficult time—right in the midst of the Great War, when the attention of everyone was taken up by war service in one form or another. Yet, so keen was the civic spirit in Brooklyn and so zealous were its founders, that the new Chamber of Commerce not only managed to keep on its feet, but increased its membership and by November, 1918, was able to establish itself in the handsome new building at 32 Court Street, where it is at present located.

Showing wisdom and foresight, the Board of Directors leased the three top floors and part of the twentieth floor of the tallest building in Brooklyn, and equipped them attractively. The twenty-first floor, furnished as a lounge, commands a magnificent view of Brooklyn from all points of the compass, as well as an unexcelled view of New York Bay and the skyline of lower Manhattan. An adequate dining room was installed and provisions were made for committee and conference rooms. It was not long before bankers, ministers, trade organizations, social service workers and numerous other groups found the Chamber of Commerce the logical place for their meetings, thus making the Chamber of Commerce a true community center.

The first president and officers of the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce were: James Sherlock Davis, President; Edwin P. Maynard, Vice-President; J. Adolph Mollenhauer, Vice-President; Walter Hammitt, Vice-President; Thomas J. Riley, Secretary; Charles L. Schenck, Treasurer.

Directors: John T. Barry, Edward C. Blum, Herbert B. Brush, Herbert L. Carpenter, William Hamlin Childs, Frank W. Conn, George Dressler, Guy Du Val, Charles Jerome Edwards, William H. English, Charles H. Fuller, Marshal W. Gleason, James S. Graham, Stanley E. Gunnison, William S. Hubbard, M. D., Darwin R. James, Jr., Ralph Jonas, Hans von Kaltenborn, Jacob C. Klinck, Thomas L. Leeming, Victor A. Lersner, Frederick D. MacKay, Alexander MacKintosh, William McCarroll, Charles Coleman Miller, Hugh H. O'Beirne, Thomas V. Patterson, Louis H. Pink, Frederic B. Pratt, Charles G. Ross, Charles F. Tuttle, John W. Weber, Walter F. Wells, Edward H. Wilson.

The Chamber of Commerce is a community organization established and maintained for community service. Its purpose is to promote the industrial, commercial, civic and social welfare of Brooklyn. It is actively engaged in promoting constructive improvements in the borough. It is constantly on the alert to protect the citizens, their homes, their business and their industries against unjust discriminations. It is attempting to bring together and solidify into one effective instrument the forces in this community which are willing to work together for the community welfare.

The Chamber of Commerce is the clearing house for industrial and civic information about Brooklyn. It is the central agency in the borough for the promotion of her business interests. It is the one organization which attempts to look after the bigger and broader problems of the city.

At the beginning, the Board of Directors of the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce formulated a program which still is the basis for the many activities of the Chamber. This program was divided into three parts, namely, industrial, commercial and civic work. The industrial side of the program included (1)



the compilation of full and complete industrial statistics concerning the industries of the borough, including the number of employes, the chief product manufactured, principal raw material used, annual production and facilities for shipping and distribution. (2) The publication and distribution of an industrial directory of Brooklyn. (3) The listing and mapping of all available sites for new industries, with information concerning labor conditions, shipping facilities, power facilities, market advantages and supplying detailed information to inquiring manufacturers who may be seeking a location for a factory. (4) The compilation and printing for distribution of booklets, setting forth the industrial advantages of Brooklyn. (5) Organizing and maintaining groups among the manufacturers who are interested in exchanging views and promoting their own special trade or industry, such as shoe manufacturers, metal trade manufacturers, coal dealers, etc. (6) Organizing and promoting clubs composed of the special men in industries, such as employments managers, traffic managers, etc. (7) Arranging and promoting industrial exhibits for the purpose of advertising Brooklyn's industrial products. (8) Arranging conferences for the consideration of new plans of organization and relationship between manufacturers and employes. (9) Advocating street railway, harbor and other improvements to increase Brooklyn's advantages as an industrial center.

The commercial activities as outlined in the program were: (1) Planning and promoting improvements in the freight transportation facilities of Brooklyn by the construction of freight and passenger tunnels connecting Brooklyn and Staten Island; and by the construction of a belt line terminal railroad connecting the freight tunnels at Bay Ridge with the railroads in Queens Borough. (2) Investigating plans for and furthering improvements in New York port facilities, particularly those improvements already provided for by Congress. (3) Advocating and promoting the advantages of Brooklyn banking and other financial institutions to Brooklyn manufacturers. (4) Establishing and maintaining a traffic bureau for purpose of furnishing shippers and manufacturers with information regarding the tariffs and shipping regulations; representing the Brooklyn shippers on rates and tariffs before government commissions; protecting Brooklyn industries against rate discriminations; improving the freight, express and postal facilities of the borough. (5) Furnishing information to and aiding Brooklyn industries in all matters relating to foreign commerce. (6) Urging the opening of main thoroughfares and improvements in transportation in the interest of local retail merchants.

The civic end of the program provided for: (1) the consideration of legislation, Federal, State and city, which affects Brooklyn; supporting that which is good and opposing that which is bad for the borough. (2) Investigating and advocating plans for the improvement of the educational facilities of Brooklyn; co-operating with existing agencies in the extension of vocational and commercial education; securing for Brooklyn its full share of new school buildings and educational advantages; and considering the possibilities of a university in Brooklyn. (3) Advocating legislation for the adoption of adequate Federal and State budget procedure; analysis of New York City budget to show the cost of city and county government. (4) Promoting better street pavements and street maintenance; urging the improvements in the regulation of street traffic and the marking and improvement of motor highways; and conducting campaigns to force the improvement of new highways. (5) Planning and promoting the opening of new main thoroughfares connecting various sections of the borough; particularly a direct and wide highway connecting the business



ARTHUR SOMERS





section of the borough with the large suburban areas on Long Island; insisting upon the full observance of the zoning law in the borough; developing new plans for the improvement of the borough. (6) Investigating and advocating the right and permanent solution of street railway difficulties; promoting the construction of the Ashland Place connection; urging the completion and opening up of subways already under construction in the borough and the building of new subways wherever needed. (7) Urging the Street Cleaning Department to adopt an economical and efficient method of collecting and disposing of the city's waste, and making a study of the best method of sewage disposal for borough and city. (8) Investigating the need and advantages of public markets, and promoting improvements in the transportation and distribution of Brooklyn's food supply. (9) Investigating plans and advocating ways and means for increasing house and apartment building in the borough of Brooklyn. (10) Investigating and advocating plans for effecting a co-ordination of welfare work in Brooklyn and New York City. (11) Keeping in touch with local, State and Federal taxation legislation, and urging the adoption of such laws as will tend to equalize the burdens of taxation. (12) Investigating the parks and playgrounds into the borough and urging the adoption of such changes as will make them more serviceable to the people; investigating the possibility of the improvement of Coney Island as a bathing beach, and urging improvements which will make it a more attractive recreation ground for all the people.

The Board of Directors early established the working principle that the Chamber must have the facts, and both sides of the case, if possible, must be presented, before any recommendations are adopted. The observance of this principle has prevented blunders and has added strength to the Chamber's decisions. In order to carry out its work along these lines, it was necessary to appoint a sufficient number of committees from among the members of the Chamber, composed of those who could specialize in each particular subject under discussion. It is through the committees that the actual research work of the Chamber is carried out and the detailed work of each committee is handled by a member of the paid staff of the Chamber. At the organization of the Chamber, there were twenty-three committees; at the time of writing there are twenty-nine committees as follows: City Plan, Cleaner Brooklyn, Commercial Arbitration, Education, Executive, Finance, Forum, Hotel, House, Immigration and Naturalization, Internal Organization, Inland Waterways, Insurance Legislation, Local Transit, Membership, National Affairs, Parks and Playgrounds, Permanent Chamber Building, Port and Terminals, Postal Affairs, Public Health, Publicity, Public Markets, Reception, Referendum, Social Welfare, Streets and Highways, and Taxation.

From its beginning the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce gradually grew in membership until in 1924 it had an enrollment of nearly 7,000, making it the seventh largest Chamber of Commerce in the United States. Starting with a secretary and two or three stenographers, the staff of the Chamber has grown so that there are at present a secretary, seven managers of various departments, an editor and a large corps of clerical assistants; but the Chamber of Commerce has become so important a factor in the community that even this large staff is inadequate to handle all the problems which confront it.

Recognizing that there were always to be certain groups among the members of the Chamber of Commerce interested in specific subjects, and who had problems which could be solved through group meetings, the founders of the Chamber embodied in the constitution of the Chamber an article providing for



sub-organizations. There are at present four such sub-organizations, namely, the Advertising Club, which is affiliated with the Associated Advertising Clubs of the World; and whose membership is composed of those members of the Chamber who are interested in advertising in one way or another. Luncheon meetings are held regularly at which the guest of honor is a specialist in some phase of advertising. The Management Club, composed for the most part of personnel directors, employment managers and factory superintendents of the industries and mercantile establishments in Brooklyn, whose purpose is to provide an opportunity for the study and discussion of the relationship between management and employees. The Traffic Club, which was organized to promote and protect Brooklyn's transportation facilities and to cultivate closer relations between those interested in the transportation of freight and passengers as carriers and shippers and promote their mutual interests; and the Manufacturers' Council, which is an emergency organization consisting of a chairman, secretary and a council of twenty-four men, representing as nearly as possible all the important trade groups of Brooklyn. The Manufacturers' Council meet only on call of the Chairman, or on call of the President of the Chamber of Commerce, when there is some emergency, such as a strike, that confronts all of Brooklyn.

Besides the sub-organizations mentioned above, which are part of the Chamber of Commerce itself, the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce was responsible for the formation of two other organizations, which are distinctly apart from the Chamber of Commerce and of which the Chamber is merely a member organization. One is the Brooklyn Safety Council and the other is the Civic Council of Brooklyn.

The Brooklyn Safety Council was organized to safeguard the lives of those who live in Brooklyn—on the streets, in the factories, or wherever human life is in danger. Already it has been instrumental in reducing the number of accidental deaths in Brooklyn.

The idea of the Civic Council of Brooklyn originated with Mr. Arthur S. Somers, the present president of the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce, who believed that only by the co-ordination of all the organizations interested in the welfare of Brooklyn could real constructive work be done. The aim of the organizers was to bring all the civic activities of the borough together in support of definite programs of improvements. Heretofore, Brooklyn suffered particularly when presenting claims to the city authorities through divisions in the ranks of the various civic organizations often occasioned by petty local jealousies. The Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce in no way controls the Civic Council, but is merely a member organization itself.

At the time of writing there are 73 organizations, including the largest, oldest and strongest civic bodies in the city, who are member organizations. Local jealousies and interests are abolished completely through the Civic Council. Each member organization rests secure in the knowledge that the Council recognizes no local boundary lines, but is working for the good of Brooklyn as a whole. Some of the problems upon which the Council is working are: the Crosstown Subway, the various proposed routes and the attitudes and motives of those favoring each; the 14th Street-Eastern District Subway, the Fort Hamilton extension of the Fourth Avenue Line, the Jamaica Bay improvement, the proposals for improving Atlantic Avenue, the completion of the Brooklyn Central Public Library, several educational institutions, i. e., a borough university, trade schools for boys and for girls, probationary schools; the better care of streets and service requirements on various car lines.

From its inauguration, the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce has been the organization through which all the distinguished visitors to Brooklyn are received and entertained and its forum meetings have been marked by the appearance of speakers of national and international prominence.

Through its official organ, "Brooklyn," the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce has been able to disseminate information concerning its activities, and also has been the means of aiding, through publicity, the industrial, commercial and civic growth of Brooklyn. This organ is widely read all over the country and has been acknowledged as one of the leading chamber of commerce bulletins.

In 1922, the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce, through its Manufacturers' Council, sponsored the first Brooklyn Manufacturers' Industrial Exposition. This was held in the 23rd Regiment Armory and since has become a yearly event of growing interest. The crowds which fill the armory each year attest to its popularity. Here on display are exhibits from the leading and representative Brooklyn manufacturers and in no better way can Brooklyn people, and visitors, as well, learn of the wide range and volume of commodities made in Brooklyn.

Space does not permit the detailed account of the multifarious activities in which the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce has been engaged since its beginning; but suffice it to say that the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce has fathered and stands behind every movement which means a bigger and a better Brooklyn.

GRANT E. SCOTT, *Secretary*.

#### The Telephone in Brooklyn.

Few factors have contributed more to the economic and social development of Brooklyn than has the telephone. Brooklyn shares with Manhattan the distinction of having the first telephone installation in what is now Greater New York. In 1877, two years after Alexander Graham Bell in his Boston attic workshop had spoken the epoch-making "Watson, come here; I want you" over the first telephone, a single line was strung across the half-finished Brooklyn Bridge, connecting the factory of the J. H. Haigh Steel Company in South Brooklyn with the office of that company at 81 John Street, New York. The Haigh works were engaged at the time in producing the steel cables for the new bridge.

This, the first commercial use of the telephone in Greater New York, was engineered by the Telephone Company of New York, of which Charles A. Cheever and Hilborne L. Roosevelt were the organizers. These men, enthusiastic over the success of the telephone in Boston, and foreseeing the limitless possibilities of the "scientific toy," had secured from the Bell Telephone Association of Boston the right to operate in New York.

Although it started business with the greatest expectation, the new company did not even attempt to establish a central office exchange, but contented itself with stringing only separate overhead wires each linking two telephones. "Born in adversity, fostered in poverty," the Telephone Company of New York lasted barely a year. Cheever and Roosevelt gladly disposed of their holdings to the parent organization in Boston for \$18,000, and a new company, known as the Bell Telephone Company of New York, was formed with a capital of \$100,000. Theodore N. Vail, a young man who had made an enviable record as an organizer, was placed at the head of the new company. Under his able direction the first regular telephone central office was opened at 82 Nassau street, Manhattan, in March, 1879.



The first directory of the Bell Telephone Company of New York listed a total of 252 subscribers, five of whom were residence subscribers in Brooklyn, although they were served from the central office in New York. These early subscribers were: A. Barricle, 52 Sedgwick Street; Robert Brown, 280 Carlton Avenue; Miss S. A. Duryea, 188 Washington Street; S. B. Duryea, 46 Remsen Street, and R. H. Low, 34 Columbia Heights.

Miss Duryea, who is living and a telephone user today, has the distinction of being the first Brooklyn woman to have a residence telephone. In fact, she is one of the first women in the world to subscribe to telephone service.

The first exchange service in Brooklyn was given by the Long Island Telephone Company, organized in 1879 to take over the Long Island business. In the fall of that year the first central office was opened and designated "Brooklyn." This central office, as well as the business office of the company, was located on the second floor of an old frame building on the southeast corner of Pierrepont and Fulton Streets. In the spring of 1880 two new central offices were opened, known as "Greenpoint" and "Williamsburgh."

Some of the men who installed the first telephones and erected the first pole in Brooklyn are in the service today with the New York Telephone Company. They are Thomas P. Fitzpatrick, John O'Rourke, Stephen D. Snook and John C. Peaty, all members of the plant engineering department in Brooklyn.

During this early development all the wires were placed overhead on poles, and as the system grew the congestion became so great that in some sections the sun's rays could hardly penetrate to the streets. The necessity of placing the wires underground was hastened by a violent sleet storm in the winter of 1881 which tore down the flimsy overhead construction, leaving not a single line standing. It became necessary, therefore, to devise some way of putting the wires underground without impairing the usefulness and efficiency of the system.

Work alone this line was held up temporarily during 1883 due to the consolidation of the Long Island Telephone Company with the New York and New Jersey Telephone Company, whose territory consisted, roughly, of Long Island and northern New Jersey. Prominent among the Brooklyn men in the new organization were Mr. Alexander Cameron, vice-president, and Mr. W. D. Sargent, general manager.

At the time of its formation the new company had in Brooklyn only the three central offices, serving a total of 1,656 subscribers, which were acquired with the Long Island Telephone Company. Within a year, however, a new central office was added at East New York, while others were established at Flushing, Babylon, Far Rockaway and Astoria.

Although experiments in underground construction were started in Massachusetts, it is a noteworthy fact that the work of the New York and New Jersey Telephone Company in placing 134 miles of wire underground during 1886 as part of the early experimental work proved to be a landmark in the development of the science of telephony.

The early headquarters of the New York and New Jersey Telephone Company were located in the Y. M. C. A. Building at 16 Smith Street, where a larger switchboard for the "Brooklyn" central office had been installed and a business office opened on the ground floor. It was a dozen years or so later that definite steps were taken toward acquiring new quarters for the company's rapidly growing general offices. In 1896 a site at 65 to 81 Willoughby Street was purchased, covered at the time with two-story and basement frame dwellings. November,

1899, saw the completion of the new eight-story brick fireproof structure which was to house the offices of the company.

The number of persons using the telephone service had increased with great rapidity since 1893 when, due to the reduction in operating expenses brought about by the efficient management of Mr. U. N. Bethell, rates were considerably reduced. Up until that time the rates for telephone service had been very high, 15 cents a call for local service, and under a flat rate, \$240 a year, which resulted in confining the use of telephones to less than 10 per cent of the business concerns in Brooklyn.

The next significant date in Brooklyn's telephone history is 1909, when the operations of the old New York and New Jersey Telephone Company were taken over by the newly formed New York Telephone Company, whose territory, in addition to New York City itself, included the entire State of New York, northern New Jersey and a small portion of southwestern Connecticut.

Of the members of the board of directors of the New York and New Jersey Company at the time it became part of the New York Company about half were Brooklyn men. These were Alexander Cameron, Theodore F. Miller, James Jourdan, William C. Courtney, William Berri, John C. Reilly, Howard F. Thurber, William D. Sargent and George H. Prentiss. There were about 60,000 subscribers in Brooklyn, served by thirteen central offices: Bay Ridge, Bedford, Bushwick, East New York, Flatbush, Greenpoint, Hamilton, Main, Prospect, South, Williamsburgh, Bath Beach and Coney Island.

For thirty-five or forty years telephone growth in Brooklyn kept pace with the demand for service. In recent years, however, the expansion has been exceedingly rapid, imposing a serious problem upon the telephone company. Since the signing of the armistice in 1918, apartment houses and duplex houses have been erected almost without number and the enormous influx of new residents, the majority of whom desire telephone service, goes on unabated. The past few years have witnessed the erection of many new central office buildings in all parts of the borough, and a large addition to the general office building at Willoughby and Bridge Streets has just been completed.

No small portion of the new telephone construction is being carried on in the older districts of Brooklyn, where dwellings are being converted into apartments and where an entirely new type of telephone demand has sprung up in the past few years from people who have never before been potential telephone users. Not long ago the telephone company found little demand for its service in homes or flats below the \$30 a month class, but with the passing of \$30 rents and the establishment of a new living standard, the demand for telephone service has become almost universal.

Brooklyn's more than 270,000 telephone subscribers are served through twenty-five central offices, operated by a force of over 4,000 trained young women. There are in the borough of Brooklyn between eight and nine thousand people employed by the telephone company in its various departments. This does not include the many employees of the company who live in Brooklyn but who work in other boroughs.

Among the Brooklyn men who were instrumental in developing the telephone service of the borough is Charles F. Kelleher of the commercial department, New York Telephone Company, who entered the service of the old Bell Telephone Company in October, 1879, as a switchboard operator. In those days the switchboard extended from the floor to a height of about seven feet, so that it was necessary to stand up while operating and to run back and forth in front of the board. The



boy operators, it was soon found, were not temperamentally fitted for the work, and were soon replaced by girls.

Bancroft Gherardi, now vice-president and chief engineer of the American Telephone and Telegraph Company, was one of the leading figures in the development of telephone service in Brooklyn. Mr. Gherardi, who entered the telephone service in 1895, received his engineering education at Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute, from which he was graduated in 1891 with the degree of bachelor of science.

## CHAPTER XXXIV

### BANKING

**B**ROOKLYN'S growth in population, industry and trade in 1923 was accompanied by continued progress of her commercial banking. Banking facilities have been extended in neighborhoods where the demand for new facilities has made itself apparent, and the result has been the opening of two new national banks, one new State bank and the establishment of several new branches of existing institutions.

Mergers of banks, and the absorption of smaller institutions by larger ones was not a feature of 1923, as it was of 1922.

The new banks established in 1923 were the following:

National Bank of Bay Ridge, Fourth Avenue and 50th Street; Jacob Schaefer, Jr., president; opened April 2, 1923.

Bushwick National Bank, Broadway and Hopkinson Avenue, Francis I. Ketcham, president; opened Sept. 4, 1923.

Flatbush State Bank, 1505 Avenue J, John E. Biggins, president; opened Oct. 1, 1923.

These new banks, of course, are in addition to the new savings banks opened in the Borough in the past year—the Kings Highway and the Fort Hamilton Savings.

Three of the older State banks have enlarged their quarters in the last year. The Municipal Bank erected a new seven-story office and bank building adjoining its old home on Pitkin Avenue, near Stone Avenue, and also projected a new branch at Eastern Parkway and Kingston Avenue. The Bank of Coney Island greatly increased its quarters by completion of its new building at Coney Island, and the Bank of Sheepshead Bay, one of the youngest of local institutions, a little more than a year old, enlarged its quarters on Sheepshead Bay Road, near East 16th Street.

The Mechanics Bank, largest of the State banks in Brooklyn, operating nine branches, was erecting a new building on Gates Avenue, near Broadway.

A relatively young institution, the Midwood Trust Company, whose main office is at Flatbush Avenue and Dorchester Road, expanded by opening two branches—one at Flatbush Avenue near Nostrand, and the other downtown, at 47 Willoughby Street.

The Manufacturers Trust Company, largest of all the Brooklyn banks, continued its policy of acquiring banks by merger. Incidentally, the Manufacturers has modified its strictly local character by absorbing banks and their branches in Manhattan, and also by moving its executive offices to 139 Broadway, Manhat-

tan. The company last July, took over the Columbia Bank, operating three offices in Manhattan and the Bronx, and thus brought its total number of branch offices in the city to eleven. With this consolidation, the deposits of the Manufacturers Trust reached the \$100,000,000 mark, and at the end of the year the institution's total deposits stood at \$104,000,000, a gain of \$47,000,000 in the year. The Manufacturers some time ago announced that it would open a new branch at 190 Joralemon Street, giving it twelve branches in the city. This will be the company's first downtown Brooklyn office.

Although declines in deposits and resources have been experienced in the past year by the general run of large financial institutions in Manhattan, the Brooklyn banks and trust companies have done notably well in this respect. On the average, resources and deposits have been maintained at top figures, even excluding the gains of the Manufacturers Trust Company, by reason of absorption of other banks.

Total deposits of the local banks and trust companies stood at \$339,383,874 at the beginning of the new year, compared with \$281,459,973 a year ago. The gains, as distributed among the trust companies, State banks and National banks, have been as follows:

	1924	1923
Trust Companies .....	\$228,911,373	\$183,157,236
State Banks .....	67,381,434	59,325,901
National Banks .....	43,091,067	38,976,836
	<hr/>	<hr/>
	\$339,383,874	\$281,459,973

**Brooklyn Trust Company**—The Brooklyn Trust Company was incorporated on April 14, 1866, by an act of the New York Legislature, there being an urgent demand in Brooklyn for a strong banking institution which should act as executor or trustee and in various other fiduciary capacities. Its deposits increased from \$1,625,594.33 on April 1, 1876, to \$41,335,873.75 on December 31, 1923. In March, 1903, a branch was established at Fulton Street and Bedford Avenue for the convenience of the Bedford district of Brooklyn, and in May, 1907, the company opened a New York office at Wall Street and Broadway. The Long Island Loan and Trust Company was merged with the Brooklyn Trust Company in January, 1913, thus still further adding to the extensive resources of the company and increasing its power to render the fullest fiduciary and financial service. On July 8, 1921, a branch was opened at 7428 Fifth Avenue, at Seventy-fifth Street, for the convenience of Bay Ridge depositors.

The original incorporators were: Henry E. Pierrepont, Jasper W. Gilbert, James Weaver, Alfred M. Wood, John T. Runcie, William Wall, Alexander McCue, William B. Lewis, Daniel Chauncey, Daniel F. Fernald, J. Carson Brevoort, Cornelius J. Sprague, John H. Prentice, Henry J. Cullen and William M. Harris.

The trustees in 1924 were: Frank L. Babbott, Walter St. J. Benedict, Samuel W. Boocock, Thomas Dickson, William N. Dykman, John H. Emanuel, Jr., William H. English, Martin E. Goetzinger, Francis L. Hine, David H. Lanman, Josiah O. Low, Frank Lyman, Howard W. Maxwell, Edwin P. Maynard, J. Adolph Mollenhauer, Frank C. Munson, Robert L. Pierrepont, Harold I. Pratt, Clinton L. Rossiter, Frank D. Tuttle, J. H. Walbridge, Alexander M. White and Willis D. Wood.



The officers in 1924 were: President, Edwin P. Maynard; vice-presidents, David H. Lanman, Frank J. W. Diller, Willis McDonald, Jr., Frederick T. Aldridge; Robert U. Silleck; vice-president and secretary, Willard P. Schenck; assistant secretaries, Horace W. Farrell, Gilbert H. Thirkield, Frederick B. Lindsay, Charles B. Royce, Charles A. Cole, Henry W. Hodges, Oscar F. Youngman; comptroller, Frederick R. Cortis.

Advisory committee at the Bedford office: Edward Lyons, William McCarroll, H. A. Moody, Frederick L. Cadman and William A. Higgins.

Advisory committee at the Bay Ridge office: William A. Brodie, Stephen V. Duffy, William A. Main, Leonard Hull Smith, and James S. Lawson.

**The Peoples Trust Company**, one of the largest and strongest of the trust companies in the Borough of Brooklyn, was organized in the summer of 1889. Four trust companies were then in operation in Brooklyn, but the rapid growth of Brooklyn made necessary the establishment of additional banking facilities, and the Peoples was launched. The incorporators were: Eugene G. Blackford, Frederick A. Schroeder, Henry J. Cullen, Jr., Frederic A. Ward, Howard M. Smith, Cornelius N. Hoagland, Jacob G. Dettmer, Isidor M. Bon, Alonzo Slote, John E. Searles, Jr., Solomon W. Johnson, William B. Hill, Joseph W. Carroll, James Jourdan, Henry W. Slocum, George L. Pease, Daniel F. Lewis, William H. Murtha and George P. Tangeman.

With a capital of \$500,000 and a surplus fund of \$250,000 the company opened an office at 201 Montague Street. The officers at that time were: William H. Murtha, president; Frederick A. Schroeder, first vice-president; Horace J. Morse, second vice-president, and Edward Johnson, secretary. Two clerks (one of whom is now president of the company) and a messenger constituted the working force. From this small beginning the company has developed into a personnel of twelve officers and three hundred clerks.

Shortly after its inception the capital was increased to \$1,000,000 and the surplus to \$500,000, and the offices were removed to 172 Montague Street. When it was necessary to look for greater space the company decided to erect a building. It was thought that this building would be ample for many years, but the working force is again cramped for room and the company is about to build upon adjoining property.

The principal factor in the great strides made by the company is the policy of spreading its organization to all corners of the borough, and, by the establishment of branch offices in these various business sections, bringing its banking accommodations almost to the very doors of all trades people. The eight branches now maintained are as follows: Bedford Branch, Nostrand Avenue, corner Herkimer Street; Wallabout Branch, Clinton Avenue, corner Myrtle Avenue; Bay Ridge Branch, Fifth Avenue, corner Fifty-fourth Street; Prospect Branch, Flatbush Avenue near Bergen Street; Flatbush Branch, Flatbush Avenue, corner Church Avenue; Ridgewood Branch, Myrtle Avenue, corner Bleecker Street; Kings Highway Branch, Kings Highway, corner East Fifteenth Street; Homestead Branch, Pennsylvania Avenue, corner Liberty Avenue.

The capital stock has been increased to \$1,600,000, while the surplus fund is double this amount. The deposits aggregate over \$50,000,000. During the last seven years the dividend rate has been increased from 14 per cent to the present basis of 20 per cent.

That the company is not unmindful of their cooperation is shown by making its employees potential stockholders. For the last few years it has paid them a

bonus of 20 per cent on the amount of their yearly salary, payable in quarterly periods at the same time as the stockholders receive their dividends.

An annual dinner and dance is also a pleasant feature in the company's life, bringing together the directors, the officers and the clerks in a closer fellowship.

Following is a statement of the condition of the company as of December 31, 1923, together with a list of its officers and directors:

**RESOURCES**—United States Government securities, \$14,397,959.69; other securities, \$9,325,795.12; bonds and mortgages, \$1,385,577.50; time loans and bills purchased, \$11,420,968.90; demand loans, \$9,581,612.98; cash and due from banks, \$10,723,150.15; banking houses, \$1,173,000; other real estate, \$108,865.93; accrued interest receivable, \$332,524.71; customers' liability on acceptances, \$8,466.67. Total, \$58,457,921.65.

**LIABILITIES**—Capital, \$1,600,000; surplus and undivided profits, \$3,252,163.13; reserve for taxes, \$45,932.95; deposits, \$52,537,911.49; officers' checks outstanding, \$855,942.07; accrued interest payable, \$130,505.34; mortgages on real estate owned, \$27,000; acceptances, \$8,466.67. Total, \$58,457,921.65.

**Officers:** Charles A. Boody, president; J. G. Dettmer, vice-president; Horace J. Morse, vice-president; Charles L. Schenck, vice-president; Henry M. Heath, vice-president; J. Frank Birdsell, vice-president; William D. Buckner, vice-president; Arthur V. Bennett, secretary; William F. Ayling, assistant secretary; Charles Dvorak, assistant secretary; Carl E. Dahl, assistant secretary; J. Louis Koester, auditor.

**Directors:** J. G. Dettmer, Horace J. Morse, William B. Hill, Howard M. Smith, David A. Boody, William C. Courtney, William H. Good, W. Eugene Kimball, Adrian T. Kiernan, Charles M. Englis, William E. Harmon, Charles A. Boody, Max Ruckgaber, Jr., James H. Jourdan, John F. Hildebrand, Thomas E. Murray, Albert Tag, Francis L. Noble, E. Dwight Church, Charles L. Schenck, George B. Gallagher, Matthew S. Sloan, Joseph Michaels, John C. Creveling, Walter V. Cranford, Maurice T. Lewis.

**American Trust Company**—**Officers:** Harry A. Kahler, president; Cyril H. Burdett, vice-president; Henry S. Acken, vice-president; Arthur B. Westervelt, vice-president; U. Condit Varick, vice-president; Gerhard Kuehne, vice-president; Joseph L. Obermayer, treasurer; Orie R. Kelly, secretary; Harry V. Hoyt, assistant treasurer; Edward Mallowney, assistant treasurer; George F. Bahntge, assistant treasurer; Hubert F. Breitwieser, assistant secretary; Ernest J. Habighorst, assistant secretary; Harry E. Kuhlman, assistant secretary; Stuart D. Preston, assistant secretary; Leo G. Kney, assistant secretary.

**Directors:** Walter H. Bennett, Orion H. Cheney, Bayard Dominick, Stephen B. Fleming, Stanley P. Jadwin, Harry A. Kahler, Frederick D. Mackay, George T. Mortimer, Charles J. Obermayer, Morgan J. O'Brien, James A. O'Gorman, Wiley R. Reynolds, William R. Rose, Louis F. Rothschild, Elbridge Gerry Snow, Daniel G. Tenney, Charles L. Tyner, George Zabriskie.

In order to round out a perfect circle of financial service the New York Title and Mortgage Company organized the American Trust Company, all of the stock, with the exception of the directors' qualifying shares, being owned by the parent company. The American Trust Company, organized with a cash capital of \$1,000,000 and a paid in surplus of \$200,000, began business at 135 Broadway, New York City, on January 27, 1919. Subsequently branches were opened at 205 Montague Street, Brooklyn; 375 Fulton Street, Jamaica, and Bridge



Plaza North, Long Island City, where the New York Title and Mortgage Company also has branches.

The growth of the company has been steady as the following table of deposits will show: Deposits for year ending December 31, 1919, \$10,816,117.34; December 31, 1920, \$12,722,567.66; December 31, 1921, \$16,626,564.11; December 31, 1922, \$21,869,460.43; December 31, 1923, \$26,751,327.78.

During this month the New York Title and Mortgage Company and the American Trust Company have acquired a controlling interest in the County Trust Company, the largest bank in White Plains.

Responding to the expanding needs of the uptown financial district the two companies have also purchased this month the Thompson mansion, at the southeast corner of Forty-first street and Madison Avenue, which, when extensive alterations have been completed, will be opened as a branch of both the New York Title and Mortgage Company and the American Trust Company.

**New York Title and Mortgage Company**—The year just closed (1923) found the company's activities at a new high level. A review of some of the features in its work was submitted as a special report. Comparisons of important items in the company's operations for the past two years are shown as follows:

	1922	1923	Increase
Amount Loaned on Bond and Mortgage .....	\$46,764,531.15	\$76,349,047.58	\$29,584,516.43
Sales of Mortgages .....	44,027,756.00	73,663,963.17	29,636,207.17
Guaranteed Mortgages Outstanding .....	77,181,054.13	105,642,947.96	28,461,893.83

The following is the annual summary from the company's books, showing operating results for the year ending December 31, 1923, together with a condensed balance sheet as of the same date:

#### SUMMARY OF OPERATING RESULTS FOR YEAR ENDING

December 31, 1923

Gross Income for year ending December 31, 1923.....	\$3,498,998.83
Expenses .....	1,626,962.64
Net Earnings .....	\$1,872,036.19
Adjustment of Investment Inventories.....	200,000.00
Undivided Profits, December 31, 1922.....	1,720,318.34
	<hr/>
	\$3,792,354.53
Dividends paid during year.....	\$535,000.00
Appropriation for Employees' Profit-sharing Fund.	148,120.05
Reserve for Taxes (including Federal Income Tax).	191,000.00
	<hr/>
Undivided Profits, December 31, 1923.....	\$2,918,234.48
Appropriation from Undivided Profits to Surplus.....	750,000.00
	<hr/>
Undivided Profits (as per Balance Sheet).....	<u>\$2,168,234.48</u>

## CONDENSED BALANCE SHEET

December 31, 1923

*Assets*

Cash .....	\$ 1,827,395.12
Bonds and Mortgages .....	5,879,609.68
Investments .....	4,545,818.00
Accounts Receivable .....	149,067.83
Net Interest due and accrued .....	114,700.78
	<hr/>
	\$12,516,591.41

*Liabilities*

Capital .....	\$6,000,000.00
Surplus .....	2,000,000.00
Undivided Profits .....	2,168,234.48
	<hr/>
	\$10,168,234.48
Premiums and Fees Prepaid .....	565,748.99
Reserves .....	390,327.57
Dividends Payable .....	162,283.03
Mortgages sold not delivered .....	466,769.35
Agency Accounts .....	254,486.70
Current Accounts .....	508,741.29
	<hr/>
	\$12,516,594.41

*Guaranteed Mortgages*

Guaranteed Mortgages Outstanding December 31, 1919.....	\$ 46,588,471.89
“ “ “ December 31, 1920.....	50,786,350.32
“ “ “ December 31, 1921.....	59,923,432.28
“ “ “ December 31, 1922.....	77,181,054.13
“ “ “ December 31, 1923.....	105,642,947.96

The directors of the company are: Albert B. Boardman, William F. Clare, Lewis L. Clarke, James R. Deering, Harry M. DeMott, Guy Du Val, Chas. Jerome Edwards, Lawrence B. Elliman, Charles V. Fornes, William E. Harmon, Harry A. Kahler, Frederick T. Kelsey, George T. Mortimer, Charles J. Obermayer, Morgan J. O'Brien, Jr., James A. O'Gorman, Arthur Coxe Patterson, Francis K. Pendleton, William R. Willcox, George Zabriskie.

The company's offices are at: 135 Broadway, Manhattan; 205 Montague Street, Brooklyn; 375 Fulton Street, Jamaica; Bridge Plaza North, L. I. City; 163 Main Street, White Plains; 24 Bay Street, St. George, S. I.; 36 Church Street, Buffalo, N. Y.

The Manufacturers' Trust Company began business in the Williamsburg section of Brooklyn as the Citizens Trust Company, organized September 11, 1905, with a capital of \$500,000 and paid-in surplus of \$125,000. Nathan S. Jonas was the first president of the company, and the secretary was James H.



Conroy, now senior active vice-president. The Broadway Bank was absorbed on July 1, 1912, increasing the deposits from little more than \$2,000,000 to about \$6,000,000. At the same time the capital of the bank was increased to \$1,000,000.

On August 1, 1914, the Citizens' Trust Company took over the Manufacturers' National Bank at 84 Broadway, Brooklyn, making the new deposits of the company about \$12,000,000. The name of the parent bank was changed to the Manufacturers-Citizens Trust Company; but in 1915 the name "Citizens" was dropped and the institution has since been known as the Manufacturers Trust Company. It extended its field of operations into Manhattan. On June 15, 1918, it purchased control of the West Side Bank at 481 Eighth Avenue, corner of 34th Street, with deposits exceeding \$4,000,000. This gave the Manufacturers Trust Company total deposits of \$19,000,000. Like the Manufacturers National Bank, the West Side Bank had been in business for more than fifty years before being merged with the Manufacturers Trust Company. In January, 1920, the capitalization of the company was increased to \$2,000,000, and \$1,000,000 was added to the surplus, making the capital and surplus more than \$4,000,000.

On July 5, 1921, the operations of the company were further extended in Manhattan through the establishment of a branch in the heart of the financial district at 139 Broadway, between Liberty and Cedar Streets.

On September 1, 1921, the Manufacturers Trust Company acquired the Ridgewood National Bank, located at 1696 Myrtle Avenue, Ridgewood, Borough of Queens, opening up another borough to this institution, and the capitalization and surplus accounts were each increased by the addition of \$500,000, making the combined capital and surplus \$5,000,000, and the deposits \$40,000,000.

On April 20, 1922, the Manufacturers Trust Company, by merging with the North Side Bank of Brooklyn, became the largest commercial banking institution in Brooklyn's history. That gave the Manufacturers Trust Company three additional offices, one of which was subsequently closed.

On December 19, 1922, the Industrial Bank, at 385 Fourth Avenue, corner of Twenty-seventh Street, Manhattan, which had been organized December 19, 1919, was merged with the Manufacturers Trust Company and the latter's capital was increased to \$3,000,000, with a corresponding increase in the surplus.

Now comes the largest merger thus far, in the acquisition of the Columbia family, giving three new offices in as many convenient and growing business communities. The present capital and surplus amounts to \$10,000,000, deposits are almost \$100,000,000, and resources approximately \$120,000,000.

The company now maintains twelve offices throughout the boroughs of Manhattan, Brooklyn, Bronx and Queens, at each of which it provides banking facilities for handling commercial transactions of every nature. The company employs more than seven hundred workers in its offices and endeavors to have its employees contented and happy in their surroundings and working conditions.

In 1919, the company inaugurated its annual dinner, musicale and dance, for stockholders and employees.

A profit-sharing arrangement exists under which employees receive the same percentage on their annual salaries as the stockholders receive in dividends on their holdings of stock, the present rate being sixteen per cent.

The company conducts educational classes for its employees, and a series of lectures suggested, planned and executed by the employees, designed to familiarize them with the workings of departments other than those in which they are engaged.

At all offices where facilities are available, dining rooms have been established for the employees, and operated by the employees' club.

In 1924, the company opened the branch at 190 Joralemon Street, Brooklyn, making the total twelve.

The officers are: Nathan S. Jonas, president; vice-president and secretary, Wm. L. Schneider; directors, Nathan S. Jonas, James H. Conroy, Eli H. Bernheim, Charles Froeb, Mortimer J. Fox, Walter H. Gahagan, S. B. Kraus, Daniel J. Leary, Ralph Jonas, Victor A. Lersner, Simeon Ford, Julius Liebman, Frederick Brown, Samuel M. Meeker, Samuel Keller Jacobs, George I. Skinner, A. N. Bernstein, Arthur S. Somers, William P. Sturgis.

**Greater New York Savings Bank**—In 1896 the savings banks in Brooklyn were so located that a depositor who lived in the southern part of the city had to go almost two miles to the heart of the retail district at Fulton Street to deposit his money.

That section of Brooklyn which once comprised the Dutch village of Gowanus was forming itself into a center consisting of homes and small retail stores and was rapidly developing into a thriving community.

The keen foresight of Charles J. Obermayer, then a young business man, foresaw the great need of a savings bank in this district and he proceeded to enlist the co-operation of fourteen influential citizens of high standing.

At this time Brooklyn, Staten Island, Manhattan and part of Queens County were being amalgamated, forming part of the metropolitan district.

Robert A. Van Wyck, upon his election in 1897, became the first Mayor of Greater New York. For this reason the new bank was called the Greater New York Savings Bank and was incorporated March 22, 1897. On May 3 the bank opened its doors. The board of trustees which secured the charter was composed of Charles J. Obermayer, Charles Ruston, Van Mater Stillwell, Louis L. Jones, William J. Kaiser, Harry Grattan, Thomas Murphy, W. F. Vanden Houten, Lynn H. Shanks, Edward J. Muller, Channing Stebbins, Allen Bowie, William J. Maxwell and Everitt Hasbrouck.

Charles J. Obermayer, the first president, still continued in that office in 1924. It was one of the few banks which defied precedent and advertised that one dollar would start an account.

After one and one-half years, on January 1, 1899, deposits amounted to \$105,984.77 with 1,392 depositors, and \$69,050 of its deposits had been invested in first mortgages on real estate. On January 1, 1922, the total amount of its deposits was \$16,865,568.72 with 37,533 depositors, while \$10,710,750 of its deposits had been invested in first mortgages on real estate.

The following figures show the unusual and vigorous growth of the bank:

	<i>Amount of Deposits</i>	<i>Number of Depositors</i>	<i>Amount Invested in Mortgages on Real Estate</i>
January 1, 1905.....	\$940,105.93	6,012	\$584,200
January 1, 1910.....	2,298,707.03	12,108	1,477,050
January 1, 1915.....	3,535,734.78	15,619	2,333,300
January 1, 1919.....	6,807,083.02	22,301	3,936,575
January 1, 1920.....	9,657,430.37	27,753	5,641,625
January 1, 1921.....	13,828,346.58	33,322	8,189,775
January 1, 1922.....	16,865,568.72	37,533	10,710,750



In February, 1908, during the financial panic, when many commercial banks failed, the Greater New York Savings Bank did something which had never before been done in the history of New York State. The Guardian Savings Bank, then located at Third Avenue and Fifty-third Street, Brooklyn, had deposited all its reserves with one of the commercial banks that had failed. Under the law which makes a savings bank a preferred creditor, the Guardian Savings Bank would have received its deposit in full as such preferred creditor, but in the crisis its payments were curtailed. Through an arrangement with the trustees of that institution and with the approval of the Superintendent of the Banking Department of the State, the Greater New York Savings Bank assumed the liabilities and completely liquidated the Guardian Savings Bank.

To the 2,065 depositors of the Guardian Savings Bank was given the option of being paid the total amount of their deposits or exchanging their bank book for one of the Greater New York Savings Bank, thereby becoming depositors and saving their accrued interest. About 65 per cent of the depositors chose to accept a bank book and continue their business with the Greater New York Savings Bank.

Both before and after it had assumed this responsibility, the Greater New York Savings Bank, by its sound investments and its adequate surplus, retained the confidence of all its depositors during the country's financial distress, and maintained its rate of interest.

The bank's first home was at Seventh Avenue and First Street. It moved to 488 to 498 Fifth Avenue in August, 1899, and that building was enlarged three times. When it moved into its new building at 449 to 453 Fifth Avenue, near Ninth Street, on November 29, 1920, its deposits were more than \$13,000,000 and its depositors more than 32,500.

The bank officials soon acquired adjacent buildings on the sites of which, when available, the bank meant to construct new additions, thus providing entrances at 324 Ninth Street and 383 Tenth Street as well as on Fifth Avenue.

The following is a record of the volume of one day's business: On Monday, January 9, 1922, the usual banking hours, from 9 A.M. to 3 P.M. daily, being extended by three hours, 295 persons opened new savings accounts, 2,155 made savings deposits, 619 opened Christmas Club accounts, 1,934 made deposits on their Christmas Club accounts and 448 people withdrew funds. This made a total of 5,451 men, women and children who transacted business in the bank during the day. Ten persons came and went every minute. In addition to the above, interest was entered on the bank books of hundreds of depositors.

The officers were: President, Charles J. Obermayer; first vice-president, Alexander G. Calder; second vice-president, William K. Cleverley; comptroller, William Obermayer; secretary, Thomas L. Grace; assistant secretary, Andrew J. Lundstrom; counsel, Charles Ruston.

The Union Savings Bank was organized December 26, 1896, through the vision and efforts of Walter H. Jaycox, now a Justice of the New York Supreme Court. The bank began business February 1, 1897.

The following figures denote the rapid and substantial growth of the institution from the date of its first report, July 1, 1897, to January 1, 1924:

<i>Date</i>	<i>Number of Accounts</i>	<i>Deposits</i>	<i>Surplus at Market Value</i>
July 1, 1897.....	271	\$28,951.59	\$2.71
January 1, 1900.....	1,250	252,570.57	3,189.41
January 1, 1905.....	2,943	915,983.55	21,720.50

<i>Date</i>	<i>Number of Accounts</i>	<i>Deposits</i>	<i>Surplus at Market Value</i>
January 1, 1910.....	4,704	1,805,059.13	88,597.54
January 1, 1915.....	5,971	2,700,795.70	206,457.05
January 1, 1920.....	7,410	3,962,551.35	395,966.19
January 1, 1924.....	8,800	5,076,312.31	718,194.11

The Union Savings Bank is the only mutual savings bank in Brookhaven Town and the only one on the south side of Long Island from Jamaica to Sag Harbor. The officers are: Emerson G. Terrell, president; William A. Hulse, vice-president; Robert S. Pelletreau, vice-president; E. Johanknecht, Jr., secretary; Robert A. Van Tuyl, assistant secretary.

The East New York Savings Bank was incorporated May 8, 1868, and its charter members were Gilliam Schenck, Ditmas Jewell, Williamson Rapalje, Isaac C. Schenck, Stephen L. Vanderveer, James L. Williams, Christopher Lott, John Sackman, Henry L. Wyckoff, Abraham Linington, Dr. John S. Andrews, Samuel Davies, Peter J. Bergen, John C. Schenck, Philip H. Reid, Herman H. Kattenhorn, James Pilling, Francis Lanzer, Stephen P. Stoothoff, William Kramer, James McGuire, Horace A. Miller, Charles Warren Hamilton, Williamson Rapalje, Jr., Louis Altenbrand, Martin Bennett, Jr., and Noyes G. Palmer.

The first meeting, at which the charter was adopted, was held on September 15th, 1868, at the home of Martin Bennett, Jr., at the northwest corner of Atlantic Avenue and Vermont Street.

The bank began its service as a public benefactor in small quarters on Atlantic Avenue near New Jersey Avenue, rented from Joseph Schluchtner at a yearly rental of \$25. At the end of the year 1868, the bank had deposits of \$35,823. At the present time, its deposits amount to over \$18,300,000. The following figures show the amounts on deposit, in five-year periods, from December 31st, 1868, to January 1st, 1924:

December 31st, 1868 .....	\$35,823
January 1st, 1873 .....	189,352
“ “ 1878 .....	164,506
“ “ 1883 .....	297,964
“ “ 1888 .....	356,544
“ “ 1893 .....	780,110
“ “ 1898 .....	909,738
“ “ 1903 .....	1,431,309
“ “ 1908 .....	2,582,263
“ “ 1913 .....	3,473,004
“ “ 1918 .....	4,345,158
“ “ 1923 .....	14,807,906
“ “ 1924 .....	17,450,201

On May 2nd, 1870, the bank declared its first interest dividend and since that time it has paid regular interest dividends.

In 1884, it became apparent that the banking quarters, which were much improved from time to time, were insufficient and that the institution should have more adequate office accommodation. On December 9th, 1884, a new loca-



tion was chosen at the Southwest corner of Atlantic and Van Siclen Avenues, which served four years. The trustees then erected the building at the corner of Atlantic and Pennsylvania Avenues. Four years ago, there was an extension built, 25 feet wide, 40 feet long and two stories in height. There is now in the course of construction another extension 25 feet wide, 95 feet long, and three stories high.

The following were the first ten depositors in the bank: Stephen Vander-veer, Ditmas Jewell, P. H. Reid, Williamson Rapalje, Isaac Schenck, Christopher Lott, John Sackman, Henry S. Wyckoff, Dr. John S. Andrews and Gilliam Schenck.

The present officers are: Clarence F. Coyler, vice-president; Charles J. Benisch, vice-president; Andrew J. Brislin, secretary; James K. Alexander, treasurer; Fred M. Linz, assistant treasurer; Alfred Osterland, Jr., assistant treasurer; Alva E. Finkeldey, assistant secretary; Guy L. Terhune, assistant secretary.

The Dime Savings Bank of Brooklyn began business on June 1, 1859, at 211 Montague Street, known at the time as the Post Office Building. It paid \$750 a year rental for the ground floor and had ninety-one depositors. On May 1, 1860, the bank moved to the new Hamilton Building in Court Street, a site now occupied by the Temple Bar Building. Early in 1865 it purchased for \$48,000 the northerly half of the Halsey Building, now the Arbuckle Building, in Fulton Street, and moved there in May.

In October, 1882, it purchased for \$130,000 the site at the southwest corner of Court and Remsen Streets and occupied the building in December, 1884. It soon outgrew its quarters at 32-36 Court Street and in 1906 purchased its present site at De Kalb Avenue and Fleet Street for \$230,000. Its new home was opened on December 21, 1908. The growth of the bank since its change of location has been phenomenal. On January 1, 1924, it had:

Number of Depositors .....	135,934
Total Assets .....	\$105,367,867.28
Liabilities .....	93,704,486.34
Surplus at Par .....	11,627,380.94

The trustees named in the act of incorporation were: Cyrus P. Smith, Daniel Embury, Harold Dollner, Josiah O. Low, Moses S. Beach, Isaac H. Frothingham, Ellwood Walter, Moses F. Odell, George Hall, William W. Edwards, Thomas H. Sanford, Henry Rowland, Alanson Trask, John A. Cross, David Farley, William Ellsworth, Samuel S. Powell, Peter O'Hara, Richard Field, Edwards W. Fiske, John Halsey, Sherman H. Sterling, Adolph Koop, Charles Lowrey, Conklin Brush, Isaac Oarhart, John H. Baker, Jacob H. Sachmann, Daniel Chauncey, Stephen Haynes, and Albert H. Osborne.

Officers were: President, John A. Cross; First Vice-President, Harold Dollner; Second Vice-President, Jacob H. Sachmann; Treasurer, William W. Edwards; Counsel, Charles Lowrey.

Its officers and trustees in 1924 were:

Trustees—George W. Chauncey, Samuel Rowland, Ludwig Nissen, William McCarroll, George Cox, George T. Moon, Frank H. Parsons, Frederick W. Rowe, Frederick W. Jackson, Walter Hammit, Frederick L. Cranford, Stanley P. Jadwin, W. J. Wason, Jr., Edwin A. Ames, Edward C. Blum, Thomas L.







THE EAST BROOKLYN SAVINGS BANK

Leeming, Thomas H. Roulston, John F. Bermingham, Philip A. Benson, Arthur L. J. Smith.

Officers—President, Edwin A. Ames; Vice-President, George W. Chauncey; Vice-President, George T. Moon; Treasurer, Frederick W. Jackson; Secretary, Philip A. Benson; Assistant Secretary, C. Frank Streightoff.

**East Brooklyn Savings Bank**—In the year that Brooklyn became a city, and East Brooklyn became a part of it, in 1834, Samuel C. Barnes came to East Brooklyn from Ireland. Educated at Foyle College, he found a place for his talents as the Wallabout village schoolmaster. He was principal of old No. 4, a school built in 1836 for the Wallabout district, in Classon Avenue, near Flushing. The building exemplified advanced ideas in school architecture, having two stories.

Mr. Barnes ever impressed upon pupil and parent the precepts of thrift. Canvassing the community, he obtained support, and started the East Brooklyn Accumulating Fund Association. He was its secretary, and kept its accounts.

Out of this association came the idea of a mutual savings bank, and in 1860 Mr. Barnes secured a charter for the East Brooklyn Savings Bank. In the following year the bank opened its books for business.

Mr. Barnes was the first treasurer—the executive officer. And when the pupils of old No. 4 grew up, some of them carried on the work of their preceptor in the bank, as officers and trustees. Thomas J. Atkins, president from 1907 to 1909, was one of Mr. Barnes' old pupils. So, too, was John H. Graham, trustee from 1886 to 1895, and father of William A. Graham, now vice-president of the bank. So, too, was John H. Ireland, who passed away in January, 1922, in his eighty-fifth year. Mr. Ireland attended No. 4, under Mr. Barnes, for nine years. Subsequently he served the bank for twenty-eight years as a trustee, and up to 1920, when he retired, was first vice-president.

Mr. Ireland retained to the last a vivid mental picture of his schooldays. He was one of the "older boys" when Mr. Barnes was keeping the books of the Accumulating Fund Association, and he was also one of the pupils selected to write names and deposits in the books. Thus the savings bank, when it came, had an intimate meaning, even for the children. It was of the community—not a thing apart—and belonged to old and young alike.

**1922: The Bank and Its New Home**—The East Brooklyn Savings Bank and the Civil War started almost simultaneously. Fort Sumter was fired upon April 12, 1861. On the following day, April 13, the first dollar was deposited in the bank.

During the Civil War the bank was open for business only on Monday, Wednesday and Saturday evenings. In 1869, it had grown worthy of regular banking hours, and of a home of its own. In nine years the deposits expanded thirty fold—from \$14,450 on January 1, 1862, to \$504,594 on January 1, 1871. In the next twenty years the deposits tripled, and in each decade of the last thirty years, 1891 to 1921, they doubled. The record: January 1, 1862, \$14,450; January 1, 1871, \$504,594; January 1, 1881, \$585,701; January 1, 1891, \$1,760,375; January 1, 1901, \$3,308,676; January 1, 1911, \$6,796,501; January 1, 1922, \$15,205,880.

The first bank building was erected in 1873, at the northwest corner of Myrtle and Franklin Avenues, across the street from the bank's original location. Forty-nine years later, the bank entered again a new home of Italian Renaissance architecture, just completed at Bedford and DeKalb Avenues.

The East Brooklyn Savings Bank, until 1924, had seven presidents. The



first was Dr. James H. Hutchins, who served in 1861. Then followed Stephen Crowell, 1861 to 1879; Darwin R. James, 1879 to 1907; Thomas J. Atkins, 1907 to 1909; Lester W. Beasley, 1909 to 1911; Eugene F. Barnes, 1911 to 1921, and David Morehouse since 1921.

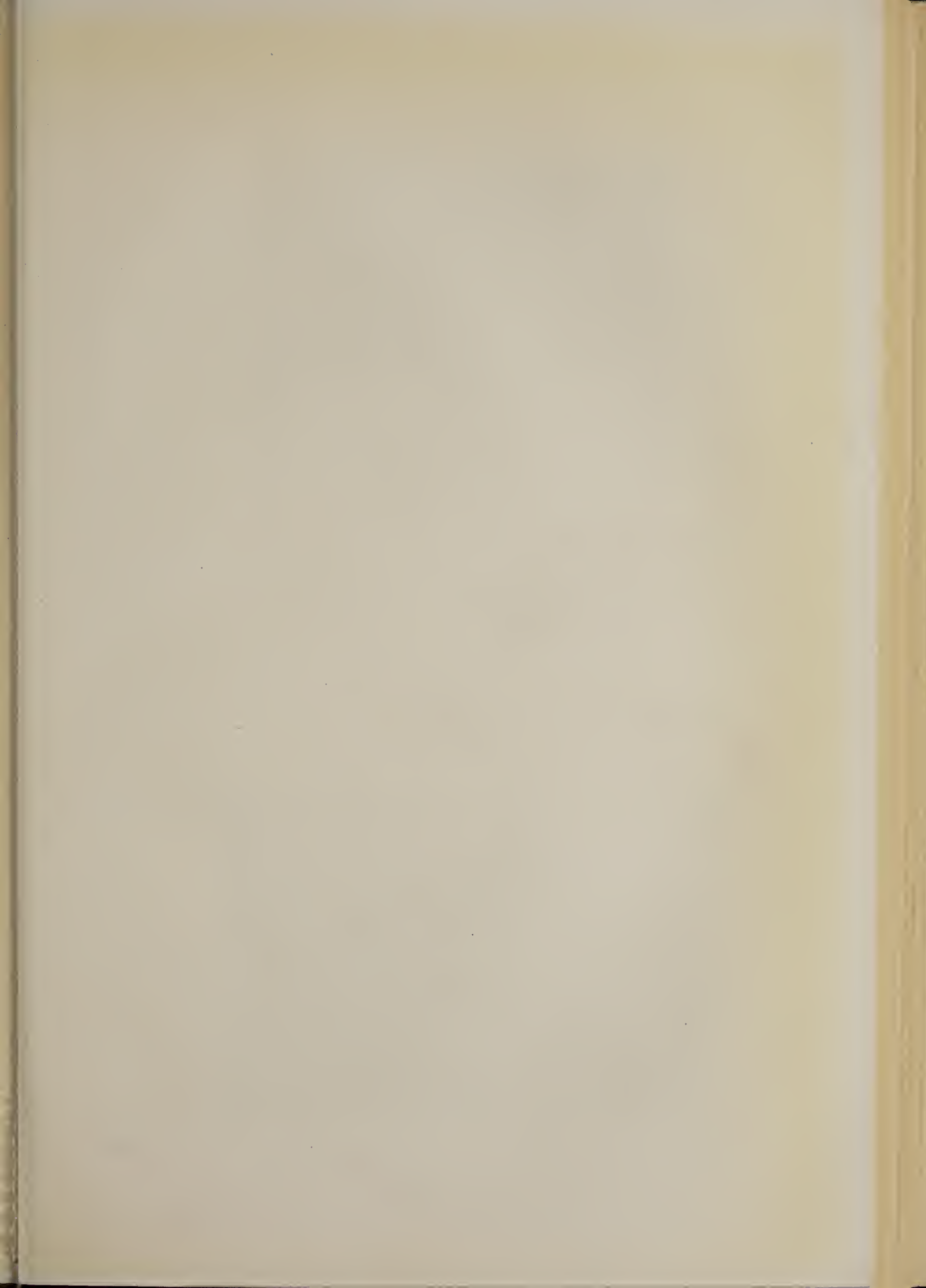
Dr. Hutchins, the first president, was a popular physician of the neighborhood, and a respected citizen. He remained as president but less than a year, however, and was succeeded by Stephen Crowell, who served eighteen years. Mr. Crowell was a shipbuilder, and president also of the Phenix Insurance Co. of Brooklyn.

Darwin R. James, the third president, served twenty-eight years in the office. Born in Williamsburg, Mass., in 1834, he became a resident of Williamsburgh, Brooklyn, in 1847. He came of Puritan stock, and possessed the traits of character of his sterling ancestors. He began his business career as clerk and salesman, serving successively in three large wholesale houses all of which succumbed to financial reverses, the last in the panic of 1857. Notwithstanding this, he launched, with Mitchell N. Packard, a partnership in 1858, to deal in indigo, spices and East Indian goods. The courageous venture was successful, and grew into a business of international consequence. Mr. James in the meantime became affiliated with the Republican party, and attained a high place in its councils, at the same time rendering public service in various connections. He served two terms in Congress, and was for many years a member of the Board of Indian Commissioners, under appointment by President Harrison.

Thomas J. Atkins, the fourth president, attained the office after making his own way in the world, and becoming a business man of large interests in the firm of Sargent & Co., with which he grew up from boyhood. By coincidence, John H. Graham, a contemporary trustee in the bank, was employed with Atkins as a boy by Sargent & Co. Mr. Graham subsequently established the firm of John H. Graham & Co., manufacturers' agents in hardware. Lester W. Beasley, who succeeded Mr. Atkins in the presidency, was a supervisor and supervisor-at-large in the old Kings County government.

Eugene F. Barnes was a son of Samuel C. Barnes. He succeeded his father in the treasurership in 1873, when the elder Mr. Barnes died, and served until 1911, when he became president. Eugene Barnes entered the employ of the bank as an office boy, at \$2 a month, when it started, and his account was No. 6 on the books. He devoted his entire life to the bank, and saw it safely through three financial panics. He was president when he died, January 31, 1921. He had the distinction of being the first chairman of Group V of the Savings Banks Association of the State of New York, and he held the office for five successive terms.

David Morehouse, who was elected president of the bank as the successor of Mr. Barnes early in 1921, rose from clerical duties to teller, to treasurer, and finally to president. In his youth he was a clerk for nine years in the New York office of Powers & Weightman, Philadelphia chemists. He went to the bank in 1884. He and Eugene F. Barnes were the only treasurers the bank had in a span of forty-eight years, from 1873 to 1921. In fact, there have been but four treasurers in the entire history of the bank—Samuel C. Barnes, Eugene F. Barnes, David Morehouse and the present treasurer, Herbert R. Seaman. Alfred G. Freeman is now assistant treasurer.







LITCHFIELD MANSION, PROSPECT PARK



PERGOLA, PROSPECT PARK

Three generations of Grahams served as trustees of the bank. Samuel Graham was a trustee from 1865 to 1879; a son, Colonel John H. Graham, soldier in the Civil War, Representative in Congress in 1892-1894, and in his boyhood a pupil in the Barnes school, was a trustee from 1886 to 1895; a grandson, William A. Graham, became a trustee in 1895.

Two other trustees were descended from the early settlers at the Wallabout—Abram Remsen Boerum and Henry Boerum Vanderveer. Mr. Vanderveer lived all his life on the estate of his ancestors. His property at Nostrand and Vernon Avenues was a part of the original Rapalje land, and was acquired by his family from Jeronimus Rapalje on September 4, 1694.

Edgar J. Phillips, who became a trustee in 1906, was counsel for the bank for more than twenty-five years, as a member of the firm of Phillips & Avery.

Koch & Wagner were the architects of the new building. The exterior walls were made of South Dover marble, from New York State; the base of polished Green's Landing granite from Vermont. The interior of the banking room was finished in Tavernelle marble from Italy, and Caen stone from France. The floor of the banking room, in the public space, was of Tennessee marble. The banking screen was made of Tavernelle marble and bronze.

In the basement were placed men's and women's rest and locker rooms, a committee room, a bank examiners' room, stationery room, kitchenette, boiler room, and space for a safe-deposit vault. The trustees' room, on the banking floor, was finished in Tudor period, with American walnut. The president's office, also on the banking floor, was done in Georgian period, with American walnut.

The money and security vault, of reinforced concrete, was made proof against fire or burglars by a steel lining two and one-half inches thick, doors of impenetrable chrome steel fifteen inches thick, with twenty-four three-inch throw-bolts and an intricate system of burglar alarms, with electric devices for locking and unlocking doors for employees in the banking room.

The deposits and accounts from the year 1900 to 1924 were:

1900—\$30,000,000, owing to 10,000; 1905—\$5,000,000, owing to 13,549; 1910—\$6,400,000, owing to 15,000; 1915—\$7,300,000, owing to 15,889; 1920—\$11,400,000, owing to 20,120; 1924—\$20,100,000, owing to 28,167. Surplus, \$2,212,040.

## CHAPTER XL

### THE PARK SYSTEM

**L**ITTLE hamlets surrounded by pleasant farmland and luxuriant boscage give little thought to parks. A short walk takes the villager into the open. When cities spread visibly over the soil and the country recedes more and more from the life of the residents, thought is given to the provision of those breathing spots without which human life seems to lose its freshness and health.

Brooklyn was for many years a city whose innermost recesses were not remote from the border of farmland and greenwood. In those years there was no agitation for park property. Just before the Civil War, however, some of her leading citizens who had vision for her future development, perceived that the time was rapidly approaching when her people would need parks. Among



these was Brooklyn's "First Citizen," James S. T. Stranahan. He realized the suitability for park purposes of the Flatbush hills, and the meadows sloping down from them, meadowland which had been ensanguined by the blood of American Revolutionary soldiers in the Battle of Long Island (Brooklyn). In 1856, through his influence a commission was appointed by the City of Brooklyn to lay out Prospect Park. The property was purchased for something less than a quarter of a million dollars. The outbreak of the Civil War interfered with the enterprise, but soon after the close of that struggle Prospect Park was completed as a great public resort and opened to the people. No more beautiful city park exists anywhere than this.

Prospect Park is the center of the great Brooklyn park system. In this system are combined recreational activities, magnificent highways, scientific arboriculture and floriculture. The purpose of the department as developed through the years is to provide the public with wholesome exercise, with beautiful sylvan vistas, and even with music of the highest quality.

The park system of the borough consists of forty-seven parks, with an area of eleven hundred and sixty-one acres; seven combined parks and playgrounds with an area of ninety-four acres; eight playgrounds with an area of sixty-four acres; and sixteen parkways with a total length of thirty miles.

Eighty million dollars is the cash value of the property maintained by the city for park purposes in the borough.

Prospect Park is the glory of the system.

In 1859, it was acquired and the rolling land of which there are five hundred and twenty-six acres became city property. The Civil War interfered with its development, but it was completed in 1867 and has since been regarded as one of the noblest of city parks.

This park has innumerable attractive features. It has a menagerie which could be enlarged and improved, but its arboriculture and floriculture compare with those of any park. The rose garden, the Vale of Cashmere and the old fashioned flower garden are features of superb beauty. The long meadow serves for exercises such as the review of the Anniversary Day Parade, and for croquet and tennis courts. There are numerous fine statues in the park, among them being that of J. S. T. Stranahan, father of the Brooklyn park system, the bust of John Howard Payne, Thomas Moore, Washington Irving, Beethoven and Mozart. Historical mementos are the plate on the rock at the side of Battle Pass, and the shaft on Lookout Hill erected in memory of the Maryland soldiers who fell in the Revolutionary War, a statue of Abraham Lincoln overlooking the lake, and the Soldiers' and Sailors' Arch, commemorative of the Civil War heroes in the Plaza. The latest statue is the fine honor roll carved by Luckmann at the close of the World War.

Adjoining Prospect Park is the Parade Grounds, a field devoted to sports on which there are forty-six baseball diamonds.

Diverging from the park are the splendid boulevards which form part of the system—Ocean Parkway, leading to Coney Island; Fort Hamilton Avenue, connecting with Bay Parkway, and the Shore Road drive; Eastern Parkway, extending out to Bushwick Avenue and Highland Park.

The Brooklyn Botanic Gardens and Arboretum adjoins the park and is partly located on park lands and partly on those of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences which conducts this plantation of rare and beautiful flowers and trees.

Prospect was the main park and still is, but it has been supplemented by other small neighborhood parks and by the Shore Road Park and drive with its



PROSPECT PARK CLUB HOUSE





magnificent view of the harbor. Some of the smaller parks are Amersfort, Bay Ridge Parkway, Bensonhurst, Borough Hall, Brooklyn Heights, Brower, Bushwick, Coney Island Concourse and Seaside Park at Coney Island, Cooper Gore, Cooper, Dreamland Beach, Dyker Beach, Fidelity, Fort Greene Park, which contains the crypt and monument of the prison ship martyrs of the Revolution; Fort Hamilton, Freedom Square, Fulton, Grant Square, Gravesend, Heiser Square, Irving Park, Highland Square, Lincoln Terrace, Linton, McKinley, McLaughlin, Milestone, Red Hook, Sunset, Tompkins, Winthrop and Zion.

These parks are all beautiful. In addition there are several small unnamed parks and eight playgrounds in crowded sections which contain in some instances swimming pools and in others athletic conveniences, such as those in McCarren Park.

The care of these parks is one of the most important of the city functions. They are a haven of rest and recreation in the summer, and Prospect Park affords many winter sports, such as skating on its lake and coasting on its hills.

JOHN N. HARMAN,  
*Park Commissioner, 1921-1923.*





## APPENDIX\*

---

\* Containing material completed and received too late for insertion with related topics elsewhere in the work.



## CHAPTER I

### HISTORY OF PRESBYTERIANISM

**P**RESBYTERIANISM on Long Island is older than the Westminster Assembly, older than the Westminster Confession of Faith, older than the Longer and the Shorter Catechisms. It began in 1640 with the founding of the Puritan churches of Southold and Southampton. The Westminster Assembly of clerical and lay delegates was summoned by the British Parliament for a political end. It was to establish a new state church in England, where the Catholic Church and its offshoot, the High Church of Elizabeth, and of her father, Henry VIII, were in disfavor. Behind it was a purpose to create a Presbyterian government for the country; but Cromwell rose to power, and it withered like a young tree before a wintry blast.

The First Church of Southold dates from October, 1640, and Southampton's from November. In the next twenty-five years Newtown, Hempstead, Easthampton, Huntington, Jamaica and Brookhaven (Setauket) obtained churches. Village churches followed at Bridgehampton in 1670 and at Mattituck in 1715. They were Puritan congregations with Presbyterian doctrine. Some of them actually called themselves Presbyterian, while others deemed it more prudent in those days of turmoil to style themselves simply Churches of Christ. They were all town churches. The towns paid the clergymen and employed them civilly as public teachers. Some of the towns made religious worship on Sunday compulsory, just as it is compulsory for children to attend school today. A church was not considered as something apart from the control of the civil government. The town punished vice as well as crime. The early pastors were men of scholarly attainments, of force and high standing in the community. They were of good circumstances and born leaders. They ministered to all classes. Doubtless they were in accord with the movement for Presbyterian government in England. In the order of settlement they were as follows:

John Youngs, Southold, 1640;  
Francis Doughty, Newtown, 1642;  
Richard Denton, Hempstead, 1644;  
Joseph Fordham, Hempstead, 1644;  
Thomas James, Easthampton, 1648;  
William Leverich, Huntington, 1658;  
Zachariah Walker, Jamaica, 1662;  
Nathaniel Brewster, Brookhaven, 1665.

The permanent expulsion of the Dutch from New York in 1674 brought sorrow and distress to the Puritans of Long Island. They were separated from their kinsmen in New England in spite of their earnest remonstrances and their stubborn resistance. They were plunged into a struggle for their rights and liberties with the Colonial Governors sent out by James, the Duke of York, a Catholic, bent on establishing the Church of England as a state institution.

Their buildings and grounds were pirated, as at Hempstead and Jamaica, and bestowed upon the Church of England. As a result they were staunch supporters of the Revolution, while the Church of England stood for the royal cause.

At the beginning of the eighteenth century, Jedediah Andrews gave a great impulse to Presbyterianism throughout the country. He established a church in Philadelphia which drew all classes and conditions of men. It united Presbyterians, Baptists, Independents and Quakers. Spurred onward by his success, Andrews called a ministers' meeting or Presbytery in Philadelphia, which likewise included men of many shades of thought, and of American, English, Scotch or Irish birth.

The Association led to a kind of Theological Seminary where ministers preached to ministers and were criticized by one another with a view to improvement. Together they studied and expounded the Greek and Hebrew Scriptures and discussed ecclesiastical affairs. A Home Missionary Society came into being. The seven members found ministers of missionary quality wherever they might be found—in Old England, Scotland or Ireland. In ten years their number more than doubled. Journeys were the chief obstacle to co-operation and four Presbyteries were created to constitute the Synod of Philadelphia on September 20, 1716. The arrangement gave Philadelphia six ministers; Snow Hill, three; and Long Island, two, Newtown and Jamaica. Snow Hill was never organized. There were two ministers and three churches on Long Island. George McNish of Jamaica and Samuel Pomeroy of Newtown were admonished to bring others into the denomination. They persuaded George Phillips, of Brookhaven, to join them. When the three met at Southampton on April 17, 1717, they ordained Samuel Gelson pastor of the church. Thus seventy-six years after the founding of the first church the Presbytery of Long Island began to function.

James Anderson was translated from the New Castle Presbytery to New York City in that year and added to the Long Island Presbytery. Trouble arose over his settlement and the Corporation of Yale College sent ministers to organize a new congregation. The Presbytery remonstrated and a fruitless controversy followed, consuming time and energy. The course of the Presbytery was approved by the Synod in every instance, but the Presbytery soon after lost the New York Church. When Ebenezer Pemberton was called as minister he was ordained by a Congregational Council in Boston, and authorized with his church "to join what Presbytery they shall think fit." This irregular proceeding was disapproved by the Synod, but Pemberton elected the Long Island Presbytery and was received into membership accordingly.

James Lamb was ordained at Mattituck December 4, 1717, and was enrolled among the Synod's members for 1718. Therefore 1717 closed with six ministers and six churches—George McNish, Jamaica; Samuel Pomeroy, Newtown; George Phillips, Setauket; Samuel Gelson, Southampton; James Anderson, New York; and James Lamb, Mattituck. McNish died in 1723, Phillips in 1739, and Pomeroy in 1744. Gelson removed to Maryland and Anderson to Pennsylvania in 1726. Soon after Lamb went to New Jersey. John Bradner, pastor at Goshen was added to the Long Island Presbytery, being nearest, in 1724. He died in 1733.

At the time the Synod of Philadelphia and the Presbytery of Long Island



were created, there were many ministers on Long Island with unaffiliated churches who were considered desirable material for extending the work of the denomination. Among them, in the order of their respective churches, were:

Southold: Joshua Hobart, came to America from England in 1635 with his father and mother, and three others of their children; son of the Rev. Peter Hobart of Hingham, Mass.; brother of three other clergymen, Jeremiah, Gershom and Nehemiah Hobart; graduated from Harvard, 1650; went to Barbadoes in 1655; married Margaret Vassel in Barbadoes; went to London; returned to America in 1669; became pastor of Southold on October 7, 1674; died February 28, 1717. For his settlement the town gave him a costly house on an extremely choice site and enough land to make him one of the leading freeholders. He was twice married and had children. His massive tomb in Southold cemetery was built by the decree of and paid for by the town.

Southampton: Samuel Gelson, born in 1692 in the North of Ireland, of Scotch ancestry; entered Glasgow University in 1706 and its theological department in 1710; received as licentiate by the Presbytery of Philadelphia in 1715, and called to Southampton in 1716; ordained by the Presbytery of Long Island on its formation as pastor of Southampton; received into membership by the New Castle Presbytery in 1728. He was a pioneer of his church in the Valley of Virginia, 1735-36. He afterwards ministered in the Highlands of New York.

Newtown: Samuel Pomeroy, born at Northampton, Mass., September 16, 1687; graduated at Yale in 1705; ordained for Newtown, November 30, 1709; died there June 30, 1744.

Easthampton: Nathaniel Huntting, born in Dedham, Mass., November 15, 1675; graduated from Harvard in 1693; came to Easthampton in 1696; resigned in 1746; died in 1753.

Huntington: Eliphalet Jones, born at Concord, Mass., November 6, 1640. He accepted invitation to Huntington, June 10, 1677. The Rev. Ebenezer Prime, his colleague since June 5, 1723, succeeded him on his death, June 5, 1731.

Jamaica: George McNish, born in Scotland; entered the University of Glasgow, March 1, 1698. He and John Hampton, a fellow student, were sent to America as missionaries by the Presbyterian ministers of London. The Rev. Francis Mackemie joined them, and the three were members of the Synod of Philadelphia. McNish came to Jamaica in 1710. His controversy with Lord Cornbury, the royal governor, is described under Cornbury's administration. The meeting house and property turned over to the Episcopal church were restored to the Presbyterians in 1727.

Brookhaven: George Phillips, son of the Rev. Samuel Phillips of Rowley, Mass., and grandson of the noted Rev. George Phillips, who founded Watertown, Mass., after coming to New England with Governor John Winthrop and Sir Richard Saltonstall. Mr. Phillips was born at Rowley, June 3, 1644, and graduated from Harvard in 1686. After preaching in Brookhaven for five years he was ordained its pastor, April 13, 1702, and so continued until his death in 1739.

Bridgehampton: Ebenezer White, son of Ebenezer and Hannah (Phil-

lips) White, born at Weymouth, Mass., in 1672; graduated at Harvard, 1692; ordained at Bridgehampton, its earliest minister, October 9, 1695; resigned, 1748, and died 1756; father of the Rev. Silvanus White, pastor of Southampton.

All of these churches ceased in time to be Town churches and became full Presbyterian churches with ordained ruling elders.

These energetic pastors extended their work into mission fields at an early date. They aided the church in Queens County. They cultivated Shelter Island, Oyster Ponds, Wading River, Mount Sinai, Fresh Pond, Patchogue, Moriches, Canoe Place, Sag Harbor, and other towns on the Island as missionary posts.

At the time Suffolk County had many churches, made up of Congregationalists and Presbyterians. They were without ecclesiastical association, but the pastors leaned toward the Presbyterians by a large majority. They were in four scattered groups, and the roads were bad. From one end of the island to the other was a three-days' journey by land or a perilous voyage by water. And thus, the Presbytery never came in contact with them. Phillips never went to the Synod at Philadelphia while he lived; nor did Lamb while he was at Mattituck. Only the dauntless McNish never faltered before the uncomfortable journey which took a week each way. With McNish all hope for the original Presbytery of Long Island died.

In 1727, four years after the death of McNish, the Southampton church, nominally a member of the Presbytery, invited an ecclesiastical council to install Silvanus White as pastor. The Presbytery had lost its hold on Suffolk County. It was weakened further by the controversy with Yale College about Anderson and the final withdrawal of the New York Church. In 1733 the Synod merged the moribund Presbytery with the Presbytery of East Jersey to erect the Presbytery of New York.

### Presbyterian Churches

When Whitfield came to America in 1739 there were four Puritan churches on the South Side of Long Island—at Southampton, Easthampton, Hempstead and Bridgehampton. Six on the North Side were at Southold, Brookhaven, Huntington, Jamaica, Newtown and Mattituck. There was a house of worship and probably a church at Cutchogue. Among these ten or twelve Puritan churches were perhaps four hundred communicants.

Whitfield had marvelous skill in attracting public attention. He was magnetic. He preached a few sermons only, and repeated some of them forty times. They abounded in denunciation, and were calculated to produce emotion and arouse prejudice and excitement. Whitfield converted Jonathan Barber and James Davenport, the Southold pastor. Both men lost their reason. Both went from place to place, attracting attention and stirring their audiences to a frenzy of excitement. Davenport made women shriek and when the shrieking became general he believed the spirit of God was answering his prayers. Barber and Davenport worked themselves up to a pitch where they denounced all who would not do their bidding. Davenport abandoned his church in Southold and the church severed its relations with him. He caused disorder in all the Suffolk County churches except Southampton. After he subsided it became necessary to build anew from the foundation. (Davenport recovered his health and reason.)



The ministers were equal to the new emergency. In April, 1747, they organized the Presbytery of Suffolk County; and they built the new structure on a higher plane of spirituality and Christianity. In April, 1747, they ordained James Brown pastor of Bridgehampton. They installed William Throop as pastor of Southold, and licensed Nehemiah Greenman, who was authorized to preach throughout twenty-five miles of the South Side from Quogue to Mastic. They licensed Thomas Payne and directed him to preach at Cutchogue. The Presbytery the same year obtained the services of two Southhold men—Azariah Horton for the Indians, and David Youngs for Brookhaven. Naphthali Daggett was licensed for Smithtown, and ordained as first pastor of the church when it was organized two years later. He resigned after a time and became president of Yale College.

In May, 1749, the Presbytery joined the New School Synod of New York. In 1752 it united Mattituck and Occabaug in Union parish and made Joseph Park pastor. Thus after five years the gloom which had hung over the denomination had been dispelled.

Webster in his history of the Presbyterian church says the Presbytery of Long Island embraced the province of New York. In 1723 it was directed by the Synod to assist the New Jersey Presbytery in adjudicating a case in Newark.

A clarified atmosphere followed the storm and a new Presbytery of Suffolk was formed. Its six ministers met at Southampton on April 8, 1747. They promised to endeavor to bring their own churches and other churches "that are in an unsettled state and without particular pastors over them" into compliance with Presbyterian government, and they agreed when things were ripe for the step to seek union with the Synod of New York. This was signed by:

Ebenezer White (pastor at Bridgehampton),  
Nathaniel Mather (pastor of Aquebogue—Jamesport),  
Ebenezer Prime (pastor at Huntington),  
Ebenezer Gould (pastor at Cutchogue),  
Silvanus White (pastor at Southampton),  
Samuel Buell (pastor at Easthampton).

The next day the covenant was signed also by the six delegated members of the churches of Easthampton, Bridgehampton and Southampton, and the ministers of Mattituck and Cutchogue, not delegated.

They applied in 1748 for admission to the Synod of New York, of which James Lamb, now of Basking Ridge, and a trustee of the new College of New Jersey, was moderator. Because of the difficulties of travel they asked to be represented by delegates. The Synod refused, but promised to make "reasonable allowances for the absence of members who live far distant."

On this basis the Presbytery of Suffolk was received while the Synod recommended the members that members of the New York Presbytery dwelling on Long Island join it.

Azariah Horton, missionary among the Long Island Indians, and Elihu Spencer, of the Jamaica church, accepted this advice, as did David Youngs and the Setauket Church. Youngs was a member of the Presbytery of New Brunswick, which had installed him. He had waited until the Suffolk Pres-

bytery was in connection with the Synod before transferring his membership. The Presbytery was driven with urgent business. It was asked to place pastors and to provide them with equal opportunity. One of its most pressing duties was to appoint pastors to supply vacant pulpits.

After the death of the Rev. William Mills in 1774, it returned to the jurisdiction of New York, and remained there until the reorganization of 1789, when it was added to the Long Island Presbytery. Twenty years later, in 1809, when the Long Island Presbytery's bounds were made to coincide with those of Suffolk County, it again went back to New York. The church has been in turn under the jurisdiction of the Presbyteries of Philadelphia, Long Island, New York, Suffolk, New York, Suffolk, New York, Long Island, New York, Nassau and Brooklyn.

The pastorates were short, owing as a rule to lack of funds. For that reason Naphtali Daggett resigned from Smithtown.

In 1754, Benjamin Talmage was ordained pastor of Brookhaven to succeed David Youngs, who died. The church at Moriches was organized the next year. Ketchabonuck was included in its sphere soon after the ordination of Abner Reeve as pastor.

While Elihu Spencer was serving as chaplain in the army fighting the French and Indians, the Presbytery ordered its members in succession to supply his church at Jamaica. "The war," says Ephraim Whitaker, "cost the people of New England and New York more in proportion to their population and resources than did the Revolution or the Civil War."

After the fall of Quebec, the College of New Jersey followed Yale and Harvard in supplying candidates for the ministry on the island. Thus four Princeton men were under the care of the Presbytery at the same time. Moses Baldwin soon was ordained. In 1759, Ezra Reeve and Samson Occum were ordained. Occum became famous in America and England.

#### Persecution of Presbyterianism During Revolution

In 1764, the great religious movement burst forth in Easthampton and spread over the whole of Long Island and beyond its borders, "as a life-giving fountain," to quote the Rev. Dr. Ephraim Whitaker. In two years the membership and strength of many churches was doubled. One hundred and fifty were added to the Easthampton church, ninety-nine on one Sunday. Dr. Buell wrote a narrative of the wonderful event, republished in 1809 by his son-in-law, Dr. Aaron Woolworth, of Bridgehampton. The Presbytery sold copies and devoted the proceeds to the fund for educating candidates for the ministry. Br. Buell died in 1789 at 82, the last survivor of the founders of the Suffolk Presbytery. He retained his vigor and activity to the end. President Stiles, of Yale, wrote of him: "This man has done more good than any other that ever stood on this continent."

A religious revolution as remarkable as the American Revolution which followed it was brought about in the twenty years after the formation of the Suffolk Presbytery. It extended the length of the Island from Montauk to Newtown. The American Revolution was made possible by the support it derived from Presbyterian and Congregational clergymen throughout the country.

Long Island suffered for seven dreary, ruinous, disheartening years in the grasp of the British Army. Churches were turned into barracks or stables



and even wantonly destroyed. The houses of the Presbyterians and other dissenters suffered no better fate. Most of the inhabitants were ardent patriots and escaped to Connecticut so far as they were able. Those who stayed were compelled to swear allegiance to George III, or lose everything to life itself.

The Presbyterian ministers were patriot leaders, uncompromising and unafraid. While preaching in Smithtown, the Rev. Joshua Hartt was fired upon, the bullet lodging in the wall above his head. Imprisoned in New York he was chained to a negro, when a British officer asked him: "How do you like your company?" He replied: "Better than yours."

British officers quartered themselves in the house of the Rev. Ebenezer Prime and subjected him to many indignities. They wantonly destroyed the furniture they could not use, and mutilated his books. The Rev. Silvanus White was the father of Dr. Henry White, a surgeon in the American Army. Benjamin Tallmadge of Setauket was the father of Colonel Benjamin Tallmadge who was conspicuous in the war.

During the Revolution, from October 31, 1775, until the British Army evacuated Long Island, the Presbytery did not meet. And a generation was needed to restore order and activity and repair the losses suffered. As moderator, the Rev. Dr. Buell called a meeting at his house in Easthampton for April 4, 1785. Those present were: Dr. Buell, Benjamin Goldsmith, of Aquebogue; David Rose, of Fire Place, and Joshua Hartt, of Smithtown. Absent were James Browne of Bridgehampton; Benjamin Tallmadge of Setauket; James Davenport, lately of Mattituck; Samson Occum, the Indian, and Elam Potter. Ebenezer Prime and Silvanus White had died during the war.

#### Presbytery of Long Island

When the first General Assembly met in Philadelphia, May 21, 1789, the Presbytery of Suffolk was entitled the Presbytery of Long Island, the boundaries coinciding with those of the island. The Presbytery soon attempted to establish friendly relations with the Long Island Convention, a Congregational association of ministers of the churches that had withdrawn from the churches of "the standing order" in the middle of the century. A friendly interchange of pulpits was permitted and encouraged. The Synod objected and recommended that the Presbytery reconsider. When it came up again the Presbytery could not find sufficient reason to reverse its judgment and the Synod dropped the subject.

After a time a minister opposed by the Presbytery was received and maintained by the Convention and relations became strained. The dispute was submitted to arbitration, and the Convention acquiesced in a decision favorable to the Presbytery's stand; but the friendly relations were broken off again within a year when the Convention ministers encouraged disaffected members of a Presbyterian congregation to form a separate church. The Convention gave place to the Suffolk Association, which embraced all the Congregational churches in the county. Its relations with the Presbytery have been amicable from the first.

In 1909 the Synod transferred the three churches west of Suffolk County with their pastors to the New York Presbytery, restoring the bounds of the Long Island Presbytery to what they had been under the Suffolk Presbytery.

In 1811 the Presbytery invited the Congregational churches having

pastors who were members to send regularly chosen delegates to its sessions in accordance with the General Assembly's scheme for union. Thomas Wells of Cutchogue took his seat accordingly, and a custom accepted in the old Suffolk Presbytery as a matter of course, was formally recognized.

Discipline for intemperance began to be enforced early in the last century. In 1811, the Presbytery voted that ardent spirits and wine should form no part of its entertainment. In 1810 it voted to distribute pamphlets and tracts.

In 1811, the churches of Southold and Cutchogue sent to the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions the first contributions ever made by churches for its work. The Presbytery also directed its pastors to perform yearly missionary labor for thirteen days on the Island at their own expense. The motion was offered by the pastors of Southold and Cutchogue and forthwith adopted.

In 1815, a school officer for the first time objected to the Presbytery's teaching the Catechism in the public schools.

In 1821 the communicant members of the churches numbered 1154.

In 1832 the Presbytery voted for a division of the body, and the churches of Huntington, Smithtown, Islip and Brookhaven were constituted the Second Presbytery of Long Island. There were great revivals in 1832 and 1833. Some of the churches doubled the number of their communicants. As the Presbytery of the preceding generation had barred out spirituous liquors, it now put a ban on tobacco in all its forms.

In 1831 and 1832 a remarkable revival began in Southampton and Westhampton and extended to almost every church in the Presbytery. In two years the 1154 communicants had increased to 1725.

**Division in Presbytery Churches**—In 1832, owing to its growth and difficulties of administration, the Synod was asked to divide the Presbytery and the Second Presbytery of Long Island was created to include the churches of Setauket, Middletown, Brookfield and Moriches. The Presbytery of Long Island retained twelve ministers, twelve churches, and 1455 members, while the Second Presbytery had seven ministers, nine churches and 1455 members. Among them was Huntington, which had seceded, and asserted its independence in 1824 when the Presbytery declined to ordain its pastor-elect. The Second Presbytery of New York annexed it and ordained and installed its pastor. Thus after eight years the resentment was dissipated and reunion established.

The Presbytery of Long Island licensed thirty-two and ordained thirty-six ministers from 1790 to 1839; the Second Presbytery licensed three, and ordained three from 1832 to 1839.

Another division of the Presbyterian Church occurred in 1838, which portended the struggle between the North and South. By a vote of two to one the Long Island Presbytery voted against the division of the whole church. It sent no delegates to the General Assembly to avoid taking sides or offending either of the hostile parties. The Second Presbytery adhered to the Old School Assembly. In 1839 the majority of the Long Island Presbytery voted to send delegates to the New School Assembly and the minority withdrew. It consisted of four ministers and they formed the Old School Presbytery of Long Island.

When someone asked: "What is the ground of division?" the reply was that there was no ground for division. But the water of division was Peconic Bay. The North Side represented the New School; the South Side the Old



School. In the Hamptons most of the clergymen had been trained at Princeton Theological Seminary, where the early professors were from the slave States and aligned with theologians of the South, rather than with New England. As the Second Presbytery was in agreement with them the Old School Synod joined it with the Old School Presbytery of Long Island.

Abraham Luce was the leader of the New School adherents on the North Fork of the Island, while Hugh N. Wilson led the Old School strength on the South Fork. They were forceful men and their neighbors followed them. How forceful was the Old School leadership may be inferred when it is considered that the Eastern end of Long Island was settled by emigrants from New England, where the New School sentiment was most pronounced. Its earliest and strongest ties were with New England. Nevertheless the Western Presbytery as a man, and half of the Eastern Presbytery, sided with the Old School and its Southern influences.

In the New School Presbytery thrust out on the North Fork were seven ministers, six churches and about five hundred communicants, while the Old School Presbytery contained five ministers, five churches and about one thousand communicants. The union of the Second Presbytery with the Old School Presbytery in 1841 brought all the churches under one jurisdiction from Easthampton to Hempstead. The two Presbyteries of Long Island worked side by side in the most friendly manner until they were reunited in 1869. Aside from the few pronounced leaders the mass of the people, elders, and ministers were not keenly interested in the differences and preferred to live together in harmony. Indeed amicable relations were retained throughout, and licentiates and ministers were interchanged without restraint.

The New School Presbytery could expand only by annexing the Congregational Churches of Orient and Riverhead. They were served by its ministers and might be expected to join it, therefore, just as Cutchogue did in 1848. Its communicants grew gradually and numbered 784 at the time of reunion. In those thirty years the Old School Presbytery attained twenty-two ministers, twenty-one churches and 3,055 communicants, while the New School Presbytery licensed two and ordained eight ministers, the Old School licensed fifteen and ordained thirty-two.

Dr. Epher Whitaker began his ministry in 1851 under the New School of thought and soon became the most influential member of that Presbytery. He was elected stated clerk in 1856, continued in that post until the reunion and was elected stated clerk of the reunited body. He continued in the office until 1903, a period of forty-seven years. In all that time never was an exception taken by the Synod to his minutes, which constitute 1,300 pages of records handsomely transcribed.

The Rev. James McDougall of Huntington was elected stated clerk by the Second Presbytery in 1836 and continued until that body and the Old School were consolidated in 1854. During his term the pay amounted to about \$5 a year, collected from the members at each stated meeting. The building of the Long Island Railroad brought the farmers into easy touch with markets and wrought vast changes in the financial strength and general prosperity of the island, greater, indeed, than the preceding two hundred years had seen. The prosperity was reflected in the contributions and gifts for the churches and for benevolent purposes.

In 1865, the Old School Presbytery moved for reunion. Slavery, a principal cause for the division in the preceding generation, was no more, and the Presby-

terians of the North could unite. Long Island churches were ready and the new arrangements produced the Presbytery of Nassau and the Synod of Long Island, organized in 1870. The new Synod and the churches on Long Island were active and productive until all the Synods of the State were united under the large delegated body known as the Synod of New York.

**Reunion of Churches**—The reunion established the Synod of Long Island with the three Presbyteries of Long Island, Nassau, and Brooklyn. Nassau had been the Old School and Brooklyn the New School Presbytery on the western end of the island. The reorganization made Brooklyn cover the city and Nassau the western part of the island outside the city, while Long Island comprised the eastern end, as it still does.

In 1880, the Long Island Presbytery was incorporated under the laws of New York, but it has held but little property.

The Synod, attended by all the ministers and elders, continued until the Synod of New York, with delegates from all the Presbyteries of the State, was organized in 1882. Long Island's sons in the ministry as in other callings are among the foremost the country has produced—McNish, Prime, Daggett, Buell, Azariah Horton, Aaron Woolworth, Lyman Beecher, Ithamar Pillsbury, Enoch Cobb Wines, Charles W. Shields, Ephraim Whitaker, Theodore S. Wynkoop, John D. Stokes, Hamilton B. Holmes, Arthur Newman.

Other sons of the Presbytery who have shone in outside fields include William Force Whitaker, John Balcom Shaw, Nelson B. Chester, and Daniel H. Overton. Among its missionaries are Samuel H. Kellogg, Dr. Charles Sturges, Joseph Milton Greene, and Dr. E. R. Hildreth.

#### STATISTICS SINCE THE REUNION

	Ministers	Churches	Congregational Members	Expenses	Benevolence
1871	20	21	2,933	*\$26,813	*\$9,851
1876	21	22	3,017	23,657	5,857
1886	19	22	3,228	29,800	5,714
1896	24	24	3,704	40,719	12,797
1906	24	23	3,847	40,490	11,646
1916	28	23	4,154	46,700	14,193
1923	22	23	4,486	91,148	25,854

The latest statistics received by the Rev. Thomas Coyle of West Hampton Beach, stated clerk of the Long Island Presbytery, are of March 31, 1923. They give the assessed valuation of church property (estimated) at \$450,000. The congregations during the fiscal year raised \$117,002 for religious purposes. Of this sum, home missions received \$6,998; foreign missions, \$6,334; education, \$1,482; board of Sabbath School work, \$1,265; church erection, \$644; education, relief and substitution, \$2,485; freedmen, \$788; temperance and moral welfare, \$799; evangelism, \$105; men's work, \$32; Sabbath observance, \$64; Congregational expenses, \$91,148; miscellaneous benevolence, \$4,858.

\* Including special gifts for the Reunion Memorial Fund.



## CHAPTER II

### HET VEER VILLAGE AND FERRY

**H**ET VEER, or The Ferry, was one of the earliest villages on Long Island. A number of patents of land were issued by the Director between 1640 and 1646. The earliest for the immediate vicinity of Fulton Ferry was dated November 14, 1642, and granted to Claes Cornelissen van Schouw for land

"on Long Island over against the island of Manhattan, betwixt the ferry and the land of Andries Hudde, as the same lies thereto next, extending from Hudde's land along the river one hundred and two rods; into the woods southeast by south, seventy-five rods; and south southeast seventy-five rods; south by west, thirty rods and along the land of the said Hudde northwest one hundred and seventy-three rods to the beach, amounting to sixteen morgen and one hundred and seventy-five rods."

This property, having a waterfront of 1,276 feet, six inches, extended from the north line of Hudde's patent (about Clark Street) to the ferry at the foot of Fulton Street, or, as the latter was then known, the Ferry Road.

Adjoining Cornelissen's land, north of the ferry, as nearly as can be ascertained, was a small parcel containing about sixteen acres, owned by Cornelis Dircksen, the ferryman, and back to the east of that parcel Dircksen obtained on December 12, 1645, a patent for another parcel, containing twelve morgen, about twenty-four acres, along the north side of the Ferry Road. Egbert van Borsum also obtained a patent for a lot at the ferry in 1666, but it amounted only to sixty by forty feet, "beginning at an oak tree," and adjoining Cornelis Dircksen's land.

Adjoining Dircksen on the east and extending along the river were the grants to Jacob Wolphertsen van Couwenhaven and to Frederick Lubbertson, which one hundred and fifty years later was known as the Sands estate. Beyond these was the Fiscock grant near the Wallabout, afterwards known as the Remsen estate, and the property of John Jackson before part of it became the navy yard.

Under English rule and up to the incorporation of the village of Brooklyn in 1816, the town was divided for ecclesiastical, school, and other purposes into seven districts, retaining the names which had descended from the early hamlets. Het Veer, or the Ferry district, included all the lands between the Wallabout millpond (north of the present Navy Street in the navy yard) and Joralemon Street. It was enlarged subsequently to include west of Red Hook Lane to District (Atlantic) Street.

The early limits of Het Veer—the Dutch village—included only a hamlet on both sides of the Ferry Road as far up as Henry Street and a few houses on the riverfront as far south as Poplar Street. That part of the present ferry locality lying north of Doughty Street and west of Columbia was under water, and the shore line north of the ferry ran midway between Front and Water Streets as far north as Washington Street, where it curved to the northward.

Just when the ferry was first opened is not known definitely, but Cornelis Dircksen is the first ferryman mentioned. In 1642 he kept a small inn near Peck Slip, New York, where he owned a farm. He owned another house on the Long Island side and he used to take passengers across the East River in a row boat. Dircksen sold his house at the ferry and the ferry privilege to William Thormassen in 1643 for 2,300 guilders. Whether Thormassen ever controlled the ferry, or whether he is the same person mentioned subsequently is not known, but the next person on record as having control of the ferry is Willem Jansen.

**Regulation of Ferries**—In 1654, the Director and Council of New Amsterdam adopted an ordinance for the regulation of ferries which provided “that no person should ferry from one side of the river to the other without the license from the magistrates, under the penalty of £1 Flemish for the first offense,” and increased penalties for subsequent offenses. The ferryman was to “keep proper servants and boats and a lodge on both sides of the river to protect passengers from the weather.”

Fees for ferriage were fixed, the rates being in florins and stuivers, a florin being forty-one cents American, and a stuiver, two cents. The charge for ferrying a man or woman was six stuivers; for two or more each three stuivers. The table read:

	Fl.	St.
For each cart or wagon, or cart with two horses or oxen	2	10
For one cart or wagon, with one horse.....	2	..
For one cart or plow.....	1	..
For one pig, sheep, buck or goat.....		
For two, eight stuivers, and what is above that each....	..	3
For every man or woman, Indian or squaw.....	..	6
For two or more persons, each one.....	..	3
For a child under sixteen years, half fare.		
For one horse or four footed horned beast.....	1	10
For one hogshead of tobacco.....	..	16
For one tun of beer.....	..	16
For one anker of wine or liquor.....	..	6
For a tub of butter, soap or such like.....	..	6
For a meed (four bushels) of grain.....	..	4

The ferryman was not required to carry anything until he was paid, but he was expected to have his ferry in working order from 5 a. m. until 6 p. m. in summer, “provided the windmill on the Battery in Manhattan hath not taken in sail.” After 6 p. m. he was permitted to charge double ferriage. From 7 a. m. until 5 p. m. were the hours in winter, but the ferryman was not obliged “to ferry during a tempest or when the windmill hath lowered its sail in consequence of storm or otherwise.” So it seems the weather bureau, in the guise of a windmill, was on the Battery in Manhattan two hundred and seventy years ago, even as it is there today. It was easy to perceive that when the windmill took in sail a storm was rising, and this was the best of reasons why the ferryman should not venture across the river in his primitive ferryboat. The “otherwise” might imply that the windmill had lowered its sails for repairs, no reason whatever for stopping the ferry.

~ Egbert van Borsum leased the ferry from Governor Stuyvesant in 1655 for three years, and erected a ferry house or tavern. By the terms of the contract he was obliged to furnish a large scow at his own expense. He was in possession of the ferry as late as June 15, 1663, at which time the Governor allowed him fifty guilders for public services as ferryman.

✓ When the English, under Colonel Richard Nicolls, seized New Amsterdam in 1664, they disembarked volunteer troops at the ferry from their settlements at the eastern end of Long Island and Connecticut, and the men remained in camp there until the surrender of Fort Amsterdam.

In October, 1667, Governor Nicolls in granting Brooklyn the rights and



privileges of a town, conceded Brooklyn the ownership of the land between the high and low water marks. This land had been claimed by New York under its grant. This gave it a clear right to control the ferry. The ferryman and his son were exempt from military service beginning with 1667.

It was deemed expedient about this time to establish two landing places on the New York side, one for each of the tides. The ferry business was largely at the mercy of the winds and currents.

In 1695, John Alfrenson bid in the lease for seven years at £147 a year. A brick building two stories high with a cellar was built to serve as a tavern and ferry house was built in 1700 at a cost of more than \$2,000 at a time when \$50 a year was a good wage.

The lines of the Ferry Road ran farther south than those of Fulton Street, and the brick ferry house would stand about half in the present street and about half at 19, 21, and 23 Fulton Street. High water at the time almost reached Front Street. The ferry house was burned down in 1748, (q.v.) while the excitement about the ferry ran high. The Corporation House, or ferry tavern, which took its name from the fact that it was built by the Corporation of New York, was rebuilt and occupied until 1812, when it was burned down.

The ferry never was held by the City of New Amsterdam as a municipal privilege, but from the time of the English occupation, there appears to have been a contest over franchises. The New York authorities claimed control over the Brooklyn end and the Brooklyn authorities resisted. In 1720, Brooklyn obtained from the colonial legislature an act confirming its patent rights. To counteract this law and to strengthen its claim under the old Cornbury charter, which from the circumstances under which it was obtained the corporation of New York had reason to fear was invalid, New York obtained from Governor Montgomery, in 1730, a new charter, confirming its right to the land "to high water mark on the Brooklyn shore."

For this the corporation of New York paid Montgomery £1,400. The charter went before King George II, and he refused to confirm it. The impasse continued until 1732, when the Colonial Assembly passed an act "confirming unto the city of New York its rights and privileges."

As a charter from a colonial Governor was invalid unless confirmed by the King, and as the Montgomery charter never was confirmed, and whereas other grants of property existed along the Brooklyn shore which were valid, it would seem that New York never had a right to the Brooklyn landing save that of possession, which it took against the protests of the people of Brooklyn almost two hundred years ago, and held against their protests until the two communities were united in 1898.

From 1730 until 1745 there was perpetual warfare between the City of New York and the people of Brooklyn. The corporation built a large stone house which infringed upon the part of the village purchased from William Morris in 1694. By charging exorbitant wharfage rates to persons privileged to cross in their own boats, as well as by every other means in their power, they endeavored to compel the residents of Brooklyn to cross the river in the public ferryboats. Exasperated by the injustice and petty annoyances to which they had been subjected, the people of Brooklyn in July, 1745, compelled the Corporation of New York to defend an action for five shillings to test its right to prevent one citizen of Brooklyn from conveying the goods of another to the New York market in his own market boat. The action—that of Hendrik Remsen against the Corporation—was tried before a jury in Westchester, and after being kept before

the Supreme Court of the Colony for thirty years, a verdict was given in favor of Remsen in 1775 for £118, 14s, 10½d for his costs and charges. The Corporation appealed to the King and his council, but the Revolutionary War intervened and it never went further. A tradition was to the effect that the Corporation, in order to disengage Remsen from the interests of the town, gave him a house at Coenties Slip, New York. This was never proved, but Remsen did get a house and the action was forgotten.

In 1766, Samuel Waldron obtained a lease of the ferry for five years, and it was renewed for three years more. When his lease expired in 1774, the Corporation of New York determined to have three ferries, one from Coenties Slip to the landing place of Livingston and Remsen, now the foot of Joralemon Street; one from Peck's Slip to Jacob Brewerton's wharf, or landing place at Brooklyn Ferry, and a third from the Fly Market (foot of Maiden Lane) to the landing place at Brooklyn Ferry. Elisha DeGrushe leased the first, which was discontinued in August, 1776; Samuel Baldwin the second, and Adolph Waldron the third. In May, 1776, the whole ferry came under the control of Adolph Waldron for two years at £450 a year. Waldron (q.v.) was captain of a troop of light horse employed as videttes along the southern coast of the country until April 10, 1776. He left Brooklyn with the American army and did not return until the close of the war.

During the Revolution Mayor Matthews and Governor Tryon let the ferry to their Tory friends. The old Fly Market in New York was protected by a troop of soldiers, with sentinels on the ferry stairs. No person was permitted to carry goods to or from the city without a pass from the Mayor's office, or from Colonel Axtel in Flatbush, for which two shillings was charged. Boats were licensed and only officers of the British army were exempt from military examination.

After the British evacuated Brooklyn, November 25, 1783, Captain Adolph Waldron, the old ferry master, returned and leased the ferry for five years from May 1, 1785 at £500 a year. In 1788 he wanted to renew the lease, but the Corporation of New York decided to lease the ferry house and other buildings in Brooklyn independently of the ferry, and to license six persons to run one large and one small boat each, the former for heavy freight, horses, and carriages; the latter for light freight and passengers. Four of each were to run to the Fly Market Slip and two of each to Peck's Slip. In 1805, five horse boats and three rowboats were licensed to run from Catharine Slip to Brooklyn under the same conditions as the others, and leased to Dirck Amerman. Josiah Brown leased the Fly Market Ferry in 1805 and was succeeded by Burdett Stryker in 1808. In 1811, Theodosius Hunt and Lossee van Nostrand became the lessees of the two ferries for three years at \$3,450 a year. Yellow fever prevailed in Brooklyn during August, 1809, and the old ferry was moved to Joralemon Street, plying to Whitehall, New York.

Prior to 1814, the only craft used on the East River were rowboats, flat boats with sprit sails, or, at best periaguas, or two-masted sail boats. At slack water, or when the current was not strong, the oarsmen made a neat job of the trip and the passengers had a comparatively speedy and enjoyable voyage. During a surging flood tide or a swiftly-running ebb, headway was made with difficulty, not to mention actual danger. With the wind strong and the tide adverse the boats often came to anchorage near Governors Island, or as far out of the way in the opposite direction. Delays were common, accidents, at times, became



alarmingly frequent. The transportation of cattle was at once a most important and serious problem.

Most, almost all, of the meat consumed in Manhattan came from Brooklyn. The abattoirs were on the New York side, the live animals being ferried over. Boats, loaded with uneasy live stock, were so low in the water that there was a constant danger of their capsizing or filling. Prudent farmers would often wait two or three days for favorable weather conditions rather than risk themselves and their goods in a hazardous crossing.

The ice in the river presented another problem for the unwieldy ferryboats. In January, 1784, eight persons were thrown into the water when a ferryboat was upset by a huge cake of ice. One of the passengers died from exposure. During the same year five persons narrowly escaped death when a horse suddenly changed his position and capsized the boat.

"The New York Journal" and "Post Rider" made laconic mention of a river mishap which occurred shortly afterward. It said:

"Yesterday, about 12 o'clock, one of the large ferryboats plying between this city and Brooklyn sunk in a gust of wind. Eight men were in the boat, including five boatmen and three passengers, all of whom were drowned except one of the boatmen."

In 1801, "The American Citizen," an influential newspaper of the time, conducted a crusade against the way the ferries were managed. Those conducting the ferry were severely arraigned for the alleged unseaworthiness of the sailboats, the careless loading of cattle, and the drunkenness of boatmen. This last was charged with responsibility for many accidents.

**First Steam Ferryboats**—In 1811, steam was introduced on the Paulus Hook (Jersey City) and Hoboken ferries. Robert Fulton made a similar proposition to Brooklyn in October, 1812, and the Corporation of New York accepted it for the ferry between Beekman's Slip, New York, and the old ferry slip in Brooklyn. The lease was to Robert Fulton and William Cutting for the period of twenty-five years from May 1, 1814. They were to pay an annual rental of \$4,000 for eighteen years and \$4,500 for the last seven years; they were to provide a steamboat similar to the Paulus Hook boat to run daily once an hour from half an hour before sunrise until half an hour after sunset. In 1819 they were to put on a second steamboat. The corporation agreed to keep the piers in repair and ask the Legislature to increase the rates of ferriage. The steamboat fare was fixed at four cents for passengers, and two cents on the horse boats and barges.

Having made this arrangement with Fulton, the New York corporation turned out the old ferry lessees and informed the Brooklynites the rates were to be increased. The Brooklyn folk held a town meeting and appointed a committee of six to oppose the increase. A committee obtained a statement of receipts and expenses for three preceding years and found that the expenses had been \$14,000, the receipts, \$22,000, while \$14,000 had been paid by foot passengers at two cents each. From this they estimated that the income from the ferry under the new rates would be \$38,000 the first year, and that it would be doubled in less than fifteen years. The committee ascertained the cost of a steamboat and was convinced that the rates were high enough. They sent a protest to the Corporation of New York and offered to take a lease of the ferry on the terms upon which it was granted subsequently to Fulton, but failed to obtain it.

Horse boats were introduced on the new (Catharine Street) ferry in 1816. The boats had two hulls twenty feet apart, covered by one deck. The paddle



WILLIAMSBURGH BRIDGE PLAZA





wheel was on a shaft between the hulls, and was made to revolve by horses treading an endless incline as they do in threshing in the country.

The law to increase the ferry rates signed March 4, 1814, provided a reduction for all vehicles, a commutation rate of \$10 a year, and a clause prohibiting vessels from anchoring in the way of the boats. Fulton and Cutting formed a stock company—the New York and Brooklyn Steamboat Ferry Associates, to whom they made over about half the capital, valued at \$68,000. The “Nassau” made the first trip between New York and Brooklyn on May 19, 1814. Lewis Rhoda, chief engineer at Fulton’s works, was killed.

The Long Island “Star” of May 11, 1814, said:

“On Sunday last commenced running the new and beautiful steamboat ‘Nassau’ as a ferryboat between New York and Brooklyn. This noble boat surpassed the expectation of the public in the rapidity of her movements. Her trips varied from five to twelve minutes according to tide and weather. The inhabitants of Long Island particularly will find this a most interesting improvement, as the ferries heretofore, however well conducted, have been inconvenient and to many a subject of dread.

“Carriages and wagons, however crowded, pass on and off the boat with the same facility as in passing a bridge. There is a spacious room below deck where the passengers may be secure from the weather.”

A week later the “Star” reported that the “Nassau” had crossed the river forty times on Sunday and had cut the running time down to as little as four minutes, with eight as the maximum in the face of unfavorable tides. A record had been set up when, on one trip, five hundred and forty-nine passengers, one wagon, two carriages, and a saddle horse were taken over the river.

Fulton died in 1815 and Cutting some years later, but before the lease had expired. Subsequently arose a great public clamor, during which charges were lodged that the ferry was being made the pawn for the machinations of certain speculative interests. Indignation ran so high that there were threats to sink the boats. Cuttings’s widow was forced to dispose of the lease.

In May, 1839, the Fulton Ferry, with the two other ferries then connecting New York and Brooklyn, were taken over by the Brooklyn Ferry Company, of which N. B. Morse was president and Henry E. Pierrepont vice-president. It tried to give Brooklyn a good ferry service; it built new docks and boats, and at the end of its service in 1844 its stock was worth only seventy-three cents on the dollar. Five years later the Brooklyn Union Ferry Company assumed control of them, and in 1854 the Union Ferry Company was formed to operate them.

The Fulton Ferry became known as the “Great Gateway to Brooklyn.” Between 1862 and 1868 eleven new boats were purchased by the Union Ferry Company. One of the four, the “Union,” bought in 1862, made the last trip over the old Fulton Ferry route and is now running between Atlantic Avenue and Whitehall Street.

Four of the Union Ferry Company’s boats saw service in the Civil War. One of them, the “Somerset,” caught a blockade runner.

In 1863 the Brooklyn Ferry house was built at a cost of \$39,000, and two years later \$20,000 more was spent on towers for it.

Detective Sergeant Harry Graham was a figure of the old Fulton Ferry in its palmy days. Persons returning from New York were exposed to sneak thieves and pickpockets when they set foot in Brooklyn. Thugs were common. With the opening of the Brooklyn Bridge such dangers passed and the fog no longer proved an obstacle to travel.

“One morning,” Graham related in reminiscent mood, “twenty odd years ago, I was down at the ferry and it was awful foggy; not only that, the river was filled with ice. There hadn’t been a boat across in more than three hours and market wagons, butchers’ wagons,



business wagons and trucks, in fact, vehicles of all kinds in line and waiting in the cold to get a chance to cross. It was a part of my duty to keep these wagons in line, but, on this occasion there had to be special details, for they extended way up Fulton Street and Washington Street and were even in Court Street. They were doing the only thing they could do to get over—waiting their chance. None of the other ferries were taking vehicles at all. About 8:30 o'clock down came a neat little brougham from Columbia Heights. I saw it descend the steep Columbia Heights hill, and was thinking at the time that the driver needn't be in such a hurry. However, he got down and drove straight up to the ferry gates. Well, you can imagine how men felt that had been sitting on the uncovered seats of farm wagons and trucks for three hours, and were half frozen. Why, such a howl went up; and the air was blue as the men told the driver of the brougham to get out of that and take his place in the line. The driver was inclined to pay no attention to what they said; and I passed through the line of farm wagons to the carriage. It contained Mr. Beecher and Mr. Bowen.

"What is the trouble here, Graham?" Mr. Beecher asked.

"I explained the situation.

"I'm in an awful hurry," he said. "Is there no way that I can get over?"

"Not that I know of," I replied.

"No other ferries running?"

"No, sir. You will have to take your place in the line."

"Suddenly Mr. Beecher's brow cleared up, and he asked:

"Graham, do you think that I could buy a place?"

"I told him he might try, and he drove up the line asking each man as he went along. One said that if Mr. Beecher wanted to buy up his load of vegetables he'd just as soon turn out and go home; but his offer was not accepted. Finally Mr. Beecher paid a man somewhere near York Street \$5 for his place. The man pocketed the money and drove away up to Court Street to get in line again. But the bridge changed all that."

**Brooklyn Bridge Opened**—In 1871 the lease of the Union Ferry Company expired while William M. Tweed was in power. He renewed the lease for ten years at a nominal rental of \$1 a year, but restricting the fare to one cent. The company learned that interests supposed to be Tweed himself, stood ready to take the lease on the new terms, and accepted them. After the fall of Tweed, New York held the contract illegal and claimed ten years back rent of \$1,500,000. It was compromised on the payment of \$300,000 to New York.

The lease was renewed and the Union Ferry Company retained control of all the ferries until they were taken over by the city. Before the Brooklyn Bridge was completed in 1883, the Union Ferry Company carried 50,000,000 passengers annually. The growth of travel in round numbers was from 25,550,000 in 1860, to 32,850,000 in 1865, to 40,000,000 in 1870, and to 50,000,000 in 1880. In 1887 the boats carried 35,887,495 persons of which Fulton Ferry's share was 11,087,325. The opening of Brooklyn Bridge did not materially injure the ferry's business. In 1887, 30,000,000 persons crossed the bridge, but they were drawn from almost all the down-town ferries. The bridge charged a toll from pedestrians for many years, and when this was discontinued Fulton Ferry had its first indication of what was to come. There were wholesale desertions from the ranks of ferry passengers, but nothing in comparison with the defections which occurred overnight when the subway was opened to Brooklyn.

Then came the other bridges over and the other tubes under the East River, and Fulton Ferry began slipping more rapidly down the toboggan of disuse to absolute obscurity. In December, 1922, the ferry was taken over by the city. One boat, making two trips an hour, was soon found to be well able to handle what was left of Fulton Ferry's milling host of passengers. The ferry, before being discontinued, served chiefly a few coffee brokers and coffee plant employees who worked in the warehouses which line the Brooklyn shore below Columbia Heights, with some old-time residents of the Heights who liked the refreshing ferry ride each morning and didn't care to concede the existence of so modern a device as a tube running under their favorite river.

At least, that is what Captain John O. Androvette, the skipper of the "Union,"

who took it on its last trip and had been taking Fulton Ferry boats across since 1886, earnestly maintained. It has been more than two centuries since Cornelis Dircksen's farm and his inn disappeared, but the ferry he started wasn't abandoned until early in 1924. A brief order from the Department of Plant and Structures closed up Fulton Ferry and extinguished the river route which Dircksen had so laboriously established. Three bridges, three tubes and five ferries serve with difficulty where Dircksen's rowboat once sufficed.

In 1706, when Dirck Benson blew his cow's horn to tell the persons within hearing distance that his rowboat was about to cross the East River there were only sixty-four freeholders in the town of Brooklyn. At the opening of the nineteenth century when the town showed two hundred and fifty-three voters at an election, six persons were licensed to keep each one large and one small boat. When the steamboats began their trips in 1814 the population had reached 3,806. In 1840, when the New York and Brooklyn Ferry Company was formed, Brooklyn had 47,000 inhabitants. In 1852, when the Union Ferry Company was organized, there were 150,000 persons. In 1888, with almost a million inhabitants, the bridge and the ferries carried 80,000,000 persons a year.

It is noteworthy that H. E. Pierrepont, president of the Union Ferry Company for many years was a direct descendant of Cornelis Dircksen Hoaglandt, the first ferry master.

### CHAPTER III

#### HORSE RACING

**H**EMPSTEAD PLAIN made Long Island the home of horse racing from the moment the English had horses to race. Only a year after they took over the colony Governor Richard Nicolls established a regular course in 1665. He explained that it was "for encouraging the bettering of the breed of horses, which, through great neglect, has been impaired."

Four years later Governor Francis Lovelace appointed trials of speed to take place annually in May. He ordered the justices of Hempstead to receive subscriptions for "a crown of silver, or the value thereof in good wheat," to reward the winner. And he frequented the races with delight.

The sport became the greatest activity of Queens County and continued for years. Indeed, the Queens courses led the country in the stakes offered and the famous horses they brought out.

Daniel Denton in his description of New Netherland, 1670, the first in English, says:

"Toward the middle of Long Island lyeth a plain 16 miles long and four broad where you will find neither stick nor stone to hinder the horses' heels, or endanger them in their races, and once a year the best horses in the Island are brought hither to try their swiftness, and the swiftest rewarded with a silver cup, two being annually procured for that purpose."

The course itself was changed more than once, but Hempstead Plain continued to retain it as the Newmarket Track until 1821, when it passed to Union Course. The Newmarket stakes were £50 for each event, although £100 was the figure on several occasions. On the Union Course track gambling vied with racing in interest and large stakes were won from the outset. In 1823 \$200,000 changed hands on the race between "Eclipse" and "Sir Henry" for



\$20,000 a side. "Eclipse" won. In 1842 "Boston" defeated "Fashion" in two heats in the presence of 70,000 persons.

The Newmarket Course was in the southeast corner of North Hempstead, five miles west of Jamaica. Union Course was three miles west of Jamaica. It consisted of a mile track surrounded by a palisade. The Rev. Dr. Nathaniel S. Prime, in his "History of Long Island" (1845), is prompted by the gambling evil to write, probably of the race of "Boston" and "Fashion":

"It has been stated and the statement stands uncontradicted that at a single course of races, 50,000 persons attended, and \$200,000 were lost and won; and that during the five days that the "sports" continued, the toll of the Fulton Ferry Company averaged \$1,000 a day; and it was supposed that the other avenues from the city realized an equal sum. But the gambling, expense and loss of time attending these scenes of dissipation, form only a part of the evils with which they are connected. The drinking—the swearing—the licentiousness—the contentions, and other nameless crimes, which are here periodically committed, with the countenance of law, are enough to sicken the soul of every man that fears God, and is disposed to reverence His commands; and must induce him to wish most devoutly for the time to come, and that speedily, when this crying abomination, with all its accompaniments, shall be banished from this once sacred soil of Puritans and Huguenots."

Jamaica had a track in 1757, and Newtown in 1758. In 1854 the Fashion Association for Improving the Breed of Horses opened a course at Newtown. It disappeared with the coming of the railroad through the property in 1865. At Centreville, near Union Course, a trotting track was laid out in 1825. There in 1847 "Albany Girl" was driven to run one hundred miles in ten consecutive hours in harness. She broke down after making ninety-seven and one-half miles in nine and one-half hours.

Horse racing began in Gravesend with the Prospect Park Fair Grounds Association, incorporated in 1868. The Gravesend track was laid out on a plot of sixty acres near Gravesend Avenue and a club house built. It was not a success, and another effort was made at Parkville with the same result. This property became known as the Gravesend race course of the Brooklyn Jockey Club. The Coney Island Jockey Club inaugurated its long career of success in 1879. Coney Island had become the favorite resort for all classes of New Yorkers in the summer months. Leonard W. Jerome thought it would be advantageous to lay out a race course in the neighborhood and gathered some of the younger set about him to carry out his purpose.

William K. Vanderbilt had two cronies, both impecunious judged by his standards of wealth, both gentlemen of high accomplishments. He took them along aboard his yacht and enjoyed their society, whether they played cards or amused his guests as raconteurs. When the Coney Island Jockey Club's proposition was put before him Mr. Vanderbilt acted with method in his madness. He saw an opportunity to finance these companions handsomely and turn over a goodly profit for himself. Accordingly he furnished most of the capital. Those who knew him most intimately ascribed his course to unselfish motives almost wholly. The Sheepshead Bay race track was a gold mine from the start. After Mr. Vanderbilt had placed his two friends beyond all possibility of want he turned about and made large sums from the venture for himself. Thus the names of John H. Bradford and Cornelius Fellowes, both since dead, appear in the list of men active in the formation of the Coney Island Jockey Club.

The Coney Island Jockey Club was incorporated in June, 1879, under the laws of 1854, an act "To Encourage the Breeding of Horses." The founders and governors of the club were: H. C. Babcock, J. H. Bradford, A. J. Cassatt, C. Fellowes, John G. Heckscher, James R. Keene, August Belmont, Jr., General

Daniel Butterfield, Robert Center, Frank Gray Griswold, Leonard W. Jerome, James G. K. Lawrence, Pierre Lorillard, Jr., James V. Parker, A. B. Purdy, A. Wright Sanford, F. A. Schermerhorn, Richard Peters, George Peabody Wetmore, Skipworth Gordon, Christopher R. Robert, Henry Alexandre, William R. Travers, and William K. Vanderbilt. A meeting was given on the Prospect Park Fair Grounds on June 21, 24, and 26, which was a success in spite of its impromptu nature. Leonard W. Jerome was elected president of the club at a meeting in Long Branch on July 4 following. John G. Heckscher became secretary and treasurer. The autumn meeting at Prospect Park the following September spurred the club to greater efforts.

Mr. Jerome announced the selection of the site for the club's new race course on Ocean Avenue, Sheepshead Bay, at a meeting in 25 East Twenty-sixth Street, New York, December 4, 1879. He suggested building a grandstand five hundred feet long, two stories high, with an entresol of boxes. He proposed that the capital stock be increased from \$100,000 to \$250,000, offering to take \$125,000 in payment for the land.

The Sheepshead Bay Course was opened on June 19, 1880, with a six-day meeting. It was a huge success. Among the sweepstakes were the Tidal, Foam, Coney Island Handicap, Surf, Mermaid, and Coney Island Derby. The Suburban was inaugurated in 1884. It closed in January of each year and became the great medium of ante-post betting. The Futurity was opened in 1886, to be run in 1888. The entries were nominated before they were born through their dams, creating a gigantic produce stakes. It brought a great field out, and was the most valuable race ever run up to that time. The Realization was run first in 1889. "Salvator" beat "Tenny" and others, and it rivaled the Futurity in popularity.

J. G. K. Lawrence succeeded Mr. Jerome as president. After his death, in 1895, Lawrence Kip was elected. Mr. Kip's death brought William K. Vanderbilt into the presidency in 1900 and Cornelius Fellowes became secretary.

When the course was remodeled in 1884 it was made a mile and a furlong long. This was the first course more than a mile in length in America. A turf course was added in 1886, and the grounds were beautified, with ever-enhanced popularity. The course was abandoned in 1910 owing to repressive laws signed by Governor Charles E. Hughes and the club was dissolved in 1916. Most of its great events, the Suburban, the Futurity, and Realization were transferred to Belmont Park.

William Engeman was another far-sighted business man who sought to profit by the growing popularity of Coney Island. He owned land, and he organized the Brighton Beach Association. He opened his course for a meeting June 28, 1879. On July 4 the racing was resumed and continued on July 5 and July 14. Auction pools were sold only. The big stables did not enter, but such was the success of the meeting a second of six days was begun on July 15. It ended on July 28. A third meeting of six days followed on July 29, ending on August 9. A fourth of five days began on August 12. The seashore crowds were attracted and a new body of race-goers created. The demand for the sport brought about a fifth meeting on August 25 with five days' racing. Brighton gave a \$2,000 race to attract the star horses, and offered the Brighton Cup. "Bramble" was beaten by "Fortuna" in the \$2,000 event, but won the cup subsequently.

A nine-day meeting, the sixth, September 8-17, made Brighton an all-season racing point. It grew in popularity and the quality of horses entered with each succeeding year. William Engeman, son of the founder, succeeded his father



on his death in 1897. He built a new grandstand and improved the grounds. His sweepstakes were of great value and the finest horses in the country were attracted to the course. C. J. Fitzgerald was engaged as manager for the track in 1896. Under his direction, Brighton took high place among the racing grounds of the country. The Brighton Handicap and Cup were great events. Repressive legislation caused a suspension of racing.

### The Dwyer Brothers' Turf Partnership

The Dwyer brothers—Michael and Philip Dwyer—formed the most remarkable racing partnership ever known in this country. Nobody else ever held a place like theirs in the history of the turf. When the brothers entered the racing field they found it occupied exclusively by individuals to whom they bore no similarity and with whom they had nothing in common. In those days to say that a man owned a racing stable was equivalent to saying that he was a millionaire—the Lorillards, the Belmonts, the Vanderbilts, Haggin, Hearst, and Alexander J. Cassatt were the great names to conjure with. Horses were run for pleasure and not for profit. Of course, some of the owners made money, but that was incidental to their enjoyment of the sport, and in almost every case the balance for the season was on the wrong side of the ledger.

Mike and Phil Dwyer appeared on the turf backed not by millions but by something else. They enjoyed the sport, but enjoyment was not just what they were after. They had been in the butcher business. An older brother had taught them how to cut up a carcass and sell it. He taught them the art of cutting and selling, not only, but of cutting to great advantage and selling at low prices. Under his training they became impressed with the supreme importance not only of large sales, but of personal cleanliness, and of treating the poorest customers with deference. Their stores, which multiplied in number, were found only in impoverished neighborhoods. Their aprons were spotlessly white; their business began early and lasted long after their competitors had closed. Never did the sawdust on their floors stay long enough to have a begrimed appearance.

Of course they made money—money enough to buy a half interest in the horse "Rhadamanthus." It was not easy to tell them anything about horses they did not know. The wheels of their butcher carts spun 'round more rapidly than those of any other butcher cart in Brooklyn. As a matter of fact some trotters of no mean repute drew beef from the Dwyer stores to their customers. One or two of these horses were good enough to take and hold their own upon the trotting track, but at the time trotting had fallen into disrepute. Public confidence had gone and few matches were regarded as being fair. The Dwyers had no love for an ebbing tide, and they saw rightly that the running turf was in the ascendant. When therefore they began to divide their time they had given to butchering with something else, they suddenly found themselves in strange company. Instead of wearing white aprons or directing in person the affairs of their wholesale store in Fulton Market, they stood beside the Lorillards and the Belmonts, sharing some of their vicissitudes and sharing likewise some of their ideas about racing.

Mr. Lorillard sometimes paid a leisurely visit to his stables and he might go so far as to inquire occasionally about one or the other of his horses, or even make a suggestion to his trainer, but the Dwyers did more. The honor and distinction of victory were not primary with them. They were in the racing business for very much the same reasons that they were in the meat business. At the very

start they made up their minds that the methods which commanded success in the one would insure it almost as certainly in the other. Accordingly when the sun rose, its first rays were sure to fall on Phil or Mike or both of them, and to find them somewhere near "Rhadamanthus." In time they bought the other half of that promising colt and owned him from head to tail. They managed everything themselves and it goes without saying they were regarded in the nature of intruders. They shocked the birds of fine feathers, and their undertaking had an air of impertinence in the eyes of the old timers. Other horses were added to "Rhadamanthus" and the Dwyer stable became of respectable proportions in rapid but not reckless succession. Of all the extravagances the wealthy can enjoy none was considered further from the reach of poor men than a racing stable. "How long can the Dwyers stand the gaff?" was a common question, but after a year it was not asked any longer. The Dwyers had surprised the public and amazed the millionaires. It made all the difference in the world whether a man owned and managed a racing stable, or whether he merely owned it. The Dwyers had a trainer, but he followed rather than gave directions. The Dwyer horses developed a habit of passing first under the winning wire. The millionaire was at a disadvantage. As a rule his personal attention would have been worth nothing, so that even if he chose to rise at four to inspect his horses the Dwyers still had the advantage, and they made the most of it.

They were the pioneers of a new era and they reaped the lion's share. What might be called professional horse owning as distinguished from ownership of the Belmont type came to be a rule with few exceptions. The rivals of the Dwyers, however, were poorly equipped for competition, and success followed success. At length they found they had to cope with men of their own quality. At one time they took cast-off horses from other stables and turned them into winners, but a time came when their own cast-offs were turned into winners to their own discomfiture. "Taviston," "Ballston," and "Kenwood" were all sold for a song and all turned out well after the sacrifice. In the earlier days it was taken for granted that if anybody could do anything with a horse the Dwyers could, and that if they parted with him his future was assuredly hopeless. The three cases cited were glaring enough, but "Tea Tray's" case was still more amazing. The Dwyers bought "Tea Tray" for \$10,000 at a time when the possession of the horse promised to enable them to make a clean sweep of all the richest stakes of the year. "Tea Tray's" glorious career ended with a change of owners. After a dismal season in the Dwyer stables the brothers sold the horse for a quarter of the purchase price. It was supposed that the horse had gone to pieces. In the hands of a new owner "Tea Tray" defeated "Firenze," "Prince Royal," and other cracks, while old Father Daly sent "Ballston" a mile in 1:40 and a fraction, and before "Salvator's" unequalled feat wanted the Brighton Beach Racing Association to put up a purse of \$1,000 to induce "Ballston" to try to break the record. Things appeared to have come to a pretty pass with the Dwyers. They had changed from the gift of making poor horses winners into a fatal gift of destroying good ones. The truth was the brothers were no longer of one mind. They dissolved partnership in 1890 and the red and blue colors disappeared. They were first carried to victory by George Barbee in a dash of nine furlongs. For six years with Jockey Jimmy McLoughlin they headed the list of turf winners, in one season more than \$200,000 of stakes falling to their share. This was more than any other stable had placed to its credit in a single season. Such blazing stars as "Hindoo," "Miss Woodford," "George Kinney," "Tremont," and "Sir Dixon" dazzled the eyes of sporting men. Their "Dew Drops," "Pontiacs,"



"Brambles," and "Onondagas" swept the turf, and the red jacket and blue sash became the emblems of invincibility. Their achievements in 1890 were negligible. Their winnings from 1876 until 1889 may be summed up as follows:

Year	No. Horses	No. Starts	First	Second	Third	Amount Won
1876	3	14	7	3	..	\$17,665
1877	5	31	6	5	4	2,755
1878	4	46	10	14	5	16,893
1879	10	83	33	18	12	24,135
1880	9	150	69	30	19	76,922
1881	13	126	49	15	10	88,076
1882	12	115	46	25	14	72,000
1883	14	127	54	27	11	137,680
1884	18	149	38	28	15	62,682
1885	16	170	47	33	21	79,839
1886	33	325	88	50	48	208,160
1887	17	172	56	27	28	161,397
1888	26	226	59	51	30	129,135
1889	35	408	131	87	51	166,186
Total	215	2,142	702	413	268	\$1,243,534

Intimate friends of the Dwyers believed the end was ushered in when they began to make large purchases of yearlings, following the practice of their millionaire rivals. They were known to buy fifty or sixty colts for \$100,000 at the yearly sales in Kentucky without getting one good race horse by the operation. It was a very different policy from that of buying only tested and developed animals. The brothers parted company the best of friends.

Phil made a partner of his young son and continued on the turf under the style of Phil Dwyer & Son. At the time of their dissolution the Dwyer brothers owned a controlling interest in the Brooklyn Jockey Club and were the leading spirits in the New Jersey Racing Association. They were also stockholders in the Coney Island Jockey Club.

### Famous Jockey Clubs

The Brooklyn Jockey Club owed its great success to the Dwyers. Those brothers, Philip J. and M. G. Dwyer, had long owned a successful stable containing many of the most famous horses of the day. In the winter of 1885-86 they astonished turfmen by the announcement that they "had found the ownership of a race track more profitable than owning race horses." They forthwith closed the purchase of the old Prospect Park Fair Grounds at Gravesend and organized the Brooklyn Jockey Club. They revamped the old track and erected new buildings.

The track had been the scene of some of the greatest trotting races of the sixties and seventies. Race meetings also had been held there from time to time, as in 1869, when "Vauxhall" "General Duke," and many other noted horses ran. It was well situated for the purpose of the Dwyers. Transportation was easy and cheap.

The course was ready in the summer of 1886. The club decided to race on off days during the Coney Island meeting at Sheepshead Bay. Up to that time race meetings had not been continuous, but on three days each week, as a rule. As Coney Island raced on Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays, the Brooklyn Club claimed Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays. The change continued. Thus the inaugural meeting of the Brooklyn Club began on August 26, 1886, and lasted seven days, alternating with Sheepshead Bay. The best horses took part, and the meeting was a success. When the meeting at Sheepshead ended, Brooklyn con-

tinued for seven days longer, and raced an additional six days in October when the Jerome Park meeting had closed.

The Brooklyn Handicap, inaugurated in 1887, became one of the country's racing classics. "Dry Monopole" defeated "Blue Wing," and "Hidalgo" in a memorable finish. This race, modeled after the Suburban, attracted such great horses as "The Bard," "Exile," "Tenny," "Ornament," "Kinley Mack," "Irish Lad," "Delhi," "Celt," "King James," "Fitzherbert," "Whisk Broom," "Friar Rock," and many others.

The Queens County Jockey Club opened the Aqueduct course in 1894 in the most unpretentious fashion. It rose to a high place among race courses. Thomas J. Riley was the first president, and with him were David Holland and Robert Tucker. In 1895 the Carter Handicap was inaugurated to be run at the spring meeting. It soon became one of the big events of the sporting year.

President Riley was encouraged by the large attendance at the Aqueduct meetings. He decided to build a race track of a mile and a quarter with only one turn. This gave a stretch eighty feet wide, a back stretch ninety feet wide, and a straightaway of five furlongs for two-year-olds.

A group of members of the Brooklyn Jockey Club bought the course on Riley's death and began a series of spring and autumn meetings in 1914, upon the resumption of racing. They brought the Brooklyn Handicap to Aqueduct, and it added to its laurels, becoming the foremost all-aged race of the season. The Brooklyn Derby, the Tremont and the Great American, old events of Gravesend days, also were revived at Aqueduct. The Derby was renamed the Dwyer in 1919 in honor of Phil G. Dwyer, who had done so much for Aqueduct's success.

James Shevlin succeeded Mr. Dwyer as president upon his death in 1917. Frederick Rehberger continued as secretary and Thomas Courtney as treasurer. The Aqueduct course is the favorite for trainers, due to its light loam soil, free from stone, and the fine drainage which makes it available in all weathers. The long home-stretch, more than half a mile in extent, is the best for the long-striding horse anywhere to be found. It is almost perfect for tests of speed.

Riley and Holland were famous characters of the period. Riley was a cab driver in Union Square, known far and near as "Cab Riley." He owned a string of cabs latterly, and they served the patrons of the Union Square Hotel. His knowledge of horses led him to try his luck on the races, and he became wealthy. Dave Holland kept a restaurant in Fourth Avenue, between Thirteenth Street and the Square, famous for its cooking and after-theater parties, when the Rialto was in the neighborhood of Fourteenth Street and the old Star Theater drew crowds.

Belmont Park, at Queens, was purchased in 1905 and a mammoth plant constructed. The undertaking was initiated by August Belmont, with James R. Keene and a few others, members of the New York Jockey Club. It was beyond comparison, the most extensive racing property ever opened. The grounds covered six hundred and fifty acres, with a race course, an oval circuit of one and one-half miles, a straightaway of seven furlongs, and a training track of a mile circuit. The races were reversed, that is, run with the rail on the right instead of the left of the jockey, as was the custom on all other American tracks. The grandstand, six hundred and fifty feet in length, could seat nine thousand spectators. The roof was available likewise, as is the practice in England. The club house afforded a fine view of the racing. It had dining rooms, bedrooms, and balconies, while a bridge ran to the grandstand. The administration building was complete in every detail. It contained separate rooms for the stewards, clerk of the course, the handicapper, clerk of scales, jockeys' dressing rooms and wardrobe, shower



baths, and infirmary. The saddling paddock was shaded by stately oaks, and so arranged as to permit the gentlemen and ladies to inspect the horses entered for the great events. The lawn was a favorite spot from which many patrons loved to view the racing.

Racing was inaugurated on May 4, 1905, with a brilliant gathering of wealth and beauty. "Sysonby" and "Race King" ran a dead heat for the Metropolitan Handicap.

The great sweepstakes which had made Jerome Park famous were brought over to Belmont Park—the Withers, Belmont, Jerome, Ladies' Juvenile, Nursery Champagne, Toboggan, and Metropolitan. In their new home they gained fresh laurels. At the time August Belmont was president of the Jockey Club; H. G. Crickmore was secretary, and S. S. Howland, general manager. Mr. H. Williams, secretary of Sandown Park, England, was adviser. The staff comprised W. S. Vosburgh, handicapper; Mars Cassidy, starter; Clarence McDowell and Charles H. Pettingill, placing judges, and Mr. Crickmore, clerk of scales.

After the suspension of racing passed, Belmont Park was reopened in 1913 before a great throng under the finest auspices. The crowd sang "Auld Lang Syne" when the horses appeared for the first race. In 1914 an autumn meeting was added. The Sheepshead Bay attractions were added, after the Futurity had been run in 1910, 1913, and 1914 at Saratoga.

The grandstand and many buildings were swept by an incendiary fire in April, 1917. The plant was wrecked completely, but the grandstand was repaired sufficiently for the opening day set for May 30 (Memorial Day). Further repairs were made in 1919. In 1920 the grandstand was rebuilt and the direction of the races changed. The old fieldstand was added to the grandstand, making the entire length nine hundred and fifty feet and the seating capacity 17,500. A promenade was added at the rear with a mezzanine floor. The concreting of the seats and floors consumed 1,395,000 pounds of cement, eight hundred motor trucks of gravel, five hundred motor trucks of sand, while ten miles of gas pipe were used in the hand-railing. One hundred thousand square feet of corrugated iron was used in the floors and cornices. The timber and lumber employed was 207,000 feet, board measure. About three hundred and fifty men were employed in the work.

The Metropolitan Jockey Club built its race course in Queens about four miles from Jamaica and about fifteen from Manhattan. The course is egg-shaped, with a mile circuit. A chute formed part of the course originally, but it never was used. The soil is a sandy loam which drains easily. The home stretch is three hundred and eighty-five yards from the last turn to the winning post. It is extremely wide—one hundred and five feet. The grandstand seats nine thousand persons, with a pitch enabling every one of them to see every movement of the horses. The club house is pretentious, with an entresol of boxes. It seats fifteen hundred persons. The paddock is large with a great shed, or receiving stable, fitted with boxes for the racing horses. The club was organized in 1901. Its inaugural meeting was held on April 27, 1903. Spring and summer meetings have been held each year, excepting only the period of suspension. The Excelsior Handicap is the feature of the spring meeting. The Youthful Stakes is the event for two-year-olds, and the Stuyvesant and Southampton Handicaps for three-year-olds.

William H. Reynolds was the first president, and George F. Dobson was secretary. Walter C. Edwards was racing secretary. In 1920 Matthew Corbet

became president of the club. On his death in 1921, William N. Street succeeded him.

**Personalities of the Turf**—William Collins Whitney, Secretary of the Navy in the first Cleveland administration, became the foremost figure on the American turf in his later years, the owner of many famous race horses, and the largest stable. His history from 1897, when his colors first appeared on the track, until his death on Tuesday, February 3, 1904, was the history of the American turf for that period. The famous Eton blue jacket and brown cap figured in almost every event of importance. He did not content himself with racing in this country; his formidable stables competed in the classic events in England. He was the second American who had the great honor of seeing his colors borne to victory in the blue ribbon event of the turf, the English Derby. Mr. Whitney originally intended to race only a small string, but the desire to provide a pleasant means of outdoor recreation led him deeply into the sport.

Two years later his ambition was gratified by the victory of "Ballyhoo Bey" in the Futurity. His horse beat the three representatives of James R. and Foxhall P. Keene—"Olympian," who ran second; "Tommy Atkins," third, and "Cap and Belles," who was misplaced. Mr. Whitney's boyish enthusiasm over this victory showed it was the glory and not the stakes he valued. The next year "Yankee," in whom he held the controlling interest, won the Futurity. Encouraged by his success in placing to his credit the great event of the American turf Mr. Whitney purchased in the most lavish fashion thoroughbreds of various degrees of excellence, often paying much more than they were worth. Gradually he acquired one of the strongest stables that ever raced under one man's name.

Among his thoroughbreds were "Nasturtium," "Goldsmith," "Endurance by Right," "Leonora Loring," "Blue Girl," "Praetorius," "Gold Seeker," "Morning-side," "Girdle," "Gunfire," "Slipthrift," "Admiration," "Buela," "Elizabeth M. Hurley," "Melba," "Leonidas," "Reliable," "Stalwart," "Inflexible," "Judith Campbell," "Blackstock," "Mercury," "Armenia," and "Kilmarnock." In 1901 Mr. Whitney leased the three-year-old Volodyovski and won the English Derby. The American-bred horses he exported to England won a number of races.

As soon as he saw the importance of breeding he purchased La Belle Stock Farm in the blue grass region of Kentucky. Paying \$60,000 for the great race horse "Hamburg," a son of "Hanover," who was by "Hindoo," he placed him at the head of his stud, which included "Nasturtium," "Yankee," "Kilmarnock," and the imported sire "Meddler."

In 1903, Mr. Whitney saw "Hamburg Belle," "Leonidas," "Inflexible," "Mimosa," and "Golden Drop" carry off some of the principal prizes for the two-year-old division, including the Futurity, which was "Hamburg Belle's" principal victory. Mr. Whitney died in his home at 871 Fifth Avenue. He also owned a fine estate at Wheatley Hills, L. I., racing stables, training track and racing establishment at Sheepshead Bay, where he refitted a colonial home on Gerritsen Creek for a racing season abode, and many other homes and establishments throughout America, with a house in London. Next to the State itself he was the largest land owner in New York at the time of his death.

Captain Cornelius Vanderveer, Jr., father of John C. and Garret Vanderveer, was the first person to raise thoroughbreds in Flatbush. In May, 1883, the full-blooded horse "Messenger" was imported from England. After doing service in Pennsylvania and New Jersey he was taken to Philip Pratt's, within two miles of Jamaica. From there the horse went to Flatbush and remained until his death.



Captain Vanderveer laid out a track on his farm for training purposes. Its bounds today would be Carnarsie Lane, East Thirty-eighth Street, Albany Avenue and Avenue D. After his death his blooded horses and colts were divided equally between his sons, John C. and Garret, under his will, dated August 24, 1803. Garret proved no lover of horses, and, although he had inherited some of the best stock in the country, he turned the animals out to run wild in the woods, giving them neither care nor training. While John begged him to sell them to him he refused for unknown reasons. John continued to breed thoroughbreds until his death in 1845, and his son, John Vanderveer, Jr., continued to raise them, passing the farm along to his own sons, Jacob P. and Peter J., who afterwards turned their attention to trotting stock. This continued until the greater part of the farm was sold in 1892.

**"Messenger," Other Famous Horses**—The advent of "Messenger" was the beginning of modern horse racing in this country.

A poster printed in 1788 has been in the possession of the Vanderveer family for more than a hundred years. It said:

Messenger is a grey, full fifteen hands, three inches high. He was bred by John Pratt, Esq., of Newmarket, England, and was by Mambrino, who was by Engineer, by Sampson, who was the sire of Bay Malton and several other capital racers. His dam by Turf, his granddam Regulus. This dam was a sister to Figarant, and was the dam of Leviathan, a capital racer. Messenger won the following sums in the years 1783, 1784 and 1785 in different parts of England as may be seen by the racing calendar: In September, 1783, at Newmarket, he beat Mr. Potter's Colchester by Shark, winning 100 guineas. He followed this at the same track by beating a brother to Straightlegs, and capturing 30 guineas. On October 30, 1783, he beat Mr. Napier's horse Spectre across the flat and won 300 guineas. The same day he ran across the New Flat against Mr. Fox's Pyrrhus and won 150 guineas. In May, 1784, he beat Mr. Borringdon's Trigger, winning 25 guineas, and in July of that year, he beat Mr. Windham's Apothecary, winning 200 guineas. In the same month he beat Rodney, Snowdrop, Flamer and Ulysses, the first three in a sweepstakes of 60 guineas and the latter in a match for 100 guineas. In March, 1785, he beat the Prince of Wales's Ulysses for 200 guineas, and also Mr. Windham's Fortitude for 300 guineas. In April, the same year, he beat Lord Shelburne's Taylor for 50 guineas, and in addition to all this he won the King's plate several times.

Such were the pedigree and achievements of the great "Messenger." With the invincible horse in their stable the Vanderveers were regarded as successful breeders. As one of "Messenger's" colts turned out to be a great race horse it enhanced their reputation. "Tippoo Sahib" was the name of the new aspirant of racing honors and stakes. His dam was an imported mare by "Northumberland," and he made his first appearance on the Harlem Red House Course. At first he disgusted his owners by running away with his jockey in a four-mile heat, making for the stable, from where he was brought back to the starting point and a stronger lad placed on his back. As if to show his owners that he was of the right sort, "Tippoo Sahib" distanced his three competitors in the first heat, winning glory for himself and money for his backers. Afterwards he was bought by Henry Astor, a brother of the famous John Jacob Astor, for \$1,500. "Tippoo Sahib" left Flatbush with his new owner in October, 1780, and went to the Astor farm in the Bowery, New York, where he passed the rest of his life. He left a son at Flatbush named "Tippoo Sultan," who was matched against the mother of "Eclipse," but for some reason unknown the match never came off.

"Messenger" left many descendants, all of whom were raised in and around Flatbush, and every one of them proved to be a great race horse. Among them were "Financier," "Dragon," "O'Kelley," "Lance," and "Ariel," who won fifty-three races, and afterwards was taken to Virginia by Colonel Edward M. Johnston,

his purchaser. "Angeline" and "Splendid" were also by "Messenger," and a number of fine horses appeared on the race tracks for years thereafter whose pedigrees could be traced back to the sons and grandsons of the immigrant "Messenger," and particularly to "Lance," who was sent to Kentucky.

John Vanderveer, son of John C., died in Flatbush more than thirty-five years ago at a great age. His sons, Peter J. and Jacob P. Vanderveer, lived in the old homestead raising market truck and trotting horses.

Thomas Betts, also of Flatbush, looked after the horse "Baronet," owned by Ludlam Frederick and Henry Astor, and stationed in Flatbush in 1802. James Weatherby of 7 Oxendon Street, London, wrote to Frederick and Astor under date of September 15, 1795:

Baronet at three years old was the property of Sir Walter Vavassour. The first time he started he won the Catterick sweepstakes, beating seven other horses. The next time he started he won a £50 plate at York beating six others.

In the following year he beat Windlestone at York, a match for 500 guineas each, and won a £50 plate at New Malton, after which he was sold to His Royal Highness, the Prince of Wales.

In 1791, Baronet won the great Oatland stakes at Ascot Heath, of 4,400 guineas when nineteen horses started among them being Express, Escape, Precipitate, Buzzard, Chanticleer, Corlander, Pipator, Toby, Skylark and several other capital horses. The same year he walked over for his majesty's plates at Winchester and Canterbury, and won the king's plates at Lewes and Newmarket. This year he won everything he started for. A true account, compared with the racing calendar this day when I sold the horse to Mr. Constable of New York, North America.

After American horse breeders turned their attention to trotters "Abdallah" came to the front and for a season was stationed at Duryea Wiggins' in Flatbush, for four days in the week, and the remaining days at S. C. Troup's, Gravesend. John Tredwell, his original owner, sold "Abdallah" to Isaac Snedecor and Richard Morrell, and Mr. Tredwell had the following written guarantee printed by Alden Spooner of 57 Fulton Street, under date of April 27, 1833:

Abdallah was foaled at Salisbury Plain, L. I., his dam being the very much admired and celebrated trotting mare, Amazonia, and his sire the full bred horse, Old Mambrino; he by Old Messenger. Abdallah is now seven years old, a blood bay, rising fifteen and a half hands high, finely proportioned, great keenness of countenance, of good disposition, quick action and exhibiting beauty and power throughout his form. There will be a public exhibition of the speed of his stock in May, in the neighborhood of Flatbush. His daughters, Lady Blanche, Lady Spot, and others of his get will take part. At four years Abdallah was taken to the Newmarket track and performed a mile in 3 minutes, 10 seconds, which was more than the rate of 18½ miles an hour.—John Tredwell.

## CHAPTER IV

### EAST RIVER BRIDGES

THE City of New York has built four bridges across the East River and the Pennsylvania Railroad has built one. They accommodate not only pedestrians, but also surface cars, subways and elevated trains, and business and pleasure vehicles of every description.

The suspension bridge consists of a roadway supported by cables resting on towers. The cables are anchored at each end in masonry. Suspender ropes or wires connect the bridge cables.

The cantilever bridge, on the contrary, is supported on a pier and balanced by extending in both directions from the pier, one end of the truss extending



over part of the space to be bridged until it meets the end of a similar truss extending toward it from the opposite direction. Three of the city's bridges are of the suspension type and one, the Queensboro Bridge, of the cantilever type.

The Brooklyn Bridge, the oldest, was begun in January, 1870, and completed on May 24, 1883. Ice gorges in the East River during the severe winter of 1866-67 led all Brooklyn to demand a bridge.

That winter the Legislature granted a charter with \$5,000,000 provisional capital. Afterward the bridge was made public property of the two cities and a joint commission was created to control it. Two-thirds were to be paid for and owned by Brooklyn and one-third by New York. John A. Roebling was appointed engineer on May 23, 1867, but in 1870 his foot was crushed in a ferry slip and he died from lockjaw within sixteen days. Washington A. Roebling, his son, completed the work.

Excavations and unforeseen difficulties of working in caissons with compressed air added largely. Finally the bridge was built of steel instead of iron.

When it was projected the era of steel construction had not arrived, and to that fact is due the towers of solid masonry and the light and airy grace of the entire structure. It is regarded as the most beautiful of the city's bridges.

The plans were submitted to army engineers and they recommended an increase of five feet in the height of the span. The whole structure was enlarged accordingly. Instead of the \$7,000,000 outlay contemplated by the elder Roebling, the cost was fixed at \$15,000,000 exclusive of the land.

The foundations of the main tower are seventy-eight feet below high water. The height of the towers above the high water mark is two hundred and seventy-two feet and the height of the roadway above mean high water at the center of the bridge is one hundred and thirty-nine feet. The clear height of the bridge for the width of the four hundred-foot channel is one hundred and thirty-three feet above mean high water.

The height of the roadway above high water at the towers is one hundred nineteen feet, three inches and the height of the towers above the roadway is one hundred fifty-two feet, nine inches. The weight of each anchor plate is twenty-three tons.

The bridge is hung on cables the diameter of which is fifteen and three-quarter inches. The length of each single wire is 3,578 feet, six inches, and each cable is capable of carrying 14,600 tons. Each cable contains 5,226 parallel galvanized steel, oil-coated wires wrapped in a solid cylinder. The permanent weight suspended from the cables is 13,820 tons.

The width of the bridge is eighty-six feet and the length of the river span is 1,595 feet and six inches between the towers. In addition there are two land spans of nine hundred and thirty feet each. The length of the Brooklyn approach to the bridge is nine hundred and ninety-eight feet and of the Manhattan approach 1,562 feet and six inches, giving a total length of driveway, 6,016 feet. It cost the city \$7,185,165 for the land for the bridge and \$17,909,412.44 to build it, or a total of \$25,094,577.

The Williamsburgh Bridge was begun in 1896 and opened for traffic on December 19, 1903. It is constructed chiefly of steel and the length of its main span from center of one tower to the center of the other is 1,600 feet.

The entire bridge is 7,308 feet in length and its width is one hundred and eighteen feet. It is one hundred and thirty-five feet above mean high water for a channel width of four hundred feet. The height of the masonry piers above mean high water is twenty-three feet, and the height of the cables, which rest on



WILLIAMSBURGH BRIDGE





steel towers, is three hundred and thirty-three feet. There are two carriage-ways, each twenty feet wide. The bridge carries four trolley tracks, and two elevated railway tracks.

The weight of the steel in the cables and suspenders is 4,900 tons and there are 26,300 tons in other parts of the main bridge. In addition, 16,600 tons of steel are used in the approaches, in all about 47,800 tons. The diameter of the cables, measured outside the wires, is eighteen and five-eighths inches. Each cable contains 7,696 wires of about three-sixteenths inch in diameter. The length of each of the cable wires is 2,985 feet. The work consumed 80,000,000 feet of timber BM; the excavation was about 60,000 cubic yards; the concrete masonry about 60,000 cubic yards; the stone masonry about 130,000 cubic yards.

The land used for the bridge cost the city \$9,096,593, and the cost of construction was \$15,091,497, a total of \$24,188,090.

Thirty lives were lost in its construction.

Agitation for a bridge began in Williamsburgh back in 1883, before the old bridge was opened for traffic. In 1887 Thomas Farrell introduced a bill in the Assembly to promote the construction of a bridge or tunnel at about the site of the present bridge. Two years later Senator Patrick H. McCarren started a long battle in the Legislature at Albany for the bridge. McCarren worked as a cooper in old Williamsburgh when a boy and had a love for the place and its people throughout his long life. He found powerful ferry interests arrayed against him; he found that the old city of New York would not pay one cent of the cost. Even at two dollars for Brooklyn to one for New York the scheme was beaten.

Besides McCarren there was another element tugging for a bridge—the growing needs of the bulging, the teeming, the overflowing population of New York. The elevated roads had built up Harlem to the cost of the towns across the East River in Kings and Queens, but the road had reached a turn. Back in the early nineties Frederick Uhlmann was a foremost owner of Brooklyn elevated railroads. They had about reached their limit. Uhlmann saw that to go further they must be carried to Manhattan and tap its surplus millions, and he thought of a bridge. He wanted to carry the road across at the Grand Street Ferry and bring it back from a point near Gouverneur Slip to just south of the navy yard.

In Manhattan he meant to run across to West Street and thus form a belt line. In Brooklyn his road could connect with the elevated already built on Hudson Avenue and follow the Brooklyn Union through the entire length of Broadway and connect with the other roads spreading out over Long Island. This scheme was beaten in Albany in the session of 1891. Senator McCarren and Assemblyman Timothy D. (Dry Dollar) Sullivan obtained the enactment of the McCarren bill the next year, March 9, 1892, which incorporated the East River Bridge Company. It provided a Brooklyn elevated structure across Manhattan Island, but the project was strangled to death in the courts of 1894.

Williamsburgh, however, had been awakened. Before April ended in 1895 a bill drawn by Mayor Schieren of Brooklyn and introduced by Senator Owens of Williamsburgh was passed at Albany. Senator McCarren and Timothy D. Sullivan were strong supporters to the end. Governor Levi Parsons Morton signed it in May and it became a law. It empowered the Mayors of the two cities to name an East River Bridge Commission. Consolidation afterward stopped the work until the Finance Department of the Greater New York was able to determine that it was authorized to borrow the funds needed.

It was built twice as strong as the original bridge, and one-half wider. Steel towers of greater power were adopted in place of stone. Leffert L. Buck was



the engineer. Great as the difference is between the new and the old bridges, it was not more marked than the difference between the new and old cities they were built to serve. The first bridge stopped abruptly on either side of the river where the transit system began, and formed no part of either. The second and the subsequent bridges have been only highways in the united traction service of greater New York. The bridges and the tunnels made and cemented the vast area of the five boroughs into one community.

The Williamsburgh Bridge drove about 20,000 persons from their homes in congested areas on both sides of the East River. The ground was taken for approaches and plazas. Not only did the bridge displace those 20,000; it furnished the means for scattering thousands of others over a vast area, and giving them better homes and better living conditions.

Seth Low was Mayor of New York when the Williamsburgh Bridge was opened twenty-one years ago. He had been Mayor of Brooklyn forty-one years ago, when the first bridge was opened. As a resident of Brooklyn, born in Brooklyn, he had the welfare of Brooklyn nearest his heart, and in his address he expressed the hope that a wide and handsome entrance to the borough would be built from the end of the old bridge to the Borough Hall. He wanted to see the unsightly railroad yard displaced. In the interval Brooklyn, the city of 600,000 inhabitants, had become a borough with 1,200,000 souls.

Between the old Brooklyn Bridge and the Williamsburgh Bridge is the Manhattan Bridge. It is the largest suspension bridge in the world. It was begun before the Williamsburgh Bridge was completed—on October 1, 1901. The roadway was opened to the public December 31, 1909; the east footwalk July 18, 1910; the west May 11, 1911. Local surface-car traffic began September 4, 1912. Subway trains first used the bridge June 22, 1915.

The bridge is 6,855 feet long and the length of its central span 1,470 feet, while the side spans are seven hundred and twenty-five feet long. It is suspended at a height of one hundred and thirty-five feet above high water. The steel towers from which the cables are swung are three hundred and thirty-six feet high and they rest on masonry piers which extend ninety-two feet below and thirty-two feet above mean high water.

The largest steel plates in these towers are three hundred and sixty-two inches long, eighty-eight and one half inches wide, and two and one-half inches thick, weighing 16,460 tons.

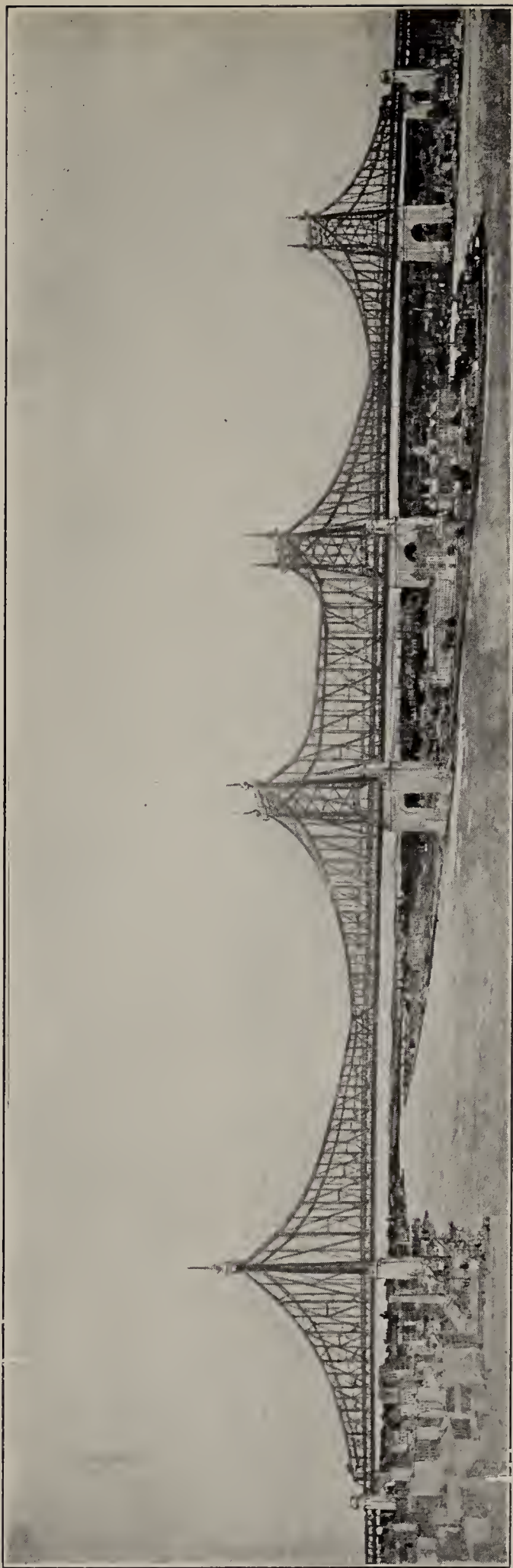
The four cables of the bridge contain 37,888 galvanized, steel wires. The diameter of each cable is twenty-one and one-quarter inches, and the length of each wire is 3,224 feet.

The cost of the land for this bridge was \$14,386,516.40, and the cost of construction was \$16,698,188.98, a total of \$31,084,705.38.

Two street-car tracks adjoin each promenade. Between the two sets of street-car tracks there is a roadway thirty-five and a half feet wide, with a capacity of four three-horse teams abreast. The four elevated railway tracks are carried on two separate decks under the street-car tracks. Recently the north track has been converted into an auto driveway. There is no structure of any sort above the promenades or driveway.

The bridge runs from a point in the Bowery, Manhattan, near Canal Street, to the intersection of Fulton Street and Flatbush Avenue, Brooklyn. There are viaduct approaches on each end.

The fourth East River bridge built by the city is of cantilever type. It is the Queensboro Bridge, which crosses Blackwell's Island, now known as



QUEENSBORO BRIDGE





Welfare Island, and joins the boroughs of Manhattan and Queens. It extends from Sixtieth Street, Manhattan, to Jane Street, Long Island City.

It crosses the East River at a point where it is divided into two navigable arms about 1,000 feet wide. From the east side of Second Avenue, Manhattan, to Jackson Avenue, Long Island City, including Queens Plaza, it is 8,601 feet long. From Second Avenue to Crescent Street, Long Island City, it is 7,449 feet long.

The length of the spans is as follows: Manhattan anchor span, four hundred and sixty-nine feet; West Channel span, 1,182 feet; Blackwell's Island span, six hundred and thirty feet; East Channel span, nine hundred and eighty-four feet; Queens anchor span, four hundred and fifty-nine feet.

The clear height of the bridge above mean high water is one hundred and thirty-five feet.

There is a roadway in the center thirty-six feet wide between the guard rails. It permits four three-horse teams to pass abreast. There are four trolley tracks, two on each side of the roadway and separated from it. On the upper deck are two elevated railroad tracks in the middle and two promenades each eleven feet wide. They are placed next the elevated railroad tracks to permit passengers to descend in case of accident. The six tracks across the bridge are intended to carry 150,000,000 passengers a year under ordinary traffic conditions. Elevators for teams and passengers connect the bridge with Welfare Island. The pier foundations rest on bedrock.

Henry A. La Chiotte, Engineer of the Department of Bridges, directed the engineering work. Henry H. Hombostel designed the architecture. The arrangement of the span and floor space was the work of a commission consisting of Civil Engineers W. H. Burr (Columbia University), P. C. Ricketts (Rensselaer Polytechnic) and H. W. Hodge, consulting engineer, all appointed by Mayor Low.

The Hell Gate Bridge is of a third type. It is of suspension type, but, instead of being suspended from cables, it hangs from an enormous arch of steel which spans the East River between great masonry piers. This bridge was begun in July, 1912, and finished in March, 1917. Its total length, with approaches, which include a viaduct on the Bronx side across the Sunken Meadows, is 18,000 feet. The length of its span is 1,017 feet, which is shorter than the main span of any of the City bridges. The land used in its construction cost \$3,000,000 and the cost of the bridge itself was \$12,000,000, a total of \$15,000,000.

**Joins Boston and Washington**—This bridge carries only steam railroad cars. Its width is ninety-three feet, and the height of its tower above mean high water is two hundred and forty feet. The Hell Gate Bridge joins the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad and the Pennsylvania Railroad, permitting through trains to be run from Boston to Washington. A track extends from the New York, New Haven and Hartford Railroad in the Bronx across a viaduct which leads to the bridge and thus trains are carried to Long Island, where they descend into the Pennsylvania tunnel, under the East River at Thirty-fourth Street and pass under the Borough of Manhattan, through the Pennsylvania Terminal Station and then under the Hudson River to New Jersey.

**Weight and Traffic**—The total weight of the Brooklyn Bridge is 13,800



tons. The Manhattan Bridge weighs 41,700 tons, the Williamsburgh Bridge, 31,200 tons; the Queensboro Bridge, 52,600 tons; the Hell Gate Arch, 26,000 tons.

The statistics of travel across the bridges are interesting. The latest figures available refer to a day of twenty-four hours in November, 1921, covering the traffic in both directions.

On that day, 9,639 cars carrying 200,216 passengers, crossed the Brooklyn Bridge. In addition, 8,529 vehicles, including automobiles carrying 13,444 passengers, passed over the bridge and 3,263 persons walked across the bridge. The total number of persons crossing the Brooklyn Bridge on that day was 216,923.

**Over the Manhattan Bridge**—The Manhattan Bridge carried 3,717 cars with 254,261 passengers on that same day, and 26,733 vehicles, including automobiles with 54,953 passengers, crossed the bridge and 1,340 persons walked across, making a total of 310,554 persons altogether.

The Williamsburgh Bridge carried 9,601 cars with 419,015 passengers. It accommodated 19,922 vehicles with 38,207 passengers and its pedestrian traffic included 1,375 persons, giving a total of 458,597 persons using the bridge on that November day.

The Queensboro Bridge carried 2,322 cars with 65,543 passengers and 20,829 vehicles with 41,249 passengers. It had 1,860 foot passengers and its total traffic was 108,652 persons.

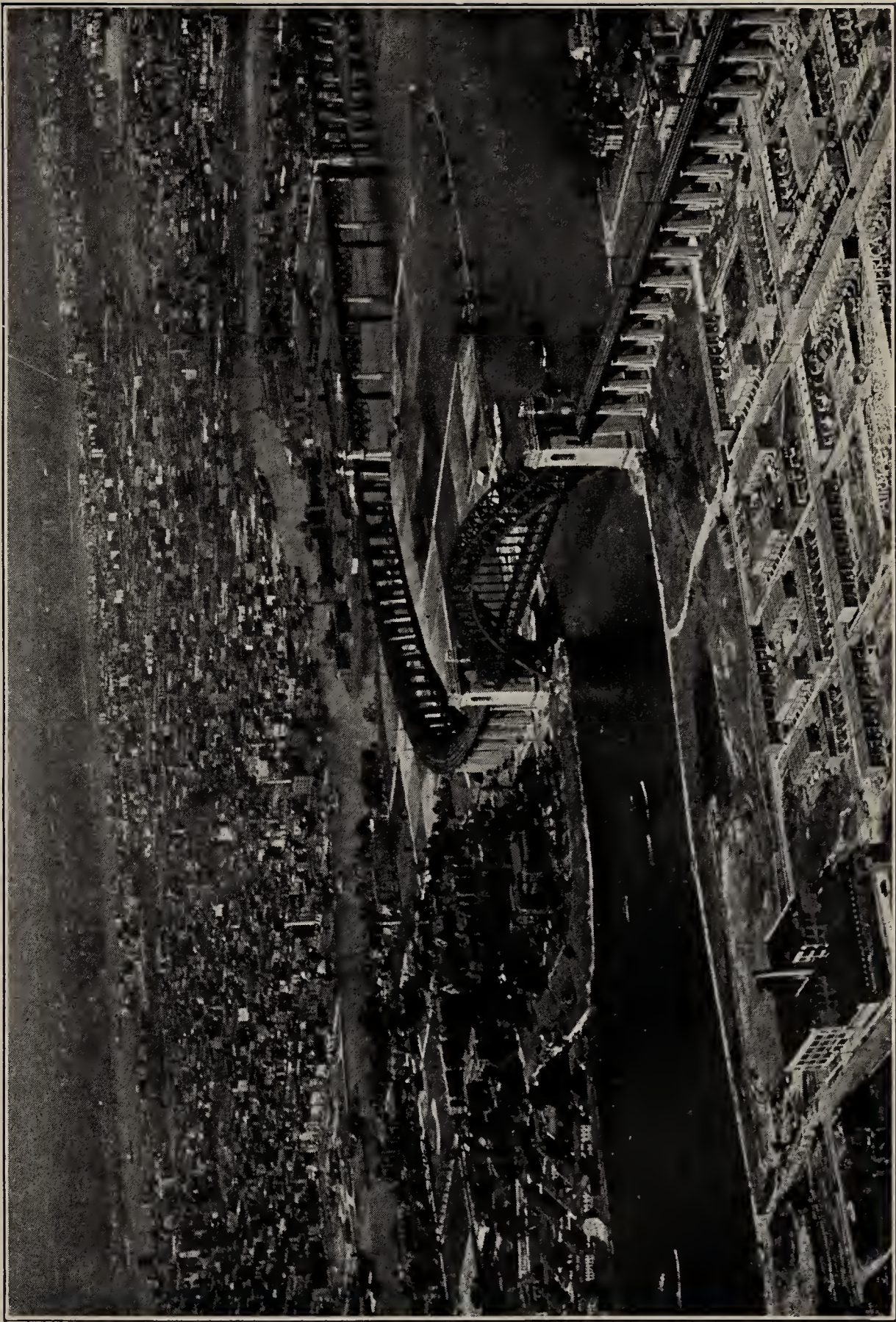
**City has Forty-four Bridges**—Of course, the City has many other bridges besides the huge structures over the East River, such as the bridges over the Harlem River, the bridges in Queens and Brooklyn. There are forty-four City bridges altogether. On the day when the count was made all these bridges carried 39,862 cars with 1,212,660 passengers, 228,778 vehicles with 443,007 passengers, 105,661 pedestrians, giving a total of 1,761,328 passengers that crossed the bridges.

Sunday, March 30, 1924, marked the fifteenth anniversary of the opening of the Queensboro Bridge from Fifty-ninth Street, Manhattan, across the East River to Long Island City. On March 30, 1909, the bridge was open for pedestrian and vehicular traffic, and on September 19 of that year operation of trolley cars began. Other important dates in the use of this bridge include July 18, 1911, bridge tolls abolished by Board of Aldermen; July 23, 1917, Second Avenue elevated trains operated across upper level.

An interesting comparison had been prepared by the Chamber of the horse-drawn and motor vehicle traffic. Figures received from the Department of Plant and Structures show that on October 29, 1913, twenty-eight per cent of the vehicles crossing this bridge were horse-drawn, while for December 13, 1923, they were only one and one-half per cent. For the same dates, the motor-driven vehicles were seventy-two per cent and ninety-eight and one-half per cent of the entire traffic.

The Queensboro Bridge was the first direct link joining Queens and Manhattan and eliminating the East River as a barrier to the spread of population and commerce eastward. Its influence was immediately felt, as many large industrial plants, formerly located in Manhattan, began to seek sites in Queens for the erection of new buildings. This influx of factories has grown year by year until the Long Island City section has become one of the greatest industrial centers in the United States.





HELL GATE BRIDGE OF PENNSYLVANIA AND NEW YORK, NEW HAVEN AND HARTFORD RAILROADS





The second link was the inauguration, on September 10, 1910, of Long Island electric train service from Penn Station. The third link was the opening of the Queensboro Subway from Forty-second Street, Manhattan, on June 22, 1915. The fourth link was the completion of the New York Connecting Railroad Bridge, in 1917. The fifth link was the extension of Second Avenue "L" train service across Queensboro Bridge, July 23, 1917. The sixth link was the operation of B. M. T. trains on August 1, 1920, to the Bridge Plaza Station.

In the fifteen years following the opening of this bridge, the assessed valuation of Queens Borough has increased from \$308,000,000 to \$1,000,000, and the population has grown from 284,000 to 736,000. During these fifteen years, plans have been filed for 130,000 new buildings in Queens, estimated to cost \$650,000,000.

Each year, a traffic count for a period of twenty-four hours, is made by the Department of Plant and Structures, and the results below show the remarkable increase both in the vehicular traffic and the number of persons who crossed the bridge daily during the past fifteen years:

Date	Vehicles	Persons
October 24, 1909.....	459	25,000
November 11, 1910.....	1,810	44,320
October 29, 1915.....	2,352	81,760
October 25, 1917.....	13,431	93,897
December 13, 1923.....	29,335	146,052

### Todd Shipyards

It is common knowledge that the Todd Shipyards Corporation, which has its largest yards in Brooklyn, has largely given to the United States those extensive facilities vital to the maintenance of a big mercantile fleet.

In the attainment of the distinction of being the leading ship repair organization in the country, if not in the world, it has won an international reputation for despatch and thoroughness in handling any class of repair job, big or little.

Its unsurpassed facilities, combined with an effective organization, result in the large steamship companies turning over to the Todd Yards their fleets of both passenger and freight steamships when repairs and overhauls are necessary.

With an area of more than thirty acres and a water-frontage, exclusive of pier lengths, of nearly a mile, the Robins Dry Dock and Repair Company, at Erie Basin, Brooklyn, is the largest ship repair plant in this hemisphere.

It has six piers so situated that all ships berthed at them can be served by traveling power equipment direct from all the shops, while electric and pneumatic power are brought to them at will. A complete industrial railroad system further binds the piers to the shops and other parts of the plant, assuring every possible economy of time and effort.

Space, equipment and facilities are such that 5,000 to 6,000 men can be effectively employed simultaneously without being delayed for material or room. Under this system the plant is able to take ships to full capacity of berthing and dockage room and prosecute immediate work on each individual vessel as soon as it enters.

The capacity and facilities of the yard can be best illustrated by the fact that they have at one time contained forty-four ships, the repairs to many of these



being extensive. The shops, equipments and power both in machinery and men were such that none of the fleet had to wait while work was being completed on the others. Each received its own ample supply of material and workers and was released for active service to the satisfaction of the owners.

There are six dry docks, of which two are graving docks and the others floating docks.

The two graving docks are the only docks of this kind owned by a private ship repair company in the harbor. They give the Robins plant advantage for many kinds of work.

These graving docks are side by side in a convenient part of the plant, and the water approach to them carries sufficient depth for almost any class of ship, the depth of the docks being No. 1, twenty-six feet and No. 2, thirty feet. Length and width are sufficient for the largest ships. They are served by two great centrifugal pumps, electrically driven, each of which is able to pump 30,000 gallons per minute.

Electric pumps also serve the floating docks, which are so situated as to make thorough ease of access to or from the harbor, and whose various capacities are sufficient for every need.

In addition to four air compressor stations, equipped with seven two stage one hundred pound pressure, 2,200 ft. compressors, each direct connected to 350 H. P. 6,600 volt synchronous motors, the yard possesses a power station furnishing electric current for lighting and power purposes to every vessel and shop in the plant.

The efficiency of the Tebo Yacht Basin Company at 23rd Street, Brooklyn, has been demonstrated on small as well as on large vessels. This yard, with an area of twenty-nine acres and equipped with two floating docks, five piers, with a total berthing space of 11,065 feet, dry docked last year 137 vessels.

Used originally as a storage yard for steam yachts and smaller craft, it has developed under its present management into a construction as well as a repair yard of no little importance to the borough in which it is located.

Its construction output during the war totalled nine mine sweepers. At the same time eight Shipping Board freighters were engined and made ready for sea at the fitting-out piers. Bulk oil carriers as well as fruit steamers have been and are being built and the yard has become, within three years, Brooklyn's leading private construction yard, giving employment to more than 1,000 men.

Yacht work calls for an extremely high standard of craftsmanship and to meet this demand the Tebo plant has an unusually skilled and experienced force. Yachts as well known as the "Corsair," "Norma," "Sultana," "Aphrodite," "United States," and "Intrepid," are regular visitors to this yard where many of them were fitted out for war duty as scout patrols.

As in all other plants of the Todd Shipyards Corporation, the Tebo yard is a self-contained unit for all classes of shipbuilding, ship repairing and engineering. Its shops are equipped with the most modern machinery for the expeditious handling of material, which makes the plant independent of outside assistance.

In 1917, the old Poillon yard (Clinton Dry Docks, Inc.) at Clinton Street, Brooklyn, was acquired. Its gates had been closed for sixteen years, the single pier was dilapidated, the buildings were beyond repair and there was barely sufficient water at high tide to float a small vessel.

Two piers, with a combined total length of 1,400 feet, were constructed, three big shops and a modern power house, furnishing adequate power for future as well as present needs, were erected and a depth of sixteen feet of water at low

tide provided by dredging. Fresh water mains were installed and the equipment of the plant completed by the construction of a new 8,800 ton floating dry dock.

The plant has proved a valuable addition to the resources of the Todd Shipyards Corporation and had the distinction of being the first to dry dock the S. S. "Eclipse," the first electrically-driven freighter.

The Todd Dry Dock & Construction Corporation of Tacoma, and the Todd Dry Docks at Harbor Island, Seattle, are likewise controlled by the Todd Shipyards Corporation.

While the United States was at war, the Todd Shipyards Corporation repair yards in New York Harbor handled many millions of tons of shipping.

The Robins Dry Dock and Repair Company in Erie Basin, Brooklyn, has made a record for ship conversion in 1913 when Mexican trouble led the War Department to turn over three large merchant ships for quick conversion into troop and animal transports. Though the work amounted almost to re-building, the three ships were completed in four days and nights—a speed so extraordinary that not only army but navy officials declared themselves astonished. It had not been believed till then that any plant in the United States possessed either the human organization or the equipment for such an achievement.

It was natural that in the emergency of 1917 the Robins plant should be a first resource for converting merchantmen into transports, and thus ninety per cent. of the very first convoy contained vessels that had been converted in Todd yards. More than a score of transports was commissioned from Robins. Records were made in repair jobs that both in magnitude and nature of injuries and in complexity presented problems such as never before had confronted shipyards.

The Tietjen and Lang Dry Dock Company in Hoboken, another Todd corporation, was identified with the conversion of the "Leviathan," the biggest ship in the world, as well as the George Washington and the President Lincoln, the Mount Vernon, the Hamburg and other German vessels impressing into the American merchant navy. Before this there had been the task of repairing the damage done by German crews. Every form of injury skilful engineers and machinists could devise, and every form of secret damage cunning could invent, confronted the American ship-experts. Much of the wrecking was vast, looking hopelessly like total destruction, yet the ships were not only repaired, but they showed greater efficiency than before.

The Tebo Yacht Basin Company, in Brooklyn, built nine mine-sweepers 188 feet long, 35.5 feet beam, 18 feet deep, provided with engines of 1,400 indicated horse-power. These same sweepers returned from the North Sea with an enviable record. They had served with the fleet under Admiral Strauss in the heroic task of clearing the North Sea of miles of floating mines. In addition eight 3,500-ton wooden hulls were engined and fitted out for the Emergency Fleet Corporation. Yachts by the score were made ready for service as scout patrols.

The Todd Dry Dock and Construction Corporation, Tacoma, Washington, contracted with the United States Shipping Board to build twenty-four steel steamships of 7,500 tons capacity, 396 feet long, 53 feet wide and 29 feet draft, (loaded). The first keel was laid in September, 1917. In one year the yards launched 67,500 tons of merchant shipping.

The White Fuel Engineering Corporation, in New York, was engaged almost exclusively on Government work during the war. One order from the United States Shipping Board was for one hundred and fifty-four oil burner sets.



Among other service, fourteen marine engines of 1,400 indicated horse power were built for the United States Navy, with others for the Shipping Board, the Canadian Government and private companies.

## CHAPTER V

### LONG ISLAND IN THE WAR OF 1812

LONG ISLAND was blockaded in the war of 1812. Outside of Kings County it suffered inconvenience rather than any real danger. The farmers expected raids by the enemy to destroy their crops or to plunder their homes, and these indeed occurred frequently; but business flourished. Sag Harbor was the town most exposed. A British fleet occupied Gardiner's Bay in 1813, and attacked American shipping at various points. Frigates cruised in the Sound, and now and then seized a trading vessel plying between the ports of the North Shore and New York. Often the prizes were released for a ransom. At other times they were burned.

The militia was called upon for three months of active service to defend Sag Harbor. An arsenal was built of brick on the site of a cemetery, and filled with munitions and stores of all kinds. When the British learned of this they sent an expedition ashore under Commodore Hardy to capture the post. They were quickly driven off by the Americans and the only damage they inflicted was to burn a small sloop. On the other hand they left behind many of their own arms and stores which went to strengthen the little arsenal.

The entire coast line of the United States was practically blockaded on March 20, 1813, with the exception of New Hampshire, Massachusetts and Rhode Island. A British cruiser with several privateers appeared in the Sound a month later and destroyed many coasting vessels. American war vessels were undergoing repairs in the Brooklyn Navy Yard; and the people raised the outcry that the repairs might have been completed and the vessels sent to sea within a week. Soon privateers were sent out to do what the government had neglected. In June the New York merchants sent the Governor, Tompkins, boldly through the Sound. Although pursued by the British ships, she made her way into the Atlantic and gave a good account of herself in preying on enemy commerce during the remainder of the war. She won her last engagement and sent her prize to New York in charge of Lieutenant Edward Dodd, who passed his later years at Babylon and died July 17, 1843. Although Dodd brought his prize to port, the Governor Tompkins disappeared, and is supposed to have foundered in a gale.

Commodore Lewis of Boston with thirty gunboats passed through the Sound in September, 1813, from Hell Gate to Cow's Neck in search of some of the enemy vessels that were playing mischief with American trade. A few shots were exchanged and the British grew more cautious. Admiral Warren declared a blockade of the Long Island coast and New York harbor on November 16. The British ships sent landing parties to obtain fresh supplies rather than to damage property; but the small coasting vessels suffered heavily. The Fair Trader of Babylon was taken near the New Inlet entrance to Great South Bay. She was sold in Nova Scotia with her rich cargo, and remained in service for many years. The Amazon, Captain Conklin of Huntington; the Sally, Captain Ackerly of Cow Harbor; and the Juno, Captain Jones of Brookhaven were captured also.

In 1814, the fleet in Gardiner's Bay sent out parties to destroy property in all directions. They burned a schooner beached at Rockaway. The British warships Pomona and Dispatch entered Setauket harbor and captured the Herald, the Hope, the Mercantile and the Two Friends. They burned the Oneida in Drowned Meadow (Port Jefferson Harbor). The inhabitants of Jamaica Bay erected a blockhouse but it proved of little avail in keeping the marauders out, and the enemy's small boats continued their waspish landings and confiscations to the end of the war.

James B. Cooper of Babylon, for years clerk of Suffolk County related the following incident:

In July, 1814, a whaleboat loaded with armed men in uniform entered Sumpawam's Creek and threw the village of Babylon and its vicinity into consternation. They proved to be Captain David Porter and ten of his sailors who had survived the loss of the Essex off Valparaiso weeks before, and had been at sea seventy-three days. On the morning of July 5, they fell in with H. M. S. Saturn, Captain Nash, who examined the papers of the Essex, Jr., treated Porter with great courtesy and furnished him the late newspapers and a basket of fruit besides offering their kindly services. The Boarding officer permitted the Essex, Jr., to proceed; but a few hours later the Essex, Jr., was again brought to and searched. Captain Porter regarded this as a violation of all honorable rules of warfare, and determined to escape. The next morning a boat was lowered from the Essex, Jr., and



Captain Porter with about ten men pulled off; but they were soon discovered and pursued by the *Saturn*, which was favored by a fresh breeze. Fortunately for the Americans a fog set in and they were concealed from view. Changing their course they were soon out of danger.

After rowing about sixty miles Captain Porter entered Fire Island Inlet with much difficulty. James Mountfort offered to pilot him up Sumpawam's Creek. When he stepped ashore Stephen B. Nichols told Porter he doubted his story, whereupon Porter replied: "Then my good friend, I surrender to you," at the same time handing over an iron cutlass. A large crowd gathered in the centre of the village. Nobody had heard of the battle of Valparaiso and few believed the extraordinary tale.

Rushmore, a store keeper, informed Captain Porter his neighbors still believed him a British officer in disguise. At this Porter drew out his commission, and all doubts were dispersed. The village outdid itself in hospitality. The horse and carriage were procured and the whaleboat was loaded on a wagon, and with the brave sailors at their seats, the party was conveyed to the Brooklyn Navy Yard. When Captain Nash found the Captain of the *Essex*, Jr., had escaped, he permitted that vessel to go her way in peace.

On one occasion on receiving a report that the British were landing in force on Lloyd's Neck, 200 militia men marched there from Huntington.

Daniel D. Tompkins was inaugurated as Governor of New York in 1807. He foresaw the war and put the military establishment on a sound footing. At the same time the Federal Government appeared strangely negligent of the defenses of New York, although the harbor could be seized without serious opposition to an enemy fleet. From 1808 to 1816, the State appropriated \$272,000 upon the harbor fortifications. Long Island, as in the Revolution, lay at the mercy of any hostile force. At the west end of Rockaway Beach a block house mounted a 24-pounder, intended to repel boats trying to land through the surf. At Fort Hamilton an earthwork had been thrown up after the war had begun and named Fort Lewis. Work on the present fort was begun only after the close of the war.

Sag Harbor was protected by Governor Tompkins as well as he was able. It was the military headquarters for Suffolk County, and the following order shows its importance:

"The superintendent of the Arsenal at Sag Harbor is authorized to deposit in the several exposed towns of Suffolk, not already supplied, upon the request of the inhabitants thereof, and upon taking a bond to the people of this State with good and sufficient surety for the safe return thereof, arms, ammunition, and military stores belonging to the State, provided General Rose (commanding in Suffolk County) shall deem and certify the same to be proper. In case of invasion or other emergency the exempts of Southampton and other towns may be supplied with arms and equipments from the arsenal but for all articles delivered under this order to companies of exempts the like security above mentioned must be taken."

The garrison of Sag Harbor was augmented materially on January 8, 1814, owing to the danger of invasion, and volunteers were called to organize another corps of artillery.

The Company of Exempts at Sag Harbor referred to was organized in 1812 to protect Sag Harbor against invasion. The officers were: Captain, John Germain; Lieutenants, Elisha Prior, Cornelius Sleight and Thomas Beebe.

Southold raised a company of Exempts to defend the county in November, 1812. Gilbert Horton was elected Captain; Jonathan Horton, Lieutenant; and Benjamin Hallock, Ensign. Other commands of the same character were raised in Suffolk and Queens without a doubt. The counties were assessed freely in all the military undertakings of the war, and responded to each call for troops with an alacrity which won the commendation of Governor Tompkins. They were strongest in the artillery, although they supplied their full quota to the infantry and provided several well-equipped troops of cavalry.

John S. Mount was Captain of an Artillery Company organized at Brookhaven in 1811, with Henry H. Howell and Samuel Davis as Lieutenants; and other towns did likewise. The artillery of the three Long Island counties was organized into the Second Battalion of the Thirtieth Regiment under Major Barbarin. The cavalry of Queens, Suffolk and Westchester were changed to Heavy Artillery on February 28, 1814, and became the Second Regiment, Lieutenant Colonel William Jones Commanding.

While Kings County had regarded the war as a mistake of politicians, the war spirit rose to a high pitch as soon as President Madison sent his war message to Congress on June 1, 1812. It spread over the entire population and united persons of every shade of opinion into one whole imbued with the spirit of 1776.

Military companies were organized and old ones were revived. The Fusileers, Captain John Herbert, paraded in green coats and leather caps; while the Katydids, Captain Burdett Stryker's Company of rifles, wore green coats trimmed with yellow. They were one of the most popular independent military organizations Brooklyn has possessed. Captain Barbarin's Artillery hit the ten-foot target twenty times at 450 yards while firing forty shots at practice in the Narrows. Captain John Wilson organized a troop of Horse Artillery. The county likewise contributed its quota to the militia of the State.

Governor Tompkins called out the militia of New York, Westchester, Kings and Richmond counties on June 27, 1812, and they were in active service to the end of the war.



Kings County furnished the 64th Regiment with Major, Francis Titus; Major, Albert C. Van Brunt; Adjutant, Daniel Barre; Quartermaster, Albert Van Brunt; Captains, William DeNyse (New Utrecht Company); Joseph Dean (Brooklyn Company); Francis Skillman (Wallabout Company); Van Cott (Bushwick Company); Peter Cowenhoven (Gowanus Company); Jeremiah Lott (Gravesend and Flatbush Company).

Early in the summer of 1814, word was received that a strong British fleet was gathering at Bermuda and Kings County was reminded of the Battle of Brooklyn, and saw something more than a probability that it might be repeated. Energetic measures of defense were instituted. De Witt Clinton was Mayor of New York, and he proceeded to strengthen the fortifications at the Battery, while he appointed a Committee of Defense. This committee recommended the removal of ships in the harbor; the enrollment of volunteers; a larger supply of arms and ammunition, and a larger number of militia on active duty. It asked the Federal authorities to finish the fortifications, and add new ones where needed; and to increase its forces about New York. The committee offered to construct at its own expense mainly with the aid of the militia and of volunteer labor a fortified camp in Brooklyn and another on Harlem Heights.

Offers of labor poured in upon the committee as a testimony to the people's will to do all they could in the bestowal of the time and money where they were unable to do actual fighting. They came from men of wealth and day laborers, from professional men, tradesmen and societies and they were in the form of a plea to be permitted to contribute their labor to the defense of the city.

The defenses were designed by General J. W. Swift, one of the foremost military engineers of the day, the man who in 1830 built the railway from New Orleans to Lake Pontchartrain. In 1839 he was chief engineer of the Harlem Railroad.

Swift reproduced the main line of defense of 1776. From Gowanus to the Wallabout along the hills which skirted little Brooklyn—now its heart—he ran a line of forts connected by bastions. A small fort was built on Mill Rock and a larger one on the high ground of the Island coast. Other forts were designed to form a complete chain of defense, but the line was not drawn out as long as in 1776, for it was felt that if a landing should be effected it should be met behind the forts rather than in the open field.

The work proceeded with alacrity but as a novelty and sport until news came that the British had burned the White House and Capitol in Washington and other public buildings, and had gone in force to Baltimore. The work on the defenses of Brooklyn was redoubled forthwith and the spirit of joviality gave way to stern determination. It continued at night. When the Federal Treasury was empty, and the Government could give no further aid, New York City came forward with a loan of \$1,000,000, although querulous citizens disputed the legal right of the municipality to engage in war.

A company of artillery and a force of volunteers crossed from New York on August 10, 1814, under a salute from six pounders and began work with pick and shovel on the site of old Fort Putnam, which thenceforth took the name of Fort Greene. Artillery companies, tanners, curriers and plumbers and several hundred military exempts took up the work the next day. The medical students, wire workers, foundry workers, members of the Hamilton Society and a number of artillerymen went to work on August 12, and on August 13, the cabinet makers had their turn. The 15th was Sunday, and was observed as a day of rest. On Monday Captain Laurence Brower's Brooklyn Company of Artillery attached to the 13th Regiment of Artillery crossed over from Castle Garden where it was stationed; and broke ground for a new stronghold on the site of the Old Cobble Hill Fort, called Fort Swift in honor of the designer of the defenses.

Brooklyn itself joined in the work on August 16th when the military companies of Captains Stryker, Cowenhoven and Herbert, the exempts of Bedford, of the Wallabout, and a fire company went at it. Bushwick began work on Fort Swift on August 17th, the Rev. John Basset, their venerable pastor opening with prayer, and reminding them of the defenses on the same spot he had assisted in building forty years before. Throughout the day he distributed refreshments and encouraged the workers.

Dr. Basset presided at the meeting later in the day when a volunteer fire company was formed of the citizens of Bushwick exempt from military duties to protect Nassau and Manhattan Islands. The committee consisted of Major Francis Titus, Dr. Cornelius Lowe, John Skillman, Sr., Alexander Whaley, Sr., Peter Wyckoff, William Conselyea, Sr., Peter Meserole, Gysberte Bogert, Abraham Meserole, John Van Alst and Tunis Wortman.

Flatbush sent the laborers on August 18th and Gravesend followed on August 20th. Seventy volunteers from Paterson, N. J., did their turn on Fort Greene the same day. They were led by Colonel Abraham Goodwin, a Revolutionary hero whose son was at the front. Other parties from the valley of the Hudson came down to help for the importance of stopping the enemy at the gates was understood by all and every day saw them arrive.

The first troops arrived on the 20th—several companies of up-state militia who went into camp at Fort Greene. They were met by 1,200 of the Patriotic Sons of Erin



who just had completed a day's work. They opened ranks and the Irishmen passed between, while two bands discoursed music.

The free colored people of Brooklyn and its vicinity worked on the defenses, and the town folk became more active than ever. The Committee of Defense called on the citizens to perform a second tour of duty on the line of forts, and the response was in keeping with the emergency. The 25th and 26th were called Brooklyn military days while Bushwick added its second tour on the 27th. Three military companies from upstate arrived the 29th—the Albany Riflemen, the Trojan Greens and Montgomery Rangers. They took up quarters at Fort Greene, where Flatbush was doing its second tour. Other workers came over from New York in streams for the progress of the war spurred them to every effort. It became a problem to provide food. Jamaica sent 120 loads of fascines led by the Rev. Dr. Jacob Schoonmaker as spokesman. A large number of women worked on the lines at the end of August; but the feature of the day was the arrival of the Tammany delegation with banners flying and bands playing, an act which was repeated several times while the emergency required help.

The Grand Lodge, F. & A. M., engaged in warlike enterprise in the character of Masons on September 1. De Witt Clinton was Mayor of New York and Grand Master; Cadwallader Colden, head of the militia was Grand Warden; Governor Tompkins was to succeed as Grand Master, and General Jacob Morton already had held that honor. The twenty-one lodges of New York assembled in regalia in the morning with flags and staves in front of City Hall to escort the officers of the Grand Lodge to Brooklyn. They were joined on this side of the East River by Fortitude Lodge, and Newtown Centre Lodge, the latter having dissolved in the Morgan persecution period. The coming of the fraternity aroused so much local pride and the work was done so well that a portion of old Fort Greene was renamed Fort Masonic. Its site is occupied today by the Harriet Judson Memorial Building of the Y. W. C. A., and a bronze tablet suitably inscribed holds alive the memory of Fort Masonic. The number of Masons who toiled is estimated at 500. The appreciation of the labor was so pleasing to the fraternity that they gave another day's labor to Fort Masonic, performed on September 19, pursuant to a vote of the Grand Lodge.

A line of wagons almost covering the causeway on the road reached Paulus Hook from Newark, and crossed the Ferry to New York, passed through the city, and arrived at the Brooklyn Ferry before one in the morning. They had several bands with a label on each hat "Don't give up the soil!" They proceeded to work on the fortifications with alacrity; and as they came from a neighboring state their effort was the more prized.

All the churches took leading parts in pushing the work. Pastors took part somewhere in the long line of trenches; somewhere every morning one or more of them offered prayer. They used the pick and shovel or trundled a wheelbarrow with the same zeal as the ordinary laborer. The Mulberry street Baptist church under the Rev. Archibald Maclay was among the most active helpers. In November the fortifications were turned over to the military authorities to be armed and prepared for war.

As each section was finished Governor Tompkins sent troops to occupy it, and before the end of September the number of soldiers present was fairly equal to what the long line of works required for adequate defense. The Long Island militia turned out in force under General Jeremiah Johnson of Brooklyn. When everything was ready to offer strong resistance to the enemy it became apparent that peace was in sight. It was brought about by the treaty of Ghent, signed on December 14, 1814, and ratified on February 18, 1815, while Andrew Jackson won the battle of New Orleans on January 8.

General Jeremiah Johnson was Brooklyn's hero of the war.

In the War of 1812 the Whale-Boat business along the Sound, so noteworthy in the Revolution, was resumed. The Corps of Sea Fencibles contained the following from Long Island, who enlisted between August 14, 1814, and January 1, 1815. Their respective ages at the time of enlistment are given in figures, the list being taken from "The Refugees of 1776 from Long Island to Connecticut," by Frederic Gregory Mather:

Akerly, Frederick, 19, Smithtown,  
Conklin, Jacob, 21, Moriches,  
Corbitt, Charles, 21, Long Island,  
Cotton, William N., 46, Long Island  
Cuffy, Amos, 19, Easthampton,  
Dow, Joseph, 49, Huntington,  
Duryee, George, 46, Long Island,  
Elded, Jacob, 47, Hempstead,  
Flinn, Edward, 35, Long Island,  
Foster, Nathan, 30, Southampton,  
Fowler, Adam, 21, Flushing,  
Fowler, James H., 22, Flushing,  
Fowler, Levi, 21, Flushing,  
Furman, Daniel, 23, Hempstead,

Goldsmith, Silas H., Long Island,  
Grennell, William, 22, Long Island,  
Hames, James, 21, Brookhaven,  
Hannas, Thomas, 21, Flushing,  
Hazard, Anthony, 26, Long Island,  
Howell, Henry, 21, Southampton,  
Howell, Israel, 19, Huntington,  
Hyde, Richard, 32, Long Island,  
James, John, 20, Smithtown,  
Jones, Charles, 23, Oyster Bay,  
Ketcham, Archibald, 22, Oyster Bay,  
Laurence, Benjamin, 48, Hempstead.  
Lewis, Jesse, 19, Long Island,  
Lewis, Jesse, 20, Queens County,



Mason, Jacob, 22, Hempstead,  
 Mayo, Nicholas, 40, Flushing,  
 Moore, Abraham, 17, Long Island,  
 Murry, John C., 22, Sag Harbor,  
 Onderdonk, Henry Liv., 18, Queens Co.  
 Remsen, Charles, 29, Long Island,  
 Richards, Lewis, 23, Hempstead,  
 Seymour, Stephen, 21, Long Island,  
 Smith, Charles, 22, Huntington,  
 Smith, Harry, 18, Brookhaven,  
 Smith, John, 19, Cow Harbor,  
 Smith, Martin, 24, Oyster Bay,  
 Southard, Cornelius, 21, Hempstead,

Stewart, James, 20, Hempstead,  
 Sutherland, Andrew, 19, Long Island,  
 Terry, Ambrose, 19, Sag Harbor,  
 Thornington, Samuel, 27, Brookhaven,  
 Townsend, Michael, 22, Long Island,  
 Treadwell, John, 37, Cow Neck,  
 Tredwell, Charles, 19, Jamaica,  
 Valentine, John, 27, Oyster Bay,  
 Waterbury, Selah, 21, Smithtown,  
 Wickes, William, 23, Huntington,  
 Williams, James, 22, Hempstead,  
 Williams, John, 18, Huntington.

## CHAPTER VI

### WORLD WAR APPENDA

#### Decorated With Medal of Honor

**W**ILLIAM BRADFORD TURNER, JR., First Lieutenant, 105th Infantry, residence at enlistment, 92 4th St., Garden City, L. I., decorated for conspicuous gallantry and intrepidity above and beyond the call of duty in action with the enemy near Ronssoy, France, September 27, 1918. He led a small group of men to the attack, under terrific artillery and machine gun fire, after they had become separated from the rest of the company in the darkness. Single-handed he rushed an enemy machine gun which had suddenly opened fire on his group and killed the crew with his pistol. He then pressed forward to another machine gun post twenty-five yards away and had killed one gunner himself by the time the remainder of his detachment arrived and put the gun out of action. With the utmost bravery he continued to lead the men over three lines of hostile trenches, cleaning up each one as they advanced, regardless of the fact that he had been wounded three times, and killed several of the enemy in hand-to-hand encounters. After his pistol ammunition was exhausted this gallant officer seized a rifle of a dead soldier, bayoneted several members of the machine gun crew, and shot the other. Upon reaching the fourth line trench, which was his objective, Lieutenant Turner, captured it with the nine men remaining in his group and resisted a hostile counter-attack until he was finally surrounded and killed.

Charles I. De Bevoise, Brigadier General, Infantry, 802 Carroll St., Brooklyn, decorated for exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services. He served with credit as Commander of trains and Military Police of the 27th Division. Later, in command of the 107th Infantry, he proved himself to be an energetic and resourceful leader during the operations against the Hindenburg Line and those on Le Selle River. After being promoted to Brigadier General he continued to render valuable services to the American Expeditionary Forces as Commander of the 53d Infantry Brigade.

William S. Hawkins, First Lieutenant, 107th Infantry, 16 North 14th St., Flushing, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near St. Souplet, France, October 17-18, 1918. Acting as Liaison Officer during the forcing of Le Selle River, Lieutenant Hawkins was severely wounded by an exploding shell. Undeterred by the weakened condition to which his wound reduced him, he bravely continued on, working untiringly under heavy shell and machine gun fire for two days until the advance of his battalion was checked.

Thomas Armstrong, Sergeant, Company H, 105th Infantry, 406 St. Marks Ave., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action east of Ronssoy, France, September 29, 1918. During the operations against the Hindenburg Line he alone attacked and drove back the enemy patrol. Later, when his captain was wounded, he remained with him and killed two Germans who attacked him.

Sergeant Carl Fenouillet, Company E, 107th Infantry, 1262 76th St., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near St. Souplet, France, October 18, 1918. Sergeant Fenouillet, then corporal, after his commanding officer and four sergeants had become casualties, took command of the company, rallied it by his personal heroism and exposure to fire and gallantly led it in the attack.

Sergeant Harry E. Lynk, Company G, 106th Infantry, 178 Taaffe Place, Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Ronssoy, France, September 29, 1918. While suffering from severe wounds he organized several small groups from other companies, consolidated them, and led them into effective combat, continuing with this splendid example of courage and fearlessness until wounded a second time.

Sergeant Herbert A. Walsh, Company H, 106th Infantry, 357 2d St., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Ronssoy, France, September 27-29,



1918. On September 27, Sergeant Walsh assumed command of his company after other officers and non-commissioned officers had been killed or wounded and led it forward through heavy fire to its objective. He then organized his position for defense. He later made a personal reconnaissance in advance of our lines, and returned with valuable information. The courageous conduct of this non-commissioned officer was an important factor in the success of the operations of the company.

Sergeant De Witt Williams, Company L, 107th Infantry, Brightwaters, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Ronssoy, France, September 29, 1918. Sergeant Williams, then corporal, displayed great courage and was an excellent example for the men whom he led in the attack on the Hindenburg Line. Although wounded in the right hip by a machine gun bullet, he remained in command of his unit and assisted in the organization of a position for defense. He did not submit to evacuation until the position was secure against counter-attack.

John P. Bingham, Corporal, Company D, 107th Infantry, Douglaston Park, Douglaston, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Ronssoy, France, September 29, 1918. During the operations against the Hindenburg Line Corporal Bingham left shelter and went forward crawling on his hands and knees under heavy machine gun fire to the aid of a wounded officer and a wounded soldier. With the assistance of another soldier he succeeded in dragging and carrying them back to the shelter of a trench.

Francis T. Copeland, mechanic, Company B, 107th Infantry, 28 South Bergen Place, Freeport, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Ronssoy, France, September 29, 1918. Mechanic Copeland, with a companion, left the protection of a trench, and in the face of heavy machine gun and grenade fire went in advance of our lines to rescue a wounded comrade. They were exposed to heavy fire from the time they left the trench. Mechanic Copeland's companion was killed as they were returning to the trench, but he struggled on and succeeded in dragging the wounded man to safety.

George H. Edwards, private, first-class, Battery C, 105th Field Artillery, 608 Bainbridge St., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Forges, France, September 26, 1918. In the face of heavy machine gun fire, at great personal risk, he crawled out from a position of safety and rescued a wounded soldier who was lying exposed to enemy fire. He was later killed in the advance while charging a machine gun.

Walter Klinge, private, first-class, Company M, 105th Infantry, 885 Woodward Ave., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near St. Souplet, France, October 17, 1918. When sent out as a scout with a small patrol consisting of an officer and two men, Private Klinge, courageously went ahead alone, killed two enemy scouts whom he encountered and drove the gunners away from two machine guns. When the patrol came up the capture of the guns was completed with their assistance.

John R. McGlue, private, first-class, Company B, 107th Infantry, 2619 Bedford Ave., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Ronssoy, France, September 29, 1918. Private McGlue, with Mechanic Copeland, left the protection of a trench and, in the face of heavy machine gun and grenade fire, went in advance of our lines to rescue a wounded comrade. They were exposed to heavy fire from the time they left the trench. Private McGlue was killed as he and his companion were returning to the trench with the succored wounded comrade.

Epifanio Affatato, private, Company C, 107th Infantry, 46 Franklin Ave., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Ronssoy, France, September 29, 1918. After being severely wounded by flying shrapnel, Private Affatato took shelter in a shell hole somewhat in advance of his company, from which he had become separated in the fog and smoke. He saved the lives of four of his wounded comrades who were occupying the shell hole, by throwing live grenades, which had been tossed into the shell hole by members of his own company in the rear, into the enemy's lines.

James Bougie, private, Sanitary Detachment, 106th Infantry, 371 Bridge St., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action near Ronssoy, France, September 29, 1918. During operations against the Hindenburg Line he went forward under a heavy shell and machine gun fire and brought in wounded comrades, continuing his work even after he himself had been wounded.

Eugene C. Reynolds, private, Company K, 106th Infantry, 248 Grand Ave., Brooklyn, decorated for extraordinary heroism in action at Quennemont Farm near Ronssoy, France, September 28, 1918. After assisting in repulsing a strong enemy counter-attack, Private Reynolds, with two other soldiers, became separated from his company, due to the heavy fog. Seeing a superior force of the enemy in a trench, they unhesitatingly attacked, and after killing and wounding several of the enemy, they captured numerous prisoners and brought them back to our lines.



**CITATIONS OF MEN WHO SERVED IN THE 27TH DIVISION.  
RESIDENTS OF KINGS, QUEENS, NASSAU  
AND SUFFOLK COUNTIES**

Brigadier General George Albert Wingate, 61 Jefferson Ave., Brooklyn, connected with the 52d Field Artillery Brigade, was cited for exceptionally efficient and meritorious service as Commanding Officer 105th Field Artillery, during its training at Camp Wadsworth and later as Commanding General, 52d Field Artillery Brigade, during all its operations abroad. General Wingate brought to the performance of his duties exceptional qualities of leadership, great energy and industry and a thorough knowledge of the Field Artillery arm. The battle efficiency of his brigade in support of the 33d and 79th Division during the Meuse-Argonne Offensive was officially commended by both Division Commanders. General Wingate was also cited for great gallantry and determination in riding forward over a shell-swept road under direct enemy observation for the purpose of supervising the forward batteries of his brigade. This was near Ger-court, France, on October 5, 1918, while in support of the 53d Division.

Colonel Frank H. Norton, 262 Decatur Ave., Brooklyn, commanding 106th Infantry, was cited for meritorious service, zeal and devotion to duty in the initial period of organization and training of his regiment at Camp Wadsworth, S. C., during the winter of 1917-1918.

Colonel William A. Taylor, 135 Fenimore St., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for courage in action and devotion to duty while in command of his regiment at Vierstraat Ridge, Belgium, August 31 to September 2, 1918, and for courage under fire at The Knoll, Guillemont Farm, Quennemont Farm, September 27, 1918. It was the 106th Infantry under command of this officer which attacked and shattered the outer defenses of the Hindenburg system, east of Ronssoy, France.

Lieutenant-Colonel Charles W. Berry, 572 47th St., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for courage, determination and energy exhibited while in command of the 105th Infantry during operations in the Scherpenberg—Dickebush Lake sector, near Mt. Kemmel and Ypres, Belgium.

Lieutenant-Colonel Edward McLeer, Jr., 542 Putnam Ave., Brooklyn, Division Machine Gun Officer, was cited for skilled leadership and great personal courage in the battle of the Hindenburg Line while serving as Divisional Machine Gun Officer, September 25-30, 1918.

Major Niles F. Larsen, 681 Vanderbilt Ave., Brooklyn, M. C., 106th Infantry, was cited for exceptional courage and efficiency as Regimental Surgeon during the battle of the Le Selle River and subsequent engagements October 17 to 20, 1918. This officer although exposed to severe machine gun and shell fire, directed the establishment of aid stations, the evacuation of wounded and the maintenance of excellent liaison.

Major James T. Pilcher, 121 Gates Ave., Brooklyn, 108th Field Hospital Company, was cited for distinguished service in France. While chief of operating unit, Major Pilcher formulated an antiseptic solution known as "Quino-Formol," which was extensively used in the surgical service with excellent results.

Captain William E. Blaisdell, 1807 Ave. K, Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for highly developed sense of responsibility, determination, and thoroughness of supervision in battle. This officer commanded with skill a battalion of his regiment in the attack on The Knoll, France, September 27, 1918, and was later, on September 28, 1918, killed during a battle of the Hindenburg, France.

Captain Waldemar Busing, 197 Prospect Place, Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for highly developed sense of responsibility and determination in battle. This officer, though suffering from illness on September 27, 1918, remained on duty with his regiment and performed excellent service as Battalion Intelligence Officer during the preliminary attack on the Hindenburg Line, France.

Captain John D. Butt, 1317 Decatur St., Brooklyn, 105th Field Artillery, was cited for conspicuous devotion to duty during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Bois de Ville, Marre, Champneuville and Brabant-sur-Meuse, France, in supervising and co-ordinating administrative efforts at Regimental Headquarters and maintaining accurate casualty records through the exercise of unusual initiative tireless energy and great resourcefulness.

Captain William J. Coogan, 605 Putnam Ave., Brooklyn, M. C., 107th Infantry, was cited for exceptional courage and devotion to duty in maintaining a first aid station at the extreme front under very heavy fire for more than twenty hours, caring for and supervising the evacuation of wounded. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 29, 1918.

Captain James P. Cooke, 351 E. 16th St., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for meritorious service and devotion to duty during the entire service of his regiment in France and Belgium. While Personnel Adjutant at the Hindenburg Line, September 24, 1918, this officer volunteered as one of a party to reconnoiter the regimental posi-



tion east of Ronssoy, France, which duty was performed under heavy shell fire and with commendable courage and thoroughness. As Regimental Adjutant his untiring zeal was of such a character as to merit promotion, which was recommended but not received owing to the Armistice on November 11, 1918.

Captain Frederick De Figanieri, 28 Rutland Road, Brooklyn, 105th Field Artillery, was cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operation of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Consenvoye, France on October 15, 1918. This officer displayed great initiative, resourcefulness, untiring energy and an unusual capacity in establishing the regimental P. C. and communications thereto within 1,500 yards of the enemy positions under heavy artillery fire.

Captain Walter P. Fox, 349 7th St., Brooklyn, 105th Field Artillery, was cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Gercourt, France, October 3, 1918. This officer conducted his battery under heavy enemy shell fire and gas concentrations to positions on the Cote de Lemont and displayed exceptional military attainments in maintaining his position until relieved.

Captain John W. Frost, 109 Clark St., Brooklyn, 105th Infantry was cited for exceptional energy and zeal in the performance of his duties during active operations and for courage in battle. Although suffering from gas poisoning, this officer remained on duty with his command throughout the battle of the Le Selle River, France, and the engagements subsequent thereto, October 17 to 20, 1918.

Captain Francis P. Gallagher, 169 Waverly Ave., Brooklyn, 104th Field Artillery, was cited for conspicuous gallantry in action in the vicinity of Drillancourt, France, October, 1918, when under heavy enemy shell fire and direct observation he repaired and placed in action against the enemy a captured German battery of 77 mm. guns and fired them effectively against enemy positions.

Captain William J. Grange, 462 Chauncey St., Brooklyn, Divisional Personnel Adjutant, was cited for exceptionally meritorious service and untiring devotion to duty throughout the entire period of operations of the division in Belgium and France, during the occupation of a British defensive sector in the Ypres salient and in the Ypres-Lys and Somme Offensive. To the zeal and energy of this officer is due much of the credit for the accurate statistical records of the division.

Captain Walter H. Hereth, Woodhaven, 105th Field Artillery, was cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Gercourt, France, on October 15, 1918, in bringing his battery into position under severe enemy shell fire and displaying unusual bravery, which at all times was a splendid example to the men of his command.

Captain Rutherford Ireland, 556 Hancock St., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for extraordinary heroism in action in continuing to lead his battalion in attack, although suffering extreme pain from a wound received two days previous. After receiving first aid and without waiting to have the shrapnel removed from his body, he returned to his battalion, where he remained in action for two days. This was during the battle of Le Selle River and near St. Souplet, France, October 18-20, 1918.

Captain Jerome F. Langer, 1131 President St., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for gallantry and determination exhibited under heavy enemy fire in the vicinity of Scherpenberg, Belgium, July 17, 1918. This officer although himself badly wounded, aided in the evacuation of one of his men who was wounded.

Captain Claude G. Leland, Bayside, Company I, 107th Infantry, received citation for conspicuous gallantry in action while a First Lieutenant in Company I, 107th Infantry, in successfully leading his platoon against the enemy machine guns, capturing them and continuing forward in the battle of the Hindenburg Line near Vendhuile, France, September 29, 1918.

Captain Arthur V. McDermott, 850 St. Marks Ave., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and exceptional qualities of leadership in battle. This officer while acting as Operations Officer, volunteered to command a company of provisional battalion of his regiment at the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 29, 1918, although for three days preceding he had rendered continuous duty in connection with the previous operations of the command. While leading this company he was severely wounded.

Captain Joseph A. S. Mundy, 4902 11th Ave., Brooklyn, Headquarters 27th Division, cited for exceptional energy and zeal in the performance of his duties as Regimental Adjutant, 106th Infantry, particularly during active operations of his regiment in the Dickebusch-Scherpenberg sector and the advance of Vierstraat Ridge, and later for meritorious service, untiring devotion to duty and efficiency as Assistant Division Adjutant.

Captain Frank C. Vincent, Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, received citation for courage, determination and energy frequently displayed while a First Lieutenant commanding Company F of his regiment, in the battle of Le Selle River, France, and in the engagements subsequent thereto, until wounded in action, October 19, 1918.

Captain Matthew A. Wilson, 36 Bay 35th St., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for exceptionally meritorious service while in command of Company D, 106th Infantry, during the period July 26 to August 6, 1918, in the Scherpenberg-Dickebusch Lake sector, near Mt. Kemmel, Belgium.



Chaplain Frank L. Hanscom, 574 Madison St., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, cited for devotion to duty and personal courage in caring for the wounded and dead of his regiment in all the battles and engagements in which it participated in Belgium and France. This officer performed his duties with commendable zeal and efficiency during the attack on the Hindenburg Line September 27-30, 1918, and for many days following until the arduous task of identifying and burying the dead of the division was completed.

Chaplain Emile S. Harper, 792 Carroll St., Brooklyn, 105th Field Artillery, received citation for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Cote de Lemont, France, in voluntarily accompanying a battalion assigned to occupy an exposed direct fire position in support of the attack on Brioules, France, and by his exceptional bravery and soldierly demeanor under heavy enemy shell fire and gas concentrations setting an example to the men of the battalion, which has a most inspiring effect upon their morale.

First Lieutenant Robert Bennett, 476 2nd St., Brooklyn, Salvage Company No. 16, was cited for exceptionally meritorious services, energy, efficiency and devotion to duty as Commanding Officer of the Salvage Company. This office exhibited exceptional courage under fire in the performance of his duties in forward areas.

First Lieutenant Edward L. Brennan, 516 Nostrand Ave., Brooklyn, 105th Field Artillery, received citation for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Brabant-sur-Meuse, France, November 10, 1918. This officer, at great personal risk conducted ammunition parties and throughout the night under heavy enemy shell fire displayed great initiative and energy in bringing forward adequate supplies of ammunition to battery positions.

First Lieutenant John Jerome Callahan, 485 6th St., Brooklyn, 105th Infantry, was cited for courage and qualities of leadership while in command of his company, in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 25-30, 1918.

First Lieutenant Arthur G. Cooke, 897 Jefferson Ave., Brooklyn, M. C., Field Hospital Company No. 105, was cited for meritorious service in operating day and night under shell fire at Main Dressing Station at Villers Faucon, France, during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 29-30, and at Premont, France, on October 11 and 12, 1918, during engagement subsequent to the battle of Le Selle River, under similar conditions.

First Lieutenant William S. Court, 355 Chauncey St., Brooklyn, 105th Field Artillery, cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Bois des Forges, France, in making personal reconnaissance for forward positions under heavy enemy shell fire, during which he was severely wounded.

First Lieutenant Charles H. Floyd, Garden City, Adjutant Third Battalion, 107th Infantry, was cited for untiring efforts and conspicuous gallantry in action, in advancing with his battalion in spite of a severe wound, on the morning of September 29, 1918, in the attack on the Hindenburg Line near Vendhuile, France.

First Lieutenant Sherman A. Geer, Brooklyn, 102nd Field Signal Battalion, was cited for exceptionally meritorious service as Lines Officer Signal Corps, 27th Division, reconnoitering the forward areas and supervising various observation groups, serving in the front line of the sector held by the XIXth British Corps, Ypres salient, particularly on July 22, 1918.

First Lieutenant Earl D. Grimm, Belle Harbor, 54th Infantry Brigade Headquarters, cited for exceptional courage and determination in making personal reconnaissance under heavy shell and machine gun fire in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 29, 1918.

First Lieutenant Edwin L. Holloway, 417 Stratford Road, Brooklyn, received citation for good judgment and skill in obtaining and forwarding valuable information to Regimental Headquarters while on duty as Liaison Office with the 108th Infantry during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 28-29, 1918.

First Lieutenant Alfred J. Hook, 1467 East 10th St., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for gallantry and determination in taking the start line of his battalion under heavy enemy fire during the morning of September 27, 1918, in preparation for the attack on The Knoll—Guillemont Farm—Quennemont Farm, France. This officer was killed later the same morning.

First Lieutenant Franklin J. Jackson, 505 Clinton Ave., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for courage, skill and determination repeatedly exhibited in battle while commanding a Stokes mortar platoon of his regiment and for making personal reconnaissance to the extreme front during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 29, 1918. This officer was killed while completing the reconnaissance mentioned.

First Lieutenant Richard H. McIntyre, Brooklyn, Headquarters Company 107th Infantry, was cited for fearlessness and devotion to duty in advancing his Stokes mortars with the assaulting waves of the regiment in the attack on the Hindenburg Line, near Vendhuile, France, September 29, 1918.

First Lieutenant Arthur J. McKenna, Garden City, Company H, 107th Infantry, during the operations before the Hindenburg Line, east of Ronsoy, September 28, 1918, this officer with utter disregard for personal safety, led his company with con-



spicuous bravery and coolness until so severely wounded that he was unable to proceed, and repeatedly refusing first aid he continued to direct his men forward, and thus proved an inspiration to his command.

First Lieutenant Raymond A. McLeer, 527 Madison St., Brooklyn, 105th Machine Gun Battalion, was cited for exceptionally meritorious service and untiring devotion to duty as Supply Officer during the entire period of operations of the 27th Division in Belgium and France.

First Lieutenant James F. McSweeney, 381 Herkimer St., Brooklyn, 105th Field Artillery, was cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Brabant-sur-Meuse and Reville, France, from October 28 to November 11, 1918. This officer, under heavy enemy shell fire and gas concentration, without regard to personal risk, established a gas alarm system for the regiment and by reason of his foresight, initiative and excellent judgment, reduced the number of gas casualties to the minimum, although severely gassed himself.

First Lieutenant George A. Mullarky, 40 7th Avenue, Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for energy and determination in transporting hot foods to troops in the front line over roads subjected to heavy machine gun and shell fire and gas bombardment. This was during the battles of Le Selle River and Jonc de Mer Ridge, France, October 17-19, 1918.

First Lieutenant John Orgill, Brooklyn, Headquarters Company, 105th Field Artillery, was cited for exceptional courage and gallantry in leading his battalion signal detail under heavy shell fire through gassed area to establish communication with the advanced positions and in continuing the work, although wounded, until it was successfully completed.

First Lieutenant Charles G. Ostberg, 602 Prospect Ave., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for gallantry and determination during attack on outer defenses of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918, when after being mortally wounded, he refused to be evacuated and continued to direct his men until he lost consciousness.

First Lieutenant Emil M. Podeyn, Brooklyn, 105th Field Artillery, was cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Cote de l'Oie, France, October 3, 1918, in making reconnaissance of position to be occupied by his battalion and directing the distribution of ammunition under severe gas and shell fire.

First Lieutenant Frank H. Richardson, 86 So. Oxford St., Brooklyn, M. C., 106th Infantry, received citation for fearlessness and unremitting attention to the wounded of his regiment during the battle of Le Selle River, France, October 17-20, 1918.

First Lieutenant Gilbert Rudkin, 1018 Park Place, Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, was cited for gallantry and determination during attack on the outer defenses of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918, and particularly during a charge he led upon an enemy machine gun nest, during the progress of which he was killed.

First Lieutenant Charles F. Scudder, Northport, M. C., Field Hospital Company No. 106, was cited for meritorious service in operating at the Main Dressing Station at Busigny, France, under enemy shell fire, during the battle of Le Selle River, France, October 17, 1918.

First Lieutenant Ernest R. Ulrich, Ozone Park, 105th Field Artillery, cited for exceptional devotion to duty during the operation of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Brabant-sur-Meuse, France, from October 28 to November 11, 1918. This officer displayed marked ability as artillery Liaison Officer with the 152d Infantry Brigade, and by his intelligent co-operation with the Infantry Brigade Commander and prompt transmission of information to his regimental commander rendered services of conspicuous worth.

First Lieutenant Thomas A. Ward, Astoria, 106th Infantry, was cited for gallantry and aggressive determination repeatedly exhibited during the service of his regiment in Belgium and France, and for coolness and inspiring example to his men. This officer was seriously wounded while leading his company during the attack on the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918, and remained in a shell hole 48 hours to care for a fellow officer more severely wounded than himself until both were removed by advancing troops.

First Lieutenant Frederick A. Willis, Flushing, Battery A, 104th Field Artillery, cited for exceptional courage and devotion to duty in voluntarily carrying a message to the forward lines through heavy shell and machine gun fire and in evacuating a wounded soldier of his regiment during the operations of his regiment near Etraye, France, November 11, 1918.

Second Lieutenant George Archer, Jr., 144 Lefferts Place, Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, cited for inspiring example and marked qualities of leadership during the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, Belgium, August 31-September 2, 1918.

Second Lieutenant Edward J. Bonney, 1126 50th St., Brooklyn, Company M, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and qualities of leadership repeatedly demonstrated during the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, August 31-September 2, 1918.

Second Lieutenant Harold C. De Loiselle, 2105 Foster Ave., Brooklyn, 106th



Infantry, cited for gallantry and exceptionally meritorious service. This officer while acting as Battalion Intelligence Officer, in the preliminary attack on the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918, volunteered on two occasions to make, and did make, personal reconnaissances under heavy fire of the terrain between Guillemont Farm and Duncan Post. On September 29, 1918, he volunteered to take part in the battle with a provisional battalion of his regiment and was wounded.

Second Lieutenant Ralph Regan Finney, 408 77th St., Brooklyn, 104th Field Artillery, cited for extraordinary heroism in action in the vicinity of La Claire Farm, France, October 8, 1918, when two cases of hand grenades dropped from a runaway limber and exploded, causing about twelve casualties, he, disregarding the bursting grenades, rushed to the aid of the wounded directing and helping their removal from danger and rendering first aid at great personal risk.

Second Lieutenant Frank H. Grace, 1222 8th Ave., Brooklyn, 106th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for coolness and courage and qualities of leadership demonstrated under fire when casualties were being inflicted. This was in the battle of Le Selle River, France, October 17, 1918.

Second Lieutenant Claude G. Leland, Bayside, 107th Infantry, cited for exceptional courage and qualities of leadership in battle near Vendhuile, France, September 29, 1918, in promptly reorganizing his battalion with great initiative and firmness when his battalion commander was wounded and his own Captain and First Lieutenant killed.

Second Lieutenant John McAnerny, Garden City, 107th Infantry cited for conspicuous gallantry in action in the fight for the Hindenburg Line near Vendhuile, France, on September 29, 1918. He successfully led his platoon against enemy machine guns until he was severely wounded.

Second Lieutenant James L. Maloy, Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and exceptional qualities of leadership on continuing in command of his platoon after being wounded. After reaching his objective it was found that this officer had been wounded five times. These wounds caused his death. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918.

Second Lieutenant Horace B. Scanlan, Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, cited for exceptional gallantry and inspiring example in the organization of the most advanced units of his company and the shattering of an enemy counter attack under heavy machine gun fire in the battle of the Knoll—Guillemont Farm—Quennemont Farm, September 27, 1918. After being mortally wounded this officer exhorted his men by saying: "Go on fighting, never mind what happens to me."

Second Lieutenant Hugh De Y. Stillman, 55 Hanson Place, Brooklyn, 105th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for aggressive courage and determination frequently demonstrated under heavy enemy shell fire and gas concentrations during the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, Belgium, August 31-September 2, 1918.

Second Lieutenant Clement V. Tillion, 474 Jefferson Ave., Brooklyn, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and determination under heavy enemy fire in the vicinity of Scherpenberg, Belgium, July 17, 1918. This officer although himself wounded, aided in the evacuation of one of the men of his detachment who was wounded.

Second Lieutenant James A. Walsh, 620 61st St., Brooklyn, Headquarters 27th Division, cited for exceptionally meritorious services, untiring devotion to his duty and efficiency while an army field clerk and Chief Clerk of the division during its service in the United States and Belgium and later as Second Lieutenant, Assistant Division Adjutant during the service of the division in France.

Army Field Clerk Marvin S. Finney, Brooklyn, Headquarters 27th Division, was cited for exceptionally meritorious service, zeal and untiring devotion to duty as a non-commissioned officer and later as Army Field Clerk, in the Division Adjutants Section during the entire operations of the division in Belgium and France.

Battalion Sergeant Major John J. Lyons, 485 Clinton St., Brooklyn, Headquarters, 27th Division, cited for exceptionally meritorious service and devotion to duty, while a non-commissioned officer on duty in the office of the Assistant Chief of Staff (G-3) during the entire period of divisional operations in Belgium and France.

First Sergeant Conefrey, 184 Skillman St., Brooklyn, Company H, 106th Infantry, this soldier, on September 2, 1918, the third day of the engagement at Vierstraat Ridge, Belgium, conducted a reconnaissance of the enemy positions in advance of his company line and by his gallantry and skill secured valuable information.

Regimental Sergeant Major John P. Driscoll, 52d Field Artillery Brigade, Headquarters Company, cited for devotion to duty during the operations of the 52d Field Artillery Brigade in the Meuse-Argonne offensive, in the vicinity of Verdun, France, from September 9 to November 11, 1918, in his unflagging industry, exceptional zeal and unusual ability and helpfulness, which were a large factor in the success of such operations. Brooklyn.

Regimental Sergeant Major Edward J. Roessler, 106th Infantry, cited for efficiency and courage while in charge of battle stores at forward ration dumps, and particularly at Busigny, France, October, 1918. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Frederick Adler, Company A, 105th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for



leadership, zeal and courage while acting as Platoon Sergeant in the Dickebush Sector in Belgium, August 1918, and during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September, 1918. 309 Jefferson Ave., Brooklyn.

Sergeant Theobald D. Avenius, Company B, 105th Infantry, cited for extraordinary bravery in action when he took command of his company after all the officers had been incapacitated and led the company successfully for the three succeeding days. This soldier's exceptional coolness under heavy fire and his devotion to duty set a fine example to the entire company. This was during the battle of Le Selle River, October 17, 1918 and subsequent engagements. 774 Linden St., Brooklyn.

Sergeant William G. Barr, Company C, 105th Infantry, cited for gallantry and qualities of leadership demonstrated while commanding a platoon of his company in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918, in which he was wounded three times. 93 Concord St., Brooklyn.

Sergeant Randolph M. Bigelow, Headquarters Company, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and devotion to duty in evacuation of wounded during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 27-30, 1918. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Clarence E. Blakeloe, Company F, 106th Infantry, cited for exceptional courage, determination and qualities of leadership displayed both in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918, and in the battle of Le Selle River, October 17, 1918, continuing in the latter engagement after being gassed. Howard Beach.

Sergeant Thomas J. Boardman, Battery A, 105th Field Artillery, cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Cote de l'Oie, France, in making reconnaissances and maintaining communications with the elements of the battery under heavy shell fire. 272 Wyckoff St., Brooklyn.

Sergeant Frank H. Bolzner, Headquarters Company, 105th Field Artillery, cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Cote de Lemont, France, in carrying important messages back and forth to forward battery positions under heavy enemy shell fire and at great personal risk, requiring thirty-six hours of interrupted effort. This was on October 3, 1918. Norris Park.

Sergeant Charles A. Brown, Company A, 107th Infantry, cited for gallantry and exceptional fearlessness in volunteering and crossing an open field through enemy fire in daylight, during which he was severely wounded and forced to crawl in order to direct the advance of the platoon from the support to the front line over open country. This was in the Dickebush Sector, near Mt. Kemmel, Belgium, August 4, 1918. 873 E. 22nd St., Brooklyn.

Sergeant Ralph Brown, Sanitary Detachment, 106th Infantry, cited for extraordinary heroism in action during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 27, 1918. This soldier accompanied his battalion to action and efficiently and courageously rendered first aid to the wounded until severely wounded and ordered to the rear. 215 Atlantic Ave., Brooklyn.

Sergeant George R. Bryan, Company D, 105th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for carrying important messages under heavy fire. This was on October 17, 1918, during the battle of Le Selle River, France. 121 Cambridge Place, Brooklyn.

Sergeant George E. Buschman, Headquarters Company, 105th Field Artillery, cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Cote de Lemont, France, in carrying important messages back and forth to forward battery positions under heavy enemy shell fire and at great personal risk, requiring thirty-six hours of interrupted effort. This was on October 3, 1918. 35 Cooper Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Harry Butt, Company F, 108th Infantry, cited for courage and determination in continuing in the attack of his company after being gassed. This was in the battle of Le Selle River, October 18, 1918. 158 Fourth Avenue, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Joseph P. Cantwell, Supply Company, 107th Infantry, cited for courage and fearlessness in leading a ration party into front line trenches under heavy machine gun and shell fire on the night of September 28 and 29, 1918, and distributing rations in preparations for the attack on the enemy positions in the Hindenburg Line, near Vendhuile, France. 559 16th Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Lyman Ceely, Company L, 106th Infantry, after all officers of his company had become casualties, this non-commissioned officer reorganized the company and effectively shattered an enemy counter-attack. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918. 167 Baltic Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Frederick Cherry, Company G, 107th Infantry, cited for conspicuous bravery and exceptional qualities of leadership in assuming command of his platoon after the platoon commander had been severely wounded and continuing on in the attack until he himself was severely wounded, which resulted in the loss of his arm. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, near Romssoy, France, September 29, 1918. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Frank A. Conaty, Company C, 106th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for coolness



and inspiring example in looking after the wounded under heavy enemy fire. This was near Bethune Farm in the vicinity of Mt. Kemmel, Belgium, on July 31, 1918. 185 Sixth Avenue, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Joseph A. Cook, Company F, 106th Infantry, cited for exceptional courage and qualities of leadership displayed in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918. On two occasions when his company was stopped by hostile machine gun fire he went forward and bombed the enemy machine gun nests, enabling his company to resume its advance. 1520 Bedford Avenue, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Dudley D. Conroy, Company F, 106th Infantry, cited for great gallantry and skilled leadership during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918. His company having been stopped by machine gun fire in their immediate front, this Sergeant crawled forward and, reaching the flank of the machine gun nest, attacked and killed the two enemy soldiers who were operating the machine gun, making it possible for his company to again advance. Richmond Hill, L. I.

Sergeant John A. Coyle, Company C, 102d Engineers, cited for extraordinary courage and determination in carrying forward under heavy artillery and machine gun fire, for more than one thousand yards, previously prepared foot bridges to be erected across Le Selle River at St. Souplet, France, October 17, 1918. These bridges went forward with the first skirmish line of our attacking infantry and required the display of unusual physical strength and endurance under exceptionally dangerous conditions. 144 Cornelia Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Walter H. Crager, Company G, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and initiative in successfully leading a combat patrol in the destruction of an enemy machine gun nest. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 29, 1918. 726 President Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Francis J. Farrelly, Company D, 106th Infantry, cited for great gallantry and determination in advancing under heavy fire to secure a Lewis gun and continuing to advance with it against an enemy trench, which he took and held. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, near Bony, France, September 27, 1918. 313 DeGraw Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Charles Feldman, Company C, 102d Engineers, cited for extraordinary courage and determination in carrying forward under heavy artillery and machine gun fire, for more than one thousand yards, previously prepared foot bridges to be erected across Le Selle River at St. Souplet, France, October 17, 1918. These bridges went forward with the first skirmish line of our attacking infantry and required the display of unusual physical strength and endurance under exceptionally dangerous conditions. 724 Franklin Avenue, Brooklyn.

Sergeant James J. Finn, Company H, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and determination in leading his platoon in the attack, finally gaining and holding with nine men an advanced position and, after five of these men had been killed or wounded, continued to hold such position under heavy fire until he himself was wounded a second time. 339 Herkimer Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Jacob J. Fowley, Machine Gun Company, 107th Infantry, cited for exceptional zeal and devotion to duty repeatedly demonstrated during active service of his regiment in Belgium and in France. Lynbrook, L. I.

Sergeant Harry E. Freshler, Headquarters Company, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and devotion to duty in evacuation of wounded during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 27-30, 1918. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Frederick L. Georgens, Jr., Headquarters Company, 106th Infantry, cited for exceptional gallantry and devotion to duty while acting as orderly to his Regimental Commander during operations in Belgium on August 30, 1918, in leaving his bomb-proof dugout and exposing himself to heavy bombing to assure himself of the safety of his commanding officer and to report for any duty which might be assigned to him. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Milner Jarvis, Company K, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and determination in making a personal reconnaissance and securing important information, under heavy machine gun fire. This was near Arbe Guernon, France, October 19, 1918. Jamaica South, L. I.

Battalion Sergeant Major John W. Boyd, Headquarters, 27th Division, as Chief Clerk Administrative (G-1) Section, General Staff, he performed arduous duties frequently under unfavorable conditions, with zeal, energy, application and judgment, rendering highly important service with intelligence, accuracy and efficiency during operations of the 27th Division in the Ypres-Lys offensive, Belgium, and Somme offensive in France. 90 State Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Walter Graham, Company A, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and determination in evacuation of a wounded officer during the battle of St. Maurice Rive, October 19, 1918. 2015 52d Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Charles L. Johnston, Headquarters Horse Battalion, 102d Ammunition Train, cited for exceptionally meritorious service during operations in the vicinity of Verdun, France, during the Meuse-Argonne Offensive, September 6 to November 11, 1918. By his untiring attention to duty, courage and coolness, he set a splendid example to the men of his command. 328 Argyle Road, Brooklyn.



Sergeant John T. Jones, Company G, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and determination in continuing in command of his platoon after being wounded and furnishing inspiring example to those about him, until he had to be evacuated. This was in the battle of Le Selle River, east of St. Souplet, France, October 17, 1918. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Carl J. Juchartz, Company C, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and qualities of leadership displayed while commanding a platoon in the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, Belgium, August 31, 1918, in which battle he was wounded. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Thomas K. Larkin, 102d Trench Mortar Battery, cited for exceptional devotion to duty during operations in the vicinity of Cumieres Hill, France, September 24 and 25, 1918, in hauling guns into firing positions with motor trucks and supplying ammunition to battery positions under hazardous conditions. Jamaica.

Sergeant Arthur E. Lawson, Company C, 107th Infantry, cited for qualities of leadership and courage during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 29, 1918, when he led his platoon to the attack in the face of heavy fire until killed. Glen Cove.

Sergeant Harry E. Lynk, Company G, 106th Infantry, cited for conspicuous courage and determination and qualities of leadership in continuing to command his platoon after he had been wounded and until wounded a second time, thereby furnishing inspiring example to those about him. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, Guillemont Farm, France, September 27, 1918. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Lefferts L. Mabie, Sanitary Detachment, 106th Infantry, cited for conspicuous devotion to duty and courage in caring for and evacuating wounded during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 29, 1918. 618 St. Marks Place, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Thomas Maloney, Company G, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and qualities of leadership in assuming command of his company and leading it forward after all officers were killed or wounded and until he himself was seriously wounded. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918. 198 10th Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant John G. Manson, Company M, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and determination in carrying an important artillery message to the rear and returning under heavy fire. This was in the Dickebusch Lake Sector, Belgium, August 27, 1918. 315 Eastern Parkway, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Richard S. Martin, Machine Gun Company, 107th Infantry, cited for exceptional courage, devotion to duty and qualities of leadership displayed while a Section Sergeant of his company and throughout his entire service with his company until sent to the last Officers' Training Camp from which he graduated. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Harry J. Mebus, Battery C, 105th Field Artillery, cited for exceptional devotion to duty during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in maintaining the ammunition supply at the gun positions at all times with unusual ability, from September 9 to November 11, 1918. Brooklyn.

Sergeant Charles V. Monohan, Company K, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and qualities of leadership displayed before and after being wounded in the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, August 31, 1918. 182 Bayard Street, Brooklyn.

Sergeant Elmer Murray, Company B, 108th Infantry, cited for courage and determination in evacuating gassed men under heavy enemy fire near St. Souplet, France, October 14, 1918. Ozone Park.

Sergeant Howard Murphy, Company H, 106th Infantry, this soldier on September 2, 1918, the third day of the engagement at Vierstraat Ridge, Belgium, succeeded to command of Company H, 106th Infantry, after the company had reached its first objective. He displayed gallantry and marked qualities of leadership while in command of his company and in the organization of the position taken. Richmond Hill.

Sergeant Alfred J. Muttell, Company A, 106th Infantry, cited for exceptional bravery and leadership in leading a platoon to its objective after all officers and senior non-commissioned officers had been killed or wounded. 180 Union St., Brooklyn.

Sergeant G. A. Pearson, Company K, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and determination while patrolling the advance of his company under heavy enemy fire and later in remaining with his company throughout the attack after being wounded. This was in the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, Belgium, August 31, 1918. Residence at enlistment, 226 High St., Brooklyn.

Sergeant George Petersen, 820 40th Street, Brooklyn, cited for commanding a platoon of his company with courage and determination during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 27, 1918.

Sergeant Dietrich G. Reimers, Brooklyn, Battery C, 105th Field Artillery, cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Brabant-sur-Meuse, France, in supplying ammunition to the guns of his battery under heavy enemy gas concentrations and heavy enemy shell fire that was causing explosions of the artillery ammunition dumps and by his exceptional bravery and soldierly conduct, maintaining a high degree of morale in the detail. This was on November 1 to 8, 1918.

Sergeant J. Burton Scanlon, Brooklyn, Company M, 106th Infantry, while acting as sergeant in charge of Railroad Detachment displayed notable qualities of leadership and by his efficiency and untiring devotion to duty aided materially in the prompt and adequate



movement of essential supplies to the division throughout the entire period of active service in Belgium and France.

Sergeant Matthew J. Shevlin, Long Island City, Company A, 105th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for leadership, courage and determination while acting as section sergeant during all operations in which the battalion was engaged in Belgium and France.

Sergeant Raymond S. Summers, Brooklyn, Company D, 102d Ammunition train, cited for gallantry in action in the vicinity of Gercourt, France, October 18, 1918, in delivering ammunition to battery positions under heavy enemy shell fire.

Sergeant Warren Singer, Brooklyn, Company G, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and skill in making a reconnaissance in advance of his company under heavy machine gun fire during the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, Belgium, August 31, 1918.

Sergeant Charles Taylor, 458 1st Street, Brooklyn, Headquarters Company, 105th Field Artillery, cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Brabant-sur-Meuse, France, November 3, 1918, in voluntarily carrying important messages between regimental headquarters and advanced infantry positions under heavy enemy shell fire.

Sergeant Joseph H. Van Ingen, 92 16th Street, Brooklyn, Company K, 106th Infantry, for gallantry and qualities of leadership displayed in continuing in action with his company after being wounded. This was in the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, August 31, 1918.

Sergeant Howard Ames Von Dohlen, Ozone Park, L. I., Company B, 105th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for exceptional courage and leadership frequently displayed both in France and Belgium. In action near Mt. Kemmel, Belgium, in August and September, 1918, this soldier displayed fearlessness and resourcefulness. In the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, he personally rescued numbers of wounded men in the face of heavy shell and machine gun fire.

Sergeant Harry H. Ward, 746 Sterling Place, Brooklyn, Battery C, 105th Field Artillery, cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Haraumont, France, November 8, 1918, in making a hazardous reconnaissance of battery positions under heavy enemy shell fire.

Sergeant Frederick H. Werlemann, Brooklyn, Company C, 105th Machine Gun Company, cited for courage, coolness and determination in holding his command against a determined enemy counter-attack in the vicinity of the Knoll during the battle of the Hindenburg Line on September 27, 1918, and assisting in shattering the attack.

Supply Sergeant Edward J. Reilly, Brooklyn, Company D, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and determination in bringing ration limbers up to his company under heavy fire. This was near The Scherpenberg, Belgium, August 25, 1918.

Mess Sergeant Frank A. Grace, 299 Garfield St., Brooklyn, Headquarters Detachment, 106th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for gallantry and determination while acting as Chief Agent and Signaller for the battalion in repeatedly carrying important messages under heavy enemy fire, during the operations against the Hindenburg line, France, September 29-October 1, 1918.

Corporal Samuel S. Ackerly, 647 Monroe St., Brooklyn, Headquarters Company, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry in action and determination during the attack of September 27, 1918, on the outworks of the Hindenburg Line, east of Ronssoy, France. This soldier went gallantly forward into the enemy works with others of his command and when they were heavily counter-attacked held his ground and continued to fight until he fell badly wounded.

Corporal Harold F. Aitken, Brooklyn, Headquarters Company, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and devotion to duty frequently demonstrated in maintaining communication during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 27-30, 1918.

Corporal Meyer M. Berger, 1207 40th St., Brooklyn, Company A, 106th Infantry, cited for exceptional bravery under heavy fire at Mt. Kemmel, Belgium, July 30, 1918, in making four successful trips to rescue men lying in the field seriously wounded.

Corporal Frank S. Burkner, 350 7th St., Brooklyn, Company D, 106th Infantry, cited for gallantry and inspiring example during the attack of his company on the Hindenburg Line, France, September 27, 1918, during which he was wounded.

Corporal John Cahill, Brooklyn, Battery F, 105th Field Artillery, cited for conspicuous gallantry in action during the operations of the 105th Field Artillery in the vicinity of Cote de l'Oie, France, on October 2 and 3 in carrying ammunition by hand a distance of 1200 meters from the ammunition dump to the battery position under heavy enemy shell fire throughout the night and the following afternoon in order to enable the battery to fire an offensive barrage in support of the infantry advance.

Corporal Frank L. Casacelli, 42 Powers Street, Brooklyn, Company C, 107th Infantry, cited for courage and determination in evacuating wounded from the front line under enemy observation and shell fire in the Dickebusch Lake Sector, Belgium, August 21, 1918.

Corporal James Cassidy, 637 59th St., Brooklyn, Company A, 106th Infantry, cited for courage and devotion to duty repeatedly shown in battles and engagements of his regiment in Belgium and in France.

Corporal William Cleator, Flushing, L. I., Company I, 107th Infantry, cited for courage



and skill in making personal reconnaissance of the enemy position in front of his company. This was on the night of October 11, 1918, near Vaux Andigny, France.

Corporal Le Roy F. Clune, Far Rockaway, L. I., Battery B, 105th Field Artillery, cited for great courage and determination in saving the life of a wounded comrade during heavy gas concentration by the enemy. This was near Chattancourt, France, September 27, 1918.

Corporal Leonard S. Colyer, 290 Clinton Street, Brooklyn, Headquarters Company, 104th Field Artillery, cited for gallantry in action in the vicinity of Bois de Forges, France, September 28, 1918, in laying telephone lines between battery and Regimental Headquarters and infantry positions under heavy enemy shell fire.

Corporal Thomas H. Corwne, 359 1st Street, Brooklyn, Company C, 105th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for exceptional courage and determination and qualities of leadership in successfully directing the fire of his machine gun under heavy enemy shell fire. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 27-29, 1918.

Corporal Browning D. Day, 2810 Clarendon Road, Brooklyn, Company G, 107th Infantry, cited for extraordinary gallantry and determination and inspiring example in reconnoitering the enemy's line alone on the night of October 11, 1918, near the village of Vaux Andigny, France, and obtaining very valuable information regarding the location of the enemy troops in the battle of Le Selle River, October 17, 1918.

Corporal William E. Dunn, Brooklyn, Company C, 106th Infantry, cited for exceptional personal courage while Acting Sergeant Major during the attack on the Hindenburg Line, September 27, 1918. His devotion to duty in endeavoring to secure information for the Battalion Commander was conspicuous.

Corporal Frank Edwards, Maspeth, L. I., Company G, 105th Infantry, cited for great bravery in covering the retirement of the 3d Battalion, 105th Infantry, by staying at the machine gun post until battalion established itself in a stronger position. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, France, September 29, 1918. This soldier was wounded later, but refused to go to the rear until company was relieved.

Corporal Frank Ellis, 382 Greene Ave., Brooklyn, Company B, 105th Machine Gun Battalion, cited for courage and skill in guiding a carrying party near Dickebusch Lake, Belgium, to the gun positions of his company over an area swept by shell and machine gun fire. This was during the battle of Vierstraat Ridge, August 30 to September 2, 1918.

Corporal Armando Elroy, Coney Island, Company H, 108th Infantry, cited for courage and devotion to duty in carrying message under heavy shell and machine gun fire. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, east of Ronsoy, France, September 29, 1918.

Corporal Norbert I. Filan, Flushing, L. I., Company I, 107th Infantry, cited for great courage and determination in action. This soldier in the face of terrific enemy machine gun fire, which inflicted heavy casualties in his company, pushed forward with great resolution through the enemy wire in front of Willow Trench and into the enemy trench. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, near Bony, France, September 29, 1918.

Corporal John F. Galvin, 151 India Street, Brooklyn, Headquarters Company, 106th Infantry, cited for zeal and devotion to duty during all battles and engagements in which his regiment participated in Belgium and in France.

Corporal John J. Gast, Brooklyn, Company F, 105th Infantry, cited for courage and efficiency displayed in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 29, 1918. Expecting a counter-attack, this non-commissioned officer salvaged and placed in action against the enemy a German machine gun. This was during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 29, 1918.

Corporal Charles P. Gould, Freeport, L. I., Company I, 107th Infantry, cited for great courage and determination in action. This soldier in the face of terrific enemy machine gun fire, which inflicted heavy casualties on his company, pushed forward with great resolution through the enemy wire in front of Willow Trench and into the enemy trench. This was in the battle of the Hindenburg Line, near Bony, France, September 29, 1918.

Corporal John McClave Granger, Great Neck, L. I., Company M, 107th Infantry, cited for courage and determination exhibited near Bony, France, during the battle of the Hindenburg Line, September 29, 1918. This corporal while in the act of delivering an important message to his commanding officer had his left leg blown off at the knee by a high explosive shell. He refused assistance from his comrades and directed them to continue their assault, shouting words of encouragement to them even while being carried from the field.



## Among those who represented Shelter Island in the war were:

- Baldwin, John, Lieutenant Commander, U. S. N., 1917.
- Bohlke, John Louis, Sergeant in Medical Corps, enlisted November 22, 1917; discharged May 14, 1919.
- Cartwright, George P., carpenter, army spruce division, enlisted June 15, 1918; discharged February 8, 1919. Sent to Oregon.
- Case, Henry, Army private, Independent Motor Truck Co. 484, enlisted May 28, 1918; discharged July 8, 1919. Served at Camps Upton, Johnson, Merritt. Sent overseas in September, 1918.
- Casey, Albert, enlisted in Navy in July, 1917; served through the war at Columbia University, as lecturer on Liberty engines.
- Clark, Franklin, private, 77th Division. Drafted December 5, 1917; went overseas in March and was in the Argonne drive and the Vesle front. Discharged May 9.
- Clark, Rudolphus Philip, first lieutenant, 13th Company, 6th Battery Field Artillery, enlisted May 15, 1917, attended the officers' school at Plattsburg. There he won the shooting record with a score of 133 in field maneuvers. He served with the American Ambulances abroad as a volunteer before the country entered the war. He was commissioned in November, went overseas and was wounded in action.
- Dawson, Harry, Infantry private in Co. M, 53rd Regiment, 16th Division; enlisted July 23, 1917, and served at Fort Slocum, Fort Oglethorpe, Camp Wadsworth, Camp Dix. He became a sergeant in a platoon of sharp shooters at Camp Wadsworth.
- Dawson, Walter, corporal of Military Police. Served at Camp Upton, Camp Dix and Allston Armory near Boston. He enlisted April 1, 1918 and was discharged December 16.
- Dennis, Alfred, served as a musician in the Marine Band, playing the cornet. He enlisted in New York and toured the cities of the East.
- Dickerson, Henry, was a coxswain aboard the Teneadores when torpedoed, and served in European waters. He was discharged August 12, 1919.
- Edwards, Elmer, Jr., a wagoner, enlisted April 14, 1917, and served with the 9th Division at Camp Wilson, with the 47th Infantry at Syracuse and the 10th Infantry Machine Gun Corps at Camp Green. He went overseas with the 4th Division Headquarters in April 1918. He was wounded in France and discharged August 11, 1919.
- Franklin, Walter, enlisted in the service and served one and one-half years overseas. He was assigned to the Hospital Service as Medical Student and was raised to Sergeant. He was discharged April, 1920, at Camp Upton.
- Fuller, Henry, was a private in Aviation. He enlisted March 9, 1918, and was discharged in November, 1918.
- Hansen, Henry, enlisted in the Marines and served overseas. He fought in a number of battles and was wounded twice.
- Havens, Geo. R., Jr., enlisted July 10, 1918, and trained at Plattsburgh and Camp Zachary Taylor. He belonged to F. A. C. O. T. S. Unit at Camp Zachary Taylor and went overseas until August, 1919. His rank was Second Lieutenant.
- Hudson, Randolph, entered New York Navigation School in April, 1918, and in June, 1918, he went overseas in the Y. M. C. A. service with the French Army and remained in Merchant Marines as 3rd officer on U. S. S. George Eaton and his ship was torpedoed in mid-ocean. He also served on other ships.
- Jennings, Henry, entered the service April 27, 1918, as a private in the Army Medical Corps and was trained at Camp Upton, Camp Sevier and Camp Greenleaf. He went overseas on August 29, 1918, and fought in the Meuse-Argonne offensive. He arrived home in June, 1919, and was discharged July 1, 1919, at Evacuation Hospital No. 2.
- Kelly, Joseph, entered the service October 11, 1917, and trained at Camp Upton. He served overseas with the 306th Field Artillery, 77th Division, from April 24, 1918, to April 29, 1919, as a mechanic.
- Ketcham, William, enlisted in the navy May 23, 1917, and served as machinist on the U. S. S. Utah, in European waters. He was discharged August 29, 1919.
- King, Eugene, entered the army May 29, 1918, as a private and trained at Camp Upton. He went overseas and was wounded in action. He was discharged July 25, 1919.
- King, Walter, enlisted May 28, 1918, and trained in the N. Y. University Training Camp and Camp Mills. He served overseas as Corporal and was discharged June 17, 1919.
- Laspia, James, entered the service in 1917 and served with the Medical Corps in France and was gassed. He was discharged July 17, 1919.
- Maurey, Joseph, entered the army on August 30, 1918, and trained at Camp Upton. He served overseas as motor mechanic on Motor Transport and was discharged August 1, 1919.
- McManus, Thomas Edgar, enlisted in the army and trained at Camp Upton. He served overseas with the 82nd Division and returned home in March, 1919.
- Mitchell, Martin H., Jr., enlisted in the marines May 28, 1917, and died at Baltimore from influenza on October 21, 1918.
- Nostrand, Elbert A., enlisted May 12, 1917, and trained at Plattsburgh, Camp Green and Camp Mills. He went overseas in May, 1918, with the 39th and was transferred August 1, 1918, to the 369th Infantry. He fought in the Marne offensive, Chateau-Thierry, Champagne Defensive Sector, Meuse-Argonne offensive and Alsace defensive. He was decorated with the Croix de Guerre with palm for service in the Meuse-Argonne Offensive.
- Parrish, Clarence, enlisted in the army in May, 1918, and trained at Camp Upton and Camp Joseph Johnson. He went overseas July, 1918, with Remount Squadron as a Corporal and was discharged July 4, 1919.
- Parish, Russell, enlisted June 5, 1917, and trained at American University Camp and Fort Ethan Allen. He went overseas with Company F, 6th Regiment of Engineers on December 20, 1917, and fought in nine bat-

- bles. He was discharged August 29, 1919.
- Payne, Edward, enlisted in the 306th Field Artillery, 77th Division on September 28, 1917 and trained at Camp Upton. He went overseas April 24, 1918, and served in the Baccarat Sector, Oise-Aisne Offensive, Vesle Sector, Meuse-Argonne. He returned home April 29, 1919, and was discharged May 10, 1919.
- Payne, Kenneth H., enlisted in Mine Division in May, 1917, as ensign and served on the U. S. S. *Ozama*. At the time of his discharge, April, 1919, he ranked as Senior Lieutenant.
- Poor, Charles Lane, Jr., entered the Navy as ensign on April 10, 1917, and was promoted Lieutenant September 15, 1918. He commanded the U. S. S. *Uncas* from April 1 to July 4, 1917; U. S. S. "*S. C. 120*," from September 15, 1917, to March 31, 1918; U. S. S. *America*, from July 9, 1918 to March 9, 1919, as Communication Officer and Assistant Navigator on transport service between New York and Brest. He resigned from the service June 10, 1919.
- Smith, Rev. Father Isadore, Chaplain of the 5th Division Army of Occupation, enlisted August 24, 1918, and was discharged August 8, 1919.
- Sturges, Perry Mackay, enlisted in the Navy, May, 1917. He served at the Navy Academy, U. S. S. *South Carolina* and the *Emeline*, and at Brest on the U. S. S. *C. No. 91*. He did overseas duty from October 27, 1919, to May 23, 1919. He was discharged on June 18, 1919.
- Wilcox, Clarence, enlisted June 5, 1917, as a private in the Aviation Squadron, No. 470 Aero. He trained at Fort Slocum and went overseas in March, 1918. He left for home November 29, 1919, and was discharged December 22, 1919.
- Worthington, John, enlisted April 6, 1918, as a private in 1st Casual Company. He trained at Camp Dix and was transferred to Company B, 328th Tank Corps. He left for overseas August 30, 1918, and served in three advance sectors with French and American troops. He sailed for home February 27, 1919, and was discharged at Camp Meade April 12, 1919.
- Mark Wells Jennings, enlisted in Volunteer Students Army Training Corps October 14, 1918, and died of pneumonia October 21, 1918, at the age of 20 years. He said, "Mother, there is no reason why I should not go. I would hate to go through life apologizing for not having entered."
- Pasquale Santacroce, entered the service December 5, 1917, and was sent to Camp Upton and assigned to Company H, 305th Infantry. He sailed for overseas April 15, 1918. On June 14, he went into the trenches at Alsace Lorraine and held the front for 30 days. He fought in four battles, Lorraine, Vesle River, Aisne and Meuse-Argonne. He was wounded in the battle of Meuse-Argonne on October 14, 1918. On February 7, 1919, he arrived home and was sent to a hospital at Lakewood where he remained four weeks and then was sent to Camp Upton. He was discharged March 27, 1919, at Camp Upton.
- Jason M. Hilton, enrolled as Lieutenant, Junior Grade, Naval Reserve Force, Class 4, and was assigned to duty on the U. S. S. *Aztec* on July 17, 1917. He rescued 1,400 Canadian troops from the S. S. *City of Vienna* off Halifax on July 22, 1918. July 29, he received commission as Lieutenant and changed to Class 3, Naval Auxiliary Reserve. On September 2, he was ordered to Submarine Base, New London, for temporary duty in anti-submarine warfare. On January 22, 1919, he was relieved from active duty at his own request to take charge of the steam yacht, *Aztec* when she was returned to her owner. October 1, 1919, he was confirmed as Lieutenant U. S. Naval Reserve Force and on July 12, 1921, he was discharged from the service.
- George Edgar Hannibal, colored, enlisted in the army August 23, 1917, and sent to Fort Slocum. He was assigned to the 15th Regular N. Y. Guard, by request August 30. He was ordered to report for guard duty with Company I, 3rd Battalion then at Camp Dix. On December 15 he sailed for overseas. From January 2 to March 12, he was at St. Nazaire doing construction work. March 14 his regiment became known as the 369th Infantry and put at the disposal of the 16th Division, 8th Army Corps, 4th French Army, Company I, being converted into the 3rd Machine Gun Company. April 1 ordered to attend the M. G. school and returning to his regiment was rated as M. G. Mechanic. April 15, he was in the sector on the edge of the Argonne Forest. July 18, he was seriously wounded near Ville sur Tourbe on the Champagne front, and from July 21 to November 15, was in hospital at St. Martha Avignon and from November 16, 1918 to April 16, 1919, he was in four other hospitals in France. He sailed for home April 18 and was discharged at Hospital in Colonia, October 3, 1919. He received the Croix de Guerre.



## CHAPTER VII

### THE LONG ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

THE records of historic events are of value to all who venerate the high traditions of their country.

With this thought in mind, on March 3, 1863, a few public-spirited citizens met at the rooms of the Hamilton Literary Association at 44 Court Street, and adopting a constitution and by-laws formed the Long Island Historical Society for the purpose, as stated in its certificate of incorporation, of "promoting Historical Science." The notice of this first meeting was signed by names that are still remembered, among others Joshua M. VanCott, Henry C. Murphy, John Winslow and John Greenwood. Later another meeting was held and as a result on May 7, 1863, a formal inauguration of the new society was held at the Academy of Music, in Montague Street, where the Rev. Richard S. Storrs, Jr., D.D., brilliant young pastor of the Church of the Pilgrims, gave the first public address. Among the first directors were noted names. J. Carson Brevoort was president, and the officers and directors numbered, among others, A. Abbot Low, the great merchant; Prof. Charles E. West, head of the Brooklyn Heights Seminary for Young Ladies; John Winslow, Henry E. Pierrepont, a name linked with Brooklyn through Pierrepont Street and Pierrepont Place, and Henry R. Stiles, historian.

The society received enthusiastic support and at the end of the first year the estimated value of its holdings in books, collections and cash was approximately \$15,000—not a bad beginning. The early years were marked by rapid progress. Rooms were taken in the white marble five-story Hamilton Building at Court and Joralemon Streets, where now stands the Temple Bar, and many of our older citizens will remember being taken to the rooms and gazing with the awe of children on the various relics of the past contained in the glass cases which lined the walls. So encouraging was the response of the public that even in that first year it was felt that a building to house the collections would be needed within a few years, and in 1866 ground was purchased at the corner of Clinton and Pierrepont Streets. Present day realty dealers must look with envy on the price paid for this large plot, \$32,500.

In 1880 the present handsome building now housing the society was built and the collection and books were moved from its old Court Street home to the new building. During all this period and up to the present time there has been linked with the society the names of those men who were ever seeking the best interests of their home city. Looking over the list of directors and councillors, one notes such names as George I. Seney, the founder of the Methodist Episcopal Hospital; J. S. T. Stranahan, the father of Prospect Park; Alexander E. Orr, the promoter of the subway; Alexander M. White and his son, Alfred T. White; the Rev. Charles Cuthbert Hall, D. D., of the First Presbyterian Church; and the Rev. Charles H. Hall, D. D., of Holy Trinity; David M. Stone, of the "Journal of Commerce"; St. Clair McKelway of the "Brooklyn Daily Eagle"; and among other old Brooklyn names, Frank Sherman Benson, Thomas E. Stillman, James McKeen, Wilhelmus Mynderse, John J. Pierrepont, and others. In the sixty years of the society's life, there have been but four presidents, J. Carson Brevoort, Rev. Richard S. Storrs, D.D., Alexander E. Orr and Willard Bartlett, a somewhat remarkable record.

---

\* From an article by Guy Du Val, a member of the board of directors of the Society, in "Brooklyn," the weekly of the Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce.



BUILDING OF LONG ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY





It has been the policy of the society to found a general library of historical reference, and among its most valuable works will be found the Cabinet of the King, known as the "Royal Collection," originally projected by Louis XIV and printed for presentation by the royal family. This work consists of forty-nine huge volumes, containing some of the finest specimens of engravings known. The library also contains the elephant folio volumes of Audubon's "Birds of America," all of the birds being in color and life size. There are numerous collections of engravings from the European galleries, such as Dresden, Munich, Florence and Palais Pitti, and the large work of Raphael's frescoes in the Vatican. The department of works on Egypt, the Holy Land and Greece is particularly good, including the great work on Egypt in many volumes issued by order of Napoleon I.

The collection of books of Hours and similar manuscript volumes is also interesting. There are seven or eight folio antiphonals, the choir books that were made and used by the old monks centuries ago. There is also a life of Moliere in the handwriting of Voltaire.

The society possesses one hundred and twenty-three original letters of George Washington, formerly owned by Edward Everett, and purchased from his son by the late J. Carson Brevoort. Other choice volumes of Americana are owned by the society, among them a copy of Daniel Denton's "New York," printed in 1670.

The society also owns memorials of the past, paintings of noted men formerly residents of Brooklyn or Long Island, pictures of many historic scenes, Indian relics and specimens of birds, and of the geology of the island. There are racks on which the guns which the villagers carried for defense against the Indians were hung when they went into church. There are medals and mementos of famous and noted events. These interesting relics are not properly exhibited, owing to lack of funds. Some of them have been loaned to the Museum of the American Indian in New York and elsewhere.

The library of 93,000 volumes and many thousands of pamphlets cannot be equalled in the country in some lines. It is especially rich in American genealogies, and in this it is unique among other collections, containing over 6,000 volumes. Many valuable additions have been made to the department of fine and industrial arts, history, travel, biography and ecclesiastical history, for which departments there are special funds.

To the lover of history, to the lover of books, to the lover of those things which make the past of value and of interest, the Long Island Historical Society offers opportunities such as can be secured by no other institution in Brooklyn, and which are equalled by perhaps only one in our larger borough across the river. Today the modern library, with its many departments, with its improved methods of book distribution, its many attendants and its up-to-date thorough going business-like surroundings, does not always offer to the student the atmosphere of quiet and rest that is an important aid to the best quality of research work. In the beautiful library on the second floor of the Long Island Historical Society the reader will find that monastic quiet for which the ardent booklover always longs, the restful peace that should accompany a study of the work of great minds, and the beauty and comfort of surroundings which must satisfy his soul. The reader walks into a gracious atmosphere and does his work among surroundings which bring contentment to him.

For the student the library holds a unique place in the city. It is a heritage left by the great minds that formed and founded the institution, and it is the



hope and desire of its present officers and directors that it may be maintained in its entirety as it now stands. It has its place in our world of literary development, and that place should be kept sacred to its traditions. It extends to all who need its services a warm and cordial invitation to visit its rooms and to become members of the association. The dues are modest, the advantages many, and its central location makes it convenient for the entire metropolis. All who are interested in the history of our country, our island and our city and who seek a place where their reading and studies can be carried on with comfort and profit to themselves, will find the rooms of the Long Island Historical Society the answer to their desires. Miss Emma Toedteberg is librarian.

## CHAPTER VIII

### FREE PUBLIC SCHOOLS

OUR free public school is of Dutch origin, and goes back to the colonial days of New Netherland. The English established the first schools on Long Island east of the Dutch settlements, and in both cases the church and the clergyman were the forerunners of the schoolhouse and the teacher. Under the English, popular education was neglected if not discouraged, for some of the governors feared the spirit of liberty which smouldered in the breasts of an enlightened people. Parish schools were maintained by many churches, and the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, sent schoolmasters to a few scattered neighborhoods. After the Revolution little was done to educate the masses until the Free School Society was organized in New York City in 1805. It is a striking fact that the education of negroes was undertaken first and that the Manumission Society of New York, as it was called, was founded in 1785 for the purpose of giving negroes "the elements of education." A free school for colored children was opened by the Society in 1787, and it was the first move taken after the Dutch period to provide free public instruction; and the free schools for colored children thus established remained a part of the educational system of the city until they were abolished in 1900 by an act of the Legislature signed by Governor Roosevelt.

The Free School Society, looking to the education of whites, was organized in 1805, under the presidency of Mayor De Witt Clinton, and its object was to instruct the children whose parents could not afford to pay and whom the parish schools could not reach. This Society became the Public School Society in 1826, marking a stride forward in the popular conception of the obligations of the community toward mass education. It was apparent forthwith that public schools for all would need the support of all, and become a part of the official duties of the city or county toward the people.

A. Emerson Palmer, long Secretary of the Board of Education in New York City, improved the opportunities for research at his command to bring out a "History of Free Education in the City of New York" which was published in 1905, to mark the centenary of the inauguration on February 19, 1805, of the movement for free public schools in the city. He quotes Broadhead, that admirer of the Dutch colonists, in saying:

Neither the perils of war, nor the busy pursuit of gain, nor the excitement of political strife, ever caused the Dutch to neglect the duty of educating their offspring to enjoy that freedom for which their fathers had fought. Schools were everywhere provided, at the public expense, with good schoolmasters, to instruct the children of all classes in the usual branches of education; and the consistories of the churches took zealous care to have their youth thoroughly taught the catechism and the articles of religion.

It was the custom of the Dutch after the Reformation in Holland, says Thomas DeWitt,



BOYS' HIGH SCHOOL





to send out with emigrants going to any of their colonies, however few in number, a well qualified schoolmaster, who was a member of the Church, and accredited by his competence and piety to take charge of the instruction of children and youth.

Palmer's History, carefully compiled and interesting, and probably free from material mistakes is standard authority for most of the information about the early schools of Brooklyn, as well as of New York. The beginnings were similar to those in New York City until the Public School Society appeared as a corporation, and for quite ten years was a rival to the Board of Education. In Brooklyn, as in New Amsterdam, the schoolmaster followed the minister. When a minister was appointed for Brooklyn about 1660, the way was opened for the employment the following year of Carel de Beauvois, or Debevoise, as schoolmaster. Probably Flatbush had a school a year or two earlier, perhaps in 1653. Dr. Strong, the historian of Flatbush, gave the honor of being the first schoolmaster to Adriaen Hegeman, clerk and schout, while Teunis G. Bergen gives the place to Reynier Bastiaensen Van Giesen, with whom an agreement was made in June, 1660, "to teach the school, perform the duties of court messenger, etc." Dr. Stiles tries to reconcile these differences in his authoritative history. "It will be seen," he says, "that it is quite possible that Hegeman acted in this capacity from 1663 or 1664, the date of his first coming to Flatbush until 1660, the 5th June of which year (according to Bergen's translation of the first records) the consistory engaged Van Giesen to become schoolmaster. He was succeeded by Pilgrim Cloeq in 1663, and Cloeq propably served until 1671." Dr. Peter Ross in his "History of Long Island" (1902), says that:

Hegeman, the common ancestor of that now numerous family came here from Amsterdam about 1650 and took up his residence at first in New Amsterdam. In 1654 he was a magistrate of Flatbush, and in 1661 schout fiscal of the five Dutch towns, and he held other offices besides being described as an auctioneer. . . . Hegeman appears to have been a man of wealth, and it is impossible to conceive of his performing the duties of schoolmaster, which as we shall see, included much that were rather servile in their nature. . . . It is possible therefore that he simply performed a part of the duties which fell to the lot of a schoolmaster until a regular and full appointment was made. This was in 1660 when Raymond Van Giesen was installed. . . . Van Giesen held the office until 1663 when he removed to Bergen County, New Jersey, and Pilgrim Cloeq was appointed schoolmaster in his stead continuing as such until 1671.

The first school in Flatbush, doubtless also the first school on Long Island, stood not far from the present Erasmus Hall High School, Fisher making the assertion: "What is supposed to have been the first village school house stood on a plot to the north of Erasmus Hall campus, and remained in use over a century and a half. Additions were made as needed so when it was sold in 1803, for use as a village store, and the school moved to the Academy, it was composed of three small buildings joined together."

The opening of the Brooklyn school under Carel de Beauvois has been fixed as July 4, 1661. Director General Stuyvesant ordered the levy of the first school tax of one hundred and fifty guilders and fifty guilders were added from the Government treasury. Dr. Stiles remarks that: "The names of the earliest settlers of Breucklyn who were assessed to establish public education are still to be found in the archives of the city." The first teacher received as salary the whole of the amount raised for school purposes, and a house. The school is believed to have occupied the little octagonal church edifice which stood where Bridge Street joins Fulton Street. Carol De Beauvois was an educated man from Leyden, a French Protestant in religion. "He was required to perform also the duties of court messenger, precentor (voorsanger), ring the bell and do whatever else is required."

The third school within the limits of Brooklyn was opened in Bushwick



about the beginning of 1663 by Boudewyn Manout, who acted as court clerk. Dr. Stiles quotes the old records, stating that on December 28, 1662:

The magistrates of the village of Bostwyck, appeared before the council, representing that they in their village were in great need of a person who would act as a clerk and school-master to instruct the youth; and, that as one had been proposed to them, viz.: Bodewyn Manout from Crimpen op de Lecq (village in Holland) they had agreed with him, that he should officiate as *voorleser* or clerk, and keep school for the instruction of youth. For his services (as Clerk) he was to receive 400 guilders (in wampum) annually; and, as school-master free house rent and firewood.

The Bushwick school appears to have been conducted in another octagonal little church near the corner of Bushwick Avenue and Skillman Street. "When about two centuries later," says Dr. Stiles, "the Board of Education assumed jurisdiction of the public schools of Bushwick, at the time of the consolidation of that town with the City of Brooklyn, in 1855, it found the district school still kept on the same site on which it was founded in 1662, and surrounded by the same walls of houses which had guarded it for two centuries." This school became No. 23 in Brooklyn.

The fourth school within the limits of Brooklyn was organized in the village of Bedford at the junction of Clove, Cripplebush and Jamaica Lanes, probably in 1663.

Here, says Dr. Stiles, John Vandervoort taught for sixty years. . . . John Vandervoort took charge of this school about 1748 or 1750, and is supposed to have been its second teacher. His long service of sixty years was uninterrupted, except for a while during the Revolution when he was imprisoned by the British. The old school house had two rooms with a chimney between, one room being the school room proper, and the other used as a residence for the teacher; and, about 1775, an addition was made, some fourteen feet square, which the teacher was permitted to use as a grocery store, by means of which he eked out his slender salary.

The successor of this school was No. 3, after the Board of Education was organized in 1843.

[The Clove Road led from Bedford to Flatbush; the Cripplebush Road from Bedford to Newtown; and Jamaica Lane became the Brooklyn and Jamaica Turnpike, which would place the school at the junction of Fulton Street with Bedford Avenue or Nostrand Avenue.]

Flatlands had a school years before any official record was made which has been preserved. In 1675, and for a period of years thereafter, the deacons made entries and presented bills for elementary and religious books. Here as elsewhere the schoolmaster was chorister, reader, and sexton, and his name was Wellem Gerretse.

Gravesend, the English community, did not have a school until 1728. It stood on the site of the Town Hall at the time of its annexation to Brooklyn in 1894; and was used until 1778 when a larger building took its place. After fifty years this was converted into a Town Hall; and a more roomy school house was built on a new site.

New Lots had a school house as early as 1740, and a more commodious building was opened in 1810.

Two other schools preceded the Revolution. One was near the Wallabout Creek; and was removed to Bedford and Flushing Avenues after a few years, and finally became Brooklyn School No. 4. The other was opened on one of the Bergen farms in Gowanus, mostly for the children of that name. It occupied a dwelling house until after the Revolution, when a school house was built, near the corner of Third Avenue and Fortieth Street. It became No. 2 in the City of Brooklyn.

At first, says Dr. Stiles, the Dutch language was the only one used in all these schools; but from about the year 1758 to the year 1800, both the Dutch and English languages were

taught. In the Bushwick and Gowanus schools the use of the Dutch tongue was continued much later even down to the time of the Revolution. In the Bushwick school studies in Dutch were not abandoned until about fifty years ago. (Dr. Stiles wrote prior to 1884 and the schools referred to do not include those of New Lots, Flatlands, Flatbush and Gravesend which were not merged with Brooklyn until 1886, 1894 and 1895.)

In 1770 Brooklyn contained only one school of nineteen scholars. In 1770 a school house was built by subscription for the accommodation of the town. The subscribers chose the trustees, who managed the financial affairs, and admitted free all who were unable to pay. . . . This appears to have been the first attempt at anything like a district or common school system.

It has been asserted that in 1810 the Gowanus school district took advantage of the State law passed in 1805, and chose trustees. This, if substantiated, would give School No. 2 the credit of being the first school under the new law organized in Brooklyn. Tunis G. Bergen, who wrote part of the chapter on schools in Stiles' History, makes a positive statement to this effect, and names as the first trustees Garret Bergen, Stephen Hendrickson, and Cornelius Van Brunt.

The Common School Fund created by the act of 1805 was distributed first in 1815. In 1816, a common school was opened on May 6 in the lower part of a building in Adams Street near Sands Street. At the time there were five hundred and fifty-five children in the village who did not attend private schools. The first principal of this school was John Dikeman, afterwards Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and County Judge.

A school house was built in 1826 in District No. 3, Town of Bushwick in the vicinity of North First Street. The original Bushwick school meanwhile had been reorganized as District School No. 1, and a second school had been started at Bushwick Crossroads. The School in District No. 1 was the first one in Williamsburgh. James Murphy, a member of the Brooklyn Board of Education for more than twenty years, wrote about it:

Williamsburgh's first school house was located on the block of ground now bounded by Berry Street and Bedford Avenue, Grand and North First Streets. The site was given by David Dunham, a New York merchant in 1820. A school house was erected by the people of the neighborhood, and was known as District School No. 3 of the Town of Bushwick. The earliest schoolmaster of whom we have recollection was a Mr. Beverly, an English gentleman. He was in charge of the school in 1830 and for several years afterward; how long before that date we have not been able to learn. . . . The old school house was removed to Sixth, now Roebling Street, in 1849 and fitted up for a dwelling house, and is still so used. School sessions were held from 9 a. m. to 12 m. the year round and from 1 to 4 p. m. in winter; 2 to 5 p. m. in summer except Wednesdays and Saturdays when there were no afternoon sessions.

Several other schools were established within the boundaries of Brooklyn before a Board of Education was created by law. One of these was in the neighborhood of Court and Degraw Streets, in 1827, which became No. 6; another in the same year at Adams and Prospect Streets (the second in the village of Brooklyn) now No. 7; another about the same time in a small frame building on Gold Street, between Myrtle and Willoughby Avenues, later No. 5; a fourth in Middagh Street, between Henry and Hicks, in 1830, which became No. 8; a fifth a few years later near the Mount Prospect Reservoir, which became No. 9. About the same time another school was started near what was later Fourth Avenue and Macomb Street, which became No. 10.

#### Board of Education

The Brooklyn Board of Education began to function on the first Monday in April, 1843. Prior to that time districts existed without a central power. The law of 1835 provided three trustees in each district, and three inspectors, and three commissioners of common schools for the entire city should be appointed by the Common Council. The law creating a central governing body for all the



schools of the city was signed on March 23, 1843, William C. Bouck of Schoharie County being Governor. It provided that the members of the Common Council should be commissioners of common schools in and for the city, and that on the first Monday in April, 1843, they should "Appoint two or more discreet and suitable persons to represent each of the school districts," who should constitute the Board of Education. The full term was three years, and the Mayor and Deputy Superintendent of Common Schools in Kings County were made *ex-officio* members. New York had had a Board of Education for one year when this law was enacted. Its members were elected by the people by wards and districts. for twenty-five years, while the Brooklyn members never were so elected.

The Common Council was empowered further to "make such provision for the regulation of the Board of Education" as might be deemed necessary to effect a complete and efficient organization for common school education. It voted that the Board of Education should hold its first meeting on the first Tuesday in May, and stated meetings at least once a month; and that its officers should be president, a vice-president and a secretary, elected from its own members. The ordinance also provided that the Board "shall make its own by-laws subject to the approval of the Common Council."

When the Board was organized on May 2, it had twenty-eight members, as two districts had not been able to choose the full number of suitable persons. Dr. Theodore F. King, Deputy County Superintendent, was elected President; Stephen Haynes, of District No. 5, Vice-President, and Alfred G. Stevens, of District No. 1, Secretary. The title of Deputy Superintendent to County Superintendent was established with \$500 salary a year. The State abolished the office of County Superintendent in every county except that of New York, in 1847, and in the January succeeding, the lawmakers authorized the Board of Education to appoint a City Superintendent of Common Schools. Dr. J. Sullivan Thorne, elected in March, served for two months. Samuel L. Holmes succeeded him in May. Thus Brooklyn had a City Superintendent three years before New York. Just before Holmes went to Brooklyn he had been General Deputy Superintendent of Common Schools for the State. He succeeded Samuel S. Randall in that office and Mr. Randall succeeded him in turn as City Superintendent of Brooklyn in 1853, on the death of Mr. Holmes. He resigned at the end of the year to resume his post with the State. In 1854, he was chosen City Superintendent of New York, filling the office for sixteen years. Mr. Holmes received a salary of \$1,000, with travelling expenses not exceeding \$25. Mr. Randall received \$1,100 a year.

A law of 1850 provided that the Common Council appoint a Board of Education of thirty-three members, each school district to be represented by at least one member. When Williamsburgh and Bushwick were consolidated with Brooklyn in 1855, the charter required the Common Council to appoint additional members for the new districts, and the Common Council fixed the total at forty-five, thirteen of whom were to reside in the Eastern District, and this number was not changed while the Board existed. In 1862, the law empowered the Mayor to appoint members, subject to confirmation by the Common Council; while under the amended charter of 1882, the sole appointing power was given to the Mayor.

By a charter amendment adopted in 1873, a Department of Public Instruction for Brooklyn was created and the City Superintendent became Superintendent of Public Instruction, under the Board of Education, with a term of three

years. Two Associate Superintendents were provided also. In 1882, Mayor Seth Low made appointments to the Board for three years, although the charter amendment of 1880 fixed the heads of all city departments generally at two years. Mayor Low held that no change in the Board of Education was specified or intended, but in 1886, his successor, Daniel D. Whitney, took the opposite view and held that the term of Mayor Low's appointees had expired after two years, and appointed successors for two year terms. This caused confusion and doubt regarding the legality of the acts of the Board; and the Legislature in 1887 definitely fixed the terms of members at three years and extended the terms of those appointed for two.

Mayor Charles A. Schieren appointed five women members of the Board in 1895, Miss Isabel M. Chapman, Mrs. Mary E. Jacobs, Mrs. Ellen F. Pettingill, Miss Elizabeth H. Perry and Mrs. Julia M. Powell. They served for three years, the last few months of which were as members of the School Board for the Borough of Brooklyn.

The offices and "depot" of the Board for the first years were in the City Hall, and for a time in School No. 1; but in 1854 the Board took over an old dwelling house on the easterly side of Red Hook Lane, between Fulton and Livingston Streets, which James Underhill had built just outside the city limits in 1830, when the narrow lane was one of the busiest of Brooklyn streets. In 1888, this was replaced with a three-story brick structure connected with a new building erected in Livingston Street. The cost of the improvements was \$56,000. In 1891 the premises 133 and 135 Livingston Street were bought to enlarge the headquarters building.

The law of 1850 vested all property acquired for school uses in the Board of Education, but the purchase of sites required the approval of the Common Council. The money raised for sites and for building, repairing, and furnishing school houses was called the Special School Fund; all other moneys the General School Fund. The Board was unwieldy, and Mayor Schieren in 1894-1895 appointed a committee to report on the question of reduction. This committee comprised John K. Creevey, William Harkness, John C. Kelley, J. Edward Swanstrom, President of the Board of Education; Truman J. Backus, David H. Cochran and Charles H. Levermore. The committee proposed a Board of fifteen members, appointed by the Mayor with a salaried Commissioner as presiding officer, who should have a certain veto power on the acts of the Board and be the executive head of the Department. The Superintendent of Public Instruction was to be nominated by the Commissioner and appointed by the Board; five Associate Superintendents were provided, two of them to be women. Teachers were required to have good qualifications and professional training; kindergartens were likewise recommended; but the bill never was reported out of committee in the Legislature.

1843 to 1854—There were ten district schools and two colored schools, not yet fully under its control, when the Board of Education began to function in 1843. The ten schools for whites employed twenty-nine teachers, at a total cost of \$9,510 for salaries, an average of \$328. The average attendance for the year, including three in the colored schools was 1,865. Mr. Holmes's first annual report was not printed; but his next report (for 1849) was ordered printed in 1850. In the little pamphlet he argued for free text books for all pupils. The



fifth annual report gives the following table to show the early increase in the schools of Brooklyn:

	1843	1844	1845	1846	1847
Number Districts .....	10	10	10	12	12
Number District Schools.....	10	10	10	10	12
Number Colored Schools.....	2	2	2	2	2
An Average Attendance.....	1,865	2,098	2,194	2,745	3,247
Number of Teachers.....	29	34	41	66	78
Amount of Teachers' Salaries.....	\$9,510	\$10,550	\$12,755	\$15,675	\$19,225

The reports for the following four years furnish the following figures:

	1848	1848	1850	1851
Number School Districts.....	13	13	13	13
Number District Schools.....	12	13	13	13
Number Branch Primaries.....	..	..	..	1
Number Colored Schools.....	2	2	2	2
Average attendance during year.....	3767	4326	5220	5773
Schoolsites, buildings .....	\$11,140	\$21,681	\$15,910	\$15,755
Number of Teachers employed.....	85	94	122	136
Teachers salaries .....	\$20,075	\$25,350	\$28,255	\$30,732

The report quotes a census taken on December 31, 1850, to show that there were 24,422 children between five and sixteen in the city, including five hundred and fifty-six colored children; while on August 1, 1851, there were 35,401 children between the ages of five and twenty-one, including six hundred and seventy-five colored.

The regulations for the government of schools adopted May 16, 1843, provided two sessions daily for five days a week from April to October (inclusive) from 9 to 12 o'clock and from 2 to 5 o'clock, while from November to March there was one session from 9 to 3 o'clock, with half an hour intermission at noon. Three weeks preceding the first Monday in September constituted the summer vacation. The other holidays were January 1, May 1, July 4, and December 25, and "all days appointed by the public authorities for religious observances." After five or six years Christmas week was added to the holidays, and the summer vacation was extended to include the entire month of August. May 1 was dropped and Washington's Birthday added. Teachers and monitors for each school were subject to change by the Board of Education. Each primary was to have a *sand desk* among its other equipment.

Grades were introduced from the beginning. The departments in each school were "Male," "Female," and "Primary." In the first two the course of study included "Spelling, Reading, Writing, Definitions, Grammar, Composition, Declamation, Geography, History, Arithmetic, Algebra; and as far as practicable the use of globes, drawing of maps, Geometry, Trigonometry, Natural Philosophy and Astronomy." Vocal music supplanted algebra for one course before 1850, and sand desks were abolished. A Saturday Normal School was opened in October, 1843, all the teachers in the primary departments being required to attend. Doubt in regard to the right to use moneys for this purpose led to the closing of the school after a few months. A music teacher was appointed in 1843 at \$500, and two teachers of music were employed in October. As early as 1853 a committee of three members was appointed for each school. This was the origin of the "local committee" system, although the name was not applied officially until 1875. The local committee acquired large powers in

choosing teachers and their promotion, and was practically supreme over its particular school. When a training school and high schools were established, a local committee was appointed for each. This feature was continued until the Brooklyn School Board was abolished in 1902. It was retained by a special provision in the first charter of Greater New York. J. Edward Swanstrom, President of the Board of Education, recommended its abolition in presenting a schedule of needed reforms to the men preparing the charter for Greater New York in 1896. He said: "Almost all of the abuses that have crept into our system are attributable to this wrong method of making appointments and promotions among teachers. Appointments should be made from an eligible list, and promotions should be determined solely by merit." But the merit system was not introduced in the public schools until Brooklyn had ceased to be an independent municipality for four years.

There were seventeen public school buildings in 1852, two being hired for branch primary schools. Thirteen of the fifteen school houses owned by the Board had been erected since 1843. The average attendance for the year was 6,338, including two hundred and twenty colored children. There were one hundred and fifty-seven teachers—eighteen men (15 principals, one assistant and two music teachers), and one hundred and thirty-nine women (twenty-nine teachers and one hundred and ten assistants). They drew \$35,063 in salaries. The outlay to support the schools for a year was \$48,403.74, of which the State paid \$23,403.74, and the City raised \$25,000 by taxation. The erection, enlarging and repair of school houses cost \$33,861, making a total for the year of \$88,264.74. The Superintendent issued licenses to one hundred and forty-seven teachers in 1852.

The first night school was opened on October 20, 1851, under the law passed in 1850. It was held in schoolhouse No. 1. At first free text books were supplied, but this was discontinued. Until 1849, the children bought their own text books, paying regular retail prices. At that time the Board of Education decided to open a depot and furnish text books at cost. Books were furnished free to destitute pupils upon order of the principal. Free text books on the scheme adopted in New York from the creation of the Free School Society were not introduced in Brooklyn for another thirty years. Yet these articles were provided free: "Pens and pen holders; Writing Paper; Copy Slips, and Slate Pencils, Pails, Dippers, Brooms, Mats, Towels; Chalk or Crayons and Sponge."

In 1844, the first attempt to supply free text books was made—in the village of Williamsburgh. The people taxed themselves by permission of the Legislature for school books, which belonged to the district and were loaned to the pupils.

**Williamsburgh, Bushwick and Brooklyn** all had diverse systems of education when they were consolidated in 1855. A vote for superintendent was taken and John W. Bulkley of Williamsburgh won over his rival, J. H. Giddings, the Brooklyn Superintendent, the vote being twenty to nineteen. Brooklyn had sixteen schoolhouses, two for colored children and two rented buildings for primary schools; one hundred and seventy-four teachers and 11,500 pupils; Williamsburgh had seven schools for whites, three for primary instruction and one for colored children, with a Board of Education of nine trustees and nine commissioners, eighteen in all. Brooklyn had two music teachers and Williamsburgh one. Bushwick's three schools with 1,050 pupils and sixteen teachers, were conducted under the State school laws. John W. Bulkley, City Superintendent, in his first report said there were in the city forty grammar schools for



boys and the same number for girls, twenty-nine primary schools for both boys and girls, and six grammar and three primary schools for colored children—in all seventy-eight schools housed in thirty buildings, twenty-seven of them owned and three leased by the Board of Education. A Normal School was opened in the new School Building No. 14 in February, 1856. The graduation exercises were important social affairs and at least one of them was held in the Academy of Music, and attended by enthusiastic throngs of people. The Normal School was closed in June, 1861, not to be reopened. The subject was revived after a dozen years, but nothing was done until 1884.

Until 1866 the City Superintendent had been unaided in supervising the schools. An Assistant Superintendent was authorized in that year and James Cruikshank elected to the post. He had been for years with the State Department of Public Instruction, giving attention to teachers institutes. After serving as Assistant Superintendent for about six years he assumed the principalship of school No. 12, which he held for more than thirty years. In 1866, the course of study was made uniform in all the schools, and primary teachers received systematic instruction in principles and methods. A single and uniform system of text books was adopted. In 1874, a uniform and simultaneous examination of all the graduates of the grammar schools was introduced. Night schools had been opened every winter except in 1862-1863, when the Civil War drew so many young men away and they were suspended. The season was not uniform. The first evening high school was organized in 1874, being opened in September in School No. 4. In 1868, an appropriation of \$40,000 was voted for the purpose of putting the scheme of free text books into effect. The fund was not continued and the scheme was dropped.

When the Town of New Lots was added to Brooklyn in 1886 (East New York) the number of schools, including the training school, central schools, colored schools and attendance schools was raised to seventy. They were classified as grammar, intermediate, and primary and branch primary. The classification of 1890 made them grammar schools, independent intermediate schools, independent primary schools, branch intermediate schools and branch primary schools. There were no separate colored schools after 1890. When grammar schools had two or three departments (grammar, intermediate and primary) these departments were not classified as separate schools. The one principal had charge of the grammar department, while under him other departments were in charge of teachers known as department heads. A branch principal was placed over a branch school, reporting to the principal of the main school.

In 1894, Flatbush, Gravesend and New Utrecht added seventeen schools when they were annexed to the city, while the annexation of Flatlands in 1895, added five more, making the total one hundred and fourteen. But many of the buildings were old, or inadequate. One of those in New Lots was closed immediately.

A Superintendent of Truancy, with five attendance agents, was appointed in 1876. A Truant Home used for the confinement of youthful criminals existed on the eastern borders of the city since 1857. It was of bad reputation, and was under the Board of Aldermen. A superintendent and teachers and three truant officers were employed for a few years; but the Mayor in 1862 found features in the law which led him to refuse to pay their salaries. The Home was turned over to the Board of Education in 1876, which found the cost of maintaining one truant pupil about \$300 a year. It was returned to the Board of Aldermen and incorrigibles were committed there against the protests of the members

of the Board of Education, who ever held that mere truants should not be **thrown into** contact with youthful criminals. In 1878, two attendance schools were established to meet this demand and teach truant boys—one in the Eastern and one in the Western District. These schools were maintained with good results until 1893. In 1887, the Superintendent of Truancy was abolished and the work assigned to the Superintendent of Public Instruction, the number of attendance officers being reduced to seven. In 1894 the Legislature transferred the Truant Home to the Board of Education, and it was reorganized in 1895 as a Truant School in charge of a principal. In 1881, a bill passed the Legislature granting free text books to Brooklyn pupils; but Governor Alonzo B. Cornell vetoed it on the ground that the Board of Education already possessed this authority. The free text book system was introduced finally in 1884 after \$75,000 had been appropriated.

In 1880, a second district high school was organized in the Eastern District, and opened to both sexes. In 1884, German and Spanish were taught in the evening high schools.

In 1895, a teachers' retirement fund was created.

**The New Course of Study** which went into effect in September, 1887, superceded the course adopted in 1866, which had been unchanged for twenty years. The new course required seven and one-half years in the primary and grammar grades. There was a careful grading of the work. Provision was made for seven primary grades and eight grammar grades. The new course was amended in 1892 and generally revised two years later when it was believed that too much was attempted in the schools. In 1895, a revised course was adopted, the number of primary grades was increased by one, raising the total to sixteen, the full course covering eight years. In 1880, a Director of Music was appointed. A Supervisor of Drawing was appointed in 1890. An appropriation of \$5,000 enabled the Board to appoint a Director of Sewing and four teachers in 1896. Kindergartens were opened in 1897, and a Director appointed to supervise the work.

In 1892, on the occasion of the celebration of the four hundredth anniversary of the discovery of America by Columbus, 10,070 boys from the public schools took part in the military and civic parade on October 12. The boys, marching in regiments and companies, won high praise from General Isaac S. Catlin for their military behavior, and in the words of General Isaac S. Catlin, the Grand Marshal, they made a picturesque and imposing contribution to the grand parade.

In his report for 1850, Superintendent Holmes recommended a "scientific department" where the higher branches of study might be pursued for as many of the schools as might be selected. In 1851 he reported two hundred pupils ready to enter such a department. In 1852, he suggested a large building near the City Hall to be used for the use of the Board, its officers, the depot, the monthly meeting of teachers and a "scientific department." When the old headquarters building in Red Hook Lane was purchased, it was the intention to establish there a central public school where geometry, trigonometry, natural philosophy, chemistry, architecture and drawing, geology, etc., would be taught. In 1855, Superintendent Bulkley, in his first report, urged the establishment of a central high school or free academy. The next year he said "An institution of this kind is indispensable for the perfection of our system."

It was not until 1878 that the Central Grammar School was opened, academic classes in the grammar schools being abolished at the same time. The Central Grammar School until 1886 occupied a rented building at Court and Livingston



Streets which still is used for educational purposes. Six hundred boys and girls were in attendance on the opening day. The principal had fourteen instructors. The course occupied two years. In 1880, the first class of five hundred and twenty-eight was graduated. It was designated as a high school for the first time in the Superintendent's report for 1884; but it continued to be called the Central School for several years longer, the word "Grammar" being dropped. A new building was erected at Nostrand Avenue, Macon and Halsey Streets in 1886, with a seating capacity of 1,200. As this fell short of the requirements, only the girls were transferred, while the boys were left in Court Street. The course of study was revised in 1887 to include an English course of two years; a language course of two years and a commercial course of two years. In 1891, one division became the Girls' High School, and the other the Boys' High School. The Boys' High School was begun in 1891, and the Girls' High School required an annex. The addition and the Boys' High School were both completed in 1892.

The Manual Training High School was organized in 1894 in the Court Street building with one hundred and fifty students. Boys were admitted the first year; but girls were accepted also a year later. In 1895, the old building of School No. 3 was used as an annex and it cared for three classes of girls. These schools provided a course of three years with mechanical and architectural drawing in addition to the regular high school work. The manual work included joining, turning, forging, pattern making, sewing, knife work, Venetian iron work and the like. A new building at Seventh Avenue, Fourth and Fifth Streets was completed in December, 1904. The Erasmus Hall Academy (q. v.) was offered as a high school by its trustees and opened as a high school in 1896. In 1904, a contract was awarded for the large and handsome building which is occupied today.

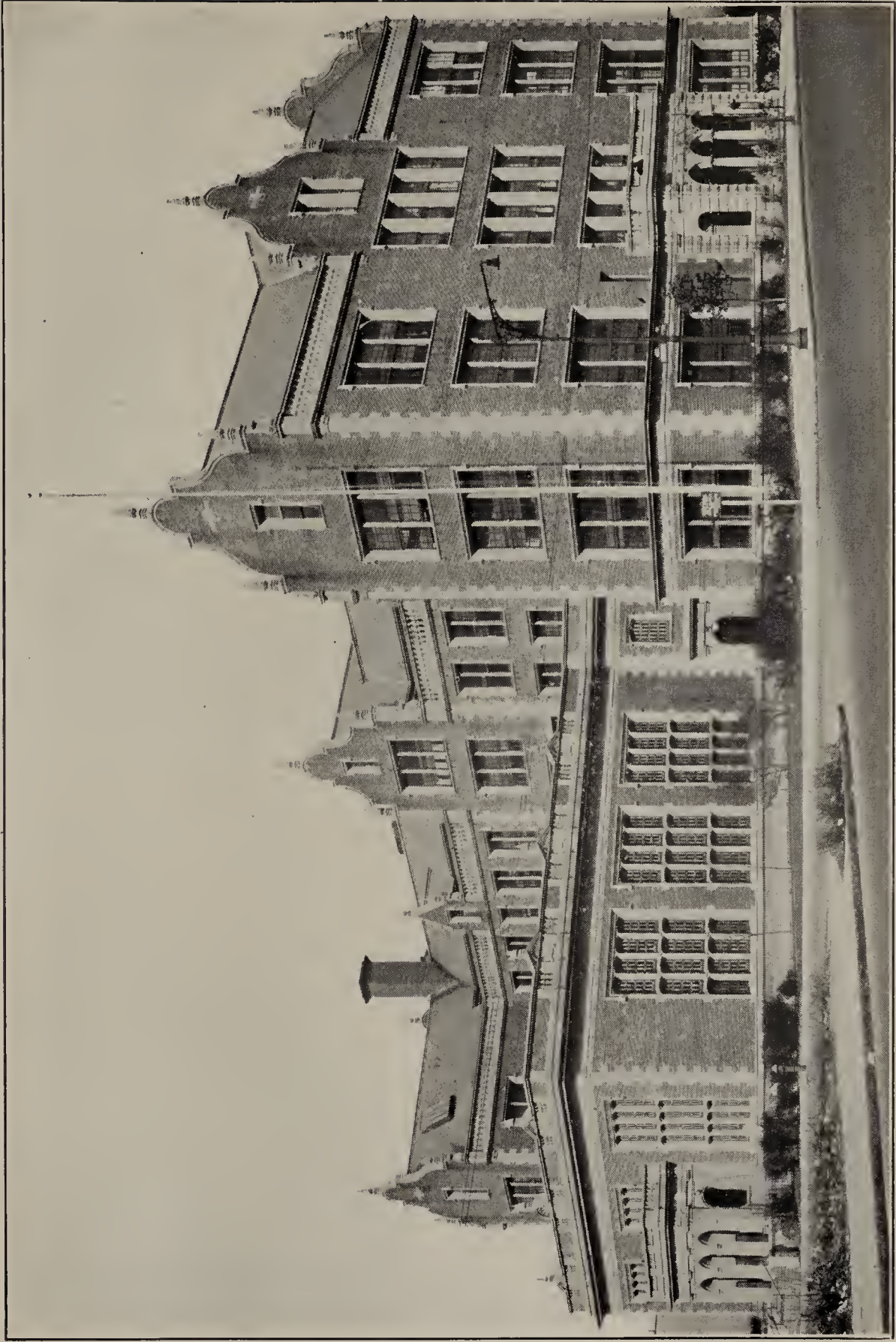
**Occasional Lecturer Loses**—In 1887, the Brooklyn Board of Education made a place as lecturer on physiology in the Central School for Jerome A. Walker, who was also partly to fill out his spare time by vaccinating needy pupils, at a yearly salary of \$1,000. To enable him to get his pay for said services, he received a license which certified:

That Jerome A. Walker has been examined and duly found qualified in respect to learning, ability and moral character to teach a common school (in Brooklyn) as lecturer on physiology, anatomy and hygiene, in high schools, and is hereby licensed as a teacher of Grade A.

Chapter 1081 of the Greater New York Charter conferred on the respective local school boards and boards of superintendents the power to designate the kinds or grades of licenses to teach, together with the academic and other qualifications required for service. These powers in 1902 were transferred to the consolidated City Board of Superintendents and the Board of Education. These boards in the exercise of their powers established the grades and distinctions which should thereafter attach to the respective classes of members of the teaching staff in high schools. The staff distinctions and grades adopted for high schools in 1902 excluded that of lecturer to high school students.

The unusual job which (Walker) the plaintiff had been performing—vaccinating needy pupils and giving talks on physiology to certain high school students—was therefore discontinued as unnecessary. In the reorganization of the grades of service it was found necessary to do away with that species of occasional, intermittent service, such as that rendered by lecturers, and to put all teachers on a permanent staff and require them to work, not at odd times, aggre-





BAY RIDGE HIGH SCHOOL  
Fourth Avenue and Senator Street





gating three hours per week, as in this plaintiff's case, but regularly, from the opening to the close of each session from day to day throughout the year.

Plaintiff had to choose between giving up his occasional service and obtaining a regular position on the high school teaching staff. Up to June, 1902, he had taken no steps to obtain a license as such regular teacher, and the Board of Education adopted the following resolutions:

Resolved, That the position of lecturer in physiology, not being recognized in the schedule of salaries and requirements for license, be abolished from and after September 1, 1920.

Resolved, That Jerome A. Walker, heretofore appointed lecturer and assigned to the Commercial High School, Brooklyn, be suspended without pay, to take effect September, 1902, in accordance with the foregoing resolution.

Authority to abolish unnecessary positions was conferred on the Board of Education by Section 1543 of the Charter.

The plaintiff then presumably realizing the insufficiency of his old license as lecturer to qualify him for uninterrupted service on the permanent staff, applied to the Board of Examiners for a license to teach in the high schools. This application was granted and his name was placed on the list of persons eligible to the position of regular teacher in a high school. His name was so low, however, on said list that his turn for appointment never came at any time during the five year period of the life of said license. It was open to him, at any time, to raise his rating on the list by taking another examination, but up to the commencement of this proceeding he had not done so. He sued for compensation, including arrears, and for status as a member of the high school teaching staff.

Of the many hundreds of lecturers who have served the city for the past fifteen years, the plaintiff is the only one who has claimed that his tenure of a position occupying only a small portion of his time, ripened into permanency with rights to the full annual compensation of a high school teacher. After a trial of the case Justice Marean, in a long opinion, denied the application.

The need for properly trained teachers was stressed by all the earlier superintendents. The report for 1881 suggested two professional schools. In 1884, the Board of Education decided that the new school building in Berkeley Place should be used as a model primary school in the training of teachers. The Training School was opened in May, 1885, with a department of theory and a department of practice. The course was one year, and Brooklyn thus was ten years ahead of the State law of 1895 to "Encourage and promote the professional training of teachers." There were forty-eight graduates in 1886. In 1892, the school was removed to the new building in Ryerson Street near Myrtle Avenue, occupied as Public School No. 4, and No. 4 was transferred to the building in Berkeley Place. In 1903, the Ryerson Street Building was abandoned for the new public school building, No. 138, in Prospect Place, between Bedford and Nostrand Avenues.

**Overcrowding** was the obstacle encountered from the beginning. The growth of the city or borough was by leaps and bounds, especially after the opening of each successive bridge and each extension or enlargement of rapid transit facilities. Money was raised by taxation and was not liberal. In 1888 the first law was passed providing bond issues for this purpose. The first issue was for \$800,000 and two years later bonds for \$1,200,000 were authorized, and the Board had ample funds to meet the situation for the first time in its history. Yet the Board never was able to provide school room for all the students wishing to attend. In September and October, 1889, some 1,039 pupils were excluded; while in the fall of 1890 there were 3,168, and in 1891, 2,715.



The classes were enormous. The class rooms were shamefully packed with children. "More than thirty young girls," the Superintendent wrote in his report for 1873, "have one hundred and twenty to one hundred and thirty pupils committed solely to their inexperience for tuition. Ninety teachers have eighty to one hundred and twenty scholars each, and twenty-one classes are crowded into dark and in some instances damp basements."

In 1889, the number of any class was restricted to seventy, but in October, 1893, there were one hundred and forty-six classes with a larger number registered. Forty teachers had between one hundred and one hundred and fifty pupils each and one teacher had registered one hundred and fifty-eight. The half-day class was adopted, one attending in the forenoon and the other in the afternoon, with the same teacher for both. In 1887, there were seventy-five half-day classes containing 7,969 pupils, and the superintendent in his report suggested they could be done away with by excluding from the schools children under six.

The first Secretary was elected in 1857, and held office until 1881. George A. W. Stuart, the incumbent, disappeared in that year when a shortage of \$250,508 was discovered. Stuart was not found. Since that time, salaries have been paid by check drawn to each employee.

## COMPARISON

	1855	1865	1875	1885	1895
Number of schools .....	30	38	48	61	109
Number of teachers .....	312	554	1077	1452	2479
Average register .....	...	31,160	48,115	70,273	113,810
Average attendance .....	13,380	22,610	43,292	62,835	103,858
Teachers salaries .....	\$93,330	\$270,091	\$659,461	\$871,470	\$2,101,959
Total expenses .....	\$150,895	\$414,666	\$1,147,647	\$1,607,886	\$3,489,768

## VALUE OF SCHOOL PROPERTY

1889 .....	\$5,831,198
1896 .....	10,281,138

## SCHOOL CENSUS OF 1895

Number of persons between 4 and 21 years of age, 272,447.  
 Number attending public schools, 117,581; other schools, 38,454; total, 156,035.  
 Number of children between 8 and 16 employed, 17370.  
 Number of children not attending school—from 4 to 8, 41,486 (estimated), from 16 to 21, 54,743.

## SCHOOL CENSUS OF 1897

Number of persons between 4 and 18, 250,565.  
 Number of children between 4 and 16, 234,938.  
 Number of children between 5 and 16 attending public schools, 132,599; other schools, 37,699; total, 170,398.  
 Number of children from 4 to 8 not attending school (approximate), 42,221, including 31,665 between 4 and 5.  
 Number of children between 8 and 16 at work, 20,839.

**Dr. William H. Maxwell** was probably the strongest single personality in developing the school system of the Greater City along modern lines of thought, and led the way from the past to the present. He was born near Stewartstown, County Tyrone, Ireland, March 5, 1852. His father, John Maxwell, was a Presbyterian minister. He was educated in the local national school, and in 1868, entered Queen's University. He was graduated with honors and the degree of Bachelor of Arts in 1872, and was appointed forthwith sub-master in the Royal Academic Institute. In 1874, he received the degree of Master of Arts and came to America the same year. At first he worked as a

reporter on the New York "Mail," the "Tribune," the "Herald," and for three years as managing editor of the Brooklyn "Times." In November, 1880, he was appointed a teacher in the Williamsburgh Evening High School, of which Edward Bush was principal. By 1882, he had made friends among many prominent residents of the Eastern District, including George H. Fisher, Bernard Peters, Andrew D. Baird and the Reverend Dr. Almon Gunnison, and when there came a vacancy in the Board of Education they backed him and he was chosen to fill the place.

Dr. Maxwell was an Associate Superintendent for five years, in the course of which the Brooklyn Training School for Teachers and the Central Grammar School, which became the Girls' High School, were established. He was the real founder of the high schools. When the Girls' High School was opened, Calvin Patterson was chosen its principal, and Mr. Maxwell was elected to fill out his term. In his first report as City Superintendent for Brooklyn, he advocated many studies which came to be known as "Fads and Fancies," and included the organization of kindergartens, manual training classes, sewing and cooking schools. It was also largely through his efforts that eligible lists from which teachers were appointed were established, thus taking the selection of teachers out of politics.

Dr. Maxwell had been Superintendent of Schools in Brooklyn for eleven years at the time of consolidation in 1898. His friends in Brooklyn put him forward for Superintendent of Schools in the City of New York at the time of consolidation, while the Manhattan authorities preferred Andrew S. Draper, President of the University of Illinois, for the post. Dr. Draper, who was a friend of Dr. Maxwell urged his selection and his advice was followed.

As Superintendent, Dr. Maxwell received wide powers and he raised the requirements for all licenses to teach far beyond what they had been. He fought personally for the Davis Law, giving teachers a living wage; but perhaps his greatest achievement was the unification of all schools throughout the city by the introduction of a new course of study.

Dr. Maxwell was re-elected City Superintendent twice without opposition, but in January, 1916, after he had suffered a breakdown, and when the scheme to Garyize the public schools was being pushed, there was some opposition to electing him to succeed himself. However, he was re-elected for the third time, but he never was able again to take up the full duties of his office. He suffered the breakdown in the late spring of 1915. When he returned to his office in October, his left side was so affected he could hardly use his hand, and when he attempted to address the Board of Education he prepared his remarks in advance and read them. It was not long before he was forced to stop work. He underwent several operations in the Flushing Hospital and attempted to resume his duties in January, 1918; but on January 30, the Board of Education voted to retire him on full pay with the title of Superintendent of Schools *Emeritus*.

The degree of Doctor of Philosophy was conferred on Dr. Maxwell by St. Lawrence University in 1900, and the degree of Doctor of Laws by Columbia in 1901. He served one term as president of the National Educational Association, also as President of the State Council of Superintendents, and was a member of the Committee on English which revolutionized the teaching of English in the public schools. He wrote numerous text books and was one of the editors of the "Educational Review." He was a member of the Hamilton Club, the City Club and the Century Club of Manhattan, and a Fellow of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences. Dr. Maxwell married Miss Marie



Antoinette Folk, daughter of Dr. Samuel Way Folk, on December 1, 1877. He died on May 3, 1920, from hardening of the arteries after an illness of five years. He left a son, William Henry Maxwell, Junior; a daughter, Mrs. Elaine Macklin, and a grandson, Maxwell Macklin.

The first Superintendent of Public Instruction of Greater New York was of Scotch stock and North of Ireland birth. At nineteen he was a tutor in Queens University, an honor man in classics and a fine judge of men. His ambition on coming to America was to be a journalist, and he sought work from the "Herald" of James Gordon Bennett, at the time the foremost metropolitan newspaper. He was a keen man of broad intellect, and he used to say: "If I want a thing from the Board of Education and am in doubt about getting it, I stroll into the auction room and find Hugh McLaughlin whittling there. I tell him what I want and why I want it in the interest of the schools. He's a boss, but he is also a citizen, and anxious for school efficiency. He commonly offers help and I find that difficulties disappear."

Mr. Maxwell found the Brooklyn schools overshadowed by the great private schools. Not one of them would fit a boy for college. There was no manual training. He made the high schools of value and put them on a working basis. He supported manual training. He improved the preparation of girls for normal schools, and his ideals were of the highest, his methods of the most practical type.

"When he was made Superintendent of the Greater City, he grasped," says the Eagle, "as no other man had ever grasped, the need for making the school course such as would Americanize the foreign born, and the children of foreigners. For long years he held his own against politicians of all parties. Perhaps he would have remained in harness till death if he had not been hampered by ill health. Personally kindly, helpful, democratic, Dr. Maxwell had thousands of loyal friends. He was called the Czar of the Educational System, but his despotism was beneficent generally, and always benevolent."

From September 1, 1904, to November 15, 1905, buildings were added or in course of completion which afforded sittings for 147,014 children in the Greater City. The total for the similar period prior to November 15, 1904, was 135,394, or 11,620 less. The large number of buildings put under way was made possible by the allowances of the Board of Estimate for the years 1904 and 1905. In 1904, \$9,350,000 was appropriated, although of that amount, \$850,000 was set aside for structural repairs and for fire escapes. In 1905, \$11,800,000 was allowed for the purchase of property and the erection of buildings. It included \$300,000 for the purchase of athletic fields for the use of school children. The allowances for property in 1902 amounted to \$8,000,000, and in 1903 to \$9,788,430. The total allowances for school property in the four years ending with 1905 were \$38,938,430.

These outlays were responsible for new construction which afforded about 45,300 new sittings in the elementary schools and 7,825 in the high schools. In the school years 1904, 1905 and 1906, school buildings were opened as follows:

	PUPILS
No. 119, Avenue K and 38th Street .....	1,200
No. 142, Henry and Rapelyea Streets .....	1,600
No. 143, Havemeyer, N. 6th and 7th Streets .....	2,400
No. 144, Howard and Prospect Place, and St. Marks Avenue.....	2,400
No. 145, Central Avenue and Noll Street .....	2,400
No. 7, (addn.) Bridge and York Streets .....	100
No. 84, (addn.) Glenmore and Stone Avenue .....	900
No. 47, Pacific and Dean Streets, 3d Avenue ..	1,750

	PUPILS
Manual Training High School, 7th Avenue, between 4th and 5th Streets.....	2,575
No. 84, (addn.) Glenmore and Stone Avenues .....	400
No. 146, 18th and 19th Streets, 6th and 7th Avenues .....	2,500
No. 80, West 17th-Neptune Avenue .....	
No. 112, (addn.) Manhattan Avenue-Conselyea .....	800
No. 130, Ocean Parkway and East 5th Street .....	800
No. 125, Blake Parkway and Thatford Avenue .....	2,000
No. 147, Bushwick Avenue and McKibben Street .....	4,000
No. 103, (addn.) Fourteenth Avenue and 53rd and 54th Streets .....	1,200
No. 110, Monitor Street and Driggs Avenue .....	800
No. 27, Nelson and Hicks Streets .....	250
No. 6, Baltic and Warren Streets .....	1,800
No. 151, Knickerbocker Avenue, Weirfield and Halsey Streets .....	1,800
No. 92, Robinson Street near Rogers Avenue .....	1,350
No. 149, Sutter Avenue, Vermont and Wynona Streets .....	2,500
No. 66, (addn.) Watkins and Osborn Streets .....	2,500
No. 109, Dumont Avenue, between Sackman and Powell Streets .....	2,750
No. 45, (Temp. addn.) DeKalb Avenue, near Classon .....	250
No. 41, (Addn. No. 2) Atlantic and New York Avenues .....	250
No. 54, (Temp. addn.) Walworth Street near Myrtle Avenue .....	200
No. 89, (addn.) Newkirk Avenue and East 31st Street .....	600
No. 55, Evergreen Avenue and Covert Streets .....	1,750
No. 148, Ellery and Hopkins Streets near Delmonico Place .....	2,500
Teachers Training School (addn.) Prospect Place near Nostrand Avenue .....	1,050
Commercial High School, Albany Avenue, Bergen and Dean Streets .....	2,650
Eastern District High School, Marcy Avenue, Rodney and Keap Streets .....	2,000
Erasmus Hall High School .....	600

The net enrollment for 1903-1904 was 212,705 for Brooklyn, and in 1904-1905, it was 228,049, a gain of 15,344, or 7.21 per cent. Allowing the Brooklyn of 1905 a population of 1,358,686, the proportion of those attending school was 16.8. In Manhattan the ratio was 15.2 per cent; in the Bronx, 20 per cent, and in Queens, 19.8 per cent. The principals of Brooklyn schools reported at the end of June, 1905, that 179,799 pupils could be accommodated, while the number of pupils in the register, September 30, 1905, was 194,971, showing a deficiency of 15,172 sittings. In the Boroughs of Manhattan, the Bronx and Richmond, there was a slight excess of sittings over register; yet the shifting population caused overcrowding in all boroughs. In Brooklyn, moreover, there was the largest number of pupils on part time—27,838 on June 30—making it manifest that Brooklyn was more poorly provided than any other borough with school accommodations, and that at a time when by reason of better transit facilities, it was evident that the population of Brooklyn was about to receive large accessions, the increase was not anticipated adequately; sites were not secured; buildings were not erected in sufficient numbers to meet the crisis.

A summary of the expansion of the Brooklyn school system shows:

**School Organizations**—Elementary: 1869, 46; 1879, 106; 1889, 83; 1897, 115; 1900, 120; 1923, 123. High schools: 1879, 1 (known as Central School); 1889, 2; 1897, 4; 1900, 5; 1923, 12. Training schools: 1889-1923, 1.

**Average Register**—Elementary: 1869, 68,906 (enrolled); 1879, 93,693 (enrolled); 1889, 128,901 (enrolled); 1897, 130,443; 1900, 141,416; 1923, 332,433. High: 1879, 880; 1889, 1,627; 1897, data not available; 1900, 5,658; 1923, 38,446. Training: 1897, no data; 1900, 350; 1923, 995.

**Average Attendance**—Elementary: 1869, 32,761; 1879, 52,361; 1889, 72,449; 1897, 113,224; 1900, 124,036; 1923, 316,200. High: 1879, 497; 1889,



1,413; 1897, 3,756; 1900, 5,139; 1923, 35,735. Training: 1897, 183; 1900, 316; 1923, 976.

Teachers—1869, 725; 1879, 1,402; 1889, 1,912; 1897, 3,133; 1900, 4,001; 1923, 11,030.

Expenditures—For instruction and supervision: 1869, \$402,968; 1879, \$779,697; 1889, \$1,413,803; 1897, \$2,490,626; 1900, entire city, \$12,048,911; 1923, entire city, \$24,444,038.

For permanent betterment: 1869, \$317,042; 1879, \$275,266; 1889, \$719,057; 1897, \$585,843; 1900, entire city, \$5,277,596; 1922, entire city, \$13,857,566.

Total expenditures: 1869, \$799,375; 1879, \$1,193,357; 1889, \$2,395,198; 1897, \$3,703,710; 1900, entire city, \$19,868,838; 1922, entire city, \$102,036,355.

Truancy was a vital problem. William H. Maxwell, Superintendent of New York City Schools from 1898, the year of incorporation of the Greater New York, for the succeeding twenty years until 1918, made striking comment upon the unequal methods of enforcing the law in his annual report to the Board of Education for 1908, reviewing incidentally the methods of procedure in the Children's Courts of Manhattan, Brooklyn and Queens Boroughs. He found the manner of disposing of the cases far different in Manhattan from that in Brooklyn, and remarked:

In Manhattan, eighty-nine children were arraigned on a charge of truancy during the year, and seventy were committed when first arraigned. In Brooklyn, 173 children were brought to court on the same charge, and eight were committed on first arraignment. In this court, 165 were paroled, when first brought in, and fifty-two of these proved satisfactory on parole. Fifty-one of the paroled children were finally committed. In Manhattan eleven were placed on probation when first arraigned, and seven of these proved worthy of the confidence placed in them.

In the Brooklyn Children's Court, Justice Wilkin presided half the time covered by our report. The practice of Judge Wilkin is to parole a great majority of the truants and incorrigibles brought before him. He considers each case carefully, gives the juvenile offender much good advice, and offers him an opportunity to attend school again. The practice of Judge Wilkin seems to be adopted by his colleagues in the court. The statistics would indicate that a presumption exists in the Manhattan Children's Court that a great majority of the truant children brought to court by attendance officers should be committed at once, and only a few are placed on probation.

We have found, of course, that a considerable number of well-to-do parents are quite willing to have their children committed to a truant school and supported at public expense. Some of the judges in the Brooklyn Court place many such parents under an order to contribute a weekly sum to the child's support while under commitment. This is never done in the Children's Court of Manhattan. There are many other differences between these two courts in disposing of truants and incorrigibles. Would that the practice might be somewhat uniform, and that we might have a juvenile court in each of the five boroughs.

#### REPORTS FROM ATTENDANCE OFFICERS STATIONED AT CHILDREN'S COURTS

First and Second Divisions, 1907-1908

Truancy Cases	Manhattan Children's Court			Brooklyn Children's Court			Total for Entire City
	Boys	Girls	Total	Boys	Girls	Total	
Number brought to court by attendance officers .....	88	1	89	154	19	173	262
Number committed when first arraigned .....	70	..	70	8	..	8	78
Number paroled when first arraigned .....	11	..	11	146	19	165	176
Total number committed for truancy .....	74	..	74	51	..	51	125
Incorrigibles .....	..	..	..	5	..	5	5
Arraigned as vagrants .....	..	..	..	148	..	148	148
Number brought to Court by parents or others not attendance officers .....	801	145	946	363	78	441	1,387
Number committed when so first arraigned .....	86	22	108	29	14	43	151

Number paroled by court .....	496	60	556	246	44	290	846
Number on satisfactory parole .....	308	42	350	189	16	205	555
Unsatisfactory parole; committed...	70	11	81	57	18	75	156
Total number under 16 arraigned by attendance officers and others on charge of being ungovernable at home or in school .....	1,382	410	1,782	363	78	441	2,203
Total number of such committed by court .....	1,406	297	1,343	86	33	118	1,461

The Brooklyn Truant School had many difficulties in getting a competent, adequate force of employees. The men chosen from the Municipal Civil Service lists did not prove competent or satisfactory and resort was had to newspaper advertisements. Although positive instructions were given forbidding physical punishment in maintaining discipline, yet some of the employees were unable to keep their hands off the boys. The boys sent to the Truant School had been found to be incorrigible at home, and in schools where they had been sent. To train, control and direct their energies and activities properly required skill, tact and patience, as well as a wise appreciation of boy nature. One instance of brutal conduct was so flagrant, the employee was discharged. Other incompetent or unfit men who were released spread false reports about the cruelties and mismanagement of the school.

The Bushwick Evening Trade School was opened in the 1913-1914 season, with Charles B. Howe as principal.

The vast plant was adequate in quality if not in quantity before William H. Maxwell became superintendent *emeritus* in 1918. Attention was turned to developing highly specialized courses in art and manual training and in every way to fit the pupil for the struggle of life, bringing the school ever in closer touch with the realities of life. The next step was the study of the pupil's capacity with a view to developing him or her to the best advantage. High school principals were requested during the school year of 1918-1919, to have their several heads of departments make a careful study of the causes of failure in first term classes, and to make suggestions for the reduction in the number of failures in the work of this class of pupils. In this Brooklyn was in the forefront and Dr. J. Carleton Bell, of the Brooklyn Training School for Teachers, expressed well the purpose of standard tests in these words:

More important than class diagnosis is the determination of the abilities and deficiencies of individual pupils. Here the use of standard tests serves as a guide to that individualization of instruction which is so devoutly to be wished, but so seldom attained. Just as the physician by clinical tests diagnoses the ailment of his patient and plans his treatment accordingly, so the teacher should diagnose her pupils, and plan her school work according to their needs. When such individual diagnosis and treatment is systematically carried out in our schools the efficiency of instruction will be increased by from fifty to one hundred per cent, and the strain on the teacher will be reduced by half.

**Women's Salaries**—The year 1916-1917 is memorable for an agitation carried on by the women teachers in elementary schools and high schools to secure legislation making it mandatory upon the Board of Education to pay the same salaries to women as are paid to men. When consolidation took place in 1898, three city school systems, almost a score of village school systems and almost a hundred rural school districts were brought together into one system. There was a different method of paying the teachers found in each of the component parts of the school system. The method of raising money for the support of schools under the new charter was such that the distribution of funds for the payment of teachers' salaries among the various local organizations, resulted as



many of them believed, in great injustice. The Department, however, struggled along for three or four years under great financial difficulties which caused constant irritation and agitation and worked untold injury to the system. These difficulties reached a climax in 1899-1900, when for months no salaries were paid to teachers in Queens and Richmond, when the salaries of many teachers were reduced arbitrarily in order that the salaries of other teachers, specially favored in the Ahearn Law, should be increased. So great was the unrest and so difficult did it seem to overcome the difficulties occasioned by the smallness of the appropriation and the rivalries of borough school boards that a comprehensive measure was introduced in the Legislature by Senator Davis to regulate the entire subject of teachers' salaries in New York City. Senator Davis's bill provided that a tax of four mills on assessed valuation of real and personal property in the city should be levied for the purposes of the General School Fund from which teachers' salaries are paid, and that minimum salaries should be fixed for the several classes of teachers. The schedules provided by the Davis law were unfortunately drawn up by a legislative committee after conference only with representatives of different teachers' organizations, and without reference to a harmonious underlying scheme or plan. While the salary schedules provided for minimum uniform salaries for each grade of teacher throughout the city, they were modeled chiefly upon the schedules that had prevailed in the old City of New York, and thus they were made to provide appreciably higher salaries for men teachers than for women teachers. While the Davis law was ambiguous and unjust to women in many respects, it put an end to an almost intolerable condition with regard to teachers' salaries and was regarded as of great advantage to the schools. It was inevitable, however, that sooner or later the women would revolt against the discrimination in favor of the men. After much discussion, Senator White, of Syracuse, afterward Governor, introduced a bill on their behalf which provided: 1. That the educational tax of four mills established by the Davis law (afterward reduced to three mills) should be restored; 2. That the principle of "equal pay for equal work" should be established by law; and 3. That any officer or teacher who exercises supervisory duties over other teachers, must receive a salary higher than any teacher supervised. This bill was passed by both houses of the Legislature, was vetoed by Mayor McClellan, and then repassed by the Legislature over the Mayor's veto, and was finally vetoed by Governor Hughes.

The "equal pay" salary law which enacted into law certain schedules approved by the Board of Education in May, 1911, went into effect on January 1, 1912. In general terms the more important provisions of these schedules may be summarized:

1. The salaries of men teachers and women teachers were equalized. In elementary schools the equalization was brought about by lowering the salaries formerly paid to men teachers by about twenty per cent, and raising the salaries formerly paid to women teachers by about twenty-five per cent. In high schools the salaries of men teachers were raised about ten per cent and the salaries of women teachers were raised to the same level by an increase of about forty per cent.

2. Two schedules of salary were provided for grade teachers in elementary schools. The lower, for teachers teaching kindergarten and grades from one to six inclusive, ran from \$720 per annum in the first year to \$1,500 in the sixteenth year. The higher, for teachers in grades seven and eight, ran from \$860 per annum in the fourth year to \$1,820 in the sixteenth year, three years prior experience being required for admission to the schedule.

3. Advancement in salary in the elementary school schedules was made dependent upon the teacher's receiving a declaration from the Board of Superintendents of the third, sixth, ninth, twelfth and fifteenth years that her service is "fit and meritorious."

4. Two schedules of salary were provided for teachers in high schools. The schedule for "assistant" teachers ran from \$900 in the first year to \$2,650 in the thirteenth year. The schedule for first assistant teachers (heads of department) ran from \$1,680 to \$3,150 in eight years.

5. Teachers advanced in salary in the high schools year by year, provided they received a declaration from the Board of Superintendents that their service at the sixth year is "fit and meritorious"; and a declaration of "superior merit" from the Board of Examiners for the ninth and twelfth years.

6. The salaries of teachers in training schools and the conditions as to their advancement in salary were the same as those for teachers in high schools, except that the salaries of training school teachers were made \$100 higher per annum at all points.

7. The salaries of women principals of elementary schools were raised in equality with the salaries paid to men principals; that is, to a maximum salary of \$3,500 per annum, provided they received a declaration each year from the Board of Superintendents that their service was "fit and meritorious."

The last general salary legislation went into effect August 1, 1920, when the Lockwood-Donohue law came into force. A teacher appointed to a supervisory or teaching position, who previously had taught in a lower position, was placed in the schedule for the higher position at the salary next above that to which such teacher would be entitled in the lower position. A member of the supervising and teaching staff receives salary and increment provided in the schedule for the year which corresponds to his year of service in such schedules, unless his services for the year immediately preceding have been declared by a majority vote of the Board of Superintendents to be unsatisfactory, after opportunity to be heard.





---

---

HISTORICAL INDEX

---

---





# HISTORICAL INDEX

## A

Abbate, Paola S. Congregational Italian preacher: 1334.  
 Abbott, Dr. Lyman: 1316-17.  
 Academy of Music: 1384-95; political gatherings at, 1388-90; proposed new academy, 1390; old building sold, 1391; cornerstone for new building laid, 1393; burned, 1176-80.  
 Achtervelt, first plantation: 52.  
 Ackerly, Orville B.: 9.  
 Adelphi Academy: 1365-67.  
 Adelphi College: 1363-65.  
 Aetsen, Huyck, early settler: 52.  
 African Methodist Episcopal: Southold, 700; Sag Harbor, 746; Huntington, 826; Bayshore, 838; Freeport, 892; Queensborough, 1063; Brooklyn, 1210, 1259-60.  
 African M. E. Zion Church, Brooklyn: 1210.  
 Albany Convention (1754): 176.  
 Albion Knights: 74.  
 Alexander, Gen. William (Earl of Stirling) in Revolution: 182, 194.  
 Allen, Henry, early settler: 913.  
 Amagansett Village: World War Record, 513-14; honor roll, 533-34.  
 American Bible Society: 239.  
 American Legion: Lynbrook Post, 871; Westbury, 903; Great Neck, 914; Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Jamaica, 980.  
 American Trust Company: 1615-16.  
 Amityville: 829-31; World War Record, 514-21, 831; Red Cross, 518; Liberty Loans, 518; Honor Roll, 519-20; Sanitarium, 830; Banks, 830, 361-62.  
 Andros, Major Edmund: 121-24, 129; Governor of all British subjects, 131; Imprisoned at Boston, 131.  
 Apprentices' Library Building, 1395, 1396-97.  
 Armstrong, J. C., Gen. Sec. Y. M. C. A., Brooklyn and Queens: 322.  
 Arverne: 1013.  
 Assembly, Popular, of New Netherland: 68, 105-106; representation at (1664), 106; at Hempstead (1665), 110, 112; re-established by James (1683), 125-26, 128; first Continental Congress, 141.  
 Astoria (Hallett's Neck): 227.  
 Atkins, Charles B., Director Department of Education: 1395.  
 Atlantic Yacht Club, The: 1489-96.

## B

Babylon: 832-36; Early Settlers, 832; The Old Mill, 833; Ferry, 835; Noted Visitors, 835; Memorial Park, 836.  
 Bailis, Elias: 167; On Committee of Correspondence (1774).  
 Baker, Thomas, Easthampton: 111, 751.  
 Baldwin, William H., President Long Island Railroad: 5.

Banks of Long Island: 361-64.  
 State, 361-62, 363; National, 362, 363; Trust Companies, 362-363; Savings, 363, 364; Nassau County, 934-35; Queensborough, 1035, 1038, 1065; Brooklyn, 1612-24.  
 Baptist Church: Southold, 700; Sag Harbor, 746; Port Jefferson, 814, 818; Huntington, 824; Babylon, 834; Freeport, 891; Port Washington, 902; Oyster Bay, 924; Hempstead, 930; Jamaica, 974-75; Ridgewood, 984; Queensborough, 1063; Williamsburgh, 1111; Brooklyn, 1209, 1291-1306; First Church, 1291-93; Pierrepont Street Church, 1293-97; Sunday Schools, 1297; Strong Place, 1299-1301; Emmanuel, 1301-03; Marcy Avenue, 1303-05; Greene Avenue, 1305-06; Long Island Baptist Association, 1306.  
 Bar, Bench and, Kings Co.: 1575-1582.  
 Barkeloo, Jacques, first settler, New Utrecht: 1094.  
 Barnard, Rev. Mr., first Jewish minister and teacher in Brooklyn: 1120.  
 Barnes, Joshua, East Hampton: 749, 750.  
 Barsonson, Jacob, first Jewish settler in New Amsterdam: 1117.  
 Barton, Roger, Brookhaven delegate (1665): 110.  
 Bath Beach: 1086-90; prominent residents: 1090.  
 Baxter, Ensign George, magistrate: 83, 86, 91.  
 Bayard, Nicholas, councillor: 131, 133, 137, 143, 150, 164.  
 Baylis (Bailey) Capt. Ephraim, on Committee of Correspondence (1774): 167.  
 Bay Ridge (Yellow Hook): 1092, 1097-1100; Welcome home troops from Cuba, 298; yellow fever epidemic, 1097; historic houses, 1098; library, 1100.  
 Bay Shore: 836-38; World War Record, 521-23; Summer visitors, 838; Banks, 838, 362.  
 Bayside: 993-94; Masonic Lodge of, 995-97; Population, 1036.  
 Bayville: 922; World War Record, 523-24.  
 Bedford residences, the, Brooklyn: 1193.  
 Beebe, Thomas, Home Guard (1812): 781.  
 Beecher, Henry Ward: 1190, 1193, 1245, 1247, 1264, 1297, 1306-15.  
 Beechhurst: 991, 1036.  
 Beekman, Capt. Gerardus: 140, 151, 1418.  
 Bellmont, Earl of; Governor of New York: 152, 153, 160, 162-63.  
 Bench and Bar, Kings County: 1575-1582.  
 Benedict, Thomas, Jamaica delegate (1665): 110.  
 Bennett, Adrianse, early settler: 52.  
 Bennett, George C., founder Brooklyn Daily Times: 1414.  
 Bennett, George I, physician: 1434.  
 Bennett, John, early settler: 1095.  
 Bennet Homestead, The Martin, New Utrecht: 1094.



- Benson, Arthur, buys land at Montauk: 773.  
 Benson, Egbert, early landowner: 1087, 1088.  
 Bensonhurst, prominent residents: 1086-1090.  
 Bentzen, Jacques, early settler: 52.  
 Bergen, Hans Hansen, early settler: 1095.  
 Bergen, Teunis G., Congressman (1864): 1150.  
 Betts, Capt. Richard: 110, 167; family burial place: 246-47.  
 Bishop, Nathaniel, East Hampton: 751.  
 Blackwell, Col. Jacob: 167, 168, 169, 1104.  
 Bliss, Nezhiah, of Greenpoint: 1107.  
 Bloodgood, Francis, Schepen of Flushing (1764): 120.  
 Bloodgood Nurseries: 985.  
 Bloomer, Rev. Dr. Joshua: 238.  
 Blue Book (1847) "The Wealthy Men and Women of Brooklyn and Williamsburg": 1193-1208.  
 Boerum, Henry, one of Brooklyn's founders: 1150.  
 Boerum, Lieut. William, Brooklyn Cavalry: 185.  
 Boerum, William, one of Brooklyn's first firemen: 1155.  
 Bogardus, Annetke Jans: 122; Dominic: 941.  
 Bolton, William Jay, makes windows for Holy Trinity Church, Brooklyn: 1242-43.  
 Bonaparte, Joseph, visits Babylon: 835.  
 Bond, Robert, Easthampton: 749, 750.  
 Boody, David Augustus, Mayor Brooklyn: 1530-32.  
 Booth, John, Mattituck: 709.  
 Borough Park, Y. M. H. A. and Y. W. H. A.: 1138-39.  
 Botanic Garden, Brooklyn: 1401-03.  
 Bout, Jan Evertsen, early settler: 52.  
 Boundary trouble: 83, 92, 103, 109.  
 Bowen, Henry C., merchant and publisher: 1153.  
 Bowne, John, first Treasurer Queens Co.: 110, 985, 939.  
 Boyd, Samuel, physician: 1435.  
 Boys of Brooklyn, neighborhood fights (1858): 287-88.  
 Brady, Cyrus Townsend, author: 1383.  
 Bragaw, William, Richard and Andrew, early landowners: 943; house, 946.  
 Breed, Allen, pioneer settler: 785.  
 Bridges: 1657-63; Brooklyn, 1589, 1590, 1658; Williamsburgh, 1590, 1658-60; Manhattan, 1590, 1660, 1662; Queensboro, 1590, 1660-61; Hell Gate, 1661.  
 Briggs, Capt. Jeremiah, Richmond Hill: 998.  
 Brightwaters: 838.  
 Bridgehampton: 845-46; In Revolution, 226; World War Record, 524-28.  
 Brinckerhoff, George, early landowner: 943.  
 Brintnell, Richard, early settler: 947.  
 Brockholls (Brockholst) Anthony, second to Governor Andros: 122.  
 Brookhaven: 110, 113, 118, 809-13; In Revolution, 226, 811; Early Trustees, 809; Church, 810; Population, 811; Villages, 812.  
 Brooklyn: 50, 53, 110, 113, 118, 128, 137, 182; Seal of, 50; first settlement in, 52; Battle of, 54, 168, 187-95; annual fair established, 123; In Revolutionary War, 181, 208-11, 1183; monuments to dead from prison ships, 229-31; churches, 248-49, 254-69, 1208-1347, 1397; Church Charity Foundation of Long Island, 251-54; Civil War, 278-90; Sanitary Fair, 286-87; Monitor built at, 288; In Spanish-American War, 291; Y. M. C. A. of, 305-27; Population, 305, 360, 1589, 1597; New York Navy Yard, 333-46, 1590; Banks of, 364; Postoffice at, 367, 369; Rapid transit and crosstown subway, 369; Chapter American Red Cross, 664-71; Naval Base Hospital Unit No. 1, 671-73; Famous Ace of, 683-88; New Utrecht, 1091-1102; Water Supply, 1101; Assessed Valuation, 1112; Williamsburgh and Bushwick consolidated with, 1112; East New York annexed to, 1115; Jews of, 1116-42; Famous Founders of, 1146-54; Fires and Fire-fighters of, 1155-80; The Great Fire, 1166-69; Academy of Music destroyed, 1176-80; Rambles in Old Brooklyn, 1181; Fulton Avenue Burial Ground, 1181; In War of 1812, 1182, 1667; Expenses of (1831), 1182; Colonnade Garden and other early resorts, 1184; Restaurants, 1185-86; Famous Old House Rows, 1185, 1186-88; Tillary Street, 1188; Race Course, 1189; Fort Greene Park, 1189; Otero murdered, 1189; Clinton Avenue, 1191-93; Blue Book (1847), 1193; First preacher in, 1209; City Mission, 1347-50; Greenwood Cemetery, 1351-54; Educational, 1354-73, 1395, 1588; Literary, 1374-84; Academy of Music, 1384-95; Museum, 1398-1401; Botanic Garden, 1401; Children's Museum, 1403-04; Public Library, 1404-08; Pratt Institute Library, 1408-09; Newspapers, 1410-18; Medical Society of Kings County, 1418-41; First Doctor in, 1418; Health Officer of, 1420; Famous physicians of, 1429; Brooklyn State Hospital, 1441-46; Brooklyn Hospital, 1446-50; Long Island College Hospital, 1450-57; College of Medicine, 1457-59; Methodist Hospital, 1460-66; Kings County Hospital, 1466-67; Cancer Research Hospital, 1467-68; Carson C. Peck Memorial Hospital, 1468-70; Dentistry in, 1470-73; Y. W. C. A. of, 1474-77; Clubs, 1477-99; Societies, 1499-1511; First Mayor of, 1511; Building City Hall, 1514-16; Mayors of, 1516-17, 1520-32; Court House, 1517-20; Borough Presidents, 1557-74; Sewer System, 1560-62, 1563, 1568; Gowanus Canal flushed, 1563; Interior Public Baths, 1563; Jamaica Bay Improvement, 1031-34, 1569; Children's Court House, 1569; Great Building activities, 1570; Widening of streets, 1573-74; Park sites, 1573; Revenues, 1574; Early mills and rope walks in, 1585; Census of Industries, 1586-87; Greatest summer resort city, 1588; Real Estate values, 1589-92; Miles of streets and boulevard, 1588; Chronology of the growth of, 1589-91; Knitwear industry, 1592-95; Sperry Gyroscope Company, 1595-97; Concerns receiving certificates of merit, 1598-1601; Mortgage total, 1601-02; Chamber of Commerce, 1602-09; The Telephone in, 1609-12; Banking in, 1612-24; Park System, 1625-26; Ferries, 1640-47; Horse racing, 1647-57; Defences rushed up in War of 1812, 1668; bridges, 1657-63.  
 Brooklyn Bridge: 1589-90, 1658.



Brooklyn Brigade, The Spanish-American War: 291.  
 Brooklyn Citizen, The: 1415-17.  
 Brooklyn Club, The: 1477-80.  
 Brooklyn Daily Times, The: 1414-15.  
 Brooklyn Federation of Jewish Charities: 1126.  
 Brooklyn Hebrew Orphan Asylum: 1131-35.  
 Brooklyn Hospital: 1446-50.  
 Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences: 1395, 1397, 1398-1404.  
 Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad: 386.  
 Brooklyn Law School: 1368-72.  
 Brooklyn Rapid Transit: 369-79; tunneling and subway, 370; dual system negotiations, 371-73; costs of construction, 374-75; track mileage, 375; crosstown subway stations, 379.  
 Brooklyn State Hospital: 1441-46.  
 Brooklyn Theatre Fire, and funeral of victims: 1166-69.  
 Brooklyn Trust Company: 1613-14.  
 Brown, Roscoe C. E., on Holy Trinity Church, Brooklyn: 1238.  
 Brownsville: 1142-46; Churches of, 1145.  
 Bruijkleen Colonie (Brooklane): 50.  
 Bryant, William Cullen, poet: 915.  
 Building Statistics of Long Island: 353-57.  
 Bullis, H. Edmund, writer: 1585, 1595.  
 Burge, John Henry Hobart, physician: 1437.  
 Burnet, William, Governor of N. Y.: 172.  
 Burns Coffee House, N. Y., early postoffice: 365.  
 Buryea, Francis, early landowner: 943.  
 Bushwick: 110, 112, 113, 118, 183, 1102, 1103, 1108-09; first settlers, 1103-04, 1109; in Revolutionary War, 1109; Population, 1110, 1111, 1112; consolidated with Brooklyn, 1112.

## C

Cabot, John, Discoverer of North America: 54.  
 Camp Black, Hempstead Plains, Spanish-American War: 290, 863.  
 Cancer Research Hospital, The: 1467-68.  
 Carleton, Will, farm ballads: 1383.  
 Carman, Col. Samuel, merchant: 855, 1147.  
 Carman, Stephen, State Assembly: 855.  
 Carman, John, established settlement: 857, 858.  
 Carman, Thomas, early mill owner: 829.  
 Carpenter, John, physician: 1430.  
 Carpenter, Joseph, Glen Cove: 916-17.  
 Cathedral College of the Immaculate Conception: 1372-73.  
 Cathedral of the Incarnation: 249-51, 867.  
 Catholic Church, The Roman, of Long Island: 254-69; Survey of in 1912, 261; For Italians, 256, 258; For Syrians, 257; For Polish, 257; German, 258; Spanish, 265; In the World War, 265; Holy Name Societies, 265-66; Schools and Colleges, 267; Organizations charitable and benevolent, 267-69; Of Brooklyn, 254-69; Good Ground, 256; Coney Island, 256-57; Port Washington, 257; Garden City, 257; Jamaica, 257; In the smaller communities, 261-62; Southold, 700; Shelter Island, 725; Sag Harbor, 746; Southampton, 790; Smithtown, 808; Huntington, 824; Lindenhurst, 832; Babylon, 834; Bayshore, 838; Lynbrook, 870; Rockville Centre, 876-77; Freeport, 891; Plandome, 901; Manhasset, 902; Port Washington, 902; Sea Cliff, 916; Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Jamaica, 975; Ridgewood, 984; Forest Hills, 1009; Queensborough, 1063; Greenpoint, 1108; Williamsburgh, 1111; Brooklyn, 1211.  
 Cattnach, Dr. James: 7.  
 Certificates of Recognition, list of concerns receiving: 1598-1601.  
 Chamber of Commerce, Brooklyn: 1602-09.  
 Chase, Walter Benajah, physician: 1439.  
 Chauncey, Leeds Mitchell, physician: 1433.  
 Chatfield, Thomas, East Hampton: 751.  
 Children's Museum, Brooklyn Institute: 1403-04.  
 Chittenden, S. B., President Board Academy of Music: 1384.  
 Christian Church, Brooklyn: 1209.  
 Christian Science Church of L. I.: 269-71; Huntington, 826; Bayshore, 838; Lynbrook, 870; Sea Cliff, 916; Forest Hills, 1009; Queensborough, 1063; Brooklyn, 1209.  
 Church Charity Foundation of L. I.: 251-54.  
 Church-in-the-Gardens, Forest Hills: 1009.  
 Church of the Nazarene, Queensborough: 1063; Brooklyn, 1210.  
 Churches, Religious Liberty of Colonies: 129; Protestant and Catholic disturbances, 132-38; Episcopal of L. I., 233-54; Presbyterian, 234, 722; Catholic, 254-69; Christian Science, 269-71; First at Southold, 694; First in Shelter Island, 723; Riverhead, 727, 728; Sag Harbor, 745-46; Southampton, 790; Smithtown, 808; Port Jefferson, 814; Huntington, 824, 826; Amityville, 830; Lindenhurst, 832; Babylon, 834; Bayshore, 838; Islip, 840; Sayville, 840; Bridgehampton, 845-46; Hempstead, 857; Garden City, 867; Lynbrook, 869; East Rockaway, 872; Malverne, 874; Rockville Centre, 875, 877; Oceanside, 879-80; Freeport, 890-92; Plandome, 901; Manhasset, 902; Port Washington, 902; Westbury, 903; Great Neck, 913; Sea Cliff, 916; Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Nassau Co., 934; Jamaica, 960-76; Ridgewood, 984; Whitestone, 992; Forest Hills, 1009; Statistics, Queensborough, 1063-64; Fort Hamilton, 1100; Unionville, 1100; Greenpoint, 1107-08; Williamsburgh, 1111; New Lots, 1142; Brownsville, 1145; Brooklyn, 1208-1347, 1629-39.  
 Civil War: 278-90; Brooklyn in, 278-88; Brooklyn Organizations in, 279-86; Monitor and Merrimac, 288-90.  
 Clark, James, first doctor in Queens Co.: 941.  
 Clinton Academy: 771.  
 Clinton, De Witt, Governor: 941.  
 Clinton, George, Governor N. Y.: 175-77.  
 Cocheu, Mr. and Mrs. Fred C., care for convalescents from Camp Wikoff: 299.  
 Coe, John, Newtown delegate (1665): 105, 110.  
 Cold Spring Harbor: 826-27; World War Record, 528.  
 Colden, Cadwallader, Governor Jamaica: 168.  
 Coler, Bird S., President Brooklyn Borough: 1564-66.



College of Medicine, The: 1457-59.  
 College Point: 1027, 1036.  
 Colonies, Union of Proposed: 176.  
 Colonnade Garden, The: 1184.  
 Colve, Anthony, Governor of New Netherlands: 118-21.  
 Commerce, Trade and: 1582.  
 Companies of Brooklyn Men, in Civil War: 284-86.  
 Coney Island: 1069-86; Church, 256; Hotels of, 1071, 1083; Transportation, 1072; 1073-74, 1083; Steeplechase Park, 1075-78; Luna Park, 1078-80; Dreamland Fire, 1080-81; Reiglemann Boardwalk, The, 1081; Valuation, 1082.  
 Congregational Church: Southold, 700; Riverhead, 727; Huntington, 824; Queensborough, 1063; Williamsburgh, 1111; Brooklyn, 1209, 1306-34; Plymouth Church, 1306-20; Henry Ward Beecher, 1306-15; Dr. Lyman Abbott, 1316-17; Dr. Newell Dwight Hillis, 1317-20; Of the Pilgrims, 1321-26; Rev. Richard Salter Storrs, 1321-26; Central, 1326-34.  
 Conklin, Col. Platt, 829, 833.  
 Conklin, Longhouse John: 714.  
 Conklin, Capt. Edward: 783.  
 Conkling, The Family of, East Hampton: 751-756.  
 Conkling, Capt. Edward, in capture of Ranger (1777): 783.  
 Conkling, John Terry, physician: 1436.  
 Continental Congress, The First: 141.  
 Cook, Capt. Joel, in Revolution and 1812: 834.  
 Cook, John W., Gen. Sec. Y. M. C. A., Brooklyn and Queens: 317, 322.  
 Cook, Purcell, physician: 1432.  
 Corbin, Austin, President L. I. Railroad Co.: 404, 408-09.  
 Cornbury, Lord, Governor of N. Y.: 163-66.  
 Cornell, Whitehead, landowner: 1147.  
 Cornhill (Cornell) Richard, delegate (1665): 110, 1011.  
 Cornielsen, Pieter, early settler: 52.  
 Corona: 1036.  
 Cortelyou, Jacques, early settler: 63, 110, 1092.  
 Cosby, Col. William, Governor N. Y.: 173-74.  
 Courts: 110, 111; Town, County, Oyer and Terminer and Chancery (Supreme) of Province, 127; Supreme of N. Y. (1691), 146.  
 Cowenhoven, Judge Nicholas, 1087; Representative (1775), 168, 169.  
 Crawley, John, one of first firemen of Brooklyn: 1155.  
 Creed, William D., physician: 1431.  
 Croke, Gen. Philip S., attorney: 1579.  
 Cross-Bay Boulevard: 1016.  
 Crosstown Subway, Brooklyn and Queens: 379.  
 Cuffee, Rev. Paul, Indian Preacher: 803.  
 Culin, Mr., of the Brooklyn Museum: 1400.  
 Cullen, Edgar M., attorney: 1582.  
 Cullen, Henry James, physician: 1433.  
 Culver, Andrew R., brings railroad to Coney Island: 1072.  
 Curtiss Field: 864.  
 Cutchogue (Kachauge): 227.  
 Cypress Hills (New Lotts): 1143.

## D

Dana, Charles Anderson, journalist: 919-21.  
 Davenport, Rev. John, Southold: 699.  
 Davids, Charles A., historian: 996.  
 Davis, C. A., on the "Peats of L. I." and Salt Marsh Plants: 33-34.  
 Davis, Fulk, East Hampton: 751.  
 Davison, Henry Pomeroy, 905-13.  
 Daytons, Ralph, Robert and Samuel, East Hampton: 751.  
 Debevoise, John, early landowner: 943.  
 Declaration of Rights, by Nine Colonies: 179.  
 De Forest, Jesse, Walloon Leader: 47.  
 De Lancey, James, Governor of N. Y.: 177.  
 Dentistry in Brooklyn: 1470-73.  
 Denton, Daniel: 110, 957; Justice (1665), 111; History Long Island (1670), 113, 736, 853.  
 Denton, Rev. Richard, religious leader: 138, 858.  
 Denton Homestead: 872.  
 Department of Education: 1395.  
 Dering Harbor Village, World War Record: 529.  
 Dering, Henry Packer, Sag Harbor: 737, 742, 781.  
 Dering, Thomas, Shelter Island, representative (1775): 169, 724.  
 Dikeman, John, attorney and judge: 1577, 1580.  
 Disciples of Christ Church: Queensborough, 1063; Brooklyn, 1209.  
 Dime Savings Bank of Brooklyn, The: 1622-23.  
 Dircksen, Cornelius, ferryman: 1640.  
 Dircksen, Joris, early settler: 52.  
 Doctors, early of Suffolk Co.: 847-49.  
 Dominy Family, Easthampton: 751, 839.  
 Dongan, Thomas, Governor of N. Y.: 125, 129, 139.  
 Doughty, Elias, minister and delegate (1665): 72, 78, 110, 941, 942.  
 Douglaston: 994, 1036.  
 Douglas, George, of Douglaston: 994.  
 Dowd's Island: 1150.  
 Du Bois, Francis, physician: 1431.  
 Dudley, Joseph, Chief Justice (1691): 146, 150.  
 Duke of York's Government: 109; Duke of York's Colony, 113-14.  
 Dutch Church, The Old (1663): 245; Brooklyn, 1181, 1214.  
 Dutch Colonists, The Settlement of: 45; Dispute ownership of L. I., 59-63, 103; Customs of, 63; Village Communities of the Hudson, 66; Fight with Indians, 71-74, 75, 76, 97-99; Taxed by Kieft, 76; Dutch and English War, 84, 89-90; Dutch and English on L. I. dispute boundary, 83, 92.  
 Dutch and English War: 112-113, 116-120.  
 Dutch War of Independence: 64.  
 Dutch West India Company: 57, 61, 76, 77, 79, 83, 84, 101, 104.  
 Dwyer Brothers, The, turf men: 1647-52.

## E

Eagle, The: 1410-14.  
 Earle, Alice Morse, author: 1383.  
 East Brooklyn Savings Bank, The: 1623-24.  
 East Islip: 840.

- East Marion (Rocky Point): 227.  
 East New York: 1113-16; Early History, 1113; Laid out, 1113, 1114; Annexed to Brooklyn, 1115; Soldiers riot (1863), 1115.  
 East New York Savings Bank: 1621-22.  
 East Rockaway: 871-73; Population: 853.  
 East Hampton (Maidstone): 111, 113, 118, 121, 122, 128; First Preacher in, 115; In Revolutionary War, 211, 226; World War Record, 529-36, 571; World War Honor Roll, 534-36; Deed from Indians, 748-49; Early Settlers of, 749-52; Colony saved from Indians, 753; Lands divided, 755; Lands under water granted, 757; Oyster bottoms taxed, bounds of, 757-59; Witchcraft, 761; Shipbuilding, 762; Customs House Records, 763-64; Origin of Names, 764-67; Northwest, 767-69; Wharves, 769-70; Slave traffic, 771-72; Stage and mail route, 772; Dates and anniversaries, 773-75; In War of 1812, 779-84; Home Guard, 781.  
 Eastport Village: 801.  
 Eckford, Henry, shipbuilder: 862.  
 Edgmere: 1013.  
 Eight Men, The, chosen by people: 72, 77.  
 Elbertsen, Elbert, Flatlands, delegate (1665): 110.  
 Elks, Benevolent, Protective Order of: Freeport, 898-99; Brooklyn, 1508-10.  
 Elmhurst: 1034, 1036; Churches, 233.  
 Embury, Philip, first Methodist preacher in America: 1254.  
 Emery, Zachary Taylor, physician: 1439.  
 Emory, General William H.: 284.  
 English send expedition against New Netherland: 89-90.  
 English Colonists dispute ownership of L. I.: 59-63, 103.  
 English and Dutch War: 84, 89-90.  
 English and Dutch on L. I. dispute boundary: 83, 92.  
 English on Long Island: 75, 79, 100.  
 Enos, De Witt Clinton, physician: 1435.  
 Episcopal Church (or Church of England): Trinity Church of N. Y. founded, 151; Of Jamaica, 233-47; Southold, 700; Shelter Island, 723; Sag Harbor, 746; Smithtown, 808; Huntington, 824; Babylon, 834; Bayshore, 838; Hempstead, 247, 855, 864; Garden City, 249-50, 867; Lynbrook, 870; Freeport, 891; Plandome, 901; Manhasset, 902; Port Washington, 902; Sea Cliff, 916; Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Ridgewood, 984; Forest Hills, 1009; Queensborough, 1063; Williamsburgh, 1111; Brooklyn, 248-49, 1210, 1227-53; St. Ann's, 1227-31; St. John's, 1232-33; St. Mary's, 1233-38; Holy Trinity, 1238-52; Christ Church, Bay Ridge, 1252-53.  
 Erasmus Hall Academy: 1354-60.  
 Evangelical Church, Queensborough: 1063; Brooklyn, 1209.  
 Evertsen, John, Brooklyn, delegate (1665): 110.
- F**
- Fairs: 123; County at Mineola, 925; First in country at Queens (1693), 942.  
 Far Rockaway—See The Rockaways.  
 Farmers' Club of Southold: 702, 787.  
 Farmingdale Village, population: 853.  
 Farrington, Edward, pioneer settler: 785.  
 Farrington, Thomas, early settler: 78, 96.  
 Feltman, Charles, pioneer of Coney Island: 1072.  
 Ferries: 1640-47; Greenport, 715; Babylon, 835; New Utrecht, 1093; Greenpoint, 1107; Het Veer, 1637; Regulations and Fees (1654), 1641; Waldron's, 1644; First steam, 1644-46; Fulton, 1645.  
 Field, Cyrus W.: 1018.  
 Fire Island: 839.  
 Fires and fire fighters of Brooklyn: 1155-80; The great Brooklyn fire, 1158-59; Contest of engines at Albany, 1163; Brooklyn Theatre fire, 1166-69; Southern Station power house fire, 1172-73; Academy of Music destroyed, 1176-80.  
 First Happenings: First settlement on Long Island, 50; First ferry, 50; First grant recorded in Kings County, 51; First plantation, 52; First white child born on Long Island, 52; First Popular Assembly of New Netherlands, 68; First High Sheriff of Yorkshire, 111; First Continental Congress (1690), 141; First printing press, N. Y., 151; First History of N. Y. in English, 175; First railroad in world, 385; First railroad in U. S., 385; First English Settlement on L. I., 693; First newspaper on L. I., 736; First child born of English parents in N. Y. State, 775; First nurseries in country, 985; First physician of Brooklyn, 1418.  
 Fisher's Island: 127.  
 Fish, Colonel, military aide to Washington: 1147.  
 Fithian, William, East Hampton: 751.  
 Flatbush: 52, 53, 110, 113, 137; In Revolutionary War, 188; Church of, 1224-26.  
 Flatlands: 52, 53, 110, 113, 118, 1209, 1212; (Amersfoort), first settlement; In Revolutionary War, 189; Churches, 1226-27.  
 Fleet, Capt. Thomas, early settler: 833.  
 Fleming, James Watt, physician: 1440.  
 Fletcher, Col. Benjamin, Governor of N. Y.: 150-62; Large land grants to friends, 163.  
 Flint, Charles R., yachtsman: 1493.  
 Flour, bolting of (1694): 151.  
 Floyd, Richard, early settler: 810, 813.  
 Flushing: 78, 104, 110, 113, 116, 128, 137, 167, 985-90; In Revolutionary War, 195; Church, 233, 236; First charter, 941; Driving Club, 985; Race Track, 986-87; Channel deepening discussion, 988-90; Building activity, 1035; School, 1035; Hospital, 1051, 1052; Population, 1036.  
 Flushing and North Side Railroads, The: 394-96, 402, 408.  
 Ford, Gordon L., publisher: 1153.  
 Fordham, Rev. Robert, established settlement: 75, 856, 858.  
 Fordham Family, The, Sag Harbor: 736-37.  
 Forest Hills: 1001, 1006-11; Russell Sage Foundation, officers and directors (1923-24), 1010; Bank, 1010, 364; Population, 1036.  
 Form of the Island: 12-21; Below sea level, 21; The great sound valley, 21; Cretaceous, 22; Submarine channel system, 25-29; Beaches, 29-31; Subsidence of the land, 32-36.



- Forrester, Andrew, representative of Lord Stirling's widow: 81.  
 Fort Hamilton: 1092, 1100; St. John's Church, 1100.  
 Fosse, Younger, New Utrecht, delegate (1665): 110.  
 Foster, John, Sag Harbor: 168, 169, 226, 737.  
 Foster, Thomas and Christopher, early landowners: 863.  
 Foster's Meadow: 863.  
 Fowler, George Ryerson, physician: 1438.  
 Fox, George, preached at Shelter Island: 719, 721.  
 Fraternal Orders: Riverhead, 732; Sag Harbor, 744, 747; Port Jefferson, 816; Huntington, 825; Amityville, 830; Lindenhurst, 832; Babylon, 835; Patchogue, 844; Bridgehampton, 846; Freeport, 892, 898-99; Port Washington, 902; Westbury, 903; Great Neck, 914; Glen Cove, 918; Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Jamaica, 980; Whitestone, 991; Richmond Hill, 1003; Forest Hills, 1009; Brooklyn, 1499.  
 Free Masons: (See Masonry).  
 Freeport: 853, 890-99; Population, 853; Churches, 890-92; Banks, 892, 363, 362; Schools, 893-98; Village incorporated, 898; Fraternal Orders, 892, 898-99.  
 French, Capt. Joseph: 167; Representative (1775), 169.  
 French, Old John: 1152.  
 French and Indian War: 131-42, 151, 175, 177, 178; Schenectady burned by French, 139; Expedition against Quebec, 170, 172; Treaty of Paris, 178.  
 Friends, Society of: See Quakers.  
 Fuller, Margaret (Countess Ossoli): 839.  
 Fuller, Myron L., Geological Survey: 9-36.  
 Fullerton, Hal B.: 5-6, 8.  
 Furman, William, first judge, Kings County: 1147.  
 Furman, Gabriel: 1147, 1578.
- G**
- Gaddis, Col. David E., Historian Riverhead, World War Record: 579.  
 Gager, Dr. C. Stuart, Director Botanic Garden: 1401.  
 Garden City: 395, 865-68; Churches, 249; The Cathedral of Long Island, 249-50; World War Record, 537-45; World War Honor Roll, 538-42; Prominent people of, 867; Magazines printed at, 868; Population and transportation, 868; Banks, 868.  
 Gardiner, David, granted the Isle of Wight: 112.  
 Gardiner, Lion: 61, 718, 751, 775-76, 804; Saves the Hamptons from Indians, 753.  
 Gardiner's Island: 127, 775-79; Pirates visit, 776; War of 1812, 776.  
 Garlick, Joshua, East Hampton: 751.  
 Garlick, "Goody," tried for witchcraft: 761-62.  
 Gaynor, William J., Mayor of New York: 1546-52.  
 Gelston, David, Representative Provincial Congress (1775): 169.  
 Gelston, John, Sag Harbor: 737.  
 Geology of Long Island: 9-11. (See also Form of the Island.)  
 Gildersleeve, Richard, Jr., early landowner: 854.  
 Gleason, Patrick Jerome, Mayor Long Island City: 947-53.  
 Gleaves, Matthew, one of Brooklyn's first firemen: 1155.  
 Glen Cove (Musketo Cove): 227, 916-21; Church, 248; Population, 853; Prominent Residents, 919.  
 Glory of Israel Hebrew Institute: 1140-42.  
 Good Ground Village: 256.  
 Goodyear, William Henry, organized Children's Museum: 1403.  
 Gosmer, John, pioneer settler: 785.  
 Grace Church (first in world), of Jamaica: 236-47; Burned and rebuilt, 240; Centenary celebration, 243; Members in Spanish-American War, 243; Boys' and Men's Clubs, 244; Organizations of, 245.  
 Gravesend: 52, 69, 79, 82, 83, 91, 104, 110, 113, 116, 118, 227, 854, 1069-86; Magistrates elected (1655), 92; In Revolutionary War, 189.  
 Great Neck: 913-14; In Revolutionary War, 201, 219.  
 Great Peconic Bay Dispute: 702, 786-87.  
 Greater New York realized: 1532.  
 Greater New York Savings Bank: 1619-20.  
 Greatsinger, Jacob L., President B. R. T.: 377.  
 Green, Andrew H., father of Greater New York: 1532.  
 Greenpoint: 1102-08; Shipbuilding industry, 1102, 1106; Topography of, 1103; Early settlers of, 1104-05; Bank, 1104, 1107; Roads to, 106; Iron works, 1106, 1107; Joined to Brooklyn, 1106; Steam ferry, 1107; Prominent residents, 1107; Churches, 1108.  
 Greenport (Sterling): 227, 713-17; World War Record, Honor Roll, 545-50; Sail loft, 714; The ferry, 715; Hotels of, 716-17; Banks, 717, also 361-64.  
 Greenwood Cemetery: 1351-54.  
 Griffing, John, Riverhead: 726.  
 Griffith, George, actor: 1090.  
 Grout, Edward M., first Borough of Brooklyn President: 1557-58.  
 Guider, Joseph A., President Brooklyn Borough: 1574.
- H**
- Haff, Daniel, mill owner: 842.  
 Haff, Frank E., Secretary L. I. Railroad: 384.  
 Hall, George, first Mayor of Brooklyn: 1511.  
 Halsey, Thomas, pioneer settler: 785.  
 Hamilton Club, The: 1480-86.  
 Hampton Bay: 846.  
 Hancock, John: 168.  
 Hand, John, East Hampton: 749, 750.  
 Hand, Capt. David, renowned fighter (1812): 782-83.  
 Hans, the Boor, early settler: 947.  
 Harbor Hill, highest point: 853.  
 Hardy, Sir Charles, Governor of N. Y.: 177.  
 Harker, William, pioneer settler: 785.  
 Harman, John N., on park system: 1626.  
 Harriman, Edward H., birthplace of: 855.

- Hart, Samuel, physician: 1435.  
 Hartford's Council of War: 123.  
 Harvey, Matthias, Oyster Bay, delegate (1665): 110.  
 Havens, Capt. Daniel, in capture of Ranger (1777): 783.  
 Havens, James, Representative (1775): 169.  
 Havens, George, of Shelter Island: 722.  
 Hay, John, Greenpoint: 1102.  
 Hazelton, Henry Isham, author: Title page.  
 Heathcote, Caleb, Councillor: 150.  
 Hebrew Day Nursery and Kindergarten: 1136.  
 Hebrew Educational Society: 1137.  
 Hebrew Young Men's Institute: 1135.  
 Heckscher Park: 826.  
 Hedges in early times: 710-11.  
 Hedges, William, East Hampton: 751.  
 Heeney, Cornelius, fur trader: 1149.  
 Hell Gate Bridge: 1661.  
 Hempstead (Heemstede): 75, 76, 86, 104, 110, 113, 128, 167, 853-65; In Revolutionary War, 195, 860-61; Church, 233, 247-48, 855, 864; Spanish-American War, 290; World War Record, 550-54; World War Honor Roll, 550; 552-54; Population, 853, 863; Early settlers, 853, 857; Presbyterians of, 858-59; Camp Mills, 860; Sammis Tavern, 860; Camps Winfield Scott and Black, 863; Valuation, 863; Highways and Transportation, 864, 865; Mitchel and Curtiss Fields, 864; Meadowbrook Hunt Club, 864; Clubs, 864; Banks, 865, 362; First Chapter, 941.  
 Hempstead Village: 862-63; Population, 853.  
 Henry, Thomas W., physician: 1431.  
 Het Veer, early Long Island Village: 1640.  
 Hewlett Family, The: 168, 1019-27.  
 Hewlett Homestead: 872.  
 Hewlett, Town of: 1020.  
 Hicks, John: 110; Justice (1665), 111.  
 Hicks, John and Jacob: 1147.  
 Hicks, Thomas: 994; Representative (1775), 169.  
 Hicksville, old Quaker settlement: 853.  
 Highways, Roads: Kings, 53, 1569, 1573; Ferry road and others, 53; Boston Post Road, 117; Sag Harbor and East Hampton, 719; South Road, 833; Shore Road, 1094.  
 Hillis, Dr. Newell Dwight: 1317-20.  
 Historical Societies: Suffolk Co., 705; Sag Harbor, 740, 781; Huntington, 825; Of Long Island, 1325, 1684.  
 History of Medicine, in Suffolk Co.: 846-49.  
 Hobart, John Sloss, Southold, Representative (1775): 168, 169.  
 Hobart, Rev. Joshua, preacher and physician: 697, 847.  
 Hobson, Richmond Pearson, arrives at Long Beach: 299.  
 Hodgson, Robert, Quaker: 96.  
 Holloway, Prof.: 1181.  
 Hooper, Prof. Franklin, Organizer Brooklyn Museum: 1398.  
 Hopkins, George Gallagher, physician: 1438.  
 Horses, Famous Race: 1656-57.  
 Horse Racing, from 1665 to 1921: 1647-57; Personalities of the Turf, 1655-56; Famous horses, 1656-57.  
 Horton, Barnabas, early settler: 695, 708.  
 Howard's Half-way House, of Revolutionary Days: 1113, 1115-16.  
 Howard, Major William: 1115.  
 Howe, Daniel, East Hampton: 749, 750, 784.  
 Howell, John, delegate (1665): 111, 112, 121, 122.  
 Howell, Matthew, Suffolk Co. Representative (1691): 146.  
 Howell, Edward, pioneer: 785.  
 Howell, George R., historian: 796.  
 Hubbard, Rev., Presbyterian Minister of Jamaica: 855, 234.  
 Hubbard, James: 110, 1087; Justice (1665), 111.  
 Hudson, Hendrik, 42-43.  
 Hughes, Dr. Thomas P., author: 1384.  
 Huguenots, The: 132.  
 Hunt, Joseph Hill, physician: 1439.  
 Hunter, Robert, Governor of N. Y.: 170-72.  
 Huntington, Drs.: 848.  
 Huntington: 104, 110, 113, 118, 130, 820-29; in Revolutionary War, 212, 218, 226; Church, 233; World War Record, 554-61; Honor Roll, 555-59; Trustees of (1694), 821; Town Records, 820-23; Villages of, 824-28; Banks, 828-29, 361-64.  
 Huntington Village: 824-26.  
 Hutchins, Alexander, physician: 1437.  
 Hutchinson, Joseph Chrisman, physician: 1435.
- I
- Indians of the Island: 43-44, 112; Wampum, 57-58; Canoes of, 58; Firearms supplied to, 67, 82; Massacred at Pavonia and at Corlear's Hook, 71; War on Whites, 71-74, 75, 76, 97-99; Treaty of Fort Amsterdam, 1645, 78; Congress (1753), 177; Sweating place, 709; On Shelter Island, 717-18; Checkenoe, Interpreter, 719; Of East Hampton, 748, 753-54; Reservation at Shinnecock, 799-801; Battle of Fort Neck, 922.  
 Industries: Greenport, 714; Sag Harbor, 734, 737, 747; East Hampton, 762; Smithtown, 807; Port Jefferson, 814, 815; Patchogue, 842-43; East Rockaway, 872; Glen Cove, 918; Oyster Bay, 923; Ridgewood, 983; Greenpoint, 1102, 1106, 1107; Williamsburgh, 1110; Brooklyn, 1585, 1592-5.  
 Ingoldesby, Major Richard, Lieutenant-Governor of N. Y.: 144, 147, 170.  
 Innes, Dr. John, on Committee of Correspondence (1774): 167.  
 Iphetanga (Brooklyn Heights): 51.  
 Isaacs, Aaron, grandfather of John Howard Payne: 1120.  
 Isle of Wight: 112.  
 Islip: 840, World War Record, 561-65; Bank, 362.  
 Italian American Country Club: 1101.
- J
- Jackson, Robert: 110.  
 Jackson Heights: 1034, 1037.  
 Jamaica: 96, 97, 104, 110, 113, 116, 957-82; Agitated over Boston Port Bill, 166; Committee of Correspondence and Observation, 167; In Revolutionary War, 195; Church of, 233; First Charter, 941; Public Market



- (1693), 958; Church Building Act, 958; Quakers persecuted, 958; Temporary Capital New York, 959; Churches, 960-76; Railroad center of Long Island, 976; Schools, 977; Library, 977; Parks, 978; The Alley, 979; Building activity, 979-80; Newspapers and Clubs, 980; Fraternal Orders, 980; Banks, 363, 364, 981; Hospitals, 1051, 1053-56, 1057-58.
- Jamaica Bay Development: 1031-34.
- Jamaica Hospital: 1051, 1053-54.
- James, Thomas, East Hampton's first preacher: 115, 126.
- Jamesport (Old Parish): 227.
- Jansen, Lymen, early settler: 947.
- Jenks, Grenville Tudor, attorney: 1578.
- Jermain, John, Home Guard: 781.
- Jerusalem, old settlement: 853.
- Jessup, Nathan C., builds bridge: 785-86.
- Jewett, Charles, physician: 1438.
- Jewish Hospital, The: 1127-31.
- Jewish Synagogues: Sag Harbor, 746; Huntington, 826; Lindenhurst, 832; Freeport, 892; Queensborough, 1063; Williamsburgh, 1120; Brooklyn, 1120-26, 1210.
- Jews, The: 1116-42; Early History in America, 1117; In the Wars, 1118; Population of, in country, 1119; Immigration of, 1119; In Williamsburgh, 1120; First place of worship on Long Island, 1120; Reforms introduced, 1121; First confirmation of girls, 1123; Brooklyn Federation of Jewish Charities, 1126; United Jewish Aid Societies, 1126-27; Jewish Hospital, 1127-31; Brooklyn Hebrew Orphan Asylum, 1131-35; Hebrew Young Men's Institute, 1135; Y. M. H. A., Brooklyn, 1135-36; Day Nursery and Kindergarten, 1136; Educational Society, 1137; Borough Park Y. M. H. A. and Y. W. H. A., 1138-39; Glory of Israel Institute, East New York, 1140-42; In Brownsville, 1143.
- Jockey Clubs: 1652-55.
- Johnson Family, The, of Gravesend: 1074-75.
- Johnson, Evan Malbone, Brigadier-General 77th Division: 478-79.
- Johnson, Jeremiah, General in War of 1812: 1669.
- Johnson, Thomas: 146, 150.
- Johnston, Lieut.-Col. Gordon, Soldier Spanish American War: 295-97.
- Jorassen, Hendrick, Flatbush, delegate (1665): 110.
- Jorissen, Burger, early settler: 947.
- K**
- Ketcham, John, Huntington delegate (1665): 110.
- Ketcham, Zebulon, hotel keeper: 829, 835.
- Keteltas, Rev. Abraham, on Committee of Correspondence (1774): 167.
- Kettle Holes, Water Supply: 904.
- Kew Gardens: 997, 999, 1001; Country Club, 1002; Activities in World War, 1002; Population, 1037.
- Kidd, Capt. William: 145, 148, 152-61, 720, 776.
- Kieft, William, Director-General: 49-81; Forms colony on L. I., 50, 61.
- King, Gov. John Alsop, and family: 240, 241, 245.
- King, Rufus, in Continental Congress: 245, 978.
- King Family, notable churchmen: 239, 241.
- King Philip's War: 123.
- Kings County: 1069-1626; First Settlement of, 51-52; Created, 126; Represented at Provincial Congress (1755), 168, 169; Population, 173; In Revolutionary War, 201; Dead in World War, 616-55; Poorhouse and Lunatic Asylum, 1183-84; Medical Society, 1418-41; In War of 1812, 1667.
- Kings County Hospital: 1466-67.
- Kings County Medical Society, 1418-41; First doctors in county, 1418; Organized, 1421. Medical Library, 1423-26; Centennial, 1427; Council of, 1430; Prominent physicians, 1430-40.
- Kingsland, Ambrose and David, landowners: 1104.
- Knights of Columbus: 1499-1508.
- Knitwear, Industry of, Brooklyn: 1592-95.
- L**
- Lake Ronkonkoma: 6-8, 816.
- Lake Success: 901.
- Lakeville (Success): 227, 902.
- Landslides: 19-21.
- Lane, Daniel, Brookhaven, delegate (1665): 110.
- Laurel (Ranklinville): 227; World War Record, 565.
- Lawrence: 1015. Population, 853.
- Lawrence, Jonathan, Representative Provincial Congress (1775): 168, 169.
- Lee, John Aloysius, physician: 1440.
- Lefferts, John, Representative (1775): 169.
- Lefferts Farm: 997.
- Leisler, Jacob: 111, 131, 133-43; Commander-in-Chief, 138; Made prisoner, 145; Executed, 147; Body reburied, 162.
- Levy, Asser, pioneer Jewish settler: 1117-18.
- L'Hommedieu, Ezra, Representative (1775): 168, 169, 697, 699.
- Libraries: Lynbrook, 870; East Rockaway, 872; Freeport, 898; Westbury, 903; Roslyn, 915; Mineola, 925; Jamaica, 977; Richmond Hill, 1001; Rockaways, 1015; Queensborough Public, 1058-61; Bay Ridge, 1100; Brooklyn, 1404-09; Medical, Kings Co., 1423.
- Lighthouses: Cedar Island, 778; Montauk Beacon, 778; Little Gull Island, 778; Gardiners' Island, 779.
- Lindenhurst: 831-32; Industries, 832.
- Littleton, Martin W., President Brooklyn Borough: 1562-64.
- Livingston, Philip, signed Declaration of Independence: 185, 1146.
- Livingston, John, founder of family: 1146.
- Livingston, Robert, obtained manor of Livingston: 1146.
- Long Beach: 880-90; World War Record, 566; Population, 881; Dredging Channel 884; Nassau Hotel, 885; Village incorporated, 885; City Charter and City Officials, 886-87; Mayor Reynolds tried, 889-90.
- Long Beach Improvement Company: 882.



- Long Island: Its fight with the sea, 3-5; Physiography of, 9-11; General features, 11; Form of, 12; North Shore Scarp, 12-13; Harbors of North Shore, 13-14; Shore line, 14-17; Great Inland Scarp, 17-19; Bluffs, 19; Landslides, 19-21; Geology of, by Myron L. Fuller, 9-36; Beaches, 29-31; Subsidence of the land, 32-36; Peats and marshes of, 33-34; First white child born on, 52; Disputed possession of, 59-63; Called cradle of American Institutions, 63; Isle of Plowden, 74; Boundary dispute, New York and Connecticut: 83, 92, 103, 695; Pirates, 87, 89; Revolt against Government (1652), 87-89, 105; Indian outrages, 77-99; English settlers, 75, 79, 100. Tax disorders, 124; Counties created, 126, 697; Courts of, 127; Smuggling, 127; Towns renew charters, 128; Over-populated, 129; Representation of at Provincial Congress (1775), 168; Radio in, 327-33; Garden of New York, 347-49; Sugar Beet Industry, 349-52; Duck farms, 352-53; Building statistics, 353-57; Park plan, 358-59; Population, 359-61; Banks of, 361-64; Postal service, 364-69; L. I. Railroad, 384-420; In the World War, 423-689; Dead in World War, 616-59; Mitchel Field, 673-77; Suffolk Co., 693-849; Nassau Co., 853-935; Searched for coal, 856; Queens Co., 939-1063; Kings Co., 1069-1626; History of Presbyterianism, 1629-39; War of 1812, 1666-70.
- Long Island City: 947-57; Y. M. C. A., 317, 320; Incorporated (1870), 381; Water supply dispute, 949-51; Streets condemned for city, 954; Masonic Lodge, 954-56; Population, 1036; Hospital, 1051-52.
- Long Island College Hospital: 1450-57.
- Long Island Historical Society: 1684.
- Long Island Home, The: 830.
- Long Island Railroad Co.: 384-420, Commenced operation, 386; Chartered (1834), 386; First time-table, 387; Stations, 390; Branches of, 392-94; Unified control of railroads, 399-420; Electrification of, 410-16. Formula, 419-20.
- Lott, Johannes E., Representative (1775): 169.
- Lott, John A., attorney: 1578.
- Lovelace, Col. Francis, Governor: 114-18.
- Lovelace, Lord John, Governor of N. Y.: 166, 169-70.
- Low, Cornelius, physician: 1430.
- Lubbertsen, Frederick, Brooklyn delegate (1665): 110.
- Ludlam, William, early settler: 167, 958.
- Luna Park: 1078-80.
- Lutheran Church: Southold, 700; Huntington, 826; Freeport, 891; Mineola, 926; Ridgewood, 984; Queensborough, 1063; Brooklyn, 1210.
- Lutz, Stephen Henry, physician: 1440.
- Lynbrook (Bloomfield): 869-71; World War Record, 567-70; Banks, 870, 362.
- M**
- McCarren, Patrick Henry, political leader: 1541-46.
- McClellan, Christopher Raborg, physician: 1435.
- McCorkle, John Alva, physician: 1438.
- McKane, John Y., political boss: 1070, 1071, 1083-86.
- McLaughlin, Hugh, formerly volunteer fireman: 1178.
- McLean, Andrew, founder Brooklyn Citizen: 1417.
- Malba: 991, 992, 1036.
- Malverne: 873-74.
- Man, Albon Platt: 997-98.
- Manhasset (Cow Neck): 227, 900, 901-2; In Revolutionary War, 201; World War Record, 570-71.
- Manhasset Bay (Cord Bay): 227, 853.
- Manhattan Beach Railroad Lines: 403-04; Consolidated, 407.
- Manhattan Bridge: 1590, 1660, 1662.
- Manufacturers' Trust Co: 1617-19.
- Marine Pavilion: 1011-12.
- Martense, Roeloff, Flatlands, delegate (1665): 110.
- Martin family, The, of Rock Hall: 1020-21; Portraits, 1022-23.
- Marvin, George, physician: 1434.
- Mason, Theodore Lewis, physician: 1432.
- Masonry, two hundred years of: 271-78; Of L. I., 274-78; In War of 1812, 174; Members in World War, 276-77; Riverhead Lodge, 732; Sag Harbor, 744, 747; Port Jefferson, 816; Huntington, 825; Amityville, 830; Babylon, 835; Patchogue, 844; Freeport, 892; Port Washington, 902; Westbury, 903; Great Neck, 914; Glen Cove, 918; Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Jamaica, 980; Ridgewood, 984; Whitestone, 991; Bayside, 995-97; Richmond Hill, 1002-6; Forest Hills, 1009.
- Mastic (St. George's Manor): 227; In Revolutionary War, 224.
- Mather, Dr. Frederick: 7, 20.
- Mattituck: 708-13; World War Record, 565; Population, 708; Indian deed, 708; Corchaug Land, 709; Indian "sweating place," 709; Churches, 710, 712, 713; Rate list of 1675, 711.
- Maxwell, J. Rogers, yachtsman: 1490.
- Maxwell, Dr. William H.: 1697-99.
- May, Cornelis Jacobsen, explorer: 48.
- May, Moses, cattle broker: 1121.
- "Mayflower" and "Speedwell": 56.
- Mayors of Brooklyn: 1516-17, 1520-32.
- Meadowbrook Club: 864, 904.
- Medal of Honor, World War, list of men decorated: 1670-72.
- Medical Societies: Kings County, 1418-41; Queens County, 1421; Suffolk, 846-49, 1421.
- Medicine in Suffolk County (1640-1925): 846-49.
- Memorialists: 218.
- Merrick: 869.
- Meserole, John A. K., of Greenpoint: 1102, 1105, 1106.
- Methodist Episcopal Church: Southold, 700; Shelter Island, 725; Riverhead, 727; Sag Harbor, 745; Southampton, 790; Smithtown, 808; Port Jefferson, 814; Huntington, 824; Amityville, 830; Babylon, 834; Bayshore, 838; Lynbrook, 869; Rockville Centre, 875; Oceanside, 879-80; Freeport, 891; Port Washington, 902; Sea Cliff, 916;



Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Jamaica, 964-70; Ridgewood, 984; Queensborough, 1063; Greenpoint, 1108; Brooklyn, 1210-1253; Government of, 1267-68; Conference of 1924, 1268-70; The Spanish M. E. Church in Brooklyn, 1270; Men of the Methodist Faith, 1271-75; St. John's Church and pastors of, 1277-79.

Methodist Episcopal Free Church, Brooklyn: 1210.

Methodist Hospital, The: 1460-66.

Methodist Primitive Church, Brooklyn: 1210.

Methodist Protestant Church, Queensborough: 1063. Brooklyn: 1210.

Meyer, William E., on Whitestone: 993.

Midwout: 118, 1209, 1212.

Middleton, Thomas, of Shelter Island: 112, 720.

Milborne, Jacob: 138, 145. Executed: 147. Body reburied: 162.

Mill, The Old, at Babylon: 833.

Mills, early: Babylon, 833; Patchogue, 842-43; East Rockaway, 871; Plandome, 901; Westbury, 904; Roslyn, 914; Glen Cove, 917; Jamaica, 959; Brooklyn, 1585.

Mills, Albert L., Major General: 299-300.

Miller family, East Hampton: 751, 848.

Miller, Major Jeremiah: 781.

Miller, Olive Thorne, author: 1383.

Mineola, County Seat: 925-27; Population, 853; Court House, 926; Nassau Hospital, 928-30.

Minuit, Peter: 48.

Mitchel Field: 673-77, 864.

Molineux, Edward L., Lieut. Col., Civil War: 280, 284.

Montauk: 752; Training Camp at, 571; World War Record, 571-72.

Montauk Club, The: 1486-89.

Montfort, Garrett, early mill owner: 833.

Montgomerie, John, Governor N. Y.: 172-73.

Monuments and Memorials: To Brooklyn Battery, 182; at Fort Putnam, 183; At Sag Harbor, 224; To dead from Revolutionary War's prison ships, 229-31; At Greenport, World War, 548; At Lynbrook, World War, 568; Memorial Hall, Southampton, 605; To John Youngs at Southold, 694; At Sag Harbor, 740-41; To John Howard Payne, 771; World War, at Amityville, 831; Alfred T. White, 1401.

Moody, Lady Deborah: 69, 92, 1070, 1087; Attacked by Indians, 72, 97; Patentee of Gravesend, 78-79.

Moore, Capt. Samuel, Newtown: 942.

Moore, Thomas, early settler: 695, 708.

Mott, Richard, poet: 1012.

Mount Sinai (Queen's Man's): 227, 816.

Mountain Mist Spring: 8.

Mowbrey, John, early landowner: 836.

Mulford, John: 121, 122, 749.

Mulford, Thomas: 749.

Mulford, Ezekiel: 783.

Murphy, Charles F., of Tammany Hall: 1552-57.

Murphy, Camp, Civil War: 280.

Murray, Lindley, Islip, patriot: 168.

## N

Nanfan, Lieut. Governor: 163-64.

Narrative and Remonstrance to Duke of York: 112.

Nassau Boulevard: 868-69, 1061-62.

Nassau County: 853-935; Farmlands of, 360; Dead in World War, 656-659; Population, 853; Mineola, County Seat, 925; Board of Supervisors (1924), 927-28; Nassau Hospital, 928-30; Schools, 932-34; Churches, 934; Banks, 934-35.

Nassau Hospital: 928-30.

Nassau Hotel, The: 885.

Nathan, Ernst, politician: 1121.

Nativity, The Church of the: 1397-98.

Naval Base Hospital Unit No. 1: 671-73.

Navigation Act (1662): 103.

Needham, Edward, pioneer settler: 785.

Neilson, Joseph, attorney: 1581.

Neponsit Beach Hospital: 1051, 1058.

New Lotts, Village: 1143. (See East New York.)

New Netherland: Gov. Kieft, 49-80; Popular Assembly, 68, 105; Gov. Stuyvesant, 81-108; Tariff, 100; Boundary trouble, 83, 92, 103, 695; English Governor, 108-17; Dutch again in possession, 118-21; Colve, Governor, 118-21.

New Utrecht: 78, 110, 113, 118, 1091-1102; In Revolutionary War, 188; Founders of 1092-95; Militia Organized (1698), 1093; Early Homesteads, 1094-95; Annexed to Brooklyn, 1100; Building activities, 1101.

New York: Finally taken from Dutch, 121; Charter of Franchises and Privileges, 127; Assembly, popular, 125-26, 128; Religious liberty, 129; Council of Forty-two, 129; War with France, 131-43; Catholic and Protestant disturbances, 132-38; Under Leisler rule, 133-43; Proclamation of William and Mary, 139; First Continental Congress (1690), 141; King William's Council, 143, 146; Provincial Congresses at (1775), 168-69; New Charter granted (1731), 173; Pre-Revolutionary period, 166-80; Union of Colonies, 176; Declaration of Rights, 179; Revolutionary War, 180; Washington arrives at, 185.

New York Navy Yard: 333-46; List of Commandants, 340; During World War, 340-46; Medical and Hospital facilities, 343.

New York Title and Mortgage Company: 1616-17.

Newspapers: Riverhead, 727; Sag Harbor, 736, 744; Port Jefferson, 814; Huntington, 825; Islip, 840; Hempstead, 862; Rockville Centre, 876, 877; Freeport, 898; Port Washington, 902; Mineola, 925; Jamaica, 980; Whitestone, 993; Williamsburgh, 1111; East New York, 1115; Brooklyn, 1410-18.

Newtown: 110, 113, 116, 128, 137, 167, 939, 942; In Revolution, 226; Now Elmhurst, 227; Church, 236.

Nicholls, Miss Louisa, gifts to St. John's Hospital: 239.

Nicolls, Matthais: 126, 127, 901; Speaker of Assembly (1683).

Nicolls, William, Councillor, of Shelter Island: 150, 721.

Nicolls, Sir Richard, English Deputy Governor: 109-13.  
 Nine Men, The: 81, 83.  
 North Fork Country Club: 702.  
 North Hempstead towns: 900.  
 Northport (Cow Harbor): 227, 827; World War Record, 572.  
 Northville Academy: 726.  
 Norton (Thunderbolt), Senator: 1072.

## O

Oakley family, mill owners: 833.  
 Oceanside: 878-80.  
 Odd Fellows: Sag Harbor, 747; Port Jefferson, 816; Huntington, 825; Amityville, 830; Lindenhurst, 832; Babylon, 835; Freeport, 892; Port Washington, 902; Glen Cove, 918; Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Jamaica, 980; Brooklyn, 1510-11.  
 Odell, Richard, early settler: 785.  
 Onderdonk, Hendrik, early mill owner: 914.  
 159th Regiment, in Civil War: 279-84; Officers of, 280-81, 283; Activities of, 281-83.  
 Op-Dyck, Guiesbert, early settler: 53.  
 Orient (Oyster Pond): 227.  
 O'Ryan, John F., Major-General 27th Division: 423.  
 Osborn, Sir Danvers, Governor N. Y.: 177.  
 Osborn, Samuel Johnson, physician: 1433.  
 Osborne, Thomas, East Hampton: 751.  
 Oterson, Andrew, physician: 1434.  
 Overton, Mordecai, miller: 842.  
 Overton, Frank, M. D., Suffolk Co. Medical Society: 849.  
 Owls Head: 1096; Flagpole in honor of Admiral Dewey erected, 1096.  
 Oyster Bay: 104, 110, 116, 119, 167, 854, 922-24; In Revolutionary War, 195, 219; Church, 233, 1291; Population, 853; Historic landmarks, 922; Valuable estates, 924.  
 Ozone Park: 1034, 1037.

## P

Packer Collegiate Institute: 1368.  
 Palatines immigrate: 170, 171.  
 Palmer, A. Emerson, School Historian: 1686 et seq.  
 Palmer, Noyes F., famous surveyor: 1113.  
 Parks: State Park Plan, 358-59; At Southold, 702; Jamaica, 978; Forest, 999; Brooklyn, 1625-26.  
 Parrish, Dr. Isaac: 791.  
 Parrish, Samuel L.: 605, 793.  
 Parrish Art Gallery: 605, 793.  
 Parson, John and Samuel, East Hampton: 751.  
 Patchen, Jacob, last of the Leather Breeches: 1148-49.  
 Patchogue: 841-44; World War Record, 573-77; Mills of, 842-43; Banks, 844, 363.  
 Payne, John Howard, poet: 770-71.  
 Peck, Carson C., Memorial Hospital: 1468-70.  
 Penny, Joshua, famous in 1812-1813: 776, 778, 779-80.  
 Peoples Trust Company, The: 1614-15.  
 Peters, Ralph, President L. I. Railroad Co.: 411-12.  
 Physicians and Surgeons, from Long Island in Revolutionary Army: 226.

Pierrepoint, H. E., President Union Ferry Company: 1647.  
 Pierrepoint Mansion: 1147, 1191.  
 Pierrepoint, Hezekiah B., founder of the Heights: 1147-48.  
 Pierson, Henry, Suffolk Co. Representative (1691): 146.  
 Pinhorne, William: 145, 146, 150.  
 Piracy or privateering: 89, 133, 148-50, 152-61; During Revolutionary War, 221-23.  
 Pitkin, John R., plans East New York: 1113.  
 Plandome: 900-01.  
 Platt, Epenetus, prominent settler: 823, 832.  
 Plowden, Sir Edmund: 74.  
 Plum Island: 127, 781.  
 Plum Gut, American ship escapes British through (1812): 781.  
 Plymouth Brothers Church, Sea Cliff: 916.  
 Poland, John, Kings Co. Representative (1691): 146.  
 Polhemus, Domine Johannes Theodorus, first preacher on L. I. (1654): 1208, 1212.  
 Polhemus, Theodorus, Representative (1775): 169.  
 Polhemus family: 1104.  
 Polytechnic Preparatory Country Day School: 1367-68.  
 Poppenhusen, Conrad, Railroad president: 394, 399, 400.  
 Poppenhusen Institute: 1048-49.  
 Port Jefferson: 813-20; World War Record, 577-79; Villages of, 816-20.  
 Port Washington: 902; Celebrates 25th Anniversary arrival of railroad, 417-19.  
 Porter, Capt. David, lands at Port Sag (1814): 1666.  
 Post, Capt. Lodowick, artillery at Sag Harbor (1812): 781.  
 Postal Service: 364-69; early postoffices: 365.  
 Pounds, Lewis H., President Brooklyn Borough: 1566.  
 Poyer, Rev. Thomas: 236.  
 Praa, Capt. Pieter and descendants, of Bushwick: 1105-06.  
 Pratt Brothers, The: gifts to Y. M. C. A., 318, 319.  
 Pratt, Charles, philanthropist: 1360-61, 1408.  
 Pratt Institute: 1360-63; Free Library, 1408-09.  
 Pratt Houses, The, Brooklyn: 1192.  
 Presbyterian Churches: Of Jamaica, 234, 722, 970-74, 1632; Shelter Island, 723, 725; Sag Harbor, 734, 745; Southampton, 790; Smithtown, 808; Port Jefferson, 814, 818; Huntington, 824; Babylon, 834; Hempstead, 857-59, 1627; Freeport, 891; Oyster Bay, 924; Mineola, 926; Ridgewood, 984; Forest Hills, 1009; Queensborough, 1063; Greenpoint, 1108; Williamsburgh, 1111; Brooklyn, 1210, 1279-91; History of, on Long Island, 1629-39; Southold, 1631; Newtown, 1632; Southampton, 1631; Easthampton, 1632; Huntington, 1632; Brookhaven, 1632; Bridgehampton, 1633.  
 Press, Liberty of demanded: 173. (See also Newspapers.)  
 Prior, Lieut. Elisha, Home Guard (1812): 781.  
 Prince of Wales, The, visits Long Island: 931-32.



Prospect Park and Coney Island Company: 404-407.  
 Provincial Congress (1775): 167, 168.  
 Provoost, David, first private dock, Greenpoint: 1107.  
 Pryor, Joseph, one of Brooklyn's first firemen: 1155.  
 Public Library, The Brooklyn: 1404-08; Twenty Carnegie buildings, 1405-06; Library for the Blind, 1407.  
 Puritans, settlement of: 55-56.  
 Puritans and Dutch dispute land: 59.  
 Purrier, William, Mattituck: 709-10.

## Q

Quakers, persecuted in New Amsterdam: 96-97.  
 Quaker Meeting House: Plandome, 901; Manhasset, 902; Brooklyn, 1210, 1343-47.  
 Queen Anne's War: 165.  
 Queens Borough: Consolidated, 381, 1027; Rapid transit in, 382; Industrial growth, 383, 1027, 1065; Building development, 383-84, 1028-29, 1034; Valuation, 384; Jamaica Bay Development, 1031-34; Banking, 1035, 1038, 363-64, 1065; Population, 1035-37; Telephones, 1039-40; Schools, 1041-50, 1065; Hospitals, 1050-58; Public Library, 1058-61; Nassau Boulevard, 1061-62; Churches, 1063-64; Statistics, 1065; Area, 1065.  
 Queensboro Bridge: 1590, 1660-61.  
 Queensboro Hospital, Jamaica: 1051, 1057-58.  
 Queens County: 166, 172, 939-1063; Created, 126; Seceded (1690), 142; Represented at Provincial Congress (1775), 168, 169; Population, 173; In Revolutionary War, 201, 944-47; Y. M. C. A. of, 305-27; Farm lands of, 360; Banks of, 363; Rapid Transit and crosstown subway, 369-79, 1065; Dead in World War, 616-55; Severe penalties, 940; Compulsory military duty, 941; Race Courses, 941-42; County fair, first in country (1693), 942; Valuable relics, 943; Depredations of British Soldiers, 945-46; The Hewlett family, 1019-27; Becomes Borough of New York City, 1027; Industrial census, 1027, 1065; Population, 1028, 1065; Building activities, 1028-29, 1034-35; Industries, 1029-30; Jamaica Bay Development, 1031-34.  
 Quogue Village: 802-03.

## R

Radio Central: 327-31; Resumé of the art of radio, 330-31.  
 Railroads, First in world: 385; First in U. S., 385; Of Long Island, 384-420; Bay Ridge Improvement, 409; Era of Electrification, 410-16.  
 Rapelje family: 169, 945, 947.  
 Rapeje (Rapelyea), George Janse de, early settler: 52.  
 Rapelje, Sarah, first white child born on Long Island: 52.  
 Rapelye, Isaac J., physician: 1431.  
 Rapalye, John, Brooklyn patriot: 168.  
 Real estate values of Brooklyn: 1590-92.  
 Reeve, Rev. Abner, Southold: 698.  
 Reeve, James, Mattituck: 710.

Reformed Church of America: Plandome, 901; Manhasset, 902; Jamaica, 960-64; Ridgewood, 984; Queensborough, 1063; Greenpoint, 1108; Brooklyn, 1210, 1211-1224; First sermon preached in English, 1218; Eliminate the words "Dutch" and "Protestant", 1221; Mission School founded (1848), 1223; Flatbush, 1224-26; Flatlands, 1226-27.

Reformed Church in United States: Queensborough, 1163; Brooklyn, 1210.

Reformed Episcopal Church, Brooklyn: 1210.

Regiments of Civil War in which Brooklyn men served: 284-86.

Reifschneider, Felix E., on Long Island Railroad: 384, 385.

Riegelmann, Edward, President Brooklyn Borough: 1569-74.

Remsen Farmhouse, Brooklyn: 1187.

Remsen, Abraham, Major Suffolk Co. Regiment: 185.

Remsen, Jeremiah, delegate (1775) Kings Co.: 168, 169.

Remsens, early settlers: 63.

Remsens, James S., of Rockaway Beach: 1013.

Revenue Laws: 126, 129, 131.

Revolutionary War: 180-227; Pre-revolutionary Period, 166-80; The Army at Brooklyn, 186; British land on Long Island, 185; Battle of Brooklyn, 187-95; Evacuation of Brooklyn, 208-11. Letters of Generals, 211-17; Meigs Expedition, 223-24; Prisons and Prison ships, 227-31.

Rich, Ensign Lewis, Militia (1812): 781.

Richards, Paulus, wine maker: 110.

Richmond Hill: 997-1006; Incorporated, 999; Becomes part of Greater New York, 1000; Masonic Lodge, 1003-06; Population, 1037.

Ridgewood: 982-84; Banks, 984, 364; Population, 1036.

Riegelmann Boardwalk, The: 1081-82.

Riverhead: 726-32; Villages of, 726, 728-29; Chronology of chief events, 726-27; Silk Industry, 727; Oldest mill in State, 727; County seat, 728; Banks, 729-32, 361-64; World War Record, 579-82.

Roach, James C., playwright: 1090.

Robinson, Frank N., on Brooklyn Rapid Transit: 377.

Robinson, John, Queens Co. Representative (1691): 146.

Rock Hall, historic house: 1020.

Rockaway Beach: (See The Rockaways.)

Rockaway Beach Hospital: 1051, 1056-57.

Rockaways, The: 1011-19; Church, 248; World War Record, 536-37; Becomes part of Greater New York, 1013; Stations R. R., 1014; Boardwalks, 1014, 1015; Fraternal Orders at, 1015; Disastrous fire, 1015; Cross-Bay Boulevard, 1016; Cable to Italy, 1016-18; Population, 1037; Hospitals, 1051, 1056-57, 1058.

Rockville Centre: 874-78; Population, 853.

Rockwell, William, attorney: 1579.

Rogers Memorial Library, The: 794-96.

Root, Hon. Elihu, Assists with purchase of Academy property: 795.

Roosevelt, Quentin: 659-63.



Roosevelt, Theodore: Spanish American War, 291, 295, 297; President negotiates treaty of Portsmouth, 300-5; Burial place, 923.

Roosevelt, Theodore, Jr., World War Record of: 663-64.

Roosevelt's Rough Riders (First Volunteer Cavalry): 291.

Rope walks of Brooklyn: 1585.

Rose, Robert, East Hampton: 749.

Roslyn: 853, 914-16; Church, 248; Beautiful residences, 915.

Ross, Charlie, abductors of, killed: 1097.

Royce, Capt. Thomas, Sag Harbor: 737.

## S

Sag Harbor (Port Sagg): 732-48, 769; In Revolutionary War, 219, 224, 226, 740-41; Pilgrims at, 733; Whaling and other industries, 734-35, 737-39; Banks, 735, 363; Prominent residents, 739, 748; Incorporated, 739; Transportation, 742; Hotels, 743; Dates of interest, 743; First newspaper and magazine printed on Long Island, 744; Churches, 745-46; Schools, 746; Banks, 747, 362, 363; In War of 1812, 779-82; 1666-67.

Sagamore Hill: 922, 923.

Sagaponack (Sag): 227.

Sage, Dr. Ebenezer, physician (1784): 779.

Sage, Mrs. Russell: 1006, 1009, 1015.

Sail loft at Greenport: 714.

St. Andrew's Dune-Church: 791-93.

St. Anthony's Hospital, Woodhaven: 1051, 1057.

St. George's Church, Hempstead: 247-48, 855.

St. John's Hospital, Brooklyn: 251-54; Cares for American soldiers of Spanish American War, 253-54.

St. John's Hospital, Long Island City: 1051-52.

St. Joseph's Hospital, Far Rockaway: 1051, 1057.

St. Mary's Hospital, Jamaica: 1051, 1054-56.

St. Paul's School, Garden City: 867.

St. Stephen's Chapel, for colored people: 243.

Sammis Tavern, at Hempstead: 860-61.

Sanderson, John, on Masons of Whitestone: 992.

Sands, John, Lieut.-Col. Suffolk Co. Regiment: 185.

Sands Point: 902; World War Record, 582-84.

Saratoga destroyed (1745): 176.

Saterly, Col. John R., Militia (1812): 781.

Sayre, Job and Thomas, pioneer settlers: 785, 786.

Sayville: 840.

Sayville Radio Station: 331-33, 523.

Scarps of the Island, The: 12-13, 17-19.

Schools: Sag Harbor, 746; East Hampton, 771; Huntington, 790; Port Jefferson, 815; Huntington, 825; Amityville, 831; Lindenhurst, 832; Bayshore, 838; Islip, 840; East Islip, 840; Sayville, 840; Garden City, 867; Lynbrook, 870; East Rockaway, 872; Rockville Centre, 887; Oceanside, 878; Long Beach, 887; Freeport, 893-98; Plandome, 901; Manhasset, 902; Port Washington, 902; Westbury, 903; Glen Cove, 917; Mine-

ola, 925; Nassau Co., 932-34; Jamaica, 977; Ridgewood, 984; Richmond Hill, 999; Kew Forest, 1002; Flushing, 1035; Queensborough Public, 1041-47; Parochial, 1047; Private, 1048; Others, 1048-50; Greenpoint, 1102, 1107; Williamsburgh, 1110; New Lots, 1142; Brownsville, 1145.

Scott, Grant E., Brooklyn Chamber of Commerce: 1609.

Scudder family—prominent at Northport: 277.

Sea Cliff: 916; Population, 853; Banks, 362.

Sea Fencibles, Corps of: 1669-70.

Sea Gate (Norton's Point): 1072.

Seabury, Rev. Samuel, first American Bishop: 237, 246.

Searington, old settlement: 853.

Seaside Hospital and Home, Rockaway Beach: 1051, 1058.

Seawanhaka-Corinthian Yacht Club: 923; The Seawanhaka Cup, 925.

See, Edwin F., Gen. Sec. Y. M. C. A., Brooklyn: 308, 317.

Setauket (Ashford): 104, 118, 227, 812-13; In Revolutionary War, 198, 218, 224; Church, 233, 813.

Settlers or Settlements: Walloons, 45, 56; First Dutch on Long Island, 50; First in Kings County, 51, 52; Dutch and English dispute, 59-63; Fordham's settlement, 75, 856; English, 75, 79, 100, 693, 853; Quakers, 853; From Lynn (1640), 901; At Greenpoint, 1104-05.

Seventh Day Adventists' Church, Brooklyn: 1211.

Seventy-Seventh Division: 423, 478-512. In the Argonne Forest, 479-80, 493-501. Training in France, 481-83; In Front Line, 483; At the Vesle and Aisne, 486-93; At Grand Pré, St. Juvin, 502-03; In the advance to Sedan, 503-08; The Lost Battalion, 509; Cited for bravery, 509-11.

Sewer System, Brooklyn: 1560-62, 1563, 1568.

Shafter, General, of Brooklyn Brigade: 291.

Sharpe, Joseph, one of first firemen of Brooklyn: 1155.

Shaw, John Cargill, physician: 1439.

Shelter Island: 112, 120, 698, 717-26; In Revolutionary War, 219, 226; World War Record, 584-87. Men in World War, 1682-83; George Fox at, 719; Founders of (1730), 722; Subscribers to first church, 723; slaves in, 724; population, 725.

Shepard, Charles E., Long Island, The Garden of New York: 349.

Sheppard, John Evans, physician: 1440.

Shearman, Thomas G., attorney: 1581.

Shinnecock Bay: 803.

Shinnecock Golf Club: 799.

Shoe industry, of Brooklyn: 1588.

Silliman, Benjamin D., lawyer: 1153-54, 1581.

Simmons, Harvey L., Y. M. C. A., Brooklyn: 317.

Simonson, John, landowner: 855.

Sixty-Ninth Infantry (Irish Regiment) transferred to Forty-Second Division: 426.

Skene, Alexander Johnston Chalmers, physician: 1437.

Skidmore, Chief Joel, Canarsie Indian: 45.



- Skinner, Col. Abraham, lawyer and soldier: 834.  
 Skinner, Dr.: 848.  
 Slaves: 102, 133, 173; White, 164.  
 Sleight, H. D.: 748, 775, 779, 784.  
 Sleight, Lieut. Cornelius, Home Guard (1812): 781.  
 Slougher, Governor of N. Y.: 143-47.  
 Smart, Mr. A. J., School recollections of (1838): 893-95.  
 Smith, Cyrus P., attorney: 1579.  
 Smith, Capt. Josiah, Commander Suffolk Co. Regiment: 185.  
 Smith, Richard (Bull Smith) early settler: 785, 804-07.  
 Smith, Waters, on Committee of Correspondence (1774): 167.  
 Smith, William, Representative (1775): 169; History of New York by, 175, 234.  
 Smith, William Tangier: 145, 150, 809-10; Associate Justice (1691), 146.  
 Smithtown (Smithfield): 227, 804-08; World War Record, 588-90; Villages, 807-08; Industries, 807; Churches, 807-8; Clubs, 808.  
 Sons of Liberty: 179; Destroy cargo of tea, 180.  
 South Side Railroad, Long Island: 396-99, 402, 407.  
 Southampton: 110, 113, 116, 118, 121, 122, 784-805; First settlement of, 62, 784; In Revolutionary War, 211, 218, 226; World War Record, 590-613; Parrish Art Gallery, 605-06, 793-94; Early settlers, 785; Lookout for whales, 788; Churches, 790; Incorporated, 791; St. Andrew's Dune-Church, 791-93; Rogers Memorial Library, The, 794-96; Summer capital of Long Island, 796-99; Population, 797; Banks, 798, 362; Prominent cottagers, 798-99; Golf Club, 799; Indians at, 799-801; Villages of, 801-04.  
 Southampton Academy: 790.  
 Southold: 110, 112, 113, 116, 118, 122, 693-708; In Revolutionary War, 219, 226, 699; World War Record, 613-14; Honor Roll, 688-89; Early history, 693; Churches, 699, 700, 702; Divided, 699; List of land owners, original and present day, 701-02; Great Peconic Bay dispute, 702; Banks of, 702, also 361-64; Parks, 702; 225th Anniversary, 703. Spanish American War: 290-300; The Brooklyn Brigade, 291; Camp at Montauk, 293-95; Col. Roosevelt and his Rough Riders, 291, 295; Mr. and Mrs. Fred C. Cocheu, care of sick men, 299.  
 Sperry Gyroscope Company, The, of Brooklyn: 1595-97.  
 Spooner, Alden J., attorney: 1579.  
 Spragg, Mr. Secretary, early landowner: 863.  
 Spring, World War Honor Roll: 533.  
 Stamp Act, The: 179.  
 Stealman, John, Bushwick delegate (1665): 110.  
 Steeplechase Park, burned and rebuilt: 1075-78.  
 Steers, Alfred E., President Brooklyn Borough: 1566.  
 Stirling, Lord, granted Long Island in the Revolution: 61, 107, 182, 194.  
 Stewart, Alexander Turney, Plans Garden City: 249, 866-67, 904.  
 Stewart Manor, 868.  
 Stiles, Thomas, pioneer settler (Flushing): 78.  
 Stilwell, Nicholas: 146, 1086.  
 Stilwell, Richard, Representative (1775): 169.  
 Stites, Isaiah, candy and toy merchant: 1151-52.  
 Stoffelsen, Jacob, early settler: 52.  
 Stony Brook, World War Record: 614-15, 820.  
 Storrs, Rev. John, Southold: 699.  
 Storrs, Rev. Richard Salter: 1321-26.  
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher, writer, 1311.  
 Stranahan, James S. T.: 1534, 1540.  
 Stratton, John, East Hampton: 111, 749.  
 Stringham, Admiral Silas H., Civil War hero: 1315.  
 Strong, Selah, Representative Provincial Congress (1775): 168, 169.  
 Stryker, John, delegate (1665): 110, 1212.  
 Stuyvesant, Peter, Director over New Netherlands: 63, 80.  
 Styles, Richard Cresson, physician: 1436.  
 Suffolk County: 172, 693-849; Created, 127; Represented at Provincial Congress (1775), 168, 169; Population, 173; In Revolutionary War, 201; Farm lands of, 360; Dead in World War, 655-56; Southold, 693-708; Historical Society, 705; Medical History, 846-49.  
 Suffolk Co. Medical Society: 847-49.  
 Sugar Bill: 173.  
 Suydam, Capt. Lambert, Kings Co. Cavalry: 185.  
 Swanstrom, J. Edward, President Brooklyn Borough: 1558-62.  
 Swedes, on Delaware Bay: 93-96.  
 Swedenborgian Church: Southold, 700; Wading River, 726; Brooklyn, 1211.  
 Swedish Lutheran Bethlehem Church: 1334-35.  
 Sylvester, Nathaniel, of Shelter Island: 112, 120, 718-19, 720-21.  
 Sylvester, Brinley, Justice: 722.

## T

- Talmage, Rev. T. De Witt, famous preacher: 1331-33.  
 Talmage, Thomas, East Hampton: 749, 804.  
 Tammany Hall: 229.  
 Telephones in Brooklyn: 1609-12.  
 Teunis, Guisbert, Bushwick delegate (1665): 110.  
 Thayer, William Henry, physician: 1436.  
 Thompson, Benjamin F., history of Long Island: 862, 863.  
 Thorn, Richard, Representative (1775): 169.  
 Thorne, John Sullivan, physician: 1432.  
 Tilton, John, sympathized with Quakers: 97.  
 Tilyou, George C., Steeplechase: 1075-1077.  
 Todd Shipyards: 1663-66.  
 Tom, Nathaniel, Representative (1775): 169.  
 Topography of Long Island: 9-11.  
 Topping, Thomas, Southampton delegate (1665): 111.  
 Townley, Richard, councillor: 150.  
 Townsend, John, early settler: 78.

Townsend, Henry, a Quaker: 96.  
 Tracy, Gen. Benjamin F., attorney, 1580.  
 Trade and Commerce, Brooklyn: 1582.  
 Treadwell, Thomas, Representative (1775): 168, 169.  
 Tribune Fresh Air Fund: 180.  
 Troop C, Brooklyn, at Porto Rico: 297-98.  
 Tryon, William, Governor N. Y.: 180.  
 Twelve Select Men, The: 68.  
 Twenty-Seventh Division: 423-78; On Mexican Border, 423; At Camp Wadsworth, 426-29; In France, 429; In front line trenches, 435; Attack Hindenburg Line, 441-45; Le Selle River, 446-47; Homeward bound, 451; U. S. awards and medals for distinguished service, 452-76, 1670-72. British decorations, 476; French decorations, 476-77; Belgian decorations, 477; American citations, 477-78, 1672-81.  
 Tyler, Joseph, comedian: 1012.

## U

Underhill, John: 110, 922; High constable (1665), 111.  
 Union Savings Bank, The: 1620-21.  
 Unionville: 1100.  
 Unitarian Church: Brooklyn, 1211, 1336-43; The Fifty-nine members of original church, 1338; Chronology, 1336-39.  
 United Jewish Aid Societies, The: 1126-27.  
 United New England Colonies: 62.  
 United New Netherland Company: 46.  
 United Presbyterian Church, Brooklyn: 1210.  
 Universalist Church: Southold, 700; Huntington, 824; Brooklyn, 1211.  
 Upper Aquebogue (Steeple Church): 227.

## V

Van Anden, Isaac, founder of The Eagle: 1410.  
 Van Beuren, Henry, fourth physician in Brooklyn: 1418-19.  
 Van Brunt, Col. Rutger, Kings Co. Regiment: 185, 1087.  
 Van Brunt family: 1095-97.  
 Van Corlaer, Jacob, First grant Kings Co.: 51.  
 Van Couwenhoven, Wolfert Gerritse, early landowner: 51, 52, 99.  
 Van der Beeck, first physician in Brooklyn: 1418.  
 Vanderbilt, John, Representative (1775): 169.  
 Vanderbilt, John, first judge Kings Co.: 1207.  
 Van Pelt, Teunis, early landowner: 1091.  
 Van Twiller, Wouter, Director General: 48, 51.  
 Van Velsor, Major Cornelius, Grandfather of Walt Whitman: 1374.  
 Van Werckhoven, Cornelis, early landowner: 87.  
 Van Wyck family: 202, 913.  
 Vaughn, Major Augustus, Jr., Famous Ace in World War: 683-88.  
 Veale, Jeremiah, East Hampton: 751.  
 Verrazano, Giovanni da, explorer: 36-41.  
 Vlissingen (Flushing): 78.  
 Volckertsen, Dirck, owner Greenpoint: 1104.

Von Homboldt, Alexander, naturalist: 8.  
 Voorhess family, The: 1086, 1090.

## W

Waldron, Capt. Adolph, Brooklyn Cavalry: 185, 1147.  
 Wallace, William, physician: 1436.  
 Walton, Henry, pioneer settler: 785.  
 Wampum, Indian currency: 57-59.  
 War of 1812: Sag Harbor: 779-82, 1666-67; East Hampton, 780; Long Island in, 1666-70.  
 Warriner, Rev. Edwin, D. D., The Old Sands Street Church: 1253.  
 Washington, Gen. George: 169, 178, 182, 185. Plot to abduct, 197; Tours Long Island, 231-33, 829, 861, 914; Funeral services of, 1219.  
 Water Supply, from Kettle Holes: 904.  
 Webb, Captain Thomas, Pioneer Methodist preacher in Brooklyn: 1254.  
 Webster, Daniel, visits Long Island: 835, 861.  
 Wells, George, pioneer settler: 785.  
 Wells, John, attorney: 1577.  
 Wells, William, First High Sheriff: 110, 111, 112, 694-95, 696.  
 West Side Tennis Club: 1010.  
 Westbury: 903-13; Banks, 903, 362; Estates and large residences, 905.  
 West Hampton Beach, World War Record: 615-16.  
 Whitaker, Rev. Ephraim, Southold: 695, 703-7.  
 Whitaker, Rev. Dr. William Force: 707-8.  
 White, Alfred T., Memorial Tablet in Botanic Garden: 1401.  
 Whitehead, Daniel, Queens Co. Representative (1691): 146, 922.  
 Whitestone: 985, 990-93, 1036; Banks, 992, 363.  
 Whitman, Walt: 1181-82, 1375-83, 1585-87.  
 Whitney, Henry, early settler: 832.  
 Wickham, Thomas, Representative (1775): 168, 169.  
 Wikoff Camp at Montauk Point, Spanish American War: 290, 291-95, 298.  
 Wicks, Family, The, of Bayshore: 837.  
 Wicks Paper Mill, Patchogue: 842.  
 Willett, Col. Marinus, Jamaica's Revolutionary Hero: 201-05.  
 Willett, Capt. Thomas, to arbitrate boundary of provinces: 83, 150.  
 Williams, Henry, Representative (1775): 168, 169.  
 Williams, Roger, describes Indian sweating house: 709.  
 Williams, Zebulon, Representative (1775): 167, 169.  
 Williamsburgh: 1109-12; Population, 1110, 1112; Industries, 1110; Banks, 1111; Street Names, 1111-12; Consolidated with Brooklyn, 1112.  
 Williamsburgh Bridge: 1590, 1658-60.  
 Williamsburgh Medical Society: 1111.  
 Winfield, James MacFarland, physician: 1440.  
 Winters, Daniel, mariner: 781.  
 Wit, Pieter Janse, early settler: 1103, 1108.  
 Witchcraft, in East Hampton: 761-62.  
 Woman's Club, Brooklyn: 1496-99.  
 Wood, Col. Alfred M., in Civil War: 279.



Wood, George M., attorney: 1578.  
 Wood, Jeremiah, Jr., early landowner: 855.  
 Wood, Jonas, Justice and Surgeon: 110, 111, 832, 856.  
 Wooden Elephant, The: 1073.  
 Woodford, Gen. Stewart L., U. S. Minister at Madrid: 290.  
 Woodhaven: 1034, 1037; Hospital, 1051, 1057.  
 Woodhull, Lieut., Militia (1812): 781.  
 Woodhull, Nathaniel, Speaker Assembly (1775): 168, 169; Milled, 194.  
 Woodhull, Richard, early settler: 112, 785, 810.  
 Woolsey, Rev. Benjamin, and descendants, Southold: 697-98.  
 World War: 423-689, 1670-83; 27th Division, 423-78; 77th Division, 478-512; War Records of Towns, 513-616; Long Island's Dead in, 616-59; Records of Two Roosevelts, 659-64; Brooklyn Chapter American Red Cross, 664-71; Naval Base Hospital Unit No. 1, 671-73; Mitchel Field, 673-77; Letters from service men, 677-83; Major Vaughan, ace, 683-88; Medal of Honor, list of men decorated, 1670-72; Citations of men who served in the 27th Division, 1672-81; Men from Shelter Island, 1682-83.  
 Wright, Peter, early settler: 922.  
 Wyckoffs, The, early settlers, Coney Island: 1071.

Wyckoff, Ferdinand L., first supervisor New Lotts: 1143.  
 Wyckoff, Peter, landowner: 1104.

## Y

Yorkshire, name given Long Island by English: 108.  
 Y. M. C. A., Brooklyn and Queens: 305-27; Branches of, 307-8, 310, 314-16, 317, 319-22; Homes of, 310-13; Women Members, 311; Work with boys, 313-14; Buildings, 314, 316; Gifts to, 318, 19; New Central Building, 319; Summer Camps, 323-24; During World War, 324-27.  
 Y. M. H. A., Brooklyn: 1135-36; Borough Park Y. M. H. A. and Y. W. H. A., 1138-39.  
 Youngs, Capt. John, delegate (1665): 109, 110, 112, 115, 121, 122, 145, 150, 695, 696, 697.  
 Youngs, Rev., brings first English settlers to Long Island: 694-95.  
 Young Women's Christian Association, of Brooklyn, The: 1474-77.  
 Y. W. H. A.: 1138-39.

## Z

Zabriskie, John Barrea, physician: 1432.  
 Zenger, John Peter, editor first Free Press paper: 173-74.

